

**THE
CULTURAL HERITAGE
OF INDIA**

**VOLUME II
ITIĦĀSAS, PURĀNAS, DHARMA AND
OTHER ŚĀSTRAS**

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

VOLUME II

ITIHĀSAS, PURĀNAS, DHARMA AND
OTHER ŚĀSTRAS

INTRODUCTION BY

DR C P RAMASWAMI AIYAR

Formerly Vice Chancellor, Banaras Hindu University



THE RAMAKRISHNA MISSION
INSTITUTE OF CULTURE
CALCUTTA

Published by
SWAMI LOKESWARANANDA SECRETARY
THE RAMAKRISHNA MISSION INSTITUTE OF CULTURE
GOL PARK CALCUTTA

First Edition (3 vols) 1937
Second Edition Revised and Enlarged (independent volumes)
Vol II 1962
Reprint 1969
Reprint 1975

© THE RAMAKRISHNA MISSION INSTITUTE OF CULTURE
CALCUTTA

*All rights are reserved Apart from any fair dealing for
the purpose of private study, research, criticism or
review, no portion may be reproduced in any form
without the written permission of the publisher*

PRINTED IN INDIA
BY PHOTO-OFFSET AT S ANTOOL & CO PRIVATE LTD
91 ACHARYA PRAFULLA CHANDRA ROAD CALCUTTA 9

BOARD OF EDITORS

CHAIRMAN

DR SARVEPALLI RADHAKRISHNAN

MEMBERS

HARIDAS BHATTACHARYYA MA BL, PRS
R C MAJUMDAR MA PHD
SUNITI KUMAR CHATTERJI MA DLIT
HUMAYUN KABIR MA
S K DE MA DLIT
NALINAKSHA DUTT MA BL PHD, DLIT
U N GHOSHAL MA, PHD
R C HAZRA, MA PHD DLITT
A D PUSALKER MA, LLB, PHD
NIHARRANJAN RAY MA DPHIL ET LETT
NIRMAL KUMAR BOSE MSC, T N I

EDITORS OF VOLUME II

S K DE MA DLIT
U N GHOSHAL MA PHD
A D PUSALKER, MA, LLB PHD
R C HAZRA MA PHD, DLITT

PUBLISHER'S NOTE

THE Ramakrishna Mission established this Institute of Culture in 1938 in fulfilment of one of the projects to commemorate the Birth Centenary of Sri Ramakrishna (1936). At the same time the Institute was vested with the entire rights of *The Cultural Heritage of India*. This publication is thus one of the major responsibilities of the Institute, it also serves to fulfil a primary aim of the Institute, which is to promote the study, interpretation, and dissemination of the cultural heritage of India.

The first edition of *The Cultural Heritage of India*, in three volumes and about 2,000 pages, the work of one hundred distinguished Indian scholars, was published in 1937 by the Sri Ramakrishna Birth Centenary Publication Committee as a Birth Centenary memorial. This work presented for the first time a panorama of the cultural history of India, and it was immediately acclaimed as a remarkable contribution to the cultural literature of the world. This edition was sold out within a few years, and the work had long been out of print. When considering the question of a second edition, it was felt that, instead of reprinting the work in its original form, advantage should be taken of the opportunity to enlarge the scope of the work, making it more comprehensive, more authoritative and adequately representative of different aspects of Indian thought, and, at the same time, thoroughly to revise the old articles to bring them up to date.

According to the new scheme drawn up on this basis, the number of volumes has been increased. The plan of arrangement has been improved by grouping the topics in such a way that each volume may be fairly complete in itself and fulfil the requirements of those interested in any particular branch of learning. Each volume is self contained, with separate pagination, bibliography, and index, and is introduced by an outstanding authority. Since due regard has been paid to historicity and critical treatment, it is hoped that this work will provide a useful guide to the study of the complex pattern of India's cultural history.

The band of distinguished scholars who have co-operated so ably in this task have done their work as a labour of love, in a spirit of service to scholarship and world understanding. Equally essential to the success of the undertaking was the assistance of the Government of India who made a generous grant towards the cost of publication. Without this dual co-operation, it would have been impossible to set out on a venture of this

magnitude, and to the contributors as well as to the Government of India the Institute therefore expresses its deepest gratitude

This second volume of the second edition of *The Cultural Heritage of India* follows the publication of Volume I in 1958. It is perhaps necessary to explain how it happened that these two volumes were preceded by Volume III, in 1953, and by Volume IV, in 1956. In the first edition of this work there was a fairly large number of articles on philosophy and religion, the two subjects which, under the new scheme, had been assigned to Volumes III and IV. Thus these two volumes acquired an advantage over the others which required a much greater proportion of fresh material, and it was therefore thought expedient to publish them first. The other volumes, which required much more fresh material, thus gained extra time.

Volume II contains forty-three articles, of which all but seven are new. These seven articles from the first edition have been suitably revised and, where necessary, renamed. This volume has had the editorial care of Dr S. K. De, Dr U. N. Ghoshal, Dr R. C. Hazra, and, in particular, Dr A. D. Pusalker, all members of the Board of Editors of *The Cultural Heritage of India*, of which the Chairman is Dr Sarvepalli Radhakrishnan, the President of the Institute. The Institute expresses its indebtedness to the editors of Volume II for the unstinted labour they have put into their task. The Institute's thanks are also due to Sri B. S. Kesavan, Librarian of the National Library, Calcutta, for having provided an excellent subject-wise bibliography, which has greatly added to the utility of the volume. The Institute is also grateful to those who have rendered help in the preparation of this volume. Dr S. N. Ray worked on the proof and also in collaboration with Professor V. A. Thiagarajan helped prepare the index. Mr David McCutcheon, Lecturer in Comparative Literature at the University of Jadavpur, very kindly went through many of the articles from the point of view of language.

To Dr C. P. Ramaswamy Aiyar, the well known scholar and former Dewan of Travancore, former Vice Chancellor of Banaras Hindu University, and now the Chairman of the Hindu Religious Endowments Enquiry Commission, special thanks are due for his Introduction to this volume.

As regards the title of this work, it has to be remembered that the subcontinent of India has been one cultural unit throughout the ages, cutting across political boundaries. For the purpose of the articles in *The Cultural Heritage of India*, which attempts to give an account of the cultural heritage of India from the most ancient times to the present day, India therefore means the subcontinent of India irrespective of political divisions, and this use has in no way any political implication.

PUBLISHER'S NOTE

This volume, devoted to the study of the Itihāsas, the Purānas, and the Dharma and other Śāstras, is of particular significance to modern India. One of the major problems facing the country today is the need to resuscitate and reinterpret those national ideals which, for the most part lying dormant, may yet still be clearly discerned as the life force which, through countless centuries, has maintained the continuity of India's culture. Those ideals are treasured in the books dealt with in this volume, in simple language woven into narrative and dramatic episode, and exemplified in characters portrayed. It is hoped that this volume will play some part in the realization of the present day need to grasp afresh those ancient national ideals that they may once more become the basis of national life and a bond of national unity, and that they may also be a guiding light not only to India, but to the whole world in its complex journey through the maze of modern civilization.

March 1962

CONTENTS

| | |
|---|-------------|
| <i>Publisher's Note</i> | PAGE VII |
| INTRODUCTION Dr C P Ramaswami Aiyar | XXI |
| PART I | |
| THE TWO GREAT EPICS | |
| 1 CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AS A VEHICLE OF INDIAN CULTURE K K Handique, M A (CAL ET OXON) <i>Vice-Chancellor, Gauhati University</i> | 3 |
| 2 THE RĀMĀYANA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER A D Pusalker, M A, LL B, PH D <i>Formerly Assistant Director, and Head of the Department of Sanskrit, Bharatiya Vidya Bhavan, Bombay</i> | 14 |
| 3 THE CULTURE OF THE RĀMĀYANA Swami Nihśreyasananda <i>Ramakrishna Mission</i> | 32 |
| 4 THE MAHĀBHĀRATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER I P L Vaidya, M A, PH D <i>Mayurbhanj Professor of Sanskrit and Pali, Hindu University Banaras</i> II A D Pusalker, M A, LL B, PH D | |
| 5 THE MAHĀBHĀRATA SOME ASPECTS OF ITS CULTURE Hemchandra Raychaudhuri, M A, PH D, FRASB <i>Carmichael Professor of Ancient Indian History and Culture, Calcutta University</i> | 71 |
| 6 RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY OF THE EPICS A P Karmarkar, M A, LL B, PH D <i>Professor of Indian History and Ancient Indian Culture, Ramnarain College, Bombay, University Teacher, Bombay University</i> | 80 |

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

| | PAGE |
|--|------|
| 7 THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE Nilmadhav Sen, M A , D LITT <i>Deccan School of Linguistics, Poona</i> | 95 |
| 8 THE RAMAYANA AND THE MAHABHARATA IN SOUTH EAST ASIA Bijan Raj Chatterjee, PH D (LOND), D LITT (PUNJAB) <i>Principal, Meerut College, U P</i> | 119 |

PART II

THE GITA LITERATURE

| | |
|--|-----|
| 9 THE BHAGAVAD GITA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER S K Belvalkar, M A , PH D (HARVARD) <i>Professor of Sanskrit (Emeritus), Deccan College, Poona, and Banaras Hindu University</i> | 135 |
| 10 THE TEACHINGS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA Swami Suddhananda <i>Formerly President, Ramakrishna Mission</i> | 158 |
| 11 THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA Swami Tapasyananda <i>President, Ramakrishna Ashrama, Trivandram, Kerala</i> | 166 |
| 12 THE BHAGAVAD GITA ITS SYNTHETIC CHARACTER Swami Vireswarananda <i>General Secretary, Ramakrishna Mission</i> | 180 |
| 13 THE BHAGAVAD GITA ITS EARLY COMMENTARIES Mahendra Nath Sarkar, M A , PH D <i>Formerly Professor of Philosophy, Presidency College, Calcutta</i> | 195 |
| 14 IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA AND LATER GITA LITERATURE Parameswara Aiyar, B L <i>Retired Sub-Judge</i> | 204 |

PART III

THE PURANAS

| | |
|---|-----|
| 15 INDIAN MYTHOLOGY R N Dandekar, M A , PH D <i>Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona</i> | 223 |
|---|-----|

CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 16. THE PURĀNAS Rajendra Chandra Hazra, M A , PH D , D LITT <i>Associate Professor of Smṛti and Purānas (Research Department, Sanskrit College), Calcutta</i> | 240 |
| 17 THE UPAPURĀNAS Rajendra Chandra Hazra, M A , PH D , D LITT | 271 |
| 18 THE ETHICS OF THE PURĀNAS C S Venkateswaran, M A , PH D <i>Head of the Department of Sanskrit, Annamalai University</i> | 287 |

PART IV

THE DHARMA ŚĀSTRAS

| | |
|--|-----|
| 19 THE DHARMA SŪTRAS AND THE DHARMA ŚĀSTRAS V A Ramaswami Sastri, M A <i>Head of the Department of Sanskrit, Travancore University</i> | 301 |
| 20 THE SMṚTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND CHARACTER T R Venkatarama Sastri, C I E <i>Formerly Advocate General, Madras</i> | 312 |
| 21 THE MANU SAMHITA V Raghavan, M A , PH D <i>Professor of Sanskrit, Madras University</i> | 335 |
| 22 FIVE NIBANDHAS Dinesh Chandra Bhattacharya, M A <i>Formerly Professor, Mohsin College, Hooghly</i> | 364 |
| 23 PENANCES AND VOWS Dinesh Chandra Bhattacharya, M A | 381 |
| 24 THE HINDU SACRAMENTS (SAMSKARAS) R B Pandey, M A , D LITT <i>Principal, Banaras Hindu University</i> | 390 |
| 25 THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND AND THEORETIC BASIS OF HINDU LAW P B Gajendragadkar <i>Judge, Supreme Court of India</i> | 414 |

- 26 THE HINDU JUDICIAL SYSTEM
P B Mukharji
Judge, Calcutta High Court 434

PART V

ARTHA ŚĀSTRA, NĪTI-ŚĀSTRA, AND OTHER SOURCES OF
POLITICAL AND SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

- 27 A GENERAL SURVEY OF THE LITERATURE OF ARTHA ŚĀSTRA AND
NĪTI ŚĀSTRA
I U N Ghoshal, M A, PH D
Formerly Professor of History, Presidency College, Calcutta
II—V Radhagovinda Basak, M A, PH D
Formerly Professor, Presidency College, Calcutta 451
- 28 POLITICAL ORGANIZATION OF THE MONARCHICAL STATES
U N Ghoshal, M A, PH D 465
- 29 POLITICAL ORGANIZATION OF REPUBLICS AND MIXED CONSTITUTIONS
U N Ghoshal, M A, PH D 480
- 30 THE STATE IN RELATION TO RELIGION IN ANCIENT INDIA
K A Nilakanta Sastri, M A
Formerly Professor of Indian History, Madras University 485
- 31 SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL AND POLITICAL EVOLUTION IN INDIA
C P Ramaswami Aiyar, B A, B L, LL D, D LITT
Formerly Vice Chancellor, Banaras Hindu University 493
- 32 SOME BASIC IDEAS OF POLITICAL THINKING IN ANCIENT INDIA
Benoy Kumar Sircar, M A, DR H C
Formerly Professor, Calcutta University 509
- 33 THE TIRU K KURAL
C Rajagopalachari, Bharat Ratna, B A, B L
Formerly Governor General of India 530
- 34 THE INDIAN SOCIAL ORGANIZATION AN ANTHROPOLOGICAL STUDY
Dr (Mrs) Iravati Karve
Deccan College, Poona 536

CONTENTS

| | PAGE |
|---|------|
| 35 SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL LIFE IN ANCIENT INDIA H C Chakladar, M A <i>Formerly Head of the Department of Anthropology, Calcutta University</i> | 557 |
| 36 MONASTICISM IN INDIA Sukumar Datta, M A, PH D <i>Formerly Reader in English, Delhi University</i> | 582 |
| 37 SOME ASPECTS OF THE POSITION OF WOMEN IN ANCIENT INDIA D C Ganguly, M A, PH D <i>Curator, Victoria Memorial, Calcutta</i> | 594 |
| 38 SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD Roma Chaudhury, M A, D PHIL. <i>Principal, Lady Brabourne College, Calcutta</i> | 601 |
| 39 FOREIGN ELEMENTS IN INDIAN POPULATION Mrs Debala Mitra, M A <i>Assistant Superintendent of Archaeology, Indian Museum, Calcutta</i> | 610 |
| 40 SOME EXPERIMENTS IN SOCIAL REFORM IN MEDIAEVAL INDIA P N Chopra, M A, PH D <i>Member, Board of Editors, 'History of Freedom Movement of India'</i> | 627 |
| 41 ANCIENT INDIAN EDUCATION I Radha Kumud Mookerji, M A, PH D <i>Formerly Vice Chancellor, Emeritus Professor of History, Lucknow University</i> II III U N Ghoshal, M A, PH D | 640 |
| 42 ECONOMIC IDEAS OF THE HINDUS A D Pusalker, M A, LL B, PH D | 655 |
| 43 GUILDS AND OTHER CORPORATE BODIES U N Ghoshal, M A, PH D | 670 |
| BIBLIOGRAPHY | 681 |
| INDEX | 695 |

HINTS ON PRONUNCIATION AND SPELLING OF SANSKRIT AND VERNACULAR WORDS

| | | | | | | | | |
|----|--------|-------|-----|-------------------|------|--------|------|---------------|
| a | stands | for अ | and | sounds | like | o | in | come |
| ā | „ | आ | „ | „ | „ | a | „ | far |
| i | „ | इ | „ | „ | „ | i | „ | bit |
| ī | „ | ई | „ | „ | „ | ee | „ | feel |
| u | „ | उ | „ | „ | „ | u | „ | full |
| ū | „ | ऊ | „ | „ | „ | oo | „ | cool |
| r | „ | ऋ | „ | may be pronounced | like | r | in | ring |
| e | „ | ए | „ | sounds | like | a | in | cake |
| ai | „ | ऐ | „ | „ | „ | i | „ | mite |
| o | „ | ओ | „ | „ | „ | o | „ | note |
| au | „ | औ | „ | „ | „ | ou | „ | count |
| m | „ | | | (anusvāra) | and | sounds | like | m in some |
| h | „ | | | (visarga) | „ | „ | „ | soft, short h |

' (apostrophe) stands for स (elided अ)

n stands for ण्, ñ for न्, and n for न, the first is to be pronounced like English *ng* in *sing*, or *n* in *bank*, the second like the *n* in English *singe* (a palatal n), and the third, the cerebral n, is made with the tongue-tip up turned and touching the dome of the palate

| | | | | | | | | |
|----|--------|-------|-----|--------|------|---------------------------|----|-----------------|
| c | stands | for च | and | sounds | like | ch | in | church |
| ch | „ | छ | „ | „ | „ | chh | „ | church-hill |
| t | „ | ट | „ | „ | „ | t | „ | curt |
| th | „ | ठ | „ | „ | „ | th | „ | port-hole |
| d | „ | ड | „ | „ | „ | d | „ | bird |
| dh | „ | ढ | „ | „ | „ | dh | „ | bird-house |
| t | „ | त | „ | „ | „ | t | „ | pat (Italian t) |
| th | „ | थ | „ | „ | „ | th | „ | hit-hard |
| d | „ | द | „ | „ | „ | d | „ | had (Italian d) |
| dh | „ | ध | „ | „ | „ | dh | „ | mad-house |
| v | „ | व | „ | „ | „ | v or w | „ | levy, water |
| ś | „ | श | „ | „ | „ | sh | „ | ship |
| s | „ | ष | „ | „ | „ | sh | „ | should |
| l | „ | ळ | „ | „ | „ | the cerebral l, made with | | |

the tongue-tip up-turned and touching the dome of the palate

HINTS ON PRONUNCIATION AND SPELLING OF SANSKRIT WORDS

The following points should also be noted

(1) All Sanskrit words, except when they are proper nouns, or have come into common use in English, or represent a class of literature, cult, sect, or school of thought, are italicized

(2) Excepting in the case of words like 'karma', the bases of Sanskrit nouns are used as *sannyāsin*, *svāmin*, etc

(3) Anglicized Sanskrit words like 'kārmic', 'sāmsāric', 'Arhathood', etc are Romanized

(4) Current geographical names, except in cases where their Sanskrit forms are given, or in special cases where the context requires it, and all modern names from the commencement of the nineteenth century are given in their usual spelling and without diacritical marks

ABBREVIATIONS

| | |
|-------------------|---|
| ABORI | <i>Annals of the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute</i> |
| Agn | <i>Agni Purāna</i> |
| Ait Br | <i>Aitareya Brāhmana</i> |
| Āp Dh S | <i>Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra</i> |
| ĀSS | <i>Anandasrama Sanskrit Series</i> |
| Āśv Dh S | <i>Āsvalāyana Dharma-Sūtra</i> |
| A V | <i>Atharva-Veda</i> |
| Baudh Dh S | <i>Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra</i> |
| Bd | <i>Brahmānda Purāna</i> |
| BEFEO | <i>Bulletin de L'ecole Francaise d'extreme Orient</i> |
| B G | <i>Bhagavad-Gītā</i> |
| Bhā (Bhāg) | <i>Bhāgavata Purāna</i> |
| Bhav | <i>Bhavisya Purāna</i> |
| Br | <i>Brāhmana</i> |
| Brahma | <i>Brahma Purāna</i> |
| Brhv | <i>Brahmavivarta Purāna</i> |
| Br Sm | <i>Brhaspati Smṛti</i> |
| Br U | <i>Brhadāranyaka Upanisad</i> |
| BSS | <i>Bombay Sanskrit Series</i> |
| Chā U | <i>Chāndogya Upanisad</i> |
| CHI | <i>Cultural Heritage of India</i> |
| Dh S | <i>Dharma-Sūtra</i> |
| EI | <i>Epigraphia Indica</i> |
| Gar | <i>Garuda Purāna</i> |
| Gaut Dh S | <i>Gautama Dharma-śāstra</i> |
| Gr S | <i>Grhya-Sūtra</i> |
| HCIP | <i>History and Culture of the Indian People</i> |
| H Dh | <i>History of Dharma-śāstra, by P V Kane</i> |
| HIL | <i>History of Indian Literature</i> |
| HOS | <i>Harvard Oriental Series</i> |
| HSL | <i>History of Sanskrit Literature</i> |
| Hv | <i>Harivamśa</i> |
| IA | <i>Indian Antiquary</i> |
| Ī U | <i>Īśa Upanisad</i> |
| Jāt | <i>Jātaka</i> |
| JUB | <i>Journal of the University of Bombay</i> |
| Ka U | <i>Katha Upanisad</i> |
| Kām | <i>Kāmandakīya Nītisāra</i> |
| Kaut | <i>Kautilīya Arthaśāstra</i> |

ABBREVIATIONS

| | |
|--------------------|---------------------------------------|
| <i>Kāt</i> | <i>Kātyāyana Smṛti</i> |
| <i>Ke U</i> | <i>Kena Upanisad</i> |
| <i>Kūr</i> | <i>Kūrma Purāna</i> |
| <i>Linga</i> | <i>Linga Purāna</i> |
| <i>Manu</i> | <i>Manu Smṛti</i> |
| <i>Mārkh</i> | <i>Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna</i> |
| <i>Mat</i> | <i>Matsya Purāna</i> |
| <i>Ma U</i> | <i>Māndūkya Upanisad</i> |
| <i>Mbh</i> | <i>Mahābhārata</i> |
| <i>Mbh (Cr Ed)</i> | <i>Mahābhārata (Critical Edition)</i> |
| <i>Mu U</i> | <i>Mundaka Upanisad</i> |
| <i>Nār</i> | <i>Nāradiya Purāna</i> |
| <i>Nār Sm</i> | <i>Nārada Smṛti</i> |
| <i>NIA</i> | <i>New Indian Antiquary</i> |
| <i>P</i> | <i>Purāna</i> |
| <i>Pad</i> | <i>Padma Purāna</i> |
| <i>Pān</i> | <i>Pāṇini</i> |
| <i>Par</i> | <i>Parāśara</i> |
| <i>Rāj</i> | <i>Rājataranginī</i> |
| <i>Rām</i> | <i>Rāmāyana</i> |
| <i>R V</i> | <i>Rg Veda</i> |
| <i>Śat Br</i> | <i>Satapatha Brāhmaṇa</i> |
| <i>SBE</i> | <i>Sacred Books of the East</i> |
| <i>Sk</i> | <i>Skanda Purāna</i> |
| <i>Sm</i> | <i>Smṛti</i> |
| <i>Sm C</i> | <i>Smṛti-candrikā</i> |
| <i>Śr S</i> | <i>Śrauta Sūtra</i> |
| <i>Śukra</i> | <i>Śukra Nītisāra</i> |
| <i>S V</i> | <i>Sāma-Veda</i> |
| <i>Taitt Br</i> | <i>Taittirīya Brāhmaṇa</i> |
| <i>Tai U</i> | <i>Taittirīya Upanisad</i> |
| <i>Vāj S</i> | <i>Vājasaneyī Samhitā</i> |
| <i>Vām</i> | <i>Vāmana Purāna</i> |
| <i>Var</i> | <i>Varāha Purāna</i> |
| <i>Vas</i> | <i>Vasistha Dharma Sūtra</i> |
| <i>Vāyu</i> | <i>Vāyu Purāna</i> |
| <i>Viṣṇu Dh S</i> | <i>Viṣṇu Dharma-Sūtra</i> |
| <i>Viṣnu</i> | <i>Viṣnu Purāna</i> |
| <i>Yāj</i> | <i>Yājñavalkya Smṛti</i> |
| <i>Y V</i> | <i>Yajur-Veda</i> |

INTRODUCTION

THE *Cultural Heritage of India*, sponsored by the Ramakrishna Mission Institute of Culture, is at once a symbol of the renaissance of Hindu thought and ideals and a treasure house of ancient lore. The whole range of Indian civilization and the variegated products of Hindu culture have been reviewed in its several volumes dealing with the religions, philosophies, literature, and the arts and sciences of India from the twilight past to the present day.

The admitted achievements of India in the directions of assimilation, adaptation, and synthesis of diverse, and even conflicting, points of view, will be illustrated by the movements recorded in these volumes. The religious, artistic, and philosophical developments in India demonstrate India's consistent striving towards *samavāya*, that is, reconciliation and concord. Cultural patterns have, of course, been modified from time to time, but different environments, diversified racial contributions, and innumerable local and historical traditions have not basically affected the continuity of Indian culture during six thousand years or more.

Volume II of this literary *tour de force* comprises studies in the Itihāsas, Purānas, Dharmas and other Śāstras. This volume will be specially significant in the light of present-day Indian conditions and would be invaluable for a proper solution of the problem of national integration which is now exercising the minds of Indian leaders. The conviction of the immanence of the Supreme Being in every animate entity, leading to a realization of the dignity of each individual, is the message taught by this volume and should be of crucial importance for creating those bonds of love and service which are indispensable for today and tomorrow. From another point of view, the contributions contained in this volume would be of import as they would put in proper perspective the values emphasized in modern civilization. India, while not disparaging economic advancement or social utility, has always stressed the importance of human personality against all challenges to it. Neither stark individualism nor collectivization can solve the problems confronting humanity today, and this lesson is specially conveyed by the Itihāsas and the Purānas.

The *Amarakoṣa*, describing the main characteristics of the Purānas, specially points out that the commands of the Vedas are like those of a master (*Prabhu Samhitā*) whereas the teachings of the Itihāsas and Purānas may be compared with the advice and counsel of friends (*Suhṛt Samhitā*).

The Epic Age during which the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* received their final shape was a period of racial and ideological conflict,

and, historically speaking, this period produced the two great Epics as well as the *Manu Dharma sāstra*, the Codes of Yājñavalkya, Nārada, and Parāśara and the earlier Purānas. Great mental expansions and new political outlooks were the characteristics of this age. Gradually, the idea was evolved that India, in spite of its various kingdoms, races, and creeds, was essentially one. This fundamental unity is enforced in several passages of the *Mahābhārata*. The *Kūrma Purāna*, in describing Bhāratavarsa, emphasizes its unity notwithstanding the diversities of race and culture, and the earlier *Vāyu Purāna* strikes the same note. The Hindu scheme of life expressed in the formula, *dharma artha-kāma-moksa* which had originated earlier was, during this period, perfected and codified. Ideal types of character representing all stages of human life became epic heroes. Not only the ideal *sannyāsin* or the *rsi* but the ideal king, the loyal wife and brother, the disciplined and diligent student, the citizen active in his vocation and the peasant as the guardian of fundamental virtues and loyalties were presented in the Itihāsas and Purānas as examples and symbols of the variegated Indian life. The influence cannot be exaggerated of such examples of human potentiality and achievement as Rāma, Lakṣmana, Kauśalyā, Sītā, Hanūmat, Bharata, Yudhiṣṭhira and Bhīṣma. The formula afore-mentioned of *dharma-artha-kāma-moksa*, became more than formal when it was illustrated by the lives of the countless characters described in the Purānas and the Itihāsas. The stories, epilogues, and parables contained in them were not put together for the purpose of furnishing a chronologically accurate history. Recent researches have demonstrated that the Itihāsas and the Purānas are more accurate historically, geographically, and chronologically than was at one time supposed, but it can never be forgotten that they were composed rather to furnish examples and models than to record specific historical incidents in dry detail. Moreover, while each Purāna exalts a particular deity, it must be noted that the catholicity and the uniformity of the Hindu approach to the Supreme are affirmed at every turn. For instance, Rāma is described as a devotee of Śiva and Āditya, and so was Arjuna. The *Vāyu Purāna*, in fact, asserts that he who affirms superiority or inferiority among the divine manifestations is a sinner.

From the time of Macaulay, it has been a favourite pursuit of some critics to deride the geography and description of the Purānas and to accuse them of exaggeration or distortion. Some special virtues are, in their opinion, grossly over accentuated as in the cases of Śivacakravartin, Harisandra and Karna. In many ancient scriptures, including the Egyptian *Book of the Dead* and the Old and the New Testaments, there are to be found similar inherent improbabilities and historical contradictions. But

INTRODUCTION

it must not be overlooked that these great products of the human mind were not intended to be substitutes for historical handbooks or for Directories like those of Baedeker or Murray

A proper interpretation of the Itihāsas and the Purānas would be to regard them as the works of gifted seers who availed themselves of certain ancient or recent historical and religious traditions, and wove those traditions into narratives, anecdotes, episodes, and homilies, these works reflecting and reproducing certain attitudes towards life. In truth, these are a body of writings which are popular expositions of inherited truths and messages, their avowed purpose being to diffuse their purport amongst the people at large. Thus, the *Rāmāyana* furnishes pictures of kings who led a spiritual life and of ascetics who played a great part in the affairs of nations. Difficult situations are pictured whose impact on several human souls is marvellously analysed. *Dharma*, as the chief factor in the shaping of human life is the underlying motive of the *Rāmāyana* and its many episodes. The *Mahābhārata* is not only a picture of a great internecine struggle illustrating the conflict of human motives and human attributes but a repertory of comprehensive secular and religious learning. It is not simply a great poem but also a manual of ethics and politics. It can well be asserted that the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* have throughout been the foundations of Hindu ethics and beliefs.

Whatever the respective dates of the several Purānas may be, they embody ancient legends as the very name Purāna signifies. Whereas the Epics deal with the actions of heroes as mortal men and embody and illustrate both human virtues and frailties, the Purānas mainly celebrate the power and the work of various super-human personages and deities. The *pañcalakṣmanas* described by Amara Simha as characterizing the Purānas are not found in all of them. The contents of many Purānas are very old but many of the later ones have a definite sectarian bias. They are nevertheless a valuable record of the various Hindu beliefs which originated next in order to the Vedas and incorporated hero worship as well as divine worship, and they may be rightly described as essentially pantheistic in character. Although a particular divinity may be glorified, nevertheless, there is an underlying quest for unity of life and of Godhead.

Almost all the Purānas are in the form of dialogues between an exponent and an enquirer. Thus, the *Viṣṇu Purāna* was a gift to Pulastya by Brahmā. Pulastya communicated it to Parāśara and Parāśara to Maitreya. The Purānas are divided into three categories, the *sāttvic* Purānas, the *tāmasic* Purānas, and the *rājasic* Purānas. The *Vāyu Purāna* is the oldest of them. But perhaps the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* and the *Bhāgavata Purāna* are the most celebrated, and the latter ranks in popular estimation as almost

equal in value to the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata*, especially as it deals at length with the Kṛṣṇa incarnation and all the activities of that Supreme *avatāra*. From the literary point of view, perhaps, the most perfect is the *Viṣṇu Purāṇa*.

These Purāṇas and the several Upapurāṇas of which eighteen are generally named, when rightly construed, are neither mutually contradictory nor even purely sectarian. Regarded as a whole, they furnish a compendious portrayal of human rights and obligations and an expressive description of Hindu life as it has been, and ought to be, lived. The *Rāmāyana*, for instance, is a mirror of the highest ideals of Hindu culture and civilization. In his lectures on the *Rāmāyana*, the Right Honourable Srinivasa Sastri declared that it furnishes impressive illustrations of cause being followed inevitably by effect, of *karma*, re-birth and destiny, and that it embodies generalizations of experience in private and public affairs enshrined in proverbs, maxims and rules of chivalry and state craft. The *Mahābhārata*, as Dr S. Radhakrishnan has indicated, contains an illuminating account of the Indian genius both in its nobility and greatness and its tragic weakness and insufficiency. The *Mahābhārata* speaks of men and women who are animated by strong passions—both good and evil—but the purpose of this Epic is to show the futility of the betrayal of ideals and of the pursuit of shams and of evil. It stresses that an underlying purpose and a guiding destiny are inseparable from human history. The appeal of the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* is to the *bhakta*. Devotion and detachment in several forms are embodied in attractive stories. The Sage Vyāsa, having edited the Vedas and composed the *Mahābhārata*, had nevertheless not attained serenity, and the *Bhāgavata* was, as it states, composed on the advice of Nārada who told Vyāsa that he could attain peace of mind only by the contemplation as a true devotee of the Deity and his incarnations. The *Bhāgavata*, at the same time, recognizes the principle of relativity, and its spiritual prescriptions are adjusted to the different stages of individual development. The psychology of *bhakti* has been inimitably studied and expounded in this most popular of the Purāṇas.

The Itihāsas and the Purāṇas are specially remarkable for the number of episodes contained in them. The most remarkable, of course, are the various Gītās, the most renowned of them being the *Bhagavad-Gītā* itself. It was the revelation granted to Arjuna by Śrī Kṛṣṇa at a critical period not only for the Kurus and the Pāṇḍavas but for India as a whole. It has been variously described as embodying pure monism or qualified monism with the introduction of Prakṛti. It has been described as the Sāṃkhya-yoga, and many commentators have made the *Gītā* the basis for their several and divergent interpretations. Rightly viewed, however, the *Gītā* is not a

INTRODUCTION

weapon for dialectical warfare. In the language of Śrī Aurobindo, it is a gate opening on the whole world of spiritual truth and experience, and the view it gives us embraces all provinces of the human mind and soul. It maps out but does not cut up or build walls. The *Gītā* came into existence after the period of the Vedas and the Upanisads. It starts with a freshly conceived synthesis and constructs a harmony of knowledge, love, and work (*jñāna*, *bhakti*, and *karma*), through which the soul of man can directly approach the Eternal. It truly seizes on the real obstacles to spiritual life and compels them to become the means for a richer spiritual conquest. The body and mind are to be utilized for the opening up of the divine life. In fine, the *Gītā* may be described as a gospel of the divine perfectibility of man.

It may be remembered that, in addition to the *Bhagavad-Gītā*, there are interposed in our sacred literature other works entitled *Gītās*, notably the *Astāvakra Samhitā*, being a dialogue between Janaka and Astāvakra, the *Avadhūta-Gītā*, being a conversation between Dattātreyā and Skanda, the *Anu Gītā*, found in the *Asvamedhaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata*, and the *Uddhava-Gītā* embodied in the *Bhāgavata* and containing the last message and instructions of Śrī Kṛṣṇa to his devotee, Uddhava. The basic message of all the *Gītās* is thus enunciated in the *Astāvakra Samhitā*. You namely, the immanent self, do not belong to the Brāhmaṇa or any other caste, nor to any *āśrama*. You are beyond visual perception and detached—(i.e. beyond attachment) and beyond forms. Witnessing all phenomena, you are happy (i.e. you preserve your equilibrium).

It is in the *Uddhava Gītā* that Śrī Kṛṣṇa says. In the beginning men had but one caste known as Hamsa. In the *Bhagavad Gītā*, the Lord proclaims. The four castes were created by me to function according to individual qualities and inheritance. The conclusion is thus stated. He who does his duty in consonance with his innate potentiality incurs no sin. The main requisites are again and again declared to be detachment and faith in the ultimate.

The Dharma-śāstras and the Artha-śāstras and the legal treatises implementing their practical application by means of a hierarchical judicial system comprise normative sciences devoted to the practical methods by which life should be regulated, persons should be educated and trained, trade, commerce, and economic progress stimulated, and the right ends of human life secured. The *Manu Smṛiti* is the leading Dharma-śāstra and Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* and Kāmandaka's *Nīti-śāstra* are celebrated manuals on polity. The *Mitākṣarā*, the *Dāyabhāga* and other legal treatises purport to be based on the Dharma śāstras, and until recent legislation changed the law in some respects, these governed human and family relationships amongst

Hindus through the centuries. They expounded rules that outlined rights and obligations which were enforced by means of specific sanctions. The King or Ruler for the time being was the final appellate authority but he was bound by the dictates of *dharma* and was obliged to recognize usage and custom founded on the practice of good men in the various parts of the country. Such customs were recognized as valid even though they might be local or regional. The King or *Rājā* was described as the fashioner of the times.

This may have meant, in essence, that the law was not static but could move with the times. The *Manu Dharma-śāstra* contains the teachings of Manu or the primeval man expounded by his pupil Bhṛgu. It purports to set out the rules of living of all sects and communities. Many verses of the *Manu Smṛti* occur in the *Mahābhārata*. There were other Dharma-śāstras also compiled by Nārada, Yājñavalkya, Gautama, Baudhāyana, Āpastamba and others. It is not possible, here and now, fully to discuss the contents or purports of these Dharma śāstras but they belong to a period when, after the Epic Age, India had settled down into social and economic strata. Efforts were made by sages and seers to formulate the rules of life to be followed at each stage of human existence and by the various social and economic groups. The Dharma-śāstras treat social life from the point of view of religion and morality, on the other hand, the Artha śāstras (of which Kautilya's is the most well-knit and logical) take account of all previous literature on the subject and study contemporary states and their politics and social nexus. In the words of Kautilya himself, *artha* is the object of men, and this Śāstra aids in the acquisition and protection of property and the governance of each country. Kautilya himself mentions schools of polity including those of Jaimini, Bādarāyana and others. His *Arthasāstra* is undoubtedly based on the logic of the material interests of kings and monarchs and the means of securing them, and it may be worth while to note that later literary tradition has often assailed Kautilya's utilitarian point of view. Kautilya recognizes the presence of small States and discusses their inter-relations. But basically his outlook is in favour of an expanded empire and he is remarkable in having envisaged the Cakravartī Ksetra as the whole country stretching from the Himalayas to the Southern ocean. As is well-known, Viṣṇu Gupta, or Kautilya, otherwise known as Cānakya, was not only celebrated as a king-maker but is now regarded as the greatest exponent of realistic policies of governance and of methods of diplomacy as applicable to a period of foreign impact and internal disunity.

In general perspective, the *Rāmāyana* may be regarded as describing the penetration of Aryan culture into the whole of India. The *Mahābhārata* not only reflects the culture of a particular age but symbolizes

INTRODUCTION

various forms of struggle between the forces of good and evil. The *Bhagavad-Gītā* is a great work of synthesis and the *Bhāgavata* itself is marked by a great spirit of accommodation.

The *Manu Dharma-sāstra* furnishes detailed instructions regarding social rules and practices. Manu's system is based on a deliberate emphasis on the need and importance of the conservation of social order. It summarized, and insisted upon, custom and convention at a time when they were assailed. Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* and the other *Śāstras* prove that both the practical and theoretical problems of economics and politics were closely studied by our ancients. The Dharma *śāstras* and *Nīti-śāstras* contain lessons invaluable to us relating to the nature and limits of sovereignty, the basis of local government, and records of representative institutions, theories of punishment, the functions of the police and the principles of taxation. A great deal of realism can be perceived in these works side by side with the idealism underlying most Hindu literary and religious efforts.

In the Hindu view of life, ideals and activities were considered to be inter-dependent. Society was viewed as indivisible, and on the reconciliation and equipoise of duties and obligations, whether of individuals, classes or functionaries, the harmony not only of a particular State or community but of the whole creation was held to depend. Life, to quote Professor K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar in his *Rāja Dharma*, was a continuum not interrupted by death, and so were deed and thought.

In dealing with the Dharma-*śāstras*, it must be remembered that a great deal of misunderstanding has arisen from the mistranslation of Manu's term, *varna*. It has always been translated as caste whereas it should be, as rightly pointed out by Vincent Smith, rendered as class or order. The *Manu Dharma-śāstra* realizes the distinction between *varna* and *jāti* (class and birth)—a distinction accentuated in the *Bhagavad Gītā* which speaks of *varnas* as dependent as much on mental equipment as on heritage. The fluidity of the institution of caste and its intrinsic self-regulation have not been rightly appreciated in most studies of Indian institutions.

Finally it is essential to note that, along with the development in North India of literature, ethics, and polity, there was a parallel evolution in the Dravida region described and commented upon by poets and hymnologists. It resulted in notable works like the *Kural* and the literary output of the Saṅgam period and the later didactic, poetic, and gnomic as well as devotional, literature. These composed in the Southern tongues manifest the influence of Aryan culture side by side with the growth of a characteristic and original outlook on life, polity, domestic and political institutions. A recognition of the high position of women, the rapid developments of specific social traditions, and the emergence of new values in several spheres

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

of life which are now discernible are the results of the same genius for assimilation of differing indigenous and even foreign elements, and the same intellectual courage and enterprise that have marked the spread of Indian thought-processes through the millennia. These, it will be realized, find some of their most noteworthy manifestations in the religious and secular writings in this volume by acknowledged experts.

PART I

THE TWO GREAT EPICS

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AS A VEHICLE OF INDIAN CULTURE

ORIGIN OF CLASSICAL SANSKRIT

‘FROM the language of the *Rgveda*’, as Keith observes, ‘we can trace a steady development to Classical Sanskrit, through the later Samhitās and the Brāhmanas’¹ Classical Sanskrit appears already in the Upanisads, especially in the *Katha*, *Kena*, *Prasna*, *Mundaka*, *Māndūkya*, and *Śvetāśvatara*, although archaic forms and expressions are quite frequent. The Sūtra literature carries the development of classical Sanskrit still further. Texts like the *Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra*, the *Āśvalāyana Grhya-Sūtra*, the *Śāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra*, the *Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra*, the *Gobhila Grhya-Sūtra*, the *Gautama Dharma Sūtra*, the *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra*, and the *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra*, are composed in classical Sanskrit prose, but apart from the *mantras* quoted in profusion, archaic forms and expressions are frequently employed for example, *saptadasāni*, *nīrta*, *praskandayitvā*, *darpati*, *lunoti*, *parān-āvṛtta*, *kulamkula*, *yoyuṣyate*, etc. Words like *syāmūla* (blanket), *sūda* (moist earth), *kusindha* (a headless corpse), *kulmi* (the end of a cow’s tail), *vigulpha* (increased, augmented), etc., found in the Sūtra texts, are rarely used in later Sanskrit literature. The *Āpastamba Śrauta-Sūtra*,² for example, uses *dāti* in the sense of ‘cutting’, but the use is rare in classical Sanskrit. Yāska, indeed, says that the use of the verb is confined to the Easterners, while the derivative *dātra* is used by the Northerners³.

Broadly speaking, the Sūtra literature represents a phase of classical Sanskrit anterior to Pāṇini or, in any case, the time when the norm of Pāṇini became finally established. Two other works, the *Nirukta* of Yāska and the *Bṛhaddevatā*, which properly belong to Vedic literature, represent this phase of early classical Sanskrit. The *Nirukta*, in fact, records the first systematic attempt to interpret the verses of the *Rg-Veda* in classical Sanskrit.

BRANCHES OF STUDY IN LATER VEDIC PERIOD

An idea of the various forms of literature and branches of knowledge which came into being towards the end of the later Vedic period can be had from certain references to them in the Upanisads and the Sūtra texts. The *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upanisad*⁴ mentions, in addition to the four Vedas, *itiḥāsa*, *purāṇa*, *vidyās* (arts), *upanisads*, *ślohas* (verses), *sūtras* (aphorisms),

¹ HSL p. 4

² I 2 8 18

³ *Nirukta*, II 2

⁴ II 4 10 The terms *itiḥāsa* and *purāṇa* italicized in this citation and in the following

anuvyākhyānas (glosses), and *vyākhyānas* (explanations) The two latter forms of composition seem to have developed into *bhāṣya*, or regular commentary, at an early date, as the *Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra*⁵ mentions *sūtra* and *bhāṣya* together The *Chāndogya Upanisad*⁶ mentions as subjects of study, in addition to the four Vedas and *itihāsa-purāna*, grammar, mathematics (*rāṣi*), augury (*darva*), the art of locating underground treasure (*nidhi*), dialectics (*vākovākya*), polity (*ekāyana*), the science of the gods (*deva-vidyā*), theosophy (*brahma-vidyā*), demonology (*bhuta vidyā*), the art of government or warfare (*ksatra vidyā*), astronomy (*naksatra vidyā*), serpent lore and the fine arts (*sarpa devajana vidyā*) The emergence of the new branches of study and the importance assigned to them can be seen in the *Gautama Dharma-Sūtra*,⁷ which declares the learned Brāhmana and the king to be responsible for the maintenance and regulation of the social order, and mentions the subjects in which they should be proficient We are told that the king should be trained either in the three Vedas or in *ānvīksikī*,⁸ which is variously explained as *nyāya-vidyā* or *ātma-vidyā*, and which apparently refers to philosophical training Gautama then lays down that the king should carry out his functions in conformity with the tenets of the Vedas, the Dharma śāstras, the Vedāngas, the Upavedas, and the *purāna*⁹ The Vedāngas are *sikṣā* (phonetics), *kalpa* (the ritual Sūtras or manuals), grammar, metrics, astronomy, and *nirukta* (etymology, or rather, the interpretation of the Veda)¹⁰ According to the *Caranavyūha-parisista Sūtra* attributed to Śaunaka, the Upavedas are the Āyur-Veda, the Gāndharva-Veda, the Dhanur-Veda, and the Artha śāstra The learned, or *bahuśruta* Brāhmana, according to Gautama,¹¹ should be conversant with dialectics (*vākovākya*), *itihāsa*, and *purāna*, in addition to the Vedas, the Vedāngas, and what is termed *loka* This appears to be a new branch of study, and is explained as 'customary law or usage', the knowledge of which was necessary for the administration of justice and the regulation of social matters The Dharma-Sūtras, in fact, bear testimony to the widening of the cultural horizon and a wider conception of social responsibilities, as it is evident from the attention paid in them to the administration of justice, crime and punishment, the regulation of trade, the law of inheritance, and allied topics

Much of the Sūtra literature must have been prevalent before the time of Pāṇini, who is generally assigned to the fourth century B C Pāṇini, as we shall see, refers to certain Sūtra texts, and it is evident from his rule

pages stand for compositions lost, or submerged in extant works in an altered form When they stand for the *Rāmāyana* the *Mahābhārata*, and the Purāṇas now available, they are printed in roman with initial capital—ed

⁵ III 4 4 ⁶ VII 1 2

⁷ VIII 1 ff

⁸ XI 3

⁹ XI 21

¹⁰About Vedāngas, see *CHI*, Vol I chs XV and XVI

¹¹ VIII 4 6

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AS A VEHICLE OF INDIAN CULTURE

purāṇaproktesu brāhmaṇa kalpesu that in his time certain Brāhmanas and Kalpa Sūtras were regarded as very ancient. Among the texts not regarded as 'ancient' in his time, the *Kāśikā* mentions the Kalpa of Asmaratha, who as Āsamarathya is already quoted in the *Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra* and the *Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra*. An extensive Sūtra literature seems to have existed in the fifth and sixth centuries B.C., if not earlier, but much of it, probably the greater portion, appears to have perished, as we know practically nothing of the works of the teachers quoted in the extant Sūtras. The Śrauta Sūtras quote, for instance, Āsamarathya, Ālekhaṇa, Gāṇagāri, Taulvali, Kautsa, Gautama, and others, the *Gobhila Grhya Sūtra* cites Mānatantavya, and the Dharma-Sūtras quote Kanva, Kunika, Kautsa, Hārīta, Vātsyāyana, Puskarasādi, Aupajanghani, Kāśyapa, and others. Many other teachers are likewise quoted in the *Nirukta* and the *Brhaddevatā*. Pāṇini¹² mentions the *Bhikṣu Sūtras* of Pārāsarya and Karmanda. It is also noteworthy that the Dharma-Sūtras of Baudhāyana and Āpastamba quote a number of verses, introduced by the expression *udāharanti* (they cite as illustration), from unnamed sources, which points to the existence of a traditional literature on Dharma-sāstra and mythological topics. A verse of this category recording an opinion of Svāyambhuva Manu is quoted also in Yāska's *Nirukta*¹³ while discussing the right of a daughter to the father's property.

The study of grammar was well developed before the time of Yāska who is quoted in the *Brhaddevatā* and was much earlier than Pāṇini. Yāska refers in the *Nirukta* to the views of the grammarians (*vaṛyākaranāḥ*) and authorities like Śākatāyana and Gārgya on grammatical topics.¹⁴ Pāṇini refers to the views of earlier grammarians like Āpīśali,¹⁵ Sphoṭāyana,¹⁶ Śākalya,¹⁷ Bhāradvāja,¹⁸ Gārgya,¹⁹ Kāśyapa,²⁰ and Śākatāyana.²¹ The works of these ancient grammarians have not come down to us, and we know very little about them beyond what is intimated by Pāṇini.

EARLY PHASE OF CLASSICAL SANSKRIT PRIOR TO THE CHRISTIAN ERA

An extensive literature appears to have grown up in early classical Sanskrit before and after the time of Pāṇini. The Vedic language became a thing of the past, more and more difficult to understand, and was superseded by classical Sanskrit as the vehicle of an ever widening culture and new and varied forms of literature and thought. We shall here confine ourselves to a few indications about the new literature in its early phase prior to the Christian era.

¹² IV 3 110 111

¹³ VI 1 92

¹⁴ VII 2 63

¹⁵ III 4

¹⁶ VI 1 123

¹⁷ VIII 3 20

¹⁸ I 12, IX 5 XIII 9 etc

¹⁹ VIII 3 19

²⁰ I 2 25

²¹ VIII 3 18

Itihāsa and *purāna* occupy a prominent place among the literary forms that arose in the later Vedic and the early classical period. The *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*,²² after mentioning the *Rg Veda*, the *Yajur-Veda*, and the *Sāma-Veda*, speaks of the *Atharva Veda* as the fourth Veda and *itihāsa purāna* as the fifth among the works studied by Nāiada. The *Āśvalāyana Grhya-Sūtra*²³ includes *itihāsa purāna* in the study of sacred lore (*svādhyāya*) along with the four Vedas, the Brāhmanas, the Kalpa Sūtras, etc. *Itihāsa* and *purāna* are also separately mentioned, which shows that they formed two varieties of an allied class of composition. The *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra*²⁴ quotes certain verses from a *purāna*, and in I 10 29 7 it gives a prose extract from the same source. A brief quotation from a *Bhaviṣyat Purāna* occurs in *Āpastamba*, II 9 24 6. The citations in *Āpastamba* deal with Dharma sāstra topics, but the *purānas* must have included also myths and legends, to judge from later examples. *Itihāsa* and *purāna* texts were occasionally recited in later Vedic ritual. A notable example of this is found in connection with the horse sacrifice, in the *pāriplava* recitations which took place on ten successive days, and were repeated in the same order throughout the year in the course of which the sacred horse was allowed to roam at large. On the eighth day, a *purāna* text was recited before an audience of *Puṇjisthas*²⁵ explained as fishermen, and on the ninth day, too, an *itihāsa* text was recited before a gathering of *brahmacārins*, or students of the Veda. Similarly, in the *śānti karma*, or the propitiatory rite, prescribed in *Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra*,²⁶ the participants kindle and attend upon the sacred fire far into the night, reciting auspicious *itihāsas* and *purānas*. A similar reference to *itihāsa* occurs in *Gobhila Grhya Sūtra*.²⁷

Itihāsa was originally a legend connected with a Vedic hymn. Yāska's *Nirukta* recounts a few of them, and gives, in fact, the earliest extant prose version of *itihāsa* legends in classical Sanskrit. We may refer, for instance, to the well known story of the brothers Devāpī and Śamtanu.²⁸

Yāska refers also to the views of the *aitihāsikas*, that is, those who were familiar with the traditional legends, and who may be regarded as the exponents of the *itihāsa* literature of which so little has survived. The *nairuktas*, for instance, interpreted Vṛtra as a rain cloud, while, according to the *aitihāsikas*, he was a demon.²⁹ They also regarded the Āsvins as two kṛmgs who had done pious deeds.³⁰

^(*) References to *itihāsa* occur in the *Bṛhaddevatā*, which is later than

²² VII 1 2

²³ III 3 1

²⁴ I 6 19 13 15, II 9 23 3 5

²⁵ This is the reading in *Āśv. Śr. Sū.*, II 4 7. The *Śāṅkh. Śr. Sū.*, an earlier text, reads *matsyavidah* and puts *itihāsa* on the eighth day and *purāna* on the ninth, without varying the audience.

²⁶ IV 6

²⁷ I 6 6

²⁸ II 10

²⁹ II 16

³⁰ XII 1

Yāska and earlier than Pāṇini and ascribed to about the fifth century B C.³¹ The *Brhaddevatā*, in several places, points out what hymns are regarded as, or contain, *itihāsa*.³² The work, in fact, contains in verse a large number of legends connected with the hymns of the *Rg-Veda*, and 'comprises the oldest systematic collection of legends which we possess in Sanskrit'. It narrates, for instance, the *itihāsa* of Devāpi and Śamtanu³³ already related by Yāska. At a later stage, this story appears as part of a wider tradition in the *Mahābhārata*³⁴ where a third brother is mentioned—the name of the father is different—and Śamtanu has become Śāmtanu. It is probable that a part of the lost *itihāsa purāṇa* literature was incorporated in the *Mahābhārata*, the nucleus of which must be put in the early stages of classical Sanskrit. The conception of *itihāsa* seems also to have undergone a change in the course of time. In the *Artha śāstra* of Kautilya, which refers to *itihāsa* as a Veda,³⁵ the study of *itihāsa* is assigned an important place in the education of a prince, and is said to comprise *purāṇa*, *ituvṛtta* (record of past events), *ākhyāyikā*, *udaharana* (illustration), *Dharma śāstra*, and *Aithaśāstra* or the science of polity.³⁶ The substitution of the name of *Mahābhārata*, as we know it, in the place of *itihāsa* would have served the purpose of Kautilya equally well.

A 'Bharata' epic appears to have existed prior to the Sūtra literature and the grammar of Pāṇini. The *Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra*³⁷ mentions *sūtra*, *bhāṣya*, *bhārata*, *mahābhārata*, and *dharmācāryas* together. Pāṇini³⁸ recognizes the word *mahābhārata* and provides for the accent. Vāsudeva and Arjuna were well known before the time of Pāṇini, as he provides for the formations *vāsudevaka* and *arjunaka* to denote the followers of Vāsudeva and Arjuna respectively.³⁹ Patañjali remarks that Vāsudeva here is not the name of a Kṣatriya, it is the name of 'His Honour', which shows that Vāsudeva was more than a mythological figure in his time.⁴⁰

Apart from *itihāsa* and *purāṇa*, two other forms of narrative composition were in vogue in early classical Sanskrit, *ākhyāyikā* and *ākhyāna*. The *ākhyāyikā* class of composition is mentioned in the *vārttika* on Pāṇini IV 3 87 (*adhikṛtya kṛte granthe*), and the *Mahābhāṣya* of Patañjali (second century B C) here names three works as examples of this kind of composition. *Vāsavadattā*, *Sumanottarā*, and *Bhaimarathī*. To judge from the later story of *Vāsavadattā*, these seem to have been romantic tales. The *Mahābhāṣya* on Pāṇini, IV 2.60, cites also the forms *vāsavadattika* and *saumanottarika* to denote one who studies or is acquainted with the

³¹ *Brhaddevatā* (Ed. Macdonell) Introd. p. xxiii

³² VI 107, 109 VII 7 153 ³³ *Brhaddevatā* VII 9, VII 155

³⁴ V, 149 14 28

³⁵ I 3 p 7

³⁶ I 5 p 10

³⁷ III 4

³⁸ VI 2 38

³⁹ IV 3 98

⁴⁰ *Athavā naisā kṣatṛyākhya saṃjñāisā tatra bhavatah*

ākhyāyikās or romances of *Vāsavadattā* and *Sumanottarā* With regard to *ākhyāna*, Patañjali cites the forms *yāvakrītika*, *praiyāngavika*, and *yāyātika* to denote one who studies or is acquainted with the *ākhyānas* or stories of Yavakrīta, Priyangu, and Yayāti Patañjali does not explain the difference between *ākhyāna* and *ākhyāyikā*, but it may be surmised that the *ākhyāna* was perhaps a form of tale simpler than the *ākhyāyikā* Study and acquaintance (*tad adhīte tad veda*) presuppose a fairly long period of development, and texts which were studied in Patañjali's time must have been composed much earlier than the second century B C That there was an ancient version of the story of Yayāti seems certain, as is evident from the *gāthā*, quoted in *Baudhāyana Dharma-Sūtra*,⁴¹ which is part of a dialogue (*saṃvāda*) between Śarmisthā, the daughter of Vrsaparvan, and Devayānī, the daughter of Usanas The distinctive character of *ākhyāna* as a form of literary composition seems to have been lost at an early date, and *ākhyāyikā* alone is mentioned in certain other texts The *Artha śāstra* of Kautilya⁴² mentions *purāna*, *itivṛtta*, *ākhyāyikā*, etc together, while the *Caraka Samhitā*⁴³ mentions proficiency in *śloka*, *ākhyāyikā*, *itihāsa*, and *purāna* as a characteristic of the Gāndharva type of men The *ākhyānas* and *ākhyāyikās* were no doubt in verse and seem to have been a popular form of narrative literature in the early classical period It may, however, be noted that the ancient story of Śunahśepa found in the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa* and the *Sāṅkhāyana Śrauta-Sūtra* and described as an *ākhyāna* is composed in a mixed form of later Vedic prose and verse, and includes, besides, verses from the *Rg Veda*

Works on the art of dancing seem to have been composed at an early stage of classical Sanskrit Pāṇini refers to the *Nata-Sūtras* of Śilālin and those of Kṛśāśva⁴⁴ The *Mahābhāṣya*⁴⁵ speaks of the dancers of the school of Śilālin, and Pāṇini, in fact, provides for the forms *śailālinah* and *kṛśāśvinah* to denote those who study the *Nata-Sūtras* of Śilālin and Kṛśāśva respectively Pāṇini provides also for the formation of the word 'nāṭya' to denote the *dharma* (vocation) and the *āmnāya* (traditional lore) of the *nata* (dancer)⁴⁶ The vocation of a *nāṭyācārya* (dancing teacher) is mentioned in *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra*,⁴⁷ and the early development of the allied arts of acting and dancing is shown by the mention of *kauśīlava* in *Gobhila Grhya Sūtra*⁴⁸ The *Mahābhāṣya*⁴⁹ speaks of a *naṭa* as *raśika* or a person skilled in the expression of the emotions

⁴¹ II 4 27

⁴² I 5 p 10

⁴³ Ed Vaidya J T Acharya 2nd Ed (Nirnaya Sagar Press, Bombay, 1935), IV 4 43

⁴⁴ IV 3 110 111

⁴⁵ Ed F Kielhorn, 2nd Ed (Bombay, 1906) II p 206 *śailāline naṭāḥ* (on IV 2 66)

⁴⁶ *Kāśikā* on IV 3 129

⁴⁷ II 2 5

⁴⁸ III 1 17

⁴⁹ On Pāṇini V 2 95, II p 394 (Kielhorn, 2nd Ed)

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AS A VEHICLE OF INDIAN CULTURE

While we are not aware of any dramatic composition in the early classical period, Patañjali in the *Mahābhāṣya*⁵⁰ refers to the *ākhyāna* of *Kamsavadha* (the killing of Kamsa) and that of *Balibandha* (the binding of Bali) which appear to have been recited.⁵¹ The *śobhanikas* mentioned by Patañjali as 'killing' Kamsa or 'binding' Bali before one's eyes seem to be professional players who accompanied their recital with dramatic action.⁵²

It may be noted here that even the ancient *ākhyāna* of Śunahsepa was recited in a rather spectacular fashion in the *rājasūya* sacrifice. After the ceremonial bath of the king, the *hotr* priest, seated on a golden cushion, recited to the king, surrounded by his sons and courtiers, the story of Śunahsepa in prose and verse, and the *adhvaryu* priest, also seated on a golden cushion, responded by uttering *Om* at the end of each *Rg-Veda* verse and *tathā* at the end of each *gāthā* or Brāhmaṇa verse recited by the other. We are told that not only in the *rājasūya*, but also after a victory in war, the king should have this story recited (*ākhyāpayeta*).⁵³

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AND PHILOSOPHICAL AND ETHICO RELIGIOUS IDEALS

The gradual development of the philosophical schools must be placed in the early classical period. The *śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad*, which is a fairly early work, to judge from the archaic forms used in it, refers to *sāṃkhya-yoga*⁵⁴ and to the control of breath and the practice of *yoga* and the signs of perfection in *yoga*.⁵⁵ The same work refers also to those who regard *svabhāva* and *kāla* respectively as the ultimate cause.⁵⁶ The *Katha Upaniṣad*⁵⁷ defines *yoga* as the firm concentration of the senses on the Self (*indriya-dhāraṇā*). The Upaniṣads formulate the basic doctrine of the Vedānta, and the *Mundaka Upaniṣad*⁵⁸ refers to those who have thoroughly discerned the goal by means of the knowledge of the Vedānta. The *Gautama Dharma-Sūtra*⁵⁹ mentions the Upaniṣads and the Vedānta separately among the sanctifying texts. The same text⁶⁰ and the *Mahābhārata*⁶¹ refer to *ānvīkṣikī* which is explained as *jñāna kāṇḍa* in Nīlakantha's commentary. The *Arthaśāstra* of Kautilya⁶² defines *ānvīkṣikī* as comprising Sāṃkhya, Yoga, and the materialistic Lokāyata doctrine which is mentioned also in Patañjali's *Mahābhāṣya*.⁶³ *Ānvīkṣikī* seems to signify philosophical knowledge, the *darśana* of later times.

⁵⁰ On Pāṇini, III 1 26 II p 34 (Kielhorn 2nd Ed.)

⁵¹ Ed Kielhorn 2nd Ed II p 34 *Ākhyānāt krdantānniṣṭ vaktavyas tad ācāsta ityetasmin narthe Kamsavadham ācāste Kamsam ghātayati Balibandham ācāste Balim bandhayati*

⁵² Ibid, p 36 *Iha tu katham vartamānakālātā Kamsam ghātayati Balim bandhayati cīrahate Kamse cīrabaddhe ca Balau Atrāpi yuktā—Katham? Ye tāvad ete śobhanikā nāmāste pratyaksam Kamsam ghātayanti pratyaksam ca Balim bandhayanti*

⁵³ II 3 3

⁵⁴ VI 13

⁵⁵ II 9 ff

⁵⁶ VI 1

⁵⁷ II 3 11

⁵⁸ III 2 6

⁵⁹ XIX 13

⁶⁰ XI 3

⁶¹ XII 59 33

⁶² I 2, p 6

⁶³ On Pāṇini, VII 3 45, Kielhorn 2nd Ed II pp 325 6

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

The Upanisads, in spite of their preoccupation with the knowledge of Brahman and the method of self realization, contain moral precepts, as in the *Taittirīya* ⁶⁴ The ethical ideals of man are more elaborately propounded in the Dharma Sūtras which belong to the earlier strata of classical Sanskrit The *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra* ⁶⁵ inculcates the destruction of the evil propensities known as *bhūta dāhīya*, those which consume sentient beings. They are stated to be anger, levity, hatred, greed, delusion, arrogance, ill will, falsehood, gluttony, calumny, envy, lust, discontent, and the lack of self control These constitute *ayoga* (mental distraction), and can be eradicated by *yoga* or the factors leading to the concentration of thought These are freedom from anger and the like, charity, renunciation, sincerity, kindness, equanimity, self-control, friendliness to all creatures, earnestness, nobility, the avoidance of cruelty, and contentment The *Gautama Dharma Sūtra* ⁶⁶ enumerates the eight cardinal virtues (*ātmagunāḥ*) and proclaims their superiority to the forty *samskāras* (religious rites and sacraments) The *ātmagunas* are kindness to all creatures, forbearance, freedom from envy, purity, ease, right conduct, magnanimity, and contentment The *Baudhāyana Dharma-Sūtra* ⁶⁷ quotes an archaic verse which declares He who has no self restraint, who is fat, impetuous, and loudly roaring like a humped bull, and who hurts living creatures and speaks according to his pleasure does not reach the abode of gods, but those who are lean by keeping short of food go thither In such utterances as these we can trace the ethico religious ideals of Indian culture as they emerge in the early classical Sanskrit texts

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AND THE TECHNICAL SCIENCES

Some progress in the study of the technical sciences seems to have been made by the end of the Vedic period Mathematics (*rāsi*) and astronomy (*nakṣatra-vidyā*) are included in the list of subjects mentioned as being studied by Nārada in the *Chāndogya Upanisad* ⁶⁸ A knowledge of the stars was necessary for the performance of Vedic sacrifices, and astronomy (*jyotiṣa*) was a recognized Vedāṅga The *Sulba Sūtras*, which deal with *rajju samāsa* or the employment of the cords by means of which the various sacrificial areas are measured out, provide the geometrical knowledge required for the correct performance of Vedic sacrifices, and employ a number of technical terms The cultivation of music in connection with later Vedic ritual is illustrated by references to persons who sang ceremonial *gāthās* to the lyre, as in the *Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra* ⁶⁹ and in the *Sāṅkhāyana Śrauta Sūtra* ⁷⁰ where is found the expression

⁶⁴ I 11

⁶⁵ VII 1 2

⁶⁶ I 8 23 3

⁶⁷ I 14 (*vīnāgāthīnau*)

⁶⁸ VIII 20 21

⁶⁹ XVI 1 25

⁷⁰ I 5 10 32

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AS A VEHICLE OF INDIAN CULTURE

vināganaginah, those who sang to the lyre panegyrics in honour of the king in the horse sacrifice. The playing on lyres was a conspicuous feature of the *mahāvratā* sacrifice, and the same text⁷¹ indicates how the hundred-stringed lyre (*śatatantrī*) is to be made, and mentions other varieties of the lyre like *kāṇḍavīṇā* and *picchorā*. Here, the *udgātr* priest was the first to start the music.

Certain minor topics of study are indicated in the *Mahābhāṣya*,⁷² which cites the forms *vāyasavidyā*, *gaṇḍakṣanikā*, *āśvalakṣanikā*, and *āṅgavidyā* to denote respectively experts in 'the science of crows' or augury, the characteristics of cattle and horses, and *āṅgavidyā* which seems to mean physiognomy. Patañjali here cites also the form *ksātravidyā*, an expert in *ksātra-vidyā* which is already mentioned in the *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*,⁷³ and appears to mean the art of war. The same Upaniṣad mentions also serpent lore as a subject of study, and it may be noted that a *sarpa-vidyā* text was recited before a group of men well-versed in serpent lore (*sarpavidah*) on the fifth day of the *pārīplava* recitations in connection with the horse sacrifice. The *Āśvalāyana Śrauta-Sūtra* here reads *viśa vidyā*, or poison lore, in place of *sarpa-vidyā* which is the reading of Śāṅkhāyana.⁷⁴

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AND MEDICINE

Vaidyaka or medicine is mentioned in Patañjali's *Mahābhāṣya*⁷⁵ as a recognized branch of study along with the four Vedas and the Vedāṅgas, Itihāsa, and Purāṇa. But medicine as a subject of study must be older than the second century B.C., and there appears to have been an extensive medical literature in early classical Sanskrit. It is stated in the *Mahābhārata*⁷⁶ that Nārada promulgated the musical arts (*gāndharva*), Bharadvāja the method of archery, Gārgya the history (*carita*) of the divine sages, and Kṛṣṇātreya the art of healing (*cikitsitam*). It is clear from *Caraka Samhitā*⁷⁷ that Kṛṣṇātreya is the same as Ātreya or Ātreya Punarvasu, who is represented throughout that work as expounding his tenets to Agniveśa.

It is stated in the *Caraka Samhitā*⁷⁸ that Punarvasu Ātreya had six disciples, Agniveśa, Bhela, Jatūkarna, Parāśara, Hārīta, and Kṣārapāni, who studied Āyur-Veda under him. Of them Agniveśa was the first to compose a systematic treatise (*tantra*), after which Bhela and the others composed their own *tantras*. It is well known that the *samhitā* of Caraka is based on the *tantra* of Agniveśa, and besides, it records the views

⁷¹ XVII 3 14

⁷² VII 1 2

⁷³ XII 210

⁷⁴ On Pāṇini IV 2 60 (Kielhorn 2nd Ed.), II p 284

⁷⁵ XVI 2 15

⁷⁶ I 11 65

⁷⁷ On Pāṇini I 1 1

⁷⁸ I 1 30 33

of numerous other authorities, e.g. Kuśa Sāṅkṛtyāyana, Kumāraśiras, Bhairadvāja, Kāṅkāyana, Badiśa, Vāyorvida, Marīci, Kāpya, Vāmaka (king of Kāśī), Maudgalya, Śaśaloman, Hiraṇyākṣa, Kauśika, Bhadrakāpya, Bhikṣu, Ātreya, Śākunteya Brāhmaṇa, Nimi, and others. The deliberations of these scholars under the leadership of Ātreya are vividly described in Caraka's compilation,⁷⁷ and they are thus represented as contemporaries of Ātreya and Agniveśa.

The extant *Susruta Samhitā* also appears to be a compilation like the work of Caraka, and mentions in *Sūtrasthāna*⁸⁰ four earlier *tantras* *Aupadhenava*, *Aurabhra*, *Sausruta*, and *Pauskalāvata*, described as the sources of the remaining *Śalya tantras*. There is a Chinese Buddhist tradition that Caraka was the physician of Kaniska (first second century A.D.) Suśruta, Ātreya, Bhela, Kāpya, Parāsara, Halīta, Kṣārapāni, Jātūkarnya, and others are mentioned in the Bower Manuscript assigned to the fourth century A.D. This only shows that the Sanskrit writers on medicine were well known in Buddhist circles in the early centuries of the Christian era.

It is noteworthy that the early Sanskrit treatises on medicine were called *tantras* and not *samhitās*. The word *tantra* begins to appear in the Sūtra literature in the sense of 'customary regulations', 'procedure', etc., for examples, see the *Gautama Dharma Sūtra*,⁸¹ the *Āpastamba Śrauta-Sūtra*,⁸² and the *Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra*.⁸³ Patañjali in the *Mahābhāṣya*⁸⁴ cites the expressions *sarvaveda* and *sarvatantra* in the sense of 'one who studies or is conversant with all the Vedas or all the *tantras*'. He cites also the expression *dvitantra* in the same sense. The use of the term to denote a systematic treatise appears to be well established in the age of Patañjali. Very few early works are, however, known to have been called *tantras* if we leave aside certain texts of the *Sāma Veda* schools like the *Rkṭantra* and the *Sāmatantra*, and the medical treatises composed by Agniveśa and others. The early medical *tantras* may be presumed to have existed in Patañjali's time, and this is made probable by his reference to *vaidyaka* as a recognized branch of study. Apart from individual works, some of the branches of the Āyur-Veda were also styled as *tantras*, e.g. *agada-tantra*, *vājīkarana-tantra*, *rasāyana tantra*. The *samhitā* of Caraka refers to physicians expert in *ksāra-tantra* in connection with *ksāra prayoga* or application of acrid remedies.⁸⁵ Early specialization is shown also by the reference to a *kaumārabhrtya*, or an expert in children's diseases, in Kautilya's *Artha śāstra*,⁸⁶ this being a recognized branch of the Āyur-Veda.

⁷⁷ I 12, 25, 26

⁸⁰ IV 9

⁸¹ II 4 11, II 9 24

⁸² I 5 1, V 6 30

⁸³ I 12

⁸⁴ On Pāṇini, IV 2 60, Kielhorn, 2nd Ed., II p. 284

⁸⁵ VI 5 64

⁸⁶ I 17, p. 33

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AS A VEHICLE OF INDIAN CULTURE

CLASSICAL SANSKRIT AND THE POLITY

The date of Kautilya's *Artha śāstra* is disputed, but it is not thought to be later than the first century B.C. It is stated at the very beginning of the work that it has been compiled from all the *Artha śāstras* composed by previous teachers. It is well known that Kautilya's work cites the views of various schools, such as the Mānavas, the Bārhaspatyas, the Auśanasas, the Pārāśaras, and the Āmbhīyas, as well as those of individual authors like Viśālākṣa, Parāśara, Vāṭavyādhi, Bhāradvāja, Piśuna, Bāhudantīputra, Kaunapadanta, and others. The *Śāntiparvan* of the *Mahābhārata*, which devotes more than one hundred chapters to *rāja dharma* or the duties and responsibilities of kings, likewise mentions certain ancient authors on *rāja śāstra*, or the science of politics, like Bihaspati, Viśālākṣa, Kāvya (Usanas), Indra, Prācetasa Manu, Bhāradvāja, and Gaurasīras,⁸⁷ and refers also to ancient treatises on *Nīti śāstra*, or *dandanīti*, like *Vaiśālākṣa*, *Bāhudantaka*, *Bārhaspatya*, and that composed by Kāvya (Usanas).⁸⁸ The similarities in the names of ancient authorities mentioned in the *Mahābhārata* and the *Artha śāstra* of Kautilya points to a common tradition which presupposes a long period of development of the *Artha-śāstra* literature in early classical Sanskrit. The *Śāntiparvan*⁸⁹ and the *Artha śāstra*⁹⁰ both mention *vārtā* and *dandanīti* together, the one referring to agriculture, the rearing of animals, and commerce, as explained in Kautilya,⁹¹ and the other to the science of government which henceforth becomes an important branch of study.

The growth of early classical Sanskrit poetry is outside the scope of this discussion, as the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* receive detailed treatment in this volume.⁹² It is noteworthy that Pingala's *Chandaḥ-Sūtra*, which is recognized as a *Vedāṅga*, deals mostly with classical Sanskrit metres, and is apparently based on the poetry of the time. Patañjali's *Mahābhāṣya*⁹³ mentions a *Vāraruca-kāvya*, and cites here and there a verse or a line from contemporary or earlier poems. For example, the line *prathate tvayā patimatī prthivī* ('the wide earth is really wide with thee as lord') in the *pramitāksarā* metre foreshadows the panegyric in *kāvya* style. The growth of secular poetry was, in fact, one of the most important factors in the evolution of classical Sanskrit literature broadening and humanizing the basis of Indian culture.

⁸⁷ XII 58 13

⁸⁸ XII 59 82 85

⁸⁹ XII 59 33

⁹⁰ I 4, pp 8 9

⁹¹ I 4 p 8

⁹² Cf Chapters II and IV *infra*

⁹³ On Pāṇini IV 3 101 Kielhorn 2nd Ed., II p 315

THE RĀMĀYANA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

THE *Rāmāyana*,¹ along with the *Mahābhārata* and the Purāṇas, constitutes the epic literature of India, comprising the Itihāsa and the Purāṇa, the study of which has been rightly stressed as necessary for the correct interpretation of the Vedas. For over two thousand years, the *Rāmāyana*, like the *Mahābhārata*, has been influencing deeply the religious and moral thought as well as the literary production in India. 'In fact, the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* are', declared Swami Vivekananda, 'the two encyclopaedias of the ancient Aryan life and wisdom, portraying an ideal civilization, which humanity has yet to aspire after'.² According to Macdonell, 'Probably no work of world literature, secular in its origin, has ever produced so profound an influence on the life and thought of a people as the *Rāmāyana*'.³

ORIGIN OF THE EPICS

The origin of the epics, as that of all forms of Indian literature, has been traced to the Vedas. There is, however, a difference of opinion as regards the particular portion of the *Rg-Veda* which is to be taken as the source of the epics. Oldenberg, who styled the *samvāda* (dialogue) hymns of the *Rg-Veda* (such as X 10 and X 95) as *ākhyānas* (ballads), started a theory that the oldest form of epic poetry in India consisted of prose and verse, of which the latter, containing speeches, was fixed and committed to memory. The *samvādas* have preserved only the verse portion containing dialogues, the prose portion comprising the narrative has been lost.⁴ This *ākhyāna* theory was opposed by Max Muller and Lévi, who, however, discovered the germs of dramatic literature in the *samvāda* hymns, while Hertel and von Schroeder worked out a theory that the *samvāda* hymns constituted but the speeches pertaining to some dramatic performance connected with the religious ritual.⁵ After stating these different views about

¹ For writing the section on the origin and development of the Rāma story in this chapter, the author records his special indebtedness to Dr. Bulcke's excellent work in Hindi entitled *Rāmakathā*, though he has looked up the original sources and several other books and articles. The introduction to the Critical Edition of the *Rāmāyana* has been utilized in writing about the text history of the *Rāmāyana*.

² *Complete Works*, IV 4th Ed., p. 97.

³ *ERE*, X p. 574.

⁴ Oldenberg, 'Das altindische Akhyāna', *ZDMG* 37 (1883), pp. 54 ff., 'Akhyānahymnen im Rgveda', *ZDMG*, 39 (1885), pp. 52 ff., *Die literatur des alten Indien*, p. 46.

⁵ Lévi, *Le Théâtre Indien*, pp. 301 ff., Hertel, *Indische Märchen*, pp. 344, 367 f., L. von Schroeder, *Mysterium und Mimus im Rgveda*, Leipzig, 1908.

the nature of the *śamvāda* hymns, Winternitz styles them as 'ancient ballads' and holds them to be the source of both the epic and the drama—the epic having been developed from the narrative, and the drama from the dramatic elements of the 'ancient ballad' ⁶ Though the epics can thus be connected with the *śamvāda* hymns by the fact that both have a narrative to tell, there are essential differences between them as regards form and purpose

The *gāthā-nārāśamsīs* (songs in praise of men), *ākhyānas* (narratives), *itihāsa* (legend), *purāna* (ancient tale), and similar other topics in the Brāhmanas whose recital formed an essential part of religious ceremonies at the sacrificial and domestic rituals, however, supplied real parallelisms with epic poetry, approaching it both in language and metre, thus supplying a significant link in the development of epic literature. From a comparatively short extent and simple subject matter the *gāthā nārāśamsīs* gradually developed into lengthy ballads and various song cycles with intricate plots. The *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* represent but the finished products of this antecedent process, which naturally had some intermediate stages. Some episodes, like those of Sāvitrī and of Nala, which originally constituted independent epics, were later incorporated into the *Mahābhārata*, in the same way as the *Rāmāyana* received similar episodes.

Attention may be drawn in this context to the differences between the epics and the earlier Vedic literature, which was mainly sacerdotal both in origin and in character. While the latter rose among the priestly class and was confined to it, as far as the transmission was concerned, not being intended for the general public, the former, though originating with the priestly class, was taken up by the *sūtas* (professional bards) for popularization among the masses. There is a difference of opinion among scholars as to the exact nature and function of these *sūtas*, especially in the beginning some regard them as Brāhmana sages, the reciters of the Purānas, while others take them to be the progeny of *pratiloma* marriage. At any rate, it is undisputed that the later *sūtas* served as charioteers also, and being eye-witnesses of the battle scenes they gave first hand descriptions of what they saw, in their ballads. The epics, further, differed from the earlier literature regarding their subject matter which was distinct from praises of the deities, sacrificial details, or high philosophical speculations which formed the main characteristics of the latter. The epics, on the other hand, dealt with the deeds of kings and heroes, descriptions of wars, and practical philosophy. At first confined to the royal courts as court chronicles, once these epics came into the hands of the *sūtas*, they reached a larger circle comprising the entire populace. The *kuśīlavas*, or travelling singers, also

played not an insignificant role in presenting the epics to the general public

As will be explained in a later section, the *Rāmāyana* calls itself a *kāvya*, an *ākhyāna*, and an *itihāsa*, as well as a work dealing with *dharma*, *artha*, and *kāma*

STORY OF THE RĀMĀYANA

From the floating mass of the Rāma story current in his time, Vālmīki composed an ornate poem, which was subjected to additions of various kinds in subsequent times. The *Rāmāyana* (the word literally means the history of Rāma) of Vālmīki, to which normally the term '*Rāmāyana*' is applied, comprises, in its present form, seven Books containing about 24,000 stanzas. Before dealing with the problem of the transmission of the text of the *Rāmāyana*, let us consider the origin and development of the Rāma story. In order to understand the origin of the Rāma story in its proper perspective, it is necessary that we should know the story as presented by Vālmīki.⁷

Bereft of the additional matter, the story of the *Rāmāyana* may be told in brief outline as follows.—As a result of the palace intrigue, Rāma, the eldest son of Daśaratha, the king of Ayodhyā, is banished into the forest to the south in exile for fourteen years, after the arrangements for his installation as heir apparent were made complete, and Bharata, a younger son of Daśaratha who was with his maternal uncle at that time, is declared heir apparent instead. Rāma's wife, Sītā, and Lakṣmana, his younger step-brother, accompany him to the forest. Broken hearted at the separation from his beloved son, Rāma, Daśaratha dies. Bharata, on his return from his maternal uncle's residence, refuses kingship, follows Rāma to the forest, and entreats him to return and accept his rightful position, he is persuaded to go back to Ayodhyā as Rāma's regent only after the latter promised to rule as the king, after completing the period of his exile. Some time passes, and Rāvana, the king of Lankā, abducts Sītā from Janasthāna, and carries her to Lankā. After several adventures in the forest, in the course of his search for Sītā, Rāma enters into an alliance with Sugrīva, whom he places on the throne of Kiśkindhā after killing his brother Vālī. After crossing the waters, Rāma invades Lankā with the aid of Sugrīva's army. Bibhīṣana, the younger brother of Rāvana, deserts the latter, and joins Rāma. After a fierce battle, Rāvana is killed along with his sons, other relatives, and army. Rāma recovers Sītā and returns

⁷ For the story of the *Rāmāyana*, see Swami Vivekananda, *Complete Works*, Part IV, 4th Ed (1933), pp 59-73, Macdonell, *ERE*, X pp 576-8, Winternitz, *HIL*, I pp 479-95, Oman *The Great Indian Epics*, pp 19 ff. Belvalkar, *Uttara rāma carita*, (HOS), introd, pp xlviii-lv (Bombay recension)

THE RĀMĀYANA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

to Ayodhyā After an ideal rule for a period, Rāma abandons Sītā on hearing a scandal about her spreading among his subjects on account of her stay in Lankā Two sons are born to Sītā Rāma later performs the horse sacrifice After crowning Kusa, who had his headquarters at Kuśasthalī, and Lava, who had his capital at Śrāvastī, Rāma departs to heaven along with Bharata, Śatrughna, and the citizens of Ayodhyā, Lakṣmana having died earlier

ORIGIN OF THE RĀMA STORY

Though the whole story of the *Rāmāyana*, as summarized here, is a unit in itself, various scholars have declared the *Rāmāyana* to be an amalgamation of two, three, or four, different elements, namely the palace intrigue resulting in the banishment of the hero, abduction of Sītā, legends about Rāvana, and legends about Hanūmat and ape worship According to these views, the banishment of Rāma is the only element in the story having a historical basis

Lassen, who may be said to have inaugurated the *Rāmāyana* studies, stated that the *Rāmāyana* had developed in four stages, indicating the work to be an allegorical representation of the Aryan conquest of the South According to him, the original version of the poem did not carry the narrative beyond the banishment of Rāma to the Himalayas and the factors that led his wife Sītā and brother Lakṣmana to accompany him in his exile In the revision that followed, the place of banishment was changed to the Godāvarī, and a description was given of the protection afforded by Rāma to the hermits from the onslaughts of the aborigines The account of the first attempts to subdue the inhabitants of the Deccan constituted the next revision, while in the final amplification, which resulted from the knowledge gained by the Hindus of the island of Ceylon, the description of Rāma's expedition against Lankā was incorporated^a After Lassen, Weber discussed in a comprehensive manner all the problems of the *Rāmāyana* His conclusion that the *Daśaratha Jātaka* is the source of Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* has been controverted by several scholars, including Bulcke, on the principal ground that the *Daśaratha Jātaka* is a late work, based on oral tradition in Ceylon, which arose centuries after the *Rāmāyana* Further, as the *Daśaratha Jātaka* is silent about the abduction of Sītā and the description of the fight, Weber promulgated his theory of Vālmīki's indebtedness to Homer, which has rightly been assailed by subsequent scholars like Telang, Jacobi, Vaidya, Hopkins, and Bulcke

The most comprehensive and systematic treatment of the several topics connected with the *Rāmāyana* came from Jacobi in his *Das Rāmāyana*

^a *Indische Alterthumskunde*, II p 505

With regard to the origin and development of the Rāma story, Jacobi considers it to have been the result of the blending of history and allegory. He takes the palace intrigue and the exile to have real historical basis. According to him, the second part, dealing with the abduction of Sītā and the killing of Rāvana, has its source in the *Rg Veda*, and it represents the narration of terrestrial events based on mythological elements taken from the *Rg Veda*. Sītā, the name of the heroine of the *Rāmāyana*, is the goddess of agriculture in the *Rg-Veda*, and in the *Rāmāyana*, she is spoken of as having arisen from the earth and as finally disappearing into the arms of the Mother Earth. Her husband Rāma would then represent Indra, and the former's fight with the demon Rāvana would be but a portrayal of the Vedic Indra-Vrtra conflict. In this connection, Jacobi refers to the significance of the use of the name 'Indrasātru', an epithet of Vrtra in the *Rg-Veda*, and Rāvana's son Indrajit in the *Rāmāyana*, where again, Hanumat, the chief ally of Rāma, is called 'Māruti', son of the Maruts, reminiscent of Indra's association with Maruts, the storm gods. Further, the name of the bitch Saramā, who crosses the river Rasā in search of the captured cows for Indra, occurs in the *Rāmāyana* as that of a demoness who consoles Sītā when she was in Rāvana's captivity. Jacobi, thus, would see in the *Rāmāyana* a blending of a historical event with the Vedic myth.⁹ The attempts of Julian v Neglein to discover 'the outline of the Rāma-Sītā legend' in the Vedas have been characterized as 'fantastic expositions' by Winternitz.¹⁰

D C Sen traces the origin of Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* to three sources: (1) the *Dasaratha Jātaka*, (2) a cycle of legends from South India about Rāvana, a grand and noble Brāhmana hero, and (3) a floating group of legends relating to ape-worship once widely current in India. According to Sen, Vālmīki welded together his immortal poem from materials taken from each of these three sources.¹¹

Before examining these views critically, the traditional account of the origin of the Rāma story as given by Vālmīki in the introductory portion of the *Rāmāyana* deserves consideration. It is stated there, in reply to Vālmīki's question about the particulars of a perfect man living on earth at the time, that Nārada narrated to Vālmīki the story of Rāma of the Ikṣvāku family, bringing the account to his coronation on his triumphant return to Ayodhyā after killing Rāvana. A little after Nārada had left, duly honoured by Vālmīki, the latter, while out on the banks of the Tamasā for his ablutions, was seized by the deepest pity at the sight of

⁹ *Das Rāmāyana* pp 86, 127, 131, etc, Macdonell *op cit*, p 576, *HSL*, p 311
Bulcke, *Rāmakaṭhā*, pp 103-6

¹⁰ *HIL*, I p 516 nl, *WZKM*, 16 (1902), pp 226 ff

¹¹ *Bengali Rāmāyanas*, pp 3, 7, 26-41, etc, also Bulcke, *op cit*, pp 109-10

the killing of one of the fond Krauñca couple by a hunter, leaving the female bird to mourn the loss in pitiful tones. The sorrow (*śoka*) felt by Vālmīki at once found spontaneous expression in the curse uttered by him in the following perfect stanza (*śloka*)

‘No fame be thine for endless time,
Because, base outcast, of thy crime,
Whose cruel hand was fain to slay,
One of this gentle pair at play!’¹²

While Vālmīki was contemplating on this stanza in a melancholy mood, Brahmā appeared before him and asked him to compile the *Rāmāyana* as he heard it from Nārada. Brahmā assured the sage of a clear vision of all events, outward and inward, visible and invisible, open and secret, connected with the life of Rāma. Then Vālmīki composed a poem giving an account of all the incidents in Rāma’s career. He taught it to the twin sons of Rāma, Kusa and Lava, who were born to Sītā after her abandonment in Vālmīki’s hermitage and who were bred there. The young bards sang the poem called the *Rāmāyana* to the accompaniment of a lyre, for the first time in the distinguished assembly at Rāma’s horse sacrifice. The traditional account thus invests the *Rāmāyana* with a historical character.

DIFFERENT THEORIES ABOUT THE ORIGIN OF THE RĀMĀYANA

One thing that emerges from the diverse views given above, is that the scholars who have stated them are practically unanimous in holding that the basis of the principal episode of the Rāma story, that is, the account of the banishment of the hero, is historical, though they have indicated various sources for its so-called other elements. The topic of the *Rāmāyana* as history will be taken up later, while considering the character of the *Rāmāyana*. Let us now try to find out the reason behind the attempts to split the Rāma story into different elements instead of viewing it as a single unit, and the clue to it is supplied by Weber’s theory of *Daśaratha Jātaka* being the source of the *Rāmāyana*. That there is an interval of several centuries between the *gāthās* and the prose portion of the Jātaka literature has been conclusively proved. Some scholars, however, hold that though posterior to the *gāthās*, the prose passages in the *Daśaratha Jātaka* are based, not on the *Rāmāyana* of Vālmīki, but on an earlier version of the Rāma story. And the circumstance that in the

¹² *Rām* (Cr. Ed.) I 2 14, Griffith *The Rāmāyana of Vālmīki Translated into English Verse* (Benares, 1915), p. 7

Daśaratha Jātaka there is no mention of the abduction of Sītā and the fight between Rāma and Rāvana, and no reference to Hanūmat, has led some scholars to regard these elements as later insertions in the Rāma story. The critical examination of Vālmiki's *Rāmāyana* and the *Daśaratha Jātaka* by Bulcke has established beyond doubt that the *Daśaratha Jātaka* is nothing but a perverted account of the Rāma story as given in the *Rāmāyana*,¹³ and so the argument based on the *Daśaratha Jātaka* can no longer be advanced in support of splitting the *Rāmāyana* into different elements. Further, the *Daśaratha Jātaka* was preached with the object of consoling a son grieving for the death of his father, and hence there was no necessity in it to refer to the abduction of Sītā, and the killing of Rāvana has been purposely omitted there as being contrary to the Buddhist tenet of non-injury, especially as the Buddha himself is represented as being Rāma Pandita in his former birth.¹⁴

Bulcke's investigations confirm the traditional view that the *Rāmāyana* is a complete unit, that it is not a mixing up of different episodes, and that the entire story is historical. There is no internal evidence in support of Jacobi's view seeking a Vedic connection for the abduction of Sītā and the fight with Rāvana, there is nothing uncommon, improbable, extraordinary, or supernatural about these two episodes, and they can as well be taken as equally historical along with the banishment of the hero which has been unanimously accepted as such. In fact, Bulcke has shown that there is no evidence for the independent existence of the stories in connection with Rāvana and Hanūmat before the age of the *Rāmāyana*, as is maintained by Sen and others.¹⁵ If the marvellous, the fantastic, and the supernatural, are eschewed from the *Rāmāyana*, there is nothing in the story that militates against its being historical. Despite a few inevitable scenes of divine intervention and a little exaggeration necessary for artistic effect, the story of the *Rāmāyana* creates the impression that it has a factual foundation, and we feel that it may all have happened in those wonderful days of yore exactly as portrayed here. Thus, the entire Rāma story is historical and forms but one unit, as it is maintained by tradition.

DEVELOPMENT OF THE RĀMA STORY IN THE RĀMAYANA

From the internal evidence in the *Rāmāyana*, it is evident that the Rāma epic, before being reduced to writing, was in a ballad form, and was sung in assemblies. Its first recitation, according to the *Rāmāyana*, was before the gathering of sages in the forest, followed by one in the thoroughfares of Ayodhyā, and finally in the palace of Rāma, at the conclusion of the horse sacrifice, before a distinguished gathering. When

¹³ *Rāmakathā*, pp. 75-92, 462

¹⁴ Cf. *op. cit.*, p. 91

¹⁵ *Op. cit.*, pp. 110-2

the *Rāmāyana*, still in its floating stage of oral transmission, passed into the hands of the *sūtas*, additional matter of diverse kinds came to be associated with it. Several factors conspired to augment Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* by these interpolations.

The reciters in certain localities, in order to cater to the popular taste, laid emphasis on particular aspects of the story and worked them out in all details, or inserted delineations of various sentiments, sometimes heroic, sometimes erotic, sometimes humorous, and so on, as required by their audience. Glorifications of local deities, or sacred places, also supplied additional matter. The inclusion of geographical, or topographical, episodes, mostly based on the *Purāṇas* and *māhātmyas* (works setting out merits of holy places), was also effected under the influence of local and contemporary needs and tastes.

The fact that Vālmīki wanted to portray the life of an ideal man, supported by several references to Rāma as a human being, excludes the possibility of the hero of the epic being regarded as an incarnation in the original text as composed by Vālmīki. Many scholars, however, assert that Vālmīki's original intention was to show Rāma as a divine being and that his deification does not constitute an interpolation in the *Rāmāyana*.¹⁶ It seems, however, to be reasonable that with the deification of Kṛṣṇa and the amplification of the theory of incarnation, Rāma also came to be regarded as an incarnation of Viṣṇu, and this accounts for a considerable amount of additional matter in the *Rāmāyana*. It can safely be assumed with Jacoby and others that the evolution of Rāma from a prince of Ayodhyā to a national hero, and finally to an incarnation of Viṣṇu, can clearly be demonstrated in the epic.

The account of the *putresti* of Daśaratha, in which gods are said to have approached Viṣṇu with the request that He should be 'born on the earth, and the description of the meeting between Rāma and Paraśurāma are instances of later additions under the influence of the incarnation theory.¹⁷ There are also several incarnation legends in the *Uttarakāṇḍa*.

Most of the additional matter consists of repetitions and imitations—repetitions of the same incident, or of similar situations. Sītā's prayers to Gangā and Yamunā, Rāvana's approach to Mārīca, and the story of the spies of Rāvana, may be cited as instances of repetitions, pure and simple.¹⁸ The particulars of the faked head of Rāma are but an imitation of the faked figure of Sītā said to have been killed by Rāvana.¹⁹ Hanūmat's

¹⁶ Cf. N. Chandrasekhara Aiyer, *Indian Inheritance*, Vol. I (Bhavan's Book University, 34), p. 37.

¹⁷ *Rām*, I, 15, 17, 74, 76.

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, II, 52, 55, III, 31, 35, VI, 20, 25, 30.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*, VI, 31, 81.

going to the Himalayas in search of medicinal herbs is also a later imitation of his feat of crossing the waters, which itself is repeated in two places²⁰ The descriptions of the hermitages of Atri, Vālmīki, Śarabhaṅga, Sūtikṣna, Agastya, and others, are but echoes of similar accounts found elsewhere in the book, which belong to the same type Under the same heading may be grouped also accounts of duels, battles, battle-fields, and so forth, constituting over sixty cantos of the *Yuddhakāṇḍa* which come out of the same mould with but very little difference There are also imitations of similar pathetic situations in the lamentations of different characters Hanūmat's meeting with, and departure from, Sītā are imitated elsewhere²¹

The motif of boons and curses has been invented to account for several incidents, and it takes the form also of predictions and anticipations The boons granted by Kaśyapa, Manu, Dharmadatta, and Daśaratha, and the curses by Bhṛgu, Sanatkumāra, Devaśarman, Vṛndā, and Nārada, may be cited as illustrations In some cases, justifications of what has happened to some of the characters are found by introducing incidents of their earlier births as in the cases of Daśaratha, Kauśalyā, Sītā, Mantharā, Hanūmat, Rāvana, and Kumbhakarna²²

Purāṇic legends, bodily incorporated by later interpolators at several places, form another important item that has increased the bulk of the *Rāmāyana* They, no doubt, impede the smooth flow of the narrative and are easily discernible as subsequent additions The legends of Gangā's descent, Rṣyaśṛṅga, Viśvāmitra, Nṛga, Nimi, Yayāti, and Śambūka, as also the accounts of Rāvana and Hanūmat, are principal instances in point.²³ Some of these legends have been taken as serving to establish Brāhmanic superiority Genealogical lists have been added at places in imitation of the Purāṇas' Etymological legends, invented on the basis of names of epic characters like Rāvana, Sītā, Sugrīva, Vālin, Hanūmat, and Kuśa, have been freely introduced by the interpolators to explain their peculiar characteristics Exaggerated descriptions and introduction of the supernatural and the marvellous constitute yet another feature of the additional matter *rāksasas* and *vānaras* were ordinary human beings in the original work of Vālmīki With the passage of time, *rāksasas* came to be depicted as monsters, descendants of the Daityas, and enemies of the gods, and *vānaras* as monkeys, Rāvana came to be described as having ten heads, Kumbhakarna, as being the size of a monster, and so on The burning of Lankā,

²⁰ *Ibid*, VI 50, 74 101

²¹ *Ibid*, III 60, 62, 63 V 39 56 68

²² Cf. *Rāmakaṭhā*, pp 273 6, 295 6, 325 6, 420 1 424 9 Some of these relate to later Rāma literature

²³ *Rām*, I 9 11, 32 65, VII 1 36, 53 59 73 82, etc

THE RĀMĀYANA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

the carrying of the mountain, and the fire-ordeal of Sītā, combine the miraculous, the marvellous, and the supernatural, these were evidently later additions. The descriptions of battles in the *Yuddhakāṇḍa* also betray the working of a later hand. Poetic embellishments, and descriptions of the seasons, of Nature, and the Gangā, and other similar elements which invest the *Rāmāyana* with the character of the *mahā kāvya*, have also given full scope to the poet in the interpolator for several additions. The introduction of long metres often at the close of the chapter also falls under later accretions.

The incorporation of didactic material, ethics, philosophy, polity, and similar topics, probably with a view to making the *Rāmāyana* an encyclopaedia, seems to have been done under the Bhārgava influence,²⁴ which was responsible for transforming the 'Bhārata' into the *Mahābhārata*. *Nīti* and *dharma* were the special interests of the Bhrgus. The *Kaccit sarga* or the chapter containing formulated series of questions, the Lokāyata *darśana* of Jābali,²⁵ and the ethical material interspersed throughout the epic, may have resulted from the Bhārgava association with the *Rāmāyana*.

THE RĀMĀYANA HISTORY OF ITS TEXT

Examination of the extensive manuscript material collected by the Rāmāyana Department of the M. S. University of Baroda for preparing the Critical Edition of the *Rāmāyana* establishes that the text of the *Rāmāyana* has been preserved in two recensions, the northern and the southern, each being further subdivided into three versions, the northern recension comprising (1) the north-eastern, (2) the north western, and (3) the western, and the southern recension comprising (1) the Telugu, (2) the Grantha, and (3) the Malayalam versions.²⁶

Unlike the southern recension, which preserves an almost uniform text in its three versions, the versions of the northern recension present peculiar features of their own. Though widely differing from one another, the northern and southern recensions have preserved the common text to a considerable extent, and this fact lends support to the hypothesis of their common origin from the Ur-Rāmāyana. The north eastern version, which is further divided into (1) Nepālī, (2) Maithilī, (3) Bengālī, and (4) Devanagari sub versions, and the north-western version, which comprises (1) the Śāradā and (2) the Devanagari sub-versions, present a common text for the major portion, suggesting a common source, the archetype. The north-western version, which agrees with the north eastern one, contains verses

²⁴ Cf. Shende, *JUB* XII, 2, September, 1943.

²⁵ *Rām* II 100-109.

²⁶ *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* Critical Edition Vol. I Bālakāṇḍa, Fasc. 1, introd. pp. XXIX-XXX.

common to the southern recension. The western version, preserved in four Devanagari manuscripts, which shows a fusion of the north-western version and the southern recension with which it sometimes agrees, has also some peculiarities of its own. It is further found, on a critical examination of the manuscripts, that portions missing in the north-eastern version are found not only in the north western version, but also in the western version and the southern recension, indicating the common connection between the north-western version on the one hand and the western version and southern recension on the other, maintained along the course of the transmission of the epic.

While the southern recension has preserved the text in its original, or older, form, the northern one has polished it, both in form and matter, by simplifying the difficult readings of the southern text and modifying it to conform to contemporary thought. That the southern manuscripts present almost an identical text both in the southern scripts—Telugu, Kannada, Nandinagari, Grantha, and Malayalam—and also in the Devanagari script, will be evident from the fact that the Kumbhakonam and Madras editions, based on southern manuscripts, have almost the same number of cantos as the Bombay editions, based on the Devanagari manuscripts, with a difference of only 223 stanzas in the entire text.²⁷ The text of the *Rāmāyana* which the southern commentators, Govindarāja, Rāmānuja, Kataka, and Maheśvaratīrtha, expounded do not differ mutually but for occasional variations in individual readings. These commentators, however, represent two different groups so far as interpretation is concerned. Govindarāja and Rāmānuja follow the Viśiṣṭādvaita school, Kataka and Maheśvaratīrtha follow the Advaita school. Thus, there is no internal evidence in support of postulating two *Rāmāyana* versions of the southern recension on the basis of the commentaries of Govindarāja and Kataka, as advocated by Ruben.²⁸

The *Rāmāyana* comprises 24,000 stanzas, divided into seven Books, whether the recension considered is the northern or the southern. But about one-third of the stanzas in the north-eastern and north-western versions and southern recension is absent from the other two.²⁹ The extent of the differences in the three regional texts, in so far as the *Sundarakāṇḍa* is concerned, is evident from the fact that the north-eastern and north-western versions and the southern recension have respectively 95, 107, and

²⁷ *Ibid.* pp. XXXII

²⁸ *Studien zur Textgeschichte des Rāmāyana* p. 1, *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* (Cr. Ed.), I, 1, introd. p. XXX

²⁹ No reference is made to the western version here as no particulars about these matters for it are yet known. It may, however, be assumed that the western version also presents the same general features.

94 cantos, and 3,308½, 4,202½, and 3,948 stanzas. Of the 4,202 stanzas in the north-western version, 1,294 stanzas (i.e. 31%) are not found in the north-eastern version, 1,163 (i.e. 28%) are not found in the southern recension, and 554½ (i.e. 13%) are unique to the north-western version, not being found either in the north-eastern version or the southern recension.³⁰ Such textual variations are due to the fluctuations in the oral traditions of professional reciters, differently committed to writing by scribes in different regions of the country. Despite these differences in form, however, there are no changes in the narrative.

Before coming to the genuine and the spurious parts in the *Rāmāyana*, reference may be made to the similarities and differences between the manuscripts of the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata*. Both of them have northern and southern recensions, and the versions are based on scripts. While the northern recension represents the older form of the *Mahābhārata*, the southern recension has preserved the original text of the *Rāmāyana*. In the *Rāmāyana*, the Devanagari manuscripts are composite in character, covering all versions, and the Bombay editions, based on the Devanagari manuscripts, are identical with the southern editions. The Bombay edition of the *Mahābhārata*, however, is quite distinct from the southern editions, and the Devanagari manuscripts of the *Mahābhārata* are not so extensive as those of the *Rāmāyana*, and represent only a particular version.

It is generally accepted by modern scholars that Books II-VI along with parts of Book I constitute the original nucleus of the *Rāmāyana*. The writer of this paper, however, is of the view that the whole of the *Uttarakāṇḍa* cannot be rejected as spurious, though it was undoubtedly composed by Vālmīki after the other cantos were completed, but parts of it, which relate to the Rāma story, namely, the accounts of Śatrughna and Lakṣmana, the repudiation of Sītā, the birth of Kuśa and Lava, the horse sacrifice, the installation of Kuśa and Lava, the departure of Rāma, and a few minor incidents, are genuine.

In the first place, the *phalaśruti* (benefit declaration) at the end of the *Yuddhakāṇḍa*, which is taken to indicate the completion of the *Rāmāyana*, is an interpolation. Secondly, the argument that the original *Rāmāyana* ended with the coronation of Rāma, because the *Rāmopākhyāna* in the *Mahābhārata* does not carry the story any further, overlooks the fact that *Rāmopākhyāna*, by its very nature, is restricted in its scope. Its purpose is not to delineate the life of Rāma, but simply to illustrate how people, fallen into misfortune, do in turn gain happiness, and hence it is unnecessary

³⁰ *Sundarakāṇḍa North Western Recension* introd., p. 61

there to pursue the story any further Thirdly, the history of Rāma, which Vālmīkī purports to give in the *Rāmāyana*, is complete only with a record of all incidents connected with his life including his ascent to heaven

THE NATURE OF THE RĀMAYANA

In the opening cantos of the *Rāmāyana*, Vālmīkī styles it as a *kāvya*, a historical work, and an *ākhyāna*,³¹ and it is also said that the epic has dealt with *dharma*, *artha*, and *kāma*³² As the first specimen of a full-fledged *kāvya*, the *Rāmāyana* is, indeed, an ornate poem *par excellence* It answers to all requirements of a *mahā kāvya* as defined in the works on poetics In fact, the definitions and enumeration of the characteristics of a *mahā-kāvya* seem to have been based on the nature of the *Rāmāyana* as a *kāvya* The style of this epic is simple, mellifluous, and graceful, unusual words and long compound words do not impede the spontaneous flow of its diction It employs simple figures of speech such as similes and metaphors, taken from everyday life, and Vālmīkī is famous for his similes There is a fine portrayal of love (*srngāra*), heroism (*vīra*), and pity (*karunā*)—the principal sentiments according to Sanskrit poetics—throughout the work Contrary to the practice of later poets who employ different metres and styles to delineate different sentiments, it is seen that Vālmīkī uses practically the *anustubh* metre alone throughout the epic and maintains the same style, and he has been quite successful in effectively bringing out the sentiments intended

Vālmīkī is an adept in describing Nature realistically in many aspects—trees, mountains, rivers, lakes, oceans, clouds, dawn, and sunset Of the forests and hermitages of sages we have several lifelike sketches in the *Rāmāyana* Vālmīkī aimed at depicting the life of a perfect man, the picture of an ideal character, and in Rāma we get the model to be followed in our different difficult situations Rāma stands for duty and self-sacrifice, compassion and protection The different characters delineated in the *Rāmāyana* illustrate right conduct, individual and social, and in this epic stress is laid everywhere on the importance of moral values There is a beautiful blending of thought and expression in this grand poem

One of the objects of a *kāvya* is popular instruction, and Vālmīkī successfully achieves it by placing before his readers the personalities of his characters conceived as concrete instances of the principles he had in mind That the story is historical makes the poet's instruction more effective, for the readers know that whatever is taught here was actually practised by persons and is not a mere precept The important fact to be borne in mind

³¹ *Rām* (Cr Ed) I 4 6 (*kāvya*), 11 (*ākhyāna*), *Rām* VI 131 114 (*itihāsa*)

³² *Rām* (Cr Ed), I 5 4 *dharma kāmārtha sahitam*

is that the virtues of the characters are spontaneous, irrespective of the actions of others. As a work of art, the *Rāmāyana* embraces two distinct literary aspects—the realistic and the romantic. The characters are now human, now superhuman, now both. Some characters, like Vālin and Hanūmat, are blended with the sub-human, without a single jarring note or hint of incongruity. Incidents narrated in the course of the development of the story are realistic and yet supernatural. Except in a few discordant places, all through the poem there is a close nexus between character and action. The destruction of Rāvana is the pivotal action, and almost all happenings bear upon that *denouement*.

It has already been indicated that the basis of the *Rāma* story is historical, and so whatever appears to go against the historical character of the work by being fantastic, marvellous, or supernatural, is almost certainly to be treated as a later addition. Vālmīki himself describes his work as *carita* (history). He could as well have stated it to have been the product of his imagination, had that been the case. The historicity of the work is further attested by the fact that the author has retained in the story certain compromising actions of the hero, such as the killing of Vālin, which he might as well have omitted from it, or altered, if the story were his invention. It may also be observed that since olden times Ayodhyā, Mithilā, and several other places, have been regarded as associated with the story of Rāma, which would not have been so, if the story had been purely imaginary like the fables in the *Arabian Nights*. Venkataratnam regards the *Rāmāyana* as historical, but identifies Rāma with Ramases, the greatest pharaoh of Egypt. Historical accounts of the period of Ramases, however, run counter to what we find in the *Rāmāyana*, and so the epic does not support his view.³³

Besides being a fine specimen of the poetic art and also history, the *Rāmāyana* is also a Dharma-śāstra, a sacred text teaching righteousness. It expounds the principles of eternal law (*sanātana dharma*), and presents the ideals of good conduct (*sadācāra*), which is one of the bases of *dharma* according to the Smṛtis. The epic draws attention to other topics of the Dharma śāstra, such as *nitya*, *naimittika*, and *kāmya* varieties of *karma*—regular, occasional, and optional duties.

The *Rāmāyana* also deals with polity, administration, diplomacy, war, and other topics, which fall within the domain of the Artha-śāstra. The benefits of good government and democracy are exemplified in the Rāmārājya, while the contrary is shown under Rāvana. Many precepts relating to *kāma* (legitimate enjoyment) can be found at several places in the *Rāmā-*

³³ *Rāma, the Greatest Pharaoh of Egypt* (Rajahmundry 1934) cf. Bulcke, *op cit*, p. 116

vana The *Rāmāyana* is a Nīti sāstra expounding lofty ethical ideals The importance of moral virtues—simple living, modesty, restraint, obedience to elders, charity, and humanity—is fully stressed It is easy to collect from the *Rāmāyana* a string of ethical thoughts that have become proverbs

CHARACTER OF THE RĀMĀYANA

Weber and Lassen consider the *Rāmāyana* to be an allegorical representation of the spread of the Aryan culture to South India and Ceylon ³⁴ This view, however, is not borne out by the epic, for it does not show any change in the culture of the South as the result of Rāma's expedition, nor does its author seem to be quite familiar with the South According to Wheeler, the *Rāmāyana* symbolizes the conflict between Brāhmanism and Buddhism, and the invasion of Lankā testifies to the hatred of the poet who composed it towards the Buddhists of Ceylon whom he represents as *rāksasas* ³⁵ This view, too, is untenable, because the *rāksasas*, though opposed to the Brāhmanas, were, nevertheless, sacrificers and cannibals, which speaks against their identity with the Buddhists Their description, again, does not indicate their being Buddhists

In idealizing the hero as the paragon of virtue, the poet has depicted his adversaries as embodiments of sin and vice The *Rāmāyana* has an obvious allegorical significance and suggestiveness, as indicated in the *Ātmabodha* of Śaṅkarācārya, according to which the soul (Rāma) after crossing *moha* (delusion) here pictured in the form of a forest, and killing *rāga* (passion) and *dvesa* (hatred)—symbolizing the *rāksasas*—shines resplendently united with *sānti* (peace) in the form of *Sītā* ³⁶ There is also another interpretation which equates the *Rāmāyana* with the *artha pañcaka* doctrine of the Vaiṣnavas, stating Rāma to be God, Lakṣmana, the soul seeking God's grace (*śaranāgati*) as the means (*upāya*), and attainment (*prāpti*) of God as the goal (*phala*) But to stretch this idea of allegory and symbolization too far, and to try to see symbolism in every character and incident of the *Rāmāyana*, would be absurd and far from the intention of Vālmiki himself

The *Rāmāyana* brings out the strength and weakness of the Aryan character The superiority of the Aryans lay in the sternness of their character, their spirit of sacrifice, supreme regard for truth, love of adventure, and perseverance Rāma is the embodiment of the high ideals of Aryan life. In him is presented the strange combination of a faithful and dutiful son, an affectionate brother, a loving husband, a stern, relentless

³⁴ Weber *On the Rāmāyana*, p. 14 ff., *HIL*, p. 192 Lassen, *op cit*

³⁵ *The History of India*, II pp. 75, 227 etc

³⁶ *Tīrtvā mohānavaṁ hatvā rāga dvesādīrākṣasān, sānti Sītā samāyukta ātmā Rāmo virājate*

THE RĀMĀYANA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

hero, and an ideal king Laksmana and Bharata represent ideal brothers, while Sītā a dutiful wife In Dasaratha is brought out the weakness of the male for feminine grace, which resulted in great disaster not only to him but also to the kingdom Prevalence of polygamy, some forms of superstitious practices, and evil effects of the caste system, are among the weak spots of the Aryan life hinted at in the *Rāmāyana*

THE RĀMĀYANA AND THE MAHĀBHĀRATA A COMPARISON³⁷

The *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* exhibit several features similar and also different Being handed down orally from the earliest times, both the epics have undergone tremendous changes throughout their long history, and both cannot lay claim to any definitive text The same phenomena operated in the text-transmission of both, and so the method followed for the constitution of the critical text of the *Mahābhārata* is being successfully applied in the preparation of the Critical Edition of the *Rāmāyana* Like the *Mahābhārata*, the *Rāmāyana* is the property of the whole of the Indian people, and the daily recitation of a *śloka* (stanza), a line, or even a quarter verse, from either epic is believed to confer religious merit on the reciter Both the epics abound in numerous Brāhmanical myths and legends which frequently interrupt the thread of the narrative It is further interesting to note in this connection that the same Bhārgava family responsible for incorporating *dharma*, *nīti*, and other material in the *Mahābhārata*, has added many episodes to the *Rāmāyana* There is a close resemblance not only in style, expression, and descriptions, as exemplified by parallel passages, identical similes and descriptions, but also in the mythology and philosophy of the two epics The economic conditions and social usages represented in them are sufficiently alike, showing but few discordant elements Neither the *Rāmāyana* nor the *Mahābhārata* was recognized as an epic before the late Grhya-Sūtra period, and neither was developed quite independently of the other The *Uttarakāṇḍa* contains many tales of the Gangetic plains, and later didactic portions of the *Mahābhārata* are generally laid in Kosala and Magadha, so in their later development the two epics grew in the same locality

With all these agreements, however, there are several points on which the two epics differ While the *Mahābhārata* represents a mixture of popular epic and theological didactic poetry, the *Rāmāyana* is a popular epic and ornate poetry at the same time In the *Mahābhārata* are reflected the genuine feelings of its characters without any attempt at artistic embellishment, whereas the characters in the *Rāmāyana* appear less natural and more

³⁷ Cf. Pusalker *Studies in the Epics and Purāṇas of India* (Bharatiya Book University, 36), introd., pp. xxxiv-xxxvi

self-conscious through the conscious effort of the poet. The *Rāmāyana* is much shorter, having only the extent of nearly a quarter of the present *Mahābhārata*, and it is still a fairly unified poem in its extant form. Unlike the *Mahābhārata*, which speaks of its three editions, the *Rāmāyana* has no statement about its amplifications, or revisions. Whereas Vyāsa's authorship of the *Mahābhārata* is disputed by critics, Vālmīki is practically accepted by them as the author of the *Rāmāyana*. What the *Mahābhārata* is for the Aryan kingdoms of the Kuru Pañcāla, the *Rāmāyana* is for those of the Kosala-Magadha. The *Rāmāyana* reflects a greater simplicity of life among the Aryans, and it shows an absence of any knowledge of the acquaintance with the Mlecchas. Other features of the *Rāmāyana* are paucity of reference to advanced States, absence of elaborate military tactics in the form of *vyūhas* (arrays), existence of small kingdoms, and reference to an abundance of forests and forest life in the country. The *Mahābhārata*, however, presents a curious phenomenon in this respect. It shows a considerable advance in civilization over the *Rāmāyana* period in war, in diplomacy, and in various aspects of society, nevertheless it displays some archaic features such as polyandry and levirate, and consequently it belongs to a ruder and more warlike age. The nucleus of the *Mahābhārata* creates a much more archaic impression than that of the *Rāmāyana*. If the *Mahābhārata* emphasizes more the practical aspects of life, the *Rāmāyana* preaches the highest ideals of it. The *Mahābhārata* owes its sacred character not so much to its heroes as to the didactic sections added to it later, while it is the inherent purity of its hero and heroine that invests the *Rāmāyana* with sanctity. The characters in the former strike us as human beings, whereas those in the latter appear to be idealized. As compared with the *Mahābhārata*, the *Rāmāyana* has not only a more elevated ethical standard and a more serious didactic purpose, but also a much higher idealistic view of life and a wider popular appeal as well.

THE RELATION BETWEEN THE TWO EPICS

There are several passages in the *Mahābhārata*, for which parallels can be found in the *Rāmāyana*, such, for instance, are the Nala episode, the cosmogonic passages in the *Ādi-parvan*, the famous *Kaccit-sarga*, and the *Rāmoṣākhyaṇa*. Hopkins, Ruben, Jacobi, Sukthankar, and others, have invited attention to the parallelisms in the two epics. The peculiar character and development of the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* preclude any categorical answer to the question whether the *Rāmāyana* is the source, or the *Mahābhārata*. Every passage has to be critically examined in order to ascertain whether it is original to the *Rāmāyana*, or to the *Mahābhārata*, or whether both the epics independently borrowed from a third source. The

Kaccit-sarga in the *Mahābhārata* and its counterpart in the *Rāmāyana*,³⁸ for instance, are of a very general character, having no direct bearing on the story, either of the *Rāmāyana* or of the *Mahābhārata*, and the probability is that both have adapted the passage independently from some older *nīti* work. Now that the Critical Edition of the *Rāmāyana* is being issued, better results may be expected from a comparison of it with the Critical Edition of the *Mahābhārata* than from the vulgate of the *Rāmāyana*.

Scholars hold diverse views on the relation of the *Rāmopākhyāna* to the *Rāmāyana*. Sukthankar's exhaustive study of the problem, with the citation of as many as eighty-two parallelisms, conclusively proves that the *Rāmāyana* is the source of the *Rāmopākhyāna* and that the latter is an epitome of the north eastern version of the extant *Rāmāyana*³⁹ of Vālmīki.

While there are numerous references to the *Rāmāyana* and its author Vālmīki in the *Mahābhārata*, there is not a single reference to the Bhārata war, or to the heroes of the *Mahābhārata*, in the *Rāmāyana*, which shows that the *Rāmāyana* in its present form existed prior to the time when the *Mahābhārata* assumed its final form. The works of Pāṇini and Patanjali, and the pre-Christian era inscriptions, which refer to Vāsudeva, Arjuna, and Yudhishthira but are silent about Rāma, however, indicate the priority of the nucleus of the *Mahābhārata* to that of the *Rāmāyana*. This is further confirmed by the preservation of the archaic literary features of the *Mahābhārata* in contrast with the *Rāmāyana* which displays characteristics of later epic poetry.

The 'Bhārata', the nucleus of the *Mahābhārata*, as shown by Sukthankar, was already long in existence when the *Rāmāyana* was composed, and both were independent products, different in their origin and treatment. In the course of the transformation of the 'Bhārata' into the *Mahābhārata*, the Bhārgava redactors utilized the archetype of the *Rāmāyana* as they had it before them. On the other hand, the *Rāmāyana*, in the later epoch, was influenced in its further development by the *Mahābhārata*. The inter-relation of the epics is thus a very complicated problem of mutual actions and reactions.⁴⁰

³⁸ *Mbh* II 5 *Rām* II 100

³⁹ *Kane Commemoration Volume* pp 482-7

⁴⁰ Cf. Sukthankar, *SME*, I pp 413-4

THE CULTURE OF THE RĀMĀYANA

THE *Rāmāyana* gives a many sided picture of a perfect life. We are accustomed to regard such a life as one led far away from the turmoils of the workaday world in some forest retreat and characterized by an unbroken course of introspection or meditation leading up to a state of mental equipoise or illumination. The *Rāmāyana* however does not stop with this partial view. For along with the ascetics who embarked upon such severe discipline we are always shown the figure of Rāma himself towering above them all and honoured by these very ascetics as the special manifestation of the Lord for the protection of *dharma*. We are brought face to face with a series of difficult baffling and tragic situations and shown how Rāma and the other principal characters react to them and ultimately tide over them without swerving in the least from the highest principles of spiritual life laid down in the scriptures. Inner perfection issuing out in virtuous action which overcomes evil and transforms the evil doer is thus Vālmiki's main theme.¹

THE PROSPERITY OF THE KINGDOM

When the reins of government are grasped by the hands of kings possessed of such heroic and noble outlook there is bound to be progress in every department of the country's activities. The descendants of Ikṣvāku were all without exception noted for their piety and devotion to the welfare of their subjects. During Daśaratha's long reign in particular Ayodhyā and the provinces attained a high level of prosperity and it is again and again pointed out by Vālmiki that people had then a plentiful supply of the good things of life of horses and cattle and corn and wealth.² Under his efficient administration the various orders of society discharged their proper responsibilities and the high virtues practised by the king and his principal officers led smoothly and inevitably to the raising of the cultural level of the subjects. What better tribute can be paid to any ruler and his ministers than what Vālmiki for example repeats in the case of Daśaratha namely, that there was none during his reign who was atheistic or untruthful or slenderly read or illiterate?³

The capital itself was in every way a source of attraction. Its roads were spacious well laid out and regularly watered to keep down the dust

¹ This chapter is mainly based on Vālmiki's *Rāmāyana* as it now stands
Ram I 6 7

Ibid I 6 8 14 15

THE CULTURE OF THE RAMĀYANA

Everything was clean the food eaten was pure and the water available was sweet as the juice of the sugarcane. Agriculturists and traders received special attention and protection. From various countries merchants naturally flocked to take advantage of the conveniences offered by Ayodhyā and its streets looked beautiful with well arranged rows of shops. When Bharata goes to the forest to persuade Rāma to return to the palace we find the latter putting him a series of searching questions of which many relate to this department of the administration. Are not the provinces asks Rāma among other things filled with prosperous people and graced with abodes of the deities and tanks and places for distributing water? Depending on tanks for their water supply decked with mines freed from all fear of fierce animals and unrighteous men do not the provinces remain happy and contented? Do not agriculturists and cowherds find favour in your eyes? And do they not remaining in their respective vocations receive from you what they want and get over what they find harmful? ⁴ Undue competition and oppression being thus removed through the vigilance of the king and his ministers it became possible for all classes of society to breathe freely and strive successfully for full self expression.

MILITARY EQUIPMENT AND EFFICIENCY

This state of affairs was maintained partly with the help of a thoroughly trained and equipped army. It was stationed in the various forts which were carefully provided with enough wealth corn water arms machines and artisans. The capital itself was the abode of mighty warriors of straight forward ways of great learning and culture. There were great car-warriors by thousands whose arrows sped with irresistible force but who would never degrade themselves by striking the fugitive or in any other manner violating the rules of chivalry ⁵. Faithful and loyal because of their own sense of duty and honour they were doubly attached to their king and country owing to the kind and dignified treatment given to them. Do thou so act my brother says Rāma to Śatrughna before the latter's march against Lavana that the soldiers might be well fed and delighted and never annoyed with thee. Do thou please them with sweet words. For the soldiers when they advance against their foes have not with them their friends or wives to cheer them up. Sufficient food and presents are thus the only things which can afford them comfort and pleasure. To Bharata also he speaks in a similar strain. Dost thou not he asks at the proper time grant thy soldiers what thou shouldst namely provision and pay? And he wisely adds the warning. Remember that if the proper time for

⁴ *Ibid* II 100 43 48

⁵ *Ibid* I 6 21 5 20 22

these be passed the servants become angry with their master and tax him and great is the evil that springs therefrom ⁶

The description of Bharata's march to the forest⁷ and of the construction of the bridge by the *vānaras*⁸ (monkeys) may be taken as typical examples showing the high level of efficiency attained by the military engineers of those days. I have despatched, says Bharata in the assembly, persons who serve for love as well as those who serve for money with layers of roads and their keepers to prepare my way ⁹. And these included among others as the poet shows those who had a knowledge of the humidity or otherwise of the soil, brave delvers, architects and experts in the construction of canals and watercourses. By their organized work trees were set up where there were none before, high grounds were levelled, hollows filled up, rocks cut through, bridges thrown over watery expanses and tracts devoid of water made to overflow with it. In putting up the bridge across the deep, remarkable speed and dexterity were displayed by the forces of Rāma. Uprooting trees and crags the *vānaras* we are told took them to the edge of the water by means of machines and threw them in making the sea swell up to the sky. Some took lines for ensuring straightness while others took the measuring rod and the co-operation was so perfect that within the short period of five days the marvellous structure stood complete and perfectly finished ¹⁰.

SHARE OF THE PUBLIC IN STATE AFFAIRS

The king's personality was no doubt the mainspring of the progress which the country made, but it was by no means a case of a one man show. The East is often described as having known and relished only despotic monarchy. The *Ramāyana* however presents an entirely different picture. For at every turn we find the ministers, learned men, and the principal officers of the army consulting together and shaping the policy of the State. On important occasions people from different parts of the land assembled and took part in the discussions. Free expression of opinion was allowed and mutual consultation and independent thinking were expected to take place before any one spoke out his views. In the matter of Rāma's installation as heir apparent for example there was an exceptionally large gathering. Then in a mighty voice, solemn and resonant, Daśaratha announced his intention of retiring from the heavy duties of administration and giving his aged frame its much needed rest. If what I have proposed is proper, said he by way of conclusion, and is to your liking, do you accord

Ibid II 100 32 33
⁸ *Ibid* VI 22 50 76
Ibid, VI 22 58 60 68 75 76

Ibid II 80
Ibid II 82 20

THE CULTURE OF THE RAMAYANA

approval to it and advise me as to what else I am to do and in what manner But if I have thought thus solely owing to a desire for personal satisfaction do you find out some other means for my welfare ¹¹ He then invited free discussion that being acknowledged on all hands to be the surest method of obtaining dispassionate decisions Even when the leaders the citizens and the inhabitants of the provinces took counsel together and gave their unanimous support the king wanted to make them think a second time and so he spoke again as if he had not known their minds You have wished for Rāma said he as soon as you have heard my speech This raises doubts in my mind Do you therefore speak out your minds truly Why while I am righteously ruling the land do you wish to see my son installed? ¹²

This principle of ascertaining the opinion and seeking the advice of the people on all important occasions was observed by ancient kings As an extreme example of it the *Mahabhārata* describes the aged and blind Dhrtarāstra discussing with his subjects and persuading them to permit him to retire to the woods This Gāndhārī also he pleads is old and cheerless She too has lost her children and is helpless Afflicted with grief for the loss of her sons she solicits you with me Knowing all this grant us the permission we seek Blessed be you we seek your protection ¹³ Even such an obstinate and wilful ruler as Rāvana is shown as allowing free discussion in his assembly and we find not only Bibhīšana but also Kumbhakarna vehemently criticizing from different standpoints his conduct towards Sītā Although Kumbhakarna is determined to stand by his brother to the last, he does not hesitate to address him in public in his characteristically blunt and fearless manner All this that thou hast done says he to Rāvana 'is not worthy of thee If thou hadst at the outset consulted us in the matter we would have done what was proper and dissuaded thee By luck it is that Rāma hath not yet slain thee who hast done this tremendous thing without serious reflection ¹⁴ Rāvana's maternal grandsire Mālyavān also speaks frankly in the assembly and rebukes him for his defiance of duty his addiction to carnal pleasures, and his unrighteous ways in general ¹⁵

SCOPE AND IMPORTANCE OF EDUCATION

Constitutional methods and military efficiency however were not the sole factors connected with the welfare of the people Rather one might put it the other way about the king and his ministers remained constitu

¹ *Ibid* II 2 15 16

² *Ibid* II 2 23 25

³ *Mbh* XV 8 17 22 9 7 17 10 3 5

Ram VI 12 29 34

Ibid VI 35 15 17

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

tional and the soldiers and other sections of the subjects discharged their functions conscientiously and without mutual encroachment as a result of the high standard of education common in those days. Governmental methods and the cultural level became so interdependent that it was difficult to say which was the cause and which the result. Education was so organized that each section of the society knew not merely the details of fulfilling its own special function but also the relative place of its contribution in the general scheme. It was also a part of the training to create the mental attitude needed to keep competition within specified and healthy limits. The work of the ruler and the leaders was thus to see that the proper kind of education was given to the different sections of society and also to help all individually and collectively to blossom forth and spread their fragrance from within their own particular spheres. To the Brāhmaṇa the king's question for example always ran: 'Do your disciples regularly wait upon you during their period of study?' To the Kṣatriya it was modified into: 'Do your disciples always remain mailed?' And so also questions were put to each of the other sections with the necessary variation.¹⁶ The king's training had to be all comprehensive for he was the chief executive officer and had to know the art of bringing out the best from the varied temperaments that constituted his country's real wealth. He had to be a patron in every department of its activities and to arrange festivities and demonstrations calculated to stimulate the powers of originality and invention.

ROYAL PATRONAGE

The extent to which the members of the royal family afforded opportunities to specialists in every line can be gathered from the instructions issued by Rama to Lakṣmana on the eve of their departure to the forest. 'I want', said he, 'to distribute with thee my wealth amongst the Brāhmaṇas, ascetics and many others who depend upon me for their maintenance. And going into details he says among other things: "Do thou confer upon that good Brāhmaṇa, the preceptor of the *Ātittirīya* portion of the Vedas, who showers blessings on Kauśalyā every day, silk cloth, conveyances and the like till he is satisfied. Similar fitting gifts were made also to those who lived under Rāma's protection, carried staffs in their hands and studied the *Kaṭha* section of the *Yajur Veda*'.¹⁷ While Lakṣmana was carrying out these commands there occurred an amusing yet touching incident. A certain learned but poor Brāhmaṇa, Trijata by name, urged by his wife and accompanied by her, went to Rāma and asked for the wealth needed to feed his numerous children. In a vein of humour not common with him,

¹⁶ *Ibid.* II 2 38 40

Ibid. II 32 13 22

THE CULTURE OF THE RĀMAYĀNA

Rāma asked the Brahmana to hurl a certain rod with as much force as he could summon. On seeing it fall strangely on the opposite side of the Sarayu, Rama begged his pardon for the joke and most generously pressed him to take home all the cows standing in the intervening space, thereby removing his sorrows¹⁸ even as Kṛṣṇa—with the consummate art that characterized all his actions—did in the case of his friend Kucela.¹⁹

MANY SIDED NATURE OF SACRIFICES

Every sacrifice was an occasion for making all sections of society meet together, dedicate their skill to the success of the function, and receive adequate presents. It was more or less a World's Fair or a Parliament of Religions of ancient days. There were some sacrifices in which a powerful king, through friendship or conquest, collected tribute from brother rulers who had hoarded wealth, brought it to a central place of his own choice, and distributed it to experts in every department of activity according to his standard of justice and merit. Rāma performed such a sacrifice, and as the *Uttara rāma carita* puts it, it was the fight over the sanctified horse that created the opportunity for Rama to recognize his sons Kuśa and Lava and take them to the palace. The best type of sacrifice was of course considered to be that in which the sacrificer spent not only all that he managed to collect by the methods sanctioned in the Śāstras, but also the original wealth he had been enjoying. On the day after the ceremonies, then, he would be obliged to start life afresh and struggle hard for his bare subsistence. The poverty which became the lot of a paramount emperor as a result of performing the *viśvajit* sacrifice, which involved such renunciation²⁰ was regarded as highly auspicious. Raghu was in such a state, with only earthen pots wherewith to serve his guests, when Kautsa, a disciple of Varatantu, approached him for the wealth to be given to his teacher. Heroic soul that he was, the monarch did not hesitate to give the assurance needed. How could he give room for the unprecedented scandal that a master of the Vedas came to Raghu's door to get some wealth for his preceptor, but was disappointed and had to go to another donor? The crisis was got over through the help of the gods, and the people of Sāketa assembled to witness the remarkable scene of Kautsa refusing to accept anything more than what was due to his teacher and Raghu insisting that he should.²¹

Without *dakṣiṇā* and presents, no sacrifice was thought complete, and if wealth, power, long life, progeny, and even heaven were the results the performer had in view for himself, food, kind treatment, honour, rewards

Ibid. II 32 29 43
Cf. *Ram.* I 14 42

¹ *Bhā.* X 81 20 24
Raghuvamśa V 24 31

for merit chances to compete in the display of skill and a redistribution of riches and political power were none the less benefits which sacrifices conferred upon society as a whole. In that sacrifice for instance which Daśaratha performed for being blest with children Vasistha took particular care to summon not merely the priests deeply versed in the ceremonials but also experienced car makers highly pious and aged people servants to assist in the various functions artists carpenters diggers astrologers artisans dancers conductors of theatres as well as pure and learned persons proficient in the numerous branches of study. Provide comfortable and spacious buildings his mandate ran for the Brāhmanas the citizens and the dwellers in the provinces. Let there also be separate quarters for the princes coming from foreign parts and stables for the horses and dressing rooms and wide apartments for native and foreign soldiers. All these were to be specially stocked with the best viands and the distribution was to be made with proper respect and not with the indifference natural on festive occasions. No one was to be disregarded out of anger but each visitor irrespective of rank was to be highly honoured and entertained²². These instructions were carried out to the letter and we are told that while the deities were being given their share of sanctified offerings human beings too were equally receiving the best that the culinary art could supply. Brāhmanas and Śūdras ascetics and *sramanas* the aged and the infirm and women and children were continually fed by persons adorned with ornaments and wearing pendants²³. The intervals between the ceremonies were utilized in beneficial ways. Mild and eloquent scholars would then for example engage in diverse arguments desirous of getting victory over one another²⁴. It was while Rāma himself was celebrating a similar grand sacrifice that he chanced to see Kuśa and Lava singing in the streets and thought of securing their services for providing good music for all and an intellectual feast for those who could appreciate poetry. Being himself proficient in music²⁵ he was very particular to invite to their performance all the musical experts attending the sacrifice. Persons deeply versed in literature and history and the various branches of the Śāstras were also specially summoned. All were soon struck with the sweetness of the music, the grandeur of the theme and the graceful appearance of the singers, and expressed their desire to hear them again and again. Accustomed to reward greatness in whomsoever it was found Rāma forthwith ordered Lakṣmana to give them eighteen thousand gold coins and numerous other valuable presents.

Rām I 13 14 17
Ibid L 14 19

²² Ibid I 14 11 18
Ibid II 2 35

THE CULTURE OF THE RĀMĀYANA
SERVICE RENDERED BY THE FOREST DWELLERS

We are the dwellers of the forest came from the singers their significant reply and we live upon fruits and roots Living there what shall we do with gold and with coins? This was characteristic of all cultural education in ancient days The training of the young was fittingly taken up by men who led sublime lives themselves and who had the broadness of heart to give to others their best absolutely free Society realized the value of such training and wherever the teachers took up their residence in the cities or in the forests it voluntarily supplied them with the necessary means for the maintenance of their families as well as disciples Kings and noblemen took advantage of their hunting expeditions to visit the forest dwellings and after personal enquiry they arranged for the comforts of the teachers and students The teachers too who were mostly *rsis* would in their turn continue to enquire if people were not maintaining the *dharma* as they had been taught in their younger days When disturbed in their pious observances or in their work of training and protection these *rsis* often went to the rulers and asked for military aid against the wicked Rāma's life not merely during his exile but also before and after it, was full of instances of such aid rendered In more silent yet equally valuable ways the forest dwellers also contributed actively to the welfare of the householder section of the population They gave shelter as in the case of Pāndu and his family to those who wanted for various reasons to lead a life of retirement And what Vālmiki did towards Sītā and her children and what Kanva did in the case of Śakuntalā are typical examples showing how these renouncers of the world poured forth their disinterested love in the service of the forlorn and the afflicted disdaining at the same time to accept any wealth that might be offered to them in exchange

THE IDEAL OF DHARMA

Dharma was then the chief factor that shaped men's lives As the artistic sense colours the entire outlook of the artist and gives a touch of individuality and beauty not merely to his painting or music but also to his writings and discourses nay even his walking eating and sitting so also *dharma* was meant to give a holy blissful loving and heroic turn to the outlook of its votary and introduce its distinctive fragrance and sweetness into all the activities of his daily life Through his thoughts and manifold contacts each individual was to evolve steadily and dedicate his virtues to the service of society Different groups had their special *dharma*s too but neither an individual nor a group was looked upon as having acted in pursuance of *dharma* if actual practice resulted in clash oppression misery and the obstruction of spiritual evolution It was recognized that the devel

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

opment of personality could come about through religious rituals gifts civic duties studies discrimination renunciation and the like But since each of these was capable of being accepted by one for a time consciously or unconsciously for acquiring eventual mastery over others and exploiting them for one's own selfish gains the hidden motives as well as effects upon society as a whole had also to be weighed before deciding whether a particular form of activity constituted *dharma* or ran counter to it

Rāvana for example had all the advantages of Brāhmaṇa descent and Vedic studies In due course he himself his son and Kumbhakarna underwent the hardest austerities for obtaining divine favour and they got it too much more speedily than many of the *ṛsis* who succeeded only with their lifelong efforts Yet when the divine vision had disappeared and the boons had been secured they employed their enhanced powers for the oppression of the virtuous instead of the betterment of the world Rāvana's son especially had his own favourite grounds for offering oblations but when boons had relaxed his artificially kept up piety his mind, like that of his father and of every demon, quickly gravitated towards its naturally aggressive and murderous levels The extraordinary prowess which divine grace conferred on the demons was therefore systematically made to serve wicked ends and not to further the cause of *dharma* Hence the very Rāma who fought for protecting the rituals of Viśvāmitra and other *ṛsis* of the forest was forced to order the destruction of Meghanāda after first obstructing his rituals and thereby cutting off the source of his irresistible power Rituals or sacrifices penances and visions of the deities are, no doubt characteristics of a religious life but they were considered to be in consonance with *dharma* only if they broke down the barriers of the limited and aggressive ego and resulted in virtuous activities conducive to the welfare of all creatures

BIBHIṢANA

In striking contrast was the behaviour of Bibhiṣana Born of Nikasā like Rāvana he yet differed from his brother in the underlying motives for his penances *Dharma* being his guiding principle he could think only of the highest evolution as the gift worth accepting from the hands of the Lord May my mind said he with joined palms remain ever fixed on righteousness even when I happen to fall into great peril! May I also obtain true knowledge without any instructions! In Bibhiṣana as in Prahlāda we have a signal example of *dharma* manifesting itself transcending the limitations imposed by demoniac birth and natural affection towards relatives king and country Endowed with strength and clearness of vision as every follower of *dharma* invariably becomes Bibhiṣana quickly perceived the ruinous extent to which his brother was deviating from the path

THE CULTURE OF THE RAMAYANA

of virtue Fearlessly he spoke out his mind in the assembly and he surrendered to the mercy of Rāma and his forces only after exhausting all his resources to make his brother alter his resolve A true devotee of God and a man of action that he was he fully vindicated the trust Rama had placed in him He always fought in the van of the army and in every moment of crisis as on the occasion of Indrajit's second overthrow of Rāma and Lakṣmana²⁶ or his special rites in Nikumbhila or the illusion of Jānakī's execution²⁷ it was Bibhīṣana's calmness wisdom and resourcefulness that revived the courage of the troops and changed the fortunes of the battle If Ravana represents divine grace and the higher elements in heredity becoming dissipated in self aggrandizement Bibhīṣana stands for the heroic soul's clinging to *dharma* overcoming systematically the baser elements in heredity and the numerous temptations and dangers of a vicious environment

HANUMAT

Like Bibhīṣana from the *rākṣasa* camp there was Hanumat from the *vānara* camp Faithful devoted mighty intelligent and blest with long life the two typify one of the many beautiful parallels presented by Vālmiki Rama entertained high regard for Hanumat from their very first meeting Said he turning to Lakṣmana None can speak thus without mastering the Vedas with their branches Nor is there any defect in his countenance eyes forehead brows or any of his limbs His accents are wonderful auspicious and captivating Even an enemy who has his sword uplifted is moved Indeed success awaits the monarch whose emissaries are so accomplished²⁸ Just as the lotus opens its petals before the rising sun Hanumat felt himself drawn irresistibly to the feet of Rāma who represented *dharma* in its manifold aspects Rāma became his chosen spiritual ideal and he resolved forthwith to dedicate himself heart and soul to the promotion of Rāma's welfare Rāma's name or that of Sīta brought inexhaustible energy into his limbs and it was the secret of all the wonderful things he accomplished The *rākṣasas* he argued ought to be impressed with the might of Rāma through a signal demonstration of the havoc which he a single follower could cause unaided within their fortified city He therefore, destroyed Ravana's pleasure garden and broke down the superb edifice dedicated to Lankā's deities beating back the *rākṣasa* hosts with the bold challenge I am the servant of the sovereign of the Kosalas Rāma of heroic deeds A thousand Rāvanas cannot cope with me in conflict In the presence of all the *rākṣasas* I will coolly lay waste the city and go back having offered my

²⁶ *Ibid* VI 74
Ibid IV 3 28 34

²⁷ *Ibid* VI 84 13 22

salutation to Sītā and achieved my end ²⁹ A strict *brahmacārīn* that he was Hanūmat became uneasy since during his search for Sītā he had to let his eyes fall on many a lady in a sleeping condition and he carried on vigorous introspection and reasoning till he was satisfied that his mind had not been tainted or *dharma* violated in the least ³⁰ Freedom in the sense of shuffling off the gross and subtle bodies with the remembrance of the Lord did not appeal to him as the goal of existence May my devotion to thee remain unshaken he therefore prayed to Rāma after the latter's coronation at Ayodhyā and may my mind never conceive attachment unto any other object! Vouchsafe also that I may continue to live so long as thy stories continue to be told on earth! Conversant with *dharma* and its subtle manifestations Rāma graciously granted this prayer of his devotee just before he departed with others for the final plunge in the waters of the Sarayu

VALIN AND SUGRIVA

Vālin and Sugriva the royal brothers form another pair of characters, whose relations with each other and with Rāma reveal the working of *dharma* in some other aspects Knit together by love for a long time they yet became mortal enemies owing to a little misunderstanding It was honestly believed by all that Vālin had been killed in the cave by the Asura Māyāvin but even then Sugriva agreed to rule the country only because the ministers and the citizens unanimously desired it and by force they installed him on the throne Vālin however after his victory and escape from the cave could not have the patience or generosity to elicit all the facts or believe the explanations offered by his submissive brother To fly into a rage was pardonable in such circumstances if brotherly love was allowed to overcome it in a reasonable time but on the other hand, Vālin employed all his prodigious strength in pursuing Sugriva and wreaking utmost vengeance on him Sugriva and a few friends of his including Hanumat were able to keep themselves alive only because there was a solitary spot in the forest where Vālin's entrance had been effectively prevented by a sage's curse In spite of his valour Rāvana stooped to carry away Rama's wife by stealth while Vālin superior to Rāvana in prowess utilized that very prowess to capture Tārā from Sugriva If the recovery of Sītā by some means—and not *dharma*—were the only consideration Vālin was undoubtedly the better and surer ally for Rāma since Vālin had vanquished and humiliated Rāvana once before But if the achievement of Rāma's personal end was to fit in as it ought to with the scheme of maintaining *dharma* in its wider aspects Sugriva's friendship was the better

² *Ibid* V 42 34 36

Ibid V 11 30 45

THE CULTURE OF THE RAMAYANA

alternative Sugriva's evolution would then take place through the risk he would take on behalf of Rāma with a devoted mind while the evolution of Vālin could be complete only with the humbling of his pride and the refusal to accept his more certain though patronizing protection. That Sugriva could forget all ideas of self in the defence of Rāma's interests was clear from the single combat he had with Rāvana before the commencement of the actual fight. 'I am the friend as well as the slave of Rama' he shouted hitting the crown of Rāvana off his head with a blow and me backed by the energy of that lord of the earth thou shalt not escape today⁵¹ Rāma did not fail to administer a stern rebuke to Sugriva for exposing himself to such serious risk but the devoted Sugriva had his ready reply. 'Knowing my own strength he pleaded how could I O Rāghava control myself on seeing the wicked one who carried away thy spouse?'⁵² Valin's final reconciliation with Sugriva and concern for the future of Tārā and Angada and Sugriva's own genuine repentance for having sought the death of his brother who had generously let him off alive after many a combat have enormous power of appeal and show the noble heights of *dharma* to which those heroes could soar.

SANCTITY AND POSSIBILITIES OF MARRIED LIFE

Sītā is the ideal wife. Women were in ancient days considered to be the equals of men in the sense that whatever the husband did for the acquisition of merit or spiritual evolution was to be fully shared by the wife who was usually to sit by his side during the ceremonies. If the husband fixed his attention upon the supreme Being while going through his daily routine and meditations and the wife looked upon the husband as the Lord Himself in flesh and blood there was no reason why heroic children with a passion for *dharma* should not be born to bless their wedded life. That marriage was to be considered a sacred trust to rear up a generation that would solve the unsolved problems of the family country or even of the world instead of adding to them was recognized by and taught to all who chose to enter the householder's stage. Here and there Vālmiki himself mentions directly or through the medium of others⁵³ that Rāma was an incarnation of the Deity for the removal of the world's distress occasioned by those who made life an opportunity for aggression and gross sense enjoyment. Thus the fact that Dasaratha and his wives made themselves fit channels for the descent of the Lord to the earth in the interests of suffering humanity shows the maximum heights to which married life properly led could lift those who were bent on

⁵¹ *Ibid* VI 40 10 11

Ibid VI 41 49

Ibid VI 111 11 14 118 6 10 13 31 128 117

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

practising *dharma* A temporary defect in the mood of any one parent as in the case of Nikasā the mother of Rāvana³⁴ was sufficient to cause a congenital defect in the outlook of the child which no course of studies or penances might succeed in totally eradicating On the other hand by the virtuous thoughts and special disciplines of an expectant mother it was possible to give such a moulding to the temperament of the child³⁵ that as in the case of Kusa and Lava the training would progress by leaps and bounds and bring about a perfect development of the personality with the minimum effort on the part of the teacher

SITĀ

By accepting the principles of married life Sitā remained true to her lord in spite of the numerous trials she had to undergo She felt it would be wrong on her part to stay behind in the palace when Rāma was to go alone into the trackless forest I have been taught urged she by my parents to follow my husband in all conditions of life I shall carry out that lesson today and shall abide by no other counsel³⁶ Indeed the happiness of Rāma and the maintenance of his reputation were her guiding principles from the moment her father led her up to the altar for marriage This Sitā my daughter Janaka said addressing Rāma do thou accept as thy partner in the observance of every *dharma* May she be of exalted piety and devoted to thee her husband following thee like a shadow!³⁷ Far from weakening her and effacing her capacity for independent thinking this whole hearted devotion to her husband only made her all the more conscious of her inner strength She knew that the fire of her chastity was capable of reducing Rāvana to ashes but she deliberately refrained from such an exercise of her power For she did not wish to deprive Rāma's arrows of their legitimate privilege of rescuing her and humbling Rāvana whose insolence had swollen with his boons In spite of her intense longing for a sight of Rāma she was therefore, unwilling to agree to the proposal of Hanūmat to free her from Rāvana's control by carrying her on his back on his return journey through the air Confronted by Ravana who had all the advantages of physical force at his command she rose equal to the occasion and asserted the royalty in her in a dignified manner May good betide thee O Rāvana said she in a spirit of moderation, and do thou take me unto Rāma stricken with grief that I am Enter into friendship with that best of men if thou wishest to maintain thy life and empire He is well known for his adherence to *dharma* and is kind to all who seek his shelter³⁸ She

Ibid VII 9 22 23
³⁷ *Ibid* I 73 26 27

Br U VI 4 14 ff
³⁸ *Ibid* V 21 18 20

Rām II 27 10

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

It was with similar prayers invoking the strength generated by her observance of the *dharma* of a chaste wife that she faced the second ordeal of exile. When abandoned in the forest while carrying Rāma's future heirs in her womb or called upon to adduce proofs of her innocence a second time before the people, Sītā undoubtedly suffered agonies but remained patient like the earth from whom she claimed her birth, convinced that her virtuous husband thus treated her harshly only for upholding the *dharma* of the ideal king. The perfect wife that she was, she performed her proper duty by praying continually for the welfare of Rāma and his subjects and never expressed a word of reproach or complaint against him for the attitude he chose to adopt. I have always with my mind, body and words prayed for Rāma's wellbeing. May the goddess Earth now give me abiding place within her. It was with these fervent words that she faced her second ordeal and disappeared for ever from mortal view. Her faith in Rāma's undivided love for her remained unshaken though her physical eyes were not destined to see how it manifested itself in later years through his keeping of a golden image of her by his side during all his ceremonies. Rāma and Sītā showed that marriage could be an indissoluble bond resulting in mutual confidence and esteem and in the rearing up of heroic sons in spite of enforced exiles, apparently inhuman treatment and all the shocks given by a hostile external world. Nor is this strange in a country where the voluntary renunciation of one's nearest and dearest and a direct realization of the Lord as immanent not merely in one's own partner in life but also in all other objects of the world—*terrible no less than beautiful*—have been regarded as indispensable factors in any genuine spiritual life.

RĀMA

Rāma is presented in every context as the ideal man. There were occasions on which the great *ṛṣis* or the celestials, stood before him with joined palms and urged him to remember that he was the supreme Being Himself. But he seldom moved from the position that he was a mere man, Rāma son of Daśaratha.⁴⁵ No doubt he is described as the possessor of all the virtues a man can inherit or acquire but there is not the least suggestion that he obtained them just because he was divine and not because he underwent the necessary discipline laid down for ordinary men. If he developed subtle intelligence or philosophic wisdom and could excel in military feats or in answering controversialists or even in singing it was only because he diligently engaged himself in the study of the respective subjects and in serving his seniors and preceptors.⁴⁶

⁴⁵ *Ibid.* VI 117 6 11

Ibid. I 18 28 36 37 22 23

THE CULTURE OF THE RAMAYANA

When fighting with Indrajit who concealed himself by resorting to illusion Rāma and Lakṣmana behaved only as any other person following the code of chivalry and honest warfare. They were both as a result quickly overpowered, rendered senseless and bound with networks of arrows. Vālmīki makes the tragic element here complete by describing Sītā as viewing them in such a plight from the Puspaka and Bibhīṣana as bursting into lamentations until Garuda raises them up and sets them free. There is also a sad touch of dramatic irony in Garuda's parting words. By nature said he addressing Rāma, the *rākṣasas* have cunning shifts in fight whilst thou who art heroic and of a pure spirit, relyest on thy simplicity alone for strength. Thou shouldst never more trust these *rākṣasas* in the field of battle for they are deceitful. And allow me to depart. O Rāghava, and do thou entertain no curiosity as to our friendship.⁴⁷ The implication was that owing to Rāma's conception of himself as a mere human being and not as Viṣṇu, he had reason enough to be curious as to why Garuda should leave the Lord and rush for his assistance on the earth below.

Rāma's relations with his brothers form an interesting set off to those of Rāvana with Bibhīṣana or of Vālin with Sugriva. It so happened that circumstances forced Lakṣmana and Bharata into widely different positions when Kaikeyi insisted on the granting of her boons and Rāma agreed to retire into the woods. But they both entertained and manifested the same devotion to him and the same spirit of submissiveness. Thus if Lakṣmana remained sleepless at nights, acting faithfully as a servant and bodyguard, considering that as the best path for his spiritual advancement, Bharata too expressed identical feelings when he condemned his mother, lived like an ascetic or ruled the country in Rāma's name, using Rāma's sandals to symbolize his presence in the city. Śatrughna's attachment was equally strong. Obeying Rāma's instructions, he had slain Lavana and raised up a beautiful city after the strenuous work of a dozen years. Unable to bear separation from Rāma any more, he then ran up to Ayodhyā and prayed for permission to stay permanently in his company. The ideal brother and king that he was, Rāma gave a fitting reply, considering duly the demands of love and of government. Be not sorry, O hero, said he, for the *dharma* of the Kṣatriyas is to govern their subjects and they should never be tired of living in foreign lands for that purpose. Do thou however come at intervals to see me and return to thy own city. Forsooth, thou art dearer to me than my life. Some of the most touching scenes in the *Rāmāyana* are those relating to Lakṣmana. For example, there is the scene where Rāma is shown as regaining consciousness first and griev-

ing for the fall of Lakshmana whom he believes to have been slain by Indrajit's shafts⁴⁸ There is also the scene in which Lakshmana who had long before known from Sumantra of Rāma's future abandonment of him, coolly asks Rāma to kill him for violating the privacy of his talk with Yama How could he hesitate to lay down his life for saving the entire race? Arguing thus Lakshmana had readily arranged the interview and was not pained in the least to find that after all what Durvāsas wanted was only some food for satisfying his hunger!

Rāma's life was one of crosses Always the situations that arose were of such a baffling nature that anybody less heroic or less self-sacrificing would have either fled from them or left them further complicated But Rāma faced them all and put forth his best efforts to bring them under control Many difficulties were solved through the exercise of his military tactics and prowess the rest he tackled through his complete spirit of renunciation Of renouncing people Vālmiki has shown different types One is the ascetic who abandons kith and kin and the pleasures of life at a stroke and when the initial shocks of the mind are got over struggles gradually to approach a state of bliss and tranquillity Many belonging to this class like Viśvamitra in his earlier days stumbled and fell occasionally in the course of their perilous onward march whenever external forces proved too strong for the measure of self-control acquired by them Others like Agastya or Bharadvāja attained mental poise and spiritual freedom and remained prepared to help actively in the affairs of men if the need for it arose It was Agastya for instance who gave Rāma the weapon and the *mantra* which gave him additional facilities for overcoming Rāvana in the final encounter⁴⁹ Rāma's renunciation was of a different type He too gave up his kith and kin and the pleasures and privileges of life but not at a stroke His struggles were spread out throughout a whole life each succeeding step coming just when the mind had learnt to adjust itself to the tremendous changes in outlook and conduct caused by its predecessor Thus by the time he was reconciled to the loss of the kingdom and of his father he was confronted with the loss of his wife When after meeting enormous difficulties he recovered his wife and became installed on the throne there arose a whisper of scandal, and he had to banish his wife to the woods though she was with child the twins that were his future heirs Long afterwards his silent sorrows became mitigated a little when he recognized his children and took them to the palace but the second ordeal which he imposed on Sītā resulted in her final disappearance from the earth Lastly to crown his human woes

Ibid VI 49 4 30

Ibid VI 105 2 29 108 3 4

THE CULTURE OF THE RĀMĀYANA

there cropped up the need for killing or banishing Laksmana when only a few days more of life remained for them. In all these cases the principle followed by Rāma was that of sacrificing a smaller circle of interests when wider ones had to be protected and of maintaining tranquillity in spite of the pain resulting from such a procedure. Thus it was that when domestic interests came into clash he satisfied Kaikeyī and gave up his own right to be installed. Similarly when threatened with the danger of his being viewed by the citizens as a man of impure ways instead of as a model of virtue and purity he chose to give up Sītā knowing in his inmost heart that she would pray for his success in the observance of the sovereign's *dharma*. And lest his words should be falsified the man of truth that he was he ordered the banishment of the faithful Laksmana. There was no situation from which he shrank or which he did not endeavour to solve or at least smoothen through the application of his prowess, his regard for truth and justice and his readiness to sacrifice his interests to achieve the welfare of others. Though Vālmiki has not at every turn of the story stressed the fact of Rāma's being an incarnation of Viṣṇu he has certainly brought out vividly that he was an embodiment of *dharma* in its manifold aspects.

CONCLUSION

Vālmiki's is not the only *Rāmāyana* now available to us. In Sanskrit itself there is the *Adhyātma Rāmāyana* which reminds the reader at every turn⁵⁰ that Rāma was conscious of his divinity at all times although he continued to behave like an ordinary man suffering patiently the sorrows that fell to his lot. Many a poet of later years⁵¹ has drawn inspiration from the glorious history of Rāma and has either translated these two *Ramāyanas* into the regional languages or produced original compositions giving elaborate treatment to particular episodes. Painters and sculptors have also been drawing their best subjects from this sacred theme and in different parts of the country one may see mighty temples erected in honour of Rāma containing his image in a heroic pose within the shrine or his story depicted in colours all over the walls. In the afternoons or at nights when work is over and leisure is available here and there might also be seen groups of devotees including women and children listening eagerly to the exposition of the *Rāmāyana* and imbibing the principles of *dharma* as the ancients conceived it. The story tellers are specially trained in the art though there may not be much in common between their modern performances and those given by the

e.g. Vasiṣṭha's advice to Bharata and the talk between Kaikeyī and Rama (II 9)
Bhavabhūti (Sanskrit) Tulasidāsa (Hindi) Ezuttaccan (Malayalam) etc

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

original chanters Kuśa and Lava the disciples of Vālmiki. In all these ways and many more the ideals presented by the sage have spread to every corner of the country. There is no doubt that Rāma's character as a hero and as a man of virtuous action and that of Sītā as a model heroine have been instrumental in shaping the lives of many who genuinely aspire after *dharma*. Valmiki has wisely upheld the ideal of *dharma* which has a comprehensive sweep and which enables its votaries irrespective of their vocation or status in society to enjoy inner perfection and freedom while dedicating their virtues to the welfare of others. If this ideal exemplified by the sage in the motives and activities of his numerous characters is grasped and put into practice all the creeds may survive the present crisis work side by side without the feeling of hostility and make people intelligent efficient and self sacrificing enough to solve the problems of the family country or even of the world as a whole.

THE MAHĀBHĀRATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

I

JAYA BHARATA AND THE MAHĀBHARATA

THE present text of the *Mahabhārata* the Great Epic of India passing through the stages of *Jaya* and *Bhārata* came to be developed from a small beginning first incorporating the story of the triumph of the Pāṇḍavas over the Kauravas then the narrative in detail of the entire Bharata race and finally the present encyclopaedic *satasāhasrī samhītā* (a compilation of a hundred thousand stanzas) As we have it in popular recensions it represents a literary activity of the Indian mind covering a vast period of about eight centuries Its main story relates to the victory of the Pāṇḍavas over the Kauravas and as such it was called *Jaya* Victory or Triumph and was also styled as history or *itihāsa* This history of the triumph of the Pāṇḍavas forms the basis of a popular narrative which was turned into a ballad recited by wandering minstrels It must have been the earliest recension of the epic and naturally must have been in this form a small text say of about 8 000 to 10 000 stanzas It is just likely that this recension grew further into a *Bhārata* with some 24 000 stanzas when the theme of the work was enlarged upon a fratricidal war between the two vast armies and may have included at least a brief account of the origin of the race of the Bharatas the *Bhārata jana*¹ of Vedic antiquity

THE STORY IN OUTLINE

The *Bhārata* may also have included the origin of the feud which in its later stages developed into a sort of an all India war The origin of this feud is stated to have been the desire on the part of one branch of the Kuru race to appropriate the legitimate place of the other The two brothers Dhṛtarāstra and Pāṇḍu were physically handicapped the one was blind and the other was under the curse of a disease that rendered him incapable of begetting children So Pāṇḍu went to the forest with his two wives Kuntī and Mādrī for retreat and died there Mādrī ascended his funeral pyre and Kuntī returned to the city of Hastināpura with the five sons The sons of Dhṛtarāstra numbering one hundred felt jealous of the children of Pāṇḍu and started ill treating and harassing them in several ways Dhṛtarāstra could not reject the claims of the sons of Pāṇḍu to a shelter

¹ RV III 53 12

in the royal household. He had to arrange for their training which in those days consisted mostly of the knowledge of and practice in the science of warfare and as these sons of Pandu particularly Bhīma and Arjuna excelled in their learning the sons of Dhṛtarāṣṭra feared them as a source of danger to their supremacy. This was an additional reason for the ill treatment to the Pāṇḍavas. In this ill treatment Duryodhana and Duḥśāśana the first and the second of the sons of Dhṛtarāṣṭra naturally took a leading part supported by Śakuni the maternal uncle and Karna a friend of Duryodhana. There were several occasions on which the Pāṇḍavas proved their superiority over the other side for instance at the time of the Pāṇḍava princess Draupadī's *svayamvara* (election of a husband from the assembly of princes) when they won her hand under the eyes of the Kauravas. It appeared then quite clear that Yudhiṣṭhira would soon be the virtual king of the Kuru Pāṇḍava race. This frightened Duryodhana who in consultation with his friends induced Yudhiṣṭhira to play a game of dice with Śakuni the expert on his side so that the latter would lose in the game everything and would be required to go into exile. The game of dice was lost by Yudhiṣṭhira and he had to go into exile and further insults were showered upon Draupadī—the common wife of the five Pāṇḍavas—when she was dragged to the court room in a scanty dress and was called *dasī* (slave). This naturally enraged Bhīma and Arjuna and forced them to vow revenge on the offenders. So even though they had to go into long exile lasting twelve years for the sake of Yudhiṣṭhira and remain away one more year incognito at the end of the period they demanded their share in the kingdom. When this demand was refused, they prepared themselves for war but the great war which lasted for eighteen days brought a very costly victory to Yudhiṣṭhira though he won back the kingdom. In outline this must have been the story of the earliest form of the epic called *Jaya* or *Bhārata*. In extent the work could not have then contained more than 24 000 stanzas.

THE GROWTH OF THE EPIC

But as time went on, attempts were made to enlarge this *Bhārata* of 24 000 stanzas into an encyclopaedia of the stock of knowledge the Indian mind then possessed. A famous line of the epic says that everything in the world is contained in this work and what is not found here will not be found anywhere else.² The enlargement was effected by including in it a large number of narratives episodes fables as well as discourses on moral philosophical religious and political topics. Actually the northern recension contains 82 136 stanzas and the southern one 95 586 stanzas. It

must be noted that the bulk of the present text is a work of centuries and additions were being made even after the fourth century A D

The accepted text of the *Mahābhārata* makes mention of its three³ beginnings or opening points. This need not necessarily be interpreted as marking the beginnings of the *Jaya*, the *Bhārata* and the *Mahābhārata*. But for the bare mention of *Jaya* in the opening *mantra* we get little knowledge about it, but there is mention of the length of the *Bhārata* as 24 000 stanzas and of the *Mahābhārata* as a *satasāhasrī samhītā*. As it was difficult to retain in memory such a large work, it is said that the two versions, the *Bhārata* and the *Mahābhārata*, were made, but at one place⁴ there is mention also of a much shorter version of about 150 stanzas, which is no other than the *anukramanikadhyāya* of the new Critical Edition of the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute, Poona. The *Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra* mentions two distinct works, the *Bhārata* and the *Mahābhārata*. We are not in a position to fix the dates of the compositions of the three forms of the epic with any amount of certainty. Winternitz seems to be right when he says, "One date of the *Mahābhārata* does not exist at all. That form of the epic referred to as the *Bhārata* or the *Mahābhārata* did not exist in the Vedic period and it was little known in the land of Buddhism. It therefore must have been composed during the period, say from the fourth century B C to the fourth century A D. By the fourth century A D the *Mahābhārata*⁵ must have attained its present bulk of about 82 000 stanzas and have come to be popularly called a *satasāhasrī samhītā*. Small alterations and additions continued to be made even after the fourth century A D, as the comparison of the northern and southern recensions would indicate."

It has been shown above that the main story of the *Mahābhārata* relates to the struggle between the two branches of Bharata's race, the Kauravas and the Pāndavas. In itself this story would not, or should not, give us a volume of more than 10 000 stanzas, even on our allowing for it a latitude for the epic style. The larger bulk found in the later stages

Ibid. I 1 50

Ibid. I 1 62

The *editio princeps* issued in 1896 from Calcutta is the earliest printed edition and represents the vulgate text of the *Mahābhārata*. The editions in *puṭhī* form issued by Ganpat Krishnan in Śaka 1799 (A D 1877) and by Gopal Narayan of Bombay in A D 1913 are said to represent the text of Nīlakaṇṭha, the well-known commentator of the *Mahābhārata*. The Kumbhakonam Edition, claiming to be mainly based on southern Indian manuscripts, presents but a composite Telugu version. P. P. S. Sastry's Edition, however, represents southern Indian manuscript tradition somewhat better, but cannot be said to be a critical edition, even for the southern Indian manuscripts. This has been shown by the late V. S. Sukthankar. The new edition of the *Mahābhārata* mentioned above is admitted by scholars to be the critical edition in the correct sense of the term. By 1959 it has published ten *parvans* completely, namely *Adi Sabha Aranyaka Virata Udyoga Bhishma Drona Karna Stri and Sauptika*. Parts of the *śanti* and *śanti parvans* are in the Press, and a few more are under preparation. When all the eighteen *parvans* are published in this edition, it will have kept in the hands of scholars all the material for a higher criticism of the epic.

of the development of the epic must have been due to additions of narratives about some prominent members of the race with a view to magnify their greatness—description of the grandeur of personages like Bhīṣma—insertion of stories regarding the birth of the Pāṇḍavas and Kauravas and their training—explanation of the superiority of one branch over the other in qualities appropriate to the Kṣatriya race—discussion about the question of succession and the methods adopted by the Kauravas to see the Pāṇḍavas out of the field—and inclusion of other incidents of maltreatment—exile—stay at Viṣāṭa's court—attempts at settlement and failure—Kṛṇa's exhortation known as the *Bhagavad Gītā* and the fratricidal war for eighteen days and the victory of the Pāṇḍavas—all these might have constituted in a way the work called the Bhārata. This Bhārata in course of time attained a sanctity which raised it to the status of the Veda—in fact it was called the fifth Veda. When the Vedas became a sealed book to women Śūdras and degraded or uncultured Brāhmanas the only source of learning left to them was this Bharata. From time to time the Bhārata received additions and amplifications here and there—it would seem that a conscious effort was made to convert it into a depository of all knowledge and wisdom of the human race. The present bulk of the epic is clearly due to the addition of extraneous matter such as genealogies mostly found in the *Sambhava-parvan*, a sub-section of the *Ādi-parvan* and the addition of episodes some of which have the length of an epic. We have thus the stories of Śakuntalā and Duhsanta or Dusyanta, Yayāti, Nala and Damayantī, Rāma, Savitrī and Satyawat and several others and also a large number of smaller stories. If we measure the bulk of these narratives it would easily cover more than one-fourth of the whole epic. Another source of inflation is long and monotonous descriptions of battles. This item may account for about 20% of the total bulk. Lastly comes didactic matter such as is contained in the *Bhagavad Gītā* found in the *Bhīṣma-parvan*, the sub-*parvans* on *rāja dharma*, *āpād-dharma* and *mokṣa dharma* in the *Sānti-parvan* and also similar topics in the *Anuśāsanaparvan*. The didactic matter covers more than 30% of the total volume leaving for the main story only 10 000 stanzas or so.

Over and above the eighteen *parvans* of the *Mahābhārata* there is one *parvan*, called the *Harivaṃśa* which in the colophon of the work itself is called a *khila* or supplement of the epic. This *parvan* is divided into three sub-*parvans* the *Harivaṃśa-parvan*, the *Viṣṇu-parvan* and the *Bhaviṣya-parvan* the total number of the chapters being 317 and stanzas over 16 000. The first sub-*parvan* is a Purāṇa in itself and, in addition to legends it narrates several genealogies. The second one gives an account of the life of Kṛṣṇa and the third speaks of the future. The material of the

THE MAHABHARATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

Harivamsa seems to have been drawn from the *Viṣṇu Bhāgavata Bhaviṣya* and other Purāṇas. There are good many sections in this work lavishly glorifying Kṛṣṇa and the *Mahābhārata*. The *Harivamsa* is clearly written much later than the rest of the *Mahābhārata* and does not possess the elegance and the high moral purpose of the epic.

DIVISION INTO PARVANS

We have no clear indications when the *Mahābhārata* was divided into eighteen *parvans*. Admitting that the original form of the epic should contain about 10 000 stanzas, a number approximately representing the volume of the present text of the *Ādi-parvan* in the Poona Critical Edition, we may presume that the *parvan* division came into play at a much later date. The eighteen *parvans* of the *Mahābhārata* and the supplement *Harivamsa* as we have it now are all of unequal length, the smallest *Mahāprasthānika* which forms the seventeenth *parvan* having only 120 stanzas while the biggest the *Śānti* having as many as 14 525 stanzas. The *Śānti* and *Anuśāsana* together cover over 21 000 stanzas, almost one fourth of the entire *Mahābhārata*. I therefore think that in the *Jaya* stage of the epic there may not have been division of the work into *parvans*; it may have been introduced in the second stage, but even there the number may not have been more than three or four. When, however, the epic attained its present bulk, the work got divided into *parvans* or Books, numbering eighteen, a number which became somewhat hallowed as the number of days taken by the battle in which the Pāṇḍavas were victorious was also eighteen. The same may be said about the sub *parvans* which according to the southern recension number 2 000.

THE CHARACTER OF THE MAHABHARATA

Matthew Arnold, defining the epic form of poetry, said that the main story must relate to high personages and that its language and metre should be simple and dignified. It should contain vigorous dialogues. It should have interludes in the form of episodes. It must have a high and noble purpose. In the light of this definition, we can surely call the *Mahābhārata* an epic *par excellence*. The story relates to high personages belonging to the hallowed race of the Bharatas of high antiquity. The metres employed in the epic are simple, being mostly *anustubh* and *triṣṭubh* and the language used is simple, sonorous and dignified. There are a number of racy dialogues here and there and a large number of episodes. The moral objective of the work is propagation of the Eternal Law covering the four human values—*dharma*, *artha*, *kāma* and *mokṣa*. Of these, the first is to be regarded as the most valuable treasure. In fact,

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

the note of *dharma* permeates the entire poem and is concisely expressed in the famous couplet

*Urdhvabāhur viraumyasa na ca kascit srnoti mām
Dharmad arthasca kāmasca sa dharmah kim na sevyate?*

The introductory chapter of the epic narrates in detail several other objectives—one of which is being an eternal source of inspiration to future poets but *dharma* is the supreme teaching of this epic and so it is rightly regarded as the fifth Veda

II

In sharp contrast with the practical unanimity which prevails among scholars as to the origin of the *Mahābhārata* there is a wide difference of opinion among them regarding its growth and nature. Several conflicting theories have been propounded by them to explain the rise of the *Mahābhārata* which may broadly be grouped under three headings—the analytic school, the synthetic school and the traditional view. The traditional view will be dealt with after considering the analytic and the synthetic schools.

THE THEORY OF THE ANALYTIC SCHOOL

The first impression a critical reader would get from the *Mahābhārata* is that it is not the composition of a single author, not even of those of one generation. He soon notices that it is an assemblage of heterogeneous elements—a compilation involving many authors of varying abilities who added a considerable amount of adventitious matter to the original epic nucleus from time to time. The great epic in its present form is the outcome of a long and continuous literary activity. This is the starting point of the theory which aims at reaching the epic nucleus by severe dissection. The analytic school assumes that the *Mahābhārata* does not conform to Matthew Arnold's definition of the epic according to which the subject of the epic poem must be some one great complex action and argues that whatever is didactic, episodic or not in any way related to the epic story did not form part of the original epic. There are again as the analytic school would show discrepancies in the *Mahābhārata* which are inexplicable on the hypothesis of unity of authorship as maintained by the synthetic school. Further fortified as it is by the support from the tradition based on the express statement in the *Mahābhārata* itself that it had three different beginnings and three different forms, the analytic

THE MAHABHARATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

theory has found general acceptance among the European scholars and has been accepted to a great extent by Indian scholars. Here a brief reference may be made to the views of the main supporters of the analytic school in the chronological order.

Lassen, who may be said to have inaugurated the modern critical study of the *Mahabharata*, subjected the epic to a complete analysis. According to him the epic as recited by Śaunaka was its second recension which he places between 400 and 450 B.C. and which he holds was there after augmented by interpolations of a Kṛṣṇite nature alone. Sorensen's attempts at reconstructing the epic resulted in his obtaining at first an edition of some 27 000 stanzas which he later rejected in favour of what he declared to be the original genuine epic containing seven or eight thousand stanzas. This Ur Mahābhārata Sorensen said was of the nature of a saga which did not contain contradictions, repetitions or digressions and which was the composition of a single inspired poet. On the basis of the Nature myth hypothesis then in vogue Ludwig regarded the *Mahābhārata* as an allegorical poem on the struggle between the sun and the darkness of the night. In his view the capture of the Kuruksetra by the Bharatas, the confederation of the five tribes and so forth constituted the historical kernel of the *Mahābhārata*. Later writers concentrated on theorizing about the nature and character of the epic nucleus and formulating the criteria for discriminating the genuine from the spurious. This analytic method reached its highest watermark in Hopkins who dated the different stages of the development of the epic as follows: (1) the Bhārata lays (400 B.C.) (2) the *Mahābhārata* tale with the Pāṇḍavas as the heroes (400-200 B.C.) (3) didactic interpolations (200 B.C. A.D. 200) and (4) later additions (A.D. 200-400) with (5) occasional amplifications (after A.D. 400).

THE INVERSION THEORY

In order to explain the inherent contradiction subsisting between the story and the moral sought to be inculcated by the epic in its present form as exemplified by the victory of the Pāṇḍavas supported by Kṛṣṇa through deceptions and frauds practised by them in complete disregard of the rules of righteous warfare Adolf Holtzmann started an ingenious theory later on styled by Hopkins as the inversion theory. According to this theory the Kauravas were the heroes of the original *Mahābhārata* and it is as a result of several successive tendentious revisions that it finally received in the twelfth century its present form which glorifies the Pāṇḍavas as its heroes. Though the theory was advocated by Lassen, Winternitz and Meyer it was criticized by Barth, Lévi, Pischel, Jacobi

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Oldenberg and Hopkins Theories analogous to the inversion theory supporting the inversion of the original epic were formulated subsequently by L. von Schroeder and Grierson suggesting different reasons for the inversion. Curiously enough Holtzmann, Schroeder and Grierson suggested mutually contradictory motives for the inversion which fact goes against the validity of the hypothesis itself. There is no external evidence to support the inversion theory the epic itself being its sole basis and the theory views only one side of the shield completely ignoring the other. The Kauravas are indeed equally guilty unscrupulous and sinful—only they are discreet and diplomatic in the extreme.⁶

CRITICISM OF THE ANALYTIC THEORY

The analytic theory which seeks to restore the lost epic nucleus results from a superficial study of the *Mahābhārata* and insufficient understanding of its meaning its basic plan and the aim of its authors. The episodic matter to which the western scholars take exception is not secondarily introduced but part of the original plan of providing instruction for the common man in *dharma* in a popular form and so it serves the distinct purpose of filling in temporal hiatuses⁷ according to Pisanī. Being part of the original plan the episodic element has been evenly distributed at suitable places without in any way interrupting the course of narration or disturbing the balance of the epic as a whole. It may be observed that whereas the *Āranyaka*, *Śānti* and *Anusasana parvans* teem with so called episodic and didactic digressions the portions of the epic dealing with rapid action as in the *Sabhā*, *Virāta*, *Sauptika* and *Stri parvans* have practically no didactic or episodic element. Further ancient Indian standards of literary criticism holding moral edification as the chief aim of any work are to be applied to the *Mahābhārata* and these need not conform to the definition of an epic in some foreign literature. Creative authors in all ages are not fettered by aesthetic standards and text book rules and there is no justification for the surgical operation on or the excision of any limb of the epic on subjective considerations. The method of athetizing or marking as spurious passages on the basis of higher criticism—though legitimately applied to comparatively more recent and also much simpler works about whose historical context we happen to be better informed—has been found completely broken down even in these cases.⁸ The application of the analytic method in the case of the *Mahābhārata* would lead us, not to one source but to many sources. Moreover the nucleus that we may possibly be able to discover in our analytical

Sukthankar *Meaning* p. 17
Sukthankar *op. cit.* p. 30

⁷ *Festschrift Thomas* p. 170

THE MAHABHĀRATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

adventures is in all probability likely to be merely a projection of our own feeling⁹

THE THEORY OF THE SYNTHETIC SCHOOL

On the failure of the analytic method to arrive at any useful or intelligent result attempts were made to understand the epic as a unified composition Oldenberg however characterized the supposition that the *Mahābhārata* was a unified and harmonious whole as a scientific monstrosity No doubt the *prima facie* impression created by the epic is of being a bizarre and meaningless accumulation of heterogeneous elements¹⁰ Soon however this impression yields place to the idea of a unified and a perfectly balanced work By excluding extraneous matter Sorensen had arrived at the Ur *Mahābhārata* which he declared to be the work of a single author According to Dahlmann who is the main exponent of what Hopkins dubbed as the synthetic theory (1) the *Mahābhārata* is a unified work a single organic whole in which the didactic and epic elements have been artistically welded together by a single inspired diaskeuast keeping in view a definite plan and purpose (2) the epic story was invented merely for the purpose of illustrating maxims of law and (3) the date of this composition or compilation was not later than the fifth century B.C. While agreeing with Dahlmann in regard to the first part of his theory about the unity of aim and plan in the work Jacobi and Barth and also Sukthankar did not accept the latter part of it The Critical Edition of the *Mahābhārata* has amply demonstrated that large blocks of the text of the vulgate (which was the text used by Dahlmann) are comparatively late interpolations Hence Dahlmann's text in its entirety cannot go back to the fifth century B.C.

THE TRADITIONAL VIEW

The traditional view as given in the *Mahābhārata* itself accepts as its author Vyāsa who was known also as Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana and who is mentioned as the son of Parāśara and Satyawatī A close relationship is established between Vyāsa and the heroes of the epic by representing him as the procreator of Dhṛtarāṣṭra and Pāṇdu on Vicitravīrya's childless widows Ambā and Ambālikā by *levirate* After performing penance Vyāsa composed the *Bhārata* of 24 000 verses which according to the learned is its extent excluding the *upākhyānas* To this was appended a chapter comprising the contents of the various *parvans* Vyāsa taught this *Bhārata* to his son Śuka and other deserving and promising students including Vaiśampāyana

⁹ *Ibid* p 31

Ibid p 11

There is a reference to another composition by Vyāsa comprising six million stanzas and portions of which were sung among the gods manes *gandharvas* and mankind this is a very late interpolation in the epic and need not be considered in this context ¹¹ The reference to the riddles (*kūta śloka*s) composed by Vyāsa to puzzle Ganesa who agreed to become his scribe on the stipulation that his pen should not cease writing for a moment and who modified it subsequently by stating that he would cease writing whenever he failed to comprehend anything is a further interpolation in the already interpolated Brahma Ganesa episode ¹² rendering invalid all speculations based on it

THE THREE BEGINNINGS

The *Mahābhārata* states that the *sūta* (called Sauti or Ugrasiava) heard the epic recited at the snake sacrifice of Janamejaya by Vaisampāyana to whom it had been imparted by his preceptor Vyāsa and that *sūta* in turn being entreated by the sages assembled in the Naimiṣa forest related it to them as the *Mahābhārata* during the sacrifice performed by Śaunaka In the following stanza the *Mahābhārata* speaks of its three beginnings

*Manvādī bhāratam kecid āstikādī tathā pare
Tathoparicarādīnye viprāḥ samyag adhīyate* ¹³

These are (1) *manvādī* (beginning with Manu) i.e. from the very beginning of the present *Mahābhārata* immediately after the invocatory verse (*mangala śloka*) followed by the dialogue between Sauti and the sages at Śaunaka's hermitage (2) *āstikādī* (beginning with Āstika) i.e. from the description of the snake sacrifice of Janamejaya where starts the *Āstikaparvan* and (3) *uparicarādī* (beginning with Uparicara) i.e. from the commencement of the actual narration of the history of the Bharatas where begins the *Amsāvataraparvan*

These three refer respectively to the three beginnings of the *Mahābhārata* as recited by the *sūta* from chapter one by Vaisampāyana from chapter thirteen and by Vyāsa from chapter fifty four of the Critical Edition of the *Mahābhārata* (corresponding respectively to chapters one, thirteen and fifty nine, of the Bombay Edition) The texts recited by these sages were respectively taken to be Jaya the Bhārata and the *Mahābhārata* and the extent of the latter two was said to be 24 000 and 100 000 *śloka*s respectively Some scholars take the extent of Vyāsa's work Jaya to be 8 800 The opinion among scholars differ concerning the dates of these three redactions and the identity of their authors The stanza on which P P S

Mbh (B) I 1 105 6 (Cr Ed) 29* p 12
Mbh (Cr Ed) *Ādiparvan* appendix I 1
Mbh (Cr Ed and B) I 1 50

THE MAHABHARATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

Sastri bases his view that the computation of the *Mahabharata* is 100 000 *slokas* if counted along with minor narratives occurs among the interpolated stanzas in the Critical Edition ¹⁴

RISE OF THE MAHABHARATA

That the central theme of the *Mahābhārata* represents the story of the great war said to have been fought in times of yore between the sons of Dhṛtarāstra and Pāṇdu for the throne of Hastināpura is almost undisputed. How from this saga the epic grew into the present *Mahābhārata* is now considered. Winternitz¹⁵ and others state that the epic nucleus assumed the present form of the *Mahābhārata* by additions of different kinds including (1) legendary matter from the bardic repertoire having but a casual connection or having no connection with the epic heroes (2) myths and legends of Brahmanic origin and didactic sections pertaining to Brāhmanic philosophy ethics and law stressing the superiority of the Brāhmanas (3) cosmological genealogical and geographical matter and local myths (4) myths of Viṣṇu and later of Śiva (5) fables parables fairy tales and moral stories (6) ascetic poetry and (7) prose pieces and Brāhmanical legends and moral tales entirely or partly in prose. According to Pīṣanī¹⁶ the latest writer on the subject the rhapsodic elements utilized by the author of the *Mahābhārata* coming from different sources comprised (1) the old Bhārata and the *Mahabharata* known to the author of the *Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra* and perhaps to Pāṇini (2) single episodes relating to the heroes of the Bharata saga their forefathers and other famous kings and warriors (3) edifying *upakhyānas* religious and moral teachings traditions about *tīrthas* (holy spots) etc (4) traditions about the pre-eminence of the Brāhmanas of sacrifices etc (5) didactic parts (6) prose passages in imitation of the Brāhmana literature. The pre-existing material Pīṣanī adds was woven into a unified whole according to a pre-planned design by the author who added creations of his own smoothed down differences removed contradictions and introduced modifications in other ways. The final author or redactor of the *Mahābhārata* is taken by Pīṣanī to be a Brahmana and on Sukthankar's authority he was a Bhṛgu.

THE BHARGAVA ELEMENTS IN THE EPIC

Sukthankar's researches into the Bhārgava material in the *Mahabharata* have supplied us with a clue to the evolution of the *Mahābhārata* as an *Epos* (unwritten narrative poetry celebrating incidents of heroic tradition)

¹⁴ *Mbh* (B) I 1 101b—102a (Cr. Ed.) 27 p. 11 Sastri *Mahābhārata* (Southern Recension) Vol. I introd. pp. x xi
Winternitz *HIL* I pp. 375 442

¹⁶ *op. cit.* pp. 173f

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

and *Rechtsbuch* (a Law book) combined¹⁷ He finds that the Bhāgava material concentrated mostly in the *upākhyānas* could not have been the work of Vyāsa who according to tradition composed the Bhārata without the episodic matter nor can it be assigned to Vaiśampāyana Vyāsa's direct disciple who recited it in the latter's presence as taught by him during Janamejaya's snake sacrifice Sauti the next reciter cannot naturally be credited with the converting of the Bhārata into the *Mahābhārata* but the frame story recording Sauti's recitation in the presence of Bhārgava Śaunaka clearly indicates that the Bhārata had at a critical stage of its evolution passed into the exclusive sphere of the Bhrgus through the medium of the wandering minstrels The Bhrgus who had specialized in *dharma* (established law) and *nīti* (right conduct) developed the epic by incorporating a large mass of didactic material mostly in the *Sānti* and *Anuśāsana parvans* thus they raised the *Mahābhārata* to the rank of a Smṛti and combined popular instruction and edification along with entertainment The didactic interlude forms in fact an integral part of the original poem in its only form known to us and the didactic and the narrative ingredients represent the two aspects of one and the same central ideas of imparting the knowledge of *dharma* The fact that this heterogeneous mass the strange admixture of the epic with the *dharma* and *nīti* elements presents an apparently homogeneous character is explicable on the assumption that the epic remained for some time in the exclusive possession of the Bhārgavas as their close literary preserve The Bhārgavas thus took from the *sūtas* the Bhārata and gave back the *Mahābhārata* as the common property of all which still retained its traditional association with Vyāsa Sukthankar held the view that all attempts to arrive at the epic nucleus is futile He further stated that all attempts to explain it (i.e. the *Mahābhārata*) merely as an evolute of some hypothetical epic nucleus are merely examples of wasted ingenuity The Bhrgus he added have to all appearances swallowed up the epic nucleus such as it was and digested it completely and it would be a hazardous venture now to reconstruct the lost Kṣatriya ballad of love and war¹⁸

THE EPIC ITS RECENSIONS VERSIONS AND CRITICAL TEXT

A critical study of the manuscript material has shown that the *Mahābhārata* has come down to us in two main recensions the northern and the southern corresponding to the main types of Indian scripts These recensions have been subdivided into versions according to the different provincial

¹⁷ The Bhrgus and the Bharata A Text Historical Study ABORI XVIII pp 176
SME I pp 278-337

¹⁸ Sukthankar *Meaning* p 110

THE MAHABHARATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

scripts in which the text has been handed down Thus the northern recension comprises the Śāradā or Kashmiri the Nepālī the Maithilī the Bengālī and the Devanāgarī versions The southern recension has given the Telugu the Grantha and the Malayalam versions There are numerous differences divergences deviations and discrepancies of several kinds between the northern and the southern recensions The southern recension is considerably longer than the northern one this excess in volume is due not merely to the repeated addition of fresh passages and episodes throughout the work but other factors as well As compared with the northern recension which is distinctly vague unsystematic sometimes even incoherent the southern recension impresses us by its precision schematization and thoroughly practical outlook ¹⁹

The complete editions of the *Mahābhārata* hitherto published cannot be taken to represent either of the recensions mentioned above The Critical Edition of the *Mahābhārata* that is being published by the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute Poona is based on a very large number of representative manuscripts and it fully utilizes the testimonia consisting of commentaries adaptations epitomes parallel versions citations early translations and the like Besides the constituted text it records not only the divergent readings of any importance but also every line or stanza including the seemingly most irrelevant ones actually found in a *Mahābhārata* manuscript collated for the edition thus presenting a digest of the manuscript tradition of the *Mahābhārata* extending over nearly a thousand years The editors have tried to reach in it the form which the poem had before its spreading through India the archetype which stands at the basis of the different recensions and branches of traditions ²⁰ It does not claim to be a reconstruction of the Ur *Mahābhārata* or the Ur *Bhārata* nor is it an exact replica of the poem as recited by Vaisampāyana before Janamejaya It only claims as modestly put by Sukthankar to be the most ancient one (i.e. text) according to the direct line of transmission purer than the others in so far as it is free from the obvious errors of copying and spurious additions ²¹

THE RECONSTRUCTION OF THE CRITICAL TEXT

A brief reference to the principles followed in constituting the text of the Critical Edition may not be out of place here ²² Complete concord between the northern and southern recensions is accepted by the editors as the greatest indication of originality Where two classes of manuscripts

¹⁹ Sukthankar *Prolegomena* p XXXVI *SME* I p 48

²⁰ Easani *ABORI* XXIX p 303 *Prolegomena* p CI *SME* p 129

²¹ Cf Sukthankar *Prolegomena* pp LXXVI ff *ABORI* XVI pp 90-91 *Āraṇyaka parvan* Introd p xviii *SME* I pp 109 ff 246 159

agree on a textual unit in opposition to other two classes preference is given to that side on which the Kashmiri manuscripts stand. The readings that suggest best how the other readings might have arisen are selected. Interpretation is given precedence over emendation and the more difficult readings are preferred to the simpler ones. Hiatuses in the text irregular *sandhus* and grammatical and metrical irregularities are retained where they are supported by manuscripts and in cases where the variants in the manuscripts could be explained on the assumption of attempts at regularization of the manuscripts. Where the balance of manuscript evidence is equally divided showing disconcerting parallelism and the readings are deemed less than certain the fact is indicated by wavy lines under the constituted text. The peculiar conditions of the text transmission has necessitated an eclectic but cautious utilization of all classes of manuscript in preference to reliance on a single codex. Despite these difficulties and limitations the text reconstruction of such a fluid text is not so discouraging as might appear at first sight. For one thing there is a considerable portion of the text where the northern and southern recensions are in full agreement, and secondly variants at least really important ones do not exist. Further, the agreement between the versions having the least chances of mutual borrowings or contamination (e.g. Śāradā and Malayalam) invests a fairly large proportion of the text with an amount of certainty. The element of uncertainty hangs around a small portion only.

As it is to be expected the constituted text is by no means smooth in comparison with the vulgate text which is fairly readable and which at places would appear to be even better than the former on account of the continuous efforts taken by generations of anonymous scholars and poets to make it smooth interesting and popular. The constituted text inherits from the old poem several archaism and loose constructions it lacks syntactical concord and literary finish and also has many contradictions and superfluities. These shortcomings are more than balanced by the fact that it eschews from the text puerile modern accretions and obvious errors of repetition and at the same time it solves many a textual riddle resulting from long standing corruptions and unskilful conflation. The constituted text of the Critical Edition excludes several passages which tradition has been hitherto associating with the *Mahābhārata*,²³ and their exclusion may

In this connection we may note here the Brahma Ganēśa episode the dramatic scene at *Draupadī svayamvara* and the *Kanika niti* in the *Ādiparvan* the scene of Śrī Kṛṣṇa miraculously clothing Draupadī and the scene in which Kuntī takes leave of the exiled Iañḍavas in the *Sabhāparvan* the temptation of Arjuna by Urvaśī the killing of Naraka and the rescue of the Earth and the visit of Durvasas to Yudhiṣṭhira in the *Āraṇyaka-parvan* *Durga stotra* in the *Virāṭa* and *Bhisma parvans* and the repetitious episode of the death of Śveta in the *Bhisma-parvan* one chapter from the *Sanatsujātīya* in the *Udyogaparvan* and the lengthy *Sodaśarajakīya* in the *Dronaparvan*.

THE MAHABHARATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

prima facie appear as detracting from the beauty of the work but it is no loss at all. The manuscripts prove that all these passages relegated to the foot notes or appendix have been but recent additions and besides on literary and aesthetic grounds their excision from the constituted text is perfectly justified.

THE CHARACTER OF THE MAHABHARATA

Finally turning to the character of the *Mahābhārata* we find that several scholars including Dahlmann Ludwig and Lassen whose views about the rise of the *Mahābhārata* have been mentioned earlier have denied historical reality to the poem and offered symbolic or allegorical explanations. Lassen for instance regarded the *dramatis personae* of the epic not as ordinary human beings but as historical conditions. Ludwig pressed into service the Nature myth for presenting a symbolic interpretation of the epic. Recently Lachmi Dhar brought in the idea of the solar myth Usas dragon of darkness and so on for explaining the *Mahābhārata*. According to Dahlmann the epic was composed with the avowed and exclusive object of expounding all the different aspects of Hindu law in the widest sense of the term not omitting even its historical and archaic features and oddities.²⁴ Thadani takes the *Mahābhārata* to be the symbolization of the six systems of Hindu philosophy and their conflict. Even though scholars who held and still hold divergent views about the origin and character of the *Mahābhārata* have interpreted it in the light of the meaning and purpose they try to discover beyond what one meets in the plain words of the text they cannot be discredited simply because they do not present a unanimous conclusion they would have merited greater consideration if they had received the support of the Indian tradition and the epic itself.

It is indeed, strange that all the interpretations noted above refuse to see in the epic the plain narrative its historical basis to which the epic itself makes reference. The *Mahābhārata* states that the whole of it has grown in answer to the question put by Janamejaya to Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana at the snake sacrifice about the cause of the discord among those men of unblemished deeds (*aklista kārīṇaḥ*) and an account of the great war that brought destruction to so many beings.²⁵

*Katham samabhavad bhedas teṣāṃ aklista kārīṇām
Tacca yuddham katham vṛttam bhūtāntakaranam mahat*

²⁴ Sukthankar *Meaning* p. 23

²⁵ *Mbh* (Cr. Ed.) I 54.19 (B) I 60.19. The Cr. Ed. reads *aklista kārīṇām* with a wavy line which is the reading given by Sukthankar (*Meaning* p. 33). *Mbh* (Cr. Ed.) I 55.43a has *aklista kārīṇām*.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

The *Mahābhārata* is said to be history of these men of unblemished deeds of their dissention (*bheda*) loss of kingdom (*rājya-vināśa*) and victory (*java*)²⁶

This as Sukthankar said is the meaning of the *Mahābhārata* on the mundane plane that is with reference to its character as an *itihāsa* (history) which it claims for itself and to which this obvious interpretation leads. In addition to the main story (*itihāsa*) of the Kauravas and the Pāṇḍavas reference may be made in this connection to several narratives, tales and legends of the nature of *itihāsa* or *itihāsa samvāda* which the *Mahābhārata* contains for *itihāsa* also included narratives, myths and legends—particularly of famous kings and heroes.

OTHER ASPECTS OF THE MAHABHARATA

The *Mahābhārata* styles itself not only as an *itihāsa ākhyāna* and *purāna* but also as *kāvya*, Dharma śāstra, Artha śāstra, Kāma śāstra, Nīti śāstra and Mokṣa śāstra and its encyclopaedic character envisaged in the following line would make it embrace any number of other characteristics: *Yad ihaṣṭi tad anyatra yad nehaṣṭi na tat kva cit* (whatever is here may be found elsewhere but what is not here cannot be anywhere else).

The expressions *ākhyāna itihāsa* and *purāna* are almost synonymous and were often interchangeable; they ordinarily signified an old tale, legend or incident but in some contexts they meant different kinds of narratives. *Ākhyāna* may be broadly taken to cover legends, myths and episodes in the nature of ballads; *purāna* on the other hand meant old legend, old story, especially cosmogonic and cosmological myths; it is only later that the term *purāna* came to have the sense of a particular class of works. In order to bring out the character of the *Mahābhārata* as *ākhyāna* and *upākhyāna*, reference may be made to the innumerable myths, legends, narratives and episodes including those of Śakuntalā, Nala, Damayantī, Rāma, Vidulā, Sāvitrī and Cyavana. As a *purāna* the *Mahābhārata* gives not only cosmogonic and cosmological myths but also geographical lists, genealogies, local myths, Viṣṇu and Śiva myths, *manvantaras* and so on.

Though in his earlier writing apropos the occurrence of numerous hiatuses in the *Mahābhārata*, Sukthankar stated that the only reference in the epic itself to its being a *kāvya* having disappeared with the Brahmā Ganeśa interpolation in the *Ādi-parvan*, we are left only with a *purāna itihāsa* or *ākhyāna*²⁷ yet in his later article he regarded it as an inspired poem and as the highest type of Indian poetry on the basis of the same

interpolated line with the prefatory remark. It was actually regarded by later generations as a *kāvya*.⁸ At any rate the character of the *Mahābhārata* as *kāvya* is indisputable. Just as references to the *Mahābhārata* as *kāvya* have been found to be interpolations, so also are those styling it as a *sāstra* of *dharma artha* and *kāma* are also proved to be very late additions.⁹ These accretions do not however alter the total character of the *Mahābhārata* because in its final form it combines in itself the characteristics of several *śāstras* including those of *nīti moksa dharma artha* and *kāma*.¹⁰ The *Mahābhārata* is indeed a Dharma *śāstra* *par excellence* presenting as it does systematic law and general morality. Dharma represents not only the foundation on which the whole stately edifice of the *Mahābhārata* has been erected but also to a great extent its material. The character of the *Mahābhārata* as a Dharma *śāstra* or *Smṛti* will be evident from the three main divisions of the *Smṛtis* as seen in the discourses on *varnāśrama dharma* or *ācāra śrāddha dāyabhāga* or *vyavahāra prāyascitta* and the rest.

The exposition of *dharma* in its wider concept is given in the *Sānti* and *Anuśāsana parvans* comprising (1) *rāja dharma* (the duties of the king the king being the recognized head of the governmental machinery which regulates the socio political structure) (2) *āpad dharma* (conduct in times of calamity—applicable especially to the first two *varnas* of the Indian society—when the ordinary modes of life and conduct are not possible) (3) *moksa dharma* (emancipation from liability to rebirth which is the highest goal of human existence) and (4) *dāna dharma* (liberality). This is in fact the material that has come from the Bhārgava mould. These two *parvans* contain the words of truth fraught with *dharma* and *artha* coming from the mouth of Bhīṣma to the princes assembled to listen to words on duty on morality.¹¹

The domain of the *Artha śāstra* is covered by the discourses on *rāja dharma* or the theory and practice of government and statecraft, in its different aspects—kingship, republics, ministers, administrative organization, treasury, taxation, fourfold policy, army, inter State and foreign relations etc. The didactic episodes and ethical instructions, the rules of conduct and morality and practical wisdom preached in the *Mahābhārata* for guiding people not to forsake the right path pertain to the sphere of *Nīti śāstra*. The philosophical tracts in the great epic including the *Bhagavad Gītā*, *Sanatsujātīya*, *Anu Gītā* etc. show the path leading to *mokṣa*, investing the *Mahābhārata* with the character of a *Moksa sāstra*.

⁸ *ABORI* XVIII p. 72 *SME* I p. 334

⁹ *Mbh* (B) I 2 283 (Cr. Ed.) 186* p. 61

¹⁰ *Mbh* (Cr. Ed.) I 1 47 48 (B) I 1 49 50

¹¹ Cf. Sukthankar *Meaning* p. 86

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

These make the *Mahābhārata* a manual of *bhakti karma* and *jnana* of Sāṅkhya Yoga and Vedānta of Vaiṣṇavism Śrīyism and Śaktism

Besides the above characteristics the *Mahābhārata* represents the synthesis of different religious and philosophical systems Its value for the reconstruction of the cultural life of the people of ancient India cannot be overestimated It has given both material and inspiration to poet artists and lawgivers it has proved itself to be a source of joy and a means of moral instruction and it has afforded solace in times of stress and strain to the common man Truly has it been said that Vyāsa has touched every subject under the sun (*Vyāsocchistam jagat sarvam*) It is again said that the *Mahābhārata* outweighs the four Vedas and is the fifth and new Veda for all people irrespective of caste creed and sex as distinguished from the other four Vedas which closed their doors to women and the Śudras The appellation *Mahābhārata* is said to have been conferred on it on account of its superiority over other works both in substance (*mahattva*) and gravity (*bhāratatva*) or its Indianness (*bhāratatva*)³²

THE MAHABHARATA ITS INNER MEANINGS

Let us now turn to the meaning of the *Mahābhārata* Hitherto only the plain *prima facie* meaning has been dealt with All great works of Indian art and literature as aptly put by Sukthankar are infused with the idea of penetrating behind the phenomena to the core of things and they represent but so many pulsating reflexes of one and the same central impulse towards seeing unity in diversity towards achieving one gigantic all embracing synthesis³³ They have thus an inner and deeper meaning That the *Mahābhārata* has different meanings did not escape the observation of its traditional interpreters For instance in explaining the stanza referring to the three beginnings of the *Mahābhārata* Madhvācārya in his *Mahābhārata tātparya nirnaya*, states The meaning of the Bhārata in so far as it is a relation of the facts and events with which Śrī Kṛṣṇa and the Pāṇḍavas are connected is called *astīkādi* (historical) That interpretation by which we find lessons on virtue divine love and other ten qualities on sacred study and righteous practices on character and training on Brahṁā and the other gods is called *manvādī* (religious and moral) Thirdly the interpretation by which every sentence, word or syllable is shown to be the significant name or to be the declaration of the glories of the Almighty Ruler of the Universe, is called *auparīcarā* (transcendental)³⁴

Mbh (Cr Ed) I 1 209 (B) I 1 274

³² Sukthankar *Meaning* p 109

Subba Rao *Interface to the Mahabharata* p 24

THE MAHABHARATA ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

THE MAHABHARATA ON THE ETHICAL PLANE

The four lectures delivered by Dr S V Sukthankar in 1942 On the Meaning of the *Mahābhārata* ³⁵ exhaustively discusses the three dimensional view of the *Mahābhārata*—the story of the epic on the mundane the ethical and the metaphysical planes On the mundane plane the story deals with the realistic account of a fierce fratricidal war of annihilation with its interest centred on the epic characters The meaning on the ethical plane views the war as a Conflict between the principles of *dharma* and *adharma* between good and evil between justice and injustice in which the contending parties are regarded as incarnations of Devas and Asuras and the war ends in the victory of *dharma* The projection of the story into a cosmic background shows the Bhārata war as a mere phase in cosmic evolution Śrī Kṛṣṇa was indeed the incarnation of Viṣṇu Nārāyaṇa Just as the five Pāṇḍava brothers—Yudhiṣṭhira Bhīma Arjuna and the twins Nakula and Sahadeva—were the incarnations of Dharmā Vāyu Indra and the Aśvins respectively the Kauravas were the incarnations of *asuras dātyas dānavas* and *rākṣasas* Thus for instance Dhṛtarāṣṭra was an incarnation of Hama son of Anuṣṭa and Duryodhana and his brothers were the Pulastya demons Duryodhana and Śakuni were respectively Kālī and Dvāpara On the ethico psychological plane the epic aims at impressing upon the reader or rather the listener the paramountcy of moral values ³⁶

THE MAHABHARATA ON THE TRANSCENDENTAL PLANE

On the transcendental plane which takes us beyond *dharma* and *adharma* the war is fought not only in the Kuruksetra but also in our own minds this perpetual battle between the higher self and the lower self of man for establishing mastery over the body is symbolized by the fight between the cousins for sovereignty Here we are face to face with the deep mysteries of life The superman (Arjuna) under the guidance of the Super self (Śrī Kṛṣṇa) emerges successful in this conflict after he has destroyed with the sword of knowledge ignorance embodied in his illegitimate desires and passions symbolized by his relatives teachers elders and friends ranged on the other side In this interpretation Śrī Kṛṣṇa is the Paramātmā (Super self) and Arjuna, the Jīvātman (the individual self) Dhṛtarāṣṭra is a symbol of the vacillating ego centric self while his sons symbolize in their aggregate the brood of ego centric desires and passions Vidura stands for Buddhi the one pointed reason and Bhīṣma is tradition the time bound element in human life and society

Though symbolism cannot be applied to all the particulars and the

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

harmonization of all the doctrines of the epic both in ethics and in philosophy is not possible yet there is no doubt that this metaphysical interpretation leads us to the deeper meaning of the *Mahābhārata*. It shows how the epic poets are using every means in their power to expound illustrate and popularize what we might for short call the Philosophy of the Self a lofty philosophy of ethical autonomy unparalleled for its boldness and comprehensiveness and to convey their message of moral duty and hope with emphasis on the application of these principles to the problems of daily life ³⁷

Ibid p 123

THE MAHĀBHĀRATA SOME ASPECTS OF ITS CULTURE

NEXT to the *Rg Veda Samhitā* the *Mahābhārata* is perhaps the most remarkable work in Sanskrit literature. It is the biggest of the world's epics. Since the commencement of the sixth century A.D. it is known to have consisted of 100 000 verses that is about eight times the size of the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* put together. The heroes of this great poem find prominent mention in the works of grammarians, theologians, political thinkers, poets and dramatists almost uninterruptedly from about the fifth century B.C. Precepts culled from it are quoted by a Greek envoy as early as the second century B.C. while the prowess of its principal heroes is mentioned with admiration by royal personages in the Deccan already in the second century A.D. The whole poem is known to have been recited in temples in far off Cambodia as early as the sixth century A.D. In the next century we find the Turks of Mongolia reading in their own idiom thrilling episodes like the *Hidimbavadha*. The work was translated into their own vernacular by the people of Java before the end of the eleventh century A.D.

The *Mahābhārata* represents a whole literature rather than a single homogeneous work. It constitutes a veritable treasure house of Indian lore both secular and religious and no other single work gives an insight into the innermost depths of the soul of the people as it does. It is a Song of Victory commemorating the deeds of heroism in a war fought to avenge insults to womanhood and to maintain the just rights of a dynasty that extended the heritage of Bharata and knit together the North, East, West and South of India into one empire. It is a *purāṇa samhitā* (collection of old tales) containing diverse stories of seers and sages, of beautiful maids and dutiful wives, of valiant warriors and of saintly kings. It is also a magnificent poem describing in inimitable language the fury of the battle field, the stillness of the forest hermitage, the majesty of the roaring sea dancing with billows and laughing with foam, the just indignation of the true daughter of a warrior line and the lament of the aged mother of dead heroes. It is an authoritative book of law, morality and social and political philosophy laying down rules for the attainment of *dharma*, *artha* and *kāma* called *trivarga* and also showing the way to liberation expounding the highest religious philosophy of India and inculcating reverence not only for Nārāyaṇa, the supreme Spirit, Sarasvatī from whom flow all learning and the arts, and Nara, the superman, the

ideal fighter and seer and the close associate of God, but also for mankind in general. It is declared in the *Śāntiparvan*. This is the holy mystery; there is nothing nobler than humanity.¹

ORIGIN AND ANTIQUITY

Regarding the origin and antiquity of the epic our information is surprisingly meagre. It professes to be a composition of the holy sage Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana Vyāsa and is said to have been completed in three years. But there is evidence to show that it has been added to from time to time that it has passed through several stages of development and that it has attained to its present bulk by a slow and gradual process. For the beginnings of epic poetry we must turn to the Vedic texts—the *ākhyanas* and *itihāsas* embedded in the Brāhmanas and allied literature and often recited at great sacrifices like the *rajasuya* and the *asvamedha* as well as the heroic lauds sung in praise of mighty princes and warriors to the accompaniment of a musical instrument which in the *Mahābhārata* itself is called *sapta tantri vinā* seven stringed lute or lyre. Of the stories, songs and lauds referred to above not a few proclaimed the sanctity of Kuruksetra, the intrepidity of the inviolate Arjuna and the glory and fame of Bhishma of Pratipa of Samtanu of Dhrtarashtra Vicitravirya of Paundra of Janamejaya and others of the Bharata or Kuruv race and spoke of the feuds between the Kurus and the Śrījayas and the calamity that overtook the former. It is such legends and lays that formed the nucleus of an epic that assumed coherent shape sometime before Āśvalāyana and Pāṇini. Originally a heroic poem or Song of Victory known by the names of Bhārata² and Bhārata Katha³ the tale of the Bharata race or of the Bhārata war singing the victory of the Pāṇḍavas led by Arjuna and Kṛṣṇa later identified with Nara and Nārāyaṇa it was handled by successive generations of *sūtas* or bards devoted to the Bhagavat and well versed in Purāṇic lore of Brāhmanas who recited charming tales and of ascetics living in the woods at Takṣaśilā Naimiśāranya, and other places who transformed it into a vast storehouse of old lays and ballads as well as of precepts on law, polity, morality and religion. On the one hand it grew into a Holy Writ of the Bhāgavatas—a *Kārsna Veda* as it is called in the *Ādi* and *Svargārohana parvans*—written by the Sage Kṛṣṇa which taught *bhakti* for Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa and incorporated the Song of the Lord. On the other hand, it summed up Brāhmanism and all that it stood for and became a veritable encyclopaedia which forgot nothing and absorbed everything in which we find side by side martial songs giving highly coloured pictures of battle

Mbh XII 299-20
Ibid I 61-3

² *Ibid* III 134-14

Ibid XVIII 5-49

THE MAHABHARATA SOME ASPECTS OF ITS CULTURE

fields where the twang of the warrior's bow resembles the rumbling of rain clouds and the shriek of troops sounds like the roar of the tempest tossed ocean lovely idylls depicting forest scenes and celebrating the victory of love and constancy over destiny and death scholastic discourses on religion philosophy and sociology intermingled with mild ascetic poetry of edifying wisdom and overflowing love towards man and beast

THE POLITICAL GEOGRAPHY OF THE EPIC

When the epic began the centre of Aryan civilization was in the valleys of the Gangā and the Yamuna where rose the flourishing kingdoms of the Kurus the Pañcālas the Śālvas and the Matsyas and the powerful confederacy of the Yadavas of Mathurā Large tracts even in this region were then covered with forests some of which notably the Khāndava vana the Kāmyaka vana and the Dvaita vana are prominently mentioned in the epic Through these regions glided sacred streams like the Sarasvatī the Drsadvatī and the Mālīnī the banks of which were dotted with serene hermitages of seers and sages echoing with the sweet songs of birds and clad with flowery attire of many colours and the smiling plains in the neighbourhood were washed by the Yamunā and the Gangā the waters of which reflected the splendours of the stately capitals of the warrior clans Before the epic was complete the Aryan civilization had spread over the whole of the vast sub continent named after the illustrious Bharata and stretching from Badarī hallowed by the hermitage of Nara Nārāyaṇa⁵ in the North to Kumārī in the land of the Pāndyas⁶ in the extreme South and from Dvārāvātī nestling under the shelter of Mount Ujjayanta⁷ in the West to Prāgyyotiśa and Kāmākhyā⁸ beyond the Lauhitya or Brahmaputra⁹ in the East The centre of political gravity was in the western part of the Madhyadesa or the Upper Gangā valley though Magadha (South Bihar) was clearly laying the foundation of its future greatness But the name of Pātaliputra was not yet heard of and the sturdy warriors of South Bihar were still content with their old hill fortress of Girivraja The people of the holy land watered by the Sarasvatī and the Yamunā looked askance at the new type of imperialism that had been evolved on the banks of the Son and had resulted in the imprisonment of hundreds of princes who were kept for slaughter in the fastness of Girivraja as mighty elephants are kept in mountain caves by the lion The statesmen of the Madhyadesa devised a new scheme of conquest which secured the release of these princes and the unification of Bhāratavarṣa under a just and virtuous emperor (*dharma rāja*) who performed Vedic sacrifices and demanded from his lieges

Ibid III 186 10
⁵ *Ibid* III 82 105

Ibid III 88 14
Ibid III 85 2

Ibid III 88 24

only agreeable services—homage or tribute¹⁰ and had no desire to offer them as victims in a horrid rite

THE KING AND THE SUBJECTS

The great kings of the epic were usually a monarch who could boast of an illustrious pedigree and a claim to rule by hereditary right¹¹. But elective monarchies were not unknown and in the *Puruṣa-sūktanukṛtana* section of the *Ādiparvan* we have a reference to a ruler whom all the people elected to the kingship saying that he was a virtuous man. In several passages mention is also made of kingless people or corporations (*ganas*) that were autonomous and of warrior clans having a titular king but actually governed by elders styled *sangha mukhyas*¹².

The head of the State in the epic was no autocrat. He carried on the affairs of his realm with the assistance of a *sabhā* which was either an assembly of all the warriors of the clan¹³ or a council of elders consisting of the members of the royal family, generals, subordinate allies and other military chiefs¹⁴. The circle of advisers and councillors was sometimes enlarged by the admission of priests and even representatives of the lower orders of the people as the following extracts from the *Śānti-parvan* seem to indicate. I shall tell you (the king) what kinds of ministers should be appointed by you. Four Brāhmanas learned in the Vedas and ready witted who have completed the period of study and discipline and are of pure conduct and eight Kṣatriyas all of whom should have physical strength and be capable of wielding weapons and one and twenty Vaiśyas all of whom should be rich and three Śūdras every one of whom should be humble and of pure conduct and devoted to daily duties and one man of the *sūta* caste possessing the knowledge of the Purāṇas and the eight principal virtues should be your ministers¹⁵.

The royal advisers in the epic did not hesitate to upbraid or reprove the king when he went wrong. The king had also to defer to the wishes of the Brāhmanas, the *sreni mukhyas*—elders of corporations—and the people whose opinion could not always be ignored¹⁶. The connection between the king and his people was based on a theory of mutual advantage. The king was to protect the people and do what was pleasing to them¹⁷ in return for the taxes that he received. For the efficient discharge of his duties he had to learn the Veda and the Śāstras¹⁸ and practise self control¹⁹.

For the purposes of self defence and the defeat of his enemies the king

Ibid. II 33 6
Cf *Ibid.* II 27 16 XII 81 25 107 25
Ibid. I 220 9 10
Ibid. III 249 16 107 40 45
¹¹ *Ibid.* I 1 124
¹² *Ibid.* III 78 9
¹³ *Ibid.* V 47 10
¹⁴ *Ibid.* XII 59 125
¹⁵ *Ibid.* V 129 34
¹⁶ *Ibid.* XII 85 6 11

had to maintain a standing army with a *senā pati* at its head. The army was subdivided into regiments and battalions. The fighting forces consisted not only of chariots, elephants, horses and infantry but also according to some passages of the *Śānti-parvan* of a navy, labourers, spies and local guides.²⁰ Standards and flags were used significantly in the battles. Among weapons the most interesting are the *yantra* (machine) and the *śataghni* (hundred killer) which were often used as projectiles.²¹ The laws of war were humane though they were not always observed in practice when feelings ran high. The army seems to have been recruited from all castes though the Ksatriyas naturally formed the predominant element. We have references not only to Brāhmana generals but also to Vaiśya and Śūdra warriors along with those belonging to the Ksatriya caste for the great battle destructive of life, body and sins brought on religious merit, heaven and fame for all the Ksatriya, Vaiśya and Śūdra heroes that engaged in it.²²

Though the four primary castes and the mixed castes were known, social divisions had not yet become as rigid as in later times. We have indeed in a passage of the *Śānti-parvan*, the bold statement that there is no distinction of castes and that the whole of this universe is divine, having emanated from Brahman, created (equally) by the supreme Spirit, men had on account of their *karma* (deed or profession) been divided into various castes.²³

In the fourth chapter of the *Gītā* the Bhagavat Himself says that He created the four *varnas* or castes having regard to the distribution of qualities and works. The qualities required in a member of the highest caste are thus described in the *Pativratopākhyāna* of the *Vanaparvan*. Wrath is the enemy of persons residing in their (own) body. One who forsakes wrath and infatuation—him the gods consider as a Brāhmana. A person who speaks the truth and pleases his elders and though himself injured never injures another—him the gods consider as a Brāhmana who has his senses under control, who is virtuous, devoted to studies, and pure and who knows how to restrain lust and anger—him the gods consider as a Brāhmana. The high minded man who loves all people as his own self, knows what is right and applies himself to all righteous acts—him the gods consider as a Brāhmana. A man who is devoted to studies and teaches others, who performs sacrifices and officiates at sacrifices performed by others, and who gives away (in charity) according to his means—him the gods consider as a Brāhmana. The foremost of the twice born who is a student of the Vedas practising continence, who is generous, sober and attends to his studies—him the gods consider as a Brāhmana.²⁴

²⁰ *Ibid* XII 59 41
²¹ *Ibid* XII 188 10

Ibid III 284 30 31
Ibid III 206 32 38

²² *Ibid* VIII 47 18 19

Women were accorded a place of honour in the epic society and were allowed a considerable amount of freedom in the early period. The misogynists of the age no doubt spoke of girls as a torment and women as the root of all evil⁶ but the better minds had nothing but veneration for the fair sex. Women shall always be honoured for when they are honoured the deities rejoice.⁷ Three things do not become impure—women, gems and water.⁸ Women should not be slain.⁹ The noble sentiments about women are reflected in the traits of Sāvitrī, Śakuntalā, Tīpatī, Dāmṛyāntī and Sītā than whom no more tender and delicate types of women are to be found. Epic heroines received a liberal education in their fathers' houses and some of them developed into well taught and clever disputants. Draupadī is represented as telling Yudhiṣṭhira how, in the days then long gone by, her father and her brothers received lessons on the *niti* of Bṛihaspati from an erudite Brahman and she had herself listened to all those learned discourses recited in her father's lap.¹⁰ In the *Udyogaparvan* a Kṣatriya matron is described as being widely known for her knowledge and learning.¹¹ In several epic stories we find Kṣatriya maids choosing their own husbands and in a famous episode of the *Itanaparvan* a king asks his daughter to choose a husband and says that he will give her to the man of her choice.¹²

The seclusion of women was practised in certain families but many of the epic tales bear witness to a freer life when women laid aside their veils and came out of their houses specially at the time of a *svayamvara* on the occasion of a great national festival or at a time of sorrow. The characteristic traits of the women of the period and the place they occupied in society are clearly brought out in several *upākhyānas*. In the story of Sāvitrī we have the ideal wife wrestling with the god of death for the life of her husband. The episode of Vidulā bears testimony to the fierce unbending spirit of a true daughter of aristocratic parents who exhorts her indolent son to flare up like a torch of ebony wood though it be but for a moment but not to smoulder like a fire of chaff just to prolong life.¹³

The place of the wife in domestic economy is best described in the following lines of the *Śakuntalopākhyāna*

A wife is half the man transcends
In value far all other friends

Ibid I 159 11

Ibid XII 165 32

Ibid V 133 3

Ibid III 293 32 36

Ibid V 133 14

Ibid XIII 98 1 ff

Ibid XII 135 14

² *Ibid* XIII 46 5 9

³ *Ibid* III 32 60 62

The episode is *Savitriyupākhyāna*

She every earthly blessing brings
And even redemption from her springs
In lonely homes companions bright
These charming women give delight
Like fathers wise in duty tried
To virtuous acts they prompt and guide
Whenever we suffer pain and grief
Like mothers kind they bring relief ³⁴

THE RELIGION OF THE MAHABHARATA

The religion which the *Mahabharata* inculcates has a twofold basis the truth and the Vedas ³⁵ but its religious ideas are not a mere replica of those prevailing in the Vedic period. Great changes had taken place in the conception of the gods and the problems of life. The old Vedic gods had lost much of their pristine splendour and the presiding deities of nature became quite human in dress talk and action. New deities like Skanda Vaisravana and Manubhadra took their place in the pantheon. The deification of heroes proceeded apace but the whole world of the gods and the demigods sentient beings and inanimate things was conceived as a perpetual process of creation and destruction filling eternity with an everlasting rhythm and the entire scheme was placed under the law of *karma* which states that every individual shall reap the fruit of deeds he or she performed in previous lives. As a calf could recognize its mother among a thousand kine so the effect of past deeds would not fail to find out the doer ³⁶

The new doctrine that the operation of this law can be modified by the grace (*prasāda*) of God the Ordainer (*Īśvara Dhātṛ*) combined with the loving faith (*bhakti*) of the worshipper was preached among others by the Bhāgavatas or Pāñcarātras who taught *bhakti* for Kṛṣṇa identified with Viṣṇu and Nārāyaṇa. Their religious and philosophical views are expounded in the *Bhagavad Gītā* the *Nārāyaṇīya* the *Viṣvopākhyāna* and several other theistic treatises incorporated into the great epic. Rival sects also make their appearance the most notable being the Pāśupatas who lay stress on devotion to Śiva Paśupati and the Sauras devoted to the sun or Surya. The growth of these sects threatened to destroy the solidarity of the Aryan community. Separatist tendencies of extreme sectarianism were however sought to be checked by the doctrine that Viṣṇu the God of the Bhāgavatas is identical with Śiva the deity of the Pāśupatas (*Śivāya Viṣṇurūpāya*) ³⁷. This compromise prepared the ground for the doctrine

³⁴ *Ibid* I 74 41 43
Ibid III 39 76

Ibid III 206 41

Ibid XII 181 16

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

of the Trimūrti which seeks to unite the gods of the orthodox theologians into a trinity of aspects or forms and unity in essence. In the form of Brahmā the One God creates in the form of Puruṣa (Viṣṇu) He preserves and in the form of Rudra (Śiva) He lulls the universe into eternal sleep.³⁸ The next step was to identify the great gods such as Indira, Surya, Skanda, Varuna, Yama and Śanaīścara with the Trimūrti³⁹ and regard them as but manifestations of the Primeval Spirit, the Lord (Īśāna) who is adored by all and to whom all make offerings—the true, the one undecaying Brahman, both manifest and unmanifest.

How could one win admittance to the realm of this Primeval Spirit and attain immortality? Not by hundreds of sacrifices but by self-restraint, renunciation, vigilance and goodwill towards all beings. Self-restraint, renunciation and vigilance—these are the three horses of Brahman. He who rides on the car of his soul, having yoked (these horses) with the help of reins of right behaviour, goes, O king, to the realm of Brahman, shaking off all fear of death. He who assures to all beings freedom from fear goes to the highest of regions, the blessed abode of Viṣṇu. The fruit that a man reaps by granting protection from harm cannot be obtained by thousands of sacrifices or daily fasts.⁴⁰ These sentiments are echoed by a Greek devotee of Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa, the God of gods, in an epigraphic record of the second century B.C. The new school of saints and seers to whom we owe these and similar ideas lays stress on *ātma yajña* (sacrifice in the form of meditation on the Self) in place of the older *paśu yajña* (sacrifice of animals).

Death comes from infatuation and immortality is acquired by truth. Abstaining from injury, shaking off desire and anger and resorting to the truth with a happy and contented mind, I shall scoff at death like an immortal. Engaged in the sacrifice of peace, possessed of self-control and devoted also to the sacrifice of Brahman, the sacrifices I shall perform are those of speech, mind, and deed when the sun enters his northerly course. How can one like me celebrate an animal sacrifice which is full of cruelty? How can one endowed with wisdom perform, like a ghoul, a sacrifice of destruction after the manner of the Kṣatriyas—a sacrifice which brings only transitory rewards? I am born of my own Self, O father, and without progeny I shall seek my own spiritual welfare. I shall offer the sacrifice of the Self. I require no children to be my saviours.⁴¹ It is interesting to note that it was Ghora Āṅgīrasa, the preceptor of Kṛṣṇa Devakīputra mentioned in the *Chāndogya Upaniṣad*,⁴² who first taught the *puruṣa yajña*.

³⁸ *Ibid.* III 272, 47.

³⁹ *Ibid.* III 3, 18; XIII 14, 347, 8. Neither the word *trimūrti* nor the idea is employed directly in the epic.—S. K. De.

⁴⁰ *Mbh.* XI 7, 23 ff.

⁴¹ *Ibid.* XII 277, 30, 34.

⁴² III 17, 6.

vidyā in the form of a meditation This indicates the source of inspiration of the famous poets and sages who sang of the newer morality

Doubts however not only about the value of sacrificial rites but also about the efficacy of religion and morality and the justice and benevolence of God Himself are expressed now and then A long suffering princess complains that a man does not attain prosperity by piety gentleness forgiveness straightforwardness and other virtues and expresses her conviction that the blessed God the self created the great Grand sire with secret action destroys creatures by creatures playing with them as a boy with toys Not like a father or a mother does the Creator behave to his creatures like ordinary mortals he acts in anger ⁴³

To this the man of religion replies that true piety seeks no reward (*dharmam carāmi susroni na dharma phala kāranāt*) Do not he adds speak ill of God who is the Lord of all creatures learn to know Him bow to Him let not your understanding be such Never disregard that supreme Being O Kṛsnā through whose mercy the mortals by pious observances become immortal ⁴⁴ The Lord Himself says in the *Gītā* All beings I regard alike not one is hateful to Me or beloved but those who with loving faith worship Me abide in Me and I also in them ⁴⁵

Ibid III 30 36 38

Ibid III 31 4 41 42

IX 29

RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY OF THE EPICS

THE *Mahābhārata* and the *Rāmāyana* are unique documents in the literary history of the world. Especially in the field of religion mysticism and philosophy they have depicted phases ranging from the divine to the mundane from the transcendental to the empirical view of life. In these two great epics we find the full and vigorous development of the Hindu mind from its early babblings to the period of philosophical discussions on the serene aspects of human thought. Here we get specimens of the songs to Nature in plenty like those of the Vedic bards. Here we get also the philosophical moorings for later thinking in imitation of the Upanisads, the *established precepts* of the sages of India. Nature and the *divine unknown* are here brought together and in between them are encrusted gods and goddesses *apsarases* (celestial nymphs) *gandharvas* (divine musicians) *nagas* (serpent demons with human faces) *asuras* (demons) and others. The human mind does not rest merely with these so we find also here a moral code common to both gods and men in antipathy to whom the devils and demons are always shown as acting. Thus we have here a separate pantheon, a separate moral code and a separate treatment of religion, mysticism and philosophy.

The *Mahābhārata* being encyclopaedic in its nature contains whole chapters on religion, mysticism, and philosophy. In the histories of the various peoples of the world we find that the religious superstitious aspects are meant for the layman, the mystic elements for the saintly and the philosophical features for the analytical mind. As the age of the epic oscillates between the date of the Bhārata war and the age reaching almost the precincts of the Christian era we naturally find in the epic text a spiritual fountain consisting of all sorts of compositions in which all types of readers—the agnostics, the mystics, the philosophers and others—can possibly quench their thirst. The different systems of philosophy i.e. the Yoga, the Sāṃkhya, the Vedānta (or more properly the Āranyaka) and the Lokāyata and also Brāhmanic sacerdotalism, the sects of the Śaiva (especially Pśūpata), Pāñcarātra, Śākta, Saura, Nandīdharma and others are all described in the epic.

THE EPIC PANTHEON

The age-long epics have eventually imbibed into themselves the Aryan and the non-Aryan or Vṛātya¹ elements of mythology and have

The Vṛātyas some scholars hold were not non-Aryans but only non-Vedic Aryans—ed

created a sound background for the Hindu religion which has remained almost the same in the following centuries. To illustrate the Kṛṣṇa and the Śiva elements found in the *Mahābhārata* are foreign to the early Vedic and Brāhmanic periods and a complete assimilation of the two has been effected in it. From the point of view of mythology we find that the *Mahābhārata* stands just midway between the Vedic and the later Purāṇic periods. Here it is not only a concern of the gods but of men and gods acting together for the welfare of humanity. Even gods and men are shown as fighting against each other. The fight of Arjuna with Śiva in the guise of a Kīrāta and the episode of Agastya cursing Nahusa in heaven may elucidate the point. The best of all gods descend upon the earth in times of necessity and the epic heroes ascend to heaven above at a time of emergency. As men quarrel for supremacy even so the gods try to usurp supremacy among themselves. Gods marry at times among human beings and beget children mysteriously. The epic gods stand fully anthropomorphized.

Along with the Vedic element the epics present the three sectarian gods Viṣṇu Kṛṣṇa, Brahmā and Rudra Śiva. The worship of Brahmā as Father God and as one forming part of the Hindu Trinity is an outcome of the Upanisadic period. The authors of the epics exalt the position of Viṣṇu Kṛṣṇa by incorporating the characters of Nārāyaṇa and Viṣṇu Kṛṣṇa in the Vedic Viṣṇu and by Brāhmanizing the cult of Kṛṣṇa who was the warlord of the Ābhīras. In the *Harivamśa*—a supposed appendix of the *Mahābhārata*—Kṛṣṇa appears as the supreme Viṣṇu born on the earth. The Vedic gods gradually recede into the background and sectarian gods assume prominence in the epics. Though sectarian feelings of rivalry are depicted in them and the superiority of one god over the others is shown efforts are also made to proclaim the identity of Viṣṇu and Śiva or that of Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Śiva as constituting the Hindu Trinity.

The eight major gods of the epic pantheon are Sūrya, Soma, Vāyu, Agni, Yama, Varuṇa, Kubera, and Indra who are described also as the guardians of the quarters.² Vāyu, Vāta, Māruta and Anila are the designations of the wind god, the life of the world.³ Maruts are mentioned as *vātashandhas* while Vāyu Marut is treated by Indra as his servant.⁴ Hanūmat appears as the son or messenger of Vāta. Agni, reputed as having burnt the Khāṇḍava forest, assumes a minor role in the sectarian passages of the epic. Son of Viṣṇu or the All God Ātman or a form of Śiva, he burns down the universe at *pralaya* (period of dissolution). His main representative is Skanda, the army chief (*senāpati*). Yama, the

² Manu (V, 96) designates them as *lokapālas*.

³ *Mbh* III, 147, 27.

Ibid I, 32, 8.

guardian of hell and the bestower of bliss upon the good and woe upon the wicked carries the soul of the dead to his realm the Puspodakṛ In Yama's heaven there are kings sinners and those who die at the solstice His assembly hall (*sabha*) is said to have been built by Viśvakṛman The awe of this god of justice Dharma Vaivasvata son of the sun was felt by gods and men alike His discourse to Naciketas and his dialogue with Sāvitrī figure prominently Yamas and Dhāmas protect the path to heaven⁵ The *Rāmāyana* refers to Yamasatru⁶ Vṛuṇa the supreme ruler (*śamrāṇ*) of the physical and the moral world as shown in the *Rg Veda*, appears in the epics as a mere lord of the west accompanied by male and female rivers snakes demons (*daityas*) half gods (*sādhyas*) and deities (*devatās*) Described as a dwarf as one dwelling in the north in Mt Kailāsa and as a demonic gatekeeper Macārūka Kubera (also Manubhadra or Vaiśvānara) is the god of wealth the jewel giver the guardian of travellers and the king of the *yaksas* Indira the slaver of Namuci and the Bīāhmana Vrtra is anthropomorphized to a large extent he is endowed with his old grandeur and has his own heaven Called Viśnu Soma fire air time in all its divisions earth and ocean the overlord of the great cloud and its thunder and creator and destroyer Indra the king of Vasus could not conquer Tripura People used to celebrate *Indra maha* in place of which Kṛṣṇa started his own *Go maha* Each world cycle possesses its own Indra

Rbhus are sometimes exalted to the position of the highest gods Further there are the *guhnyakas* the demons the physicians of the gods the first born the golden birds which weave the white and black of time which creek the wheel of time with all its seasons and make the sun and sky Viśvāvasu and Citraratha are celebrated among the *gandharvas* whose lists are varied *Gāndharva tattva* (the lore of singing) and *yuddha gandharva* (war music) are referred to⁷ Menakā Sahajanyā Purninī, Puñjaka sthālā Ghrta sthālā Ghrtaṇi Viśvācī Anumlocā Pramlocā, and Manovatī—these daughters of Pradhā are the most renowned of the *apsarases* Kāma, or cupid whose ensign is the Makara and his arrows are mentioned Reference is also made to the *sādhyas* the *vidyādhara*s the twelve Ādityas the eight Vasus the eleven Rudras and the two Aśvins (or in their place Prajāpati and Vasaṭkāra)

Identical with the gods in being are the *pitrs* (manes) who are described also as *pretas* they together with *piśācas yātudhānas rākṣasas* and *pramathas* are said to worship Prajāpati Brahmā in his paradise

Ibid IX 44 33
VI 44 20 (reading according to Govindarāja)
Ram I 4 10 VI 54 24

is supreme. Evidently attempts were made in the *Mahābhārata* to smooth down the prevalent sectarian ill feeling. The scenes of Viśvavān and the final section of the Nārāyaṇa Rudra fight emphasize the unity of Nārāyaṇa and Rudra which gave rise to the notion of Hari Hara. Viśnu and Brahman are said to have sprung from the right and left sides of Śiva. At times one of the Trinity is presented as subordinate to and praising the other indicating the absence of difference. A concept of Hindu Trinity was formulated to explain the three functions of creation preservation and destruction.¹¹ The three divinities were later identified with the three *gunas*—*sattva*, *rajas* and *tamas*. These gods may be considered as also occupy the starting points of the different systems of philosophy.

Brahman. Though occupying a subordinate position in the epic pantheon he is described as the supreme creator, a passive active god, holy, eternal and wise though not omniscient. He is said to have been sprung from the lotus in the naval of Viśnu¹² or out of the golden egg.¹³ He is designated by such epithets as Prajāpati and Pītāmaha and is called Catummūrti (having four forms)¹⁴ and Catummukha (having four faces implying the four Vedas). The *Mahābhārata* refers to his seven mind born sons.¹⁵ His paradise is located above that of Indra. He is sometimes lauded as the supreme God. Śiva who is said to have been born from the forehead of Brahman gets a son by prostrations before him. Kṛṣṇa acts at the behest of Brahman in the case of Jarāsandha.¹⁶ In the *Mahābhārata* Brahman acts as Śiva's charioteer and asks Śiva to help Indra.¹⁷ Hopkins's view that the religions of Viśnu and Śiva are superimposed upon the older worship of Brahman¹⁸ is not correct as the two cults antedated the Brahman worship.

Viśnu. The *Rg Veda*, the *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*, the *Kaṭha Upaniṣad*, the *Taittirīya Upaniṣad* and other Vedic works show the different stages through which Viśnu was attaining eminence. In the *Bhīṣmaparvan* the supreme Spirit is addressed as Nārāyaṇa and Viśnu and is identified with Vasudeva. The *Anu Gīta* speaks of the *virāt* form shown by Kṛṣṇa to Uttanka as the Vaiṣṇava form. The *Mahābhārata* brings about parity between Viśnu and Śiva by enumerating the thousand names of both the gods. Both lists have taken shape due to mutual influence. The notion of the *avatāras* appears to have just made a beginning in the epic period. Both Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva and Rāma are identified with Viśnu and thus they are gods on the earth. In the *Bhagavad Gītā* Kṛṣṇa tells Arjuna that he takes birth whenever *dharma* is in a sinking condition.¹⁹ The doctrine of the ten *avatāras* however seems not to have come into vogue in the epic.

Ibid III 271 47

Ibid III 203 15

Ibid V III 33 46 ff

IV 7

Ibid III 203 11

Ibid XII 166 15 7

¹² *Ibid* XII 311 9

¹³ *Ibid* II 22 36

Religions of India p 389

RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY OF THE EPICS

period It is only in the interpolated sections of the *Mahābhārata* that the ten incarnations are enumerated ²⁰

Nārāyana The *Taittirīya Āraṇyaka* for the first time speaks of Nārāyana as the supreme Being endowed with all Upanisadic attributes The *Mahābhārata* identifies Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa with Nārāyana whose abode is located in the Śvetadvīpa He is called Nārāyana because his resting place (*ayana*) is the waters (*nāra = āpah*) ²¹ Possibly Nārāyana is of Dravidian origin the serpent god of the proto Indians having waters as his resting place Here in Nārāyana then appears to be the polarization of the fierce destructive element of the serpent and the lotus which is the symbol of fertility and from which Brahmā (the Creator) is said to have sprung The *Mahābhārata* refers to the fight between Rudra and Nārāyana

Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa From the *Taittirīya Āraṇyaka* ²² it would appear that Vāsudeva was the name of a divinity before the period of the *Mahābhārata* He is called Sātvata Sātyaki and Janārdana in the *Mahābhārata* ²³ Bhīṣma calls Vāsudeva the eternal god mysterious beneficent and loving whom the Brāhmanas Kṣatriyas Vaiśyas and Śūdras worship by their devoted actions ²⁴ The *Bhagavad Gītā* describes Vāsudeva to be all and Śrī Kṛṣṇa states Among Vṛṣṇis I am Vāsudeva ²⁵ The problem of Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa has been dealt with by various scholars by propounding several theories and none of them has commanded general acceptance The name Kṛṣṇa occurs as the composer of a hymn of the *Rg Veda* ²⁶ and the *Chāndogya Upaniṣad* speaks of Devakī putra Kṛṣṇa as a pupil of Ghorā Aṅgīrasa ²⁷ The early struggle between Indra and Kṛṣṇa indicated in the *Rg Veda* ²⁸ is continued to be remembered in the epic by Kṛṣṇa's advocacy of the worship of the mountain in place of the performance of *Indra mahotsava* Kṛṣṇa appears in the *Mahābhārata* (1) as an ordinary human being a friend of Arjuna and counsellor of the Pandavas (2) as a semi-divine being and (3) the supreme Being Dr Sukthankar has expressed the view that there is absolutely no direct and positive evidence to support the theory that originally Kṛṣṇa was some kind of god who was subsequently transformed by the epic poets into a man ²⁹ The *Harivamśa* and the Purāṇas refer succinctly to the cowherd boy Gopāla Kṛṣṇa the son of Vasudeva and Devakī and the slayer of Kamsa Kṛṣṇa is described in the above works as the Vṛṣṇi prince of Dvārakā and as one closely associated with Arjuna The personality of the supreme Kṛṣṇa appears to have resulted from the fusion of the Brāhmanic tradition of Brahmā Viṣṇu

¹ *Mbh* XII 349 103 4 (K) 348 2
Cf *Mbh* III 192 3 4 X 16
Mbh VI 66 33 41 VII 19 X 37
III 17 6 VIII 96 13 5

² I 218 12 V 70 5 7
VIII 85
Meaning p 67

and others and the Vrātya tradition which added its doctrine of monotheism and Nārāyana

Śiva Rudra In the *Mahābhārata* we recognize three different strata presenting the characteristics of Śiva first the older traditions secondly the amalgamation of the Vrātya Śiva and the Aryan Rudra and thirdly the accretion of new materials To the first period may be referred the expressions *mahā yogiśvara mahā sepa nagna*³⁰ *ūrdhva linga*³¹ *dig vāsas*³² and *ūrdhva retas*³³ which indicate the early Yogic and nude representations of Śiva familiar to the Mohenjodaro period The close association of the Nāga tribe with Śiva is suggested by the mention of the seven hooded serpent with reference to Śiva³⁴ The references to the fierce and malevolent Rudra the *kṛttī vāsas*³⁵ the *makhaghna* the destroyer of Pusan's teeth³⁶ and also the *śatarudrīya* and the *rudra homa* as well as to the Mūjavat mountain the residence of Śiva and Pārvatī are all related to the second namely the Vedic and Brāhmanic period The mention of Śiva as *kuru kartā* (Kuru maker) *kuru vāsi* (dweller among Kurus)³⁷ and as giver of a boon to Mārkaṇḍeya and the weapon known as *paśupatiāstrā* to Arjuna seems to have some historical bearing To the third period belong the accounts of Nīlakantha or Śitikantha *amṛta mathana* Śiva's birth his bearing the crescent his association with Nandin and Gangā the episodes of Dakṣa Andhaka, Tripura and the version of the eleven Rudras³⁸ Like Viṣṇu Śiva also is described as the supreme Being the All in all the omniscient Ruler of the universe though his principal role is as that of its destroyer

In the *Rāmāyana* Śiva designated Śankara and Rudra appears as a god of the North but he is not regarded as higher than the *devas*³⁹ Rāvana overthrows Śankara⁴⁰ who in his role as Hara is described as the destroyer of the universe at the end of the *yuga* Hara (Śiva) is said to have drunk poison at the instance of Harī⁴¹ Śiva is called Maheśvara and has a wonder tree on Himavat⁴² where Kubera became yellow eyed by seeing him He is also called Mahādeva, Śambhu possessed of eleven epithets⁴³ (probably the Rudras), Tryambaka⁴⁴ Amareśa lord of *bhūtas* smiter of Tripura burner of Kāma⁴⁵ father of Skanda⁴⁶ drinker of world destroying poison, destroyer of Dakṣa's sacrifice⁴⁷ receiver of the falling Gangā⁴⁸ carrier of the rosary,

| | |
|--|---|
| ³⁰ <i>Mbh</i> (K) XIII 45 214 ff | ¹ <i>Mbh</i> XIII 17 46 |
| ³¹ <i>Ibid</i> XIII 14 217 17 42 | ² <i>Ibid</i> XIII 14 217 17 46 |
| ³² <i>Ibid</i> XIII 14 257 | <i>Ibid</i> X 7 6 |
| <i>Ibid</i> X 8 16, XII 284 48 | ⁷ <i>Ibid</i> XIII 17 107 |
| ³ <i>Mbh</i> (K) XIII 255 12 3 | Aja Ekapaḍ Ahirbudhnya Pinākin Aparajita Rta Pitr |
| rupa Tryambaka Vrsakapī Śambhu Havana and Iśvara | |
| <i>Rām</i> VI 59 128 | ⁴ <i>Ibid</i> VI 111 49 |
| ⁴ <i>Ibid</i> IV 37 27 | ⁴¹ <i>Ibid</i> I 45 22 6 |
| ⁵ <i>Ibid</i> I 23 13 | ⁴ <i>Ibid</i> VI 43 6 |
| <i>Ibid</i> I 43 15 ff | <i>Ibid</i> I 66 9 ff |

etc In the interpolated *Uttarakāṇḍa* Śiva is more exalted and put under Viṣṇu ⁴⁹

The institution of gods and goddesses had come into full vogue by the time of the final redaction of the *Mahābhārata* The names of the consorts of the different gods have been enumerated in the *Udyogaparvan* ⁵⁰ Ravi = Prabhāvatī Vahni = Svāhā Candra = Rohini Yama = Dhūmornā Varuna = Gaurī Dhaneśvara = Rddhi Nārāyaṇa = Laksmī Udadhi = Jāhnavī Rudra = Rudrānī and Pītāmaha = Vedī More names like Hrī śrī (fame glory prosperity) Umā Laksmī and Sarasvatī also occur in this epic There are clear traces of the worship of the Mother Goddess in the *Mahābhārata* The *Harivamśa* calls her *nagna* (naked) reminiscent of the nude representations of this Mother Goddess Rukminī at the time of her marriage is said to have first worshipped Durgā Arjuna's prayer to Durgā in the *Bhīṣmaparvan* and the prayer of Yudhiṣṭhira to her found in the *Virāṭaparvan* ¹ are very late interpolations they refer to various new names and characteristics of the goddess The description of Kālī the fierce goddess occurs in the account of Aśvatthāma's nocturnal raid of the Pāṇḍava camp ⁵²

The *Mahābhārata* also contains expressions like *bhagalingā māheśvarī prajā* ⁵³ *mātrkā bhagadevā* etc In the *Sabhāparvan* a demoness Jarā called the *grha devatā* (tutelary deity) is stated to have been installed in every house to ward off the demons ⁵⁴ Much more interesting is the description of the horrible demoness in the country of the Vāhīkas worshipped in Śākalapura the capital of the Madras who is said to sing the following song on the fourteenth night of the dark fortnight Oh when shall I have the pleasure again of singing the songs of the Vāhīkas! When shall I have a sumptuous feast of beef pork camel and ass flesh as well as of rams and cocks with Gaudīya wine to boot in the company of the stout and fair Śākala women! Unlucky indeed is he who eats no such dainties ⁵⁵ The custom indicated by the flesh and the Gaudīya wine may have given rise to the *pañca mahāra* rites of later Śāktism

Kārttikeya and other Gods The epics describe Kārttikeya as the son of Agnī and Ākāśagangā or of Agnī and Svāhā and his marriage to Deva senā ⁵⁶ He is also spoken of as the son of Durgā and Śiva—all the three together form the early triad Kārttikeya was responsible for the destruction of Tārakāsura Nandin and Śiva ganas are mentioned in the *Mahābhārata* which associates the *linga* with Śiva and gives details of the mode

⁴⁹ *Ibid* VII 6

⁵¹ *Durgā stotra* *Mbh* IV 6 VI 23

Ibid XIII 14 233 18 1 ff

Rām I 37 *Mbh* III 228 9 *Mbh* (K) XIII 130 ff

⁵⁰ 115 8 ff

Mbh X 8 76-8

Mbh VIII 44 25 6

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

of *linga* worship⁵⁷ As for Gaṇapati Winternitz and some other scholars doubt his existence in the epic pantheon

TEMPLES AND RITUALS

The epics contain expressions like *devāyatana caitya* and *caityavikṣa* and also *ālaya* of *Nāgas*⁵⁸ When Rama was visiting Agastya's *āśrama* he is said to have come across shrines dedicated to eighteen gods⁵⁹ Temples were found empty at Dasaratha's death⁶⁰ Yudhishthira in his journey came across a sacred grove containing altars of saints and the various gods A painted image of the demoness Jarā was worshipped with perfumes flowers incense and food Holy trees were also worshipped

The epics describe various forms of ritual the *rājasūya* the *vājapeya* the *soma* (the creeper replaced by the *Pulikā* plant)⁶¹ and the monthly and seasonal sacrifices The *Bhīṣmaparvan* refers to the *satvata* rites *Indra maha Brahma maha*⁶² *samāja* in honour of Śiva⁶³ *sattra* to Viṣṇu *svasti vācana* and tales of fire cult appear to have attained popularity The system of *Satī* appears to have been prevalent Among other rites and superstitions which the epics mention there are covenants of blood, of death of water love fillets magic drugs ordeals of fire water and so on

PHILOSOPHY AND MYSTICISM

As in the case of the pantheon in matters of philosophy and mysticism also the *Mahābhārata* tried to Brāhmanize the non-Aryan lore It has presented to us almost the entire treasure house of beliefs and practices that were in vogue at the time Vedānta is called the *Ēkāntin's* religion Sāṃkhya Yoga Pāñcarātra and Vedāraṇyaka are described as the four varieties of knowledge⁶⁴ It is pointed out that Kapila declared the Sāṃkhya and Hiranyagarbha the Yoga Both Viṣṇu and Śiva are stated to be the lords of *yoga* The *Anu Gītā*⁶⁵ refers to various doctrines current among the people and problems such as permanence and impermanence of piety and its various forms existence or non existence unity or diversity, of the permanent principle relation between Brahman and truth and time and space The *Śāntiparvan* refers to the preference some have for *mokṣa mārga* and others for *yaṇṇa mārga* and also to *rāja dharma ahimsā uñcha vrata* and *Veda vrata*⁶⁶ Though Yoga Bhāgavata and other systems accept the Sāṃkhya doctrine with slight variations, the vein of mysticism is common to all

XIII 161
Ibid II 71 89
Ibid I 143 3
* 354 10 ff

Ram VII 87 13 ff
Mbh III 35 33
Ibid XII 349 1

* Ibid III 12 17 21
Ibid I 164 20
Ibid XIV 16 51

RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY OF THE EPICS

As regards the means of knowledge the *Mahābhārata* accepts the authority of the Vedic scriptures (Āgama) perception and inference as valid. Four canons of Nyāya are described.⁶⁷ Dialecticians unbelievers doubters critics of the Vedas haters of Brāhmanas and devotees of mere logic and reasoning are all denounced throughout.⁶⁸ Reference is made to the Purānas and the Itihāsas⁶⁹ as well as the deceitfulness of the Veda.⁷⁰

SECTS

The *Mahābhārata* describes various religious and philosophical sects. The Pāsupata sect is said to have been proclaimed by Śiva himself. Though blamed by the unintelligent on account of its being occasionally opposed to the rules of the śāstra and the *varnāśrama* (castes and orders) it is nevertheless referred to as a system appreciated by those of perfect wisdom whose path is asserted to be really superior to the orders (*atyāśrama*).⁷¹ A detailed account is given of the mode of the worship of the *linga* and the *pāsupata vrata*.⁷² Aumās Māhesvaras Nandīdharmas Kaumāras and the rest are added in the Kumbhakonam edition of the *Mahābhārata*.⁷³ In the epithet *pañca mahākalpa* applied to Viṣṇu the epic commentator sees reference to the Āgamas (scriptures) of the Sauras the Śāktas the Gāṇeśas the Śaivas and the Vaiṣnavas.⁷⁴ With the exception of the Gāṇeśas the other sects are to be found in the text. According to Hopkins the Sauras the Vaiṣnavas and their precursors—the Pāñcārātras the Bhāgavatas and the Bhagavad bhaktas—are mentioned.⁷⁵

Reference is also made to Lokāyatas⁷⁶ to Cārvāka to haters of the Brāhmanas to the shaven and the naked and to those wearing the yellow robe. Buddha is called a *nāstika* in the *Rāmāyana*.

TRACES OF THE PHILOSOPHIC SYSTEMS

Cosmology The *Mahābhārata* propounds different theories about cosmology—creation from the cosmic egg by the primordial Person by the duality of the sex and by the unmanifest or impersonal Brahman. Brahman is said to have sprung from a golden egg. The personalistic hypothesis of creation is introduced by raising Śiva or Viṣṇu Kṛṣṇa to the status of the supreme Being who is then considered Īśvara or the personal God. The theory of Puruṣa and Prakṛti seems to be a direct development of the idea of *ardhanārīśvara* (god conceived as androgynous). Prakṛti is held to be different from the cosmic Puruṣa and it is said to act either under

⁶⁷ *Mbh* XII 56 41

Ibid XII 329 6

XIV 96 17 ff

⁷ *Op cit* p 447

Ibid XII 180 47 8

Ibid XII 284 194 5

Cf Hopkins *Religions of India* p 413 n 1

Mbh I 70 46

Ibid XII 343 20

Ibid XIII 159

His control⁷⁷ or His impelling to activity the creative elements⁷⁸ or alone⁷⁹ Purusa and Prakṛti again are regarded as two aspects of Brahman. Brahmā is also said to have been created from Brahman or *avyakta*⁸⁰

Sāmkhya The Sāmkhya which for the first time contributed to the metaphysical analysis in Indian philosophy has been adopted variously by schools of Indian thought. The *Mahābhārata* speaks of the Sāmkhya as a system (*darśana*) and an enumeration (*pari samkhyāna*)⁸¹. The Sāmkhya theory is discussed at several places in the *Mahābhārata*. Besides the theories of Pāñcāsikha and Devala the *Sāntiparvan* gives three different accounts of the cosmic principles of the Sāmkhya system. In XII 310 8 ff Yājñavalkya explains to Janaka the eight Prakṛtis comprising the *avyakta* (unmanifest) *mahat* (cosmic intelligence) *ahankāra* (egoity) and the five gross elements and the sixteen *vikaras* (modifications) comprising the five finer elements the five organs of perception and the five organs of action and the *manas* thus constituting the twenty four principles. In another place the epic enumerates the principles as including *avyakta* *osadhi* *Hiranyagarbha* the earth and the sky *ahankāra* the five gross elements and the five subtle elements⁸². The third account has *avyakta jñāna buddhi manas* etc⁸³.

The Sāmkhya in its early phases is called *nirīśvara* (atheistic) or devoid of a belief in a personal and supreme God⁸⁴. Later by the addition of the twenty fifth principle it is often designated *pañca vimśatika*. The *Yogins* the *Pāsupatas* and the *Bhāgavatas* superadded the twenty sixth principle namely one exalted spirit as supreme Spirit or God. The epic Sāmkhya assumes the three *gunas*—*sattva* *rajas* and *tamas* gods men and beasts come under the influence of these three qualities and the *Brāhmanas* *Ksatriyas* and *Vaiśyas* possess them in gradation. The problem of the plurality or unity of souls is discussed in detail.

Pāñcāsikha Kāpileya⁸⁵ is said to be the first disciple of Āsuri a disciple of Kapila who was the propounder of the Sāmkhya system and was well versed in the Pāñcarātra doctrine. Disgust with birth disgust with acts, and disgust with all things (*sarva nirveda*)—it is on these the foundation of the system of Pāñcāsikha is based. *Nirvāna* is attained by the rejection of untrustworthy delusion (*anāśvāsika moha*) which leads to religious practices and hopes of reward. Pāñcāsikha uses the terms *sāmkhya*, *jīva* and *ksetrajñā* (rather than Ātman). The thirty one principles

⁷⁷ *Ibid* XII 314 12

⁷⁸ *Ibid* XII 311 3

⁷⁹ *Ibid* XII 311

⁸⁰ *Ibid* XII 218 6 ff 320 24 ff

⁸¹ *Ibid* XII 315 8

⁸² *Ibid* XII 315 19

⁸³ *Ibid* XII 204 10 1

⁸⁴ *Ibid* XII 222 15 6

⁸⁵ *Ibid* XII 300 3

RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY OF THE EPICS

propounded by Pāñcasīkha are enumerated as follows ⁸⁶ (i xi) five *karmendriyas* five *jñanendriyas* and *manas* (ten organs and mind) (xii) *buddhi* (intellect) (xiii) *sattva* (equilibrium) (xiv) *ahankāra* (egoity) (xv) *vāsanā* (general disposition) (xvi) *avidyā* (ignorance) (xvii) *Prakṛti* (Primordial Nature) (xviii) *māyā* (Creative Power) (xix) *sukha duḥkha priyāpriya dvandva* (combination of the contraries in the form of happiness and misery the pleasant and the unpleasant) (xx) *kāla* (time) (xxi xxxvii) *pañca mahābhūtas sadbhāva asadbhāva* (forming seven constituents i.e. five gross elements together with being and non being) (xviii xxx) *vidhi* (cause) *sukra* (seed) and *bala* (power) (xxx) Puruṣa or Ātman (the source which is recognized by the philosophers to be the Unmanifest) It was probably after Pāñcasīkha that the *Bhagavad Gītā* added seven elements (desire aversion pleasure pain body perception and courage) to the twenty four principles making thirty-one in all Hopkins describes Pāñcasīkha's system as an advanced type of Brāhmanism minus *māyā* According to Das Gupta it is akin to the system preached by Caraka Sulabha the disciple of Pāñcasīkha who attended the court of Janaka like her *guru* preached that one should not have any attachment as one's own because one's self is part of the same self in any other body composed of particles which revert to the unmanifest source ⁸⁷ Asita Devala who is said to have received the glory of Śiva ⁸⁸ propounded a theory which speaks of the following elements ⁸⁹ five gross elements *kāla bhāva abhāva* ten organs *citta manas buddhi ksetrajña* (the spirit) Death in this theory is caused by wind The highest goal according to Devala lies in *ānanda* ⁹⁰—in the state of Brahman,

Yoga Two kinds of *yogas* are described in the *Mahābhārata* One in which Rudra is spoken as the supreme and which enables a person to wander in the ten directions and the other the eightfold path (*astāṅga yoga*) ⁹¹ described in the Vedas which is accepted by the classical school Items of *yoga*, such as rules about diet and the mode of attaining the ultimate bliss are also described *Sāṃkhya* ensures knowledge and *yoga* health through the first one attains knowledge of the principles and through the second one attains direct perception The *Mahābhārata* effects an amalgamation of the two by declaring both as equally efficacious

Vaiṣṇavism The Vaiṣṇavism preached in the *Mahābhārata* is varied in character Vaiṣṇava elements are mainly found in the *Bhagavad Gītā* ⁹² the *Mokṣadharmaparvan* ⁹³ and the *Anu Gītā* ⁹⁴ At some places Vaiṣṇavism

⁸⁶ *Ibid* XII 320 96 112

⁸⁷ *Ibid* XII 275

⁸⁸ *Ibid* VI 25 42

⁸⁹ *Ibid* XII 320 25 ff

Ibid XII 275 16

⁹⁰ *Ibid* XII 174-367

Ibid XIII 18 17

Ibid XII 316 5 ff

⁹¹ *Ibid* XIV 16 51

is depicted as pantheism to which is superadded a personal God at others it is a theistic doctrine explained away by the *Vyūhas*. The doctrine of the *Vyūhas* set forth in the *Nārāyaṇīya* section may be summarized as follows: Vāsudeva the supreme Soul the internal ruler of all; Sankarṣaṇa primeval matter; Prakṛti Pradyumna cosmic mind; *manas* Anuruddha cosmic self-consciousness; *ahankāra*. It is said that sometimes one *vyūha* or form of the Lord is taught and sometimes two three or four.

Ekāntika religion equivalent also to Nārāyaṇīya Satvata Bhāgavata Pancarātra or Vaisnava however is stated at many places to be the best form of Vaisnavism. The *Nārāyaṇīya*⁹⁵ is the earliest exposition of the Ekāntika *dharma* which preaches sole devotion to Nārāyaṇa or the supreme Lord as the only means of seeing Him. The system is said to have been originally promulgated by the seven *ṛṣis* the Citrasikhandins in a hundred thousand verses containing rules in harmony with the Vedas for all affairs of men and precepts about the religion of action and contemplation. In Śvetadvīpa it is stated reside men without senses who do not eat anything who are sinless devotees of the Lord and who are absorbed in Him who is bright like the sun. The *Śantiparvan* states that this *dharma* was revealed to Jinaśreya in the *Harī Gītā* and also that it was related to Arjuna at the beginning of the war. The *Nārāyaṇīya* describes also the mode of creation and destruction and the incarnations of Viṣṇu. Śvetadvīpa has been located somewhere near Egypt or Asia Minor by scholars and some take the *Nārāyaṇīya* to be influenced by Christian doctrines. However I agree with Winternitz when he observes: In my opinion the description of Śvetadvīpa referred to in both the epics does not remind us of the Christian eucharist but of heavenly regions such as Vaikunṭha Goloka Kailāsa and the Sukhāvātī paradise of Buddha Amitabha.⁹⁶

Vedānta. There are some passages and whole chapters on the Vedāntic doctrine of Brahman. The *Sanat sujātīya*⁹⁷ is an instance in point. The *Bhagavad Gītā* also refers to the expression *Vedāntakṛt*.⁹⁸

From the above analysis one would feel inclined to state after Deussen and Dahlmann that the epic philosophy is a transition philosophy between the period of the Upanisads and that of the later systems. What may be seen from the above outline is that the epics give only an enumeration of many systems in vogue from almost the post-Rg Vedic times to the beginnings of the new systems. The *Bhagavad Gītā* alone is probably a work of the type which Deussen and Dahlmann hinted at.

⁹⁵ *Ibid.* XII 394-51
⁹⁷ *Mbh.* V 41-6

⁹⁶ *HIL* I p. 440
⁹⁸ *XV* 15

RELIGION AND PHILOSOPHY OF THE EPICS
ETHICAL STANDARDS AND HUMAN DESTINY

The doctrines of Yājñavalkya, Pañcasiṅgha, Devaḥ, Bhīṣma, Sanat-sujāta and Śrī Kṛṣṇa are imbued with the spirit of mysticism. And all ascetic poetry contained in the *Mahābhārata* represents the attitude of the Hindu mind towards problems of higher thought and wisdom. The ultimate goal of life is expressed in various terms such as *nirvāṇa*, *ānanda* and *amṛta*. The heavens of the various gods, the world of Fathers and the hell (*gāta*) also find their place; the goal of humanity is to avoid them and to become free from the series of births and sorrows.⁹⁹ It has been pointed out that both pleasure and pain are ephemeral (*anitya*) and that we must learn to bear them with composure.

The *Mahābhārata* describes the four *puruṣārthas* or human ends. *Dharma* is the code of life, the bond which keeps society together (cf. *dharanād dharmamuty āhuh* and *dharmo dhārayate prajāh*)¹⁰⁰. The *Śānti* *pravaṇ* ordains: "Whatever is not conducive to social welfare and what you are likely to be ashamed of doing, never do it."¹⁰¹ Whereas *dharma* is the genus and applies to all, the *āśramas* and *varṇas* are the species. It is generally ordained that one should observe rules of caste. But the epic has always made a distinction between the Brāhmana and other castes. In course of the Brāhmanization of the *Mahābhārata*, several myths, legends, narratives and discourses were added, exalting the Brāhmanas and placing them on a level superior to the gods themselves. However, the ascetic poetry found interspersed in the epic takes a broader view and reveals a generous mind. It is said: "Truth, self-control, asceticism, generosity, non-violence, constancy in virtue—these are the means of success, not caste or family."¹⁰² One has to observe the rules of the *āśramas* also. A person is expected to fulfil his duties and obligations as a householder before his becoming an anchorite. The observance of *ācāra* (custom) is regarded as obligatory for all. In the case of conflict of opinion, one is to follow the footsteps of the great.

Itihāsa samvādas, mostly belonging to ascetic poetry, teach universal morality, love of all human beings and renunciation of the world; they come under the category of *niti*. The *Mahābhārata* enunciates the doctrine of Karma and states that by knowledge a person becomes free from the bond of rebirth. Discussions on the different types of Karma and on the problem whether destiny or self-effort prevails in life are also met with. There is a general tone emphasizing the doctrine of *ahimsā* (non-injury) in the story of King Uparicara in the *Nārāyaṇīya* section and also in dictums like "that which is conducive to the utmost welfare of human being is the

⁹⁹ *Mbh* VIII 69-59

¹⁰⁰ 109-10, 124-66, 260-9

Mbh III 181-42

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

truth ¹⁰² On the other hand there is also the anecdote about the Vyādha (the meat dealer) who preached that one should lead a life according to one's own caste and that it is not birth but a virtuous life that makes a Brāhmana ¹⁰³

The *summum bonum* of life is to have perfect peace of mind and joy which does not know sorrow in this world and the next. For the first time it is the *Mahābhārata* that teaches the liberal doctrine that there cannot be any barrier of caste, creed or sex in the pursuit of emancipation. We have women philosophers like Sulabhā ¹⁰⁴ the courtesan Pingalā ¹⁰⁵ the lowly Dharma vyādha and the hawker Tuladhāra ¹⁰⁶ who were considered worthy teachers of philosophy and religion. The *Bhagavad Gītā* teaches the three *yogas* or modes of life namely of *karma bhakti* and *jñāna* with a widened meaning for the first time and points out that God showers His grace on any devotee irrespective of caste, creed and sex and that even the offering of a leaf, a flower, a fruit or a little water with devotion, is acceptable to Him. It seems that the whole attempt of the *Mahābhārata* is to bring together the diverse philosophical systems of the time and give them a new colour and vigour. The *Gītā* is a unique document in this respect. We really find that in the light of the epic teachings the frustrated human mind calms down as described in the case of Pingalā. Calmly sleeps Pingalā after she has put non-desire in the place of wishes and hopes ¹⁰⁷. Even the warrior King Janaka emphatically declares

How vast my wealth what joy I hate
Who nothing own and nought desire!
Were this fair city wrapped in fire
The flame no goods of mine would waste ¹⁰⁸

¹⁰² *Ibid* XII 329 13

Ibid XII 174

Ibid XII 178 7 ff

Ibid III 207 16

¹⁰⁴ *Ibid* XII 261 4

Muir *Metrical Translations* p 50

¹⁰⁵ *Ibid* XII 320

¹⁰⁶ *Ibid* XII 174 62

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

THE Vedas the Upanisads the *Ramāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* and the eighteen Purānas form the massive basement on which stands the magnificent edifice of Indian religion and thought culture and literature Of these the two great epics form the strongest single factor that has sustained and held together Indian life in all its growth and ramifications through the vicissitudes of centuries The Vedas were confined chiefly to the priestly and aristocratic classes and the Upanisads to the intellectuals and philosophers it was the epics and the Purānas that became the real Vedas for the masses and moulded their life and character for the last two thousand years There is hardly any other work whose influence on all aspects of life in India has been so profound lasting and continuous as that of the epics and the Purānas Language being the first and foremost means of expressing feelings and communicating thoughts an account of the influence which epic poetry has exercised over Indian literature embodied in the different languages and in their various stages is given at some length

INFLUENCE OF THE RĀMĀYANA ON SUBSEQUENT SANSKRIT WORKS

First it may be noted that the *Vanaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata* contains the famous *Ramopākhyāna* which while giving the Rāma story as we find it in Vālmiki's *Rāmāyana* neither mentions the fire ordeal of Sītā nor the incidents of the *Uttarakānda* There exists also a number of later religious works either narrating the Rāma story e.g. the famous *Adhyātma Rāmāyana* (c. fourteenth century A.D.) the *Yogavāsistha Rāmāyana* the *Ānanda Rāmāyana* and the *Adbhuta Rāmāyana* or dealing with the Rāma cult e.g. the *Rāma pūrva tāpanīya Upanisad* the *Rāmottara tāpanīya Upanisad* and the *Ramarahasya Upanisad* Many of the Puranas and the Upapurānas also give the Rāma story generally according to Vālmiki's *Rāmāyana* only at times differing in minor details

Coming to the influence of the *Rāmāyana* on classical Sanskrit literature it is noticeable from quite early times Asvaghosa (first second century A.D.) a protégé King Kaniska is probably the earliest author who was greatly influenced by the *Rāmāyana* he being indebted to it for many a poetic imagery and even his style and diction but he did not adopt for a theme of his composition any episode from either of the epics

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

so far as we know from his works that have come down to us For that part of Kālidāsa's *Raghuvamśa* (c fifth century A.D.) which treats about Rāma he has mainly depended on the *Rāmāyana* of Vālmīki but of all the classical poets of Sanskrit he has been throughout most profoundly influenced by this epic both in matter and in spirit Kālidāsa was led to perfection in his literary style and diction, poetic imagery and embellishments by the great work of Vālmīki His artistic skill calm and serene outlook on life deep penetration into the human mind his romantic treatment of Nature—all these have been foreshadowed in Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* Even in the development of the plot of some of his works and the delineation of his characters the influence of the *Rāmāyana* on Kālidāsa is evident For instance his Kanva is no other than Vālmīki himself the most humane of Indian *ṛsis* in another garb The plot of the closing acts of the *Abhijñāna Śakuntala* showing Śakuntalā repudiated by Dasyanta and living in the hermitage of Marīci where she gave birth to Bharata seems to be modelled on the similar episode in the *Uttarakāṇḍa* of the *Rāmāyana* describing Sītā's banishment by Rāma, her seeking shelter in Vālmīki's hermitage and there her giving birth to the twin sons

Bhaṭṭi (c sixth-seventh century A.D.) describes the story of the *Rāmāyana* in his *Rāvana vadha* better known as *Bhaṭṭi kāvya* composed for the avowed purpose of illustrating the niceties of Sanskrit grammar This work once enjoyed some popularity even outside India and influenced the authors of the Javanese *Rāmāyana Kākāvīn* and *Carita Rāmāyana* Kumāradāsa highly praised by the rhetorician and poet Rājaśekhara dealt with the Rāma story in his celebrated poem *Jānakī harana* which has been preserved only partly Some later ornate poems (*kāvyas*) which give the main story of *Rāmāyana* are (1) the *Rāma carita* of Abhinanda which gives the Rāma story beginning at Sītā's abduction and ending with the death of Kumbha and Nikumbha (2) the highly artificial *Udāra Rāghava* of Śākalyamalla alias Mallācārya or Kavimalla which has been partly preserved (3) the *Citrabandha Rāmāyana* of Venkatesvara written in the highly artificial and difficult *citrabandha* style (in which verses are diagrammatically written in the form of sword cross wheel and so forth) (4) the voluminous *Rāmacandrodaya* in thirty cantos and (5) the *yamaka kāvya* (paronomasiac poem) *Rāma yamakārnava* of Venkateśa son of Śrīnivāsa written in A.D. 1635 and A.D. 1656 respectively and (6) the *Rāmāyana mañjarī* of the Kashmiri polymath Ksemendra (eleventh century A.D.)

The practice of producing *ślesa kāvya* (stanzas having double meaning) has led to a few works of little merit dealing simultaneously with two or more stories e.g. (1) the *Rama carita* of Sandhyākara Nandin (eleventh

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

century A.D.) which gives simultaneously the story of Rāmacandra and that of Rāmapāladeva the younger brother of King Mahīpāla II of Varendra (North Bengal) (2) the *Raghava Pāṇḍavīya* of Dhanañjaya a Digambara Jaina of the twelfth century A.D. and (3) a work of the same name by Kaviñāja (twelfth century A.D.) both giving the stories of the two epics at the same time (4) the *Rāghava Naisadhīya* of Haradatta Sūri giving the stories of Rāma and Nala (5) the *Yādava Rāghavīya* of Venkatadhvarin (seventeenth century A.D.) giving the stories of the *Rāmāyana* and the *Bhāgavata Purāna* and (6) the *Rāghava Pāṇḍava Yādavīya* (or *kathā trayī*) of Cidambara (sixteenth-seventeenth century A.D.) giving the stories of the *Rāmāyana*, the *Mahābhārata* and the *Bhāgavata Purāna*. The famous *Rāmāyana campū* ascribed to King Bhoja (twelfth century A.D.) is written in mixed verse and prose—a style called the *campū*.

Of *kāvya*s dealing with isolated episodes from the *Rāmāyana* we may mention the *Rāvanārjunīya* of Bhatta Bhīma Bhauma or Bhaumaka which written for illustrating the rules of grammar deals with Rāvana's fight with Kārtavīryārjuna. To Kālidāsa and to King Pravarasena (c. fifth century A.D.) of Kashmir—the latter even has been sometimes identified with the former—is attributed the ornate Prakrit epic *Setubandha*, or *Rāvana vadha* which relates the story of Rāma in fifteen cantos. It is supposed to have been composed to commemorate the building of a bridge of boats across the Vitastā (Jhelum) by King Pravarasena.

A large number of Sanskrit plays based on the main story or different episodes of the *Rāmāyana* has been written from quite an early period down to modern times. Probably the earliest of the Rāma plays are the *Pratimā nātaka* and the *Abhiseka nātaka* attributed by some to Bhāsa (c. third century A.D.) a predecessor of Kālidāsa. Bhāsa dramatizes in the first play almost the entire *Rāmāyana* story in seven acts while in the six acts of the second play he deals with the Rāma story beginning at the slaying of Valin and the anointment of Sugrīva and ending with the fire ordeal of Sītā and coronation of Rāma. In the development of the plots and the delineation of the characters the author has deviated in both these dramas considerably from the original *Rāmāyana*. Bhavabhūti (eighth century A.D.) whose place in classical Sanskrit literature is next perhaps only to Kālidāsa has handled the Rāma story in two of his plays namely the *Mahāvīra carita* and the *Uttara Rāma carita* his masterpiece. The former play deals with the early part of Rāma's life ending with his coronation the latter begins with Sītā's exile and ends contrary to the *Rāmāyana* with her happy reunion with Rāma. The *Bāla Rāmāyana* of Rājasekhara (c. A.D. 900) loosely dramatizes in ten acts the story of the *Rāmāyana* up to Rāma's coronation. The long and tedious *Hanumān*

nātaka also called *Maha nātaka* of Damodaramisra (eleventh century A.D.) deals with the story of Rāma in fourteen acts depicting his connection with his ally and devotee Hanūmat. King Yasovarmān of Kānyakubja (ninth century A.D.) is credited with a drama entitled *Rāmābhyudaya* which is lost. This play consisted of six acts and probably dealt with the entire Rāma story. The play *Udātta Raghava* of Māyurāja also is known only in name. Only some fragments of this work have been preserved in anthologies. A eulogistic verse of Rājaśekhara speaks of him as a Kalacuri poet and nothing beyond this is known about him. Another Rāma drama the *Chalita Rāma* is referred to by Dhanika in his commentary on the *Daśarūpaka*. Murāri (before the middle of the ninth century A.D.) is the author of the well known drama *Anargha Rāghava*. Bhīmta who has been described as a Kālīñjarapati seems to have won some fame with his lost drama the *Svapna Dasānana*. The logician Jayadeva (c. thirteenth century A.D.) treats of the Rāma story in his *Prasanna Rāghava* in the opening act of which both Rāvana and the Asura Bāna are described as rivals for the hand of Sītā. The *Āścarya cūdāmani* of Śaktibhadra which is claimed to be the oldest South Indian play and which is assigned to the ninth century A.D. deals with the Rāma story in seven acts beginning with the Śurpanakhā episode and ending with the fire-ordeal of Sītā. The *Kundamālā* of Viranāga incorrectly attributed by some to Dinnāga describes the Rāma story in six acts and is modelled on Bhavabhūti's *Uttara Rāma carita*. Vyāsa Śrīrāmadeva (fifteenth century A.D.) wrote the play *Rāmābhyudaya* dealing with the battle and conquest of Lankā, the fire-ordeal of Sītā and the return of Rāma and others to Ayodhyā. Abhinavagupta and Kuntaka (both tenth century A.D.) mention and quote from such lost Rāma dramas as *Chalita Rāma*, *Kṛtya Rāvana* and *Māyā Puspaka*; nothing is known about their date and authorship. Mahādeva (middle of the seventeenth century A.D.) composed the play *Adbhuta darpaṇa* which gives the Rāma story beginning with Angada's mission to Rāvana and ending with Rāma's coronation. It introduces the interesting device of a magic mirror which shows to Rāma the events of Lankā.

Among the plays based on some smaller episodes of the *Rāmāyana* the following may be mentioned: the *Unmatta Raghava* of Bhaskara Kavi whose date is not known. It describes that when Rāma and Lakṣmana were pursuing the golden deer Sītā herself by the curse of Durvāsas was changed into a gazelle. Maddened with sorrow Rāma wanders miserably in search of her and finally finds her with the help of Agastya. The *Dūtāṅgada* composed by Subhata in four scenes deals with Angada's mission to Rāvana for restoring Sītā to Rāma. This play was represented in A.D. 1242-43 at the court of the Cālukya king Tribhuvanapāla.

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

Rāmaprabhadrā Dīkṣita (seventeenth century A.D.) wrote the *Jānakīparinaya* a drama dealing with Sītā's marriage with Rāma. He introduces the *rākṣasas* masquerading as Viśvāmitra Rāma Lakṣmana and Sītā. Nīlakaṇṭha Dīkṣita who lived in Madura in the first half of the seventeenth century A.D. wrote in nine acts the *Gaṅgāvatarana* which deals with the famous legend of the descent of the river Gaṅgā to the earth as a result of the austerities of Bhagīratha.

THE INFLUENCE OF THE RĀMĀYANA IN THE BUDDHIST LITERATURE

The main story of the *Rāmāyana* has been retold in the famous *Daśaratha Jātaka* (No. 461) in a startlingly distorted form. Sītā is represented in it as the sister of Rāma whom she marries later on after their return from their exile in the Himalayas. In this work there is no mention of the abduction of Sītā by Rāvana and all the subsequent events. It is generally believed to have been based on a much older version of the Rāma story but it has now been shown that the case may just be the reverse. The *Jayaddisa Jātaka* (No. 518) and the *Vessantara Jātaka* (No. 547) each contains a *gāthā* showing that the authors of these *gāthās* were acquainted with the Brāhmanical version of the Rāma story. The scene of prince Vessantara's departure into exile vividly recalls that of Rāma in the *Rāmāyana*. The *Anāpaka Jātaka* which was translated into Chinese in the third century A.D. but the original of which is now lost refers to most of the incidents found in Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* without giving the names of the characters. Rāma here is regarded as a Bodhisattva. The *Sāma Jātaka* (No. 540) is practically identical with the story of Daśaratha's killing the son of Andhaka muni which incident Daśaratha narrates from his death bed. The story of Rṣyaśrṅga (Isiśrṅga in Pāli) recurs in the *Jātakas* (Nos. 523 and 526) and an old form of it is preserved in the *Nalinikā Jātaka* (No. 526).

THE INFLUENCE OF THE RĀMĀYANA ON JAINA LITERATURE

The Jains not only adapted many popular epic stories and episodes, diverging widely from the original but also composed poems of their own which were to serve them as a complete substitute for the great epics the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahabhārata*. The main characteristics of the Jaina *Rāmāyana* are the principal characters are either Jaina by birth or later on become Jaina monks. Rāma is the eighth Baladeva. Lakṣmana Vāsudeva and Rāvana Prativāsudeva according to the Jaina notion. Vāsudeva along with his elder brother Baladeva fights against Prativāsudeva whom he ultimately kills and as a consequence of this act of killing he falls into hell. Repentful Baladeva becomes a Jaina monk and attains *mokṣa*. Another

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

characteristic in perfect conformity with the Jaina doctrine of *ahimsā* is that the Jaina version does not believe that Rāma used to hunt animals or that Rāvana and others ate meat. The earliest work of this kind is the Prakrit epic *Pauma cariya* (= Padma carita) by Vimala Suri written in about the third or fourth century A.D. It is written in pure Jaina Mahārāstri Prakrit and contains 118 cantos. Vimala Suri's work follows the story of Valmiki in general outlines only but differs widely from it in details. Even the personal names sometimes differ, e.g. Rāma is known more frequently as Padma; his mother's name is Aparājita. Later Jaina versions of the *Rāmāyana* are all modelled on Vimala Suri's work. Ravisena wrote in A.D. 678 his *Padma Purāna* which is merely a slightly extended recension of the *Pauma cariya* in Sanskrit agreeing with it in all essential points. The sixty eighth *parvan* of the *Uttara Purāna* the seventh *parvan* (known as *Jaina Rāmāyana*) of the *Trisasti śulakā purusa carita* of Hemacandra and Padmadeva vijayaganin's Sanskrit prose work *Rāma caritra* (written in A.D. 1096) also deal with the Rāma story. The Rāma story has been briefly retold in many *Kathā kośas* also for instance see the *Rāmāyana kathānaka* and *Sita kathānaka* in Harisena's *Kathā kośa* (tenth century A.D.) and the ninth canto of the *Śatruñjaya mahatmya* of Dhaneśvara (twelfth century A.D.) the story of Kusa and Lava is found in the *punyāśravaka kathākośa* of Rāmacandra Mumukṣu (written in A.D. 1331). The legend of the descent of the Gangā and destruction of the sixty thousand sons of Sagara is told in Devendra's commentary on the *Uttarājñhayana*.

INFLUENCE OF THE RAMAYANA ON MODERN INDIAN LITERATURES

The *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* began to influence the modern Indian literatures roughly from their early mediaeval period. For centuries before that people in all parts of India were no doubt acquainted with the stories of the epics but direct access to the originals was confined to the learned few. So the need for their translation or adaptation into the spoken languages of the day was badly felt and the revival of the Bhakti cult in different parts of India and in some cases the interest taken by local rulers soon supplied it. Once the golden gate to the vast treasure house of romances and legends was opened widely modern Indian literatures got an opportunity to become nurtured, nourished and enriched. The *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* have been an inexhaustible source of inspiration ever since.

Assamese The earliest extant metrical translation of the *Rāmāyana* into Assamese was made by Mādhava Kandali who flourished under King Mahāmānikya (fourteenth century A.D.). His translation of the *Rāmāyana* is remarkable for the constant fidelity to the original. Durgābar, a popular poet of about the fourteenth century A.D. composed the *Giti Rāmāyana*.

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

which is still sung on festive occasions and at social carnivals Sankara Deva (A D 1449 1569) a great Vaisnava saint and the real founder of Assamese literature translated Book Seven of the *Rāmāyana* in verse Among the dramas written by him one is *Rama vijaya* Madhava Deva (c A D 1489) a disciple of Sankara Deva composed the *Rāmāyana Ādikānda* Raghu nātha wrote the *Kathā Rāmāyana* in prose Many works dealing with the various episodes from the epics were composed during the Vaisnava period of Assamese literature Many popular writers of songs chose such episodes as the marriage of Sitā for describing the erotic sentiment with a romantic background within domestic surroundings Amongst modern poets Bhola nath Das wrote the *Sita harana kāvya* (A D 1888) in blank verse on the model set by the Bengali poet Michael Madhusudan Datta

Bengali The first and yet the best and the most popular Bengali adaptation of the *Rāmāyana* was made by Krttivāsa in the fifteenth century A D at the command of a ruler of Bengal (Gaudeśvara) who is usually identified as Kamsanārāyana (alias Ganeśa) or his son Yadu who adopted the name Jalāluddīn after his conversion to Islam Though Krttivāsa was a great Sanskrit scholar he did not make a literal translation of Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* he introduced the battle of Taranisena the untimely worship of the goddess Durgā by Rāma the episodes of Mahirāvana and Ahirāvana and the rest not found in the original *Rāmāyana* Some other Bengali versions of the *Rāmāyana* which once enjoyed popularity in different parts of Bengal are the *Rāmāyana* of Nityānanda or Adbhutācārya (seventeenth century A D) which is based on the *Adbhuta Rāmāyana* the *Rāmāyana* of Śivacandra Sen of Phakīrām Kavibhūṣana and of Bhavānīśankar Vandyā the *Angada rāibār* of Kavicandra (all of the eighteenth century A D) and the *Rāmāyana* of the poetess Candravatī In modern times Michael Madhusudan Datta, one of the greatest poets of Bengal wrote his epic poem the *Megha nāda vadha kāvya* (published in A D 1861) in blank verse deriving the plot from a well known episode of the *Rāmāyana* Girish Chandra Ghosh the famous actor producer and playwright wrote his dramas *Rāvana vadha* (1881) *Sītār vanavāsa* (1881) and *Sītār vivāha* (1882) based on the *Rāma yana* The abridged prose translation of the *Vālmīki Rāmāyana* by Raja sekharā Basu better known as Paraśurām is a distinct recent contribution to Bengali literature

Gujarati Premānanda, the greatest literary figure in Gujarati in the seventeenth century A D wrote a complete version of the *Rāmāyana* and the *Rana yajña* describing the battle between Rāma and Rāvana Girādhara (A D 1787 1852) is the author of another well known Gujarati rendering of the *Rāmāyana* Bhālana (c fifteenth century A D) who may be regarded as the father of the *ākhyāna* in Gujarati wrote the *Rāma viraha* and the

Rāmabāla carita Mantrī Karmana (c AD 1470) also wrote an *ākhyana* by name the *Sita harana*. Among modern authors Janmashankar Mahashankar Buch born in AD 1877 has written the *Sitā vanavāsa* which was published in AD 1903.

Hindi The beginning of Rama poetry in Hindi literature can be traced back to the devotional poems and songs (*bhajans*) of many preachers of the Rama bhakti cult for example Ramānanda (fifteenth century AD) and his disciples Tulasīdāsa the greatest poet of mediaeval India is the author of the famous *Rāma carita manasa* which he began to write in AD 1575 and completed in more than two years. Tulasīdāsa followed the general outline of Vālmiki but introduced many new episodes even in the main story. With Tulasīdāsa and authors of other *Bhāsā Rāmāyanas* Rāma is an incarnation of God. Both as a literary piece and as a devotional poem the *Rāma carita mānasa* is one of the best works in any Indian language and has been a Bible to millions of Hindus of Northern India down to the present day. Some minor works of Tulasīdāsa on the Rāma cult are the *Rāma gītāvalī* and the *Dohā Rāmāyana*. Kesava Dās (AD 1555-1617) is the author of a work named *Rama candrikā*. Cintāmani Tripathī (middle of the seventeenth century AD) who was patronized by Emperor Shah Jāhān and others wrote a *Rāmāyana* in *kavita* and other metres. Man Dās born in AD 1623 wrote a poem entitled *Rama caritra* which is based on the *Rāmāyana* of Vālmiki and the *Hanumān nātaka*. The *Rāma vilāsa Rāmāyana* of Īsvari Prasād Tripathī (AD 1673) is a translation of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyana*. Prānacand Chauhān wrote his *Rāmāyana mahānātaka* in AD 1610. Other works dealing with the Rāma story or episodes from the *Rāmāyana* are *Avadha sāgara* of Jānk Rasikī Śaran (early eighteenth century AD), a *Rāmāyana* by Bhagwant Ray (AD 1750), the *Ramāśvamedha* of Madhusudan Dās (c AD 1782) who was a poet of considerable merit. *Saundarya laharī*, *Sundarakānda* and *Hanumān Cabbisi* all dealing with some episodes from the *Rāmāyana* and composed by Maniyar Singh (c AD 1785) and a metrical translation of parts of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* by Ganeśa (AD 1800). Lalāka Dās (nineteenth century AD) wrote the *Satyopākhyāna* dealing with the early life of Rama from his birth to his marriage. In the latter part of the nineteenth and early twentieth century Jankī Prasad Mahanta, Ram Charan Das, Babu Raghunath Das and Maharaj Raghuraj Singh wrote many excellent works based on the *Rāmāyana*.

Maithilī Chandra Jha is the author of the Maithilī version of the *Rāmāyana*.

Kannada The earliest *Rāmāyana* in Kannada was written by Nāga candra or Abhinava Pampa (c AD 1100) whose masterly work the *Rāma candra caritra Purāna* is commonly known as the *Pampa Rāmāyana*. It

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

gives a Jaina version of the Rama story and differs considerably from the original work. Some other Jaina versions of the *Ramāyana* in Kannada are the *Kumudendu Ramāyana* in *satpadī* metre (c. A.D. 1275) the *Rāma kathā vatāra* in prose (c. A.D. 1297) by Devacandra and the *Rāma vijaya carita* by Devappa (sixteenth century A.D.). Narahari who called himself Kumāra Valmiki wrote (about A.D. 1590) the Kannada adaptation of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyana*. The work was produced at Torave and hence is commonly known as the *Torave Ramāyana*. It does not contain the *Uttarakānda*. Some other Brāhmanical versions of the *Ramayana* in Kannada are the two versions of the *Uttarakānda* both known as *Uttara Ramāyana* by Tirumal Vaidya and Yogendra (middle of the seventeenth century A.D.) and the *Ānanda Rāmāyana* by Timmaraya (early eighteenth century A.D.). Among modern works in Kannada based on the *Rāmāyana* special mention should be made of the *Rāmāyana darśanam* by Shri K. V. Puttappa.

Kashmiri The Kashmiri *Rāmāyana* was composed by Divākara Prakāsa Bhatta towards the end of the eighteenth century A.D. One noteworthy feature of this *Rāmāyana* is that the whole story is related in the form of a dialogue between Śiva and Parvatī. It has many episodes which are found in the Bengali and some other *Bhāsā Rāmāyanas* but are absent from the original work.

Malayalam The *Rāma caritam* ascribed to the fourteenth century A.D. is the earliest work in Malayalam based on the *Rāmāyana*. It is a summary in verse of the *Yuddhakānda* of the *Rāmāyana* and the poet follows Vālmiki more or less faithfully. Punam Nampūtiri a poet in the court of a Zamorin of Calicut in the fifteenth century A.D. wrote the *Rāmāyana campu* which is a masterpiece in the *manipravāla* style in which Sanskrit and Malayalam words are freely mixed. The *Kannaṣṣa Rāmāyana* of Kannaṣṣa Panikkar was produced in the sixteenth century A.D. It is a close adaptation of the *Vālmiki Ramāyana*. Ezhuttaccan (A.D. 1575-1650) translated the *Adhyātma Rāmāyana*. This work is the most popular *Rāmāyana* in Kerala and may be regarded as the household Bible of every Malayalee Hindu. The Kathakali literature of Kerala which was widely cultivated for two centuries (1650-1850) was mainly based on the episodes from the two great epics and the Puranas. Rāma Varma one of the pioneers of the Kathakali dealt with the story of Rāma written to suit the Kathakali stage. Amongst modern works based on the *Ramayana* mention may be made of Azhakattu Padmanabha Kurup's *Rāmacandra vilāsam* the late poet Vallathol's metrical translation of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* and K. M. Panikkar's drama the *Mandodarī*.

Marathi Ekanātha a great saint of the sixteenth century A.D. (born in A.D. 1548) composed the first *Rāmāyana* in Marathi entitled *Bhāvārtha*

Rāmāyana It contains about 40 000 couplets in *ovī* metre It is based on the *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* the *Adhyātma Rāmāyana* and the *Ānanda Rāmāyana* Ekanātha left the work incomplete it was later on completed by his disciple Gāovā Muktesvara a maternal grandson of Ekanātha composed a *Rāmāyana* probably in his early youth It is written in different *sloka* metres and contains over 700 stanzas Samarthā Rāmādāsa (A D 1608) one of the greatest saints of the Mahārāstra wrote three Books of the *Rāmāyana* viz *Kiskindhā Sundara* and *Yuddhakandas* in Marathi The work consists of about 16 000 verses in the *bhujangaprayāta* metre Śrīdhara (born in A D 1678) is the author of the most popular adaptations of the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* in Marathi His *Rāmāyana* is known as *Rāmavijaya* Copies of Śrīdhara's work whether in print or manuscripts are to be found in almost every village of Mahārāstra and groups of village folk young and old male as well as female can be seen listening to the recitation or singing of Śrīdhara's works at night The *Rāmavijaya* consists of about 10 000 couplets in *ovī* metre What Kāśīnāma and Kṛtīvāsa have together done for Bengal Śrīdhara has singly done for the public of Mahārāstra Moropant (born in A D 1729) the greatest Marathi poet of the eighteenth century A D has composed about 108 short *Rāmāyanas* to propitiate his family deity Rāma Some of these *Rāmāyanas* are the *Prthvī Rāmāyana* the *Vibudhapriya Rāmāyana* the *Pañca cāmara Rāmāyana* the *Savai Rāmāyana* the *Dāma Rāmāyana* or *Chain Rāmāyana* in which each word at the end of a hemistich is repeated at the beginning of the next *pada* the *Laghu Rāmāyana* which contains only short (*laghu*) syllables the *Nirostha Rāmāyana* which contains no labials the *Kāsi Rāmāyana* the *Gangā Rāmāyana* the *Mantra Rāmāyana* the *Parantu Rāmāyana* consists of about 250 *āryās* Moropant's *Rāmāyanas* are simply acrobatic feats in the field of versification and are meant only for those who know something of Sanskrit and Sanskritic constructions Ānandītanaya (c seventeenth century A D) composed the *Sita svayamvara* in verse On account of the verbal beauties his compositions are pleasing to the reader Amongst modern works based on the *Rāmāyana* we may mention the names of *Sītā-śuddhi (ākhyāna)* by Panta Pratinidhi *Sītā svayamvara* (drama) by Abhayankar *Rāma rājya vijaya* (drama) by Anna Kirloskar *Rāvana-vadha* or *Sītā bhet* (drama) by Shastri the anonymous *Sītā harana* (novel) the prose and metrical translations of the *Rāmāyana* by Kulkarni and Bhide respectively and the very popular *Gītā Rāmāyana* by Madgulkar

Oriya Balarāma Dāsa one of the *pañca sakhas* or five friends of Oriya literature wrote the first Oriya *Rāmāyana* which is the most popular of more than a dozen Oriya versions of this epic Like Sarala Dāsa's

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

Mahabhārata Balarama Dāsa's work also is thoroughly dyed with the local colour. His work is known as *Jagamohana Rāmāyana* more popularly called *Dandi Rāmāyana*. He flourished in the sixteenth century A.D. Dhanañjaya Bhañja who ruled the Ghumusar State now in Ganjam district from A.D. 1637 to 1701 wrote the *Raghunatha vilāsa*. One of the most popular works in Orissa is Haladhara Dāsa's Oriya version of the *Adhyātma Rāmāyana* composed in the seventeenth century A.D. Upendra Bhañja another scion of the Ghumusar royal family who flourished between A.D. 1670 and 1710 wrote many works based on the epics. His *Vaidehīsa vilāsa* is based on the *Rāmāyana*. Kesava Haricandara wrote a *Rāmāyana* in verse in the eighteenth century A.D. Visvanatha Khuntiyā wrote the *Vicitra Rāmāyana* in the same century. Amongst modern works based on the *Rāmāyana* may be mentioned Gangadhara Meher's *Tapasvini* Kamapal Mishra's *Sītā vivaha* Nandakishore Bala's *Sita vanavāsa* Ram Shankar Ray's *Rāma vanavāsa* and Harihar Ratha's *Ravana vadha* *Rāmābhiseka* *Rāma nirvāsana* and *Rāma janma*. Phakirmohan Senapati's metrical translation of the *Rāmāyana* is another important work in Oriya literature.

Tamil The commentary on the ancient Tamil work *Yapparungalam* mentions a Tamil adaptation (not extant) of the *Rāmāyana* in *pahrodai venbā* metre which may be assigned to c. A.D. 650 and is perhaps the earliest translation of this epic in any living language of India. The hymns composed by the Vaisnava Alvārs called the *Divya prabandha* which is dated between third and eighth century A.D. contain many references to the *Rāmāyana* episodes. The *Rāmāyana* composed by Kamban of immortal fame (tenth century A.D.) is regarded as the greatest epic in Tamil literature and it is popular even today. Kamban has introduced some new incidents in his work and has handled the subject matter with a mastery and originality and a depth of poetic experience seldom equalled in Tamil literature. C. Rajagopalachari's adaptation of the *Rāmāyana* entitled *Cakravartī tīruman* is a popular work in Tamil. Piecemeal or abridged translations of the *Rāmāyana* in Tamil have also been made by Tetiyur Subrahmanya Shastri. T. Sundarachari and Anantarama Dikshita. *Ilankesvaran* is a recent drama based on the episode of the *Sītā harana*.

Telugu The earliest writers of the available Telugu versions of the *Rāmāyana* are Ranganātha and the authors of the *Bhāskara Rāmāyana* namely Hulakkī Bhāskara his son Mallikāryuna Bhatta his friend Ayyalārya and his disciple Rudradeva. Ranganatha's *Rāmāyana* seems to have really been composed by Buddharāju a tributary prince under Pratāparudra II of Warangal and dedicated to Ranganātha. This work is popularly known as *Dvīpāda Rāmāyana* after the name of the metre in

which it is written. Buddhārjuna's son completed it by adding the *Uttara Rāmāyana*. The *Bhāskara Rāmāyana* is written in the *campū* style and has great literary merits. These two *Rāmāyanas* belong to the late thirteenth and early fourteenth century A.D. The most popular *Rāmāyana* in Telugu is the *Molla Rāmāyana* composed in the sixteenth century A.D. by a woman named Molla. In the eighteenth century A.D. was composed the *Gopīnātha Rāmāyana* in the *campū* style. Tikkana wrote the *Nīrvacanottara Rāmāyana* in verse narrating the story of Rāma after his coronation. The *Rāghavābhīrudayamu* is attributed to Nannaya (eleventh century A.D.). The *Rāmāyana* by Yerrapraggada has not been discovered so far. In the present century Mahamahopādhyāya Krishnamurti Shastri has composed a metrical translation of the *Rāmāyana*. The greatest work of a modern Telugu poet Visvanatha Satyanarayana is the *Rāmāyana* which is probably yet to be completed.

INFLUENCE OF THE MAHABHARATA ON CLASSICAL SANSKRIT WORKS

Quite a large number of *mahā kāvyas*, *khaṇḍa kāvyas* and plays—based mostly on various episodes and a few on the entire story of the *Mahābhārata*—were written in classical Sanskrit from the early centuries of the Christian era. One of the earliest of such *mahā kāvyas* is the celebrated *Kīratījūnīya* of Bhāravi (c. sixth century A.D.) which is based on a simple episode from the *Vana-parvan* and describes in eighteen cantos Arjuna's propitiation of Śiva for divine weapons. Māgha (c. latter part of the seventh century A.D.) wrote his *Śisupālavadha*—slaying of Śisupāla the king of Cedi by Kṛṣṇa—on the simple episode of the *Mahābhārata* which he expanded into twenty cantos by a series of lengthy descriptions. Ksemendra of Kashmir wrote the *Mahābhārata mañjarī* probably in A.D. 1037. Anantabhatta wrote the *Bhārata campū* in twelve *stāvakas* or chapters. Vāsudeva, author of the *Nalodaya*, wrote a *yamaka kāvya*, the *Yudhisthira vijaya* which gives the story of the *Mahābhārata* beginning with the hunting sports of Pāṇḍu and ending in the coronation of Yudhisthira. Amaracandra Sūri, who flourished under Viśaladeva of Gujarat in the first half of the thirteenth century A.D., attempted a close adaptation of the complete *Mahābhārata* in nineteen cantos in his *Bāla Bhārata*. Nītivarmaṇ, who flourished in some eastern province before the eleventh century A.D., handled the episode of Bhīma's slaying Kīcaka in his *yamaka kāvya* the *Kīcaka vadha*. Vastupāla, who died in A.D. 1242 and who was a minister of King Vīradhavalā of Dholka, dealt with the friendship of Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna and the latter's marriage with Subhadrā in sixteen cantos in his *Naranārāyaṇānanda*. We do not know anything definitely about the exact source of Kālidāsa's early but famous work, the

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

Kumārasambhava describing the marriage of Śiva and Pārvatī. The story is however found in the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata*.

The story of Nala and Damayantī is one of the most romantic and pathetic episodes in the *Mahābhārata* and it is a true gem of literature. A large number of later *kāvya*s plays and *campus* are indeed based on this episode. The most famous and also voluminous of such works is the celebrated *Naisadha carita* of Śrīharsa who flourished probably under Vijayacandra and Jayacandra of Kanauj in the latter half of the twelfth century A.D. Even in twenty two cantos Śrīharsa deals only with part of the Nala story. The work is reckoned among the five great *mahā kāvya*s in Sanskrit. The entire story of Nala has been dealt with in fifteen cantos in the *Sahridayānanda* by Kṛṣṇānanda a Mahāpātra to a certain king of Puri before the fourteenth century A.D., and in eight cantos in the *Nalā bhyudaya* by Vāmanabhatta Bāna who was a court poet of the Reddī prince Vema of Kondavīdu at the close of the fourteenth and beginning of the fifteenth century A.D. The Kerala poet Vāsudeva a contemporary of King Kulaśekhara varman (c ninth century A.D.) deals with the same story in his *Nalodaya* a *yamaka kāvya*. The *Nala campū* or *Damayantī kathā* of Trivikrama bhatta (tenth century A.D.) has been written in the *campū* style only a small part of the story has been told in its seven *ucchvasas* written in highly ornamental style. Rāmacandra a pupil of Hemacandra (twelfth century A.D.) has composed the *Nala vilāsa* a drama in seven acts. Some other minor or less known works dealing with the same theme are *Nala carita* (a drama by Nīlakantha Dīkṣita) *Nala bhūmipāla rūpaka* (a drama) *Nala Yādava Rāghava Pāṇḍavīya* (a *ślesa kāvya* giving the four stories parallelly) *Nala varnana kavya* by Lakṣmīdhara and the play *Nalānanda* by Jīvaśibudha. The *Rāghava Naisadhīya* of Haradatta Sūri has been referred to early. Kṣemīśvara (tenth century A.D.) the author of the *Canda-Kauśika* wrote also the *Naisadhānanda* in seven acts dealing with the same story.

Quite a large number of plays based on the main story or the various episodes of the *Mahābhārata* have been written in Sanskrit. Probably the earliest of them are the six *Mahābhārata* plays ascribed to Bhāsa (c third century A.D.) His *Madhyama vyāyoga* deals with the reunion of Bhīma with his demon wife Hidimbā under extraordinary circumstances and reminds one of the epic tale of the demoness's love for Bhīma and the birth of their son Ghatotkaca. The *Dūta Ghatotkaca* of Bhāsa deals with the message delivered by Ghatotkaca to the Kauravas who were jubilant over the death of Abhimanyu. The message was that the latter's death would be avenged by Arjuna. The *Pañcarātra* deals with the robbing of Virāta's cows by the Kauravas but it differs from the original in many details. The

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Dūta vākya deals with Kṛṣṇa's message to Duryodhana demanding a half of the kingdom for the Pāṇdavas. The *Ūru bhanga* describes the duel between Bhīma and Duryodhana in which the latter's thigh was broken by Bhīma striking with his massive club. The *Karnābhara* deals with Indra's taking away the magic ear-rings of Karna after approaching him in the guise of a Brāhmaṇa. Bhāsa often shows much ingenuity and novelty in handling his subject. In his *Abhijñāna Śakuntala* Kālidāsa with the touch of his genius has immortalized the rather crude story of Duśyanta and Śakuntala as told in the *Mahābhārata*. This work has universally been acclaimed as one of the brightest gems in world literature. The *Venī samhāra* of Bhaṭṭanārāyaṇa (before A.D. 800) turns round the incident of the great insult suffered by Draupadī when she was dragged by her hair by Duryodhana's younger brother Duḥśāsana in the former's court and Draupadī's promise of not braiding her hair until she was avenged. Duḥśāsana is slain by Bhīma and according to this drama after some incidents not found in the *Mahābhārata* Draupadī binds up her locks. Rajasekhara (tenth century A.D.) wrote his play *Bāla Bhārata* also called *Pracanda Pāṇḍava* dealing with the main story of the *Mahābhārata*. The work is left unfinished and covers only up to the gambling scene and Duḥśāsana's insult of Draupadī. The *Citra Bhārata* of Kṣemendra is lost. The Kerala king Kulasekhara varman (c. ninth century A.D.) wrote two *Mahābhārata* plays viz. the *Subhadrā Dhanañjaya* and the *Tapatī Samvārana*. Prahlādanādeva (c. twelfth century A.D.) wrote the *Pārtha parākrama* dealing with the raid of Virāṭa's cows by the Kauravas and their defeat at the hands of Arjuna. The same theme has been handled by Kāñcīna Pandita in his *Dhanañjaya vijaya*. The date of the work is not known. It ends with the marriage of Uttarā, daughter of the king of Virāṭa, with Arjuna's son Abhimanyu. The legend of the churning of the ocean by the gods and Asuras has been dramatized by Vatsarāja, a minister of Paramardideva of Kālañjara (A.D. 1163-1203) in his *Samudra manthana* in three acts. The *Sahitya darpaṇa* mentions a play the *Śarmisthā Yayāti* which may be the same as the work of that name by Kṛṣṇa Kavi. Hastimalla wrote (about A.D. 1200) the *Vikrānta Kaurava* in six acts. Vijayapāl, a contemporary of the Cālukya king Kumārapāla (twelfth century A.D.) dramatized Draupadī's marriage in two acts in his *Draupadī svayamvara*. The same theme has been treated also by Vyāsa Śrīrāmadeva (fifteenth century A.D.) in his *Pāṇḍavābhyaudaya* in two acts. Two plays dealing with the exploits and adventures of Bhīma are the *Nirbhaya Bhīma* of Rāmacandra (second half of the twelfth century A.D.) which gives the story of Bhīma's slaying the demon Baka and the *Bhīma vikrama-vyāyoga* of Moksāditya (earlier than fourteenth century A.D.). The lively one act

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

drama *Saugandhikā harana* of Visvanātha who flourished under the Waiyangal ruler Pratāparudra (about A.D. 1291-1322) and the *Kalyāna saugandhika* of the Kerala author Nilakantha (seventeenth century A.D.) dramatized Bhīma's encounter with Hanumat in his adventure for fetching the *saugandhika* flowers for Draupadī from a lake belonging to Kubera. The anonymous *Haridūta* like the *Dūta vākya* of Bhāsa deals with Kṛṣṇa's mission to the Kauravas for seeking peace between the Pandavas and the Kauravas. Vyāsa Śrīrāmadeva the author of the *Pāṇḍavābhyudaya* wrote another *Mahābhārata* drama the *Subhadra parinaya* dealing with the story of Arjuna's winning Subhadrā as his bride. The same theme has been treated also by Mādhava (before seventeenth century A.D.) in his *Subhadrā harana*. Sankaralāla son of Mahesvara wrote in A.D. 1882 the *Sāvitrī caritra* which deals with the undying legends of Savitrī and Satyawat. Among the lost *Mahābhārata* plays we may mention the *Mukuta tādītaka* ascribed to Bāna by Bhoja and the *Candapāla* which dealt with Bhīma's fight with Duryodhana.

INFLUENCE OF THE MAHABHARATA IN BUDDHIST LITERATURE

Although the Pālī text deals with the main story of the *Mahābhārata*, references to *Mahābhārata* characters, parallels to some *Mahābhārata* incidents and many episodes occurring in the *Mahābhārata* are found in Pālī works. *Samyutta Nikāya*¹ narrates how Buddha satisfies a *yakṣa* with his wise answers just as Yudhiṣṭhira does in an episode in the *Mahābhārata*. The dialogues in the Suttas very often remind one of similar dialogues in the *Mahābhārata*. Vidhura in the famous *Vidhura paṇḍita Jātaka*² is no other than Vidura of the *Mahābhārata*. Jātaka No. 495 describes the dialogue between Yudhiṣṭhira (= Yudhiṣṭhira) and Vidhura (Vidura) on the question of who is a true Brāhmaṇa. The story of King Śibi occurs in the Jātakas also. The Kṛṣṇa legend has been dealt with in several Jātakas (for instance the *Ghata Jātaka* No. 355). An almost deliberately distorted account of Draupadī is found in the story of Kanha (Kṛṣṇa) in the *Kunāla Jātaka*. Draupadī is represented as committing adultery with a hunchbacked dwarf. Among other *Mahābhārata* episodes found in the Jātakas one is that of Māṇḍavya in Jātaka No. 444.

THE INFLUENCE OF THE MAHABHARATA IN JAINA LITERATURE

The Jaina version of the *Mahābhārata* like that of the *Rāmāyana* has its own characteristics and it is termed *Harivamśa*. Kṛṣṇa (Vāsudeva) is the major figure. Balarāma is the second important figure and the arch

enemy (Prativāsudeva) is Jarāsandha. The fight between the Kauravas and Pāṇḍavas is almost omitted in the Śvetāmbara version while the Digambaras closely follow the Brāhmanic version. All the stories get mixed up with the life of Aristanemi, the reigning Tirthankara of the period and a cousin of Vasudeva. Almost all the characters including the Kauravas and Pāṇḍavas are converted to Jainism. Jaina doctrines and sermons are frequently inserted. The earliest extant work of this nature is the *Harivamśa Purana* in sixty six chapters by Jinasena which was completed in the year A.D. 783. It belongs to the Digambara sect. The *Uttara Purāna* of Gunabhadra (ninth century A.D.) which forms a part of the *Trisasti laksana Mahāpurana* (or simply *Mahāpurāna*) the *Pāṇḍava Purāna* or Jaina Mahābhārata of Śubhacandra (written in A.D. 1551) and the tenth to twelfth *sargas* of the *Śatruñjaya mātmya* also deal with the *Mahābhārata* story. The *Pandava carita* of Maladhārī Devaprabha Sūri (c. A.D. 1200) gives in eighteen *sargas* a concise account of the eighteen *parvans* of the *Mahābhārata* with a remodelling of many of the details. The *Pāṇḍava Purāna* by Asaga (eleventh century A.D.) is a Digambara version of the *Mahābhārata* in Sanskrit closely following the Brāhmanical version. Śilācārya deals with the *Mahābhārata* story in his own way in the Prakrit prose work *Caupanna mahapurisa cariya* (written in A.D. 868). The *Mahapurāna* or *Tisatti mahapurisa ganāṅkārā* in Apabhramsa by Puspadanta (A.D. 965) also gives the story of the *Mahābhārata*. Chapter sixteen of the *Nāyā Dhammakahao* gives the story of Dvāpī (Draupadī) in a corrupt form of a story of rebirth. The last book of the *Kathā kosa* gives the story of Nala and Davadantī (= Damayantī) which is a curious Jainistic adaptation and extension of the Nala episode of the *Mahābhārata*. The famous *Kumārāpala pratibodha* of Somaprabha, a younger contemporary of Hemacandra and King Kumārāpala gives the story of Nala as a warning against gambling. The *Pañcaśatī prabodha sambandha* of Śubhaśīla Ganin (written in A.D. 1464) deals among others with the stories of Draupadī and Kuntī. Śubhaśīla Ganin wrote also the *Bharatādī kathā*. Amītagatī (eleventh century A.D.) cites many legends and sagas from the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* in a corrupt Jaina form.

The Jains incorporated the Kṛṣṇa cult into their religion at a very early period and consequently also interwove the Kṛṣṇa legend with their own treasury of legends. The Prakrit work *Vāsudeva hindī* of Sanghadāsa Ganin and Jinadāsa (c. sixth or seventh century A.D.) partly deals with the story of Vāsudeva Kṛṣṇa. The eighth Anga Amītagadadasāo gives a corrupted Jaina version of the Kṛṣṇa legend where the story of the downfall of the city of Dvārāvātī and the death of Kṛṣṇa is told as in the *Mahābhārata* only Kṛṣṇa is made into a pious Jina.

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE
INFLUENCE OF THE MAHABHARATA ON MODERN INDIAN LITERATURE

Assamese Rāma Sarasvatī (sixteenth century A D) translated the *Mahābhārata* into Assamese at the request of King Naranārāyana of Cooch Behar introducing many new incidents and episodes. He took the fullest freedom in the *Vanaparvan*. Rāma Sarasvatī wrote also such other works as *Kulācala vadha*, *Bagāsura vadha* and *Bhīma carita* where the popular hero has been most picturesquely drawn as a big and tall glutton always carrying his club with him. *Babrubāhanar Yuddha* by Harihara Vipra (later part of the thirteenth century A D) is based on an episode in the *Aśvamedhaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata*. It is composed in verse and contains about 600 couplets. Mādhava Deva, disciple of Śankara Deva, wrote also the *Rājasūya yajña* which is based on a famous *Mahābhārata* episode. Ananta Kandalī, a contemporary of Śankara Deva, wrote the *Bhārata Sāvitrī*. Gopinātha Pāthaka wrote the *Drona* and the *Puṣpa parvans* of the *Mahābhārata*. Sūryakhaṇi Daivajña (early nineteenth century A D) wrote the *Kūrmāvali vadha* and the *Khatāsura vadha*, both adaptations from the *Mahābhārata*. Ramakanta Chaudhary wrote the *Abhimanyu vadha kāvya* (published in A D 1875). The plots of many modern dramas and other writings have been taken from the two epics.

Bengalī The earliest *Mahābhārata* in Bengalī was written in the sixteenth century A D by Kavindra Paramēśvara at the command of Parāgal Khān, a high Muslim official (Laskar) of Chittagong. The work is styled as *Pāndava vijaya*. In the same century Śrīkara Nandin wrote his *Aśvamedhaparvan* based on the *Jaimini Bhārata* at the command of Chuti Khān, son of Parāgal Khān. The most popular *Mahābhārata* in Bengalī was however composed by Kāśīrāma Dāsa in the seventeenth century A D. Kāśīrāma died before he could complete even the *Virāṭaparvan*. The work was completed by Nandarāma, a distant nephew of Kāśīrāma. The *Mahābhārata* of Kāśīrāma, along with the *Rāmāyana* of Kṛttivāsa, are two of the greatest works in Bengalī literature. There have been scores of poets in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries who have translated only one or two *parvans*, especially the *Virāṭa* or *Aśvamedha* of the *Mahābhārata* into Bengalī. In A D 1546-47 Pītāmbara Dāsa wrote the *Nala Damayantī ākhyāna* and Rājendra Dāsa the *Śakuntalā*. The two prose translations of the *Mahābhārata*, published respectively under the patronage of the Maharaja of Burdwan and Kaliprasanna Sinha, are most valuable treasures of Bengalī literature. The latter work was published between A D 1858 and 1866 and both were distributed free. Girish Chandra Ghosh wrote such plays as *Abhimanyu vadha* (A D 1881), *Pāndaver Ajñātavāsa* (A D 1882) and *Pāndava gaurava* (A D 1900) which are based on *Mahābhārata* episodes. Tagore's famous lyrical drama *Citrāngadā* (A D 1892) is based on the

episode of Arjuna's marriage with Citāngadā a princess of Manipuṭra. Tāgore also wrote several narrative poems *Kacchodasvatī* *Gāndhārī* *Āvedan* (The Appeal of Gāndhārī) *Karna Kuntī samvād* etc. which are based on the *Mahābhārata*. Nabin Chandra Sen's trilogy *Kuruksetra* (A.D. 1893) *Ravataka* (1896) and *Prabhasa* (1896) has the *Mahābhārata* war and later incidents in Lord Kṛṣṇa's life as its background and Lord Kṛṣṇa as depicted in the *Mahābhārata* as its hero. Rajashekhara Basu's abridged Bengali version of the *Mahābhārata* like that of the *Rāmāyana* is another valuable contribution to Bengali literature.

Gujarati Nākara (c. A.D. 1550) is probably the earliest author who attempted a rendering of some parts of the *Mahābhārata* in Gujarati. He did not follow the original faithfully. Premānanda, the author of the Gujarati *Rāmāyana*, composed a complete version of the *Mahābhārata* also. His *Candrahāsākhya* (A.D. 1671) *Draupadī svayamvara* (A.D. 1680) *Nalākhyāna* (A.D. 1680) *Draupadī harana* (A.D. 1689) and *Subhadrā harana* (A.D. 1702) are based on *Mahābhārata* episodes. His *Nalākhyāna* is the most popular of his *ākhyānas* and every line of the work testifies to the touch of a skilled artist. Bhālana (c. fifteenth century A.D.) who may be called the father of the *ākhyānas* in Gujarati wrote the *Nalākhyāna* and the *Durvāsākhya*. Premānanda's son Vallabha wrote the *Durvāsāna rudhira pānākhyāna* (A.D. 1742) the *Kuntī prasannākhyāna* (A.D. 1781) the *Yudhisthira Vikodarākhyāna* etc. Ratnesvara, the most notable pupil of Premānanda, wrote the *Śiśupālavadha*. Sāmalabhatta (eighteenth century A.D.) wrote the *Rāvana Mandodarī samvāda* and the *Draupadī vastra harana*. In modern times Nālalal (born in A.D. 1877) is the most outstanding poet of the new literature and he has written an epic entitled *Kuruksetra*. The *Rekhā caritra* of Lilavati Munshi (born in A.D. 1899) contains a fine sketch of Draupadī. Batubhai Lalbhai Umarvadia (born in A.D. 1899) has collected some one act plays in his *Matsyagandhā āne Gāngeya* (A.D. 1925).

Hindi Sabal Singh Chauhan (c. A.D. 1670) who belonged to a ruling house wrote an abridged Hindi version of the *Mahābhārata* in about 24,000 verses. Though without much literary merit, it is very popular because of its simple style. Sūr Dās (c. sixteenth century A.D.) the famous saint and blind bard of Agra composed besides many other works and devotional songs a work on the story of Nala and Damayanti in Hindi. Chatra (flourished about A.D. 1700) is the author of the *Vijai Muktaṭvali* which is an abstract of the *Mahābhārata* in Hindi verse. Gokul Nāth (eighteenth-nineteenth century A.D.) is the celebrated translator of the *Mahābhārata* into Hindi. Maithili Sharan Gupta (born in A.D. 1886) has written a long narrative poem entitled *Jayadratha vadha*.

Kannada Pampa I (c. A.D. 902) is the celebrated author of the

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

Kannada *Mahābhārata* entitled *Vikramārjuna vijaya* also known as *Pampa Bhārata* or *Samasta Bhārata*. The work is a masterly abridgement of the original work and maintains a high level in narration, characterization and poetry and gives the Jaina version of the story. Ranna the third member of the trio Pampa, Ponna and Ranna wrote the *Sahasa Bhīma vijaya* describing the final fight of Bhīma and Duryodhana. Karnapārya (c. A.D. 1140) managed to introduce the stories of Kṛṣṇa the Pāṇḍavas and the Mahābhāratan war in his *Neminātha Purāṇa* which is a history of the twenty-second Tirthankara. Nāranappa (sixteenth century A.D.) better known by his *nom de plume* Kumāra Vyāsa composed the Kannada version of the first ten *parvans* of the *Mahābhārata*. The remaining *parvans* were translated by Timmanna whose work was named *Kṛṣṇarāja Bhārata* after his royal patron. Two other versions of the *Mahābhārata* the *Lakṣmakavi Bhārata* and the *Śālva Bhārata* were written in the century by Lakṣmakavi and Śālva respectively. The latter work gives the Jaina version of the story. Kanaka Dāsa (sixteenth century A.D.) a hunter by caste wrote amongst others the *Nala carita* in *satpadī metre*. Lakṣmīśa (c. first half of the eighteenth century A.D.) wrote his famous work the *Jaiminī Bhārata* describing the wanderings of the sacrificial horse of Yudhiṣṭhira. Though based on the *Aśvamedhaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata* it differs widely from the original in details. It is one of the most highly esteemed poems in Kannada. A prose version of the *Mahābhārata* entitled *Kṛṣṇarāja vāṇīvilāsa* was made in the nineteenth century under the patronage of Kṛṣṇarāja Wodeyar III (A.D. 1799-1868). The *Yaksagāṇas* which are in a dramatic form suitable for recitation before rustic audiences by professional or amateur actors are based on the epics and the Purāṇas. Shantayya a Brāhmana of Gersappe, wrote a large number of such works in the nineteenth century A.D. Many dramatic works of a high order written in Kannada are also based on the epics.

Malayalam. Ezhuttaccan, the author of the *Adhyātma Rāmāyana* in Malayalam also composed a condensed version of the *Mahābhārata* which is his best literary work. His adaptations of the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* form the basis of every Malayalee's education. In the genre of Kathakali literature the *Nala caritram* of Unnayi Warier and the *Uttarā svayamvaram* and *Kīcaka vadham* of Erayimman Thampī deserve special mention for their literary excellence. Amongst modern works (dramas) in Malayalam based on the *Mahābhārata* we may mention the *Subhadrārjunam* by Thottakattu Ikkavamma Karnan by N. P. Chellappan Nair, *Ambā* dealing with the tragic story of a character of that name in the *Mahābhārata* by Mahākavi Ulloor, *Bhīsmar* by K. M. Panikkar and the pastoral elegy *Devayāni* by Changanpuzha Krishna Pillai.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Marathi Muktesvara, the author of a *Rāmāyana* won great fame by his Marathi adaptation of the *Mahābhārata* in verse. It is a product of ripe learning and long experience and he must have composed it when he was advanced in years about the year 1650 A.D. The work is written in the simple *ovi* metre the style is dignified and chaste and the vein of narration smooth. The most popular *Mahābhārata* in Marathi however is the *Pāndava pratāpa* of Śrīdhara the author of the *Rāma vijaya*. It consists of about 13 000 couplets in *ovi* metre. Moropant the author of 108 *Rāmāyanas* also wrote a *Mahābhārata* in Marathi. Śubhānanda (late eighteenth century A.D.) has adapted portions of the *Mahābhārata* in *ovi* metre. The *Damayanti svayamvara* or *Nalopākhyāna* by Raghunātha Pandita is one of the most charming and excellent poetical works in Marathi. It is however modelled on the *Naisadha carita* of Śrīhaṣa. The *Durvāsā yātrā Draupadī vastra harana* etc. of Anantarāya (born in A.D. 1698) are composed in easy flowing sweet *katibandhas* or *katāvas* as these are more popularly known. Anna Kirloskar's *Śākuntala* and Saubhadra Khadilkar's *Draupadī*. Panta Pratinidhi's *Draupadī vastra harana* and Bhisma pratijñā Sarnaik's *Draupadī svayamvara*. Kane's *Nala Damayantī* and Raghunath Pandit's *Nala Damayanti svayamvara* are some of the modern works based on the *Mahābhārata*. Chiplunkar's prose translation of the complete *Mahābhārata* is a noteworthy contribution to the Marathi literature.

Oriya Sarala Dāsa an illiterate cultivator absolutely innocent of Sanskrit wrote the first *Mahābhārata* in Oriya in the fourteenth century A.D. As he had no direct access to the original he got the outline of the epic story probably from the priests. The original epic has undergone many changes in his hands—even the order of the eighteen *parvans* does not exist in his work. The characters have been much modified by him and are no more than the Oriyas of the contemporary world which alone the poet knew. He even brings the Pāndavas to Orissa on their way to heaven and makes Yudhisthira marry the daughter of a village merchant to save her from a curse! Although a few more versions of the great epic have been made in Oriya Sarala Dāsa's work still enjoys the greatest popularity with the masses of Orissa. Viśvambhūta Dāsa wrote the *Vicitra Mahābhārata* (late seventeenth or early eighteenth century A.D.). Rājā Kṛsnasimha's *Mahābharata* (eighteenth century A.D.) is next only to Sarala Dāsa's work in popularity. Bhīma Dhīvara's *Bhārata Savitrī* gives the whole story of the *Mahābhārata* and his *Kapatapāsā* in verse is based on the episode of the game of dice. Gopinātha Dāsa wrote the *Tikā Mahābhārata* in the seventeenth century A.D. Amongst modern works based on the episodes from the *Mahābhārata* mention may be made of Rāṇanath Ray's *Duryodhanara*.

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

Raktanadī santarana and *Bana harana* (both *kavyas*) and Radhamohan Rajendra Dev's *Pāñcālī pattapaharana* (drama)

Tamil Perundevanār who according to some belongs to the Sangam period of Tamil literature and is assigned by others to the tenth century A.D. translated the *Mahābhārata* into Tamil. In the second and third decades of the present century M. V. Ramanujachariyar has made a complete and literal prose translation of the *Mahābhārata* in Tamil. C. Raja gopalachari's adaptation of the *Mahābhārata* entitled *Viyāsar Virundu* is a masterly and popular work which has been translated into English. Subrahmanya Bharatiyar's *Pañjalayin Sapatam* is a noteworthy work in the sense that it condemns the Pandavas in their incident with Kīcaka.

Telugu The first literary work extant in Telugu is the *Mahābhārata* by Nannaya (eleventh century A.D.). This work is not a literal translation of the *Mahābhārata*. Nannaya wrote only the first two and half *parvans*. His poetry is chaste and dignified. In the thirteenth century A.D. Tikkana wrote the last fifteen *parvans* of the *Mahābhārata*. But curiously enough he did not complete the unfinished third *parvan*. It was Yeriapragada who completed it in the fourteenth century A.D. Pillalamarri Pinavīrabhadriah wrote the Telugu version of the *Jaiminī Bhārata* and the *Śrngāra Śākuntalam* in the fifteenth century A.D. The *Mahābhārata* dramas written by Tirupati Shastri and Venkata Shastri in modern times are most interesting. Mahāmahopādhyāya Krishnamurti Shastri has published a metrical translation of the *Mahābhārata* also.

INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND CULTURE

From the foregoing account of epic derivatives in classical and regional literature it is very easy to imagine how profound the epic influence must have been on art and culture and on the general texture of social life. The *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* are in the words of Havell as much the common property of all Hinduism as the English Bible and Shakespeare belong to all English speaking people. The Indian epics contain a portrait gallery of ideal types of men and women which afford to every good Hindu the highest exemplars of moral conduct and every Hindu artist an inexhaustible mine of subject matter. The earliest specimens of the influence of the epics on Indian art and sculpture date from the Gupta period. The platform of the Daśavatāra temple (dating about A.D. 600) at Deogarh in Jhansi was decorated with a continuous frieze representing events from the epic *Rāmāyana*. Panels depicting *Rāmāyana* subjects were quite common in the Gupta Age. The sculptures of the great Virupākṣa temple of Pattadakal dating from about A.D. 740 and belonging to the early Cālukya period represent among others *Rāmāyana* scenes. Episodes

from the *Rāmāyana* almost entirely clothe the famous rock cut Kailāsa temple at Ellora (eighth century A.D.) The most dramatic of a number of such reliefs is one illustrating the well known legend of Rāvana's shaking Mt. Kailāsa which occurs in the *Uttara kāṇḍa* of the *Rāmāyana*. Another fine relief panel of the Kailāsa temple represents the Gangāvatīna or the Descent of the Ganga on the earth. Some other mediaeval temples depicting *Rāmāyana* scenes are the temple of Āesvara (eleventh century A.D.) at Sinnar near Nasik, the great temple of Gondesvara or Govindesvara, (twelfth century A.D.) also at Sinnar, the basement of the unfinished Hoysalesvara temple at Halebid, the Hazār Rām temple at Vijayanagar (early sixteenth century A.D.) the temple group of Osia in Rajasthan etc. Separate cult images of Rāma accompanied by those of Sītā, Lakṣmana and Hanūmat in stone and bronze are abundantly found from a comparatively late period.

The Gupta pillars from Chandimau have scenes from the Kīratārjuna episode of the *Mahābhārata*. Many Gupta lintels also represent *Mahābhārata* scenes. Arjuna's penance was engraved in a bas-relief on pillars from Rajaona, Monghyr District, Bihar during the Gupta period. But the most famous representation of a *Mahābhārata* scene, namely Arjuna's penance (which however is identified by some as Gangāvataīana scene) is to be found in the rock sculpture at Māmallapuram (or Mahābalipuram). This huge relief picture covering a sheet of rock ninety-six feet in length and forty-three in breadth can rightly be regarded as the greatest achievement of the Pallava sculptures. The legend of the churning of the ocean by the gods and Asuras which allegorically represents the great cosmic struggle between good and evil is a very favourite subject with Indian sculptors and painters.

Various mediaeval schools of Indian paintings, Rājput, Kāngrā etc. have pictures depicting Arjuna's adventures, the legend of Nala and Damayantī and other *Rāmāyana* and *Mahābhārata* scenes. A Cochīn mural of the seventeenth century A.D. vividly represents the scene of friendship of Rāma and Sugriva. The Jammu school of painting has a well-known series of unusually large *Rāmāyana* pictures dealing with the siege of Lankā. The Persian adaptation of the *Mahābhārata* entitled *Razmnāmā* (sixteenth century A.D.) has a set of 169 beautiful miniatures depicting *Mahābhārata* scenes. Amongst famous modern artists Ravi Varma, Abanindranath Tagore, Nandalal Basu, and others have illustrated many scenes from the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata*.

The *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* portray pictures of ideal men and women and preach through a popular medium the gospel of Bhārata Dharma. The *Rāmāyana* does this by glorifying domestic relations and

THE INFLUENCE OF THE EPICS ON INDIAN LIFE AND LITERATURE

family life sustaining the entire social structure and the *Mahābhārata* by its lesson that hatred breeds hatred that covetousness and violence lead inevitably to ruin that the only real conquest is the battle against one's lower nature Rāma represents an ideal son and king, a perfect Man Laksmana and Bharata ideal brothers Sītā an ideal wife a perfect Woman Hanumat an ideal devotee Yudhisthira an ideal upholder of moral virtues and Bhīṣma and Arjuna ideal heroes Parents and elders have for generations used the themes and stories of the epics for imparting wisdom and instruction to the younger generation The themes are at once appealing and entertaining and they create an indelible impression on the young minds every incident and story (and the moral going with it) become deeply engraved thereon The educative influence of the epics on an Indian further is sustained through all the stages of life by such means as mass recitations of the epics in the temple or in public on festive and other occasions (the earliest reference to which is found in Kumāralāta's *Kalpanā manditīkā* a work of second century A.D.) and by such open air popular performances as the *Rāma līlā* and *Bhārata līlā* *yātrās* and *Pālā gānas* *Yaksagānas* and *Daśavātāras* dances like the *Kathakali* and *Pāndava nrtya* and regular dramatic performances—these are entertainments which always attract vast and varied crowds irrespective of creed or faith and they are an evidence of the perennial and dynamic appeal of the epics to all To millions of Hindus it has been a religious duty to recite at least a few verses from the epics before taking their meals

Works which have affected so large a population over so long a period of time and moulded the character and civilization of so vast a region often transcending geographical limits can ill afford to be termed mere epics Indeed the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* should better be regarded as the *true history of India* history not of events but of the urges and aspirations strivings and purposes of the nation Encyclopaedic in nature together they form the content of our collective unconscious wherein breathe the united soul of India and the individual souls of her people The two epics represent the two moods of our Aryan civilization viz moral and intellectual and it is indeed impossible to grasp the true spirit and meaning behind the moving drama of Indian life without a thorough and intelligent understanding of the epics And to trace the influence of the Indian epics on the life and civilization of the nation and on the development of the modern languages literatures and religious reforms in the words of R. C. Dutt is to comprehend the real history of the people during the three thousand years The epics have thus been the deep well of strength to our forefathers from which they

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

derived—and which inspires *us* to derive—the enduring vitality of our cultural and spiritual basis as well as of our social and political life

Glory to the twin poets whose names are lost in the morass of time but whose message brings strength and peace in a thousand streams to the doors of millions of men and women even to this day and incessantly carries silt from long past centuries and keeps fresh and fertile the soul of India ³—
Rabindranath Tagore

From the original in Bengali

THE RĀMĀYANA AND THE MAHĀBHĀRATA IN
SOUTH EAST ASIA

THE RĀMĀYANA

THE Rāma tradition has followed in the wake of Indian colonizing activities and has spread all over south eastern Asia. The deeds of Rāma are still represented in the puppet shows of Burma. In Siam the king is an incarnation of Rāma. One of the recent kings was named Rāma VI. Rāma's capital is localized as the old capital Ayuthia (Ayodhyā) of Siam. Lopburi (Lavapurī) is one of the most ancient towns in Siam. The oldest Siamese inscription is that of Rāma Kamheng who founded the Siamese kingdom on the ruins of the Khmer empire. The writer of this paper has seen representations of scenes from the *Rāmāyana* worked in silver on the gates of the principal Buddhist temple (Wat Chetuphon) of Bangkok. In a sixth century inscription of Cambodia there is the following passage: With the *Rāmāyana* and the *Purāna* he (the Brāhmaṇa Somaśarman) gave a complete *Mahābhārata* and arranged for a daily recitation without interruption. Whoever participates in this reading—may a portion of the fruit of this great and virtuous act go to his credit.¹ The princes of Kambuja (Cambodia as distinguished from the older kingdom of Funan) traced their descent from the solar dynasty. In an inscription² of Yaśovarman (A.D. 889-909) the construction of the new capital of Yaśodharapura (Angkor Thom) is thus referred to in words having double meaning: He who defended Kambupurī (the capital of Kambuja) impregnable (Ayodhyā) of terrifying aspect (Bībhīṣana) with the aid of good counsellors (with Sumantra as his friend) and with prosperity (Sītā) as its ornament like the descendant of Raghu.

THE RAMA BAS RELIEFS

The Hemasringa giri at present known as Ba Puon was constructed by Jayavarman V of Kambuja (A.D. 968-1001) and is one of the finest pyramidal temples of Cambodia. Among the Rama bas-reliefs found on the walls of its highest gallery, may be mentioned the interview of Rāma and Lakṣmana with Sugrīva, the duel between Sugrīva and Vālī, Sītā in the grove of Aśoka trees handing over the jewel to Hanumat, battle scenes in which Hanumat plays the chief part, the ten-headed Rāvana in

¹ Inscription of Veal Kantel. *Inscriptions Sanscrites de Champe et du Cambodge* p. 30
² *Op. cit.* p. 505 (st. 21)

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

a chariot drawn by lions facing Rāma carried by Hanūmat the ordeal of Sītā and Rāma and Sītā on the throne

Angkor Vat the most famous Vaisnava temple of Cambodia was built in the first half of the twelfth century Among the innumerable bas reliefs which adorn its galleries are several scenes of the *Rāmāyana* such as Rāma pursuing Mārīca the death of Kabandha the alliance of Rāma with Sugrīva the duel between Sugrīva and Vālī Hanūmat finding Sītā in Lankā the battle field of Lankā and so on ending with the return of Rāma and Sītā in the aerial chariot Puspaka

SOME ANNAMITE TRADITIONS

The old chronicles of the Annamites are preserved These describe the people of Campā (South Annam) as their mortal enemies and descendants of monkeys and cite the following tradition to corroborate this ^a

In ancient times beyond the frontiers of Annam there was a kingdom the king of which was known as the king of demons or as Daśanana To the north of this realm was the country of Ho Ton Tinh where reigned the King Daśaratha The son of this king of the name of Chu ng Tu had a wife—the princess Bach Tinh She was a peerless beauty The king of the demons became enamoured of her invaded the kingdom of Ho Ton Tinh seized the princess and carried her away The prince Chu ng Tu whose anger was roused put himself at the head of an army of monkeys The monkeys made a passage for themselves by bridging the sea with mountains which they tore off (from their positions) The kingdom of Dieunghiem was conquered and the king of demons slain The princess Bach Tinh was taken back to her country The people of Ho Ton Tinh were of the monkey race and the Chams (the people of Campā) are their descendants

M Hubert commenting on this passage says The Annamite writer supposes that the events (of the *Rāmāyana*) took place in Campā and this is a reason for believing that the story need not be traced back to the *Daśaratha Jātaka* in the Chinese Buddhist canon it is probably the distant echo of that which was once the national epic of Campā and which is now lost ⁴ So he thinks that there was a *Rāmāyana* in the Cham language

Hanūmat is mentioned in Tibetan books The Tibetans suppose themselves to be descended from monkeys and they say that they had tails for a long time The story of Rāma has penetrated into China with the *Lankāvatāra Sutra* and the *Daśaratha Jātaka* incorporated in the Buddhist scriptures

^a G Maspero *Le Royaume du Champa* (1914) p 63
Le Légende du *Rāmāyana* en Annam BEI EO Tome V

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

the *Serat Rāma* and the *Uttarakānda* without following Vālmiki verbatim gives on the whole the orthodox Indian version

The second group is represented by the *Rāma Kling* the *Serat Kānda* and other less known works such as the *Rāmāyana Sasak* and *Rama Nitis*. This group closely approaches the Malay version of the *Rāmāyana*. The Malay *Hikāyat Serī Rām*⁶ is probably based on this second group of Javanese texts. In popular dramas still staged for entertainment it is this second group and not the first which serves as the theme. These pieces for the theatre have been based on the episodes of the Javanese *Rāmāyana* such as the birth of Daśamukha (Rāvana) his abduction of a *vidyadhari* (Indrajit is there represented as her son) and Rāma's marriage. The old Javanese *Rāmāyanas* (the *Kākwān* etc.) are sometimes quoted in these dramatical representations but nobody understands them. The first group of works noted above had only a superficial influence over the growth of the Rāma tradition in Java.

THE SERAT KANDA

The *Serat Kānda* begins with Adam in Mecca along with his sons Abil and Kabil and Satan then we get a curious association of Noah and Umā. We come next to the account of the birth of Viṣnu and that of Vāsuki and Muslim figures then disappear. The genealogy of early Javanese kings is worked into the story. The *Rāmāyana* begins with canto XXII and only in canto XLVI the birth of Rāma is given. In cantos XXIII to XLV the ancestors of Rāma and Rāvana are discussed some among them are ancestors of Javanese princes. In this work Rāma is called Bhārgava Lakṣmana Murdhaka and Sītā Sītā Janaka is Kāla and Jatāyu Jintaya Hanūmat is Anumān the last one is presented as the son of Rama and Sītā born when both of them were temporarily metamorphosed into apes he lost his tail which he recovered in the sea of sand.

Just at the point when the invasion of Lankā is to begin the author digresses into the story of the Pāndavas. In canto LXX the story of Rāma is again taken up. Then the sequel to Rāvana's death is related. Rāvana is buried under a mountain. Then follows the episode of the fan with Rāvana's picture on it which Sītā unwittingly handles. This leads to estrangement between Rāma and Sītā. The couple are however reconciled at the hermitage of Kāla (Janaka). Towards the end we have the marriage of the daughter of Indrajit with But Lava (Lava) Dīnjayapur?

⁶ Translated in the *Journal of the Straits Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society* No 70, April 1917

THE RĀMĀYANA AND THE MAHĀBHĀRATA IN SOUTH EAST ASIA

is mentioned as the capital of Lava. Finally Sītā consents to be cremated with Rāma on condition that in the next life she would be his sister.

The difference between the concluding portion of the *Serat Kānda* and Vālmīki's *Uttarakānda* is so great that the former must be ascribed to a different source altogether. Dr. Stutterheim believes that other versions besides that of Vālmīki may have been at the basis of these Javanese divergences. The fame of Vālmīki's *Rāmāyana* has made us forget that there were also other (formerly well known) accounts of the life of Rāma. In the *Serat Kānda* there is firstly a combination of Mohammedan tales and of the deeds of Rāma. In canto III Śiva is mentioned as a descendant of Adam. In the Malay version the Muslim element is more conspicuous. Secondly in the *Serat Kānda* the story of Rāma forms an organic whole with early legends of Javanese dynasties. These Javanese texts of the second group may be taken as Javanese *purānas* working up local legends with orthodox Indian traditions.

THE MALAY RĀMĀYANA

Regarding the Malay *Rāmāyana* Dr. Brandes believes that a great part of it consists of old native legends which have nothing to do with the story of Rāma. The best known manuscript of this work was written late in the sixteenth century. It came into the possession of Archbishop Laud and was passed on to the Bodleian Library, Oxford, in 1633.⁶ It is evidently based on the Javanese Rāma legends of the second group. The narration begins with this account: Rāvana is banished by his father, put on board a ship, and finds himself at last in Serandip (Ceylon). He leads the rigorous life of an ascetic for twelve years, at the end of which Adam appears before him. Rāvana requests Adam to intercede for him, and then we get what appears to be a strangely distorted account of the familiar story of Rāma.

The questions arise: How far are these differences local in origin? Can they be traced to different versions of the Rāma tradition in India itself? In the Malay version Daśaratha's first wife is found in a bamboo thicket, and according to the *Serat Kānda* the second wife is also found in a bamboo grove. In Indian folk lore also there are some instances of deviations like this, and they may not therefore be of Indonesian origin. The part which Balīa Darī (Kaikeyī) plays in the Malay version is different from that which she plays in the Indian *Rāmāyana*. She holds up with her hand Daśaratha's litter when it was breaking. In the *Adhyātma Rāmāyana* also there is mention of the breaking of the litter, in addition to Kaikeyī's healing the wounds of Daśaratha. In the Malay version

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Rāma when he was quite young is represented as teasing a hunch backed woman (Mantharā) In Kṣemendra's *Rāmāyana mañjarī* it is mentioned that Rāma's rough treatment of Mantharā led her to act against him

DEVIATIONS IN THE DESCRIPTION OF SITA

Again in the Malay version and in the *Serat Kānda* Sītā is apparently Rāvana's daughter by Mandodarī really in both of these works she is the daughter of Daśaratha and Mandodarī As soon as she is born she is put in a box and thrown into the sea Janaka (Kāla in Javanese) finds the box while he is performing his morning ablutions takes out Sītā from it and brings her up In the *Adbhuta Rāmāyana* Nārada curses Lakṣmī that she will be born as a *rāksasī* In the Siamese version also Sītā is the daughter of Rāvana In a Ceylonese tale Sītā is born of the blood of ascetics collected by Rāvana¹ In the *Uttara Purāna* of the Jains also Sītā is the daughter of Rāvana Nearest to the Malay version there is a folk tale from Gujarat² in which a certain man's daughter is placed in a box and put into the sea The box floats down to a fisherman's hut and later on the father of the girl comes to win her hand in marriage In the Malay version (in the manuscript of Eysinga, and not that of Laud) we find Lakṣmana leading an ascetic life without sleeping or partaking of any food for twelve years just as in the Bengali version of Kṛttivāsa According to the Malay version Lakṣmana draws charm circle round Sītā's dwelling place before he leaves her to help Rāma who was supposed to be in distress Kṛttivāsa also gives this description in his popular poem The abduction of Rāma into Pātāla (the underground world) occurs in the Malay version as well as in the Bengali and Gujarati popular *Rāmāyanas* In a Punjab story it is stated that Macchandanaṭha is the son of Hanūmat by a fish queen whom the monkey chief weds on his visit to Pātāla in quest of Rāma A son of Hanūmat by a princess of subterranean regions is mentioned in the Malay accounts

Most of the divergences in the Javanese and Malay accounts of the *Lankākanda* can probably be deduced from Indian sources In the Malay version Rāvana falls when Rāma shoots off his small head (he had ten heads) behind his right ear Then again it says that Rāvana is immortal Mention of this is found also in popular Bengali accounts The episode of the fan with Rāvana's picture referred to in the *Serat Kānda* occurs in the Bengali tale of Candrāvalī where the same story is told of Kaikeyī's daughter Kukua³ Kuśa the Ceylonese and the Malay versions say was

¹ *IA* XLV p 84 I have heard this tale in the hills of the Kangra District
² *IA* XXII p 315
³ D C Sen *Lectures on Rāmāyana* pp 197 ff

THE RĀMAYANA AND THE MAHABHARATA IN SOUTH EAST ASIA

created out of Kusa grass by Vālmīkī when the real child was missing. The account of the fight between Rāma and his sons (without their knowing each other) is current in Bengal and the Malay Archipelago.

In what relation do these variations stand to Vālmīkī's epic? Some of these variant stories may be older than the epic itself and certainly they are cruder. e.g. the narration in some of the earlier versions that Sītā is really Rāvana's daughter. In the Malay *Hikāyat Seri Rāma* and *Serat Kānda* she is Rāvana's daughter only apparently. In Vālmīkī's epic there is no relationship between Rāvana and Sītā. Sītā's story has been adapted according to Dr Stutterheim to the stage of civilization reached at the particular period of the transmission of the story. Therefore he thinks that instead of accusing the Javanese of having tampered with the Rāma tradition to suit their own outlook on life, one may level the same charge against Vālmīkī himself for having given us a refined version of the earlier and cruder accounts.

MIXED INFLUENCE OF ORAL TRADITIONS

At first it was supposed by some of the Dutch scholars that the Tamil *Rāmāyana* might have been the basis of the Javanese and Malay versions. But the Tamil *Rāmāyana* of Kamban follows Vālmīkī closely. The popular tales in the Indonesian, as also in the Javanese, Malay and the remaining versions, approach closely some of the popular versions current in Gujarat, Punjab and Bengal. A tradition still existing in Java ascribes the colonization of the island by emigrants from Gujarat. This is probably due to the fact that from the thirteenth century the Gujaratis were in Java as merchants, mullahs and sailors. Epigraphic evidence does not support the tradition of any Gujarati influence in earlier times and as the sole reason for the divergences in the Indonesian *Rāmāyana*, the influence of the Gujarati versions cannot be maintained.

Dr Stutterheim thus sums up his conclusions on this question. No single definite recension has yet been found in India from which the Indonesian (Javanese and Malay) versions could have been derived. There has been a very mixed influence, principally of oral traditions, some of which have come down from very ancient times. Vālmīkī's work, according to Dr Stutterheim, represents a later and more refined civilization. The Javanese and Malay versions, which preserve some of the more primitive traditions, should be more interesting from the anthropological point of view than the literary and polished *Rāmāyana* of the orthodox school.

The Rāma tradition is a living force even in the Java of today. The Javanese have so completely assimilated the famous legends that even their foreign origin has been forgotten. For the great mass of the population

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Rama and Pandavas are truly national heroes born and bred in the Isle of Java! The extreme favour which those Indian stories have found and retained until now among all classes of society is not so much due to their having been sung in famous old Javanese poems as to that most popular of entertainments—the Wayang or the shadow show. Indians familiar with their *Mahābhārata* and *Ramāyana* would be surprised to see Arjuna, Kṛṣṇa and Rāma appear here in the quaint garb of Wayang puppets which in their strangely fantastical yet unmistakably artistic character are the true children of Indonesian art. Stranger still are the clowns who invariably accompany the hero, be it Arjuna or Rāma and who contribute not a little to the delight of the audience by their good humoured though not always delicate jokes. These clowns or *panakawans*—Semar the father and his two sons Petruk and Nalagareng—are undoubtedly as Indonesian in origin as they are in name.¹⁰ The principal river of Central Java is still known as the Serayu and sounds similar to Sarayu on which Ayodhyā was located.

THE PRAMBANAN GROUP OF HINDU TEMPLES

Next to the Borobudur the most striking ancient monument in Java is the Prambanan group of Hindu temples. The ruins of Prambanan are part of a still bigger group of dilapidated shrines known as Chandī (Javanese word for a temple) Laura Jongrong. The princess Laura Jongrong is well known in Javanese folk lore. It was to win her hand so says the popular story that the thousand temples of Chandī Sewu in the vicinity of Prambanan were built in a single night by a suitor according to a wager he was however frustrated in his purpose by an unusually early dawn. These Hindu shrines are situated in the plain dominated by the volcano Merapi. The Archaeological Society of Jogjakarta—the nearest important town—commenced in A.D. 1885 the task of clearing up the tropical vegetation and the lava deposits under which the shrines had been buried for centuries. This work of restoration had an unexpected result. The Javanese converted to Islam three centuries ago thronged to visit the temple with offerings of incense and flowers. The French traveller Jules Leclercq who saw even Hajis joining in this worship of the ancient Hindu images remarks that the advent of the Muslim faith has not alienated the minds of the Javanese from their old beliefs.¹¹

The Laura Jongrong group of temples is surrounded on all sides by Buddhist shrines. There are eight main temples in this group and those dedicated to Śiva, Viṣṇu and Brahmā are in the middle. The general

p 40) Vogel: The Relation between the Art of India and Java (*The Influence of Indian Art*,
L'île de Java p. 147)

THE RĀMAYANA AND THE MAHABHĀRATA IN SOUTH EAST ASIA

plan is grand in its simplicity. The eight large main shrines are built on a square terrace in the centre round which are 160 small shrines arranged in three successive squares. The small shrines are now in an advanced state of decay but the main temples have resisted better the ravages of time.

Inscriptions of the Buddhist Śailendra kings cease to appear in Central Java after the middle of the ninth century. After A.D. 915 we do not hear any more of Central Javanese rulers, this region being abandoned by them at that time. So the Prambanan group must have been constructed in the second half of the ninth century by a prince known by the name Dakṣa. An inscription of Prambanan mentions this name. On the inner side of the balustrade of the Śiva temple are the famous *Rāmāyana* reliefs. From the outside one cannot see anything of these splendid representations. The bas-reliefs in the Śiva temple stop abruptly with the scene of bridging the sea. Probably the story was continued along the balustrade of the adjoining Brahmā temple, some scattered remnants of which have been discovered. There are Kṛṣṇa reliefs on the parapet of the Viṣṇu temple.

The first bas-reliefs of the *Rāmāyana* series begins at the starting point of the *pradaksina* (going round) of the Śiva's shrine. Here we have Garuda with the blue lotus, Viṣṇu reclining on the Śeṣa Nāga, drifting on the sea which is full of crabs and fishes, and to the right a group of seated figures headed by an ascetic who offers something to Viṣṇu. Dr Vogel says about this first relief: "It is interesting that this opening scene of the Rama story differs from the version both of the Sanskrit and the old Javanese *Rāmāyana* (the *Kāhāwīn*) but agrees in a remarkable way with the corresponding passage in Kālidāsa's *Raghuvamśa*. In the tenth canto of *Raghuvamśa* the gods led by the Rṣi Bhṛgu invoke Viṣṇu in the midst of the waters of the ocean."

In the following scenes are depicted the visit of Viśvāmitra to the court of Daśaratha, Tāṭakā (or Tāḍakā) and another giantess being shot down with arrows by Rāma, the interview with Janaka, Sītā's *svayamvara*, the breaking of the bow, Paraśurāma wearing an *akṣamālā* (rosary of beads) facing Rāma and Sītā, Kaikeyī talking to Daśaratha about the festive preparations—there are green cocoanuts and a pot kept for auspicious purpose (*mangala kalaśa*) in the background—a woman with a sword and a shield in her hands dancing a war dance before two princes, and Daśaratha in a melancholy attitude with Kauśalya behind him. This is followed by a forest scene with three crowned figures in a four wheeled chariot drawn by a pair of horses—Rāma, Sītā and Lakṣmana leaving for the forest. In the next scene, we find a group of workmen, one of them is placing a richly

ornamented chest on an altar. Other servants all with woolly hair like negroes are apparently busy with some preparations. A lady is sitting with three money bags in front of her. Can this be the *śrāddha* ceremony after Dasaratha's death? After this there is the scene in which Rāma hands over his sandals to Bharata, his combat with Virādha and another *vāksasa* (there is a house on a wooden pile in the background), Rāma punishing the crow for vexing Sītā, the visit of Śūrpanakhā, Rāma shooting the golden deer, Sītā being abducted by Rāvana disguised as a Brāhmaṇa, Rāvana's struggle with Jatāyu (Rāvana and Sītā are here carried on a platform which a winged demon bears on his head), Sītā giving a ring to the wounded Jatāyu, Jatāyu handing over the ring to Lakṣmana, Rāma shooting Kabandha (who has one head on his shoulders and a second one in his belly) and Kabandha going to heaven seated on a lotus. The scene in the next relief represents a prince shooting an arrow at a crocodile in a tank and a lady represented on the bank of it in the attitude of prayer. Can this be an allusion to the Śabarī episode on the bank of the Pampā lake? In the scene which comes after that the meeting with Hanumat is depicted. This was the first relief discovered and led to the whole series being identified with the *Rāmāyana*.

In the next scene Sugrīva is seen weeping on a tree. His tears are flowing into Lakṣmana's quiver. In the Malay version Lakṣmana brings water for Rāma in his quiver. The water tastes like tears and this leads to the discovery of Sugrīva. After this comes the scenes of the interview with Sugrīva, Rāma shooting his arrow through seven trees to prove his prowess to Sugrīva, the first fight between Vālī and Sugrīva with Rāma standing in a hesitating attitude (and behind him there is a cockatoo on a tree in the background), the second fight and death of Vālī, Sugrīva with a wreath of leaves round his waist, the wedding of Tārā and Sugrīva, the scene of Rāma, Sugrīva and others holding a consultation, the chief monkey warriors being presented to Rāma, Hanumat jumping over to Lankā and his discovering Sītā (a servant is seen with woolly hair in the background). It should be noted that the servants in all the scenes in which they appear have woolly hair. Negro slaves must already have been familiar figures in the Javanese courts. The concluding scenes are the burning of Lankā by Hanumat with his flaming tail (here the artist has with a fine sense of humour introduced into this scene of confusion the figure of an ascetic taking away treasures from a burning house), Hanumat reporting his exploits to Rāma, Rāma on the sea shore, bow in hand, and the sea god rising from the waters, the building of the bridge and fishes swallowing up the stones. This episode of the fish swallowing the stones is in the Malay *Hikāyat Seri Rāma*.

There are minor details where the Prambanan bas-reliefs differ from

THE RĀMĀYANA AND THE MAHĀBHARATA IN SOUTH EAST ASIA

the *Rāmāyana* of Vālmīki for example the introduction of a second *rākṣasī* in the Tātakā episode of a second *rākṣasa* in the combat with Virādha the punishment of the crow Sītā's giving a ring to Jatāyu and Jatāyu's handing it over to Lakṣmana Rāvana being carried by a flying demon the two heads of Kabandha the divergent version of the first meeting with Sugrīva Rāma desisting from shooting his arrow into the sea the fishes swallowing up the stones used for making the bridge etc It is curious as Dr Stutterheim points out that regarding these variations the reliefs instead of following the contemporary old Javanese *Kakāwin* seem to approach more closely the second (later) group of Javanese Rāma stories and the Malay version We may now leave Prambanan with the remark that nowhere else whether in India Cambodia or Siam are the exploits of Rāma carved in stone in such a detailed and at the same time so truly artistic a way

PANATARAN BAS RELIEFS

Four hundred years after the construction of Prambanan there rose in East Java the temple of Panataran known for its Rāma reliefs made in an Indonesian style far removed from the orthodox Indian style of Prambanan Among the points of difference it may be noted that Rāma and Kṛṣṇa reliefs are both found in Panataran in the same temple the only one shrine existing there Several dated inscriptions have been discovered in Panataran The last date corresponding to A.D. 1347 would bring us to the reign of the great queen of Majapahit Jayasīdhanī the mother of Hyam Wuruk Probably the temple which had been begun by her predecessors was finished during her reign Panataran was also known as Pāla in the Majapahit period In the Nagarkṛtagama Hyam Wuruk the most famous of the Javanese monarchs is mentioned as visiting Pāla several times to worship Śiva So it is a Śaiva temple and it is also the largest ancient building of East Java

Hanūmat's exploits in the *Lankākāṇḍa* are represented in the Panataran reliefs We may note among them Hanumat reaching Lankā Rāvana and two of his queens seated in his treasury (which looks like a three storeyed pagoda) Rāvana in the Asoka grove Sītā with Trjātā and Hanumat coming down from a tree to meet Sītā Then we have spirited battle scenes between Hanumat and *rākṣasas* trees uprooted detachments of *bhūtas* marching in martial array to meet Hanumat heaps of dead and dying *rākṣasas*, and so forth We are then introduced to Rāvana's court we see messengers kneeling before the king, a *rākṣasa* plucking out the hairs from his beard with pincers In the following scenes we find Hanumat breaking the arm of Rāvana's son Akṣa his taking a sea bath

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

after all the toil and trouble and his hurrying back to the fight in the garden of celestial trees. Indrajit then appears mounted on a horse (with *nāga* heads) with a snake arrow in his bow. Hanūmat is bound in the coils of the *nāga pāśa* and is led captive to Rāvana's presence. After that Hanūmat bursts the bonds and with his flaming tail sets the palace on fire. We next see women fleeing and Rāvana with his queen seeking refuge in his water palace. Hanumat then leaves Lankā after visiting Sītā once again. In the final scenes are represented the construction of the bridge, monkeys bearing elaborate standards and reconnoitring the battle field, the beginning of the great fight, Hanūmat killing a *rāksasa* with a *vajra*, and the death of Kumbhakarna. The human faces are done badly in the series but the monkeys and demons are quite artistic.

The story as depicted in the Panataran bas reliefs follows very closely the old Javanese version of the *Rāmāyana*, the *Kākhawin*. It is very strange as Dr. Stutterheim points out that the ninth century Prambanan bas reliefs should be best explained by the much later Javanese *Rāmāyanas* of the second group and the Malay version based on them while the fourteenth century Panataran scenes should agree closely with the earlier *Kākhawin* (of the first group) which follows Vālmīki pretty accurately. Is it because in the later Javanese versions some of the older (and cruder) Indian traditions have been preserved which do not find a place in the *Kākhawin* following the literary and polished text of Vālmīki? Some of these unorthodox traditions belong to the pre Vālmīki period which the great sage rejected as too crude for his own immortal version of the story.¹²

Finally the technique of the Panataran bas reliefs is pure Javanese or Indonesian as distinguished from the purely Indian style of Prambanan. Here too there is a revival of older indigenous traditions. The background in the Panataran pictures is full of magical symbols which must be survivals of very old Malay Polynesian superstitions. It is the art of Panataran which leads to the Wayang, the popular puppet shows of modern Java which still survives in the style of art found in the island of Bali.

THE MAHABHARATA

When the Hindus came to Java they brought their sacred texts along with them. Of these, the *Mahābhārata* soon became the most popular among the Javanese. Its eighteen Books were rapidly dramatized. Some of these renderings which were composed in prose during the reign of the great Erlangga in the eleventh century A.D. have been recently re-discovered and published by Dutch scholars. In the Malay literature these adapta-

¹² Cf. D. C. Sen *op cit*

THE RĀMAYANA AND THE MAHABHĀRATA IN SOUTH EAST ASIA

tions from the great epic are known as the *Hikāyat Pāndava lima*. Portions of the *Mahābhārata* were also rendered into old Javanese or Kawi poetry during the reign of Jayabaya of Kediri by his court poet Penooloh. This work is known as the *Bhārata Yuddha Brata Yuda* in modern Javanese. Persons and places referred to in the epic became so familiar to the Javanese people that in due course the episodes of the *Mahābhārata* were supposed to have been taken place in Java itself and Javanese princes claimed lineal descent from the Pāndava and Yādava heroes.

From the beginning however old Malay Polynesian myths mingled with the Indian traditions. And from A.D. 1500 to 1758 the period of Mohammedan conquest and devastating wars that followed the old Hindu associations receded into the background. About the middle of the eighteenth century there was a Javanese renaissance and during this time interest in the old times was revived and energetic attempts were made to recover the Hindu literature. But the Kawi could be read but imperfectly at the time consequently strange mistakes crept into the texts which were written then though they were based on the old Javanese texts which were still available in the eighteenth century. On these texts were based the Javanese puppet shows (Wayang) which have preserved the old Hindu traditions up to the present time. Lastly the *dalang* (the performer of the shadow plays) himself introduced changes as he was continuously adapting the old stories to contemporary environments in order to make his representations more popular.

The *dalang*, while performing the show generally looks to *lakons*, or short dramatic sketches to refresh his memory. He also improvises on the spur of the moment to suit the show to the taste of the audience. There are also some larger texts to help the *dalang*, besides these *lakons*. The *lakons*, or short dramas are divided by M. Kats into four groups: (1) Stories of gods and giants as well as the origin of heroes generally taken from the *Ādi-parvan* of the *Mahābhārata*. These stories are mingled with a considerable element of Malay Polynesian legends. (2) The Arjuna Sahana Bahu group. (3) The *lakons* based on the *Rāmāyana*. (4) The last and the most important group dealing with adventures of the Pāndavas and the Yādavas. About 150 *lakons* are based on the *Mahābhārata*. Eight of them, the Viṣṇu Krama, Bambang Kalunga, Palasara Rabi and the rest describe the story of the ancestors of the Pandavas.

In the *Mahābhārata*, the wanderings of the Pandavas begin after the *jatugrha* (lac house) adventure. Next Yudhisthira is crowned king at Indra prastha. After that comes the game of dice which is followed by further wanderings and then the Pāndavas live in disguise at the court of King

Virāta Hostilities commence at Kuruksetra with the reappearance of the Pāndavas in public

The Javanese *lakons* do not always follow the original According to their version a game of chess is played in the *jatugrha* itself and during the game the Pāndava brothers are given poisoned drinks Bhīma Brata Sena in Javanese alone retains his senses and removes his brothers from the burning house Then after long wanderings the brothers reach the country called Wirata When they make themselves known at last to King Matsapati of Wirata they receive as a present from their host the realm of Nagamarta (Indraprastha) Draupadī's *svayamvara* takes place at this period

Meanwhile Sujudana (Duryodhana) becomes very powerful at Nagastina (Hastinā) The Pāndavas are driven out of their capital by him They seek refuge at the court of King Matsapati of Wirata Even Kṛṣṇa has to abandon his capital Dvaravati Then follows the Brata Yuda or Bhārata Yuddha

Arjuna is the greatest favourite of the Javanese audience He plays the leading rôle in at least fifty *lakons* At the outset of his career however by a disreputable trick he gets rid of his rival Palgu Nadi who was also a brilliant pupil of Drona His wooing of Subhadrā and his combats with other aspirants to her hand are narrated in several *lakons* Numerous are his other adventures and love affairs His Javanese names are also numerous Permade Endralaya Parta Kusuma Chakra Nagara and so forth In some *lakons* Śikhandin is represented as one of the wives of Arjuna Two of his sons are married to two of the daughters of Kṛṣṇa On the other hand Arjuna's daughter Sugatavatī is given in marriage to Kṛṣṇa's son Sāmba These and other descendants of Kṛṣṇa and Arjuna are supposed to have founded some of the princely houses of Java Punta deva Yudhisthira Wrekodara or Brata Sena Dewi Arimbī and her son Gatotakacha Sujudana (Duryodhana—an incarnation of Daśamukha) are all familiar names in Muslim Java Indeed custom prescribes that such and such a *lakon* of the *Mahābhārata* should be played on such and such an occasion in the family

PART II

THE GITA LITERATURE

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

CHRONOLOGICAL STRATIFICATION OF THE MAHĀBHĀRATA

IT is admitted now on all hands that our present *Mahābhārata* of over 80 000 stanzas (excluding the supplementary *Harivamsa*) has grown from an original Jaya of Vyasa through the Bharata of Vaisampāyana into Sauti's Mahā Bhārata with its illustrative old world stories great and small (the *ākhyānas* and *upākhyānas*) and its ethico philosophical disquisitions. The two additions last mentioned extending as they do to more than twice the length of Vaisampāyana's Bhārata have naturally obscured the legitimate character of the *Mahābhārata* as chronicled history (*itihāsa*) and have rather brought to the fore its character as India's all embracing Dharma śāstra her Bible and Law book welded into one so much so that some scholars have gone to the length of denying any real historical background to the poem and have even essayed to interpret it as some sort of a seasonal myth (A. Ludwig) or a moral allegory couched in a literary form. This seems to be going too far. Be that as it may the epic in any case makes no secret of its own gradationed growth¹ although in a sort of a pietistic mood it seeks to attribute all these three forms or stages to the same eponymous author—Vyāsa—whose inspiration was believed to animate as an undercurrent even those portions that could not make room for Vyāsa's *ipsissima verba*. Contrary however to one's expectations in the matter there do not exist—at any rate there have not been so far adduced—any acceptable *objective* criteria nor even any cogent consistent and critical arguments of a more or less subjective nature that would enable us to separate and clearly demarcate the three hypothesized strata from beginning to end seeing that the handicrafts of the three putative authors of the epic repeatedly run into each other and are now well nigh inextricably intermixed. It is easy enough to say that a particular passage or a particular incident is a late addition but it is next to impossible to exactly delimit its extent and amputate it so as to leave no seams or vestiges of the operation behind—except in the case of those passages which the Critical Edition of the *Mahābhārata* sponsored by the Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute of Poona has succeeded on actual manuscript evidence in ejecting as provincial interpolations of some latter day Vyasaids. The

total extent of these proved interpolations in the published *parvans* of the epic already runs into a few thousand stanzas but it is not time yet to make any formal pronouncement in the matter

THE PROBLEMS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA

The problems of the *Bhagavad Gītā* like that of the *Mahābhārata* are equally complex. The *Bhagavad Gītā* is universally acclaimed as comprehending the quintessence of the *Mahābhārata* philosophy. This is evident even from a *prima facie* consideration of the outstanding climactic position—the very hour of the commencement of the fatal fratricidal war—that has been assigned for its promulgation. But in view of the declared three stage evolution of the *Mahābhārata* the question naturally arises to which of these three forms of the parent epic does the *Bhagavad Gītā* belong? Or are we in the alternative to assume that there existed an original form of the *Bhagavad Gītā* belonging to the *Jaya* another slightly elaborated form of it belonging to the *Bhārata* and that there is the current existing form for the present *Mahābhārata*? Now it seems fairly certain that there are parts of our present *Mahābhārata* that presuppose and are hence later than the current *Bhagavad Gītā* seeing that there are stanzas half stanzas and quarter stanzas from all parts of the poem found quoted almost verbatim everywhere in the epic.² There are likewise a few adaptations and abridgements of the Holy Song found in various parts of the epic which in the present sequence of the *parvans* come both before and after the *Bhagavad Gītā*.³ It seems to be also the case on the other hand that there are a few passages in the *Mahābhārata* which would seem to fit in better in a form of the epic wherein the *Bhagavad Gītā* had not assumed its present dominating position. To give just one instance, the *Kṛṣṇa pratijñā bhanga* episode occurs twice in the *Bhīṣmaparvan* once on the third day of the battle⁴ and once again on the ninth day.⁵ The two accounts are more or less similar. Now on a detailed comparison of the two passages from the point of view of vocabulary grammar metre and contents⁶ it has been found that the *earlier* portion of the third day's account is more primitive and original than the corresponding portion of the ninth day's account while the *later* portion of the third day's account is exaggerated and secondary when compared with the corresponding portion of the ninth day's account. This naturally

² Most of these are indicated in the Notes given below the *Bhagavad Gītā* text of the *Mbh* (Cr. Ed.)

See *Journal of Oriental Research* Madras xii pp 86 112. The *Bhagavad Gītā* occurs in *Bhīṣmaparvan* the sixth Book chapters 25 42 of the Bombay Ed. of the epic (= chapters 23 40 of the Critical Edition)

Mbh (Cr. Ed.) VI 55 34^a 66^b

Ibid VI 102 24 52^a

⁶ I have discussed the problem in the *ABORI* xxvi pp 106 119

THE BHAGAVAD GITA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER suggests the possibility of the earlier portion of the third day's account having been once followed by the concluding portion of the ninth day's account. What concerns us to note here is that the secondary (i.e. initial) portion of the ninth day's account⁷ contains an unmistakable reference to the *Bhagavad Gītā* teaching which is absent in the corresponding earlier and original version of the third day⁸—a circumstance which supports the inference that there was a stage in the development of the epic story in which Bhishma fell at the end of the third day's fight and in which there was no *Gītā* taught on the opening day or if there was some *Gītā* taught it must at any rate not have been our present poem of seven hundred stanzas.

THE HYPOTHESIS OF PROGRESSIVE ELABORATION

The question then is—since unlike the parent epic the *Bhagavad Gītā* nowhere refers to its own gradationed growth—are there adequate indications in the *Bhagavad Gītā* itself pointing to its composite nature? In this connection there are to begin with certain alleged inconsistencies and contradictory statements in the *Bhagavad Gītā* assembled by K. T. Telang,⁹ R. Garbe,¹⁰ R. Otto,¹¹ and others which are believed to point to a progressive elaboration of the original form of the poem of (700–172 =) 528 stanzas according to Garbe of 133 stanzas according to Otto and of a still smaller but unspecified number of stanzas according to Jacoby, Hopkins and others into an intermediate form (Otto believed that no less than twelve such intermediate forms can be detected!) before the work assumed its present more or less stabilized form¹² to which practically no additions have been since made.¹³ The very multiplicity and mutual

Mbh (Cr. Ed.) VI 102 34 37

Ibid VI 55 44 46

Introduction to S.B.E. VIII pp. 11 13

Die Bhagavad Gītā second Ed. 1921. For my criticism of Shree Gopal Basu Mallik Fellowship Lectures on Vedānta Philosophy (delivered in December 1925 under the auspices of the Calcutta University Part I Poona 1929) pp. 94 101.

See J. F. Turner's English Translation of Otto's German books (1934 35) on the subject. I have discussed Otto's original arguments in detail in the JUB V No. 6 pp. 63 133.

R. R. Bhagawat Shastri of Bombay pleaded for the recognition of six stages between the original form of 60 stanzas and the present form (see *Vaidhyananavistar* for 1906 No. 7 pp. 273 283) but the argument is mainly subjective and cannot stand detailed scrutiny. Prof. or Chaipentier's views are best summarized in his own words. He thinks that the present text of the *Bhagavad Gītā* mainly consists of three different parts: (i) Canto I and Canto II 1 11 and 31 38 belonging to the original text of the *Mahabharata*; (ii) Canto II 12 30 and 39 72 Canto III 1 to Canto XI 50 and Canto XVIII 74 78 constituting the earlier *Gītā*. Of this part the *Tristubh* verses in XI 15 50 may probably be the remnants of an old *Bhagavata* hymn; (iii) Canto XI 51 55 and Canto XII 1 to Canto XVIII 73 constitute the later *Gītā*. (See IA for 1930 LIX pp. 46 50 77 80 101 105 and 121 126.)

¹ The problem of the so called *Kashmir Version* of the *Bhagavad Gītā* with its 14 additional stanzas and four half stanzas I have discussed in the NIA II No. 4 pp. 211 251 and that of the *Fake Gondal Gītā* of 745 stanzas in the *Ganganath Jha Research Institute Journal* (Nov. 1943) pp. 21 31. Compare also the Introduction to the Critical Edition of the *Bhishmaparvan* pp. LXXXV CII regarding the Old Javanese version of the *Bhagavad Gītā*.

incompatibility of these searches or divings for the original *Bhagavad Gita* should teach us caution. The theories of course carry with them the questionable advantage of saving us from all bother of interpreting a given puzzling passage from the poem consistently with the context once we manage to label it as a later interpolation. Moreover this game of discovering older strata in the poem was found particularly welcome by those who balked in their original intention of proving that the *Bhagavad Gītā* had borrowed its theistic philosophy from the New Testament¹¹ endeavoured to find a sort of a secondary solace in the argument that the influence of the Bible must have made itself felt in the formulation of at least the second stage in the evolution of the *Bhagavad Gita*. And the fact that the various orthodox Vedānta commentators are able to make the self same text of the *Bhagavad Gītā* mean different and mutually inconsistent things was adduced to support the thesis that the *Bhagavad Gītā* in its present form can yield no self consistent philosophical teaching at all if we insist upon interpreting it as a unitary whole. Hopkins's oft quoted classical description of the *Bhagavad Gītā* as at present a Kṛṣṇaite version of an older Viṣṇuīte poem and this in turn at first an unsectarian work perhaps a late Upaniṣad¹ simply means that the different parts of the poem have different teachings to inculcate corresponding to the time of their genesis but that the poem as a whole has no one definite teaching to give. If so one has to ask in all soberness whether such an aimless hotchpotch of a poem could ever come to occupy in the epic itself and in the society which accepted the epic as its guide to conduct the dominant position that it is admitted on all hands to have occupied for at any rate the last twelve hundred years.

DOES THE BHAGAVAD GITA PRESENT A UNITARY TEACHING?

But how possibly our critic would urge can the *Bhagavad Gītā* such as it actually is be made to yield any unitary and self consistent teaching when we consider its manifold internal contradictions and inconsistencies? Let us therefore examine some of the outstanding illustrations and arguments that have been adduced in this connection.

(1) The impossibility of such a long poem being taught on the battle field just at the time when the two armies were about to commence fight (*pravr̥tte śāstrasampāte*) has been urged by most critics from Humboldt onwards. The more important point, however is to determine whether all the diverse arguments and elucidations introduced in the present poem

¹ The theory was started by Lorinser (1869) supported by Weber and Garbe and refuted by Telang (1875) and R. G. Bhandarkar (*IA III* 1874 pp. 14 ff.)
Religions of India p. 389

were absolutely necessary to convert Arjuna's *na yotsye*—I will not fight—into *karisyē vacanam tava*—I will do thy bidding. Scholars who have not cared to investigate the bearing of the various parts of the poem in its chain of concatenated arguments feel that the poem is far too much padded by extrinsic and scholastic matters. One of the most discerning of such scholars H. Jacobi held the view that the question raised by Arjuna in the first chapter was fully and adequately answered by the stanzas up to II 38 and that the arguments following which introduce *sāṃkhya yoga vyavasāya samādhī* and other technical terms and at which point every fresh and enthusiastic reader of the *Bhagavad Gītā* encounters his first set back definitely herald an interpolation¹⁶. What now is the argument urged from stanzas II 11 to II 38? (a) The Ātman cannot be injured and does not die the body perishes and can be renovated. (b) Assuming that the Ātman really dies (which however is not true¹⁷) that is an unavoidable circumstance. (c) The only *svadharma* of the Kṣatriya is to fight and conquer or himself perish on the battle field. (d) Consider pleasure and pain gain and loss victory and defeat all alike and get thee ready to fight thereby wilt thou incur no sin. That is all that Kṛṣṇa has to say. The argument could not have convinced one less endowed in intellect than Arjuna. Bhīṣma cannot be killed therefore (reversing Kant's *Du kannst so wille*) kill him! Should not the duty of man as man of the pupil and the grandson be more binding on the individual than the warrior's abstract code? Death howsoever understood might be inevitable but why should Arjuna's arrows accomplish it rather than old age disease or some other cause? Some of these issues were actually raised by Arjuna and it is difficult to imagine that the *Bhagavad Gītā* leaving aside the historicity of its teaching can be complete without a convincing reply to them.

(ii) Garbe regards stanzas III 9-18 as an interpolation from the Mīmāṃsā point of view made with the object of recommending ritualism and he adduces as one of the telling proofs of its lateness the evident contradiction between He has no duty—*tasya kāryam na vidyate*¹⁸ and Do your duty—*kāryam karma samācara*¹⁹. If *kārya* (duty) forsooth does not exist how is it to be accomplished? Oldenberg seems to have agreed with Garbe in this view. But it is forgotten that the injunction *kāryam karma samācara* is preceded by three very important words *tasmāt* (therefore) *asaktah* (without attachment) and *satatam* (always) which would be meaningless without the intervening discussion which Garbe wants us to reject as an interpolation. *Satatam* because rolling the wheel of sacrifice (*yajña*

See ZDMG LXXII (1918) p. 323 f.
¹⁶ *Ibid* III 17^a

B. G. II 30
¹⁷ *Ibid* III 19^b

cakra pravartana) is a constant continuous and inalienable duty *asaktah* for the reason given in III 19²⁰ and *tasmāt* because *kārya* performed as recommended in III 17²¹ has no binding force as *kārya* one does it of course but not as an obligation or imposition from without (*sa karotyeva—atha vā karotu nāma—kim tu tatra svakrtatva buddhir nāsti*) The *yajña cakra pravartana* passage far from being an interpolation is in fact one of the most important passages in the poem but few take the trouble to understand it properly In the familiar *cakra* (cyclic series) of ocean cloud rain rivers what the first member loses (as vapour) the last member has to reconstitute it (as water) and then only can the wheel remain in motion So too in the series *aksara*(=*sarvagatam* Brahma) Veda²¹ *Yajñakarma parjanya anna bhūta*, the last member (=human beings) shall have to restore what the first member has lost in the act of creation²² then only can the wheel remain in motion Nobody can hence be allowed to plead that he is an insignificant atom in the creation and that his help in continuing the wheel in motion can be dispensed with The leaky and broken jar or bucket in the water wheel must move with the wheel irrespective of the quantity of water it lifts up It is an organic part of the wheel and if it refuses co operation the wheel will simply stop The work is not of any one of the jars or buckets individually but of the whole process and what is essential is not the quantity of the water lifted but the going through the process taking along all the other jars (*loka samgraha*) in a spirit of duty faith and selfless service And *yajña* does not here stand merely for the ritual act *puruso vā yajñah* It is the failure to understand the real significance of the *Yajña cakra pravartana* doctrine that is responsible for this unfortunate attempt to drop the passage

(iii) We next pass on to consider some of the contradictions in the *Bhagavad Gītā* assembled by K T Telang and others particularly on the question of Freewill and Determinism Now it is evident that the main purpose of Kṛṣṇa's teaching to Arjuna is to advise him not to renounce activity but to fight as befits a Kṣatriya *Tasmad yudhyasva Bharata—* Therefore O descendant of Bharata fight—is a constantly recurring adjuration in the poem Arjuna for his own part does not doubt for a moment that he is a free agent free to fight or not to fight and quite in conformity with this belief are the concluding words of Kṛṣṇa *yathechhasi tathā kuru*²³

² Cf B G III 7 18

¹ The word used is *Brahma* which means not only Veda but also the Prakṛti both being creations of the *Aksara* (cf *Mundaka Up* 1 79) As the Veda is responsible for ritual acts so is the Prakṛti responsible for all human acts whatsoever and like the *yajña* every act of the individual has to be dedicated to the ultimate source of all *pravṛttis* (actions) in the universe (XVIII 46)

Cf B G V 29 IX 27 XVIII 46 56

Ibid XVIII 63

conceding him freedom of choice. But side by side with these we have statements like: Man even though possessed of knowledge ever acts conformably to his inner nature. Creatures follow out their inborn nature: what can coercion avail there? ²⁴ Or again: That false notion of self resting upon which thou art thinking: I will not fight: futile is that resolve of thine. Thy inborn nature will perforce compel thee. Constrained, O Son of Kuntī by thy own inborn urge to act, what thou through self-delusion dost not wish to do, even that thou wilt do in sheer helplessness. ²⁵ Man, it would thus appear, is a helpless tool in the hands of his *trigunātmaka prakṛti* (Nature composed of three *guṇa* constituents). Parallel to the above is Kṛṣṇa's statement ²⁶ that it is God that abides within the hearts of all and causes and controls their activity, while in the course of that Omniform Vision (*viśva-rūpa-darsana*) vouchsafed to Arjuna, Kṛṣṇa calls upon him to do what the Deity has already settled that he is to do. ²⁷ In the face of these and other similar declarations, one feels inclined to ask: Is man's vaunted freedom of choice then a mere mockery? If everything is predetermined by Prakṛti and willed by God, what justification remains for even God's declaring that a particular kind of person is dearest ²⁸ to Him, and that another sort of person is the basest of all, whom He hurls down into deepest degradation? ²⁹ And on the top of all this, Kṛṣṇa is ready to declare that even His own actions, upon which the salvation of the entire universe depends, He carries out not because He is aware of any inner compulsion, but merely with a view to setting an example to others.

There exists not for me to do, O Pṛthā's Son, anything at all in the three worlds that has to be done, nor anything to be obtained that has not been obtained, yet I continue to be in action. For were I—if ever—not to be sleeplessly at work, O Pṛthā's Son, men in every wise would follow in my track. These worlds would (then) sink into ruin if I were not to be at work. ³⁰ Elsewhere ³¹ we are told that man's present conduct is the resultant of all the latent and inherent tendencies acquired by him through earlier existences, so that in a newer existence he is furnished with a strong impetus to begin the game of life just where he had left it before, with the result that all his actions are practically predetermined for him by the way he had travelled his earlier courses, and as the world is conceived as a beginningless series of existences ³² there is not left to man even the paltry consolation of his having made once at least, at the very beginning of the aeons, an absolutely free choice which has inevitably determined the endless chain of his subsequent choices, if they be so designated. Perhaps the quintessence

²⁴ *Ibid.* III 33

²⁵ *Ibid.* XI 33

Ibid. III 22 24^{ab}

Ibid. XVIII 59 63

²⁶ *Ibid.* XII 20

Ibid. VI 43

Ibid. XVIII 61

Ibid. XVI 19

Ibid. IV 5 XV 3

of all contradictions on the topic is the following enigmatic declaration. He who sees in (apparent) action (real) no action and who in (apparent) no action (real) action he amongst men is the man of discernment he the man set in *yoga* he the doer of the entire action (as such) ¹³ How are all these contradictory statements to be unified and set forth as a consistent doctrine of human conduct? Let us try and find out

FREEWILL VERSUS DETERMINISM

To begin with it has to be remembered that the Sāmkhya metaphysics as endorsed by the *Bhagavad Gītā* holds by the view that all activity as such is due to the Prakṛti and its *guṇa* triad. The Puruṣa who by his very nature is incapable of action becomes tainted with activism of a sort in regard to certain acts *only if he views* those particular acts of the Prakṛti *with interest and yearning*. Compare. That the (various) acts which are being accomplished are in every wise accomplished by the Prakṛti who so perceives this and also perceives the self as non active he truly perceives ³⁴ Were the Puruṣa on the contrary *to view* any of the activities of the Prakṛti *with apathy and yearning* the Prakṛti would cease to function as far as this particular Puruṣa and those particular actions were concerned. In fact evincing interest or apathy for the otherwise inevitably predetermined chain of the Prakṛti's activities is the only so called freedom of the will that is left to the Puruṣa. We can avail ourselves in this connection of the familiar illustration of the drink addict who day in and day out makes and breaks solemn resolutions to give up the drink habit altogether. These pious resolutions of his do not normally materialize because as a result of his excessive and uncontrolled indulgence in the vice of drinking he is no longer able to hold before his mind's eye steadily and unswervingly the noble picture of himself as cured of that debasing habit and to resist sternly the inroads upon his attention of that other picture of the rapturous and self forgetting ecstasy into which he can pass by the simple act of lifting the glass to his lips. It becomes eventually then a question of attention—steady one pointed and unswerving—which is helped on by the associates a man keeps the literature that he imbibes, the habits and ideals that he has formed for himself in fact his entire social intellectual and moral *entourage*. The *cetana* or sentient soul according to the theory is powerless to act but it is his to bestow and to concentrate attention and to the extent that he exercises his choice in the matter he acquires the status of a morally responsible agent.

Ibid IV 18

Ibid XIII 29 compare also III 27 28

Now the Jīva or the individual soul—*kṣetrajñā* as he is designated¹—is declared to be only a tiny part (*amsa*) of the supreme Self (Paramātmān = Brahman = Kṛṣṇa). The Prakṛti that determines and conditions the activities of the Jīva is in the same context called the *kṣetra*²⁶ elsewhere it is called the *apara* or the lower Prakṛti in contrast with the Jīva who is said to be the *parā* Prakṛti and it is also named the Divine *māyā*²⁷. The relation of the Jīvātman to the lower Prakṛti and its *guṇa* triad as explained in the previous paragraph is exactly the relation between the Paramātmān and His *māyā*. He is only the *adhyakṣa* (overseer) watching the cosmic Prakṛti as it displays the wonderful phantasmagoria of creation²⁸ and normally not caring to interfere in the process. But when on specific occasions He does find interference necessary²⁹ He carries out the mission of the *avatāra* averring all the time. These acts however do not O Dharmajaya occasion any bondage for Me for I remain like one unconcerned and not attached to those acts³⁰. The Paramātmān has also in the second place an analogous relationship with the Jīvātman so that just as God does not as a rule think it necessary to interfere with the normal course of the Prakṛti and its cosmic activities. He does not likewise find it necessary to interfere with the normal acts of the individual souls which it is easily possible to do for Him who is functioning as the Divine presence dwelling within the hearts of them all³¹. For it is said. As having no beginning and no *guṇas* the highest Self is not liable to mutation (and so) although situate within the body O Son of Kuntī He does nothing and is affected by nothing³². Also compare. Neither the doer's status nor the acts (to be done) does the Lord create for the people nor also the joining of the fruit to the action it is Nature (*svabhāva*) however that operates (in the matter)³³. God's is the inner voice which moreover the individual soul may choose to disregard. It is also to be noted that this inner voice often expresses itself through the great Presences and Personalities of the day (the *vibhūti*s) and at rare intervals He might also descend as an *avatāra* for the salvation of mankind could we but have the trained eye and ear and intellect to see to hear and to understand Him aright. The Lord is however considerate and practical and so He leaves behind precepts in the form of the Śāstras which are quite capable of serving as an adequate guide to conduct man during the periods constituting the intervals between one *avatāra* (or one great *vibhūti*) and another³⁴ and which are normally

¹ *Ibid* XIII 12

² *Ibid* IX 10

³ Cf B G XIII 22 XV 14 15

Ibid V 14

Ibid XIII 56

Ibid IV 8

Cf B G XVI 24

Ibid VII 45 14

Ibid IX 9

B G XIII 31

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

designed to give effect to God's own ultimate purpose in this universe¹. If then a person were to follow the Śāstras listen to the teachings and life lessons of the great *viśhūti*s and above all reverentially recite ponder over and understand the doings of the *avatāra* in a mood of faith and devotion to that extent he is enabled—by the method of merging his own separate interest and existence into the Divine—to be of one essence with Him to see things from God's own point of view and so achieve his own salvation. For he will then have reached the conviction that the diverse happenings in this universe follow a divinely laid down course which is designed to accomplish the greatest ultimate good of humanity so that each has to play here below with knowledge and understanding his own pre-ordained part in the whole very much like the individual jar or bucket of the water wheel. There is of course a world of difference between a knowing and willing discharge of one's own function in a system of ends wherein the parts are realized as being in an organic and disinterested relationship with the whole and the disgruntled mechanical going through the process because you cannot well have it otherwise.

THE UNHINDERED PREROGATIVE OF THE SELF

One word of caution it is however necessary to utter. What has been suggested hitherto as the probable teaching of the *Bhagavad Gītā* on the problem of the freedom of the will should not be understood to preach a mere blind unquestioning conformity to the Śāstras of the day or to the command of some Prophet not a mere 'Get thee behind me'. With the intellect apparatus so generously placed at your disposal by the Prakṛti it ought clearly to be your duty to think for yourself furiously and in the dry light of reason uninfluenced by considerations of the *aham* and *mama* of the *me* and the *mine*. It is not impossible that it might then dawn upon you at specific periods in the history of mankind or specific moments in the life of the nation that time has become ripe for a change in the current Śāstras which might have strayed woefully away from the original intentions with which the Almighty Lord had fashioned them and further it might even be just possible that God might have chosen *you* as one of His instruments for the inauguration of the change therein as demanded by the altered times. It might then be your task to work as a sort of an advanced expeditionary force whose lot not impossibly might be to perish at the

¹ If the Śāstra *ev hypothesis* expresses the *avatāra*'s solution of the problems for which He came down on this earth (IV 8) we can legitimately assume that after the passing away of the *avatāra* conditions would not change so suddenly as to make the Śāstra introduced by the *avatāra* altogether inapplicable. This can happen only by slow degrees and by the time the difficulties engender a crisis there is sure to be another *avatāra* (or *viśhūti*) to modify the Śāstra where needed or altogether alter it.

THE BHAGAVAD GITA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

post in the interest of those who are to continue the fight Be that as it may to perceive to know to excogitate to decide and to devote all attention to it this can constitute the unhindered prerogative of the self thereby vindicating the dictum that Virtue is Knowledge and once these theoretical preliminaries of the act are achieved with that disinterested perfection which God declares that He maintains in all His acts⁴⁶ the Prakṛti is bound to place unreservedly at your disposal the practical forces that are to culminate in the actual act You have in other words to step out of your narrow individuality and to see things with the broad all embracing vision of the cosmic Self Thereafter the stanza⁴⁷ quoted earlier as the quintessence of all contradictions will be—*solvitur ambulando*⁴⁸—as clear to you as day light The problem of Freewill *versus* Determinism as adumbrated in the *Bhagavad Gītā* admits of a solution which gathers to a focus and completely harmonizes all the apparently conflicting statements that we meet within the poem Freedom in other words is—not self determination alone but —Self realization

ANOTHER VULNERABLE EVIDENCE OF THE COMPOSITE NATURE OF THE GITA

(iv) I next take up an alleged internal evidence brought to the fore by R. Otto to prove that certain sections of the *Bhagavad Gītā* are on its own evidence added to it by a later hand In argument (I) I cited the view of Jacoby that the doctrinal part of the *Bhagavad Gītā* really ended with stanza II 38 Starting from that I take up the argument of R. Otto who regards the *viśva rūpa darśana* in chapter eleven particularly the *ghora rūpa darsana* part of it as constituting the central and the most indispensable part of the teaching—a sort of Sermon on the Mount proclaimed in tones of thunder and listened to with trepidation and conviction Otto accordingly proposes after stanza II 37 to continue the original poem with chapter eleven only adding in between the first eight stanzas of chapter ten as they declare that Kṛṣṇa is himself the supreme Godhead for without such a declaration Arjuna's expressed desire to have the theophany or God vision in chapter eleven would remain unmotivated That between stanza II 37 and stanza XI 1 nothing else intervened in the original *Gītā* Otto tells us is proved by the summary of the headings which Arjuna enumerates in stanzas XI 1 2 as constituting all that Kṛṣṇa had taught him up to that point These two stanzas would enable and justify us to declare everything not actually mentioned in them as an interpolation on the authority of the *Bhagavad Gītā* itself

⁴⁶ B G III 22

Ibid IV 18

⁴⁸ This Latin phrase literally means it is solved by walking and implies that a problem is solved by actual performance The classical tradition alluded to by it is that Diogenes by rising and walking confuted Zeno who argued that all things are at rest—ed

Now what are the things actually mentioned in the two stanzas which Otto elevates to the position of a critical canon? Only three points (a) *Guhyam adhyātma samjñitam* (secret designated as belonging to Ātman) (b) *Bhūtanam bhavāpyayau* (the origin and dissolution of beings) (c) *Ayavām mahātmyam* (undecaying majesty) which according to Otto refer respectively to II 11 13 20 22 29 30 II 20 22 29 30 and X 18. Everything else that is found in the present *Gītā* must therefore be pronounced as an interpolation according to the *Gītā* itself. What then about the advice to follow the Kṣatṛya code of conduct⁴⁹ which Otto has accepted as part of the original *Gītā*? Secondly the teaching that is to be described as *guhyam adhyātma samjñitam* if *adhyātma* is to be the *samjñā* (designation) of it must contain the word *adhyātma* (or at any rate Ātman) at least once. We do not find it there at all but we do find them in portions like VIII 3 and IX 16 stanzas IX 12 even contain the word *guhyam*. The second item *bhūtānām bhavāpyayau* (which is said to have been taught *vistarasah*—at some length) is strangely enough made up of the last four stanzas already devoted to item (a). Such a description can more probably belong to IX 68, VIII 18 19 or VII 46. One is compelled therefore to conclude that the so called critical canon of Professor Otto lets him down lamentably. I am deliberately ignoring here certain unfavourable comments passed on the language and style of the *Bhagavad Gītā* as they have no bearing on the question of the composite nature of the poem.

(v) That the *Bhagavad Gītā* is confusing and inconsistent in its use of technical philosophical terms is however a charge commonly made which Deussen⁵⁰ sought to explain and account for by maintaining that the *Bhagavad Gītā* and the *Mahābhārata* being produced during a transitional period when philosophical terminology was in a formative stage present us an *Uebergangsphilosophie*⁵¹. This is not impossible. The fact however is that we do not possess a sufficiently detailed knowledge of the origins and the early history of the Sāṃkhya Yoga and the Bhakti schools of philosophy so that the assumptions that the Sāṃkhya for instance must have always been the atheistic dualism of Īśvarakṛṣṇa's *Kārikas* or that the Yoga is only the Classical Sāṃkhya with the Īśvara (God) superadded and that it had no independent metaphysical basis of its own must be held to be primarily responsible for this inconsistent use of technical terms that is laid at the door of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. And the confusion is perhaps worse confounded by the various *bhāṣyakaras* (commentators) bringing in the *idols* of their own *sampradāyas* (traditional doctrines and

B G II 31 37

Über philosophische Texte des Mahābhārata Einleitung

The German word *übergangs* signifies what is provisional or belonging to the transitional stage—ed

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTERUSAGES) to explain the ultimate teaching of the *Bhagavad Gītā* as for instance when Śaṅkarācārya interprets the Sāṃkhya to mean *ātmānātma viveka jñāna* (knowledge born of discrimination between Self and not self) culminating in the *naiskarmya* (exemption from acts and their consequence) from which there could not possibly result any straightway deduction in favour of even tempered activism (*samatva buddhi rūpa karma yoga*) which the *Gītā* is particularly anxious to reach in II 38 39. Moreover the fact that the *Bhagavad Gītā* should have laid deliberate emphasis on the eventual philosophical unity of the Sāṃkhya and the Yoga⁵² so that II 38^b—which as a legitimate deduction from the Yoga premises⁵³ could be justifiably included under Sāṃkhya teaching⁵⁴—should go to prove that what the *Bhagavad Gītā* is anxious to establish is the ultimate *samanvaya* or harmony between not only the Sāṃkhya and the Yoga but also between Mīmāṃsā (Ritualism) and Vedānta (Doctrine of salvation through Knowledge) as well as between Bhakti (= *vyakta upāsana*) and Jñāna (= *avyakta upasana*). All these are merely steps or stage in the process there being no three separate teachings (*jñāna karma* and *upāsana*) diversely taught in the poem but rather a judicious combination of these three methods.

THE ULTIMATE SAMANVAYA TAUGHT IN THE GĪTĀ

This last point as to whether according to the qualifications of the seekers the *Bhagavad Gita* lays down three parallel methods of reaching the *summum bonum* each of the three methods pursued by itself being just as capable as the other two of reaching the goal supposedly common to all alike or whether there is a difference and a gradation between the three goals reachable by *karma bhakti* and *jñāna* only one of them being the highest—if so which?—to which the other two are merely propaedeutic or whether finally the one and the ultimate goal taught by the poem is reachable by a judicious combination of all the three methods deserves to be expatiated upon at fuller length. The popular view maintains that the eighteen chapters of the *Bhagavad Gītā* are divisible into three *satkas* or hexads devoted respectively to *karma*⁵⁵ *bhakti*⁵⁶ and *jñāna*⁵⁷ and the advocates of this trichotomy or threefold division of the *Bhagavad Gītā* pertinently point to three distinctive summings up of the teaching which find a place in the concluding chapter of the poem (a) the Karma yoga summing up in XVIII 46 and particularly XVIII 56 57 (b) the Bhakti yoga summing up in XVIII 54^a 55^a along with XVIII 65

⁵² B G V 45
B G I VI

⁵³ Cf B G II 48
Ibid VII XII

⁵⁴ Cf B G II 39^a
Ibid XIII XVIII

and (c) the Jñāna yoga summing up in XVIII 51^b 54^b. If three such methods of reaching the goal are actually mentioned and recognized in the concluding part of the poem we have to carefully scrutinize the passages and ascertain if the three methods are parallel and independent alternatives or if any one (or two) of them serve merely as stepping stones to the remaining which alone is capable of leading the aspirant to the highest goal obtainable by humanity.

In this connection we have one set of interpreters who point to the wording of stanza XVIII 54 where a *Brahma bhūta* (a person who has realized the oneness of his essence with Brahman through Yogic practices) thereafter attains the *bhakti* of Śrī Kṛṣṇa implying thereby that *bhakti* comes after and so is a step higher than Brahman knowledge. And to such a deduction stanza XVIII 65 would lend an additional support. On the other hand on the strength of stanza XVIII 55 it is possible to argue that after attaining the *bhakti* (*tatah*) the person acquires real knowledge of Myself (*Mām tattvato jñātvā*) and thereafter becomes of one essence with That—i.e. Brahman (*viśate tad anantaram*)⁵⁸. This could mean that if the *Brahma bhūta* state is anterior to *bhakti* the ecstatic unity realized by the *bhakta* in the deepest stage of his devotion to the Lord reaches a further and higher culmination in the full fledged realization of the *Tat tvam asi* (thou art that) experience⁵⁹. And howsoever we might decide to adjudicate between the conflicting claims to superiority as between the *bhakti* or *vyakta upāsana* and Knowledge or *avyakta upāsana* we have to face the further disconcerting fact that the votaries of the method of *jñāna* and those of *bhakti* are enjoined finally in the passage following to practise Karma yoga by dedicating all actions (*sarva karmāṇi* not merely acts of devotional worship) to Lord Kṛṣṇa. So far as this passage is concerned therefore what the *Bhagavad Gītā* seems to be advocating is not a trichotomy of *jñāna*, *bhakti* and *karma* but rather their triune unity.

Nor do the actual facts of the case warrant the view that the three hexads of the poem treat exclusively of each one of the three methods of salvation. In the first hexad devoted to Karma yoga we have texts like III 28 IV 18 19 and IV 37 praising *jñāna* as well as texts like II 61 (*Matparah*) V 29 VI 15 (*Matsamsthām*) and VI 31 favouring *bhakti*. In the second hexad assigned to Bhakti yoga the *jñāna* aspect of it is emphasized in stanza VII 18 and implied in stanza VIII 22 while acts of worship described in IX 34 X 9 or XI 54 are so generalized that a

Cf B G XI 54 also

I hasten to point out that some interpreters take *tad anantaram* as one word meaning the same as *anantaram* and understand *Mām* as the object of *viśate* (cf XI 54)

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER
stage is bound to come when every act that one does in life can be viewed on ultimate analysis as a worship of the Lord *Yad yat karma karomi tat tad akhilam śambho tavāradhanam*—as the poet puts it. So too in the third hexad concerned traditionally with *jñāna* this *jñāna* is formally defined in stanzas XIII 10 11 as being one with *bhakti*⁶⁰ and one of the direct results of this *jñāna* when fully attained is to make us see real inaction in action⁶¹ and so take to such actions as come to us with the current (*pravāha patita karma*) in the spirit of a *yajña*⁶² and as a funding back into the totality of cosmic activities our own quota of actions in the spirit of the *yajña cal ra pravartana* motif already expatiated upon⁶³. Thus the conclusion of Lokamanya Tilak in the *Gīta rahasya* that the *Gīta* teaches *jñānāmūlaka bhakti pradhāna karma yoga*—a life of activism grounded upon knowledge and centralized around the adoration of the Lord⁶⁴ as the highest way to salvation seems to be fully vindicated. And if in advocating such a complex ideal there is in places a seeming admixture of the technical terms formulated by the various philosophical systems whose synthesis constitutes the burthen of the Lord's teaching we ought to look upon it as unavoidable and even justifiable.

UNITY OF GODHEAD AND THE UNIVERSALIZATION OF THE CONCEPT OF YAJÑA

Nay we might even go further and point out that for effecting a real and lasting *samanvaya* or coalescence between these three schools possessing originally independent history of their own a rubbing off of the angularities peculiar to each had to be a condition precedent. Thus the objects of *saguna* (personal) devotion can be manifold—each divinity requiring its own implements and methodology of worship which become pregnant with the possibility of sectarian animus and disunity. The *Bhagavad Gītā* endeavours to counteract the evil by advocating that under the diversity of form and apparel, the real object of devotional worship is the same Godhead one and without a second assuming diverse rôles and missions to please the fancy of the worshipper or meet the needs of the hour⁶⁵. In the next place the conception of *yajña* or the sacrificial ritual of the Vedic texts, has been so universalized⁶⁶ by the *Bhagavad Gītā* and the greed for gains and rewards once indissolubly linked with the old

⁶⁰ Cf. also B G XIV 26 27 XV 19

⁶¹ B G XIII 29 XIV 19

Ibid XVII 11 XVIII 5 6

Other texts from the *Bhagavad Gītā* that apparently seem to endorse the trichotomy I have elsewhere interpreted as actually endorsing the triune unity teaching. See *Karmarkar Comm Vol* (Poona 1948) pp 1 6

As indicated in B G IX 27 and XVIII 46

Cf B G VII 20 22 IX 23 25 etc

Cf B G IV 25 33

Vedism so effectively checked by the new direction to act without egoistic consciousness and without any expectation of fruit⁶ that the old doctrine of *yajña* became purged of the evils that had come in course of time to be associated with it such as priestly avarice and monopoly the exacting and senseless minutiae in the varied requirements of ritualistic procedure as well as the statutory regulations about inherent and acquired qualifications demanded from those that desired to perform specific *yajñas*. It is to be noted that in order to give effect to all this the importance of knowledge which enables one to fathom the basic foundations of things and discover their implicit unity amidst apparent diversity came predominantly to be emphasized⁶⁸ and it was pointedly made clear that this knowledge was not a mere matter of intellectual assent but one that had to penetrate much deeper and become explicit in each word that one utters each step that one takes each thought that one entertains⁶⁹. For such a thorough going interpenetration of knowledge the need of purity of food and conduct acquired through continuous meticulous discipline grounded upon exercises in meditation and concentration came to be rigorously prescribed.

It was also made clear that the attainment of true knowledge need not be regarded as *ipso facto* exempting the man of knowledge from the necessity of carrying on the day to day disciplinary and other activities which had built up the foundations of his knowledge. For besides the possible danger lurking in the adage *Balavan indriyagramo vidvāmsam api karsati*—the organs of sense overpower even the learned⁷⁰ there remains the necessity of devolving upon all leaders of thought not by precept alone, but by unabated practice in person to set an example to those that desire to accept their lead⁷¹. Hence for the wise no less than for the unwise the normal rule has to be to follow the established code of conduct⁷² which was designed to properly regulate the affairs of society and which can be presumed in the absence of telling evidence to the contrary to continue to carry on its original purpose. It has already been mentioned that necessity does arise once in a while to reform these *Śāstras* to suit altered times and circumstances. The *Bhagavad Gītā* however does not go out of its way to unduly emphasize this aspect of the case, but the fact that it felt the need of closing up the ranks and attempting a *samanvaya* between some of the established and allied schools of philosophy would itself go to prove that the rumblings from the distant offing of a change in the time

B G II 47 III 19 IV 19 20 V 12 XVII 11 XVIII 23 etc

Cf B G IV 38 XIII 16 XVIII 20

That in fact is the reason why in XIII 7 11 knowledge is described not from the point of view of its contents but from the effect that it produces upon the character of the individual

Manu II 215

* B G III 26

Ibid XVI 23 24

THE BHAGAVAD GITA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER
honoured social fabric had already reached the ears of the discerning
prophets of the day⁷³

THE ATTITUDE OF THE GITA TOWARDS THE FINAL ISSUE OF PHILOSOPHY

One other important problem which had evolved keen disputes in the pre *Citā* age and which the *Bhagavad Gītā* could not well have avoided related to the most ultimate issue of philosophy that had not only agitated the minds of the thinkers of the Upanisadic period but also had divided the latter day philosophy of India into systems of thought familiarly known as Absolute Monism (Advaita) Qualified Monism (Viśiṣṭādvaita) Dualism (Dvaita) Dualism cum Monism (Dvaitādvaita) and Pure Monism (Śuddhādvaita). In passages like II 72 VI 28 31 and IX 34 the *Bhagavad Gītā* speaks of the unity and identity of essence (the *sarvabhūtātmanabhūtātma* stage)⁷⁴ to be realized and perfected through Yogic discipline culminating in *samādhi*. But is the identity absolute and without any trace of the consciousness of difference as between the *sādhaka* (soul) and the *sādhyā* (Deity) between one *sādhaka* and another as well as between the world and the world creator? A further side issue of the question is the definition of the exact relation between the Deity that creates and the Deity's power (*śakti* or *māyā*) which is the *modus operandi* of the creation. In other words as Rāmānuja puts it is this so called *mayā* a subjective affection of the individual percipient colouring his own view of reality or is it something objective a something independent of the individual a potency of the Lord Himself? Another side issue would be the relation between Brahman the object of what is known as *avyakta upāsana* and the *avatāra* (Kṛṣṇa or Vāsudeva) the object of the *vyakta upāsana*.⁷⁵ All these are very crucial issues around which keen dispute has been raging between the several *bhāṣyakāras* (commentators) and between their latter day followers.

To be fair it has to be admitted that in the *Bhagavad Gītā* there are texts like V 19 XIV 2 or XV 7 that *prima facie* favour Rāmānuja's interpretation while at the same time there are other texts like IV 10 35 V 7 VI 28 31 or XIV 19 that *prima facie* go well with the Advaita interpretation. Otto holds that stanzas IX 48 endorse the Dvaita interpretation. Similarly there are still other texts like VII 7 12 IX 29 XI 54 and XVIII 55 that have no pronounced bias either way and have

There are passages in the *Mahabharata* like III 177 15 ff. in which the basic principles of the *caturvarṇya* foundations of society are called in question. The *Grauta* and the *Gṛhya* compendia that were being compiled contemporaneously seemed to meet the difficulty in their own way. Being thus assured perhaps that the question was already on the anvil it may be that the *Bhagavad Gita* did not think it necessary to go beyond showing that it was aware of the problem involved.

⁷³ B.G. V 7

Characteristically enough this question is posed by Arjuna just upon the conclusion of the *viśvarūpa darśana*.

accordingly been mercilessly pulled this way or that by clever and unscrupulous disputants. Under the circumstances there are three ways open to us. (1) To understand one set of texts in their obvious intention and force the others by the procedure too well known to the Mimāṃsist to support one's *parti pris*.⁷⁶ This is the procedure of the orthodox *bhāṣyākaras*. (2) To argue that the *Bhagavad Gītā* is a hasty and planless compilation of views inconsistent even in their technical terms and so constituting evidence of the composite nature of the poem. This view is dignified by the appellation critical or scholarly—it would certainly have been that if convincing objective evidence of the gradational growth of the poem could have been successfully adduced which Garbe and Otto have failed to do. (3) To suppose that the author of the philosophical synthesis that the *Bhagavad Gītā* is intended to inculcate allowed on certain ultimate and more or less speculative issues an initial option of views which could be resolved only on the evidence of actual supra-sensuous experience. And as texts recording such experiences were quotable on both sides the *Bhagavad Gītā* may have thought it sufficient to record the divergences especially as the practical corollaries deducible from them presented no irreconcilable opposition. For it was easy to see that the *bhakta* who gains in the culminating stage of the *prapatti* (surrender to God) the notion and the feeling of being in absolute union with the Deity—*Vāsudevah sarvam iti*—and the *Brahma bhūta sādṛhaka* who has realized the *Aham Brahmasmi* (I am Brahman) experience can both be correctly described as having reached a point of view from which they are enabled to see all things *sub specie aeternitatis* and so act, think and feel in the way in which Kṛṣṇa the *avatāra* describes himself as feeling, thinking and acting. That is the goal that the *Bhagavad Gītā* is most anxious that we should all endeavour to attain—not all at once of course, but by definite gradation wherein there is a steady and sustained progress onwards and no regress backwards. Hence from a strictly practical point of view it should be of no moment just how by what procedure and stages the result is achieved. The *Bhagavad Gītā* was accordingly very well advised indeed in leaving the niceties of the argument to be fought out amongst the learned coteries of the schoolmen, while laying its well-laid emphasis upon a life of Karma yoga and *lōka samgraha*—à la *mode de la divinité* (after the fashion of God).

CHIEF FEATURES AND ACHIEVEMENTS OF THE GITA

At the end of this somewhat rambling discourse on the *Bhagavad Gītā* wherein I have raised and discussed various problems and points of view

A French phrase denoting side taken, mind made up, or set purpose.—ed

THE BHAGAVAD GITA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

without perhaps being able owing to limitations of space to do adequate justice to all of them it would be useful to summarize in a couple of paragraphs what I regard as the distinguishing feature and noteworthy achievement of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. To begin with I must confess that in opposition to the view which is regarded as scholarly and critical I have after years of close study come more and more to feel and maintain that it would be doing gross injustice to the author of the poem to label it as an ill-assorted cabinet of opinions and precepts collected from the various systems of philosophy known in its day. The *Bhagavad Gītā* certainly draws upon diverse sources but what it accepts from them it tries to present as a co-ordinated and harmonious whole permitting possible options even on certain ultimate and abstract issues but firm and consistent in laying down and emphasizing certain practical deductions which alone could contribute to the welfare and stability of society. In saying this I do not of course wish to contest the possibility of the *Bhagavad Gītā* having had one or more earlier and shorter forms but at this distance of time it is well-nigh impossible to try and reach these original and intermediate forms. Professor J. Charpentier who like Garbe and Otto made in the *Indian Antiquary* for 1930 another noteworthy attempt in this direction is frank enough to confess that such propositions could not be proved. To different minds they would possess a greater or lesser degree of verisimilitude. In this respect therefore I am more disposed to agree with scholars like Dahlmann, Oltramare, Louis de la Vallée Poussin, Formichi and others in holding that the *Bhagavad Gītā* in its present form is not indeed a poem with a simple unitary teaching but a deliberate and well-formulated philosophical synthesis of views originally divergent and propounded by more or less independent schools of thought—a synthesis undertaken by a master thinker who felt the urge for it in order to meet certain social, philosophical and religious situations that had threatened to become explosive. With such hypothesis at any rate we are more likely to do real justice to the poem than by a critical search after the illusory strata supposed to be imbedded therein which has actually created more differences of views than those of the orthodox interpreters, commentators and *bhasyakāras* who have come in mostly for unsympathetic criticism.

SYNTHETIC PHILOSOPHIC COMPROMISE

That the *Bhagavad Gītā* had a great anxiety to bring about and ensure a genuine and honourable compromise between parties and opinions which in spite of their current differences had originally in them a soul of goodness the preservation and perpetuation of which was of the utmost consequence can be illustrated from several passages. Thus discerning

real danger to society in the craze for renunciation of worldly interests and devotion to abstract contemplation that had come upon the people in the train of the Upanisadic speculation and as a result of a reaction from the exaggerated emphasis placed upon mere forms and ceremonials in the ritual of the *yajña* but aware at the same time of the great service rendered by the *yajña* ideology in promoting the stability and all round progress in Aryandom the *Bhagavad Gītā* attempts⁷⁷ with a good deal of special pleading to reduce to the minimum differences between the Jñāna yoga of the Upanisads and the Karma yoga of the Mīmāṃsists that is to say between the Samkhya and the Yoga. So too, a powerful plea is put forth⁷⁸ to overcome the hatred and the jealousy between the various schools of sectarian worship or *upāsana* by pointing out that the ultimate goal to be reached by them is one and the same if one introduces an element of knowledge into their dogma. Similarly stanzas XII 3 ff urge that no real difference exists in the goal reachable by the method of salvation through Knowledge (*avyakta upāsana*) and the one to be reached by the method of devotion (*vyakta upāsana*). The doctrine of the *vibhūti*s and the *avatāras* on one hand and the extension of the conception of the *yajña* so as to include in its scope any even the commonest act performed in the spirit of dedication without egoistic consciousness and hankering after fruit on the other came as a consequence to be particularly emphasized and the way of salvation was naturally thrown open to all irrespective of birth sex or status⁷⁹. The *Bhagavad Gītā* goes still further. It calls upon the privileged few to be patient with the unprivileged and illiterate many and to lead them gradually on towards the common goal⁸⁰. It warns people that the stratification of ancient Indian society into various castes and stations was a matter of agreed convenience only normally representing one's heredity and aptitude which by persistent effort it might not be altogether impossible to improve if also alas! to debase. Be it *daivī* (divine) or be it *āsurī* (demoniac) man is the architect of his own *sampad* (fortune) and has no right to lay the blame for it at the door of the *deva* (diety) or the *daiva* (destiny)⁸¹.

B G III 34 V 26

Ibid IX 32

B G VII 21 22 IX 23 25

Ibid III 26

Bhagavad Gita XVI 5^a would seem to suggest that the *sampad* is a matter of birth unalterable by man. But what is described there is the knowledge appertaining to Omniscient Intelligence which is normally denied to parviscent individuals. Moreover the mark of each *sampad* is the possession of a number of qualities (XVI 14) which are always capable of a more or a less so that the possibility of an individual standing at the crossing of the ways either receding from the direction taken or advancing forwards towards the same is always a matter of choice for the individual understanding man's freedom in this respect in the sense and with the limitations explained earlier.

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER
UNDERSTANDING ALLEGIANCE TO THE CODES AND DHARMACĀRYAS

The means recommended by the *Gītā* to reach this attitude of the mind is a penetrating and first hand knowledge of things coupled with an all round and sympathetic understanding of the individuals and the society in the midst of which it may be one's lot to live and work. A potent solvent for most of our difficulties in life is the readiness to learn to look at things from the other person's point of view so as to avoid all avoidable conflict. *Sarvabhūtātmanabhūtātma*⁸² is the eventual ideal to be aimed at and this will save us from apathy and overarrogance and enable us to fathom the foundations of society and work with all our individual light and might to achieve *loka samgraha*. What is to be aimed at of course is not a blind and slavish conformity to the codes and the *dharmacāryas* of the day but an understanding allegiance to them. It may be that at times things appear to us to be unjust and iniquitous but in nine cases out of ten that is due to partial and defective knowledge although in the remaining case our diagnosis might be correct and we might have to cultivate knowledge from more to more in order to help setting things aright once more.

True knowledge must therefore be made the basis of all that we do in society and the mark of true knowledge we read is humility rather than arrogance, candour in lieu of hypocrisy, peace and purity instead of restlessness and passion and earnest self control taking the place of egoistic attachment to things of sense. The knowledge needed can be acquired normally through the gateways of sense but another and a surer way we learn is that of patient inward contemplation and Yogic concentration. The proper object of such contemplation has to be naturally what we have been taught to learn and honour as the highest Ideal. Such Ideals can conceivably be different and different also can be the methods of acquiring and realizing them. So long however as the worship (*upāsana*) is carried on in the proper mood we need not worry as to the actual object selected. For the *Bhagavad Gītā* assures us that as in the normal planning of an Aryan village all the roads proceed from and eventually lead back to the same Temple. This spirit of tolerance, this readiness to merge all differences in the interest and pursuit of a common ideal which animates the whole poem is quite noteworthy and it is on the strength of such a programme that the *Bhagavad Gītā* succeeded in inducing the orthodox Mīmāṃsist with his old world *yajña* as the be all and end all of existence, the post Upanisadic Sāṃkhya with its dominating passion for *sannyāsa* and the pre Pātañjala Yoga with its mystic discipline of self

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

culture tempered by a deistic cosmology and an intellectualistic ethics as well as the various Bhakti cults of the day with their special notions of the Deity and special modes and methods of worship in fact everybody who had anything at stake in the established order of society to sink their differences and join hands in a synthetic philosophic compromise No interpretation of the *Bhagavad Gītā* has any chance of doing real justice to the poem that misses this earnestness for honourable compromise that breathes in all its chapters

Now the question naturally arises what could have induced these different systems that would ordinarily exhibit a tendency to segregate and fly apart from one another to compose their differences close up their ranks and agree to gather together under one banner? This is usually not expected to happen except in the face of some common and threatening danger What could have been that danger threatening the post Upanisadic society? It could not have been Buddhism because the *Bhagavad Gītā* nowhere makes the faintest allusion to its doctrines as one would certainly expect in a poem of this nature¹³ It is however generally known that the couple of centuries that intervened between the end of the Upanisadic period and the beginning of the Buddhist period was a period of much radical free thinking an echo of which is discernible in the *Gītā* description of the *āsurī sampad* in chapter sixteen To these radical free thinkers no institution was sacred Their market place oratory carried away the common unthinking mass who did not perceive its fatal consequences on the stability of social institutions and traditions In the concluding chapter of the *rāja dharma* and the early chapters of the *āpad dharma* Yudhisthira asks Bhīsmas advice as to what the king should do when the whole kingdom has lost its moral stamina and is *dasyusād bhūta* (made a prey to robbers) so that a time of storm and stress like the one which I envisage as the background for the *Bhagavad Gītā* teaching need not have been an improbable contingency Such a time produces despondent ascetics unscrupulous sensualists fake spiritualists and cowardly criminals with the bulk of the populace tottering in their convictions neither able to give up the past nor able to live and enjoy it with untroubled conscience We may all be said to be living in such critical times even today trying our best to stem the tide of heretic and agnostic speculations and iconoclastic practices It was a time then as it is now when all had to combine to keep the *yajña cakra* on the move

¹³ The word *nirvāṇa* which occurs five times in the *Bhagavad Gītā* is a technical term of the pre-Buddhist Kāla philosophy Unmistakable allusions to Buddhism in other parts of the *Mahābhārata* have no probative force even for settling the time of the present form of the *Bhagavad Gītā* because the present *Bhagavad Gītā* is by no means the latest part of the present form of the epic

THE BHAGAVAD GITA A GENERAL REVIEW OF ITS HISTORY AND CHARACTER

So the *Bhagavad Gītā* most opportunely calls upon every earnest soul who still retains a modicum of regard for and trust in the traditions and institutions handed down to him from the past to gauge the situation well ahead and in complete faith that the Right must prevail in the end fight it out without hesitation or compunction—*Yudhyasva vigata jvarah*

THE TEACHINGS OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ

ESSENCE OF THE GĪTĀ RENUNCIATION

SRI Rāmākṛiṣṇa used to say that in order to know the essence of the *Gītā* one had only to utter the word *gītā* ten times. If the word is repeated in quick succession it sounds like *tagī tāgī tagī* which has the same meaning as *tyagī* i.e. a renouncer. Śrī Rāmākṛiṣṇa meant that the essential teaching of the *Gītā* was the renunciation of worldly objects and desires and devoting oneself to meditation on God and God alone. Swamī Vivekananda speaking on the *Gītā* on a certain occasion when the writer happened to be present said that advocacy of work without desire for its fruit and reconciliation of the different religions and philosophies of the times were its special features. Incidentally he also remarked that Śrī Rāmākṛiṣṇa in the present age went much further as regards the harmony of religions and philosophies. Reading out some verses from the beginning of the second chapter where Śrī Kṛṣṇa exhorts Arjuna to fight he grew eloquent in explaining the one which begins with 'Don't be a coward O Arjuna' and so on.¹ Swamī's emphasis was unmistakably on Karma yoga (the philosophy of work). Both these apparently contradictory views regarding work and worklessness are true. The central teaching of the *Bhagavad Gītā* is to attain worklessness (*naiskarmya*) through work.

Many commentators have tried to explain the *Bhagavad Gītā* from different points of view some emphasizing knowledge some devotion and others work. The general impression however that we get from reading the whole book is that its author tries to maintain a reconciliatory attitude towards all these different paths. Of course by quoting isolated passages from it one can maintain the view that only one of the paths—be it knowledge devotion or work—is superior to the others. But whoever studies the whole text with an unbiased mind cannot but admit the harmonizing attitude of its author. Religious sects in India for example the followers of Śāṅkara Rāmānuja or Caitanya advocated either knowledge or devotion as the means to liberation. The *Gītā* states different positions but never condemns one in favour of another though it may recommend one of the paths as easier or more suitable for a particular temperament. The teaching about *karma* (work) in the *Bhagavad Gītā* appears to be unique. Before the days of the *Gītā* people seem generally to have understood the

by the whole book and many physical disciplines such as the control of breath (*prāṇāyāma*) as well as living in a solitary place leading a perfectly continent life and retiring from the hurry and worry of work at least occasionally and under special circumstances are also recommended

VIEWS ON THE ORIGIN AND NATURE OF THE GITA

There is hardly any room for doubt that there was a great personality named Kṛṣṇa who was a Kṣatriya king and a householder though the details of his life remain mostly legendary. He lived in the world but was not of the world. Having attained a great spiritual height he attempted to preach *Brahma-jñāna* to the then existing society. He realized in his life the ancient truth of the *Rg Veda*⁹ that Existence is One which the sages call by various names and tried to reconcile contradictory philosophical and religious views of people.

In reading the *Gītā* one may naturally ask whether on the eve of the battle such an abstruse dialogue could take place between the two great heroes of the age and supposing it did what its exact form was. On this point even the ancient commentator Śrīdharasvāmīn has said in his introduction to the *Gītā* that Veda Vyāsa the great disciple of Kṛṣṇa recorded the dialogue as it took place but that he added some compositions of his own in order to make it a connected narrative. One may even think that the conversation actually took place in prose but was recorded in verse. These doubts have weighed so much with some people that they want to deny altogether the historical event of the battle and give it an allegorical or esoteric significance. The battle according to them is nothing more than the eternal struggle between man's good and evil tendencies. But if we read the whole *Mahabhārata* of which the *Gītā* is only an episode we shall come to a very different conclusion. We may still doubt the historicity of the Kuruksetra war we may consider all the *dramatis personae* as fictitious character. Yet we cannot but think that the author of the *Gītā* wanted to solve this problem whether action or rather resistance of evil was wrong under all circumstances and if not how to reconcile it with the highest philosophy of life namely non resistance of evil. And he has chosen this scene of battle in order to draw our attention pointedly to the evil inherent in work. There were schools of thought such as the Sāṃkhya and the Buddhist that believed in the giving up of all work or worldly pursuits as essential to perfection and they advocated the acceptance of this doctrine by all persons indiscriminately. The author of the *Gītā* entirely disagrees with this view. He admits with

other philosophers that the highest goal of life is *mukti* or blessedness or absolute cessation of misery. Know that to be the state called *yoga* in which there is a severance of the contact of pain ¹⁰. But he prescribes different methods of practice for persons differently situated.

The Pāṇḍavas have been wrongfully deprived of their rights and in the *Udyogaparvan* of the *Mahābhārata* we find the question discussed again and again from all angles—what should be the duty of a person in such circumstances—whether to fight or to flee. Finally Kṛṣṇa is sent as a messenger of peace to the court of Dhṛtarāṣṭra with a proposal of very little demand on the part of the Pāṇḍavas but he fails in his mission. The Pāṇḍavas are at last forced to a fight with their enemies and just on the eve of the battle Arjuna says to Kṛṣṇa that he will not fight because fighting is a sin. It is better, he says, to live peacefully by begging one's food like a *sannyāsin* than to fight one's enemies specially when they are relatives and friends and when Kṛṣṇa the great Incarnation of the Lord exhorts him to fight and condemns his attitude as unmanliness. Arjuna in a state of confusion wants to know what his exact duty at that moment is. He describes himself as bewildered. Should he fight or withdraw? And he asks repeatedly if the highest goal of life is perfect peace why is this heinous act (*ghora karma*) at the beginning? Why should he not at once begin the peaceful life? Throughout the discourse Kṛṣṇa never fails to point out the highest goal of life to Arjuna. With the mind concentrated by *yoga* and with an attitude of evenness towards all things he beholds the Self in all beings and all beings in the Self ¹¹. Alike in pleasure and pain established in the Self regarding a clod of earth a stone or gold alike the same to the loved and unloved steady the same to censure and praise to honour and disgrace and to friend and foe relinquishing all undertakings—such a person is said to have transcended the *gunas* ¹². But at the same time specially in the concluding discourse he constantly reminds Arjuna that his present duty is to fight. If through self-conceit you think that you will not fight vain is this resolve your very nature will constrain you ¹³. He however advises Arjuna to neutralize the binding effects of action by undertaking it unselfishly—dedicating its fruits to the Lord. He calls it the secret of work ¹⁴.

People generally hold two views regarding Karma yoga. They are either for work with its fruits or for total abstention from work. They think that when you take up work it is impossible for you to give up its

¹ B G VI 23

Ibid XIV 24 25

Ibid XVIII 59

The three constituents of Prakṛti or primal matter

¹ *Ibid* VI 29

Ibid II 50

fruits. So if you are to attain the highest state you must eschew work altogether and be a *sannyāsin* for none can work without some motive. Kṛṣṇa says again and again that it is absolutely useless to give up external actions until you have been able to give up desires also. So the proper course for a man to follow is according to him to take up the duties of life as they are and try to do them with the highest motive—the attainment of the Lord. And for this man has to pass through certain physical, mental and moral disciplines which are elaborated in the different *yogas*. And when he will attain the highest stage, all action will drop off by itself—the man who is devoted to the Self and is satisfied with Self and content in the Self alone has no duty.¹⁵

KṚṢṆA AND THE BUDDHA

The Hindu life is divided into four *āśramas*. The Hindus believe also that the human soul passes through many different bodies until it reaches perfection. So one may view that there is no hurry in the pursuit of perfection. But reformers like the great Buddha, who were mainly guided by their heart, wanted people to realize that perfection as soon as possible and so they tried to revolutionize society by their fervent appeal to take at once to the direct path of liberation and thus created a large sect of monks and nuns and we know the result. Kṛṣṇa had a wonderful intellect and heart combined and though we sometimes find his heart getting uppermost—as in that beautiful episode of his life the *Vṛndāvana līlā* where he mixes freely with men and women of a humble caste and draws them to the highest state by his unspeakable charm and love—in his maturer years we find his intellect predominant when he tries to lead the whole society to the highest goal by allowing everyone to do his own duties (*svadharma*) only asking him to give up the worldly motive behind them. Very few people can devote themselves to meditation alone, giving up work entirely. With those rare souls who can do so, Kṛṣṇa has no quarrel. But he has in his mind's eye the mass of people who cannot think of life as free from work and who, when they meet or hear about some rare souls that have devoted themselves exclusively to meditation, are tempted to follow them but unfortunately do not succeed in their attempt, may run the risk of falling into abject torpidity (*tamas*). He considers Arjuna to be a typical example of these. At the same time he knows the dangers of a life of mere action and so his exhortations include the teachings of highest meditation, knowledge and devotion.

THE TEACHINGS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA
HARMONY OF FAITHS AND PHILOSOPHIES

Kṛṣṇa was a preacher of the harmony of faiths. Though attempts have been made by commentators to fit all his teachings into particular systems according to their view points an impartial student will find hints of all the different schools of Vedānta such as the monistic (Advaita) quasi monistic (Viśiṣṭādvaita) and dualistic (Dvaita) in them. For example 'Know Me O descendant of Bharata to be the *Kṣetrajña* (self) in all *kṣetras* (bodies)' ¹⁶ on which the Advaitin Śaṅkara has written an elaborate commentary the passage 'He who sees Me in all things and sees all things in Me never becomes separated from Me nor do I become separate from him' ¹⁷ may well fit in with the Viśiṣṭādvaita philosophy of life and 'Relinquishing all duties (*dharma*s) take refuge in Me alone and I will liberate you from all sins grieve not' ¹⁸ is a dualistic passage pure and simple and it looks like the Christian doctrine of redemption through grace. As to philosophy Kṛṣṇa does not observe any rigid distinction between Vedānta and Sāṃkhya and encourages men to come to the goal by whatever path they like. 'Howsoever people may take refuge in Me I accept them through that path' ¹⁹ 'He has no quarrel even with the worship of the manes (*pitṛs*) or gods (*devas*) or with external ritualistic worship but even here he emphasizes concentration and devotion as essential. If anybody offers Me with devotion a leaf a flower a fruit or water that devout gift of the pure minded I accept' ²⁰

The doctrine of Divine Incarnation in the *Gītā* need not be interpreted in a narrow sense. It merely points to the Vedāntic doctrine of the divinity of man and acknowledges the possibility of divine manifestation whenever virtue subsides and irreligion prevails ²¹. Every object which turns our mind towards the highest truth is admitted as a special power (*vibhūti*) of the Lord and the last verse of the chapter of the *Gītā* in which these *vibhūti*s are enumerated ends significantly with the words 'Or what is the use of knowing all this diversity O Arjuna? (Know that) I exist supporting the whole world with a portion of Myself' ². This is elaborated in the eleventh chapter in Arjuna's vision of the Lord's all comprising universal form. Where then is the room for narrowness or exclusiveness for in the state of spiritual ecstasy does not one actually see with divine eyes that the whole universe is nothing but the Lord?

Reference has already been made in passing to Śrī Rāmakṛṣṇa's remarkable achievement in the realm of harmony. In his life we actually

Ibid XIII 2
¹⁶ *Ibid* XVIII 66
Ibid IX 26
Ibid X 42

Ibid VI 30
Ibid IV 11
Ibid IV 7

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

find him practising the doctrines and methods of every form of religion with which he came into contact including Mohammedanism and Christianity. He followed the external forms of those religions in their minutest detail for he used to say that a grain of rice without its husk could not develop into a plant. Yet in his interpretation of the *Gītā* he emphasized the aspect of renunciation. There is however no contradiction in this. Renunciation of the ego can well go hand in hand with intense activity for the sake of others. The example of Swami Vivekananda the monk *par excellence* and at the same time preacher of the worship of *nara nārāyaṇa* (God in the form of man) helps us to understand the utterance of Śrī Rāmakṛṣṇa in its proper light.

PERFECTION THROUGH RESIGNATION TO GOD

Resignation to the divine will (*saranāgati*) is another outstanding topic in the *Gītā*. Says Śrī Kṛṣṇa: Take refuge in Him with all your heart. O Bharata by His grace you will attain supreme peace and an eternal abode.²³ The *Gītā* tries to raise the aspirant (*sādhaka*) to such a height of spirituality that he ultimately finds himself only to be an instrument in the hands of the Lord. For the attainment of this state of resignation he is required to eliminate more and more of his egoism till he feels just as the Lord says: By Me alone have they already been slain, be merely an apparent cause. O Saṁvāsācin (= Arjuna).²⁴ The author of the *Gītā* seems to believe that it is possible to work without the feeling of egoism and attachment. Consider the verse: He who is free from the notion of egoism whose intellect is not affected (by good or evil) kills not though (outwardly) he may kill these people nor is he bound (by the action).²⁵ This is a great doctrine liable to much misinterpretation but the great teacher does not refrain from giving utterance to it only for that reason. The standards of judgment of the actions of an ordinary man and those of a superman are not the same. A question may here be pertinently asked, Whether any sort of action is possible when a person attains perfection through resignation? Different opinions seem to be held by different commentators. Some say that in that state no activities are possible while others hold the opposite view. The former group tries to explain away the scriptural assertion of the possibility of action by saying that such mention of activity is only by way of extolling the highest state. It is technically known as *arthavāda* (eulogy). The controversy can be set at rest only when one has actually risen to that state. The scriptures mention many distinguishing marks

²³ *Ibid* XVIII 62 See also XVIII 66 already quoted

Ibid XI 13

Ibid XVIII 17

of a perfect man. But these are not always dependable because sometimes even the worst persons seem to possess them. So it is said that the highest state is only known to one's own self (*sva samvedya*). But is there no chance of self-delusion? Yes, there is. Still in spite of the existence of such self-deluded individuals, one cannot help accepting the fact that there are actually such rare souls as have attained spiritual perfection. To be an instrument in the hands of the Lord, no doubt, implies some sort of dualism. Since the Lord is the only thing that exists, where is the occasion for one to be an instrument of another? This, however, can be reconciled if we take the expression in a figurative sense or as indicating merely a stage on the road to ultimate fulfilment.

The *Gītā* epitomizes the teachings of the Upanisads. In the Upanisads we may trace the growth of religious ideas from the lowest idea we find there, the conceptions of religion mounting higher and higher till at last we come to the highest. In the *Gītā*, on the other hand, we find the various results of religious researches combined, harmonized and presented in such a beautiful fashion that before it a person of whatever spiritual pursuit feels himself in divine presence as it were and beholds his aspirations and beliefs given expression to by a master mind. This is the reason why the *Gītā* is so popular with all sections of the Hindus as well as with those followers of other religions who have an acquaintance with Hindu religious literature.

THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ

THE *Bhagavad Gītā* contains the highest experience of the Hindu mind on the nature of man and his place in the universe. Of all the great texts of Hindu religious literature it is perhaps the most popular and at the same time the most profound. While it is thought to be simple enough to be studied and quoted by even a tiro in Hindu religion and philosophy it has also the merit of having been considered a fitting scripture by the great philosopher teachers of Mediaeval India like Śaṅkara Rāmānuja Madhva and Madhusūdana for writing erudite commentaries upon. Distinguished leaders and scholars of modern India like Tilak Gandhi and Aurobindo also have written their masterpieces on the *Gītā*. Its teachings begin as an attempt to solve the conflict¹ in the mind of Arjuna resulting from the urge to wage a sanguinary war as a matter of duty and the opposite feeling that war is an unmitigated evil. In resolving the conflict the divine teacher of the *Bhagavad Gītā* had to trace various ethical problems to their metaphysical roots and to expound important practical disciplines for curing the ills of the soul and therefore it has turned out to be a resume of the philosophies, ethical systems and schools of spiritual culture that existed at the time.

METAPHYSICS OF THE GITA

The world view presented by the *Bhagavad Gītā* is unmistakably one of unity of all with the supreme Deity² it is not however the pantheistic doctrine of equating the Deity with the universe it does not negate the distinction of all that exists with the Deity. This idea of a distinction without a basic difference between the Deity and the universe is maintained by a doctrine of manifestation according to which the Deity projects the universe out of Himself and reabsorbs it unto Himself and this doctrine of manifestation centres round the concept of Prakṛti which is both the power and the stuff of manifestation. The concept of Prakṛti originally formulated by the Sāṃkhya philosophy was modified to suit the theistic and devotional teachings of the *Gītā*. The *Gītā* resolved the absolute difference and opposition between Prakṛti and Puruṣa declared in the Sāṃkhya system by recognizing the two principles as the manifestation of the one Divine Nature (*daivī* Prakṛti) known also as *māyā* and *svabhava*.

In this synthetic view Purusa is described as the higher Nature (*parā Prakṛti*) and Prakṛti proper as the lower Nature (*aparā Prakṛti*) of the supreme Deity. As in the Sāṃkhya in the *Gītā* too—but qualified here as *aparā*—Prakṛti forms the substance of all physical evolution. It is constituted of three inseparable *gunas* or modes called *sattva*, *rajas* and *tamas*—which are to be treated both as substance and quality as it would appear from their physical and psychological effects. Of these *sattva* expresses itself as the force of equilibrium, *rajas* as that of activity and *tamas* as that of inertia on the physical level and on the mental they express themselves as knowledge, passion and indolence respectively.

All evolution takes place by the agitation of these three *gunas* of the homogeneous undifferentiated Prakṛti which as a result comes to have an eightfold division into the primordial elements of earth, water, fire, air, ether, mind, understanding and self-consciousness. From these elemental substances forms of matter, life and mind are produced and finally they dissolve into them. This cosmic manifestation is cyclic in its process and resembles the daily life of a person: during the waking hours of the day his private universe is in a state of manifestation but at night when he sleeps it dissolves into his mind and comes out again when he wakes up. So also during the daytime of Brahmā the creator which lasts for a thousand *yugas* (ages) the world that is commonly experienced by creatures is in a manifested state but during his night that will follow and last for an equally long time it will be dissolved again into Prakṛti only to manifest again when his day will begin. This alternation of creation and dissolution each lasting for enormous periods of time continues as the eternal cyclic process of Nature. But Nature is not an independent or self-sufficient entity in the *Gītā*; it is only the executive Power of the supreme Deity³. The lower Nature or the Prakṛti proper from which matter and its combinations proceed is in a state of constant change and in contrast with it there is the changeless individual spirit the Jīva called the higher Nature of the Deity⁴. These Jīvas correspond to the Purusas in the Sāṃkhya system of thought which holds that they are many; the *Gītā* too accepts the multiplicity of the Jīvas (individual spirits) but adds that they are all *amsas* (parts) of the Universal Spirit enmeshed as it were in the physical and mental limitations imposed by the lower Nature described above⁵. The individual spirit is caught in the weary round of birth and rebirth in this world and in higher and lower ones as determined by the residue of actions done in the previous births. From this process Indian Philosophy adduces the well-known law of Karma and the

theory of transmigration. In all the transmigratory embodiments of the Jīva it is the body and the mind that change for worse or attain higher refinement. The spirit remains unchanged revealing its glory the more the more the body and the mind become refined.⁶

Why and when this cyclic process of the world began and the Eternal Portion of the Lord—*mamaivāmsah sanātanaḥ*—became originally subjected to the law of Karma are not discussed in the *Gītā*. When the changing (*ksara*) and the unchanging (*aksara*) categories of existence are described as the lower and higher Nature of the Lord they are taken as ultimate and so requiring no further explanation. To the person who is obsessed with the question of his own origin the *Gītā* suggests⁷ that it is ignorance that makes the imperishable spirit think itself to be the perishable body and that it is the nature of ignorance to make one ignorant of one's origin. Therefore the man seeking emancipation is asked to dispel ignorance by proper spiritual culture⁸ and to be free from the bondage of Prakṛti.

The material principle designated as *aparā* Prakṛti is expounded as *ksara bhāva* and the soul principle as the unchanging aspect *aksara bhāva* of the supreme Being and in contrast with these the *Gītā* places the transcendent Purusottama aspect of the Supreme originating controlling and directing everything.⁹ A presentation of this type naturally raises the question of the relationship between these three categories—the *ksara*, the *aksara* and the Purusottama. In a doctrine of unity having all this is Vāsudeva as its watchword the *ksara* and the *aksara* have to be taken either as real or as apparent manifestation of the one supreme Purusottama. Though from the point of view of common logic these two positions are contradictory the synthetic teaching of the *Bhagavad Gītā* does not recognize it as such because to the all embracing Consciousness of the Purusottama the manifestation of Prakṛti is only apparent. His being is absolutely unaffected by it.¹⁰

There are statements in the *Gītā* which imply the doctrine of *vivarta*, or illusory transformation on the basis of which alone the absolute non-contact between the supreme Deity and the universe born of Him can be explained logically. But beyond implying it the *Gītā*, being essentially a book of devotion and conduct does not develop the doctrine perhaps on the ground that it has no practical significance to the ordinary man. For the Jīva struggling with the problems of life and seeking release from bondage transformation of Prakṛti is a fact of experience which it will be mere sophistry on his part to deny. So in its main teachings the *Gītā*

Ibid II 20 22
Ibid XV 16 19

⁷ *Ibid* V 15
Ibid IX 5 VII 12

Ibid XV 15

THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ

ignores the doctrine of illusory transformation or apparent manifestation and concentrates upon the unity of everything in the supreme Deity. The world of matter and life constituting His lower and higher nature respectively is revealed to the spiritual vision¹¹ granted to Arjuna as forming the divine body of Vāsudeva the Omnipotent.

THE PORTRAYAL OF THE SUPREME DEITY

One of the principal features of the *Bhagavad Gītā* is its vivid and impressive portrayal of the all-embracing Deity. He is the Universal Being enveloping all—His hands and feet everywhere. His head, eyes and mouths facing all directions and His ears turned to all sides. He seems to possess the faculties of all the senses and yet He is devoid of all senses. He is unattached and yet sustains all things. He is free from the *gunas* of Nature and yet enjoys them. He is within and without all beings. He has no movements and yet He moves. He is too subtle to be known. He is far away and yet He is near. He is undivided and yet He is as it were divided among beings. He is to be known as the sustainer of all creation. He is the mighty Spirit, the all-knowing and all-embracing intelligence, a speck of whose glory is manifested as the wonderful universe. From His limitless splendour is derived all that is grand, beautiful and strong. He is the vital force that sustains all life. At the end of a cycle all beings are dissolved in His Nature and at the beginning of the next He generates them again. Controlling Nature which is His own, He sends forth again and again this multitude of beings helplessly bound by the *gunas* (constituents) of Nature. He is also Time, the Destroyer of everything. Like the water of the river rushing towards the sea, like moths flitting into the fire, the whole universe is hastening towards Him to meet its sure and certain doom. The Light of all lights, He is above all darkness. The brilliance of the sun, the moon and the fire is His. He is the knowing principle within all beings. He is seated in the hearts of creatures and from Him are memory and knowledge and their loss as well.

Though unborn, eternal and the Lord of all beings, the God of righteousness embodies Himself through His mysterious power whenever there is decline of righteousness and outbreak of unrighteousness in order that He may protect the good, destroy the evil-doers and establish the rule of righteousness. From age to age He incarnates Himself for the good of mankind and those who really understand with faith and devotion His births and achievements attain spiritual illumination and release. Though His Nature creates bondage and He as Time destroys all, yet He is also related to the human soul by the bonds of love and pity. He is the

¹¹ *Ibid.* XI 18

father of the worlds—of all that move and all that do not move. The greatest of teachers and the supreme object of worship, there is none equal to Him. Yet He bears with those who seek refuge in Him, as a father does with a son, a friend with a friend, and a lover with the beloved. He is the father, the mother, the supporter, the grandsire, the refuge, and the friend of the universe. All beings are the same to Him, and to none is He averse or partial. But those who worship Him with devotion are in Him, and He is in them. It is evident from the above description that the picturesque and forceful phraseology of the *Gītā* gives a new content to the hackneyed concept of theology.

There are two types of beings in the universe: the *deva* (divine) and *āśura* (diabolic). Those belonging to the former are endowed with knowledge, devotion, purity, self-control, humility, compassion, and non-covetousness, and they gravitate towards Him; those belonging to the latter type devote themselves solely to the pursuit of pleasure, power, and self-aggrandizement, and become cruel and unrighteous, and as a consequence they lose Him and degrade themselves to the lowest state. But even they are not beyond the range of His grace, for however sinful a man might be, if he becomes repentant and takes refuge in Him, His grace descends on him, and he is quickly transformed into a righteous man. True devotion and purity of heart alone will please Him, and if a man endowed with these traits piously offers Him even a leaf, a flower, a fruit, or some water, He accepts them. He is the recipient of all sacrifices and austerities, and the Lord of all the worlds and friend of all creatures. Devotees who have understood that He is the origin of all, worship Him with all their heart. They find rest in Him and become delighted and satisfied solely by His thought. On them He bestows that dispassionate understanding which enables them to reach Him. Out of compassion for them, He dwells in their hearts and dispels the darkness born of ignorance by the shining lamp of wisdom. He saves them very soon from the ocean of mortal life, and He safeguards all their interests here and hereafter.

The supreme Deity of the *Bhagavad Gītā* is thus God of righteousness and love. But here the recognition of personality in the Deity is not allowed to degrade Him into a person—a jealous and narrow tribal God. He is known and worshipped under many names and many forms. Howsoever men approach Me, even so do I accept them, says the God of the *Bhagavad Gītā*, for whatever path they may choose is Mine in all respects.¹² Even those who worship gods other than the Universal Being are not condemned, though the limitations of their worship are clearly pointed out.¹³

THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ

RELEASE ACCORDING TO THE GĪTĀ

The metaphysics and theology of the *Bhagavad Gītā* do not form an end. They are linked to life and they give the central truth by the realization of which alone the highest human goal¹⁴ is gained. Holding that the discharge of one's duty is the highest law of life the *Gītā* exhorts the Kṣatriya warrior with the words: If thou art slain in war thou wilt obtain heaven; if victorious thou wilt enjoy the earth. Such a doctrine cannot support a weak cowardly recoiling from sufferings. It must, however be remembered that the *Gītā* condemns excessive attachment to power and the pleasures of life¹⁵ as they destroy the spiritual tendencies in man. The *Gītā* condemns the *āsurī* (diabolic) tendency in no uncertain terms. Life is to be loved not for the pleasures it gives but for the opportunities it offers for man's higher evolution and the summit of this evolution is reached when the *Jīva* is freed from his bondage to the senses and the body, and finds peace born of union with the supreme Deity. The aim of life according to the *Gītā* is the attainment of *Brāhmī sthiti* (union with Brahman)—a state in which man is released from the slavery of the senses becomes absolutely fearless perfectly detached full of bliss and love for all beings and an instrument fit for the good of all. This state is attained only by a complete change in outlook and temperament brought about by right knowledge right action and right concentration. *Mokṣa* (liberation) is essentially this state of peace and cessation from birth and death is only its concomitant. In the view of the *Bhagavad Gītā* happiness which all men seek is gained not through the enjoyment of the senses but through their control¹⁶ and it is not worthwhile to hanker after pleasures of the world because they are impermanent¹⁷ and devoid of the chief prerequisite of happiness namely peace¹⁸. *Mokṣa* on the other hand is eternal gives peace in this life and puts an end to rebirth¹⁹. Being essentially the art of living in peace it is an attainment of this world its eschatological implications being only its necessary accompaniments²⁰.

The man who has attained *mokṣa* in this very life and is established in peace is described²¹ in the *Gītā* by various epithets: *sthitaprajña* (a man of steady intelligence) *trigunātīta* (a man who has overcome the three *gunas*) a *bhakta* (a lover of God) a *jñānin* (an enlightened person) or a *yogin* (one united with God). The *jīvanmukta* (liberated in life) possesses sense control non attachment equality of vision God consciousness and supreme peace (*parā śāntiḥ*) here and an everlasting abode hereafter (*sthānam śāśvatam*). This is the *summum bonum* of life and it results

Ibid VII 29 IX 33
Ibid IX 33
Ibid V 19 23

¹ *Ibid* II 44
² *Ibid* II 66
Ibid II 55 72 XIV 20 26 XII 13 20 etc

Ibid II 62 66
¹ *Ibid* VI 15

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

from the realization of the true nature of man and the universe described earlier. The ethical and psychological teachings of the *Gītā* are only aids to this realization.

BONDAGE ACCORDING TO THE GITA

The *Gītā* makes it clear that *ajñāna* (ignorance) is the root cause of man's sufferings²². Deluded by ignorance, man forgets he is the Ātman (spirit) and thinks himself to be none other than the material vehicle of Prakṛti in which he is embodied as a transmigrating soul, and as a result he is bound by the *gunas*²³. For out of the *gunas* of Nature the *ksetra*²⁴ or the psycho-physical organization that we call personality is produced. They form the medium through which ignorance operates in the moral life of man, and ignorance expressed in moral life is called sin. To the question: What impels a man to commit sin in spite of himself, driven as it were by force?²⁵ The answer is given in an elaborate analysis of moral degeneracy. There is a detailed description²⁶ of the diabolic type in whom the sinful tendency predominates and kills the moral sense altogether. If the metaphysical and moral consequences of ignorance are disastrous, the spiritual effect of it is no less so. The sense of egoity and the pull of his sinful nature engender in the Jīva a propensity to appropriate for himself what really belongs to the Almighty. But really the universe is only the form of the *supreme* Lord, and the spiritual and the material principles of the universe are only His higher and lower Nature. Ignorance hides this truth from the Jīva, and so he becomes utterly unmindful of the Divine and considers the ego as all in all; he forgets that he is a part of the Whole, and that all that he wrongfully calls his own, including his physical and mental energies, really belong to the supreme Being who is the Whole²⁷. Man is only like a cell in the body Divine; the cell may have a life, but that life is only an expression of the life of the whole, and if the cell claims itself to be the whole body, it is committing a grave error. Similarly, if the individual being feels that the actions of his body and mind and their results he owes to himself, it causes disharmony between himself and the Whole, because he as a part cannot appropriate to himself what belongs to the Whole. This disharmony is the source of desire and anger, and the consequent restlessness which can cease only when the ego is merged in the Divine. But man lives satisfied with his life of ignorance, taking its excitements for happiness, until some severe shock to his physical or moral life makes him perceive its limitation and turn him towards the Divine²⁸.

Ibid V 15

Ibid III 36-40

Ibid VII 16 XVI 1-20 XIV 17 18

²² *Ibid* XIV 6-13

Ibid XVI

Ibid XIII 5-6 III 42

²⁷ *Ibid* III 27

THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ

THE IDEAL OF YOGA IN THE GĪTĀ

Two distinct types of spiritual aspirants are mentioned in the *Gītā*—the *sāṃkhya* and the *yogin*, representing roughly the philosophical and the devotional type of aspirants. An aspirant who belongs to the former type is a votary of the Absolute²⁹ he relies mainly on self effort and his discipline consists in the control of the senses abstract intellectual analysis and meditation one belonging to the later type accepts and is attached to the Divine Personality he practises loving devotion to Him serves Him by doing work in a spirit of dedication and mainly depends on Divine grace though he does not relax in self effort. While accepting the distinction between these two types the *Gītā* maintains that their ultimate aim is identical³⁰ But it warns spiritual aspirants about the greater difficulty that is to be encountered by those whose minds are set on the Unmanifest Absolute the reason being that the goal can be reached only with very great difficulty by persons attached to the body³¹ and they are also reminded that without the *yoga* of training in selfless action the *Sāṃkhya* ideal of renunciation is hard to attain³²

The main teachings of the *Gītā* therefore relate to that *yoga* which is a harmonious combination of devotion action concentration and knowledge. Leaving aside the pure *sāṃkhya* type of aspirants as exceptional the *Gītā* emphatically asserts the necessity³³ of proper work in a scheme of harmonious spiritual growth.

Work has different motives and is of different kinds animals and slaves work out of external compulsion ordinary men work for profit work in these instances does not serve a spiritual purpose. For spiritualizing work the *Gītā* therefore propounds the sacrificial conception of it *yajñārtham karma*³⁴ Sacrifice according to the *Gītā* may be interpreted as the law of all higher life and developments the underlying principle of such sacrifice is the surrender of one's precious possessions and achievements for the service of God. That is why the *Gītā* mentions sacrifice of wealth of austerities of sense control of knowledge and of work³⁵ Of these work that is done as a sacrifice is called also *niskāma karma* it is the special theme of the *Gītā* and the distinctive feature of the *yoga*³⁶ it teaches. If an action has to conform to the *Gītā* standard it has to be desireless dispassionate and dedicated to the Divine. Desirelessness here means that the action is not motivated by selfish gain. An action can be dispassionate only if it is not preceded or succeeded by disturbances of passions like greed hatred jealousy and the rest. Complete self mastery

Ibid XII 3 5
Ibid V 6
Ibid IV 28

Ibid XII 4
Ibid III 4 16
⁶ *Ibid* II 47 III 19 20 25 VI 1

Ibid XII 5
Ibid III 9

is necessary for this and this is possible only to the extent that a man understands the distinction between Purusa and Prakṛti¹⁷ and recognizes all action as belonging to Prakṛti

While this perception and the consequent freedom from egoistic reactions come only at a very high level of striving a relative control over the subtle workings of desire is absolutely necessary for practising the *Gītā* ideal of work. The term *sankalpa* in the *Gītā* implies the sources of desires that lies in the subtle fancies about future plans and brooding over their results. This rudiments of desire has to be eliminated¹⁸ through the gradual transformation of the aspirant's whole outlook by assimilating thoroughly the philosophical doctrines of the *Gītā* and by reeducating his subconscious mind by the practice of reflection and concentration. In other words dispassionateness in the midst of action can be attained only through the practice of the disciplines of knowledge and concentration. The material and mental aspects of Nature being the body of the Deity all actions even those done by Jīvas with the sense of individual agency are really done by Him. Individuals are only His tools to work out His will. The enlightened man who is not blinded by ignorance experiences this truth and he feels that there is no place for any egoistic impulse in his view of things. For the aspirant who is yet in ignorance the ego and the freedom of will are however facts of experience which it will be vain to ignore. The sense of free will especially is a source of moral protection for him in his spiritual infancy. He cannot therefore deny it outright but he should transform it by performing all his duties as an offering to the supreme Lord. Recognizing that all his powers of action come from Him he offers up their fruits to Him and never feels vain over his deeds. Performance of action in such a spirit is according to the *Gītā*¹⁹ a purely devotional act and constitutes the highest form of sacrifice. It should thus be seen that the *Gītā* ideal of *niskāma karma* is essentially a spiritual ideal which presupposes the simultaneous practice of the other disciplines the culture of the will the intellect and the emotions which it calls Abhyāsa yoga Jñāna yoga and Bhakti yoga. In their final development though all these *yogas* merge in the early stages each has its distinctive value.

THE THREE YOGAS

A brief reference to these three disciplines is in place here. Abhyāsa yoga⁴⁰ is the act of subjective concentration. While social life is the field of dedicated action solitude is the sphere for engaging oneself in Abhyāsa

Ibid III 27 V 8 9¹
Ibid VI 10 28

Ibid VI 2

¹ *Ibid* XII 12 IX 24 27

THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA

yoga The attainment of the final end of this *yoga* is not often possible in the span of one life After considerable sincere effort despairing of success the mind of the *yogin* may wander away from the path of *yoga* No sincere effort is however lost because the momentum of past striving takes the *yogin* nearer the goal The practice of concentration enjoined on the *yogin* has incidental value in so far as it is a great help in following the *Gītā* ideal of work It is only the daily practice of it that can steady and deepen the devotional attitude of the mind which engenders in the spiritual aspirant detachment and the sacrificial sense without which the *Gītā* ideal of action cannot be practised

Jñāna yoga the path of knowledge advocates the method of discriminating between the real and the unreal refusing to accept anything other than the one Reality *Jñāna* in the *Gītā* does not stop with the intellectual understanding of philosophical problems it is illumination accompanying the attainment of God ⁴¹ It is particularly noteworthy that the term *jñāna* is used in the *Gītā* to indicate the practices and qualities that are helpful towards the attainment of the goal ⁴² A less elaborate but more precise description of the means for the attainment of *jñāna* is given in an earlier chapter ⁴³ where the qualities of *śraddhā* (fervent faith) and sense control are stressed *Śraddha* denotes a burning faith combined with reverence humility and profound sincerity of purpose One who has this trait will not rest satisfied until his ideals have been realized To begin with it may be based on partial understanding only but it is sustained by the certainty of conviction and genuine hope This may look like blind acceptance but the person concerned justifies it on the basis of his trust in the scriptures and teachers which occupies the central place in his faith But really a person's *śraddhā* is determined by his character or rather by the kinship between his character ⁴⁴ and the nature of the object of his faith Those who are endowed with a materialistic and hedonistic outlook (*āsurī sampad*) feel an antipathy to things spiritual while those who possess a godly nature (*daivī sampad*) feel a kinship with them It is this kinship and the consequent urge from within that generate the required degree of sincerity of purpose in the man who is endowed with *śraddhā* and makes him a power in the sphere of his activity ⁴⁵ The *Gītā* therefore maintains that an aspirant after divine wisdom must have *śraddhā* in his spiritual teacher ⁴⁶ and in the scriptures that give him an intellectual idea of the goal he seeks It is the knowledge gained through faith that becomes knowledge by experience when *jñāna* dawns on an aspirant

Ibid IV 3 35 38
Ibid XVII 3

Ibid XIII 7 11
Ibid XVII 3

Ibid IV 39
Ibid IV 34

One other important virtue that all spiritual aspirants should cultivate is the control of the senses. The senses are the openings through which our desires draw their food and as such it is only through the control of the senses that one can prevent sense contacts from stimulating the desires which have been described in the *Gītā* as man's real enemies and the gateway leading him to hell. It is pointed out that a mind which runs after the roving senses carries away the discrimination of man as the wind carries away a boat from its course. The stages by which this process of moral degradation takes place is analysed step by step and the method for its prevention is clearly laid down.⁴⁷ It is impossible to control the senses after they have been allowed to stir a person's instinctive energies powerfully and created an infatuation in his mind. An attempt to control the senses at that stage would be a repression in modern psychological parlance and the *Gītā* discourages it.⁴⁸ Healthy control is however different from repression the nature of which is thus described. Attachment and aversion of the senses for their respective objects are natural let none come under the sway of these two they are his foes.⁴⁹ To safeguard oneself against coming under their sway one has to be vigilant over one's senses mind and understanding for depending on these desires delude the aspirant⁵⁰ and therefore first the senses are to be guarded. The process by which one should prevent the senses being dominated by their respective objects is indicated by means of the tortoise analogy.¹ When one has gained mastery over oneself by this process of withdrawal objects cannot stir the instincts and cloud the understanding. The *Gītā* brings out this truth vividly with the help of the ocean analogy.²

It is possible only for the adept to maintain unperturbed poise of mind like the ocean which is constant in spite of the perpetual supply of water by many rivers. For the beginner however the hedge of protection lies in avoiding exciting contacts with the objects of the senses. Only he should understand that by avoidance he has not mastered his senses but just taken the first step towards it such avoidance must be looked upon as a protecting enclosure for the infant plant of his spiritual life. Total sublimation alone can wipe out all the subtle tendencies and effect a permanent transformation of his nature.⁵¹ So if sense control is a means to *jñāna* it is only with the dawn of *jñāna* that perfect self control is gained. This mutual dependence indicates that practice of self control and pursuit of knowledge must go side by side.

* *Ibid* II 61 62
Ibid III 40
Ibid II 59

Ibid III 33
Ibid II 58

* *Ibid* III 34
Ibid II 70

THE RELIGION OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA

THE BHAKTI YOGA

It has been shown that in the *Gītā* action practice of concentration and knowledge are but different phases of the one *yoga* which it inculcates and that they do not form water tight compartments. The dominating factor which effects the unity of these diverse strands of the inner life is the experience of whole hearted devotion to the supreme Lord which is taught in the beginning in the middle and in the end of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. The special quality of the *Gītā* teachings on the other *yogas* is derived from their blend with its teachings on devotion to the supreme Deity. Devotion in the *Gītā* is the sentiment of love towards God born of an understanding of His Nature and the Jiva's true relationship with Him. It expresses itself as the surrender of the devotee's entire being to the Supreme Deity and the discharge of his duties in a spirit of dedication to Him. A synthetic scripture like the *Gītā* does not take any partisan view on the question whether *jñāna* precedes *bhakti* or *vice versa*. It does not find any opposition between the two. Both are recognized to be mutually complementary. Love of God is based on and fostered by some preliminary knowledge of His Nature⁵⁴. Such knowledge with which devotional life starts is born of *śraddhā*. In the higher stages of knowledge also the *Gītā* considers devotion and knowledge to be interdependent⁵⁵. Realization of the experience formulated in 'All this is Vāsudeva' and perfect self-surrender are shown⁵⁶ to be the result of mature knowledge. This realization comes to the aspirant as a result of Divine grace which is essentially a corollary of devotion and the consequence of the supreme devotional act of self-surrender to which the divine teacher of the *Bhagavad Gītā* exhorts all devotees⁵⁷. The growth of devotion up to this stage of full enlightenment through grace is also described fully⁵⁸.

True love of God originates from a knowledge of the Lord's glory and greatness. It is fostered and converted into a flaming energy by *niskāma karma*, *Abhyasa yoga* and *Jñāna yoga*. When love deepens and ends in absolute self-surrender the grace of God descends on the aspirants. This destroys the distinction between *bhakti* and *jñāna* by bringing both to their common end of experience of God in which to know Him is to love Him and to love Him is to know Him. This experience comes when grace destroys the cloud of ignorance and with it the stain of sin that has its seat in the senses, the mind and the intellect. The aspirant is then said to enter into Him forthwith—his life becomes one with the Divine Life. He may take full part in all the activities of the world but he

Ibid X 8
Ibid XVIII 66

Ibid VII 17 19
Ibid X 7 11

⁵⁸ *Ibid* XVIII 55

always abides in God and to him belong Supreme Peace and the Eternal Abode ⁹

LOKA SAMGRAHA

The teachings of the *Gītā* have been reviewed in their different aspects. In conclusion it is necessary to focus attention particularly on the place of action in spiritual life as it has led to some controversy. That *niskāma karma* is an inescapable part of the spiritual discipline taught in the *Gītā* has amply been demonstrated. Some interpreters hold that this is true only in the early stages of spiritual life that is until the mind has been purified but after that work has to be abandoned so that the aspirant might devote himself exclusively to contemplation or other subjective disciplines. It is necessary to examine how far it is correct. It is quite clear that the *Gītā* distinguishes between two stages of spiritual growth and that it recognizes also a difference of discipline relating to them ⁶⁰. The counsel of selfless activity for the aspirant and serenity for the man of realization the latter being free from all desires⁶¹ and so actionless and disinterested in the objects of the senses directly declares that until the attainment of *yoga* spiritual progress is positively barred if dedicated action is not practised and that pure psychological disciplines are the means to be adopted afterwards for further advancement. The stages of this advancement and the nature of the disciplines required for them are elaborately taught ⁶² ending with the experience of the aspirant who attains the final goal.

Consistent with the division of spiritual progress into two stages as stated above we get in this description the special duties of each in these two stages. In the first stage of the aspirant he discharges his duties as worship of the supreme Lord in the second stage as the man of realization he trains his mind in direct communion. But does this categorization mean that the *Gītā* thereby recommends the total giving up of all work or institutionalizes worklessness as a stage or order in life? Other passages of a very definite and conclusive nature deny this ⁶³. These two sets of apparently divergent passages are to be reconciled before the conclusive view of the *Gītā* on the point raised is arrived at. Such a reconciliation is possible in this manner. The two stages of spiritual development connoted by the terms *āruruksu* (wishing to ascend) and *ārudha* (the ascended) with *karma* and *śama* (serenity) as the respective laws of their growth are acceptable as a salient teaching. But that need not be taken as a plea for complete worklessness. The condition required for the *āruruksu* is

Ibid XVIII 46 56
Ibid XVIII 46 55

Ibid VI 9
Ibid XVIII 24

Ibid VI 4

fulfilled if recourse is had to worklessness in an absolute sense only during the periods set apart for retreats which may be of short or long duration. At other times without unnecessarily extending the duties an aspirant should do what is incumbent on him in a sacrificial spirit even though he has passed the stage of the *āruruksu* at which level dedicated work is the law of his progress. When work has lost all relevancy with regard to further advancement what motive power can there be for an advanced spiritual aspirant to do work? Should he not give up work completely and devote himself to the practice of tranquillity alone which is the law of his further development? In reply to this question the *Gītā* strikes an entirely new note by its supremely wise socialistic outlook couched in the concept of *lokasamgraha*—the conservation of the social order. It is offered as the justification of work in the case of all ⁶⁴. Men of realization are few and far between the vast majority of men in this world are at a level of development in which work alone is their salvation. But if the few whom the world respects as the wisest of men set an example of worklessness this majority too will follow it considering it to be the true way of godly living ⁶⁵ and the consequences would be disastrous. For then idleness would pass for godliness and pseudo spirituality would grow to the great detriment of social well being ⁶⁶. As a great and luminous illustration of working for the conservation of the social order the *Gītā* cites the example of the well known royal sage Janaka ⁶⁷ who was engaged in fulfilling the duties of a king all through life and attained perfection. And above all, the example of God the creator preserver and destroyer of the universe is pointed out to impress on all aspirants the supreme importance of *loka samgraha* which is thereby raised from a social concept to a law of Divine Life itself transcending all narrow notions of individual spiritual growth ⁶⁸.

⁶⁴ *Ibid* III 20
Ibid III 20

Ibid III 21
Ibid III 22 26

Ibid III 26

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ ITS SYNTHETIC CHARACTER

THE *Bhagavad Gītā* is now a most if not the most popular Hindu scripture. It is regarded as one of the three main scriptures—the *prasthāna trayas* as they are called the other two being the Upanisads and the *Brahma Sūtras*. There is no other scripture which has been so frequently commented upon for it has been a perennial source of spiritual inspiration and rightly so for in it we find different systems of philosophy, ethics, and religion suited for different temperaments. This universality of the *Gītā* has however puzzled some scholars. In this variety of ideals they find contradictions for instance between monism and dualism, knowledge, action, and devotion, Sāṃkhya and Vedānta, and even between Personal God and Impersonal God. These themes they think are pieced together without much attempt at reconciliation. To explain these contradictions they assume that there have been interpolations in the *Gītā* which must have undergone revision like other parts of the *Mahābhārata* of which it forms a part¹. However plausible these theories may look, we think these critics have missed the master key which alone would have helped them to open this jewel casket of Indian culture viz. the spirit of synthesis.

The Indo Aryans were never dominated by rigidity of thought at any time in any sphere of their national life. This freedom of thought helped them to evolve a synthetic outlook, a spirit of seeing unity behind variety. This synthetic outlook is predominantly noticeable in the field of religion. One of the Vedic seers taught to the Aryan tribes, "That which exists is One," sages call it by various names². The discovery of this great truth has shaped the history of civilization in this country, and sages have reiterated it at different periods in our history with the result that it has gone deep into the subconscious mind of the nation. The Hindus have therefore accepted different religions, systems of philosophy, and spiritual cultures as being suited to different temperaments and as supplementing one another. In keeping with this spirit is the message of Śrī Kṛṣṇa in the *Bhagavad Gītā*. He was a great harmonizer of ideals and institutions, and hence he did not reject any of the ideals extant at the time but gave a proper place to each one of them inasmuch as they were suited to the spiritual progress of particular people. If man is to progress spiritually

¹ Winternitz *HIL* I p. 435

R I I 164-46 also *X* 115-5

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ ITS SYNTHETIC CHARACTER

he must have religious ideals suited to him Forcing him to follow ideals for which he is not fit will only result in harm and spiritual death There fore the wise man should not unsettle the faith of the ignorant ³ *By whatsoever way men worship Me even so do I accept them (for) in all ways O Pārtha men walk in My path ⁴ Guided by this spirit the *Gītā* has beautifully harmonized the various ideals prevalent at the time

SYNTHESIS OF ACTION AND KNOWLEDGE

The *Bhagavad Gītā* has not much esteem for the reward seeking religion of Vedic sacrifices It criticizes⁵ the view of the Mīmāṃsakas who think that ritualism is the whole of religion and is capable of leading man to *mukti* (liberation) According to the *Gītā* sacrifices are merely a means to power and enjoyment and they cause rebirth by means of them people no doubt get the result coveted viz heaven where they enjoy the pleasures of the gods but when their merit is exhausted they have to return to this mundane world Thus following the injunctions of the Vedas seeking pleasure and enjoyment they come and go The votaries of the various gods go to the gods It is only the devotees of the supreme Lord that go to Him and attain liberation Even those who worship the gods as such in reality worship the one supreme God yet as they are not conscious of the fact that these gods are but forms of the one God who is the enjoyer and Lord of all sacrifices they return to the mortal world ⁶ But if they are conscious of the fact that they are worshipping the one God through the different deities then these very sacrifices will lead them to liberation Thus in keeping with the Upanisadic teachings the *Gītā* declares that it is knowledge alone that leads to liberation and not mere ritualistic observance Hence the exhortation to Arjuna to go beyond the *gunas* i.e. the world which is the sphere of rituals ⁷

The *Gītā* however realizes that for those who are full of desires and want enjoyment these sacrifices are useful for such people must have some enjoyment and have their desires fulfilled to a certain extent before they can tread the path of desirelessness which is the goal of spiritual life It is desire that covers knowledge and it has therefore to be destroyed by controlling its seats—the senses the mind and the intellect ⁸ But this highest ideal cannot be followed by all Ideals have to vary according to the capacity of the aspirants so that they may be followed with faith for that is a surer way to progress than aspiring after a higher ideal prematurely Confusion of ideals is detrimental to individual

B G III 26 29
Ibid IX 20 25

Ibid IV 11
Ibid II 45

Ibid II 42 46
^{*} *Ibid* III 30 41

and social welfare By performing works prescribed by the scriptures though with desire to start with one gradually progresses and finally attains the state of desirelessness But works prohibited by the scriptures are never helpful and so one should abide by the scriptural ordinances and not be prompted by inordinate desires prohibited by them⁹ Even in enjoyment there should be some discrimination Otherwise it would bring us down to the level of the brute

It looks like a paradox to say that sacrifices performed with desire will lead to desirelessness or absolute unselfishness But then in all sacrifices though performed with desire the performer offers something which he possesses to his chosen deity who thus propitiated bestows on his devotee the desired fruit Thus man learns to renounce and to be unselfish even through these selfish sacrifices and gradually as he progresses he finds that he is in duty bound to offer to the gods the gifts that are bestowed on him by them and that not to do so is sinful Selfishness slowly recedes to the background and duty becomes the guiding principle of these sacrifices The *Gītā* stresses this idea of obligatoriness on the part of the ordinary man to perform sacrifices¹⁰

Having stressed the duty aspect in sacrifices the *Gītā* next amplifies the narrow and restricted meaning of the words duty (*dharma*) and sacrifice (*yajña*) that was current at the time According to the *Cītā* duty is not merely ritualistic acts prescribed by the Vedas but it includes whatever we are obliged to do by birth and status in society¹¹ In this sense there can be no definition of duty which will be universally binding on all men and under all circumstances It would necessarily vary with persons and with the change of circumstances even for the same person The only criterion to fix it is to see whether a particular act takes a person Godward or not If it does then it is his duty (*dharma*) otherwise it is a sin (*adharma*) for him Duties are fixed for us by the inner law of our being by the *samskāras* or tendencies acquired by us in previous births with which we are born and working them out is the only way to proceed Godward Consequently there is no unchartered freedom in the choice of our duties nor can the duty of one be the duty of another endowed differently Doing duties thus determined by his nature a man incurs no sin Though they may be defective he should not relinquish them for after all any undertaking is attended with evil of some sort or other Performance of one's duties is the only way to salvation¹² Similarly sacrifice does not mean merely ritualistic worship performed by offering material things in the

Ibid XVI 23 24
Ibid II 31 33 XVIII 41 44

Ibid III 10 16
Ibid XVIII 45 48

fire but it includes all kinds of spiritual culture. Thus acts of charity giving up of desires control of the senses and of the breath muttering of mystic syllables and God's names are all conceived as sacrifices¹³. In fact according to the *Gītā* sacrifice includes all acts whatsoever done unselfishly for the main idea in a sacrifice is the offering of something in the fire to the deity. So any act done without selfishness can be regarded as an offering and therefore all such acts are sacrifice. With this changed meaning of the word sacrifice the statement of the Mimamsakas 'This world is bound by action other than that done for a sacrifice' becomes more significant for knowledge sacrifice is superior to material sacrifices¹⁴. That is why Śrī Kṛṣṇa repeats this statement and asks Arjuna to perform action for the sake of sacrifice alone for by performing work as sacrifice one's entire action melts away¹⁵. Sacrifice being understood in this sense the principle underlying Vedic ritualism is accepted but a new meaning has been assigned to it which makes it universally applicable.

Next Śrī Kṛṣṇa takes Arjuna one step higher and says that even this idea of duty is on a lower plane. For duty generally leaves ample scope for our desires and egoism. Arjuna might have fought the battle with the motive of gaining name fame and a kingdom. Outwardly everyone would have been satisfied that he had done his duty well still it would not have helped him to progress spiritually and attain liberation as his selfishness would still have been there—the attachment or desire for the result of the work—and it is this attachment that binds. So the only duty we have is to work in a non attached way and not to get ourselves identified with the work.

How is non attachment to be attained? The *Gita* prescribes two ways to attain it the way of knowledge for the meditative type of men and the way of selfless action for men of action¹⁷. Śrī Kṛṣṇa is aware of the fight between the adherents of knowledge and the adherents of action viz the Kāpīla Sāṃkhyas and Vedāntins ranged against the Mīmāṃsakas. The latter insist that work should be performed while the former declare that all work should be given up as evil¹⁸. The adherents of knowledge say that action belongs to the sphere of ignorance, and that all actions are overlaid with defects as fire by smoke so it is futile to strive for liberation through action. The way to freedom lies in preventing the mind and the senses from going outward which is their nature to do and turning them inward on the Self¹⁹. But work distracts and externalizes our mind and senses so all work should be renounced. Śrī Kṛṣṇa however prescribes a

Ibid IV 25 30 X 25
Ibid IV 23
¹ Ka U IV 1

Ibid IV 33
Ibid III 3

Ibid III 9
Ibid XVIII 3

middle path. He says that work should not be given up but should be performed without attachment and desire for their fruit²⁰. Renunciation and performance of action both lead to liberation for they are not different but one. Of the two however performance is superior, because it is easier and therefore suited for the vast majority while renunciation of action is difficult to attain²¹. Only a few extraordinary souls can follow the way of knowledge. The goal is to attain *naiskarmya* (complete inaction) and it can not be attained by merely giving up work externally and continuing to think of sense-objects for such thinking also is action and capable of binding the soul the reason being that attachment and desire the main causes of bondage still linger in the mind. Further it is not possible for the embodied being to give up work completely²². So that is not the way Śrī Kṛṣṇa prescribes for Arjuna. He asks him to perform his duties as a soldier absorbed in *yoga*²³ for that is the secret of work²⁴. *Yoga* is equanimity indifference to success and failure²⁵ and one attains it when one's mind is free from desire for enjoyment and is firmly established in the Self²⁶. Arjuna is therefore asked to fight with his mind established in the Self and not to identify himself with his actions, for they are in reality done by the *gunas* of Prakṛti (Nature's constituents) and it is only through delusion that a man identifies himself with them²⁷. He is asked to transcend the *gunas* and hold himself aloof as a witness of the doings of Prakṛti and not to be attached to them²⁸. When one works with this attitude of mind there is no consciousness of being a doer, and one gets non-attached²⁹. Work then loses its binding effect and becomes equal to no work. If a man sees inaction in action³⁰ then even in the midst of intense activity he experiences the eternal calmness of the soul which is not ruffled come what may. He is not affected by good and evil happiness and misery and in all conditions he remains the same, he becomes a *sthita-prajña* a man of steady wisdom. The *Gītā* describes at some length³¹ the nature of such a man who has perfected himself by the practice of selfless action. This is the Brāhmic state or having one's being in Brahman and attaining it one is no longer deluded, but gets merged in Brahman³². The *Gītā* thus asks us to perform our duties disinterestedly combining the subjective attitude of the man of knowledge with outward action that is to say having an attitude of mind towards the performance of duties which is similar to that of a man of self-realization with respect to the normal functions of the body like seeing hearing smelling eating and sleeping (i.e. being free from the

²⁰ B G XVIII 5 6
Ibid II 48
Ibid II 53
Ibid XIII 29
Ibid II 72

²¹ *Ibid* V 2 6
Ibid II 50
Ibid III 27
Ibid IV 18

Ibid III 4 6
Ibid II 48
Ibid III 28
Ibid II 55 71

THE BHAGAVAD GITA ITS SYNTHETIC CHARACTER

idea of agency) Knowledge and action are harmonized thereby and the statement³³ that knowledge (*sāmkhya*) and action (*yoga*) are not different but one is justified by this explanation The result attained is also identical for that which is gained by knowledge viz everlasting peace³⁴ is also attained by the man of selfless action³⁵ Ritualism as the highest ideal is condemned but as a stepping stone to absolute unselfishness it is worthy to be followed by persons who have desires

ACTION AND DEVOTION

From the description of selfless action (*Karma yoga*) given above we may infer that it is not always necessary for a votary of it to have faith in God But if he believes in a personal God there is an easier method for him to attain non attachment by looking upon work as worship of the Lord and by offering to Him its fruit he makes his path smooth Thus there is a much easier path suited to those who possess some faith and devotion Worshipping Him through one's own duties³⁶ by performing work for the Lord³⁷ and by dedicating it to Him³⁸ one attains liberation From Him proceeds the activity of all beings³⁹ He is the ultimate source of all power and as such He is the agent we are but tools in His hand mere machines As He directs us so we do He is the inner Ruler directing all failing to see this we think that we are doing all actions and get ourselves bound Through devotion man ultimately realizes this fact surrenders himself to the Lord works out His will and thus becomes absolutely unattached There is no more compulsion to perform duties nay there is no idea even of duty and the devotee does what is expected of him spontaneously out of love for God Arjuna realized all this with the vision of the Lord's cosmic form He got rid of his delusion regained memory of his true nature and surrendered himself to the Lord saying I will carry out your behest⁴⁰ Here we have a beautiful synthesis of action and devotion and that in an inseparable manner

KĀPILA SĀMKHYA AND THE BHAGAVAD GITA

The *Bhagavad Gītā* gives great prominence to the Sāmkhya system and accepts all that is valuable in it The Sāmkhya philosophers say Prakṛti is the primordial non differentiated material substance made up of three constituents—*sattva* *rajas* and *tamas* The differentiated universe evolves out of the mingling of these constituents (*gunas*) in various ways at the beginning of a cycle and it is merged again in this undifferentiated Prakṛti

Ibid V 4
Ibid XVIII 46
Ibid XVIII 46

Ibid V 29
Ibid XII 10

Ibid V 12
Ibid V 10
⁴ *Ibid* XVIII 73

at the end of a cycle. This cyclic process goes on eternally. Prakṛti is unmanifest (*avyakta*) not perceptible to the senses while all objects evolved out of it are manifest (*vyakta*) to the senses or the mind. Prakṛti is change fully eternal while its products are mutable in the sense that their perceptible form is destroyed in the evolutionary process. Beyond this Prakṛti separate from it and of a different nature is the Puruṣa (soul). While Prakṛti is material and insentient Puruṣa is sentient and immaterial. Unlike Prakṛti he is changeless. Prakṛti produces the body and the senses and is responsible for all activity but the Puruṣa is not a doer. He is indifferent a mere witness of Nature's activities. Through ignorance however the Puruṣa gets identified with Nature and thus experiences pleasure and pain. This union of the Puruṣa and Prakṛti is responsible for this mundane existence. The bondage of the Puruṣa is apparent and not real and when he realizes that he is separate from Prakṛti he gets liberated. All this the *Gītā* accepts⁴¹ but it disagrees with the Sāṃkhya philosophers when they say that the Puruṣa and Prakṛti are self-existing independent entities that there are an infinite number of souls and that there is no God the creator of the universe. The *Gītā* works out a further synthesis and says that this whole universe is one. It enunciates a third principle Puruṣottama (the highest Being) or Īśvara (God)⁴² Who is beyond both matter and spirit and Who is the very basis of this universe. This one Being manifests Himself as this universe both sentient and insentient. He is both the efficient and material cause of the universe. Thus Prakṛti and Puruṣa are dependent on God. Prakṛti with its twenty-four categories is lower nature⁴³ while the soul which is a part of Him⁴⁴ is His higher nature⁴⁵. As the soul animates the individual body so God animates the whole universe. There is nothing higher than God. All this visible universe is strung on Him like gems on a string⁴⁶. Presiding over His Prakṛti He projects the entire aggregate of beings⁴⁷. Prakṛti is the mother of the universe and He is the father⁴⁸. Resorting to His Prakṛti He takes birth or manifests Himself⁴⁹. Thus Prakṛti is not an independent entity but belongs to Him. Though the *Gītā* accepts the multiplicity of individual souls which are but parts of God whether real or apparent it declares that there is only one (supreme) Puruṣa Who is not only the onlooker the approver and supporter of the activity of Prakṛti but also the great Lord of Prakṛti⁵⁰. Thus Prakṛti is not an independent entity but subservient to Him and it is He Who through Prakṛti is the cause of creation and not

| | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|-------------|------|----|----|------|----|----|----|----|--------------------------|-----|----|----|----|----|-------------|------|----|----|
| <i>Ibid</i> | VIII | 18 | 19 | XIII | 19 | 23 | 26 | 28 | XIV | 5 | 19 | 20 | XV | 16 | XVIII | 40 | | |
| <i>Ibid</i> | XV | 17 | 18 | | | | | | ⁴ <i>Ibid</i> | VII | 4 | 5 | | | <i>Ibid</i> | XV | 7 | |
| <i>Ibid</i> | VII | 5 | | | | | | | ⁴ <i>Ibid</i> | VII | 7 | | | | <i>Ibid</i> | IX | 8 | 10 |
| <i>Ibid</i> | XIV | 4 | | | | | | | ⁴ <i>Ibid</i> | IV | 6 | | | | <i>Ibid</i> | XIII | 22 | |

Prakṛti independently This supreme Being is the one Reality to be known and knowing Him truly one enters into Him ⁵¹ Liberation is therefore not merely discrimination between Prakṛti and Puruṣa but also union with God Thus a new synthesis between the dualism of the Sāṃkhya and the monism of the Upanisads is established

GOD PERSONAL AND IMPERSONAL

We find in the *Bhagavad Gītā* various descriptions of the ultimate Reality He is described as having no form or attribute as having attributes but formless and again as having both form and attributes—which shows that He is both impersonal and personal and yet beyond both for we cannot limit Him and say He is this much since the Infinite can never be an object of finite knowledge In this impersonal aspect He is Brahman the highest imperishable principle ² the unmanifest beyond the other unmanifest viz Prakṛti ⁵³ This unmanifest imperishable Brahman is the supreme goal attaining which one does not return ⁵⁴ This Brahman is neither being nor non being Being beyond the range of the senses It has no phenomenal existence It is not non being either for It makes Itself felt through the functions of the various senses as the driving force behind them It is bereft of all sense organs for otherwise It would be limited like ordinary beings therefore the attribution of sense-organs⁵ to It is only figurative and not real It is unattached yet sustains everything as Its substratum being existence itself It is without attributes yet the energizer of all attributes It is far and yet near as our very soul It is undivided in beings yet remains as if divided All these apparent contradictions⁵⁶ are resolved if we remember that Brahman is both transcendent and immanent Brahman has become this universe and yet transcends it When the transcendent Brahman appears as this universe It becomes subject as it were to certain limitations which do not really belong to It but to the phenomenal world hence this paradoxical description through affirmation and negation It is the Light of lights and beyond darkness or ignorance ⁵⁷ The sun does not illuminate It nor the moon nor the fire ⁵⁸ This Brahman is the one Reality to be known in order to attain immortality ⁵⁹ To those whose ignorance is destroyed their knowledge manifests It ⁶⁰ In this description of the Impersonal we have an echo of the Upanisads

Though the *Gītā* accepts this impersonal aspect of the Godhead yet it

² *Ibid* XVIII 55

⁴ *Ibid* VIII 21

Ibid XIII 17

Ibid V 16

⁵ *Ibid* VIII 3

Ibid XIII 13

Ibid XV 6

⁵ *Ibid* VIII 18 20

⁵⁶ *Ibid* XIII 12 16

Ibid XIII 12

is predominantly theistic in its teachings. It is a peculiarity of the *Gītā* that it always lays stress on the ideal which is suited to the vast majority of mankind as against any other, however perfect, which may be suited only for the exceptional few. So in the *Gītā* the personal God is given more prominence than the impersonal. Personal does not mean merely having form; it means also the formless aspect with attributes, the *Īśvara* as He is called in the *Gītā*. The term personality refers to a self-conscious being capable of knowing, feeling, willing, loving, and satisfying man's longing for a personal relationship. All human qualities are attributed to the Divine Personality, but they are free from all human limitations. Thus He not only knows, but He is omniscient. The Impersonal is beyond thought, so when the mind tries to conceive It, it naturally superimposes some of its own limitations on It, and we have the personal God, the *Īśvara*. That is the highest reading of the Impersonal by the finite mind of man. So long as we are limited beings, we have this triple entry—soul, nature, and God. It is the Impersonal that appears as all these. But when we attain the superconscious state where the *I* ceases to exist, all these three entities vanish, and God is no longer personal. He is experienced as pure Consciousness. Thus these two—the impersonal and the personal, the absolute and the relative—are but two aspects of the same Godhead. The absolute implies the relative, and *vice versa*. They are not two separate entities, even as fire and its burning capacity are not different, and we cannot think of the one without the other. When we think of God as inactive, He is impersonal, and when He is active, He is called *Īśvara*, the personal God, the creator, preserver, and destroyer of the universe, the father, mother, friend, Lord, supporter, abode, refuge, and goal.⁶¹ This universe is pervaded by Him in His unmanifest form.⁶² He exists supporting the whole universe with a portion of Himself.⁶³ Thus He is both immanent and transcendent. He is seated in the heart of all beings, controlling them from within.⁶⁴ There is nothing higher than He.⁶⁵ Just as He supports this whole universe as its cause, even so He supports the differentiated things as their very essence. He is thus the moisture in water, lustre in the sun and the moon, and heat in the fire, sound in ether, odour in earth, etc. All beings are in Him, but He is not in them, nor are the beings really in Him. That is His divine mystery.⁶⁶ This mystery of *māyā* veils Him from ordinary mortals, but those who surrender themselves to Him surmount this *mayā*. Those who take refuge in Him and strive for liberation know that supreme Brahman, the Impersonal

Ibid IX 17-18
Ibid XVIII 61

Ibid IX 4
Ibid VII 7

Ibid X 42
Ibid IX 4-5

through the grace of the Lord⁶⁷ Again this universe of sentient and insentient beings is the manifest form of the formless Īśvara for He has become all this It is His universal form which was shown to Arjuna and which only the fortunate few have been able to see through undivided devotion⁶⁸ This universe being a manifest form of the Lord He is immanent in all things and as such they are symbols of God In certain things however the manifestation of His power is greater which makes them far superior to other objects of that class Such extraordinary things are mentioned in chapter ten as *pratīkas* or symbols for meditating on God From such statements we easily understand that this immanence can be manifest in an extraordinary degree in a human form which gives us an Incarnation of God There is no difference between God as unmanifest and God as manifest in such a human form He takes such human forms and incarnates Himself in this world at critical periods in its history to destroy the wicked and establish righteousness⁶⁹ It is very difficult to recognize God when He incarnates Himself in human form for He behaves so like ordinary mortals that people are deluded into thinking that He is just one of them The ignorant deride Me Who have taken a human form not knowing My higher nature as the great Lord of beings⁷⁰ It is only a few great souls that recognize God when He appears in human form but the vast majority take Him for an ordinary mortal born subject to his own past *karma*⁷¹ He who truly knows the divine birth and work of an Incarnation attains liberation after death⁷²

KNOWLEDGE AND DEVOTION

In many places in the *Gītā* devotion to both the Impersonal and the Personal aspects of God has been prescribed for attaining liberation In stanzas 28 of chapter three corresponding to these two aspects two paths namely the way of knowledge and the way of devotion are clearly stated but a higher place is given to devotion for the usual reason that it is the easier of the two and therefore suited to the generality of mankind while the path of knowledge is difficult and suited only to a very few of exceptional spiritual calibre In this path of knowledge the aspirant has to realize that the world is illusory and Brahman alone is real He has to get a firm conviction through reasoning that Brahman is not this universe nor the mind nor the intellect nor the senses neither happiness nor misery and so on till by this process he finally comes to the core of things and realizes the Absolute Merely an intellectual grasp of the illusory

Ibid VII 14 25 29 X 10 11
Ibid IX 11

Ibid XI 54
Ibid VII 24 25

Ibid IV 6 8
Ibid IV 9

nature of the world will not help him. He has to be established in this knowledge even in the midst of the worst possible calamities. For ordinary mortals to whom this world of the senses is real it is very difficult indeed to be established in this knowledge. Hence the Lord dissuades Arjuna from this path and prescribes for him the easier path of devotion to His personal aspect. In this path a man has not to give up his passions, feelings, etc. but has to switch them on to God. Instead of having worldly things for their objects, they are directed solely to God. He merely disconnects them from the worldly objects and connects them with God, and if this is done successfully, he attains liberation. The chief motive in both the ideals is to get rid of this little 'I' by merging it either in the infinite 'I', the Self, or in the infinite 'Thou', that is God. The net result is the same—attainment of freedom. One worships saying 'I am Thyself' while another saying 'I am Thine', though there is a slight difference between the two, the ultimate result is the same.⁷³ The difference is only in language, but the content of the spiritual practices is the same, namely the elimination of 'I' and 'mine', which are bondages of the soul. The devotee gets rid of them by constant remembrance of and service to God, and in the highest state of devotion he forgets himself entirely and sees his Beloved everywhere and in everything, even as the man of knowledge comes to the final conclusion. All this indeed is Vāsudeva (the Lord).⁷⁴ Again, By devotion he knows Me truly, how much and what I am.⁷⁵ That is, he realizes the Lord's impersonal aspect as pure Consciousness. Further, a devotee, through unswerving devotion to the Lord, transcends the *gunas* and becomes fit for merging in Brahman.⁷⁶ In like manner, unswerving devotion is prescribed as a means to knowledge,⁷⁷ and conversely, when a man realizes Brahman, the impersonal aspect of God, he gets devotion to His personal aspect also.⁷⁸ Thus knowledge and devotion get merged in each other.

SYNTHESIS OF THE FOUR YOGAS

Commentators on the *Gītā* often give prominence to one of these four paths taught in the book, viz. action, knowledge, devotion, and meditation, and relegate the others to a secondary position as preparatory disciplines to the one which they think is the true way to God-realization. Such a thing, however, is not justified by the *Gītā* itself. It goes against the very spirit of the *Gītā*, its synthetic outlook. According to it, each of these

Tavasmī bhajaty ekah tvam evasmī caparah
Iti kincid viśeṣeṇ parinamah samo dvayoh—Narahari *Bodhasara* 32, 23
⁴ *B G* VII 19 ⁷ *Ibid* XVIII 55 *Ibid* XIV 26
Ibid XIII 10 *Ibid* XVIII 54

paths is equally efficacious and capable of leading the soul to freedom. Some see the Self in the body by the mind through meditation others by the path of knowledge and some others by the path of selfless action.⁷⁹ That this interpretation is correct is further borne out by the descriptions given in the *Gītā* of men who have attained perfection in each of these paths.⁸⁰ These texts show that the various aspirants reach the same state for similar qualities are manifest in their character. In fact the *Gītā* clearly states that they all reach the Brāhmic state or become one with Brahman—*Brahmabhūta*.⁸¹

The *Gītā* though it recognizes the efficacy of each of these paths to lead the soul to freedom yet recommends an harmonious combination of all four paths. The predominant one gives the name to that particular path while the other three are combined with it as feeders to strengthen the main spiritual current. Thus we find the path of selfless action combined in the first place with knowledge for the aspirant has to perform work externally having the subjective attitude of the Sāṃkhya internally. He is to work established in *yoga* with an even mind and this equanimity is not possible till one's mind is free from the distractions of the senses and desires. The senses have to be controlled if one is to practise selfless action efficiently and this can be attained not by merely abstaining from sense-objects but by meditation on the Lord.⁸² Thus with action are combined knowledge meditation and devotion. Similarly devotion in its paths is combined with the other three. The aspirant is to have a knowledge of the nature of Īśvara and His glories for devotion is possible only after that. Then the aspirant is asked to offer all his actions to the Lord⁸³ and also to worship Him through the performance of his duties. His devotion has also to be constant and unswerving it must be a continuous remembrance of the Lord which is meditation. So with devotion are combined knowledge action and meditation. Again in the path of knowledge discrimination between the Self and the not Self is the main aim. One has to discriminate and give up the idea that matter is real. The Self alone is real and all else is illusory. Constantly remembering our true nature is the way to separate the Self from the not Self. Work also has to be performed and should not be given up but it should be done without desire for results for work is purifying and helpful to us to rise from *tamas* to *rajas* and thence to *sattva* and finally to transcend the

Ibid XIII 24

For action see *Ibid* II 55 72 for meditation VI 7 10 27 32 for devotion XII 13 20 for knowledge XIII 7 12 XIV 23 25 and XVIII 50 53

Ibid II 72 VI 27 XIV 26 and XVIII 53 54

Ibid II 61

⁸¹ *Ibid* IX 97

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

gunas and become *gunātita* when full knowledge dawns. Unswerving devotion to the Lord is a means to this attainment of knowledge and has therefore to be adopted. Thus with knowledge are combined meditation, action and devotion though knowledge is the main note in this symphony. So the *Gītā* views spiritual life as an organic whole and recommends an harmonious blending of the four *yogas* which would result in an all round development of the human personality.

SOCIAL SYNTHESIS

One of the great tasks that Śrī Kṛṣṇa set himself to was to weld the different races and civilizations in India in his time into an integral society of an all India character so that peace and harmony could reign in the land. To bring about this social synthesis he first held out to them a common ideal. He taught that union with God was the supreme end of life and that this worldly life was all vanity. Having attained this transient joyless world (i.e. human birth) worship Me⁸⁴—that was his behest to Arjuna and through him to all the warring nations of the time. He based the whole social structure on this solid foundation viz. that the supreme reality and the only thing of value was God. All life according to him had a meaning in so far as it culminated in a union with God. This became the dominant note of the whole social fabric round which Indian society was sought to be organized. The different racial and ethnic groups in the country, Aryan and non Aryan with their different traits were stamped with this fundamental principle of Aryan life and this helped to integrate them into one society with a common ideal which became the bond of unity among them. As a corollary to this main principle he also preached the harmony of religious ideals showing thereby that various religious ideals were equally efficacious to lead man to the ultimate goal. In his delineation of the four *yogas* he enunciated the fundamentals of spiritual life and thereby made it possible for the Aryan faith to assimilate the alien cultures and religions within its fold. This also helped to bring about a unity amidst diversity all these ideals being synthesized as parts or facets of an integral whole. Again God according to the *Gītā* as we have already seen is both transcendent and immanent. So in striving to attain union with God the aspirant is filled with love for His immanent aspect also and his love therefore embraces the whole humanity. He is ever engaged in the good of all creatures⁸⁵ and he judges of pleasure and pain of all creatures by the same standard as he applies to himself⁸⁶. The same God exists equally in all beings and the aspirant

⁸⁴ *Ibid* IX 33

⁸⁵ *Ibid* V 25 XII 4

⁸⁶ *Ibid* VI 32

realizing this truth does not injure anybody in any way and thus goes to the Supreme⁸⁷ He breaks through the superficial differences between man and man—racial or other—and reaches his inner essence which is God The vision was thus directed towards the unity at the back of the inevitable differences between man and man and in that unity all these differences were eliminated

A great barrier however in the way of attaining this social synthesis was the hereditary caste system prevalent at the time among the Aryans which kept non Aryan races outside Aryan society Śrī Kṛṣṇa introduced social liberalism within the Aryan society by changing the basis of this division of society and made it possible to assimilate non Aryans to the Aryan social fold He did not reject the fourfold division of society but accepted it as God ordained⁸⁸ for the destruction of caste would have led to the ruin of the social organization Any society that is strong and progressive necessarily welcomes variety into its structure for when variations cease to be produced death results So Śrī Kṛṣṇa accepted the fourfold division of society based it on the qualities of individuals and on their fitness to live a particular mode of life suitable to serve society in a particular way The division was functional and each individual was expected to do that kind of service to society for which he was best equipped according to his *guṇa* and *karma* or his moral spiritual and intellectual endowments as determined by his previous births and actions⁸⁹ It was a question of service and not that of rights or privileges which are the bane of all societies This put the right man in the right place and there was no waste of energy nor want of efficiency which would otherwise have resulted from an indiscriminate division of labour This fourfold division of labour removed competition between individuals in society The performance of one's duties if done as worship of the Lord opened the gates of liberation which was the goal of life according to the *Gītā*⁹⁰ Spiritual progress depended not on the nature of the work performed but on the attitude of the mind and the efficiency with which it was performed The way to freedom was open to all irrespective of the caste to which they belonged and so far as the attainment of their goal in life was concerned all were equal and had equal opportunities The ritualistic Vedic religion was the monopoly of the two higher castes the Brāhmanas and the Kṣatriyas the Vaisyas and Śūdras and even the Brāhmana women had no access to it since they lacked the necessary classical study for taking part in it The simple religion of faith and devotion to the Lord threw

Ibid XII 27 28
Ibid IV 13 VIII 41

Ibid IV 13
Ibid XVIII 46

open the gates of liberation to every one and put all irrespective of their caste sex and learning on an equal footing

Incarnations come not to destroy but to fulfil and this statement is particularly true of Śrī Kṛṣṇa. He did not break off from accepted traditions though he completely changed their significance and bearing. He interpreted old ideals in a new light to make them suitable to the conditions of life in society and to give it a further push towards progress and perfection. Conflicts between ideals were resolved in a new synthesis which made life smooth both for the individual and society as a whole. This is the fundamental note in the message of the *Gītā*—the spirit of harmony the finding of unity in diversity and from this point of view all apparent contradictions in it are resolved.

THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ ITS EARLY COMMENTARIES

THE *Bhagavad Gītā* represents a unique stage in the development of Indian culture. It has a series of commentaries from the great creators of Indian thought and Indian life like Śrī Śaṅkarācārya and Śrī Rāmānujācārya. It stands even today as a great book of inspiration. The great commentators like Śaṅkara and Rāmānuja contribute their own thoughts in expounding the *Bhagavad Gītā* and also draw the confirmation of their thoughts from it. In the colophon at the end of every chapter of the *Gītā* the text is called an Upaniṣad. From the commentary of Śaṅkarācārya it is clear that he believed that the *Gītā* had the same prestige and dignity as the Upaniṣads. It not only makes an intellectual clarification of the problems of life but also unearths life's fundamental ground so that light may be thrown upon the complex formation of life. This all embracing inspiration finds for it a meaning and a value for all the basic philosophic conceptions and the intuitions which they carry with them. The *Gītā* as a spiritual scripture has found out the values of the different modes of approach to Truth realization prevalent then in India and it also lays down the method of approach which can unfailingly place Truth before the seeker. It is therefore essentially a book of spiritual approach and realization. I appreciate very much an observation of the poet George Russell on the *Gītā*—he has written to me in a letter that it is a highly spiritual book on which thousands of commentaries have been written but its teachings have not yet been realized. Its teachings are based on the actual flowering of life—it requires beyond intellectual analysis and understanding an occult and mystical opening. The classical commentators are Śaṅkarācārya and Rāmānujācārya and others who came after them—Madhusūdana Sarasvatī, Venkatanātha and Śrīdhara Svāmī.

THE BHĀṢYA OF ŚAṅKARĀCĀRYA

We shall take up Śaṅkarācārya's *bhāṣya* (commentary) first. He does not forsake even in his study of the *Gītā* his central standpoint—the identification of Jīva and Brahman and the illusoriness of the world. He evaluates the different disciplines of spiritual life—*karma yoga* and *bhakti*—laid down for the pursuit of Truth. Each of these disciplines has a value of its own inasmuch as it releases us from bondage at different planes of existence. In many chapters Śaṅkara has given his reflections on Karma yoga. He sees the importance of Karma yoga and throws great light on

the place of *karma* in our life and traces out its connection with the higher phases of expression in spiritual life. According to him the *Gītā* takes note of many stages or expressions of *karma* (1) as a method of discipline in the social order and the source of enjoyment in life after death (2) as a principle of duty based on the categorical imperative (3) as a method of inward spiritual discipline and (4) as the waking up of the cosmic will in us and its application to the service of the world. But in his general philosophical outlook he has not laid any emphasis on *karma*. He has denounced it as not a proper method of realization of the Truth. But while commenting on the *Gītā* which presents the dynamic side of life he has developed it in all its phases, presented it as one with the dynamic being and pointed out its value as a method of spiritual expression, spiritual uplift and effective spiritual inspiration on the earth plane. The first three disciplines mentioned above represent *karma* in the former sense and the last one in the latter sense. In the dynamic side of our life *karma* exhibits itself as a force of social adjustment and as a method of spiritual awakening—the upward urge in which life exhibits itself as a constant inward force for a higher illumination and awakening. *Karma* is not an all too earthly concern. It has the constant urge of identifying itself with the cosmic will through which the new epochs of life get their formation and inspiration. The relation between spiritual aspiration and the movement of the cosmic will is very intimate. When Śrī Kṛṣṇa the Master enjoins upon Arjuna to be the instrument of his activities in the world order he was really invoking in him the cosmic will which is above all human ethical considerations. Here the dynamic side gets the fullest expression and is above all the ordinary and normal expressions of the will. The normal expressions are eloquent in the Vedas as supplying the root of satisfaction in the performance of sacrifices and in the upbuilding of the social order on the conservation of values. But it cannot go above them, call in the superior force that stands above all normatives and impresses the movement of the cosmic will in life through all creative formations. This is really *karma* of the superman above the normal standard of values. It all depends upon the higher opening in our being which removes all distinction between the human will and the Divine will. Emphasizing this at the end of His message after reviewing all the forms of discipline, Śrī Kṛṣṇa inculcates the complete resignation of the inner being to achieve the dynamic identification of our being with the Divine. This is supposed to be the highest discipline, but Śaṅkara true to his philosophical conception has interpreted this discipline to be abjuring all dynamical aspirations and finally to fix in the Transcendence.

Śaṅkara has emphasized the duty for duty's sake conception because

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

realization The *Gītā* has not overlooked it because the path of meditation is an analytical penetration of the Transcendental It is a method of getting into the Reality by removing the layers of being the formations of Prakṛti It requires perfect equipoise balance of being and complete detachment for the least vibration will break equanimity The more the initiate rises up towards illumination the more he will feel that the subtlest layer of being is filled with the revelation of *buddhi* as the cosmic principle This is the finest emergence and meditation on it has the beneficial effect of giving us acquaintance with the potential Divine

The *Gītā*, according to Śaṅkara has place for three fundamental categories of existence as *ksara aksara* and Purusottama *Ksara* is the order of evolutes—the changing principles in the universe *Aksara* is non relational transcendental reality behind them and Purusottama is the intermediate principle between *ksara* and *aksara* which controls everything in the world and is the source of perpetual knowledge and bliss In the course of evolution all the finite creatures may contact Purusottama and be endowed with all His powers and virtues and proceed further They may transcend these virtues which may have a cosmic character and influence but which cannot give them ultimate satisfaction associated with removal of all concentration and limitation in the *aksara* Brahman Purusottama is a stage which is indeed attractive inasmuch as it removes the qualities evolved in the Prakṛti and gives a kind of freedom but the personal life still lingers in a beatific form and with all bliss associated with it But this according to Śaṅkara is not the final stage of evolution which comes with the complete enthronement in transcendence in detachment from the dynamic principles however fine and glorious Śaṅkara thinks that this is the highest promise of the life of knowledge and in his interpretation of complete self surrender he has thought of the Absolute as the highest pitch of realization for it removes the basis of personal knowledge and consciousness completely In the *Gītā* Śaṅkara never loses sight of this metaphysical position but only indicates with splendid clearness how life seeking spiritual light passes through all the ways and paths comes to the final illumination and how in its spontaneous and natural inspiration it passes through all the stages in the growth of consciousness and completely removes all limitations in the transcendental apex of being This is the fundamental position of Śaṅkara as a commentator of the *Gītā*

THE BHĀṢYA OF RĀMĀNUJA

Rāmānuja as a theist adheres to the principle of atomicity of being and its evolution through the finer stages of Prakṛti till reaches the

supernal delight in Īsvara Rāmānuja believes in the dynamism of being and its aspiration through knowledge power and love This finer or transcendental dynamism is located in Mahālaksmī the divine consort of Mahāvisnu the ultimate Reality Mahālaksmī is associated with the creative order and with the individual soul All aspiring souls should relate themselves to Mahālaksmī as a source of inspiration and as the end of consummation of their evolution and spiritual fruition *Karma* therefore implies our effort to be dynamically united with Mahālaksmī in her creative inspiration and creative fulfilment It is not a blind urge but is inspiration of Mahālaksmī through our spirit Looked at from this point of view *karma* is spiritually formative because it frees the soul from the mechanical bondage and reveals the joy of spiritual creation in the order of actuality It introduces a new vision of the world-order as actuality being formed and sustained in the movement of Spirit

Since *karma* is associated with the movement of Nature it cannot exhibit the finer and higher dynamism of being working and expressing itself in the supernatural order—the realm of the Spirit The finer aspect of this dynamic movement is revealed with higher formations in knowledge and devotion Knowledge is perpetual functioning in Spirit for ultimately man is essentially spiritual and the order presented before it in superior spiritual plane is the divine order in rhythm in bliss There can be no cessation to this and the secret to get access there is still to disclose our being as essentially spiritual and integral part of the Divine When this is revealed true spiritual life emerges as moving in the Divine in thought feeling and activity The spiritual life affords the immanental beauties and powers active in the creative order and also the transcendental dignity beyond the creative order These are the impressions of the divine majesty and holiness and are ever the source of attractions towards the Infinite the earnest seeker feels the dignity of Divine life in its freshness through Nature specially through power and majesty This is evident in chapter eleven of the *Gīta* Divine majesty and dignity according to Rāmānuja are inherent in the Divine for the dynamic concept fits the powers in the Divine order naturally and spontaneously And according to him the essence of spirituality is fundamentally dynamic for the basic reality has in it a dynamic urge to express itself in creation and beyond creation The spiritual felicities are in the transcendent order and they express themselves with the unfolding of the spirit The creative order opens with and in Spirit but the transcendent order is full of spiritual felicities and blissfulness and does not contain the least conflict and confusion because it is essentially Divine and has no touch with the lower creative order which is full of strain and tension Śankara does not put his faith in the dynamic

spiritual expression because according to him dynamism is not spiritual although it can have glorious expression in a higher plane where the crude dynamism cannot function. This is the order of Īsvara and all glories that were manifested therein are after all *māyika*. This is the difference between Śankara and Rāmānuja. This may enkindle fine spirituality but the highest is reached in Transcendence. Śankara therefore does not hold a spontaneous expression in love and beauty; he does not lay much stress on them for according to him all dynamic expression does not fit in ultimate Reality and stands lower in value even the superior expressions in the higher order of existence fall short of the transcendental height and dignity. For this the best possible course is to suspend our normal activities in complete surrender.

True surrender is the automatic suspension of normal activities and the opening out of the Divine channel through which flows down the Divine mercy and power. It is in fact the establishing of the unfailing connection between the human and the Divine. It is the greatest instrument of evoking the Divine power and Divine being in the inmost depths of our existence and it shapes out the Divine form and puts a Divine touch on all our movements. Philosophically speaking it is entering into the archetypal order and drawing the Divine creative power. When this height of being is touched man is no longer the creator and he is not guided by his intelligence and power. The Divine power holds him up and reveals itself through all his activities. Rāmānuja thinks that this is the best route of attracting the Divine influence in us and permeating our whole being with it; the man is reborn and his total being is transformed by it. The senses the intelligence the psychic being all are influenced by this higher power and supramental intelligence and power become active in us.

In spiritual discipline Rāmānuja has put all the emphasis on surrender as it is the most inward of all spiritual disciplines and as it establishes a direct contact immediately. In spiritual life the most difficult of all ventures is to get out of touch with the normal and natural functioning of the dynamic process and to get hold of its Divine nature. This unfolding is not normally possible and to this end varied courses are followed. The normal course may be effective but it cannot help the Divine flowering of being and show its sublimity and beauty. *Saranagati* (complete resignation to God) has the greatest indrawn urge and makes its transformation complete and our being has a rhythmic expression and movement. It becomes a piece of poetry harmonic in expression beautiful in its cadence sweet and attractive in its activities. In surrender we get the finest in spiritual love as it gets its poise in the Divine and expression through the

Divine Life is held up here in the Divine and moves in the Divine and enjoys in the Divine the transformation becomes complete The power that it throws is also Divine and it moves either in the individual or in society in the most musical tune and gives an idea of what actually Divine life is Even when the bitterness becomes evident it transforms the distracted being and establishes peace in it The supernal delight beauty and power are enthroned in the heart of the world through this And therefore its importance has so greatly been upheld by Rāmānuja

To Rāmānuja surrender is the essence of spiritual life and forms the basic spiritual discipline for all other methods are involved in it Surrender gives the highest aspiration to Divine union and this is *yoga* It involves a kind of test which is the nucleus of devotion And with it comes knowledge in which the presence and the power of the Divinity are impressed on us With it descends a power from God gradually begetting our realization according to our aspiration It invites the dynamic Divine into our being and shapes our being in a way that can eventually make it a Divine instrument

MADHUSODANA SARASVATI

Madhusudana Sarasvatī was a great monist and did his best to logically establish monism in his famous *Advaitasiddhi* but in the commentary on the *Bhagavad Gītā* he has recognized the values of different channels of life's expression such as *yoga* and the analytical penetration of Sāṃkhya Ultimately he thinks that the best course in the life of the Spirit is the cultivation of devotion and he especially prefers Śrī Kṛṣṇa as the best emblem of the Divine giving solace in troubles and being the source of all blessedness for the soul Śrī Kṛṣṇa was to him his heart's rest life's joy Madhusūdana gives the highest place to devotion as the effective method of God realization In a sentence he has expressed that those who can worship the inscrutable Unmanifested may well do so but for him there is nothing greater than the thought of surrender to Śrī Kṛṣṇa and nothing sweeter than the love of Śrī Kṛṣṇa

Madhusudana had the mystic vision and he did not confine himself to the analytical and the logical method to open the sheaths of being He probed deeper and entered into indrawn urge which reveals itself with *śaranāgati* which concentrates itself on the Divine It is a method associated with the total being psychic as well as devotional and invites an urge from above which clarifies our being and reveals its Divine nature When this nature is revealed it passes through the different strata of our being till it catches the most potent urge upholding us in the creative order against many destructive forces and getting hold of the fine central

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

current of being which gets through the finer layers of being ultimately reaching the goal—the fellowship of the Divine This offers a great possibility of guiding our life according to Divine direction and Divine purpose Nothing earthly remains in the adept he becomes centred in the Divine But the highest beatitude in liberation had not been lost sight of by Madhusudana who expressly wrote that concentrating on the Divine the adept gets the superior satisfaction and dignity associated with the Divine and finally passes into the Transcendental and becomes liberated²

THE BHĀSYA OF ŚRĪDHARA SVĀMIN

Śrīdhara Svāmin was a commentator of the *Gītā* He recognized that the *aksara* is behind the world of creative evolutes and is ever in the state of unconditioned being but beyond the conditioned and unconditioned being he accepted the one who is dynamically more potent and is known as Purusottama who regulates the world order and who permeates every thing and is recognized as the most essential being of everything controller of everything and master of everything Śrīdhara regards this principle of Purusottama as more important as it has the profound poise of the *aksara* as well as the superior dynamism beyond the creative dynamism of Nature He therefore combines in it the transcendence as well as the superior beatitude of bliss and power Śrīdhara was also anxious to concentrate on the Divine by complete surrender He was in favour of giving up all duties going with the stations of life and believed sincerely that by forsaking these duties no sin would be incurred for the Lord gives the promise of liberation from all sins to those that are concentrated in Him

The *Gītā* is a book of books It shows how the realization of Reality demands that all the forces of being are to be set in the same channel In the method of achievement or *sādhana* it does not leave anything outside It assesses the premium of every effort every method and shows how ultimately they lead to realization by explaining the different relations of the soul It recognizes all methods analytical and devotional and finally the fulfilment of the Divine dynamism through devotion Because devotion brings the dynamic side of our being to the forefront and through spiritualization it is transformed into a Divine current which reveals the dynamic fulfilment (associated with devotion) and transcendental wisdom remaining hidden in the depth of the dynamic being is ushered in The Divine dynamism disassociates our being from Prakṛti (thus fulfilling the promises of the Sāṃkhya and the Patañjala) and associates it with the dynamic Divine revealing the possibilities of still higher blossoming This close

fellowship with the dynamic Divine yields a great force which reveals the truth of identity—the force of expansiveness which removes the least distance between the seeker and the sought so that occasionally the seeker has the feeling of identity with the Divine and finally realizes the transcendental dignity of being and not the least difference is left. This is the final spiritual fulfilment and the *Gītā* indicates it by the paths of *yoga* if one rightly follows them the final identity is sure to ensue. The *Gītā* thus shows how in the path of devotion all the spiritual possibilities meet and how the different paths holding different promises in the onward journey ultimately come to the depth of stillness—a unique spiritual realization which is the inevitable consequence of our spiritual yearning.

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ AND LATER GĪTĀ LITERATURE

EXTENT AND NATURE

BESIDES the *Bhagavad Gītā* which is generally known as the *Gīta* scholars have noticed many other tracts of varying lengths composed in verse form to which the title *Gītā* is given. Sixteen of them are from (a) the *Mahābhārata*¹ twenty from (b) the *Purāṇas* and similar treatises and four (c) found as independent works untraced to any other known epic or *Purāṇa*. Under the group marked (a) are to be found *Utathya Gīta*² *Vamadeva Gītā*³ *Rasabha Gītā*⁴ *Sadaja Gītā*⁵ *Sampaka Gīta*⁶ *Manki Gītā*⁷ *Bodhya Gītā*⁸ *Vicakhnu Gītā*⁹ *Harīta Gītā*¹⁰ *Vrtra Gītā*¹¹ *Parāsara Gītā*¹ *Hamsa Gītā*¹³ *Brahma Gītā*¹⁴ *Anu Gītā*¹⁵ and *Brāhmaṇa Gīta*¹⁶. In the group marked (b) are included two *Kapila Gītas*¹⁷ *Hamsa Gītā*¹⁸ *Bhikṣu Gīta*¹⁹ *Devī Gītā*²⁰ *Ganesa Gītā*²¹ two *Brahma Gītās*²² *Sūta Gītā*²³ three *Yama Gītās*²⁴ *Śiva Gītā*²⁵ two *Rāma Gītās*⁶ *Sūrya Gītā*²⁷ and *Vasīṣṭha Gīta*²⁸. Under the group marked (c) come four works *Astāvakra Gītā* *Avadhūta Gītā* *Uttara Gītā* and *Pandava Gītā*. The names *Īśvara Gītā*²⁹

The references to the *Mbh* given here are according to Pratap Chandra Roy's Edition

Mbh XII 90 91

⁸ *Ibid* XII 92 94

Ibid XII 125 128

Ibid XII 167

Ibid XII 176 In the Kumbhakonam Ed. *Samyaka* occurs in the place of *Sampaka*

Ibid XII 177

Ibid XII 178

Ibid XII 264

⁹ *Ibid* XII 277

Ibid XII 278 279

² *Ibid* XII 290 298

Ibid XII 299

Ibid XIII 35

Ibid XIV 16 51

Ibid XIV 20 34

Bhag III 25 33 The second one is attributed to the *Padma Purana* but not found in its *Anandaśrama* Ed. It is believed to be a work expounding mainly Haṭha yoga and also to contain references to Sufism, Jainism and Lingaism. It will be noted that titles like *Yama Gītā* and *Brahma Gīta* present also different tracts having the same title to denote them.

Ibid XI 13

Ibid XI 23

² *Devī Bhag. Purana* VI 92 40

³ *Ganesa Purana* *Kṛda khanda* Chs 138 148

Skanda Purana *Yajña vibhava khanda* *Uttara bhaga* Chs 1 12 and *Yogavasīṣṭha Nirvāṇa prakarana* 173 176 respectively

Ibid immediately following the above *Gīta*

Viṣṇu Purāṇa III 7 *Agni Purāṇa* III 381 and *Nṛsiṃha Purana* Ch VIII respectively

Claimed to be part of the *Padma Purana* in the book itself but not found in the *Anandaśrama* Ed. The work is published with commentaries from several places. The Gaudīya recension of the *Padma Purana* may be consulted for its source.

Adhyatma Ramayana VII 5 The second one in eighteen chapters is said to be from the *Guru jñāna vasīṣṭha tattva sarayana*.

⁴ Consisting of five chapters of the *Karma kanda* of the last named book.

Yogavasīṣṭha Nirvāṇa prakarana *Uttara khanda* Chs 39 40

Vide B S *Sankara bhāṣya* II 1 14 and II 3 45

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA AND LATER GITA LITERATURE

*Harī Gītā*³⁰ and *Vyāsa Gītā*³¹ in all probability refer to the *Bhagavad Gītā* only and no other work

Besides the thirty six *Gītas* mentioned above there is another class of composition which may be brought under the expression Later *Gītā* Literature and may be marked as (d) Some of these are synopses and other glorifications of the *Bhagavad Gītā* the notable example of the former being the *Arjunopākhyāna* in the *Yogavasīṣṭha*³² and that of the latter its precis in the *Agnī Purāṇa* III 380 *Gītā māhātmya* which eulogizes the merits of the *Bhagavad Gita* setting forth rewards for those who learn it and live up to its teachings *anga nyasa* (ceremonious touching of one's own body with specified fingers) and *kara nyāsa* (finger poses advised for conventional self purification) are given in many printed editions of the *Gītā* as a preliminary for its ceremonial recitation One such *Gītā mahātmya* in eighteen chapters is found in the Ānandasrama Edition of the *Padma Purāṇa* Others are said to exist in *Purāṇas* such as *Varāha Vayu* and *Śiva*

PROBABLE ORIGIN

When and wherefore did all these books and tracts arise? A tentative answer to this question and a short account of the teachings contained in these books are now given Tilak Vaidya and other scholars say that the text of the *Mahābhārata* including the *Bhagavad Gītā* as we have it now took shape from about the fifth to the third century B.C. In their opinion the creative and speculative genius of India was in a ferment at that time there was then a general revolt against the narrow ritualism³³ of the *karma kāṇḍa* of the Vedas The unquestioning followers of the *karma kāṇḍa* (that part of the Veda dealing with sacrificial rites) were for instance characterized in the *Gītā* as *avipascitah* (ignoramuses) and as persons attached to the unstable *gunas* of Nature Arjuna the aspirant was asked to give up all attachments to the three *gunas* i.e. to overcome the *dvandva* (desires and aversions, pleasures and pains) to abandon all worries relating to the acquisition and preservation of material wealth and to concentrate his attention on the realization of Reality (*Ātma tattva*) which is of eternal value

All earnest and sincere thinkers began to ask questions of perennial interest as those found in the opening verse of the *Śvetāśvatara Upaniṣad* Different inquirers gave different tentative answers to those questions regarding the origin sustenance and dissolution of the world of experience and the means to overcome the miseries of the world To these may be

Mbh XII 346 10 and 348 8 53

¹ *Vyasa Gita* means only the song of Vyasa

Yogavasīṣṭha Nirvana prakāṣaṇa Purvārḍha Chs 52 58

B G II 42 45

traced the rise and growth of the *āstika darśanas* (the orthodox systems of philosophy) the Bhāgavata Āgama Pāsupata Āgama and the like and the *nāstika darśanas* (the unorthodox systems) like those of the Cārvākas Jains and Buddhists also rose out of this enquiring spirit. The believers acknowledged the authority of the Vedas in varying degrees. The unbelievers totally denied the authority of the Vedas. The *Bhagavad Gītā* succeeded not only in coordinating and harmonizing the apparently conflicting views of the *āstika darśanas* but also in effectively combating the unorthodox view of the Cārvākas. Chapters five to fifteen of the *Bhagavad Gītā* bring out this synthesis prominently. Chapter sixteen dealing with the *āsuri sampad* exposes the fallacies of the unbelievers. In the *Gītā* the non-sentient Prakṛti or Pradhāna of the Sāṃkhya Yoga system was assimilated into the *apara* Prakṛti of Parameśvara (the supreme Divinity) and the Puruṣas were accepted as His *parā* Prakṛti. The Parameśvara of the *Bhagavad Gītā* is identified with the Īvara of the *yogins* the Bhagavat of the Bhāgavatas and the Brahman of the Vedāntins. The performance of the Vedic rites advocated by the Karma Mīmāṃsakas and the renunciation of all rites advocated by the Vedāntins are also harmonized here by showing that all works must be done without any attachment without any expectation of reward and in a spirit of dedication to the highest Deity Parameśvara. Śrī Śaṅkarācārya points out in his introduction to the *Gītā bhāṣya* that the *Gītā* mainly deals with two topics: (1) the ultimate Reality to be realized and (2) the means of realizing the ultimate Reality. This synthesis and these harmonized teachings of the *Bhagavad Gītā* appealed not only to the intellectuals but had a wider appeal. Enlightened teachers of the Vedic religion felt the necessity of propagating these teachings which were the best fitted to combat the doctrines of the Jains and the Buddhists. The Jains tried to claim outstanding Vedic seers like Ariṣṭanemi and Rṣabha as their Tīrthankaras. They poured forth abuse on Śrī Kṛṣṇa and contended that he was ultimately converted to Jainism. The Jātaka tales of the Buddhists narrated that Śrī Rāma was a previous *avatara* of the Buddha. All this insidious propaganda required strong counter-propaganda. The expounders of the Vedic religion began therefore to propagate illustrative expositions commentaries and glorifications of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. They tried their utmost to encourage and extol the understanding, observance and practice of the synthetic position adopted by the *Gītā* which may be summed up in the words *Brahma-jñāna Vāsudeva bhakti* and *niskāma karma*. The *Mahābhārata* contains brief commentaries and illustrative examples of most of the important verses of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. The various tracts in the *Mahābhārata* bearing the title *Gītā* can be held to have arisen in this way.

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA AND LATER GITA LITERATURE

A GITAS IN THE MAHABHARATA ANU GITA AND BRAHMANA GITA

The longest and the most prominent of the *Gītās* in the *Mahābhārata* are the *Anu Gītā* and the *Brāhmaṇa Gītā*. They emphasize the pre-eminence of the *Bhagavad Gītā* by saying that it is quite sufficient to enable one to realize the ultimate Reality. Arjuna nonchalantly tells Śrī Kṛṣṇa that he has forgotten the teachings imparted to him on the field of battle and requests Him to repeat it once again. Śrī Kṛṣṇa replies in a tone of vexation: "O Arjuna, it is impossible even for me to restate those teachings entirely with the same intensity, cogency and clarity; they are quite sufficient to enable one to realize the ultimate Reality. I am very much displeased with you for you have disappointed me by the deficiency of your attention and understanding; still I shall explain the cardinal teachings by means of illustrative stories. Then follow the allegories, parables and the *Brāhmaṇa Gītā*—the colloquy between the preceptor and the pupil. The name *Anu Gita* suggests that the teachings contained in it are in accordance with those of the *Gītā*. The goal it sets forth is freedom from the cycle of birth, decay and death. Bondage arises from a sense of plurality. It is this consciousness of plurality that causes the duality of pleasure and pain incidental to successive births and deaths. Freedom comes when unity is realized. Therefore *buddhi* (understanding) must be trained; it is the trainee (*śiṣya*) and the teacher (*guru*) who imparts this training is Pṛameśvara.

UTATHYA GITA AND VAMADEVA GITA

The text around which the *Utathya Gītā* is woven is the observance and practice of *dharma*. As this is inserted in the sub-*parvan* of the *Mahābhārata* dealing with *rāja dharma*, it dwells mainly on the right conduct of the king and is like a continuous commentary on a *Gītā* verse³⁴. The king should not do as he pleases; he should be guided by his *dharma*, namely the protection of his subjects. The world process is established in *dharma* and so the king must protect *dharma* in all its aspects and should not injure it; by injuring *dharma*, everything is ruined. As *dharma* increases, the prosperity of the State increases; as *dharma* wanes, the king and his kingdom wane. The king should eschew selfishness, conceit, pride and anger and all immoral traffic with women. He should unify his kingdom, spend freely for public works and for the benefit of his subjects; he should speak sweetly and avoid tyranny and be clean and pure in morals. Here the word *dharma* is used in the sense of rules of right conduct which must be understood and practised by all. *Vāmadeva Gītā* also dwells on the observance of *rāja dharma*. It states that the king should

possess self mastery must be a *jitendriya*. He should control anger, should avoid all empty words, and his aim should be not personal gratification but the well being of his subjects. He should neither be elated by success nor depressed by failures. Even in war he should observe *dharma* for victory gained by fraud is no victory. He should protect the good and weed off the wicked.

RSABHA GĪTĀ SADAJA GĪTĀ AND SAMPĀKA GĪTĀ

The first of these two emphasizes the abandonment of greed and avarice. Every one says 'This is mine' regarding the accumulated wealth of the world. The king must control the entire wealth of his kingdom and use it for *yajña* work done for the good of the world in a spirit of detachment and dedication to God. One must exalt oneself by such selfless work, one should not be depressed. The name *Sadaja Gītā* is given to the second piece because it consists of the statements of six persons—the five Pāṇdavas and Vidura—as to what is best for a person. Vidura says: 'The wealth of one's self consists in wide learning, sincere and intense concentration on the work on hand, renunciation of all selfishness, faith in the teachings of the Śāstras and *gurus*, work done without attachment and for the good of the world, forgiveness and forbearance, a clean mind free from all bias and prejudice, kindness and sympathy to all beings, truthfulness and self-control.' Arjuna says: 'The king should concentrate his attention on wealth of the State; he should encourage agriculture, cattle breeding, commerce, arts and crafts, and skilled labour. He should provide amenities for all his subjects and punish the wicked, and also realize that ignorance leads to darkness and knowledge to light.' Nakula and Sahadeva say: 'Pre-eminence must be given to *dharma* because *artha* and *kāma* will prosper only if *dharma* is maintained and because the world will go to ruin if *dharma* is injured.' Bhīmasena says: 'All the three ends—*dharma*, *artha* and *kāma*—must be pursued with equal importance and no invidious distinction should be made among them. He reminds his brothers that all persons—be they *ṛsis*, scholars, cultivators, cattle breeders or merchants—are in their vocations actuated by desire.' Yudhishthira says: 'All beings subject to the continuous cycle of birth, decay and death, desire to get release from it, but they do not understand what this release is and how it comes. Release comes only to him who is not attached to merit and demerit or to *dharma*, *artha* and *kāma*, and who has freed himself from all dualities, who maintains a balanced mind and who looks on gold and clay, desire and aversion, and pleasure and pain with indifference, and who does the duty allotted to him with detachment.' The *Sampāka Gītā* tells that one should not be elated by successes nor depressed by failures.

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA AND LATER GITA LITERATURE

Possession of wealth leads to pride and conceit and loss of wealth prompts one to acquire it by all foul means Renunciation verily leads to Bliss

MANIKI GITA

This treatise answers the question How should a man behave who wants to lead a normal life and also attain *nīhsreyasa* (highest good)? The aspirant must develop equanimity he must be free from restlessness be truthful be indifferent to opulence or poverty and cease from speculations (building castles in the air) The mind is full of different kinds of desires it is a wonder that it does not burst by bloating All acquisitions are lost still the mind does not learn a lesson The desire to accumulate wealth is a worry the loss of acquisition is worse than death and the separation from all the accumulated possessions is indescribable misery The man of wealth is killed by robbers he undergoes all kinds of sufferings and with all that he persists in accumulating wealth The *buddhi* must be fixed in *yoga* the internal organ must be fixed on right knowledge the mind must be fixed on Brahman then alone will there be cessation from attachment Then the aspirant will say Perish all greed avarice and miserliness Indifference to riches or poverty contentment and satisfaction equanimity and truthfulness self control and forbearance and kindness forgiveness and sympathy for all beings—these must develop in me In this state I enter Brahman as one enters a cool tank in summer and attains peace and quietness This peace obtained by the disappearance of all desires is sixteen times more than the proverbial happiness enjoyed in *svargaloka* (heaven) I kill all my seven enemies i.e. *kāma* (lust) *krodha* (anger) *lobha* (greed) *moha* (delusion) and *mada* (intoxication) *mātsarya* (carping spirit) and *ahankara* (egoism) and enter the indestructible world of Brahman and rule there like a king Manki developed this mentality and renounced all desires and attained the bliss of Brahman

BODHYA GITA VIKAKHNU GITA AND HARITA GITA

The *Bodhya Gītā*⁵ gives examples of persons who gave up desire and attained bliss Janaka the king Pingalā the courtesan Kurara the bird the serpent the Sāranga the archer and the maiden Janaka says that though Mithilā (his capital city) may burn nothing belonging to him burns Pingalā says that she has become indifferent whether a lover comes or not and that she sleeps well The bird throws off the carrion and it is not therefore pursued by the kite The serpent does not care to build houses The Sāranga lives without hunting any creature The archer

⁵ Similarity of this *Gita* with *Bhag* XI is noteworthy

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

intent on his marks does not care for the king passing by. The maiden pounds the rice without attracting anybody because she breaks all her jingling bangles. *Vicakṣṇu Gītā* condemns the killing of animals under the pretence of *yajña*. *Yajña* is really *Viṣṇu* and He has to be worshipped with milk and flowers. The eating of flesh and fish and the drinking of alcoholic liquors are not countenanced by the Vedas. *Hārīta Gītā* contains the rules of conduct to be observed by *sannyāsins*. They should abandon all desires and be free from fear of all sorts. They should not look at the faults of others nor speak of them. They should not injure any being or entertain hatred for anyone. They should quietly endure all hardships mental or physical and remain unaffected by praise, censure, abuse or insult. They should bless their oppressors and use sweet words to them. They should never make any bitter or caustic remarks. *Sannyāsins* should not allow themselves to be invited to dinner or to be honoured in any way. They should not expect sweet articles of food or blame any food given to them cooked or uncooked. They should be satisfied with a small quantity of any kind of food and must always appear cheerful and contented, mild and self-controlled and they must maintain silence and equanimity. *Sannyāsins* should not live in any house or keep company with others. Ensuring safety to all living beings, one goes out of his house as a *sannyāsin* and enters the world of light freed from all limitations.

VRTRA GĪTĀ PARASARA GĪTĀ AND HAMSA GĪTĀ

One sees all beings whirled in the cycle of *samsara* enjoying pleasures and suffering miseries in accordance with their good and bad deeds. What is the cause of all this? The answer is: The *Jīva* attains its eternal and permanent state only by gaining the knowledge of the *tattva* (Reality) and *mahatmya* (glory) of *Viṣṇu* by the practice of sense control⁹⁸. This is the theme of the *Vrtra Gītā*. The central question of the *Parāśara Gītā* is: What leads to the highest goal? The answer is: *Dharma* leads to *mokṣa*. In order to practise *dharma* the mind must be made pure, powerful and steady by associating always with good men and noticing only the good points. In this connection the famous chariot allegory of the *Katha Upaniṣad* is discussed. The mind purified, strengthened and made one-pointed realizes the immanent *Ātman* and experiences oneness with the Brahman. A résumé of the *dharma*s of the various *varṇas* and *āśramas* also is found here. It is tellingly emphasized that all extremes must be avoided and that instead of a long laborious course, short pithy courses must be pursued with intensity and sincerity. *Hamsa Gītā* teaches the

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ AND LATER GĪTĀ LITERATURE

necessity of developing the qualities of truthfulness self control forbearance and forgiveness in order to get a firm grasp of the nature of the ultimate Reality These qualities when developed will break all bonds and barriers and will place the aspirant above all temptations He must avoid all bitter and caustic words and cruel actions and control the urges of the five organs speech hand feet anus and the generative organ The most pithy verse here states The secret doctrine of the Upanisads is *satya* (ultimate Truth) *satya* leads to self control self control leads to *mokṣa*

B GĪTAS IN THE PURANAS

The Vedic religion expounds the goal and the means the goal is *tattva jñāna* knowledge of the Reality which is expounded in the *jñāna kāṇḍa* while the means to it is expounded in the *upāsanā kāṇḍa* and the *karma kāṇḍa* In expounding the *dharma* taught by the Vedas the preceptors sought to co ordinate and harmonize all the texts and to resolve the apparent contradictions in them This is known as the synthetic method (*ekavākyatā* or *samanvaya*) In the *Karma Mīmāṃsā* the texts of the *karma kāṇḍa* are sought to be coordinated and harmonized In the *Śārīraka Mīmāṃsā* the texts of the *jñāna kāṇḍa* are sought to be coordinated harmonized and explained The theory about the goal and the practice laid down for its attainment must also be harmonized with each other The Upanisads and the *Śārīraka Sūtras* lay greater emphasis on *tattva jñāna* The *Bhagavad Gītā* further emphasizes the practice of the means of attainment Freedom from bondage comes only to him who in his daily life sincerely practises³⁷ *niskāma karma* enunciated by Śrī Kṛṣṇa which demands unbounded *prema bhakti* (loving devotion) to Paramēśvara *Tattva jñāna* and *Paramesvara bhakti* must therefore exist together and work together for their mutual development and final consummation Any system of religious philosophy which does not bestow equal importance on both these branches will be defective The *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*³⁸ brings out this point prominently by saying The practice of *dharma* generates *bhakti* *bhakti* generates *vairāgya* (dispassion) these two together generate *jñāna*, and all the three must function jointly to enable the *sādhaka* to realize integrally and differentially the Reality called Brahman Param ātman and Bhagavat Śrī Śaṅkarācārya propounded the Advaita system establishing the synthetic unity of the *Prasthāna traya* (the triple foundation of Vedānta) by applying the synthetic method to it and harmonizing the teachings contained therein To bring out this harmony prominently

³⁷ Vide B G III 31 32

Bhag I 2 6 11

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

he had to bring the *Bhagavad Gītā* to the forefront and glorify it as a work of great authority as weighty as the Upanisads and the *Śārīraka Sūtras*. All the great spiritual preceptors who appeared after him followed his example and adopted the same method. Viśiṣṭādvaita, Dvaita, Śuddhādvaita, Bhedābhedaadvaita—all sought the sanction of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. All of them sought to establish that the *Bhagavad Gītā* supported their particular doctrine. When they could not directly get the sanction of the *Bhagavad Gītā*, they composed *Gītās* to fit their cults by imitating the *Bhagavad Gītā* or copying from it without acknowledgement. Such are *Rāma Gītā*, *Sūrya Gītā*, *Ganeśa Gītā*, *Devī Gītā*, *Śiva Gītā* and the like. Just as the *Bhagavad Gītā* speaks of Vāsudeva³⁹ as Paramesvara, the other *Gītās* speak of Rama, Surya, Ganapati, the Goddess Śiva and the like as the highest Deity according to their predilections.

THE GĪTAS FOUND IN THE BHAGAVATA PURĀṆA

Kapila Gītā introduces the conception of Īśvara (the supreme Being) into the Sāṃkhya system which does not accept the Īśvara or God. The keynote of this *Gītā* is that freedom from transmigration can be attained only by the realization of the ultimate Reality designated as Puruṣottama, Bhagavat and Vāsudeva by intense *bhakti*, *vairāgya* and *jñāna*. Its author Kapila is claimed to be an incarnation who came with the object of teaching Self-knowledge to all men and women. Emphasis is laid on the point that the mind engrossed in the *gunas* causes bondage and in union with the supreme Being leads to freedom. In the *Rudra Gītā*, Rudra initiates the sons of Prācinabarhiṣ called the Pracetas into the doctrine of loving devotion to Vāsudeva. He expounds the great dictum *Tat tvam asi* (Thou art That) and stresses the performance of works in accordance to the duties of the caste and orders of life for generating mental purity and intense devotion to the Lord Vāsudeva for realizing the ultimate Reality enunciated by the said *mahāvākya*. It is an attempt to bridge the gulf separating the Vaiṣnavas from the Śaivas. *Haṁsa Gītā* is Śrī Kṛṣṇa's statement to Uddhava of the doctrine which Vāsudeva gave to Sanaka and others expounding the dictum *So ham*—I am That. The Jīvātman and Paramātman are different from the five sheaths. These five sheaths arise by the various interactions of Prakṛti, its *gunas*, and the mind in the states of waking, dreaming and dreamless sleep. To realize the ultimate Reality, the Prakṛti and its interactions must be clearly distinguished from the actionless, changeless, eternal Ātman; the Ātman must be meditated upon with supreme purity and *bhakti*. The *Bhīṣma Gītā* contains Śrī Kṛṣṇa's teachings to Uddhava to illustrate the truism that wealth leads to misery.

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ AND LATER GĪTĀ LITERATURE

(*artham anartham*) A Brāhmaṇa who followed a profession unlawful to him and amassed great wealth by fraud theft and other foul means and did not put it to any good use alienated everybody by his miserliness and became miserable. He in his old age realized the truth and exclaimed: Alas! How much time and energy have I wasted in acquiring all these perishable articles in safeguarding them and finally in mourning over their loss if all this mis spent energy had been spent in acquiring the imperishable One Vasudeva how great would have been my gain!

THE DEVĪ GĪTĀ GANEŚA GĪTĀ AND ŚIVA GĪTĀ

These are imitations of the *Bhagavad Gītā* closely following it in scheme form substance and^o language. They aim to give a solution of the riddle of the round of births (*samsāra*) with all its sorrows and miseries and they also describe the eager yearning of souls in bondage to overcome these miseries. All these Gītās contain descriptions of the Vision of Universal form of the Deity similar to that found in the *Bhagavad Gītā*. These Gītās ask questions about the cause of bondage and misery and the way to remove them they are answered more or less in the same fashion in the light of the Advaita Vedānta as expounded by Śrī Śaṅkarācārya. All of them refer to the *jñāna karma samuccaya vada* (the theory of combining pure Knowledge with rituals) refuted by Śrī Śaṅkarācārya in his *bhāṣyas* and reject it as unsound and opposed to reason. Birth decay and death and pleasure and pain incidental to *samsāra* are experienced as real only by reason of *māya* (nescience) and *adhyasa* (misapprehension). The removal of this nescience is freedom the only means to which is *jñāna* the realization of the ultimate Reality and it can be developed only by *niskāma karma bhakti* and *yoga*.

The *Devī Gītā* is a dialogue in nine chapters between Devī Pārvatī and her father Himavat. The Goddess asked Himavat to equate and identify I you and He then to transcend the personal and realize the impersonal. Himavat was puzzled and asked the Goddess to explain how this could be done. She in reply, propounds to him the Advaita doctrine as expounded by Śrī Śaṅkarācārya and tells him that the Advaita experience can be obtained only by meditation on the Upaniṣad texts like *Tattvamasī*. Such meditation and realization are possible only to the strong and the pure in mind. To develop that degree of mental strength and purity, good and pure works according to the caste and orders of life must be performed without selfishness attachment and expectation of any reward and in a spirit of dedication to the Goddess. This is the gist of the first chapter of the book. The other chapters deal with the universal form of the Goddess meditation on the major texts of the Upaniṣads *astāṅga yoga*.

the *yogas* of *jñāna karma* and *bhakti* location of the temples dedicated to the Goddess and Her Vedic and Tāntric worship The *Ganesa Gītā* is a dialogue in eleven chapters between King Varenya and Ganesa Varenya asks what is *yoga*? Ganeśa answers that *yoga* is the realization of the fundamental unity underlying the apparent diversities of the world of experience Real *yoga* consists in apprehending the identity of Brahmā Visnu Maheśvara and others with Ganeśa who is the ultimate Reality

The *Śiva Gītā* consists of sixteen chapters The first chapter recites the *guru paramparā* (the succession of teachers) Chapters two and three stage how Sage Agastya initiated Śrī Rāma into *Śiva dīksā* Chapters four to sixteen form a dialogue between Śrī Rāma and his chosen Deity Śiva Agastya asks him what he is sorrowing over the body called Sītā or the Jīva Sītā If it is the body that he is sorrowing over he must see that the body is made up of perishable substances so there is no point in sorrowing over that which must of necessity perish If it is the Jīva he must realize that the Jīva is identical with the eternal and imperishable Brahman and so there is no point in sorrowing over it being eternal Agastya thus propounds to Śrī Rāma the Advaita Vedānta doctrine as expounded by Śrī Śāṅkarācārya Śrī Rāma asks Agastya how he is to disbelieve the universe of actual experience Agastya then initiates Śrī Rāma into *Śiva dīksā* and advises him to propitiate Śiva and to get from Śiva the solution of the problem Chapters four and five state how Śrī Rāma worships Śiva and gets a vision of the origin sustenance and destruction of this empirical universe that he has already killed Rāvana and other evil doers or in other words the evil doers have been killed by their own evil doings and that Śrī Rāma can easily kill Rāvana by being the proximate cause (*nimitta*)⁴⁰ of it Śrī Rāma then asks how this form of Umā Maheśvara can be the ultimate Reality Śiva quotes several Upanisadic texts and retails more or less the *viśhūtas* given in chapters nine and ten of the *Bhagavad Gītā* This is the subject of chapter six and the next one describes the universal form of Śiva as seen by Śrī Rāma Śrī Rāma's praise of Śiva sounds like Arjuna's praise of Śrī Kṛṣṇa⁴¹ In chapter eight Śiva answers how the bodies of creatures are developed Chapter nine deals with the physiology (*bhūta bhautika*) and psychology (*citta caittika*) of the human body Chapter ten deals with the *svarūpa* intrinsic nature of the Jīva The details given are in consonance with the teachings of Advaita Vedānta the individual soul is really the same as Brahman and transcends the senses and the intellect When it is joined to *upādhis* (conditioning factors) it is called Jīva when there is no *upādhi* it is Brahman Chapter eleven deals with the journey of the conditioned Jīva after death taking either

⁴⁰ B G XI 33

Ibid XI 36 45

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA AND LATER GITA LITERATURE

of the two paths beginning with the flame or with smoke leading respectively to gradual liberation or return to this earth through *candraloka* the world of the moon Chapter twelve says that the worship of Śiva has to be done both as the supreme Deity and as *sarvāntaryāmin* (the immanent Deity)⁴² Chapter eight speaks of the nature of *mukti* and its kinds *sālokyā* (residence in the same sphere) *sāmīpyā* (proximity) *sārūpyā* (similarity in form) and *sāyujyā* (unity) are then explained The final conclusion is that real *mukti* is the realization of the ultimate Reality attained only by *jñāna* Chapter fourteen speaks of the five sheaths and explains how they have to be differentiated subordinated to and distinguished from the Ātman by discrimination and dispassion The chariot allegory of the *Katha Upaniṣad* is here referred to Chapter fifteen explains the essentials of *bhakti* Chapter sixteen describes the *adhikārīn* (person competent) to learn and practise these teachings

BRAHMA GITA SŪTA GITA YAMA GITA

The first two of these are found in the *Skanda Purāṇa* and are not modelled on the *Bhagavad Gītā* They treat about the ultimate Reality styled as Śiva the One without a second (Advaita) The three *Yama Gītās* glorify Viṣṇu and give details of His *upāsana* and *pūjā* (internal and external worship) They remind us of the story of Ajāmila in the *Bhāgavata* Book Six in so far as they refer to the orders issued by the god of Death to his servants that they should not molest votaries of Viṣṇu These *Gītās* encourage fearlessness in the face of death such fearlessness is called *mukti* *Viṣṇu bhakti* thus leads to fearlessness and *mukti* This raises the question What is *Viṣṇu bhakti*? A person with a strong pure and well balanced mind who never thinks speaks or does evil or injury to another who is kind and sympathetic to all and who steadily performs all the duties of his caste and order of life is a *Viṣṇu bhakta* But a person who is selfish who covets the wealth and women of others who causes injury to others to gain his selfish ends who kills without mercy who is envious who does no good turn to his neighbours and whose mind is always full of foul thoughts does not find favour with the Deity Janārdana The other *Kapila Gītā* deals with Hatha yoga mainly and it appears to be post Islamic

RĀMA GITA

The *Rāma Gītā* of the *Adhyatma Rāmāyana* propounds the perennial philosophy of Advaita Vedānta as expounded by Śrī Śaṅkarācārya stressing

⁴² Passages from *Śve U Ka U M Nar U* and *T S* are borrowed here and ideas from *B.S III 3*

Brahman (here equated with Śrī Rāma) as the absolute Reality nescience as the root of transmigratory existence and knowledge born of the text That Thou art as the only means of dispelling bondage and nescience, and prescribes purity of mind as the condition for the rise of such knowledge *nirguna upāsanā* (formless meditation) as a means of *niruddha samādhi* (unperturbed absorption) which establishes one in the identity with the Absolute and devout service and worship of Śrī Rāma till one is rendered fit for that The *Rāma Gītā* of the *Guru jñāna vāsistha tattva sārāyana* is a very long text consisting of about a thousand *slokas* in eighteen chapters It is in the form of a dialogue between the aspirant Hanumat and Śrī Rāma The perennial philosophy taught herein is *anubhava advaita* which accepts *jñāna karma samuccaya* and maintains that a person must perform the duties pertaining to his caste and order of life without attachment and without expectation of any reward and in a spirit of dedication to Parameśvara even after he has well experienced the ultimate Reality (i.e. after his attaining illumination—*samyag jñāna*) According to the Advaita view of Śrī Śankarācārya a person who has transcended the body idea (*dehatma bhava*) and therefore not affected by pleasure and pain is a *jīvanmukta* (liberated in life) His working off of his *prārabdha karma* (momentum of fructifying deeds) with his living body does not interfere with his *mukti* he is not drawn back into *samsāra* But according to the second *Rāma Gītā* a *jīvanmukta* is not a real *mukta* Real *mukti* is attained only after the falling off of the physical body and attainment of *pūrṇa jñāna* (perfect illumination) This *Rāma Gītā* maintains that till *videhamukti* (final release) is attained *jñāna upāsanā* and *karma* must go jointly He who eschews one or the other will fall off from the path The *Guru jñāna vāsistha* refers to the Śaiva and Vaiṣṇava varieties of Viśiṣṭādvaita Chapter one introduces to us Ayodhyā Śrī Rāma's crystal hall and throne allegorically made up of *śruti vākyas*, *maharṣis* and *vidyās* Śrī Rāma is there represented with conch discus and mace like Vāsudeva He is in *niruddha samādhi* He comes down to *vyutthāna samādhi* There Hanumat sees him who requests him to explain the Impersonal Parabrahman This is the main question In chapter two Śrī Rāma answers that the Impersonal Parabrahman can be realized only by an aspirant meditating on the *veda vākyas* (scriptural sentences) By meditating on the teachings of even one of the Upanisads the *Māndūkya* one attains *mukti*—*jīvanmukti* first and then *videhamukti* The Upanisadic teachings about the Impersonal Absolute should be taught only to dear obedient sons devoted disciples or *bhaktas* and not to atheists and evil doers Chapter three says that mere learning of the Upanisadic texts is not sufficient but it must be accompanied by loving meditation on the

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GĪTĀ AND LATER GĪTĀ LITERATURE

sat cit ānanda aspect of the Parabrahman with the aid of the Upanisadic texts. Chapters four and five explain in detail *jīvanmukti* through *samyag jñāna* and *videhamukti* through *pūrṇa jñāna*. Chapter six stresses the importance of the absolute eradication of all *vāsanās* (latent dispositions). Chapter eight explains the seven steps in the process of spiritual advancement viz *śubhecchā* (spiritual eagerness) *vicāranā* (contemplation) *tanumānasī* (attenuation of the mind stuff) *sattvapatti* (attainment of peace) *anāsakti* (detachment) *padārtha bhāvanā* (conception of Truth) and *turīya* (the fourth state of the Self). The nature of *samādhi savikalpaka* and *nirvikalpaka* is also explained here. *Savikalpaka* type of *samādhi* is either *drśyānuvīddha* (attached to the mind stuff) or *śabdānuvīddha* (attached to the Upanisadic texts prescribed for meditation). *Śabdānuvīddha* is also called *samprajñāta*. *Nirvikalpaka* is called *asamprajñāta*. It falls into three stages (a) *nīhsankalpa* (b) *nirvitarka* and (c) *nirvāsana*. Chapter nine details the various *dharma*s and *ācāra*s (prescribed practices) of the castes and orders of life and stresses the extreme necessity of following and observing them till death. Chapter ten explains the nature and functions of the *sañcita* (accumulated) *āgamin* (prospective) and *prārabdha* (fructifying) varieties of *karma*s (actions productive of results). Chapter eleven explains the various types of aspirants according to their inherent dispositions. Chapter twelve contains a description of Śrī Rāma's universal form. Chapter thirteen explains the 256 *mantra*s of the *Pranava*. Chapter fourteen sets forth the four great dictums of the four Vedas and explains them. Chapter fifteen discusses the subject of the *nava cakras* (yogic centres in the body). Chapter sixteen examines the efficacy of the *siddhi*s (miraculous attainments mentioned by *yogins*), and condemns the desire to attain them as they are all obstructions in the path of *mukti*—*Samādhau upasarga*⁴³. Chapter seventeen explains the *vidyā*s (1) *Satya vidyā* (2) *Dahara vidyā* (3) *Vaiśvānara vidyā* (4) *Pañcāgni vidyā* (5) *Sodaśakālā vidyā* (6) *Udgītha vidyā* (7) *Śāndilya vidyā* (8) *Purusa vidyā* (9) *Paryanka-vidyā* (10) *Aksara vidyā* (11) *Samvarga vidyā* (12) *Madhu vidyā* (13) *Prāna vidyā* (14) *Upakosala vidyā* (15) *Sad vidyā* and (16) *Bhūmā vidyā*. Chapter eighteen contains a synopsis of the whole work.

SŪRYA GĪTĀ

The teachings of the *Sūrya Gītā* are similar to those of the *Rāma Gītā*. Whereas in the *Rama Gītā* the Immanent Divine is Rāma here it is Śiva. The philosophy taught is thus Śivādvaita. *Mukti* is attained by the combined practice of *jñāna karma* and *upāsana*. He who abandons one or

other of these will fall off from the path. It makes mention of Śaiva and Vaiṣṇava Viśiṣṭādvaita. The first two chapters of the work are introductory. Brahmā asks Dakṣiṇāmūrti (Śiva facing south as teacher of supreme knowledge) to explain how this world of sense experience has come out of the supersensual impersonal First Cause Brahman. Dakṣiṇāmūrti reproduces the dialogue between Aruna and Sūrya. Aruna asks Surya to explain to him the evolution as well as the involution of this universe of experience. The answer shortly is this. The Universe of experience or *samsāra* is the result of the deeds of the Jīva. The *vyavahārika samsārīn* (the empirical transmigratory soul) is the Jīva who performs good and bad actions. The *prātibhāsika samsārīn* (the apparent transmigratory soul) is Īśvara. The Parabrahman who is the ultimate cause of these *samsārīns* and their *samsāra* is *asamsārīn* (has no *samsāra*). Good and bad actions are actuated by good and bad *vāsanās* (tendencies) and *samskāras* (impressions). As long as deeds are performed the *samsāra* will persist for the doer and they are of five kinds: (1) *Tāntrika* (2) *Paurāṇika* (3) *Smārta* (4) *Vaidika* and (5) *Aupanisada*. By leaving off the first four kinds and by performing only the last variety called *upāsana* the aspirant develops *Aupanisada jñāna*. Thus *karma upāsana* and *jñāna* must go together. Chapter three explains the *svarūpa* (real nature) of the immanent Śiva (in Sūrya) as *satyam jñānam anantam* and gives all the *nitya vibhūti*s (eternal attributes) of Śiva. Chapter four explains Śiva's *līlā vibhūti*s (playful attributes). Chapter five explains the attributes of the *karmī śreṣṭha* which is analogous to those of the *sthūtaprajña* in the *Gīta*.⁴⁴

The *Brahma Gītā* and *Vasistha Gītā* of the *Yogavāsistha* are both expositions of Advaita Vedānta. They are couched in the form of questions by Śrī Rāma and answered by Vasistha. The main question is: How can this sensual world of experience be identical with the supersensual Brahman? The answer is Advaita realization as expounded in the Upanisads.

D THE INDEPENDENT GĪTAS

The *Astāvakra Gītā* in twenty-one chapters is a dialogue between Astāvakra and Janaka of the *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad*. It concerns itself with the one question: How to attain freedom from *samsāra*? The answer is that freedom comes only with the realization of the ultimate non-dual Reality. If anybody wants to be free from birth, decay and death, he must first eschew all evil and develop good qualities like universal kindness and friendliness. He must meditate on the Ātman, the One without

IMITATIONS OF THE BHAGAVAD GITA AND LATER GITA LITERATURE

a second with the aid of the *neti neti-ādesa* the doctrine of negating what It is not. It means that this phenomenal world of experience is not absolutely real; that behind it is the ultimate Reality and that the ultimate Reality is the basis of this apparent reality of the phenomenal world. The last chapter is a short subject index. The *Avadhūta Gītā* is the ecstatic song of an Avadhūta who realized the ultimate Reality. This Avadhūta is said to be Dattātreya. According to the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* Dattātreya is an *avatāra* of Viṣṇu, the son of Atri and Anasūyā. Literally the word Avadhūta means one who has shaken off all his appendages—an *atī varnāśramin* or a *sannyasin*. The treatise consists of eight chapters. Chapters one to seven describe the ecstatic experience of the Avadhūta concerning the ultimate Reality. The eighth chapter explains the significance of the four syllables of the word *ī e a va dhū ta*. *A* means free from all desires and passions, all pure and moored in *Ānanda*; *va* means free from all *vāsanās*; *dhū* means the purified mind though the body is covered with dust; *ta* means fixed in *Tat* after being freed from *ahamkāra*. This *Gītā* emphasizes the necessity to overcome the sex idea and sex impulse. The *Uttara Gītā* is a short treatise in three chapters. The first chapter begins with the question of Arjuna to Śrī Kṛṣṇa: How to obtain *Brahma jñāna* by which one becomes immediately free from *samsāra*? How to know the Brahman which is One, undivided, unknowable, unpredictable, unlimited, beginningless and endless? The rest of the book consists of Śrī Kṛṣṇa's answer. It stresses the supreme necessity of *Viṣṇu bhakti*, *vairāgya* and *yogabhyāsa* along with Upanisadic *jñāna*. Everything pertaining to the tongue and sex must be controlled and renounced. With the aid of *bhakti*, *vairāgya* and *yoga jñāna* can be realized by constant meditation on *Tat* which transcends all pluralities and predicates and attributes—the Brahman immanent in all. The *Pandava Gītā* consists of a number of laudatory stanzas by a number of Bhagavatas. It extols *bhakti* and *prapatti* (undivided devotion and unqualified surrender) to Viṣṇu as the most effective means to attain freedom from transmigratory existence.

PART III

THE PURĀNAS

INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

MYTHOLOGY is very aptly described as the language of the primitive What the early man failed to express satisfactorily through the medium of words he tried to express through the medium of mythological concepts In their primary form therefore myths cannot be said to be the result of poetic invention in the sense which these words now bear If philosophy attempts to discover the ultimate truth mythology must be said to represent the human effort to attain at least to the penultimate truth of which all experience is the temporal reflection As a matter of fact it is possible to psychoanalyse so to say a people by means of a critical study of its mythology¹ Through their numerous legends of cosmogony of gods and of heroes the Indians have given expression—fuller and finer than any other people in the world—to their beliefs ideals and traditions

Early Vedic Mythology In the absence of any literature belonging to the pre Vedic period we cannot make any statement regarding the mythological concepts which were then prevalent Considering that the Vedic religion is a growth of many centuries and has been elaborated by the fertile and subtle brains of a number of generations of active people it becomes quite understandable that it should defy any attempt at a sweeping definition in one word What is true of Vedic religion is equally true of Vedic mythology for in the concept of Indian religion particularly Vedic religion the elements of religion mythology and magic are inextricably interlaced It has been suggested that the early Vedic religion is Naturalism pure and simple and Vedic mythology can be studied in its proper perspective only on the background of the history of the development of human thought as a whole It must be emphasized that Vedic mythology is essentially an evolutionary mythology It has reacted to the many vicissitudes in the life of the Vedic Indians and with each vicissitude new elements have been introduced into the personality of a Vedic god It is this dynamic process that has been responsible for the complex character of Vedic gods It is however not altogether impossible through a critical study of Vedic literature with the aid of comparative philology comparative mythology and anthropology to determine on the one hand the order in which particular gods have at different stages dominated Vedic mythology and on the other to fix the priority of the various elements in the personality

¹ For instance see H Zimmer *Maya Der indische Mythos* (1936)

of an individual god and thus to present as it were a picture of his becoming Vedic mythology as we know it from the *Rg Veda* is clearly dominated by the personality of Indra. But taking into account the facts of anthropology comparative mythology and the history of the Vedic Indians one may safely conclude that this could not obviously have been the original state of things. Similarly in post Vedic mythology Indra has not retained his position as the supreme god in the Indian pantheon. And it is possible to discover in the Vedic literature itself the beginnings of this significant mythological event.

Asura Varuna In one of the earliest stages in the development of his religious thought the Vedic Aryan like his Aryan cousins was deeply struck by the vastness and brilliance of nature. He must have soon discovered that this nature is not chaotic or unplanned. Its various phenomena are strictly regulated and controlled even to the minutest detail. In short they present a picture of cosmos. Consequently an attempt was made to solve the mystery of this cosmos. And the mythological outcome of this attempt was the concept of Asura Varuna². It was imagined that the secret of the regular and planned working of the various phenomena of nature big and small lay in the fact that everything in this cosmos was bound down and thus controlled by a great sovereign lord. Philologically the word *varuna* is derived from the root *vr* meaning to bind. Varuna is said to have been enabled to accomplish this mighty feat because as the Vedic Indian explained in the light of his own primitive thought Varuna possessed in the highest possible degree the universal magic potency fluid the *asu* (lit life). In other words Varuna was Asura the possessor of *asu par excellence*. He is thus the universal sovereign the *samīāj* who from his watery abode enforces and maintains the cosmic law *rta*.

The emergence of the mythological concept of Varuna and his cosmic law *rta* indeed represents an event of great significance in the history of the development of Vedic thought as a whole. In course of time an entire distinct and almost independent mythology came to be built up on the foundation of the magic cosmic concept of bondage. The Vedic ideas and allusions relating to Varuna Mitra Ādityas and Aditi can be best understood only on such an assumption. Anthropologically the mythical concepts of Dyaus and Varuna fit in very well with the general thought pattern of a people in whose life nature was still a *force majeure*. The early Vedic Aryans inevitably emphasized the cosmic view of the world with all its implications. From the historical point of view the concept of the cosmos and its magician ruler the great Asura seems to have been evolved by the

ancestors of the Vedic Indians and their Iranian cousins—that is to say by the people who are specifically called the Aryans—when they lived together most probably in their secondary *Urheimat* (original home) in the Balkh region. The very process of the evolution of what may be called the Varuna religion as indicated above will explain why not many mythological legends have been associated with the Vedic divinities Varuna Mitra Ādityas and Aditi.

Indra From among the common stock of the Aryans responsible for the concept of Asura Varuna some ambitious warlike tribes headed towards India victoriously fighting their way to the land of the seven rivers. No longer content with the cosmic religion of Varuna and *ṛta* they were in need of a new religion which would suit their new life and activities. Their adoration was therefore gradually transferred from the more or less distant and abstract magician ruler of the cosmos to the more real hero who led them in their glorious battles namely Indra. It was then but the natural next step that this hero should be made a god. The major portion of the *Rg Veda* obviously concerns itself with this stage in the evolution of Vedic religious thought. Indra was universally recognized by the Vedic Indians as their national war god and so he dominated the entire Vedic mythology. Incidentally it may be pointed out that on such an assumption the so called schism between the Vedic and the ancient Iranian religions becomes historically quite intelligible.

The character of Indra as the national war god necessarily resulted in the growth of a large number of myths pertaining to that god. The basic form of these myths is represented by Indra's successful encounter with the demon Vrtra and his releasing of the imprisoned cows waters or light. In course of time every warlike act and every conceivable superhuman exploit came to be attributed to Indra. He was also regarded as the rain god who by means of his thunderbolt shattered the cloud demon Vrtra and thus caused the rain to shower. He thus easily superseded the original Aryan rain god Trita Āptya. Attempts are also made to see in Indra the sun god overpowering the winter demon. The fact that the nature myths associated with the Vedic Indra are the result of a conscious superimposition of naturalism on the original heroic character of that god becomes obvious to any critical student of the *Rg Veda*. Indeed such superimposition of naturalism is a common mythological phenomenon and is clearly seen in respect of several Vedic gods. Another mythological trend which was assimilated with the concept of the Vedic Indra came from the common stock of legends upon which as a matter of fact the mythologies of several peoples in the world have freely drawn. It is the legend of the mythical hero and the dragon Vrtra the original representative leader of the foes.

of the Vedic Indians—and later regarded as the cloud demon or winter demon or the demon of darkness—thus often figures as a terrible dragon *ahi* lurching dangerously among the waters

Mythology connected with Indra tended to become richer and richer by associating him with Soma Maruts etc. *Soma* an intoxicating drink prepared from a plant believed to have hailed from the Mūjavat mountain played the central role in the religious rites of the Aryans in their common abode in the Balkh region adjoining the Mūjavat. With the rise of the Indra religion however in keeping with the common mythological idea a kindly but impulsive war god accomplishing super human feats under the influence of an intoxicating drink personified as a god Soma came to be associated with Indra. The original character of the Maruts chief among Indra's personal attendants is vague and shadowy in early Vedic literature. That the Maruts were originally messengers of death would appear from the name Marut (derived from $\sqrt{\text{mar}}$ to die) and from their association with the original god of death Rudra. The well organized soldierlike group of Maruts caught the fancy of the Vedic poets who connected them with the war god Indra. With Indra's emergence as rain god the Maruts correspondingly became the storm gods.

Ásvins As in the case of Indra the origin of the concept of Ásvins the divine twins frequently celebrated in the Vedas as the miracle working helpers of humanity is to be sought in some real human heroes. In course of the development of Indian mythology such historical individuals often tended to become transformed into institutions and became mythical in character. Accordingly every miraculous act of help came to be assigned to the mythical Ásvins and a rich crop of mythological legends grew around them. The Ásvins figure as rescuers of Atri from the fiery pit rejuvenators of the decrepit Cyavana saviours of Bhujyu from drowning in the mid ocean suppliers of an iron leg to the crippled Viśpalā etc. Legends of more or less similar character evolved round the personality of the three divine artisans the Rbhus.

Agni Agni the Vedic fire god who stands next in importance to Indra is essentially a domestic divinity—a divinity which brings the world of man closer to the world of gods. He is variously described as the priest, the mouth or the messenger of gods and the carrier of the oblations offered to them. Out of this simple cult of fire partly by combining it with the various *soma* rites and partly by complicating it with the addition of several elements of what Oldenberg very aptly calls prescientific science³ the Vedic priests later on developed a very complex and elaborate

³ Oldenberg *Vorwissenschaftliche Wissenschaft Die Weltanschauung der Brahmana—Texte* (1919)

INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

system of ritual The early Vedic myths however relate mainly to the production disappearance and rediscovery of Agni The Vedic poets often speak of the three forms of Agni—namely as fire on the earth as lightning in the mid region and as the sun in the sky

THE SO CALLED SOLAR DIVINITIES

And this brings us to the so called solar divinities in the Vedas—so called because many of them can be shown to have originated out of concepts which are essentially different from the solar phenomena Mitra for instance who is generally regarded as the sun god belongs originally to the spiritual world dominated by Varuna The idea underlying the concept of Mitra is again that of bondage⁴ Mitra presides over pacts and contracts among men and thus keeps them together (*yātayati*) Broadly speaking he may be said to be in respect of the human life what Varuna is in respect of the cosmic life To the same spiritual world also seems to belong Savitr who stretches out his majestic hands—a gesture most befitting in a cosmic magician ruler—and sets in motion the orderly functioning of the various aspects of life⁵ The Vedic allusions to Pusan make him out to be a pastoral god who preserves cattle from injury and brings them home safely from the notorious cattle lifters the Panis⁶ A critical study of the Vedic passages pertaining to Mitra Savitr and Pusan produces a clear impression of certain solar myths having been super imposed—and that too in a vague and distant manner—on the original characters of these gods In the evolution of Vedic mythology there was indeed a distinct stage when several of its concepts were so to say, artificially solarized In some cases such solarization would seem to have been particularly tendentious

Viṣṇu The Vedic religion as generally known from the early Vedic literature seems to have been already consolidated into a hieratic religion, dominated by Indra and characterized by the *soma* ritual and the fire cult The sponsors of this official religion were naturally averse to the formal adoption and acceptance of the religious ideologies of the common man—ideologies which must be gradually pressing their claim in an unmistakable manner Such is indeed the case in respect of almost all religions When however the pressure of the popular religious ideologies makes it inevitable for the official religion to adopt them the priests and poets of the hieratic religion attempt to suppress such elements of the popular religion as are abhorrent to their sophisticated minds and to transform its original

⁴ See Asura Varuna

⁵ Dandekar New Light on the Vedic God—Savitr ABORI XX pp 293 316

Dandekar Pūṣan the pastoral god of the Veda NIA V pp 49 66

character by ingeniously superimposing upon it quite alien concepts. That Visnu appears in the Vedas predominantly as a solar divinity is the result of some such mythological process. It can be shown on the strength of considerable evidence drawn from Vedic literature and ritual that Visnu must have originally been a god of fertility and productivity—in other words a god intrinsically connected with the life of the agricultural and pastoral communities among the Vedic Indians.⁷ The name Visnu derived from the root *vi* meaning to fly means a bird and from the anthropological point of view it is interesting to note that in several primitive religions a bird is the symbol of fertility and productivity. When the poets and priests of the hieratic Vedic religion found it necessary to admit this god of the common people in the official pantheon they tried to set aside the various rites and ideas suggestive of sexual orgies which were originally connected with the Visnu worship. In this connection a reference may be made to another significant tendency of the Vedic poets. The elevation of a popular god to a place in the hieratic Vedic mythology is usually indicated by that god's being artificially associated with Indra or with Soma or Agni. Visnu's vague and pointless connection with Indra as his subordinate ally would adequately illustrate this peculiar mythological device often employed by Vedic poets. At a later stage in the history of Hindu religion however when the peculiar hieratic mentality of the Vedic poets and priests was overwhelmed by the upsurge of really popular religious sentiment—this fact eventually resulting in the prominent Vedic gods being put into the background—Visnu again recovered his original importance.

It would thus be seen that Sūrya is perhaps the only god in the Vedas who can be regarded as a genuine solar divinity. Some of the important solar myths in the Vedas have their origin in the exuberant fancy and imagination which the Vedic poets bring to bear on the descriptions of the phenomenon of dawn. The marriage of the sun's daughter Sūryā at which several gods are said to have participated in a race with a view to qualifying themselves for the bride's hand is also graphically described.

Yama. The original mythological concept underlying the character of Yama seems to be that of a hermaphrodite being—neither a full fledged god nor yet quite an ordinary human being but a sort of god-man—who subjected himself to self-immolation for the sake of the creation of the universe and humanity.⁸ At a later stage of this cosmogonic myth the hermaphrodite was separated into a male and a female, Yama and Yamī who came to be regarded as the first parents of humanity. Yama as the

⁷ Dandekar Visnu in the Veda *Kane Comm. Vol.* (1941) pp. 95-111.
 Dandekar Yama in the Veda *B. C. Law Volume* Part I pp. 194-209.

first man to be born naturally was also the first to die. He founded so to say a colony of the dead and ruled over it as its lord. Vedic poets speak of Yama as a legendary king who by his holiness was enabled to establish a realm of immortal life and bliss for the righteous of the olden times to which good men of all generations have a right of entry. There under a beautiful tree he revels in the company of gods entertaining kindly thoughts about the *pitrs* (manes). Though the later mythical conception of *svarga* (heaven) seems to have been adumbrated in such Vedic references it is interesting to note that there is in early Vedic literature hardly any specific allusion to hell.

The famous *Purusa sūkta*⁹ elaborates in detail the cosmological myth of the self-immolation of a primeval being vaguely indicated in certain Vedic references to Yama. The Brāhmaṇa literature wherein Prajāpati is stated to have started the process of creation, supplies another version of the myth. The existence of a certain unapparent condition which cannot be designated either as *sat* (entity) or as *asat* (non entity) at the beginning of the world is indicated in the mystic *Nāsadiya sūkta*¹⁰ giving another Vedic cosmogonic concept. The basis of most of the Purāṇic cosmogonic legends however is to be found in the *Hiranyagarbha sūkta*¹¹ according to which originally there were waters everywhere and among these primeval waters there arose a golden egg which eventually broke itself up into two hemispheres.

Rudra. The god of death according to the early popular mythology was not Yama but Rudra the red one. He was also the god of wild communities living among mountains and forests who were generally given to uncivil activities. When such a god had to be admitted to the hieratic pantheon as in the case of Viṣṇu an attempt was made to suppress the original character of Rudra and superimpose upon him the character of some heavenly god. In both the cases however in spite of such tendentious attempts on the part of the Vedic poets and priests there do exist in Vedic literature and ritual certain indications which unmistakably betray the original personalities of these two gods. Like Viṣṇu Rudra also emerges in later Hindu mythology as a god of great importance and popularity assimilating to himself during this process certain elements of the character of Paśupati of the Indus religion and of the Dravidian Śiva.

Gandharvas and Apsarases. In Vedic literature the mythology relating to semi-divine beings like the *gandharvas* and the *apsarases* is not very much developed. From a rather obscure dialogue hymn in the

R I X 90

⁹ *Ibid* X 129

¹¹ *Ibid* X 121

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

*Rg Veda*¹² we know how Urvaśī the divine nymph having been united with Purūravas the human king and after living with him for four autumns left him suddenly on his violating the stipulated conditions of their union and how Purūravas made futile entreaties to her to return to him. Several versions of this legend occur in the later Vedic and Purāṇic literature¹³. Though it is usual to see in the legend of Purūravas and 'Urvaśī some aspect of the solar phenomenon it seems more likely that its underlying concept is that of a ritualistic function namely the production of the sacrificial fire by means of the two fire sticks the *uttara arani* and the *adhara arani*.

Mythical Sages In connection with the exploits of the Vedic gods or sometimes even independently Vedic literature mentions several mythical sages like Manu Angiras and Bhṛgu. Some of the traditionally recognized authors of the Vedic hymns also figure in many legends partly mythical and partly historical. In the hymns called the *dānastutis* for instance Vedic poets have eulogized the charities of several kings and patrons of the Vedic Age. By far the most important historical event however which has been responsible for the growth of a large number of legends is the famous battle of the ten kings. This was a battle fought by the Aryan tribes among themselves. The earlier Aryan colonizers, led by ten kings resisted—though unsuccessfully—the ambitious onward march of the fresh tribes of Aryan immigrants the Bharatas and the Trtsus led by Sudās. More prominently than the warlike activities of the fighting forces however the Vedic poets speak of the priestcraft of the rival *purohitas* Vasistha and Viśvāmitra the superior priestcraft ultimately proved to be the deciding factor in the battle.

VEDIC RELIGION

Vedic religion is broadly speaking polytheistic and therefore affords ample scope for an exuberant growth of myths and legends. Further like every polytheistic religion, it is conspicuously tolerant in attitude. This fact has resulted in the assimilation by it of varied mythological trends. There are, in Vedic religion also clear traces of animism which however has not proved very fruitful from the mythological point of view. It only indicates that Vedic religion was tending towards a sort of pantheism and was thus gradually becoming spiritual in character. Incidentally it may be pointed out that Vedic religion shows hardly any traces of idolatry.

The more or less comprehensive statement of the early Vedic mytho

¹² X 95
Sat Br XI 5 1 *Ka U* 8 10 *Mbh.* I 75 15 ff *Hv* 1363 ff *Viṣṇu* IV 6 19 ff
Mat 24

INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

logy attempted above will now help us to understand the later Brāhmanic and Hindu mythological concepts in their proper perspective. For the latter represent either a reaction against or an embellished growth out of the former. Of course this evolution presupposes several factors in the cultural history of ancient India such as the clash of cultures, the fusion of races and the consequent process of assimilation, modification and rejection.

MYTHOLOGY IN THE BRĀHMANAS AND UPANIṢADS

All mythological concepts in the period of the Brāhmanas were made subservient to the concept of sacrifice which was then regarded as an end in itself. While the injunctive part (*vidhi*) of a Brāhmana text concerns itself with the details regarding the theory and practice of different sacrifices, the eulogistic part (*arthavāda*) is essentially devoted to their glorification through the agencies of etymology, *bandhutā* or mystic bonds and illustrative legends. Mythical wars between gods and demons serve as the background for a large number of these illustrative legends. It is only through the efficacy of sacrifices that gods are said to have attained to godhead and overpowered demons. The Brāhmanas raise the sacrifice to the position of the omnipotent world principle and employ several mythical legends with sacrifice as the central theme to illustrate their cosmogonical, ethical, eschatological and other teachings. Prajāpati's continuous process of sacrifice is said to be responsible for the creation of the world. Even the legend of Manu and the deluge which is essentially cosmogonic in character has been employed in the Brāhmanas mainly to glorify the sacrificial oblation called *idā*.¹⁴ The essential elements of many of the Brāhmanic legends seem to have been derived from the floating literary tradition of the *sūtas* which must have been as old as—if not older than—the literary tradition preserved in the Vedas. At the same time not a few of these legends like those of Hariścandra and Śunahśepa¹⁵ can be said to have as their basis actual historical and biographical episodes. The *pārīplavas* and the *narāśamsīs* narrated at some sacrifices like the *aśva medha* and the *rājasūya* belong principally to this class of legends.

Likewise in the Upaniṣads the main teachings are generally presented on the background of some narratives which tell us about the doings of gods or their relation to human worshippers or the incidents in the lives of different sages, thinkers and teachers. The *Chāndogya Upaniṣad* for instance teaches us the true nature of the Ātman through the narrative of Indra and Virocana who approach Prajāpati for obtaining true knowledge.

¹⁴ *Śat Br.* I 8 1

At Br. VII 13 18

of the self where it is shown how Virocana was satisfied just by the first instalment of Prajāpati's teaching while Indra persisted finally realized the true nature of the Ātman and became all victorious¹⁶ The *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad* tells us of the various incidents in the life of the great Yājñavalkya—of his philosophical bouts in the assembly of King Janaka¹⁷ and of his intention to divide his property between his two wives Maitreyi and Kātyāyani¹⁸ The Upanisadic teachers were very fond of parables and myths by means of which they tried to represent allegorically the various philosophical truths Such myths are often employed to convey a moral lesson or to illustrate aetiological or transcendental concepts On the whole the mythological element in the Upanisads is thus made entirely subservient to philosophical teaching

The freedom afforded by the early Vedic works in religious matters was curtailed in the Brahmana period by the priestly class by developing a very elaborate and complicated system of Vedic ritual which tended to restrict the religion of the period to these professional priests of the time and their rich patrons It being impossible for a common man either to master the increasingly complicated technique of the Vedic sacrifice or to make the elaborate preparations necessary for its performance he gradually became estranged from this religion of the favoured few This growing discontent with Brāhmanic ritual and all its implications were also shared by the truly intellectual class which was opposed to the attitude of blind acceptance encouraged by the priest and the exaggerated emphasis laid on the form rather than on the spirit The absolutistic speculations of the Upanisads which partly arose out of that discontent satisfied the spiritual urge of the intellectuals in some measure But owing to their peculiar characteristics—such as the high intellectual level and rigorous spiritual discipline demanded by them their essentially individualistic attitude their apparent lack of uniform and consistent doctrine their mysticism and their preaching about the futility of the worldly existence—the Upanisads also failed to appeal to the common man

Unlike the early Vedic religion which was characterized by assimilative tendencies and mythological richness neither the Brāhmanic ritualism nor the Upanisadic spiritualism could therefore become a popular religion in the true sense of the word A religion in order that it may become popular needs a simple and uniform spiritual doctrine a good deal of mythology certain easy practices of worship and a sort of generally elastic attitude The failure of the Brāhmanas and the Upanisads in this respect naturally resulted in an indirect encouragement to the non Vedic religious thought,

INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

which was becoming gradually but surely predominant in several ways. Taking advantage of the favourable conditions already created by the Upanisads through their non acceptance of the absolute validity of the Vedas non Vedic religious systems such as Buddhism and Jainism quickly spread. They adopted from Vedic mythology Brāhmanic ritualism and Upanisadic spiritualism—though in a different form—whatever was beneficial to them. At the same time they scrupulously steered clear of the weak points of the latter.

POST UPANISADIC PERIOD POPULAR HINDU MYTHOLOGY

By the side of these openly non Vedic religious movements which claimed large popular following there arose other popular religious movements also which still owed allegiance though in a distant manner to the Veda. These latter however could not make any headway before the non Vedic religions exhausted their initial urge and enthusiasm. It is not necessary here to go into the historical causes of the failure of the non Vedic religious movements to achieve what they had in their initial stages showed great promise to achieve. Attention may be drawn only to the fact that in the days of the decline of these non Vedic religious movements a powerful upsurge of popular religious sentiment arose from among the masses who had not altogether alienated themselves from their Vedic heritage. This popular Hinduism represented a revolt not so much against Vedicism as such as against its hieratic form as well as its phase known as Brāhmanism.

KṚṢṆA RELIGION

One current of this popular religious movement which it may be incidentally pointed out proved to be in course of time a very fertile source of Indian mythology started among the various communities of Western and Central India such as the Vṛṣṇis the Satvatas and the Yādavas. Historically it may be presumed that Kṛṣṇa Vāsudeva who was a leader of the Vṛṣṇis and of the other tribes dependent on the Vṛṣṇis undertook to reorganize the entire religious thought and practices so that they should command truly popular response without however alienating them from the ancient Vedic heritage. The main features of this new religious enterprise may be briefly stated as follows: the principal gods of the Vedic pantheon like Indra and Varuna were superseded by new popular gods; the simple doctrine of *bhakti* took the place of the complicated Vedic ritual; a greater emphasis was put on ethical teachings than on metaphysical speculations; a life of activism was specifically recommended as against renunciation; *loka samgraha* or social solidarity rather than individual

emancipation was recognized as the goal of spiritual life and synthesis rather than scholastic dogmatism was made the watchword of progress in the field of knowledge. In the personality of Kṛṣṇa this religious movement secured the advantage of a very effective leadership. For Kṛṣṇa who was a tribal leader soon became a tribal hero and then a tribal god. Several mythological legends came to be woven round his personality thus making him a god of exceedingly complex character.

The pastoral aspect of the Kṛṣṇa religion was celebrated in the charming tales of Kṛṣṇa's boyhood spent in the company of the *gopālas* (cowherds) while the erotic devotional aspect was represented through the fascinating legends of his association with Rādhā and other *gopīs* (milkmaids). According to one legend by lifting up the Govardhana hill Gopāla Kṛṣṇa is said to have given to the entire community of cowherds protective shelter against the wrath of Indra, who would flood their settlements and thus ruin their communal festival. This legend clearly indicates that Kṛṣṇa was now coming into ascendancy as against Indra who had dominated the hieratic Vedic mythology. It is further interesting to note how by means of an ingenious mythological device the heroic Kṛṣṇa born in the family of the Vṛṣṇis was brought into close contact with the pastoral communities. Vasudeva of the Vṛṣṇis who with his wife Devakī was prisoner of Kamsa of Mathurā and whose children were being killed by the latter lest one of them should one day overpower him is represented to have stealthily carried his eighth child Kṛṣṇa immediately after birth to his friend Nanda the cowherd king and entrusted him to his care and protection. There in the house of Nanda Kṛṣṇa was brought up as a cowherd boy until later he was called upon to put down the atrocities of Kamsa.

The rise of the Kṛṣṇa religion synchronizes with that period in the literary history of ancient India in which the floating literary tradition of the *sūtas* was being given a fixed literary form with the historical poem about the Bhārata war as the nucleus. The sponsors of the Kṛṣṇa religion took advantage of this early form of the great epic the *Mahābhārata* and employed it as an effective vehicle for the propagation of their teachings. A revision of the epic was consequently brought about by introducing into it the character of Kṛṣṇa who was represented as a relative guide friend and philosopher of the Pāṇdavas in general and of Arjuna in particular. Bhagavat Kṛṣṇa eventually became almost the central figure in the epic and the *Bhagavad Gītā* the epitome of the teachings of the Kṛṣṇa religion came to be regarded as its very quintessence. This combination of a religious movement and an epic tradition resulted in an exuberant growth of mythological legends spread all over the *Mahābhārata*.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

principles and as the embodiments of the *gunas rajas sattva* and *tamas* respectively. The Purānas have given various legends pertaining to the trinity. Though they generally assert that the three gods are to be comprehended within but one supreme Being and therefore adjure the pious to make no difference among them, it may be pointed out that Viṣṇu often carries off the palm of supremacy. Whenever the world is overwhelmed with evil, Viṣṇu is represented to have rescued it from utter extinction in his different incarnations or *avatāras*.

AVATĀRA

Faint traces of the concept of *avatāra* may be discovered in the Vedic idea of Viṣṇu as a solar divinity coming down to the earth from his highest abode and also in the frequent allusions in Vedic literature to the fact that gods assumed different forms in order to accomplish their several exploits. In the Vedic literature we actually come across the early indications of the later dwarf incarnation, the boar incarnation, the tortoise incarnation and the fish incarnation²⁰. The concept of *avatāra* has indeed proved one of the most fruitful sources of Hindu mythology. The Purānas and the Upapurānas give various myths and legends relating to the ten *avatāras* of Viṣṇu. The circumstances which necessitated these *avatāras* and the mighty deeds accomplished by Viṣṇu on those occasions are most graphically and exhaustively described. Attempts have been made to rationalize the different forms assumed by Viṣṇu in his different incarnations. It is for instance suggested that in the beginning there were waters everywhere and to suit this condition of the world the first incarnation of Viṣṇu was appropriately enough in the form of a fish. Then the earth began gradually to take shape among those waters and therefore in his second incarnation Viṣṇu appeared as a tortoise which can move with ease both in water and on land. The later stages of evolution—namely animal life in the forests, the life of wild humanity, the meagrely developed condition of human civilization, the condition of the warring cave man, the development of family life and domestic virtues and the growth of complex social and political relations—are said to have been symbolically represented respectively by *Varāha* (boar), *Narasimha* (man lion), *Vāmana* (dwarf), *Paraśurāma* (axe man), Rāma and Kṛṣṇa. It appears that certain Purānas are specifically devoted to the descriptions of certain *avatāras* of Viṣṇu²¹. The seventh *avatāra* has indeed become the central theme of Vālmīki's beautiful epic poem the *Rāmāyana*. As in the case of Kṛṣṇa

²⁰ See Viṣṇu in the Veda. Traces of tortoise-incarnation and fish incarnation are found in *Sat. Br.*

²¹ Cf. the names *Matsya P.* *Varāha P.* *Kāma P.* etc.

INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

here too Rāma who seems to have been a historical prince of a petty State in Eastern India and perhaps also a tribal hero has been elevated to the position of a god and an incarnation of Viṣṇu. It may be presumed that Vālmīki has derived the material for his epic poem from three main sources namely the court intrigue in respect of Rama the prince of Ayodhyā the symbolically represented history of the Aryan expansion to the East and to the South and an ancient agricultural myth.

YUGA AND MANVANTARA

A mythological concept which is closely related to the *avatara* theory is that of the *yugas* or the ages of the world. The *yugas* are four in number. In the first *yuga* called *krta* whose duration is computed to be 4 800 years of gods (each year of gods being equal to 360 years of men) there is perfect and eternal righteousness and the *dharma* is said to be standing on all its four feet. In the next three *yugas* viz *treta dvāpara* and *kali* consisting respectively of 3 600 2 400 and 1 200 years of gods *dharma* gradually decreases by one fourth remaining to the extent of only one fourth in the *kaliyuga*. These four *yugas* together make a *mahayuga* or a *manvantara* and 2 000 such *mahāyugas* make a *kalpa*. The cycle of the creation destruction and re-creation of the world goes on eternally. This concept is indeed given a very prominent place among the five distinguishing topics dealt with by the Purāṇas.

FEMALE DIVINITIES

The rise of female divinities partly due to the influence of the Dravidian folk religion is a significant feature of popular Hindu mythology distinguishing it from the early Vedic and Brāhmanic mythologies. *Lakṣmī* occurring in the early Vedic literature in the sense of good fortune came to be regarded as the goddess of fortune and the wife of Viṣṇu during the obscure period prior to the revival of Vedicism in the form of popular Hinduism and became *Sītā* and *Rukmīṇī* during Viṣṇu's incarnation as Rāma and Kṛṣṇa respectively. Similarly the Vedic river divinity *Sarasvatī* is later elevated to the position of the goddess of speech and learning and is schematically associated with *Brahmā* as his wife. But it is mainly the consort of *Śiva* who in her several forms plays the most prominent role in popular mythology. She is often glorified as *Śakti* or the female energy of *Śiva* and as such has two characters one mild and the other fierce. In her milder form she is celebrated as *Umā* (bright) who incidentally can be traced to the later Vedic literature,²² and *Gaurī*. But it is her terrible

²² *Ke U* 25

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

form that is more distinctive. It may be presumed that the worship of Śakti the fierce goddess existed as an independent religious cult among certain wild tribes and that it was only at a later stage that it was brought into close contact with the Śiva worship. As a matter of fact by the side of Vaiṣṇavism and Śaivism Śāktism also commanded a large following. Bloody sacrifices and sexual orgies of the Tāntrikas are some of the distinctive features of the Śakti worship. As a destroyer of many *asuras* and an accomplisher of mighty deeds Śakti in the form of Kālī or Cāmundī plays almost the same role as the Vedic Indra. Appropriately enough an entire Purāṇa the *Devī bhāgavata* which is by some placed among the eighteen Mahāpurāṇas is devoted to the celebration of the various exploits of the great goddess. Similarly the poem *Devī mahātmya* consisting of 700 stanzas enumerates her victories over the various demons.

In popular Hinduism the gods who were prominent in Vedic mythology were not altogether banished from the pantheon but were relegated to subordinate positions. Agni Yama Varuna Vāyu and Soma were regarded as *lokapālas* or guardians of the quarters. Indra as the king of gods continued to rule in the *svarga* but as dependent on the All god Viṣṇu. The conception of *svarga* which was considered as the abode of minor gods and beatified mortals, and yielding many forms of enjoyment such as draughts of *amṛta* (nectar) the music of the *gandharvas* and the company of *apsaras* would appear to be just a very much elaborated form of the Vedic Yama's abode of bliss. Apart from the *svarga* Viṣṇu has his special abode in Vaikuntha and Śiva that in Kailāsa. As a counterpart of the *svarga* the idea of *naraka* or hell came to be specifically developed in the popular Hindu mythology. It is generally a place of torture to which the souls of the wicked are sent. The Purāṇas enumerate as many as twenty-one hells and indulge in graphic and gruesome descriptions of them.

MYTHOLOGY OF POPULAR HINDUISM

The mythology of popular Hinduism has always tended to become richer and richer as time passed on account of the addition of legends pertaining on the one hand to the victories of the numerous gods and goddesses and godlings over the various *rāksasas* or Titans of Hindu mythology, and on the other to their acts of grace in respect of their devotees and worshippers. There was further added to Hinduism an ever increasing mass of mythological details whose origin can be traced to various minor cults such as the serpent worship and the worship of *grāha devatās* (planetary deities) and *grāma devatās* (village deities). Again we must not forget the large number of legends occasioned by the remarkably ingenious manner in which the characters of certain ancient sages like

INDIAN MYTHOLOGY

Naiada have been developed by the fertile mythological imagination of Hindu poets bards and minstrels Philosophy is often described as the foundation of religion ritual as its superstructure and mythology as its detailed decoration In the case of Hinduism however mythology is not merely its decoration it is its essential constituent factor Mythology is at once the strength and weakness of Hinduism—strength because mythology represents some of the distinctive features of Hinduism such a toleration broad sympathy liberal outlook and dynamically assimilative and at the same time elevating power and weakness because there is the danger of the true spirit of Hinduism being undermined by the weight of its mythological richness

THE PURĀNAS

MEANING OF THE WORD PURĀNA WORKS NOW KNOWN AS MAHĀPURĀNAS

THE word *purāna* originally means ancient or old narrative but long before the beginning of the Christian era it came also to be used as the designation of a class of books dealing among other matters with old world stories and legends. As the extensive Purāṇa literature handed down to posterity included both early and late as well as major and minor works the distinguishing class name Mahāpurāṇa was given in comparatively late days¹ to those particular major Purāṇas which commanded the highest respect of the people for their age and importance.

At present we have got eighteen works known as Mahāpurāṇas and all of them have been printed more than once. The names of these works are (1) *Vāyu Purāṇa* (2) *Brahmaṇḍa Purāṇa* (3) *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* (4) *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* (5) *Matsya Purāṇa* (6) *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* (7) *Kūrma Purāṇa* (8) *Vāmana Purāṇa* (9) *Iṅga Purāṇa* (10) *Varaha Purāṇa* (11) *Padma Purāṇa* (12) *Nāradaīya Purāṇa* (13) *Agni Purāṇa* (14) *Garuda Purāṇa* (15) *Brahma Purāṇa* (16) *Skanda Purāṇa* (17) *Brahmavaivarta Purāṇa* and (18) *Bhaviṣya* or *Bhaviṣyat Purāṇa*. Most of these works are of comparatively late origin and not a single Purāṇa claims to have come down in its original form. Besides these eighteen *mahat* or principal Purāṇas there are a number of works which style themselves Purāṇa or Upapurāṇa (secondary Purāṇa) dealt with in the next chapter.

ORIGIN, ANTIQUITY AND EARLY CHARACTER OF THE PURĀNAS

It is difficult to say definitely how and when the Purāṇas first came into being though their claim to great antiquity next only to that of the Vedas cannot be denied. It is mentioned mostly in connection with

¹ The name Mahapurana is of late origin. It is found only in *Bhagavata Purāṇa* XII 7, 10 and 22 and *Brahmavaivarta Purāṇa* IV 131, 7 and 10. What are now known as Mahapurāṇas are called simply Purāṇas in the earlier works.

² In this chapter the following editions of the Purāṇas have been used.

Vāyu Matsya Padma Agni and *Brahma Purāṇa*—Ed. Ānandasārama Sanskrit Series, Poona.

Brahmaṇḍa Kurma Vāmana Nāradaīya Skanda and *Bhaviṣya Purāṇa*—Ed. Venkateśvara Press, Bombay.

Mārkaṇḍeya Viṣṇu Iṅga and *Brahmavaivarta Purāṇa*—Ed. Jivānanda Vidyāśāgara, Calcutta.

Bhagavata and *Garuda Purāṇa*—Ed. Vangavāḥ Press, Calcutta.

Varaha Purāṇa—Ed. Bibliotheca Indica, Calcutta, 1893.

THE PURĀNAS

itihāsa in the *Atharva Veda Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa Gopatha Brahmana Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad* and a few other works of the Vedic literature The *Atharva Veda** which contains the earliest mention of the word *purāna* says that the *rcs* (verses) the *śamans* (songs) the metres and the *purāna* originated from the residue (*ucchiṣṭa*) of the sacrifice together with the *yajus* (sacrificial formulae) The *Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad*† on the other hand ascribes the origin of the four Vedas *itihāsa purāna* etc to the breath of the Mahābhūta (the Great Being Paramātmā the Supreme Soul) These traditions though somewhat different are unanimous in recognizing the sacred origin of the Purāna as also in giving it a status almost equal to that of the Vedas As a matter of fact in some of the works of the Vedic and the early Buddhist literature the Purāna has been called the fifth Veda The way in which the Purāna has been connected with sacrifice as well as with the *yajus* in the *Atharva Veda* the theory of the origin of the universe from sacrifice as expounded in the *Purusa sūkta* of the *Rg Veda* and the topics constituting the *pariplava ākhyānas* or recurring narrations in the *asvamedha* sacrifice tend to indicate that the Purāna as a branch of learning had its beginning in the Vedic period and originated in the narrative portion (*ākhyāna bhāga*) of the Vedic sacrifice which in the Brāhmaṇas is repeatedly identified with the God Prajāpati the precursor of the later Brahmā the creator In the extant Purānas however there is a verse which tells us that at the beginning of creation Brahmā had remembered the Purana first of all the scriptures before the Vedas came out of his mouth‡ This statement however absurd it may appear to be will have validity if we take the word *purāna* to mean not the Purāna literature but ancient stories and legends which in every country come into being much earlier than versified compositions That the Purānic tradition can rightly claim a much earlier beginning than the Vedas is also shown by the fact that kings Vadhryasva Divodāsa Sudās Somaka and others who are known to the *Rg Veda* have been placed very low in the genealogical lists given in the Purānas

Extreme paucity of information leaves us in absolute darkness as to the character and contents of the ancient Purānic works none of which has come down to us in its original form The famous Sanskrit lexicon *Amarakosa* (c sixth century A.D.) contains an old definition repeated in many of the extant Purānas which says that a Purāna is to deal with the following five characteristic topics (1) *Sarga* (creation or evolution of the universe from its natural cause) (2) *pratisarga* (recreation of the world from

* XI 7 24 II 4 10
Vāyu Purāna I 60 61 *Brahmānda Purāna* I 1 40 41 *Matsya Purana* III 3 4
 LIII 3 See also *Brahma Purāna* CLXI 27 28 *Padma Purāna* V 1 45 57

its constituent elements in which it is merged at the close of each aeon—*kalpa*—or day in the life of Brahmā the creator) (3) *vamśa* (genealogies of gods demons patriarchs sages and kings especially of the last two) (4) *manvantara* (cosmic cycles each of which is ruled over by a Manu the first father of mankind) and (5) *vamśānucarita* (accounts of royal dynasties) The root of all these characteristics can be traced to the *ākhyānas* (tales) *upākhyānas* (anecdotes) *gathās* (metrical songs or proverbial sayings current in ancient society) and *kalpokitis* (sayings that had come down through ages) which the *Vāyu Brahmānda* and *Viṣṇu Purānas* say were utilized by the ancient sage Vyāsa in compiling the original Purāna Samhitā These characteristics therefore seem to indicate at least partially the nature of the ancient Purānas in their early if not their original forms and these are in perfect conformity with the connection of the Purānas with sacrifice from which the *Rg Veda* says the universe originated

Some scholars have expressed the view that the traditional lore out of which the Purānas have been fashioned was of Kṣatriya not of Brāhmana origin Their main argument in favour of this view is that Lomaharsana who is the narrator in almost all the extant Purānas is called a *sūta* i.e. one born of a Kṣatriya father and a Brāhmana mother and following the profession of a bard in royal courts as the *Smṛtis* the *Mahābhārata* and the Purānas tell us But this view is open to serious objections which are stated below All the extant Purānas are unanimous in declaring that Lomaharsana was a mere transmitter of the Purānic traditions learnt from Vyāsa and could have nothing to do with the origin of the Purānas Even Vyāsa himself was not the author but a mere compiler of the original Purana Samhitā Now the question is who were the creators and transmitters of the material used by Vyāsa? A study of the Brāhmana literature will show that in the performance of a Vedic sacrifice *purānas* (old stories and legends including those concerning creation) *ākhyānas* and *upākhyānas* were often narrated and *gāthās* recited and it was the Brāhmana priests who did these narrations and recitations According to the *Brhad devatā* the recitation of the history of the *mantras* (Vedic verses) was an inseparable part of the Vedic sacrifice and the knowledge of the *purāna* or the origin of the *mantra* was one of the essential functions of the Vedic priests There can be little doubt about the fact that many of the *purānas* *ākhyānas* etc. contained in the Brāhmana texts were inherited by the Vedic priests from their ancient ancestors but the Brāhmana texts themselves give ample evidence to show that new myths and legends were often invented for satisfactorily explaining some sacrificial ceremony or other Even as regards the genealogies (*vamśa*) of sages the priests appear to have preserved traditions some of which are found recorded in the *Satapatha*

Brahmana of the *Yajur Veda* and the *Vamśa Brahmana* of the *Sama Veda*. The praise of the liberality of former princes found in the *Āitareya* and other Brāhmanas especially during the *rājasūya* and *asvamedha* sacrifices presupposes the priests' knowledge of the genealogies and activities of kings. It is highly probable therefore that the priests gave much attention to these things also. That the Brāhmanas of olden times concerned themselves with the genealogies and accounts of kings is evidenced by some of the extant Puranas of which the *Vayu Brahmandā* and *Matsya* speak of *anuvamśa śloka*s (verses concerning genealogies of kings) sung by ancient (*purātana*) Brāhmanas.⁶ But it is interesting to note that although the *sūta* has been mentioned in many of the Vedic Samhitās and Brāhmanas he has not been connected in any way with the work of narrating, preserving or inventing the *purānas akhyānas* etc. which constituted the earliest Purānic works. On the other hand the *sūta* has been mentioned as an important figure among the state officials. According to the *Pañcavimśa Brāhmana* he is one of the eight *vīras* (brave people constituting the king's supporters and *entourage*) in some Vedic texts he is reckoned as one of the eleven jewels (*ratna ratnin*) of the king and in the *Atharva Veda* and the *Satarudrīya* section of the *Yajur Veda* he is one of the king makers (*rāja kṛt*). In respect of power and position he is next to the king's brother equal to the *sthapati* (governor or chief judge) and superior to the *grāmanī* (village headman).⁷ The words *ahanti*, *ahantya* and *ahantva*⁸ as applied to him in the *Satarudrīya* seem to denote his sacred character. But this exalted position the *sūta* could not maintain in later days. Vedic epic and Sanskrit literature testify to a gradual deterioration in the position of the *sūta* whose vocation also must have changed in later days with the gradual lowering of his position.⁹ So the statements about the duties and position of the *sūta* in the extant Puranas (which are comparatively late works) should not be used to connect him with the origin of the Purānas. The *Atharva Veda* and the *Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad* believed in the sacred origin of the Purana and gave it a position almost equal to that of the Vedas. This sacred character of the Purānic lore indicated by later Vedic literature seems to be in disagreement with the position of the *sūta* in the extant

⁶ *Vayu Purana* LXXXVIII 67-68, XCVI 13, XCIX 278. *Brahmandā Purāna* III 63-69, 71-74. *Matsya Purāna* I 88, CCLXXI 15-16.

See for instance *Satapatha Brahmana* V 4 4 15-19.

⁷ These words seem to be equivalent to the word *hanta* not to be killed.

⁸ F. E. Pargiter cites the *Vayu Purana*, Kauṭilya's *Arthaśāstra* and other works in order to distinguish between the two *sūtas*—one being the narrator of the Puranas and the other born of the Kṣatriya father and the Brahmanī mother. As a matter of fact the degraded Vedic *sūta* and the Paurāṇika *sūta* (who was originally a Brahmana or a Kṣatriya) were brought together by their common profession in comparatively late days to form one mixed caste into which other people following the same profession must have been absorbed in later days.

Puranas in which he is described as one born in the reverse order of castes from a Ksatriya father and a Brāhmanī mother. The story of his origin from King Prthu's horse sacrifice as contained in the *Vāyu Brahmānda* and several other Purānas however indicates that before forming a distinct class or caste by themselves the Paurānika *sūtas* came of the Brāhmana and Ksatriya castes of the Vedic Age and the five traditional characteristics of the early Purānas were determined principally if not entirely by the *pāriplava ākhyanas* of the *asvamedha* sacrifice.

It is not possible to say how and when the Purāna texts of the Vedic times passed into the hands of the *sūtas* mentioned in the extant Purānas. It may be that with the extinction of the *pāriplava* as a constituent rite of the *asvamedha* sacrifice after the Sutra period the Purāna texts of the Vedic Brāhmanas became a property of the *sūtas* and began to be mixed up with the popular conceptions of Visnu Śiva and other deities and the *sūtas* who in the meantime had sunk into the position of bards took up this new form of Purānic lore in right earnest to popularize the Vedic ideas as well as to earn their livelihood and improve their position in the public eye. As the Puranic lore of post Vedic times got mixed up with popular ideas it lost much of its previous sacredness and the *sūtas* who became the bearers of this new lore were considered unfit for studying the Vedas. It is however quite possible that there were independent Ksatriya traditions regarding the genealogies and accounts of kings who reigned in ancient times and that the *sūtas* who might have already become the custodians of these traditions utilized them fully in the Purānic lore which they so zealously advocated.

Vāyu Brahmānda and *Viṣṇu Purānas* state that after compiling the original Purāna Samhitā Vyāsa imparted it to his disciple Sūta Lomaharsana who in his turn made it into six versions and taught them to his six Brāhmana disciples and that three of them namely Kāśyapa Sāvarṇi and Śamsapāyana made three separate Samhitās which were called after their names and which together with Lomaharsana's one were the four root compilations (*mūla samhitā*) from which the Purānas of later days were derived. This theory of the existence of one original Purāna supported by scholars like A. M. T. Jackson, A. Blau and F. E. Pargiter but disapproved by others seems to point to the earliest time when there was no more than a single Vedic school. Consequently in its beginning the Purānic heritage also was the same as that of the Vedic. But with the progress of time the same Purānic heritage was remodelled and diversified with changes, modifications and fresh additions of materials in different families and thus arose the different Purāna Samhitās. It is most probably for this reason

THE PURĀNAS

that numerous verses on the five characteristic topics of the Purāṇas are found common to almost all the extant Purāṇas

The forms of these Purana Samhitās unlike those of the Vedas could never be fixed because with the progress of time there were changes in the ideas and beliefs in the modes of living and thinking and in the environments of the different groups of people and accordingly they also were recast and adapted to new requirements. This unstable character of the Purāṇic texts seems to have been hinted at by the extant Purāṇas themselves of which the *Matsya Purana*¹⁰ says that when in course of time the Purāṇa was no longer accepted by the people Lord Viṣṇu took the form of Vvāsa and re edited it in every yuga. So we see that the Purāṇa literature has really been from time immemorial an invaluable record of the history and mythology of an ancient race

RISE OF THE PRESENT EIGHTEEN PURĀNAS

Although we are in absolute darkness as to when the original Purāṇic heritage began to give rise to different Purāṇa Samhitās it can hardly be denied that more Purāṇas than one had come into existence long before the beginning of the Christian era. In the Law books of Manu and Yājñavalkya and in the *Taittirīya Āraṇyaka* the word *purāṇa* has been used in the plural number. The *Mahābhārata*¹¹ speaks of a *purāṇa* proclaimed by Vāyu (Wind god) and the *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra* cites three passages from an unspecified Purāṇa and one passage from a *Bhaviṣya Purāṇa*. The self contradicting title *Bhaviṣyat Purāṇa* (lit the Purana on future ages) given to a distinct work of the Purāṇa literature indicates that in Āpastamba's time the term *purāṇa* had become so thoroughly specialized as to have lost its proper meaning and had become merely the designation of a particular class of books. It would have required the existence of a number of Purāṇas to produce that change and manifestly they must have had their own special names to distinguish from one another and so convert their common title Purāṇa into a class designation. Hence we can reasonably hold that the number of the Purāṇas began to be multiplied long before the time of Āpastamba who is dated between 600 and 300 B C.

It is not known how many Puranas were already there in Āpastamba's time and how they went on growing in number but we find a tradition recorded in almost all the extant Purāṇas and other works that the Puranas (or rather Mahāpurāṇas) are eighteen in number. The names of these eighteen Purāṇas as given in the different Purāṇic works are the same as those of the works now extant under the general title Mahāpurāṇa and

¹ LIII 89

III 191 16 (Ed Vangavāsī Press Calcutta)
245

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

the order in which these works have been enumerated in the majority of the lists is as follows *Brahma Padma Visnu Vayu Bhagavata Nāradya Mārkaṇḍeya Agni Bhavīsyā Brahmaṇḍavarta Liṅga Varāha Skanda Vāmana Kūrma Matsya Garuḍa* and *Brahmāṇḍa*. These are of course a few Purāṇic works which in their respective lists replace the name of the *Vāyu Purāṇa* with that of the *Śiva* (or *Śarva*) *Purana* but the latter is a much later work and is really not a Mahapurāṇa at all.

The existence of more Purāṇas than one in Āpastamba's time or earlier does not however mean that the above tradition of eighteen principal Purāṇas came into vogue at such an early period. As a matter of fact this tradition can scarcely be dated earlier than the third century A.D. There is of course mention of eighteen Purāṇas in the *Mahabhārata*¹² and the *Harivamśa*¹³ but the passages referred to are in all probability later additions. Chapter CIV of the *Vāyu Purāṇa* which contains a somewhat peculiar list of eighteen Purāṇas is undoubtedly an interpolation and the lists occurring in the *Visnu* and the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* are of extremely doubtful authenticity. However from the evidence of the Purāṇas *Matsya Kūrma* and others and other Sanskrit works we can be sure that the tradition originated not later than the beginning of the seventh century A.D. So by the end of the sixth century A.D. at the latest the number of the Purāṇas composed had already been eighteen and got rigidly fixed there because this number was regarded as a sacred one by the Hindus, Buddhists and Jains alike.

FORM AND CHARACTER OF THE PRESENT PURANAS

We have seen that in early times the Purāṇas dealt with five characteristic topics. But most of the extant Mahapurāṇas either omit some of these topics or deal with them very imperfectly while they incorporate on the other hand extensive glorifications of one or more of the sectarian deities like Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Śiva add numerous chapters on new myths and legends and multifarious topics concerning religion and society for instance duties of the different castes and orders of life, sacraments, customs in general, eatables and non-eatables, duties of women, funeral rites and ceremonies, impurity on birth and death, sins, penances and expiations, purification of things, names and description of hells, results of good and bad deeds (*karma vipāka*), pacification of unfavourable planets, donations of various types, dedication of wells, tanks, and gardens, worship, devotional vows (*vratas*), places of pilgrimage, consecration of temples and images of

gods initiation and various mystic rites and practices This change in the character and contents of the present Mahāpurāṇas is remarkable and peculiar and requires explanation

An investigation into the religious movements in ancient India will show that besides the Brahmanical religion guided by Śruti (i.e. Veda) and Smṛti (Law books) there were various *popular* systems which arose in different parts of the country Some of these systems were openly antagonistic to the Brāhmanical ideas i.e. Buddhism Jainism the doctrine preached by Maṅkhaliputta Gosala and the like some had their principal deities identified from very early times with those of the Vedas i.e. the doctrines of the Brahmas (i.e. Brahma worshippers) Pāñcarātra Vaiṣṇavas Bhāgavata Vaiṣṇavas and Pāsupata Śaivas and some though originally non Vedic were traced into the Vedas in later times viz Śaktism and Gāṇapatyaism Besides the staunch followers of these religious systems there was another considerable class of people who were rather of a mixed type with a synthetic attitude of mind On the one hand they entertained high regard for the sectarian deities and looked upon their worship as the best means of attaining salvation on the other they believed deeply in the principles of the Sāṃkhya and Vedānta systems of philosophy (by reconciling which they explained the nature of their deities) valued much the practice of the rules of castes and orders of life and regarded the Vedas as the highest authority in all matters We shall see below that it is to this last mentioned class of people that the present form and character of the Purāṇas are due

According to the Brāhmanical religion which is rooted in the Vedas it was the Brahmanas who were given the highest place in society As they formed the intellectual class among the Aryans they could naturally command at least claim for themselves the highest respect They enjoyed more privileges than the other classes in almost every sphere of life The Kṣatriyas and Vaiśyas had prescribed duties which they were required to perform The Śūdras were not allowed to take part in religious performances but were only to serve the twice born who claimed absolute right over the earnings of their respective servants Such a state of society continued more or less smoothly until there arose many new religious systems some clearly protesting against the position of the Brāhmana and the authority of the Vedas and others not very favourable to the principles of orthodox Brāhmanism The rise and propagation of these rival faiths proved fatal to the sacrificial religion of the Vedas which was already on the decline The evidence of the Vedic and Sanskrit works shows that by the time of Manu (the traditional author of the *Manu Samhitā*) the Śrauta rites gradually

became obsolete and the orthodox Vedic religionists were turning Smārtas (followers of Smṛtis)

Revolts against the Brāhmanical doctrines appear to have begun long before the time of Gautama Buddha. The *Suttanipāta* speaks of sixty three different philosophical schools (probably all of them were non Brāhmanical) existing at the time of the Buddha and in early Jain texts there are passages exhibiting a far larger number of such heretical doctrines. Of the teachers of these anti Vedic religious systems the names of Vardhamāna Mahāvira, Mankhaliputta Gosāla and Gautama Buddha are too well known to be overlooked. These three non Brāhmanical teachers believed neither in the Vedic gods nor in the Vedic *dharma* as regulated by the system of castes and orders of life. They regarded spontaneous renunciation and practice of severe austerities and *yoga* as the best means of attaining supreme bliss. Therefore they were naturally looked upon as the most powerful opponents of Brāhmanism. There are inscriptional, literary and other evidence to show that the doctrines preached by these three teachers seriously affected the followers of the Vedic religion because of their drawing the kings and commoners largely into their folds.

The followers of the *popular* systems mentioned before were highly cosmopolitan in their attitude, attached little importance to the Brāhmanical rules and scriptures and laid special stress on renunciation for the practice of *yoga*. Among them there were various disciplines for people of different grades. For having an idea of them references may be made to the *Jayākhya Samhitā* of the Pāñcarātras. In this work the Pāñcarātra Vaiṣnavas have been divided into three groups with further subdivisions according to the extent of their renunciation, the nature of their attachment to the sect and their method of worshipping Viṣṇu Nārāyaṇa. One of the three groups is said to have consisted of the *āptas*, *anāptas*, *ārambhins* and *sampravartins* described as follows. Those who do not give up the duties imposed on them by their castes but worship the god with devotion by means of acts prescribed by the *āptas* are called *anāptas*. The Vaiṣṇava Brāhmana and others who without caring for the instructions of the *āptas* worship the Universal Soul for the attainment of the desired objects are called *ārambhins*. O best of Brāhmana, know those people as *sampravartins* who, out of devotion, set themselves to worship Hari in a wrong way.¹⁴ Among the worshippers of Brahmā, Paśupati (Śiva), and Śakti also there must have been adherents of the types of the *anāptas*, *ārambhins* and *sampravartins*. It is undoubtedly to these Smārta Brāhmana adherents of the above religions that the composite (*vyāmiśra*) character of Purāṇic

Hinduism and the present form of the Purānas were originally due and it was they who were the authors of the present Purānas because these works mostly characterized by the names of the sectarian deities or their chief forms exhibit on the one hand the sectarian zeal in glorifying the respective deities and on the other preach the authority of the Vedas and the performance of the duties of the different castes and orders of life

The various sects and systems of religion just mentioned created an atmosphere which did not in an orthodox way conform to Vedic or Brāhmanical ideas This atmosphere was further disturbed by the advent of casteless foreigners such as the Greeks Śakas Pahlavas Kuśānas and Ābhiras who founded extensive kingdoms and settled in this country Though these foreigners accepted Buddhism Śaivism or Vaiṣṇavism and were soon Indianized their non Brāhmanic manners and customs could not but influence the people especially their brothers in faith Most of these alien tribes being originally nomadic they can be expected to have had a variable standard of morality which also must have affected the people living around them

Further trouble was created for Brahmanism by the political supremacy of the non Kṣatriyas or rather Śūdras as the Purānas hold under the Nandas Mauryas and probably also Āndhras The Brāhmanas always emphasized the low social status of the Śūdras and reduced them to servitude In religious life also the latter enjoyed little privilege and freedom It is natural therefore that these down trodden Śūdras revolted against the Brāhmanas when they had political power in their hand

The different forces enumerated above acted simultaneously and produced a state of society which was favourable neither to the propagation of Brāhmanical ideas nor to the orthodox Brāhmanas Accounts of this social disorder can be gathered from the extant Purānas and the early Buddhist literature The similarity between the accounts given in these two sources is very great In numerous cases what the Purānas formulate the Jātakas seem to illustrate This striking agreement between the two accounts proves that they are not as imaginary as we may take them to be but have some historical value These accounts testify to a serious disintegration of the social fabric with the result that people became regardless of the Vedic system and there was a remarkable increase in the number of wandering mendicants The Brāhmanas were not respected as widely as before and there was a gradual decrease in their numerical strength many of them having been influenced by the non Brāhmanical ideas and practices then prevailing in the country The Śūdras became defiant of the upper castes and often went out of the Brāhmanical society to the great disadvantage of their co religionists Women became prone to demoraliza

tion and many of them took up the wandering life creating serious disadvantages to their families. Thus the condition of Brāhmanism being insecure and the Brāhmanical social discipline having been disturbed the Brāhmanas felt it necessary to make an attempt to popularize their own ideas and beliefs among women Śūdras and those members of the upper three castes who under the influence of the new forms of faith described above had little regard for the Vedas and the Vedic principles of life and conduct. This attempt seems to have been made originally by two sections of people in two different ways: first by the orthodox Brāhmanas who first began to preach the performance of *grhya* (domestic) rites through Smṛti works and secondly by the more numerous Smārtas who were in their religious outlook Brāhmas Pāñicarātras and Pāsupatas¹⁵ and who as the comparatively early *Vāyu Brahmānda Mārkaṇḍeya* and *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* show introduced into the Purāṇas only those topics (except civil and criminal law) which were dealt with in the comparatively early Smṛti works such as the *Manu Samhitā* and *Yājñavalkya Smṛti*. These Smārta adherents of the different sects changed the character of their respective deities to a great extent and brought them nearer to the Vedic gods. Their intention was to preach their own reformed Brahmiism Vaisnavism and Śaivism as against the heretical religions and to popularize thereby the Vedic ideas as far as possible among all including the worshippers of Brahmā Viṣṇu and Śiva. That this intention was at the base of the introduction of Smṛti matter into the Purāṇas is evidenced by the Purāṇas themselves. For instance the *Devī Bhāgavata* says¹⁶ Women Śūdras and the mean twice born (*duṣya bandhu*) are not entitled to hear the Vedas. It is only for their good that the Purāṇas have been written. It should be noted here that this attempt of the Smārta devotees of the different gods to preach their respective faiths with a view to popularizing the Vedic principles of life and conduct was responsible for giving rise to Purāṇic Brahmiism Vaisnavism Śaivism Śāktism etc. as distinct from their popular prototypes. But the composite *dharma* (religious and other duties) which the extant Purāṇas profess and extol has never been allowed by the orthodox Brāhmanas to be identified with their own but has been regarded by them as only inferior to the Vedic. As an example we may refer to a verse of Vyāsa which says: Nothing other than the Vedas is required by those who want purity of *dharma*. (The Vedas) is the pure source of *dharma*; others are called composite (*miṣṭra*). So the *dharma* which is derived from the Vedas is the best.

Those Brahmas Pāñicarātras and Pāsupatas who observed in their daily life the duties prescribed by the Brahmanical Smṛti works have been called here Smārta Brahmas Smārta Pāñicarātras and Samārta Pāsupatas.

But that (*dharmā*) which is contained in the Puranas etc is known to be inferior (*avara*) ¹⁷

After the present sectarian Puranas had come into existence Hindu society did not become stagnant and immune from further disturbances but had to fight hard against the influence of the Tantric religion and the foreign invaders such as the Ābhiras Gardabhilas Śaka Yavanas Bāhlikas and outlandish dynasties the successors of the Āndhras In order to face successfully these fresh troubles the Hindu rites and customs had again to be modified and adapted to the needs and circumstances of the people Hence with the changes in Hindu society during the four centuries from the third to the sixth the Purānas also had to be recast with the addition of many new chapters on worship vows initiation consecration etc which were rendered free from Tāntric elements and infused with Vedic rituals in order that their importance as works of authority on religious and social matters might not decrease With the great spread and popularity of Tāntric religion from the seventh or eighth century onward the Purānas had to be reedited once more by introducing more and more Tāntric elements into the Puranic rituals Now the work of re editing could be done in three different ways (i) by adding fresh chapters to the already existing ones (ii) by replacing the latter by the former and (iii) by writing new works bearing old titles All these processes having been practised freely with respect to almost all the Purānas not rarely by people of different sects a few retained much of their earlier materials some lost many of the earlier chapters which were replaced by others of later dates and some became totally new works But they had all come to possess a common feature namely that all comprised units belonging to different ages It should be mentioned here that additions to the Purānas were not always fresh compositions but chapters and verses were often transferred from one Purāna to another or from the Smṛti and other Sanskrit works to the Purānas That this practice of transference began much earlier than A.D. 1100 is evidenced by King Ballālasena who says in his *Dāna sāgara* that the *Linga Purāna* took its chapters on big donations from the *Matsya* and that the *Viṣṇu rahasya* and *Śiva rahasya* were mere compilations

The great importance given to the Purānas as authoritative works on Hindu rites and customs roughly from the second century A.D. perverted the idea of the people of later ages as to the real contents of these works It was thought that the five traditional characteristics—*sarga pratisarga* etc—were meant for the Upapurānas whereas the Mahāpurānas were to

¹⁷ For this verse of Vyasa see Apararka's commentary on the *Yajñavalkya Smṛti* (Ed. Anandaśrama Sanskrit Series Poona) p. 9 and Hemadri's *Caturvarga cintamani* (Ed. Bibliotheca Indica Calcutta) II (*Vrata khanda*) I 22

deal with ten topics relating to cosmogony religion and society Thus the *Bhāgavata Purāna*¹⁸ names these ten topics as follows *sarga* (primary creation) *visarga* (secondary creation) *virtti* (means of subsistence) *raksā* (protection) *antara* (cosmic cycle ruled over by a Manu) *vamsa* (genealogy of kings) *vamsānucarta* (dynastic accounts) *samsthā* (dissolution of the world) *hetu* (cause of creation etc) and *apastaya* (final stay of all) According to the *Brahma vaivarta Purāna*¹⁹ they are *srsti* (primary creation) *visrsti* (secondary creation) *sthiti* (stability of creation) *pālana* (protection) *karma vasanā* (desire for work) *Manu vārta* (information about the different Manus) *pralaya varnanā* (description of the final destruction of the world) *moksa nirupana* (showing the way to release from rebirths) *Harī kīrtana* (discourses on Hari) and *deva kīrtana* (discourses on other gods) The second of these two lists of ten Purānic characteristics deserves special notice as it explains clearly why in most of the present Puranas the geography of the earth which was introduced into the earlier works in connection with re creation has been neglected very much and why the accounts of the genealogies of kings and sages have been little cared for or often fabricated As a matter of fact the custom of recording dynastic history ceased with the early Guptas after whom no important dynasty or monarch of India has been described or mentioned in the Purānas This proves that from the Gupta period the Purānic tradition took in practice a new trend which culminated in turning the Purānas into so many books of myths and legends and social and religious duties with highly imperfect and some times forged genealogical lists Much more discouraging is the fact that probably to compete with the followers of Buddhism Jainism and other heretical systems who believed in austere practices and in the sacredness of their shrines many sections on vows on the holy places and so forth were composed in different times and places and freely interpolated into the Puranas which in course of time came to be looked upon as their integral part Such insertions were made even in the same period in different places so much so that these works varied in different localities even at a particular period of time People of different sects also took absolute liberty in boundless exaggerations and making changes in the texts of the Purānas with the result that it is often difficult to distinguish between fact and fancy, or originals and corruptions

But how could the eighteen Purānas which were the mouthpieces of sectaries following different faiths be grouped together and regarded as equally important and authoritative by all of them and how could they have believed deeply in this group even at the sacrifice of their respective

THE PURĀNAS

sectarian interests? In reply to these questions we may refer to the spirit of religious syncretism and sectarian rivalry that went hand in hand in ancient India and is found in Hindu society even at the present day. These tendencies must have supplied incentives to the recasting or rewriting of the same Purāna sometimes by different sects. The interpolation of chapters on different deities in a particular Purāna must have also resulted in this manner. Thus all the Purānas attained equal or almost equal importance in the eyes of the worshippers of Brahmā, Viṣṇu and Śiva before the grouping was made.

CHRONOLOGY AND CONTENTS OF THE PRESENT PURĀNAS

From what has been said above regarding the character and tendencies of the extant Purānas it would appear that the majority of them if not all are comparatively late works possessing little coming from an early date. As a matter of fact it is only the *Vāyu Purāna* (or rather *Vāyu prokta Purāna*—the Purāna proclaimed by Vāyu as it is called in the chapter colophons as well as in other places) which has preserved much of its ancient if not original materials and as such can be rightly called the earliest of the extant Purānic works. The very fact that Vāyu (the Wind god) has been said to be the first speaker of this work seems to push up the date of its original composition to a time when Vāyu was still recognized as an important deity. The early origin of the *Vāyu Purāna* is also shown by the *Harivamsa* which repeatedly refers to Vāyu as an authority as well as by the *Mahābhārata*²⁰ in which the Sage Mārkaṇḍeya tells King Janamejaya that he has spoken to the latter about the past and future ages by recollecting the Purāna proclaimed by Vāyu (*Vāyu proktam anusmṛtya purānam*). However old our present *Vāyu Purāna* in its original form may have been it was subjected to additions and alterations with the progress of time. For instance chapters LVII LIX dealing with *yuga dharma* (conduct of the people in different ages) give an account of the period ranging from the reign of the Nandas to the end of the Āndhra rule in Western India and must therefore have been written not earlier than A.D. 200 and chapters LXXIII LXXXIII on funeral ceremony which testify unmistakably to the decadent state of Buddhism and Jainism could not have been written earlier than the end of the second century A.D.

A careful study of the *Vāyu Purāna* shows that its Pāśupata character is only a later phase. But even with this new character this Purāna must have been highly popular at the beginning of the seventh century because

Banabhatta a Pasupata in faith refers to it in his *Kādambarī*²¹ and *Harisa carita* and says in the latter that he had this work read out to him in his native village. By his mention of a Purana in which the whole universe has been placed (i.e. treated of) in parts²² Bānabhatta points definitely to the present *Vāyu Purāna* which divides its contents into four parts: (1) *Prakṛiyā pāda* comprising chapters I-VI (2) *Anusanga pāda* chapters VII-LXIV (3) *Upodghata pāda* chapters I-XV-XCIX and (4) *Upasamhāsa pāda* chapters C-ff. It must however be admitted that after Bānabhatta the *Vāyu Purāna* did not cease to receive further additions and alterations: chapters and verses still continued to be inserted or taken out giving finally to this work its present form. For instance chapter CIV mentions Rīdhā the Tantras and the Śākta philosophy and is consequently of very late origin: chapters CV-CXII praising the holy Gayā in Magadha did not really belong to the *Vāyu Purāna* because they do not occur in all the manuscripts of this work and they very often appear as an independent text: and many of the verses (especially on funeral ceremony) ascribed to the *Vāyu Purāna* in the Nibandhas are not found in its present text and must therefore have been lost. But in spite of such changes the *Vāyu Purāna* has been able to preserve much of its older materials: most probably because the Puranic Pāsupatas who looked upon this work as highly sacred preserved the purity of its text as far as possible for a long time and did not allow its contents to be worked upon and changed seriously until very late.

The *Vāyu Purāna* is a highly interesting and important work dealing copiously with the following topics: creation and recreation of the universe: measurement of time: origin of Agni, Varuna and other gods: origin and descendants of Atri, Bhṛgu, Angiras and other sages: demons: *rākṣasas*, *gandharvas* and *pitṛs* (patricarchs): origin of lower animals: birds, trees and creepers: genealogies of ancient kings descended from Vāivasvata Manu and Ilā (or Ilā) and kings of the *kalīyuga* ending with the Guptas of Magadha: detailed geography of the earth divided into seven *dvīpas* (continents) and a number of *varsas* (subcontinents): accounts of people living in different continents: names and description of the seven nether worlds, description of the solar system and the movements of the luminaries: description of the four *yugas* (*satya*, *treta*, *dvāpara* and *kalī*) and the fourteen *manvantaras* (Svāyambhuva, Svārocīsa, Auttama, Tāmasa, Raivata, Cākṣuṣa, Vāivasvata, Sāvārnika, Dakṣa sāvārna, Brahma sāvārna, Dharma sāvārna, Rudra sāvārna, Raucya and Bhautya). It also contains

Ed. P. Peterson, Bombay Sanskrit Series No. 24, p. 41—*purāṇe vāyu pralāpitaṃ*
Ed. S. D. Gajendragadkar and A. B. Gajendragadkar (Poona), *Ucchvāsa* III, p. 6
²¹ *Kādambarī*, p. 90—*purāṇam iva yathā vibhāgavasthāpitaṃ sakala bhuvana koṣaṃ*

chapters on music different Vedic schools Pāśupata yoga duties of the Pāśupata *yogins* duties of the people of different castes and orders of life funeral ceremonies and so on There are a number of interesting myths and legends such as those of Śiva's destruction of the sacrifice instituted by Dakṣa Purūrava's love for and union with Urvasī and the birth of the Asvins

The *Brahmānda Purāna* which is called so for its dealing with the cosmic egg (*brahmānda*) and is virtually the same as the present *Vāyu Purāna* has been assigned the eighteenth place in almost all the lists of eighteen Purānas In view of the facts that this work has sometimes been called *Vāyavīya Brahmānda* that it also like the *Vāyu Purāna* is said to have been proclaimed by Vāyu and that its chapters often agree almost literally with those of the *Vāyu Purana* F. E. Pargiter has rightly said that originally these two Purānas were not separate This view is supported by some of the verses quoted in the Nibandhas from the *Vāyu Purāna* or *Vāyavīya* but found only in the present *Brahmānda* In a few cases verses ascribed to the *Brahmānda Purāna* in the works of Ballālasena Devanabhatta and Hemādri are found not in the present *Brahmānda* but in the *Vāyu* This also proves the original unity of the texts of the two Purānas

It is not known definitely when and why the same original Purāna which was named most probably after Vāyu came to have a second version with a different title A comparison between the dynastic accounts given in the *Vāyu* and the *Brahmānda* shows that the separation took place after A.D. 325 and most probably not earlier than A.D. 400 for the *Brahmānda* has not only the *Vāyu*'s account of the Gupta dynasty of Magadha but agrees very closely with the text of the present *Vāyu* The cause of separation may be sectarian because in the *Brahmānda* there are a few chapters (viz III XXI ff) which smack of Vaiṣṇavism On the other hand a few chapters of the *Vāyu Purāna* especially those on Pāśupata *vrata* and *yoga* are not found in the *Brahmānda*

In the Venkateśvara Press Edition the *Brahmānda Purāna* consists of two parts of which the first is divided like the *Vāyu Purana* into four Parts—*Prakriyā Anusanga Upodghāta* and *Upasamhara*—and is much the same as the present *Vāyu* but the second part styled *Lalitopākhyāna* (Story of Lalitā) is dedicated to the Goddess Lalitā a form of Durgā and teaches her worship by Tāntric rites So this *Lalitopākhyāna* must be a very late appendage to the *Brahmānda Purāna*

The third most important Purāna is the *Mārkaṇdeya* which seems to come from an early date and to have been non sectarian in its origin This work derives its name from the ancient sage Mārkaṇḍeya whom Jaimini

a pupil of Vyāsa approaches for the solution of some doubts raised in his mind by the study of the *Mahābhārata* but who refers the latter to the four wise birds living on the Vindhya hills. Consequently it is the four birds which speak to Jaimini in chapters IV XLIV although this *Purāna* is named after Mārkaṇḍeya. It is only in chapters XLV ff. that these birds are found to report what Mārkaṇḍeya had said to Kraustuki on the five characteristic topics of the *Purānas*. The way in which this work refers to the present form and character of the *Mahābhārata* in its opening verses and utilizes the contents of the latter in chapters X XLIV shows that at least a considerable portion of the present *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* including the aforesaid chapters was composed after the *Mahābhārata* had attained its present extent content and character i.e. possibly not earlier than A.D. 200. From a careful analysis of the entire *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* it appears that these chapters were added to it about the third century A.D.

Chapters LXXXI XCIII of the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* constitute an independent and complete work called *Devī māhātmya* alias *Candī* or *Saptasatī* which must have been inserted into it at a comparatively late date but certainly not later than A.D. 600. This *Devī māhātmya* glorifies the supreme goddess Devī (Durgā) in her different forms and is a very favourite work of the worshippers of Śakti. Its wide popularity is shown not only by its innumerable manuscripts still found in all parts of the country but also by the large number of its commentaries.

In spite of the many later additions as indicated above the present *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* contains a large number of chapters (especially XLV LXXX and XCIV CXXXVI) which reach back to considerable antiquity and must be remnants of the old *Purāna*. In these chapters which have Mārkaṇḍeya as the original speaker neither Viṣṇu nor Śiva occupies a prominent place. On the other hand Indra and Brahmā²⁴ are much in the foreground and the ancient Vedic deities Agni and Sūrya have been praised in several chapters by a number of hymns. There are also a large number of Sun myths in chapters CI CX. It is highly probable that this work was originally composed for popularizing the Śrauta and Smārta rites which had already begun to be neglected by the people.

Being originally an ancient work the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* deals in its comparatively early chapters with creation recreation (including geography of the earth especially of Bhāratavarṣa in Jambudvīpa) the four teen *manvantaras* and the accounts of kings more or less elaborately. But we find to our great disappointment that this work treats of the genealogies of kings very imperfectly omits those of the sages and it remarkably lacks

²⁴ According to Indian tradition Brahmā was the deity of the earliest age viz. *kr̥tayuga* and hailed from Puskara dvīpa.

accounts of the dynasties of the *kalīyuga*. On the other hand it has incorporated a good number of chapters on topics usually dealt with in the earlier metrical Smṛti works and contains a few interesting legends of which special mention may be made of those of King Hariscandra whom Viśvāmitra made to suffer endless sorrow and humiliation of Queen Madālasā who gave instructions on self knowledge to her sons of whom Alarka was the youngest of King Vipāścī who preferred to remain in hell for alleviating the sufferings of the sinners there and of King Dama who in order to avenge the death of his father Narisyaṁta cruelly killed Vapusmat and offered his flesh and blood to the spirit of his father together with the funeral cakes.

Unlike the three Purānas already mentioned the *Viṣṇu Purāna* is a sectarian work belonging to the Pāñcarātras and purely Vaiṣṇava from beginning to end. Yet it has retained with considerable faithfulness the character of the old unsectarian Purānas. It is divided into six parts called *amsas* each of which consists of a number of chapters. In the first three sections it deals with creation, recreation, detailed geography of the earth and the atmosphere, description of the solar system, accounts of the fourteen *manvantaras*, names of the twenty eight Vyāsas who lived in different ages and divided the Vedas, rise of the various Vedic schools, duties of the different castes and orders of life, funeral sacrifices and so on. In part four it gives often in prose the genealogies and accounts of kings with particular care and contains valuable information regarding the dynasties of the *kalīyuga*. Part five which is the longest is given to the sports and adventures of the divine Kṛṣṇa at Vṛndāvana and Dvārakā and part six which is the shortest describes the evils of the *kalīyuga* and birth and has discourses on *yoga* which leads to that type of knowledge by which one can realize the Supreme Being here none other than Viṣṇu Himself.

The *Viṣṇu Purāna* is an early work composed most probably in the last quarter of the third or the first quarter of the fourth century A.D. Although it has the character much more of a unified work than of a mere compilation it contains numerous such old verses on creation, recreation, etc. as have been commonly utilized by many of the extant Purānas. On the other hand chapters seventeen and eighteen of part three which describes the story of Viṣṇu's issuing of Mayīmoha (an illusive figure) from his own body for turning the demons on the banks of the Narmadā into *arhats* (i.e. Jains) and Buddhists are in all probability later additions. *Viṣṇu Purāna* IV 24 also describing the dynasties of the *kalīyuga* must have been revised in later times. However this Purāna has preserved the best text, additions and alterations having been made in it much less freely than in the other Purānas. It lacks chapters on

devotional vows holy places etc and is a rich store of interesting myths and legends of which those of Dhruva ~~Prah~~lada and King Bharata are interesting

The *Matsya Purāna* is a voluminous work dealing besides the usual topics of the ancient Purānas with devotional vows and forms of worship holy places and rivers (especially Prayāga Kāśī and the Narmadā) gifts of various types politics omens and portents construction and consecration of images of gods and goddesses house building social customs funeral ceremonies and so on It is a conglomerate of chapters taken at different times from various sources especially the *Vāyu Purāna* and the *Viṣṇu dharmottara* A comparison between the *Matsya* and the *Vāyu Purāna* from which the former took its chapters on the most important topics viz *vamśa manvantara* and *vamśānucarita* shows that the borrowing from the *Vāyu Purāna* was made either in the last quarter of the third or the first quarter of the fourth century A.D. and this must be the time of the first composition or rather compilation of the present *Matsya Purāna* It was only at subsequent periods that chapters from the *Viṣṇu dharmottara* and other works were incorporated into this Purāna

The title and the non borrowed chapters (IXII) of the present *Matsya Purāna* indicate that this work was originally compiled by the Pāñcarātra Vaiṣnavas somewhere about the river Narmadā and it was at a much later date that the Śiva worshippers laid their hands on it and modified it with additions and alterations

Like the other early Purānas the *Matsya* contains a large number of stories and legends, of which the following deserve special mention Devayāni's vain love for Kaca and her ultimate marriage with King Yayāti Yayāti's insatiety even after enjoying life for a long time and his consequent transfer of his infirmity to his son Puru Śiva's burning of the city of Tripura and Kārtikeya's birth and killing of the demon Tārakā It should be mentioned here that there are several indications in the chapters on Kārtikeya's birth which show that the *Matsya Purāna* has utilized the story and language of Kalidasa's *Kumara sambhava*

The *Bhāgavata Purāna* which is the most popular of the extant Purānic works deserves special attention not only as a literary production on account of its language style and metre but also as a valuable record of the theological and philosophical doctrines of the Bhāgavata Vaiṣnavas to whom it exclusively belongs It consists of twelve parts called *skandhas* each divided into a number of chapters Although it is given to the praise and worship of the divine Kṛṣṇa who is called a partial incarnation (*amsāvātāra*) or the Bhagavat Himself it deals with all the characteristic topics of the ancient Purānas including the dynasties of the *kaliyuga* It

is closely connected with the *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* and has used the latter in its composition. It repeats much more elaborately many of the myths and legends of the *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* and gives the biography of Kṛṣṇa in greater detail. Internal and external evidences show that the present *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* must have been written in the sixth century A.D. and most probably in its former half but it can hardly be denied that this work has been revised and emended at times. There are three lists of incarnations of Viṣṇu all including the Buddha which differ from one another in length and order and the *tulasī* plant the Tantra and the name Mahāpurāṇa for the principal Puranas and their ten characteristics have been mentioned in some of the chapters.

The description of the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* as given in *Matsya Purāṇa* LIII does not agree completely with the contents of the present *Bhagavata*. So it is highly probable that there was an earlier *Bhāgavata* which was the prototype of the present one and from which chapters have been retained in the latter. It is most probably this earlier work which has been mentioned in the *Viṣṇu Kūrma* and other Purāṇas.

The present *Kūrma Purāṇa* which is divided into two *bhāgas* (parts) called *pūrva* (former) and *uttara* (latter) claims to be the first section called *Brāhmī Samhitā* of a much bigger work consisting of four *samhitās* or sections namely *Brāhmī Bhagavatī Saurī* and *Vaiṣṇavī*. Of the remaining three *samhitās* which seem to be lost the extant *Kūrma Purāṇa* gives us no further information. The *Nāradya Purāṇa*²⁵ however contains a list of contents of all the four *samhitās* the contents of the *Brāhmī Samhitā* agreeing fully with those of our extant *Kūrma Purāṇa*. According to the *Nāradya* the *Bhagavatī Samhitā* which consisted of five *pādas* (parts) and was termed *Pañca padī* dealt separately in the different parts with the duties of the Brāhmanas Kṣatriyas Vaiśyas Śūdras and the mixed castes the *Saurī Samhitā* was divided into six parts and dealt with the six magic acts *sānti* (relief through removal of diseases pacification of unfavourable planets) *vaśīkarana* (taming or making one subservient) *stambhana* (arresting another's activities) *vidvesana* (causing hatred), *uccātana* (making a person quit his place and occupation) and *mārana* (causing destruction of another) and the *Vaiṣṇavī Samhitā* was divided into four *pādas* dealing with *mokṣa dharma* (duties leading to liberation) for the twice born. As to the length of these Samhitās the *Nāradya Purāṇa* says that they contained 6000 4000 2000 and 5000 verses respectively.

A careful examination of the present *Kūrma Purāṇa* shows that it was originally a Pāñcarātra work with a considerable Śakta element and that it

was composed between A.D. 500 and 650 but it was later appropriated and recast by the Pāsupatas towards the beginning of the eighth century A.D. In its early Visnuite character this work approached much like the *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* to the old definition of the Purāṇa of five characteristics and lacked chapters on holy places. Chapters one and two of part one and chapters one to eleven of part two of this Purāṇa which have been retained in it from its earlier form, have been changed by the Pāsupatas in such a way that it is very difficult to find them out. These Pāsupatas not only re-wrote some of the earlier sections giving up others that went against their own interest but introduced many new myths legends accounts of holy places and the like in order to attain their sectarian end. In later ages the Śāktas and the Nakulīśa Pāsupatas also made further additions of materials but these are negligible.

Having been subjected to a destructive recast the present *Kūrma Purāṇa* has lost much of the topics characteristic of the older Purāṇas. The genealogies of kings and sages as occurring in it are highly imperfect and no mention has been made of the dynasties of the *kalīyuga*. There are of course a few chapters on the geography of the earth and the universe and one on the *manvantaras*. In one of the chapters it speaks of the twenty-eight Vyāsas who lived in different ages.

The passing of the *Kūrma Purāṇa* through two main stages does not mean that there was no earlier work bearing the same title. It may be that the present *Kūrma Purāṇa* in its Visnuite character had an earlier stage in which it was bereft of the Śākta element like the present *Viṣṇu Purāṇa*.

The remaining eleven Purāṇas as we have them now are all late works dealing almost exclusively with religious and social matters and containing very little of the five topics characteristic of the older Purāṇas. Their late origin is shown definitely by the disagreement between their contents and the description of the Purāṇas of the same titles as given in the *Matsya Skanda* and *Agni Purāṇas*. *Vāmana Linga Varaha Padma Agni Skanda Brahma-vivarta* and *Bhaviṣya* are the results of destructive recasts to which their older prototypes were subjected and *Nāradya Garuda* and *Brahma* are totally new works composed deliberately for replacing the older ones bearing the same titles. The *Vāmana Purāṇa* as its title and description given in the *Matsya* (LIII 45-46) and the *Skanda* (VII 1-2 63-64) shows was originally a Vaiṣṇava work belonging most probably to the Pāñcarātras. It was rewritten by the Śiva worshippers in the ninth or tenth century A.D. retaining fragments here and there from its earlier form. The *Linga Purāṇa* is an apocryphal work consisting of two parts and belonging to the Linga worshippers who extolled the worship of the phallic symbol of Śiva over that of his image. None of the numerous verses ascribed to the *Linga Purāṇa*

01 *Linga* in the works of Jimūtavāhana Vijñāneśvara Aparārka and many others is found in the present *Linga Purāna*. External and internal evidences however show that this present *Linga* is not a very late work but was composed between A.D. 600 and 1000. The *Varāha Purāna* is primarily a Vaisnava work consisting of different groups of chapters written mainly by the Pāñcarātras and the Bhāgavatas in different ages. Its original portion consisting of chapters I LXXXIX and XCVIII was composed about A.D. 800 and the major portion of the rest was written before A.D. 1100. Its final chapters on Uttara Gokarna appear to have been added to it not earlier than A.D. 1100 by some śiva worshippers who wanted to glorify this śaiva holy place in Nepal.

The voluminous *Padma Purāna* belongs principally to the Vaisnavas. It has come down to us in two distinct recensions the Bengal and the South Indian. In the former recension which has not yet been printed but which is undoubtedly more reliable than the South Indian one the *Purāna* consists of five *khandas* or parts *Srsti Bhūmi Svarga Pātāla* and *Uttara* but in the latter recension it has six parts *Ādi* (also called *Svarga* in certain printed editions) *Bhūmi Brahma Pātāla Srsti* and *Uttara*. Of these different *khandas* the *Ādi* and the *Bhūmi* are late appendages composed after A.D. 900. The *Bhūmi khandā* in its earlier form treated mainly of the geography of the earth but as we have it now it is entirely a Vaisnava book of legends composed not earlier than A.D. 900. In the Bengal recension the *Bhūmi khandā* contains thirteen chapters more of which four deal with the geography of the earth (*bhūgola*). The *Pātāla khandā* contains three groups of chapters composed at different times the first group belonging to the Rāmāite sect the second to the Vaisnavas and the third to the *Linga* worshippers. Internal and external evidences show that this *khandā* cannot be dated earlier than A.D. 800. The *Pātāla khandā* of the Bengal recension contains thirty one additional chapters which deal with the description of the subterranean regions the story of killing the demon Tripura the legends of the kings of the Solar race especially of Rāma and his descendants and the praise of the *Bhāgavata Purāna*. The *Svarga khandā* of the Bengal recension contains accounts of the different regions (*lokas*) and stories of kings and demons and has utilized the *Abhijñāna śakuntalam* and the *Raghuvamśa* of Kālidāsa. The *Srsti khandā* can be divided into two parts of which the second does not occur in the Bengal recension. There is evidence to show that this part was added to the *Srsti khandā* after the Mohammedans had established kingdoms in India. A careful examination of the first part shows that it consists almost entirely of chapters taken from the *Matsya* and the *Viṣṇu Puranas* and that it was first compiled by the Brahmā worshippers between A.D. 600 and 750. It

was then taken up by some non Brahmas Vaisnavas Rāmāites and Śaivas who added to it many new chapters between A D 750 and 950 most probably in the former half of the eighth century A D next the Tantric Brahmas interpolated some verses or groups of verses after A D 850 and last of all the Śāktas made further additions The evidence of the *Nāradya Purāna* shows that the *Srsti khanda* with its latest additions must have been complete before A D 1400 The *Uttara khanda* is a late conglomeration of Vaisnava legends and glorifications and can scarcely be earlier than A D 900

The *Nāradya Purana* a Vaisnava work consists of two parts of which the first incorporates the entire *Brhan nāradya Purāna* which was composed by the Vaisnavas about the middle of the ninth century A D The remaining chapters of the first part are comparatively late additions and some of them contain detailed information regarding the contents of the eighteen principal Purānas now extant The second part though attached to the *Nāradya Purāna* is really an independent work differing in general character from the first forty-one chapters of the first part and sometimes appearing in manuscripts as an independent text The last forty five chapters of this part bear signs of comparatively late dates An examination of the contents of the present *Nāradya* shows that it was first compiled some time about the beginning of the tenth century A D The *Agni* and the *Garuda Purāna* are spurious Vaisnava works of encyclopaedic character containing almost everything of general interest Of these two works the former contains summaries of the *Rāmāyana Mahābhārata Harivamsa Pingala Chandah Sūtra Amarakosa Yuddha jayārṇava Hastyāyurveda* (of Pālakāpya) etc It incorporates verses or entire chapters of many other works such as the *Nārada Smṛti Yājñavalkya Smṛti* and *Viṣṇu Purāna* The *Garuda Purāna* utilizes the *Yājñavalkya Smṛti Manu Samhitā Paraśara Smṛti Brhat Samhitā* (of Varāhamihira) *Kalāpa Vyakarana* with Kātyayana's additional chapter on verbal derivations *Astānga hrdaya Samhitā* of Vāgbhata II *Aśva cikitsā* of Nakula *Cānakya rāja nīti śāstra* of Bhoja and some of the Purānas such as the *Bhāgavata Kūrma Vāyu* and *Mārkaṇḍeya* According to the *Dānasāgara* of Ballālasena these two works were forged by the Tāntrikas for deceiving the people and they were furnished with fictitious genealogies as well as with chapters on lexicography testing of gems, and so on External and internal evidences show that the *Agni Purāna* was compiled during the ninth century and the *Garuda Purāna* which was modelled on the *Agni* was compiled in the tenth century A D The *Brahma Purāna* is entirely a new work and consists mainly of chapters taken from the *Mahābhārata Harivamsa Viṣṇu Purana Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* and *Vāyu Purāna* Those chapters of this spurious work which have not been traced anywhere else, deal chiefly with the praise

of the shrines and holy places in Purusottamaksetra (Puri) Konārka Ekāmra ksetra (Bhuvaneśvara) and Virajāksetra (Jajpur) which lie in Orissa and belong respectively to the Vaisnavas Sauras Śaivas and Śāktas As the chapters on Konārka Ekamraksetra and Virajā-ksetra must have been written by different hands and inserted at comparatively late dates it is probable that the present *Brahma Purana* owed its origin to those Vaisnavas of Orissa who wanted to popularize Purusottama ksetra as a great Vaisnava holy place There is evidence to show that this work was compiled between A.D. 900 and 1200

The *Skanda Purāna* is a voluminous work consisting of a very large number of parts most of which have not yet been printed Though like the other Purānas the *Skanda* also was subjected to additions and alterations more than once there are chapters in it which were written earlier than A.D. 1000 but it seems to contain little which can be dated earlier than A.D. 700 The *Brahma vaivarta Purana* is one of the latest of the extant Purānic works It consists of four parts—*Brahmakhanda Prakṛti khanda Ganapati khanda* and *Kṛṣṇajñāna khanda* and preaches the worship of Kṛṣṇa and Rādhā A careful examination of this work shows that it was first composed most probably in the eighth century A.D. and that from about the tenth century it began to be changed by the Bengal authors who recast it to its present form and contents in the sixteenth century But in spite of this late recast certain portions have been retained in it from an earlier form of the Purāna The *Bhavisya Purāna*¹ itself and the *Nāradya Purāna* tell us that the former work consisted of five parts (*parvans*) *Brāhma Vaisnava Sarva Tvaṣṭra* (or *Saura* according to the *Nāradya Purāna*) and *Pratisarga* But the printed edition of the *Bhavisya* contains only four parts *Brāhma Madhyama Pratisarga* and *Uttara* Of these the *Madhyamaparvan* which is not mentioned anywhere as having formed part of the *Bhavisya* is a late appendage abounding in Tantric elements The *Pratisargaparvan* though nominally mentioned in the *Bhavisya* (I 1 2 3) is practically a new work containing stories about Adam Noah Yākuta Taimurlong Nadir Shah Akbar (the emperor of Delhi), Jayacandra Prthvī rāja Varāhamihira Śankarācārya Ramanuja Nimbārka Madhva Jaya deva Viṣṇu Svamin Bhaṭṭojī dīkṣita Anandagiri Kṛṣṇa Caitanya Nityā nanda Kabīra Nānaka Ruidāsa and many others It even knows the British rule in India and names Calcutta and the Parliament (*asta kausalya*) The *Uttaraparvan* though attached to the *Bhavisya Purāna* is really an independent work known under the title *Bhavisyottara* and included among the Upapurānas But very different is the case with the *Brāhmaṇaparvan* the major portion of which must have been written between A.D. 500 and

900 Besides treating of the duties of women good and bad signs of men women and kings and the method of worshipping Brahmā Ganeśa Skanda and the Snakes on different lunar days it contains a large number of chapters on Sun worship and solar myths relating especially to the origin of the Bhojakas from the Magas of Śāka dvīpa This *parvan* has been profusely drawn upon by the Nibandha writers

THE PURANAS AS HISTORICAL AND GEOGRAPHICAL RECORDS AS
ENCYCLOPAEDIAS AND AS RELIGIOUS BOOKS

History in the modern sense of the term was unknown in ancient India in spite of the many sided development of her civilization and culture but historical tradition chiefly relating to dynastic lists and notable events in the lives of kings used to be handed down from generation to generation from the most ancient times In the extant Purānas there are various indications which show definitely that particular care was taken in early times to study and preserve correctly the dynastic lists and accounts which later came to be recorded more or less systematically in the Purānas We have already seen that out of the eighteen works of this class only six namely the *Vāyu Brahmānda Mārkaṇḍeya Viṣṇu Matsya* and *Bhāgavata*, come from comparatively early dates and have more or less the character of early Purānas All these six works as also those of the rest which contain genealogical lists and accounts trace the different dynasties of ancient India to a common mythical ancestor Vaivasvata Manu son of Sūrya (the Sun) It has been said that Vaivasvata Manu had nine sons of whom four were important namely Ikṣvāku Nābhānedīstha Śaryāti and Nābhāga Ikṣvāku reigned in Ayodhyā and had two sons Vīkṣi Śaśāda and Nīmi from whom proceeded the dynasties of Ayodhyā and Videha respectively The former dynasty in which Rāma son of Daśaratha was born in much later days is better known as the Ikṣvāku dynasty or the Solar race of Ayodhyā Nābhānedīstha reigned in Vaiśālī and founded the Vaiśāla dynasty Śaryāti ruled in Ānarta (Gujarat) and became the founder of the Śaryāta dynasty of that place and from Nābhāga descended a line of kings of whom Rathītara became the ancestor of the Rāthītaras Besides the sons mentioned above, Vaivasvata Manu had a daughter Ilā or according to some Purānas a son Ilā who was turned into a woman Ilā Ilā consorted with Budha son of Soma (the Moon) and gave birth to a son Purūrava Aila who became the progenitor of the Aila or Lunar race of Pratiṣṭhana (Allahabad) Purūrava Aila had six or seven sons of whom Āyu (or Āyus) continued the main line at Pratiṣṭhāna and Amāvasu became the founder of the dynasty of Kānyakubja (Kanauj) Āyu had five sons—Nahusa Kṣatravṛddhi (or Vṛddhaśarman) Rambha Raji and Anēnas, of whom

Ksatravrdha founded the Kāśī dynasty Nahusa's son Yayatī had five sons who became the founders or distant ancestors of a large number of royal families viz the Haihayas Yādavas (among whom Kṛṣṇa was born) Turvasus Druhyus Ānavas Pauravas (among whom Yudhiṣṭhira and others were born) and so on Long lists of kings of these dynasties have been given in many of the extant Purāṇas and if these lists were all perfectly true some of them would reach back to a time at least 2000 years before the Kaurava Pāṇḍava war of the *Mahābhārata*

After the *Mahābhārata* war detailed dynastic lists of three royal families only namely the Aiksvākus the Pauravas and the kings of Magadha continue to be given in the Purāṇas down to the time of Adhishimakṛṣṇa who was sixth in descent from Arjuna the hero of the great *Mahābhārata* war Of the other royal families the extant Purāṇas contain very incomplete accounts

Besides the genealogies of kings of the past which ended either with the *Mahābhārata* war or about a century later with the reign of Adhishimakṛṣṇa some of the extant Purāṇas give in the form of prophecies a number of lists of kings of the future *kaliyuga* and in their accounts of such future kings the *Vāyu Brahmānda Viṣṇu Matsya* and *Bhāgavata* include with the mention of the durations of rules of the different kings a few dynasties of the historical period viz the Śisunāgas Nandas Mauryas Śungas Kānvas Āndhras and Guptas all so well known in Indian history The ancestors of these dynasties except the Gupta dynasty which has not been mentioned in the *Matsya Purāṇa* are followed by the enumeration of a series of other dynasties mostly of low and barbarian origin (Ābhiras Gardabhiḥas Śakas Yavanas Tusaras Hūnas etc) which were contemporaneous with the former After mentioning all these lines of kings the Purāṇas give a dreary description of the social condition in northern India which was consequent upon the foreign invasions and the spread of the non Brāhmanical and anti Brāhmanical religious systems F E Pargiter has critically examined the texts of the five Purāṇas mentioned above and shown their importance in reconstructing the history of these dynasties

Although as the evidence of the Vedic Buddhist and other works as well as of the inscriptions shows there can be little doubt about the fact that ancient Indian historical tradition as now found recorded in the Purāṇas was in its origin very often based on facts the connection of all these dynasties as given in the Purāṇas except a few of the *kaliyuga* with a common mythical ancestor is unconvincing It is also clear how myth has played an important part in the shaping of the genealogical lists and accounts of the extant Purāṇas from early times As a matter of fact the present Purāṇas came gradually to lose their ancient character from about

the beginning of the Christian era if not earlier and to turn into books of religious and social interest. Genealogies of kings and sages were treated with increasing neglect and sometimes forged and facts were unscrupulously and complacently mixed with fiction for pleasing the common people. Consequently the extant Purānas in their present forms have to be used with the greatest caution for any historical purpose. Another difficulty which confronts every reader of the Puranas is the want of critical editions of these works. Not even the *Vāyu Purāna* which is the most important of all the Purānic works for its valuable contents has been edited critically by comparing the manuscripts of different provinces of India. It is only the intensive and comparative study of the Purānas based on highly critical editions which can help us to some extent in reconstructing the political history of pre Buddhist India. But unfortunately most of the comparatively early Purānic works or portions thereof which were replaced by others of more recent dates have been lost for ever.

No less important are the Purānas for tracing the social development of the ancient Hindus. The aphoristic and the metrical Law books (Dharma Sūtras and Dharma sāstras) of the orthodox Brāhmanas give us pictures of only the ideal Brāhmanical society in different ages but they do not help us in any way in understanding how far the Brahmanical ideas were followed in practice or how the people at large led their life. It is the Purānas which can be our main guides in this direction only if we use them with proper discrimination and judgement. It should be mentioned here that the Purānas are not works of social history but references to social conditions in them are often incidental and sometimes intentional. The Purānas make it clear to us that Hindu society in ancient India unlike that of the present time was a living one with great vital force which could mould itself according to circumstances and absorb easily and without much ado not only the numerous native tribes scattered all over the country but also hordes of casteless foreigners who poured into this land during the few centuries preceding and following the Christian era.

Among the other subjects of interest dealt with in the present Purānas is geography which came to be introduced from early times in connection with re-creation and many of the extant Purānas contain a few chapters each on this topic. According to Purānic tradition the earth consisted of seven *dvīpas* or continents namely Jambu dvīpa, Plakṣa dvīpa, Śālmali dvīpa, Kuśa dvīpa, Krauñca-dvīpa, Śāka dvīpa and Puskara dvīpa each of which was divided into a number of *varṣas* or subcontinents. These *dvīpas* were surrounded by seven oceans containing water having the taste respectively of salt, sugarcane-juice, wine, clarified butter, curd, milk and good drinking water. The Jambu-dvīpa which occupied the central position,

had in its middle a golden mountain called Meru from which a number of other mountains including the Himalaya radiated in different directions like the petals of a lotus. This *dvīpa* was divided into nine *varsas* or sub-continents one of which was called Bhārata varsa (India). The Purānas supply information about all the seven *dvīpas*—about their measurements, their mountains and rivers, their residents, their presiding deities, the longevity and general standard of morality of the people and other details but give special attention to the description of Jambudvīpa and more particularly of Bhārata varsa which in early times occupied a much bigger area than at present and which has been praised as the *karma bhūmi* (place for work) for those who aspire after heaven or final liberation. Although the chapters on geography still contain in spite of later modifications much valuable information about the topography of the ancient world especially of India it is rather disappointing to find that the Purānic geographical tradition also like the dynastic accounts has been influenced considerably by mythology.

The encyclopaedic character of the present Purānas is not universal but is peculiar to only three of them namely the *Matsya Agni* and *Garuda* which besides dealing with the usual Purāna topics contain chapters on astronomy, astrology, chiromancy, superstitions, omens and portents, medical science, treatment of children suffering under the influence of unfavourable planets, treatment of cows, horses and elephants, knowledge of snakes, treatment of snake bite, knowledge of precious stones, coronation and duties of kings, politics, science of war, archery, use of other arms, agriculture, gardening, metrics, grammar, lexicography, dramaturgy, poetics, music, dancing, architecture, construction of images of deities and so on. In dealing with the topics mentioned these Purānas sometimes give summaries of ancient Sanskrit works such as the *Rāmayaṇa*, *Mahābhārata*, *Harivamśa*, etc. and often plagiarize verses or even entire chapters from other standard works some of which have already been mentioned in connection with analysing the contents of the *Agni* and the *Garuda Purāna*. The chapters on omens and portents of the *Matsya Purāna* must have been based on an ancient work (viz. *Vṛddha Garga Samhitā*) ascribed to Vṛddha Garga. Thus by turning themselves into something like encyclopaedias the above three Purānas have attained additional interest and importance in that they have preserved summaries and fragments of ancient works some of which have been lost for ever.

For this new character the *Matsya Purāna* is undoubtedly indebted to the *Viṣṇu dharmottara* which was written either in southern Kashmir or in the northernmost part of the Punjab sometime during the fifth century A.D. and from which the *Matsya Purāna* has taken a large number of

chapters including those dealing with some of the topics mentioned above. The *Agni Purāna* which as F. E. Pargiter says followed the *Matsya* tradition as regards the Aiksvaku genealogy must have imitated the latter work in its new character more successfully and the *Garuda Purāna* was clearly modelled on the *Agni*. It is not known what led the *Viṣṇu dharmottara* to appear in such a new character. It may be that from the fourth century A.D. the Hindus began to feel keenly the necessity not only of popularizing the study of the different branches of Sanskrit learning as against the literary activities of the Buddhists, Jains and others but also of increasing the importance of the *Purānas* as repositories of knowledge so that these might find favour with highly educated people also.

But it is as religious works that the *Purānas* have been respectfully studied for centuries and are still read by the people of this country because these works have shown them the easiest way of attaining peace and perfection in life and have put forth often in the forms of myths and stories easy solutions of those difficult problems with which one is sure to be confronted in one's religious and social life. As a matter of fact the *Purānas* have rendered the greatest service in effecting the racial and religious unification of the diverse people of India. They have treated every religious faith of the soil unless it was dogmatically atheistic with respect and with a synthetic attitude and accorded to it a position in the *Purānic* pantheism by explaining its deity and its principles through a reconciliation of the teachings of *Sāṃkhya* and *Vedānta*. It is the *Puranas* which have brought about unity in diversity and taught religious toleration to the followers of different faiths by making them realize that God is one though called by different names. It is mainly through these works that the Vedic ideas and ideals of religion and society have survived up to the present day and got wide circulation among the people of India and outside. The *Purānas* are therefore perfectly justified when they say

*Yo vidyāccaturo vedān sangopanisado dvijah
Nā cet purānam sarvvidyan narva sa syād vicaksanah
Itihāsa purānabhyam vedam samupabrmhayet
Bibhety alpaśrutād vedo mām ayam prahariṣyati*

That twice born (*Brahmana*) who knows the four Vedas with the *Angas* (supplementary sciences) and the *Upaniṣads* should not be (regarded as) proficient unless he thoroughly knows the *Purāna*. He should reinforce the Vedas with the *Itihāsa* and the *Purāna*. The Vedas is afraid of him who is deficient in traditional knowledge (thinking). He will hurt me.

The harmony which the Puranas brought about in the doctrines of knowledge action and devotion and in the Vedic and non Vedic views of life and conduct exerted its influence in all strata of Hindu society with the result that the life of the average Hindu of the present day presents a texture into which various ideas and practices of different times and regions have been interwoven with an unparalleled symmetry In the eyes of a non-Hindu the Purāṇic culture and religion appear as a bundle of contradictions Yet a Hindu finds nothing difficult or inconsistent in his ideas and practices and leads his life with perfect ease and harmony He is rarely found to be absolutely foreign to the truths of life and conduct his ancestors discovered for him Even an illiterate Hindu living far away from the seats of learning is not totally ignorant of the principles and philosophical truths taught in the Puranas and as a result he has a very broad view of life and a deep sense of tolerance and accommodation which can rarely be expected elsewhere of a person like him This is so only because of the fact that the epics and the Purāṇas have played a very important part in the life of the Hindus for more than two thousand years They have brought home to the common man the wisdom of the saints of the highest order without creating any discord The authors of these works took every individual into consideration and made such prescriptions as would benefit him in his social and religious life In giving recognition to a man's personal worth they slackened the rigours of the caste system and declared "Being remembered or talked of or seen or touched a devotee of the Lord even if he be a Candāla purifies (the people) easily" They allowed greater freedom to women and Śūdras in social and religious matters with the result that these neglected members of Hindu society could have their own religious life and worship their deities themselves The religion and philosophy professed by the Purāṇas had such a great appeal that even scholars philosophers or religious reformers like Viṣṇu Bhikṣu Rāmānuja Madhva Vallabha and Jīva Gosvāmin to mention only a few very frequently drew upon the Purāṇas in their own works in support of their philosophical views and this utilization led to the greater popularity of these works with all grades of Hindu population

Sectarian excesses are sometimes found in the extant Purāṇas but these are due to the want of proper understanding of the idea of absolute or unswerving devotion (*aikāntikī bhakti*) on which the Purāṇic religion is principally based and it is owing to this basic idea that Brahmā Viṣṇu Śiva and other deities have been praised individually as the highest one in some Purāṇa or other

¹ *Varaṇa Purāṇa* CCXI 88

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

CONCLUSION

From the above survey of the eighteen principal Purānas it is evident that these works have been utilized through centuries not only for educating the mass mind and infusing it with the nobler ideas of life but also for tactfully solving the religious, social and economic problems which were created in ancient India by the rise of various religious movements and the repeated invasions made by foreign races. A careful analysis of the devotional *vratas* for instance will amply testify to the Purānic Brāhmana's deep insight into human nature as well as to their intelligence in cleverly tackling the various problems especially those relating to women from whom the life and spirit of a race proceed. It is undeniable that the extant Purānas can only on rare occasions claim for themselves any real merit as literary productions but it must be admitted that in addition to their character as records of ancient geography and political history they are of inestimable value from the point of view of the history of religion and culture of the ancient Hindus. As a matter of fact these works afford us more than other works of the time a great insight into all phases and aspects of Hinduism as well as into the inner spirit of the Hindu social system with its adaptability in all ages and under all circumstances, however unfavourable. They therefore deserve far more careful study than has hitherto been devoted to them.

THE UPAPURĀNAS

THE EXTENT ANTIQUITY AND ORIGIN OF THE UPAPURĀNA LITERATURE

THE long standing tradition current in all provinces of India limits the number of the Mahāpurānas to eighteen but the Purāna literature certainly extends beyond this traditional number. The class of works designated as Upapurāna consists of a large number of compilations some of which are extensive and important while a few can rightly claim to have originated much earlier than many of the so called Mahapurānas now extant. But unfortunately all these works have been given much less importance than the Mahāpurānas and they are differentiated from the latter by styling them as secondary Purānas. It is undoubtedly due to the disparaging prefix *upa* (secondary) that these works have been treated with indifference by scholars ancient and modern¹ although their importance as records of the social and religious history of India from the Gupta period downward can by no means be overlooked.

As in the case of the Mahāpurānas a claim has been made in the Purānas Smrtis etc that the Upapurānas also are eighteen in number even though some of the authorities making such a claim give evidence of their knowledge of the existence of a larger number of Upapurānas² but unlike those of the Mahāpurānas the different lists of eighteen Upapurānas seldom agree with one another with regard to the titles of the individual works. The list given in the *Kūrma Purāna* (1 1 17 20) shows the following names (1) *Ādya* (*Sanatkumārokti*) (2) *Nārasimha* (3) *Skānda* (4) *Śvadharmā* (5) *Durvāśasokta* (declared by the Sage Durvāśas) (6) *Nāradya* (7) *Kāpila* (8) *Vāmana* (9) *Uśanaserita* (declared by the Sage Uśanas) (10) *Brahmānda* (11) *Vārūna* (12) *Kālīkā* (13) *Māheśvara* (14) *Śāmba* (15) *Saura* (16) *Parāśarokta* (declared by the Sage Parāśara) (17) *Mārīca* (18) *Bhārgava*.

For an idea of the work done by scholars on the Upapuranas see R. C. Hazra *Studies in the Upapuranas* Vol I p 1 F N 1

For example after expressly mentioning that the Upapuranas are eighteen in number and then giving their titles the *Brhaddharma Purana* (1 25 27) clearly intimates its knowledge of the *Marica Kapila* and other Upapuranas which were outside the group of eighteen but were equally authoritative. In the present article the following editions of the Puranas and Upapuranas have been used: *Bhagavata Purana*—Ed Vāṅgavāsī Press Calcutta Fifth Edition 1934 B S *Bhavisya Purana*—Ed Venkateśvara Press Bombay 1897 *Brhaddharma Purana*—Ed Vāṅgavāsī Press Calcutta Second Edition 1914 B S *Devī Bhāgavata Purana*—Ed Rāmateja Pandeya Samskrta Pustakalaya Banaras Samvat 1984 *Kurma Purana*—Ed Vāṅgavāsī Press Calcutta Second Edition 1932 B S *Matsya Purana*—Ed Vāṅgavāsī Press Calcutta 1916 B S *Nāradya Purana*—Ed Venkateśvara Press Bombay Śaka 1854 *Saura Purana*—Ed Anandāśrama Sanskrit Series Poona Second Edition 1924 *Śiva Purana*—Ed Vāṅgavāsī Press Calcutta 1914 B S

The *Brhaddharma Purāna* (1 25 23 26) gives the following eighteen (1) *Ādipurāna* (2) *Āditya* (3) *Brhannārādiya* (4) *Nārādiya* (5) *Nandīśvara Purāna* (6) *Brhannandīśvara* (7) *Śāmba* (8) *Kṛiyā yoga sāra* (9) *Kālīkā* (10) *Dharmapurāna* (11) *Viṣṇudharmottara* (12) *Śivadharmā* (13) *Viṣṇu dharma* (14) *Vāmana* (15) *Vārūna* (16) *Nārasimha* (17) *Bhārgava* (18) *Brhaddharma* The list of Upapurānas given in *Ekāmra Purāna* (1 20 b 23) are (1) *Brhannārasimha* (2) *Brhadvaisnava* (3) *Gāruda* (4) *Brhannārādiya* (5) *Nārādiya* (6) *Prabhāsaka* (7) *Līlavatī Purāna* (8) *Devī* (9) *Kālīkā* (10) *Ākhetaka* (11) *Brhannandi* (12) *Nandīkeśvara* (13) *Ekāmra* (14) *Ekapāda* (15) *Laghubhāgavata* (16) *Mṛtyuñjaya* (17) *Āngīrasaka* (18) *Śāmba* A good number of similar but more or less varying lists can be collected from different sources and in spite of the mention of a particular Upapurāna in different lists under different titles these lists supply us with the titles of many more Upapurānas than eighteen As a matter of fact the number of the Upapurānas was far greater than this and an examination of a multitude of Sanskrit works has yielded information on a hundred Upapurānas including those mentioned in the different lists But it can hardly be denied that there were many other Upapurānic works which have been lost altogether without leaving any trace of their existence

The fact that this extensive Upapurāna literature includes works of comparatively late dates does not prove that the whole literature has a late beginning Lists of eighteen Upapurānas occur in the *Kurma Purāna* *Garuda Purāna* etc Hemādri quotes twice in his *Caturvarga cintāmani* the verses of the *Kūrma Purāna* on the names of the eighteen Upapurānas and Ballālasena refers in his *Dāna sāgara* to the lists of Upapurānas as occurring in the *Kūrma Purāna* and the *Ādi Purāna* On the other hand *Matsya* LIII names only those four Upapurānas namely *Narasimha* *Nandī* *Śāmba* and *Āditya* which were well established in society (*loke ye sampratisthitāḥ*) and thus betrays its knowledge of a few more Upapurānas and at the same time its ignorance of any group of eighteen These and similar other evidences which can be adduced from different sources show that the date of formation of the group of eighteen Upapurānas should be placed between A.D. 650 and 800

This approximate date of the grouping must not be taken to be the date of composition of the individual works forming the group, because all the eighteen Upapurānas which do not belong to any particular sect or locality could not have been written at the same time The mention of the *Nārasimha* *Nandī* *Śāmba* and *Āditya* in *Matsya* LIII shows that there were Upapurānas written much earlier than the date of the formation of the group and such formation could be possible only when in course of time the Upapurānas attained the number eighteen It can be taken,

Though from these evidences it is clear that the above theory put forth by the *Matsya Purāna* is one of long standing and wide acceptance an examination of the Upapurānas themselves shows that these works do not often look upon this theory with the same respect as the principal Purānas or other works do. In a large number of cases the Upapurānas are found to style themselves simply Purāna and not Upapurāna and to try to pass on their own merit without caring to attach themselves to any of the principal Purānas for the sake of authority ⁶ and in a few cases they even vie with the principal Purānas by laying claim to their position ⁷. Sometimes they are found to go a step further and claim to be superior to the Mahāpurānas ⁸. It is to be noted that the older of the extant Upapurānas (such as the *Devī Purāna* the *Nārasimha Purāna* and the *Sāmba Purāna*) do not give any list of Upapurānas nor do they seem to be familiar with their common title Upapurāna or with the theory of their origin which makes them mere supplements to the principal Purānas. This disagreement between the time honoured theory and the actual practice of the Upapurānas especially of the older ones naturally raises doubt as to the degree of truth contained in this theory. So in order to acquaint ourselves with the actual state of things and thus to explain successfully this disagreement between theory and practice we shall have to investigate into the origin of the Upapurānas.

After the group of the eighteen Purānas had been formed ⁹ there came into prominence many sub sects which arose from the main sects mentioned above either directly or by identifying their deities which were often of local origin with one or other of the prominent deities of the main sects. In addition to these there were also other independent sects such as Saura¹⁰ and Śākta which began to hold the field and act rivalry with the sects already established in the country. These sub sects and independent sects also had their Smārta adherents who interpolated chapters in the Purānas of the already established group and in some cases wrote new and independent works styled Purāna ¹¹ in order to

⁶ As examples we may name the *Nārasimha Purāna*, *Devī Purāna*, *Kālikā Purāna* etc. For instance in its *Vāyaviya Saṁhitā* (1.1.41) the *Śiva Purāna* lays claim to the position of a principal Purāna. The *Devī Bhāgavata* tries to take the position of the famous *Bhāgavata* of the Vaiṣṇavas by subordinating the latter to the status of an Upapurāna. The *Kālikā Purāna* claims to be the real *Bhāgavata Purāna* mentioned in the lists of the eighteen principal Purānas and so on.

⁷ For instance the *Parāśara Upapurāna* regards the Upapurānas as more substantial (*sarātara*) than the Purānas.

See chapter sixteen.

Though Sun worship is of very ancient origin the Saura sect with Persian elements in the cult of the Sun became prominent in India much later. See Farquhar *Outline of the Religious Literature of India* pp 151-3. R. G. Bhandarkar *Vaiṣṇavism Śaivism and Minor Religious Systems* pp 153-5.

¹¹ It is to be noted that the *Matsya Purāna* (LIII. 60) mentions a *Nandī Purāna* (and not *Nandī Upapurāna*) although the latter is called an *upa bheda* (sub section).

THE UPAPURĀNĀS

propagate their own ideas. Thus with the progress of time the number of the Purāṇas was further increased with fresh additions. But as the followers of the famous group of the eighteen Purāṇas had the firm conviction that there could be no Purāṇa beyond the famous eighteen they were unwilling to assign to these new Purāṇic works a status equal to that of the famous Purāṇas. On the other hand these new Purāṇic works had become too well known and popular to be ignored totally. So they introduced into the *Matsya Purana* the passage already cited to the effect that any Purāṇa different (*prthak*) from the famous eighteen should be known to have originated from any one of them. Thus it appears the original position of the eighteen Purāṇas and the rigidity of their number were maintained and the new Purāṇic works also were given a position of authority.

The above theory of the *Matsya Purāṇa* influenced not only the later Purāṇas but also the Upapurāṇas in some cases and gave rise to the common title Upapurāṇa¹² for the new Purāṇic works by recognizing them as mere supplements of the famous eighteen. The new Purāṇic works thus came to be grouped under the common title Upapurāṇa in some of the extant Purāṇas and Upapurāṇas. Some of the new Purāṇic works are actually found as supplements to one or other of the eighteen Purāṇas or call themselves Upapurāṇas in spite of their independent character.

CONTENTS AND CHRONOLOGY OF THE UPAPURĀNĀS

As to the contents of the Upapurāṇas the *Saura Purāṇa* says that since a *purāṇa* is to deal with five characteristic topics the subject matter of the Upapurāṇas also includes them as they are nothing but supplementary works (*khila*). According to the *Bhāgavata* and the *Brahmavarvarta Purāṇa* the characteristics which a secondary *purāṇa* should have are five while a principal one is to have ten which are nothing but an elaboration of the traditional five. Whatever may be the views about the contents of the Upapurāṇas an examination of the Upapurāṇas shows that very few of them conform even approximately to the above view. In spite of the great influence of the old tradition that a *purāṇa* is to deal with five subjects the Upapurāṇas which are more adapted to suit the purposes of local cults and usages and the religious needs of different sects than the Mahapurāṇas and which arose at a time when the genealogies began to

The *Narasimha Purana*, *Śamba Purāṇa*, *Devī Purāṇa* etc. call themselves Purāṇa and not Upapurāṇa.

The *Bhāgavata Purāṇa* (XII 7 10 and 22) divides the Purāṇic works into two classes—(i) *Alpa* or *Kṣullaka* and (ii) *Mahat* but the passage in which this classification occurs is of a very late date.

be neglected are never found to be serious about the genealogies of kings and sages. In those cases in which the Upapurāṇas include such genealogies the ancient kings especially of the Solar and Lunar dynasties are the chief points of interest probably because of their giving a stamp of antiquity and authority to these works and nothing is said about any of the dynasties of the *kaliyuga*. Even as regards those genealogies which have been included in the Upapurāṇas no care has been taken to preserve their correctness and new myths and legends have been unscrupulously fabricated and attached to the important names in these genealogies. But in spite of such defects the Upapurāṇas are of great value from the point of view of the history of religion and society as they afford us a deep insight into their various phases and aspects. They supply us with valuable information about the different branches of science and literature developed in ancient India and render us inestimable help in reconstructing at least partially some of those monumental Sanskrit works which have been lost for ever. In these respects the Upapurāṇas are sometimes more important than the Mahāpurāṇas which attained a position so authoritative and enviable from an early date for they were often worked upon by the different sectaries and in some cases bodily replaced by later works retaining only the earlier titles. So the texts of the Mahapurāṇas which are the results of innumerable changes, modifications and interpolations made in different times and by different sects is scarcely reliable and can be used only with great caution and careful discrimination. But very different is the case with the Upapurāṇas which probably on account of their secondary position have been worked upon much less freely by the later redactors and interpolators. They have thus been able to preserve in a number of cases their older materials along with their distinctive sectarian character. It is for this reason that among the extant Upapurāṇas there are some which are much older than many of the extant Mahapurāṇas. The persons who subjected the Upapurāṇas to innovations described above often belonged to those sects to which the respective Upapurāṇas originally belonged. So in spite of their modifications, interpolations or totally new literary content they are to be valued as the records of changes undergone in different ages by the respective sects for which these works were originally written and the hands of people belonging to more sects than one being scarcely laid on any one of them their study is generally a little easier than that of the extant Mahāpurāṇas.

The Upapurāṇa literature now available may be broadly divided into the following groups in accordance with the religious views they profess (1) Vaiṣṇava (2) Śākta (3) Śaiva, (4) Saura (5) Ganapatya and (6) non-sectarian.

THE UPAPURĀNAS
THE VAISNAVA UPAPURANAS

The most important among the Vaisnava Upapurānas are the *Viṣṇu dharma Viṣṇudharmottara Nārasimha Brhannārādīya* and *Kriyā yoga sāra* of which the first four are Pāñcaratra works and the last belongs to the Bhāgavatas. The *Viṣṇudharma* and the *Viṣṇudharmottara* were originally known as *sāstras* and it was much later that they came to be recognized as Upapurānas because of their Puranic character. According to tradition as well as to the *Viṣṇudharmottara* itself the *Viṣṇudharma* and the *Viṣṇudharmottara* constitute one complete work known by the general title *Viṣṇudharma* and it was most probably for this reason that Alberuni took both these works to be one and made citations from the *Viṣṇudharmottara* under the name *Viṣṇudharma*.

The *Viṣṇudharma*¹³ which has been mentioned as a *sāstra* in the *Bhaviṣya Purāna* is a voluminous work dealing mainly with Vaisnava philosophy and rituals. It also contains a few chapters on political administration (*danda nīti*) some on the duties of women and a good number of myths and legends. Although it is an important work frequently drawn upon by the Smṛti writers such as Aparārka Jīmūtavāhana Ballālasena Devana Bhatta and Hemādīti it has not yet been printed. A few manuscripts of this work have been preserved in London Berlin Nepal and Calcutta. From internal and external evidence it appears that the work was compiled some time during the third century A.D. with the definite intention of spreading the Vaisnava faith as against the heresies especially Buddhism.

The *Viṣṇudharmottara*¹⁴ which is the most important and interesting in the whole range of the Upapurāna literature is an extensive and encyclopaedic work not only containing stories myths and legends but also dealing with cosmology and cosmogony geography astronomy and astrology, division of time pacification of unfavourable planets and stars omens and portents genealogies (mainly of kings and sages) manners and customs marriage proper conduct and duties of women penances results of actions, rules about devotional vows (*vratas*) and funeral ceremonies (*śrāddha*) description and praise of various kinds of donations duties of Vaisnavas praise of holy places law and politics science of war archery anatomy pathology medicine treatment of diseases of human beings (including children) and animals such as cows horses and elephants cookery manufacture of perfumes horticulture grammar lexicography metrics rhetoric dramaturgy

For a detailed analysis of this work as well as of the *Viṣṇudharmottara Nārasimha Purāna Brhannārādīya Purāna* and *Kriyā yoga sāra* see Hazra *Studies in the Upapuranas* Vol. I

Ed. Veñkaṭeśvara Press Bombay Śāka 1834

dancing vocal and instrumental music image making sculpture painting architecture Vaisnava theology and so on

Though appearing to be ambitious the *Visnudharmottara* has more the character of a compilation than of an original work It contains summaries of and extracts and isolated verses from some of the early works such as the *Mahābhārata* the *Bhagavad Gītā* various Upanisads (especially the *Śvetāsvatara*) astronomical and astrological works of Garga Vrddha Garga Paiāsaia and others Smṛti works of Manu Yajñavalkya Viṣṇu Nārada and others Bharata's *Nāṭya śāstra* and so on It also gives us valuable information regarding the various types of works which enriched Sanskrit literature before the time of its composition It is a matter of great regret that many of the works utilized and referred to in the *Visnudharmottara* have been lost for ever The *Visnudharmottara* must have been compiled between A.D. 400 and 500 either in Kashmir or in the northernmost part of the Punjab It is a very popular work and its contents have been extensively utilized by the Smṛti writers

The *Nṛsimha Purāṇa*¹⁵ which is a work of the Pāñcarātras with Bhāgavata inclination is one of the oldest of the extant Upapurāṇas It glorifies Narasimha a form of Viṣṇu and takes him to be identical with Nārāyaṇa eternal Brahman As is usual with Purāṇic works it deals with the five characteristic topics of the Purāṇas and has a few chapters on manners and customs practice of *yoga* and the methods and praise of Narasimha worship It contains short genealogical lists of the kings of the Solar and the Lunar dynasty the former ending with the Buddha son of Śuddhodana and the latter with Kṣemaka grandson of the famous Udayana and Vāśīvadattā Among the myths and legends described in it that of Yama and Yamī is the most interesting This work was translated into Telugu about A.D. 1300 and is profusely drawn upon by the Smṛti writers early and late It is familiar with the *Mahābhārata* and the *Ramayana* mentions the *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* and the extinct *Varāha Purāṇa* and utilizes the *Vāyu Purāṇa* in its story of the birth of the twin gods Aśvins These facts show that it was composed most probably in the latter half of the fifth century It contains a few chapters (XLI XLIII LXIV and LXVIII) and a good number of grouped or isolated verses which were inserted later by the Pāñcarātras and the Bhāgavatas Chapters (LVII LXI) of this Upapurāṇa are found to appear as an independent Smṛti work bearing the title *Hārīta Samhitā* or '*Laghu hārīta Smṛti*'¹⁶

¹⁵ Ed Gopal Narayan and Co Bombay Second Ed 1911
See *Ānandīya Samhitā* (Ed Vāṅavāsi Press Calcutta) pp 127-89 *Dharma śāstra Samgraha* (Ed Jīvananda Vidyasāgara Calcutta) Vol I pp 172 ff

THE UPAPURĀNAS

The *Brhannāradya Purāna* which is included only in the lists of Upapurānas given in two Purānas the *Ekāmra* and the *Brhaddharma* has been published in Calcutta by the Vangavāsī Press and the Asiatic Society. It also is a work of the Pañcaratras with a Bhāgavata inclination and describes the Vaiṣṇava festivals and ceremonies illustrated by various legends. Some chapters of it are devoted to the glorification of the Ganges the duties of the castes and orders funeral sacrifices and expiations and so forth. It is pre eminently a work on devotion to Viṣṇu which is said to have ten gradations (viṭ *tāmasadhamā tāmasā madhyamā* etc) and to be the only means of attaining salvation. It presents Mahāviṣṇu who becomes Brahmā the inferior Viṣṇu and Śiva through the three *gunas* and states that Viṣṇu's Śakti which permeates the whole world and effects its creation preservation and destruction is known by such names as Lakṣmī Umā Durgā Bhāratī Bhadra Kālī and is the Prakṛti and Māyā which subjects creatures to rebirth. It is tolerant of Śaivism and warns people against differentiation between Brahmā Viṣṇu and Śiva. Various internal and external evidences and the use of this work first and almost exclusively by the Bengal Smṛti writers show that it must have been written between A.D. 750 and 900 either in Bengal or in that part of Orissa which was adjacent to Bengal.

The *Kṛiyā yoga sara* ¹⁷ which is included in the list of Upapurānas given in *Brhaddharma Purāna* (1-25) conceives of Mahāviṣṇu (i.e. Kṛṣṇa) as identical with Paramātmān and recommends the study of the *Bhāgavata Purāna*. It advocates *bhakti* lays special stress on *dāsya bhakti* and describes Kṛiyā yoga yoga by work which it takes to consist of (i) worship of Gangā Śrī and Viṣṇu (ii) donation (iii) devotion to Brāhmanas (iv) observance of the *ekādaśī vrata* (v) regard for *dhātṛi* trees and *tulasī* plants and (vi) hospitality to guests. It records valuable information on the state of religion and society in Bengal consequent upon the spread of Buddhism and other non Vedic and anti Vedic religious systems and mentions some interesting rites and customs prevalent in eastern Bengal. It is a distinct and independent work of Bengal and most probably of its eastern part and must have been composed towards the end of the ninth or the beginning of the tenth century A.D. Besides the Vaiṣṇava Upapurānas mentioned above there are a few others viz *Bhārgava Upapurāna* *Dharma Purāna* *Purusottama Purāna* *Ādi Purāna* and *Kalki Purana* of which the first three are still preserved in manuscripts and must have been written earlier than A.D. 1200 and the last two are comparatively late works of minor importance.

Ed. Vangavāsī Press Calcutta. Also printed with the Venkaṭeśvara Press. Ed. of the *Padma Purana*.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

THE ŚAKTA UPAPURĀNAS

Among the Upapurānas dealing with Śakti worship the following have come down to us *Devī Purāna Kālīkā Purāna Mahā Bhāgavata Devī Bhāgavata Bhagavatī Purāna Candī Purāna* (or *Candīkā Purāna*) and *Satī Purāna* (also called *Kālī* or *Kālīkā Purāna*) Of these the first four which are more important are now available in print and the rest in manuscripts It is remarkable that all the Śākta Upapurānas mentioned above have been much influenced by the Tantras

The *Devī Purāna* ¹⁸ as we have it now is only a part of the original work which must have been a much bigger one It is one of the most important of the Śākta Upapuranas and deals mainly with the exploits and worship of Devī who though being the primordial and pre eminent Energy incarnated herself as Vindhyavāsini on the Vindhya Hills It contains various interesting stories and records important information about the following different incarnations of Devī and her original nature her relationship with Śiva and other gods Śākta iconography and Śākta vows and worships Śaivism (as related to Śāktism) Vaisnavism Brahmaisism and Gānapatyaism warfare the construction of towns and forts the means of their protection the different Vedic schools the Upavedas Angas and Upāngas the science of medicine manuscripts and the method of their copying the script and materials to be used for the purpose the characteristics of the scribes the method of making gifts to these holy places (in connection with which many countries and towns of historical interest have been named) different kinds of gifts customs and usages and so on It was written in Bengal most probably somewhere near Tamluk during the seventh century A.D It should be mentioned here that the method of Devī worship as given in this Upapurāna is very different from that followed in present day Bengal

The present *Kālīkā Purāna* ¹⁹ which was written somewhere in or very near about Kāmarupa in Assam is regarded as one of the most authoritative works by the comparatively late Nibandha writers especially as regards Śakti worship It deals with the exploits and worship of Kālī or Kālīkā who is primarily the *yoga nidrā* and *māyā* of Viṣṇu but who later became the wife of Śiva as Satī daughter of Dakṣa and Kālī or Kālīkā daughter of Himavat for the good of the world and in connection with these topics it narrates many interesting stories (including that of the birth of Sītā and Naraka from the sacrificial ground of King Janaka of Videha) and introduces chapters on the mountains rivers and holy places of Kāmarupa, duties and conduct of

Ed Vangavasi Press Calcutta Second Edition 1334 B.S.
¹⁹ Ed Vangavasi Press Calcutta 1316 B.S. Also published by the Venkatesvara Press, Bombay Śaka 1829

kings construction of forts manners and customs and so on This Upapurāna was written not later than A D 1100 and most probably in the tenth or eleventh century and it contains valuable materials for the study of the social religious and even political history of Kāmarūpa

The *Mahā Bhāgavata* ²⁰ which is distinct from the *Bhāgavata Mahā purāna* advocates Śāktism with a Śaiva tendency It conceives Kālī as Para brahman as well as the wife and Śakti (Energy) of Śiva and narrates many interesting and to some extent peculiar stories such as those of Kālī's exploits as Satī Pārvatī Gangā Kṛsnā etc her appearance as the ten Mahā vidyās her worship by Rāma for killing Rāvana and so on It should be mentioned here that most of these stories are found to occur with their characteristics in many of the Sanskrit and vernacular works of Bengal

The *Mahā Bhāgavata* which the *Bṛhaddharma Purāna* includes among the eighteen Mahāpurānas must not be taken to be an early work Internal and external evidences show that it was written in Bengal and most probably in its eastern part which was adjacent to Kāmarūpa some time about the tenth or eleventh century A D

The *Devī Bhāgavata* though a work of the eleventh or twelfth century A D claims to be the real *Bhāgavata Purāna* and includes the Vaisnava *Bhāgavata* among the Upapurānas But it really is an Upapurāna adapted carefully by its author to the description of the *Bhāgavata Purāna* contained in the *Matsya Agni Skanda* and other Purānas An examination of this work shows that its author was a Smārta Śākta Brahmana of Bengal lived for a long time in Banaras and then wrote this work for infusing Śakta ideas into the members of different sects by adapting it as far as practicable to the views of these sectaries It conceives of a central goddess named Devī Śrībhuvaneśvarī who is a maiden having four hands and three eyes and living in a region called Mani dvīpa She holds a noose (*pāsa*) and a goad (*ankuśa*) in two of her hands and assures granting boon and safety with the other two In her supreme state she is identical with Parabrahman and Paramātmā but in creation she takes to the *gunas* and divides her self into Puruṣa and Prakṛti and it is she who appears as Durgā Gangā and others for accomplishing different objects

The *Devī Bhāgavata* lays special stress on *bhakti* (devotion) as a means of realizing Devī and takes *jñāna* (knowledge) to be the same as *bhakti* in its highest state It holds the Vedas in high esteem and decries the Tantras whenever they go against the Vedas

The remaining three Upapurānas (viz *Bhagavatī Purāna Candī Purāna* and *Satī Purāna*) are all of late origin and minor importance and

no writer of Smṛti or any other works found to show knowledge of any of them

THE ŚAIVA UPAPURĀNAS

The Upapurānas that belong to the Śiva worshippers are *Śiva Purāna*, *Saura Purāna*, *Śivadharmā Śivadharmottara*, *Śiva rahasya Ekāmra Purāna*, *Parāsara Upapurāna*, *Vāsistha lainga Upapurana*, *Vikhyāda Purāna* and so on. Of these works it is only the *Śiva*, the *Saura* and the *Ekāmra Purāna* which have been printed up till now, the rest being preserved in manuscripts. The *Śiva Purāna* is a voluminous work dealing with Śaiva philosophy, myths and rituals and contains very little of the principal characteristics of a Mahāpurāna. Besides the six or seven *saṃhitās* constituting its printed edition, there are a few more which can be ascribed to it and among them are *Īśāna Saṃhitā*, *Īsvara Saṃhitā* and *Sūrya Saṃhitā*. The *Manavī Saṃhitā* which also claims to belong to the *Śiva Purāna* is most probably a work of Bengal. According to the Bengal tradition as known from the Bengal manuscripts, the *Śiva Purāna* consists of two parts, the first having the same text as that of the *Sanatkumāra Saṃhitā* and the second consisting invariably of thirty-six chapters in the Bengal manuscripts.

A thorough examination of the present *Śiva Purāna* shows that the part now going under the title *Sanatkumāra Saṃhitā* is the original *Śiva Purāna* and that it was written by a pre-Vedic Pāśupata of Bengal during the eighth century A.D. With the spread of Āgamic Śaivism in later days, an Āgamic Śaiva, most probably of southern India, wrote in the ninth or tenth century A.D. a new *Śiva Purāna* in two parts which are now found to constitute the *Vāyavīya Saṃhitā*. He intended that this new work might popularize his reformed views by competing successfully with the *Vāyu Purāna* and also occupying the importance of this Purāna's place. The Āgamic Śaivas did not stop here. They went on writing new works all bearing the title *Śiva Purāna* in the body of their texts from different parts of India and tried to popularize their own views through them. The Āgamic Pāśupatas also wrote new works known as *Śiva Purāna* with the same object. All these isolated *Śiva Purānas* could not be allowed to remain separate and weaken the claim of the *Śiva Purāna* to the position of a Mahāpurāna by creating a confusion in the minds of the people, so they were put together, most probably by an Āgamic Śaiva, and taken to be so many *saṃhitās* of the *Śiva Purāna* and the theory was propounded that the *Śiva Purāna* consisted of twelve *saṃhitās* and one lac of verses. But curiously enough, the *Sanatkumāra Saṃhitā* which precedes all the other *saṃhitās* in date, was included neither in the list of twelve *saṃhitās* nor

in that of seven as given in the Bombay Edition most probably because of its prominently pro Vedic character. This exclusion however did not discourage the Pāsupatas of Bengal. With the spread of Āgamic influence they wrote the second part and attached it to their original *Śiva Purāna* (which now appears as the *Sanatkumāra Samhitā*) in order that the complete *Śiva Purāna* thus created might have as much claim to the position of a Mahāpurāna as the *Vāyu Purāna* and the *Vāyaviya Samhitā*.

The present *Saura Purāna* which has been published by the Vangavasi Press Calcutta and the Ānandāśrama Press Poona is a work of the Pāsupatas composed between A.D. 950 and 1050 somewhere about the north western part of northern India. It glorifies Śiva and Pārvatī and shows how the Pāsupatas tried hard to retain their own position as well as their numerical strength against the spread of Buddhism, Jainism and other heretical systems and especially of Vaiṣṇavism. In three of its spurious chapters (XXXVIII-XL) it contains amusing stories denouncing the system of Madhvācārya which was gaining ground to the great disadvantage of the Śiva worshippers. This work has been drawn upon by Hemādri, Mādhavācārya and other Smṛti writers.

The *Śivadharmā* which is a *śāstra* according to itself as well as to the *Bhavisya Purāna* came to be recognized as an Upapurāna and was included in almost all the lists of eighteen Upapurānas. It is a short treatise of twelve chapters in which Nandikeśvara reports to Sanatkumāra what Śiva said to Pārvatī and Kārttikeya on the following topics: origin and worship of the phallic emblem of Śiva, construction of temples for the deity, offer of tridents and other things to him, making gifts for his pleasure, fasting on days sacred to him, duties of Śiva worshippers and so on. It decries the Vedic rites as being highly expensive and tiresome and extols the various acts of service to Śiva. It is an early work of the pro Vedic Pāsupatas who compiled it between A.D. 200 and 500. It has been mentioned in the *Śiva Purāna* (*Vāyaviya Samhitā*) and drawn upon by Devana Bhatta, Hemādri, Mādhavācārya and a few others.

Like the *Śivadharmā* the *Śivadharmottara* also belongs to the pro Vedic Pāsupatas. It consists of twelve chapters in which Skanda speaks to Agastī on the following topics: various duties of the Śiva worshippers, imparting of knowledge to the devotees of Śiva, making donations to worthy recipients, sins and the sufferings of sinners, rebirths, attainment of knowledge of Śiva, practice of Śiva yoga and so on. It has been mentioned in the *Ekāmra Purāna* and drawn upon by Aparārka, Hemādri, Mādhavācārya and a few others. The internal and external evidences show that it was composed between A.D. 700 and 800.

The *Ekāmra Purāna* which is a fairly big work on the praise of

THE UPAPURĀNAS

Ekamra ksetra (or Bhuvaneśvara) in Orissa calls itself a Samhitā of 6000 verses and has Sanatkumāra as the speaker. It belongs to the Āgamic Pāśupatas refers to a *Śiva Samhitā* the Āgamas and the *Śiva Tantras* and regards the *Śivadharmottara* as an authoritative work on Śiva yoga. Internal and external evidences show that it was written in the tenth or eleventh century A.D. The remaining Śaiva Upapurānas are minor and late works scarcely deserving any serious attention.

THE SAURA UPAPURĀNAS

Although chapters and extracts on Sun worship occur in some of the Purānas and Upapurānas it is only the *Śāmba Purāna* which deals exclusively with the reformed cult of the Sun by way of narrating the interesting story of Śāmba's establishing an image of the Sun at Śāmbapura in Mitravana and settling eighteen families of Magi priests brought by him from Śāka dvīpa for the regular worship of the image. This work which has been published by the Venkateśvara Press Bombay is a short but composite Upapurāna containing a number of subsidiary stories of interest and dealing with creation details of the solar system eclipses geography of the earth description of the Sun and his attendants construction of images of these deities details of yoga manners and customs rites and rituals initiation dissertations on *mantras*, results of actions donations and so on. A careful examination of this work shows that it consists of several groups of chapters written by different hands in different regions and ages its earliest portions being written in the western part of northern India between A.D. 500 and 800 and most probably towards the beginning of this period.

THE GĀNAPATYA UPAPURĀNAS

The comparatively late origin of the Gānapatya sect must be responsible for the fact that there is no early Purānic work dealing exclusively with the praise and worship of Ganapati. The only two Upapurānas belonging to this sect are the *Mudgala Purāna* and the *Ganeśa Purāna* which record very late ideas of Ganapati and which must have been written in northern India at later dates with the definite object of infusing Gānapatyaism with Vedic ideas.

The *Mudgala* or *Maudgala Purāna* is still preserved in manuscripts and deals with the following nine incarnations of Ganesa: Vakra-tuṇḍa, Eka-danta, Mahodara, Gajānana, Lambodara, Vīkata, Vighna-rāja, Dhūmra-varṇa and Yoga. It has imbibed Tāntric influence and speaks of thirty-two forms of Ganapati whereas the *Sārada-tilaka* and the *Ganeśa Purāna*

THE UPAPURĀNAS

mention fifty one and fifty six respectively It is probable that this work was written between A D 900 and 1100

Unlike the *Mudgala* the *Ganesa Purāna* has been published from Poona and Bombay It narrates interesting stories for the glorification of Ganeśa and contains important materials for the study of the growth of the sect as well as its deity The internal and external evidences show that it was written between A D 1100 and 1400

THE NON SECTARIAN UPAPURĀNAS

The Purānic works of this type are the *Bhavisyottara* and the *Brhad dharma Purana* both of which are now available in printed forms

The *Bhavisyottara* though printed in the Venkatesvara Edition of the *Bhavisya Purāna* as forming its last part is really a distinct and independent Upapurāna of wide recognition It is a loose collection of materials taken from various sources has very little of the five characteristics of a *purāna* and is practically a work on vows (*vratas*) festivals and donations which offer an interesting study from the sociological and religious points of view Internal and external evidences show that it was composed between A D 700 and 800

The *Brhaddharma Purāna* which has been published by the Vangavāsi Press and the Asiatic Society Calcutta is an interesting work written in Bengal during the latter half of the thirteenth century A D It names the thirty six mixed castes of Bengal with their respective professions accounts for their origin describes many of the popular rites and festivals and contains very valuable materials for the reconstruction of the social and religious history of Bengal

MISCELLANEOUS UPAPURĀNAS

In addition to the Upapurānas mentioned above under different heads there are a number of others mostly preserved in manuscripts viz *Ātma Bhūgola Brahmapurāna Brahma Nārada Jaimini Kanyakā Kāpila Kedara Laghu Bhāgavatāmṛta Mānava Mārīça Nīla mata Vasisthottara* and so on Of these the *Nīla mata* (or *Nīla*) *Purāna* though mentioned only in Kalhana's *Rājataranginī* is highly interesting and important from the point of view of the history legendary lore and topography of Kashmir It has been published more than once in India As Kalhana (about A D 1148) regarded this *Purāna* as a venerable work and utilized its contents in writing the ancient history of Kashmir it must have preceded him by a few centuries The rest are mostly works of minor importance and of comparatively late dates

Besides the Upapurānas mentioned above there were many which

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

have been lost viz *Ādi* (or *Ādya* which was different from the present *Ādi Purāna* of the Vaisnavas) *Āditya Ākhetaka Āngirasa Auśanasa Bārhaspatya Bhāgavata Brahmānda Brhad ausanasa Brhad vāmāna* and so on

The foregoing accounts of the Upapurānas will show that though generally of little importance as records of the political history of ancient and mediaeval India the Upapurāna literature is a rich and vast one covering a long period from the beginning of the Christian era down to the sixteenth century A D and requiring very careful study from various points of view

THE ETHICS OF THE PURĀNAS

D *HARMA* or duty forms the basis of Purāṇic ethics and it embraces all those factors which contribute to the progress and well being of the individual society and the world at large. These factors include both the possession of virtues (*gunas*) and the proper discharge of one's duty (*karma*). The Purāṇas recognize two types of *dharma*—*sādhāraṇa* (generic) and *viśeṣa* (specific). The latter is also known as *svadharma*.

In this world family of *sthāvara* (unmoving) and *jaṅgama* (moving) creation, the lives in the different types and grades of creation are mutually linked up. The factor contributing to the progress and welfare of one life does and should contribute to the well being of another life also. Individual happiness to be real and lasting should make for the happiness of the lives around that individual. Otherwise it will turn out to be unreal, impermanent and painful in its result.

The individual who forms an integral part of human society owes a duty to himself and to those around him. The society rises or sinks with him. Hence in the interest of the society he must raise himself to his fullest stature. It is both an individual and social duty. Between individual and social duties there is no conflict.

Dharma contributes to the preservation, progress and welfare of human society and in a wider sense of the whole world. In the scheme of life's eternal values (*purusārthas*) *dharma* occupies the premier and basic place.¹ It is considered to be the best kith and kin for the embodied Soul following it even in death² and also to be the perennial source of perfection and bliss. The waning strength and stability of *dharma* in the four *yugas* is graphically depicted by representing it as a majestic bull which stood firm on its four legs in the golden age of the world (*kṛtāyuga*) and lost one of its legs in the succeeding two *yugas*—*tretā* and *dvāpara*—to stand tottering on a single leg during the present *kaliyuga*.³

The Purāṇas have made a successful attempt at reconciling *sādhāraṇa dharma* with *svadharma*. The former includes the possession of certain humanizing virtues and actions based thereon which conduce to the welfare of the entire creation. The latter is a practical application of the former within a particular sphere by an individual belonging to a class characterized

Brahma CLXX 36

Ibid CLXXV 24 *Liṅga* XXXIX 13

Ibid CLXX 39 *Gar* CCXXI 24

by certain prominent qualities (*gunas*) The scheme of *varna* and *āśrama dharmas* which the *Purāṇas* unanimously advocate is based upon the duties of the individuals of a class and has as its aim the efficiency welfare smooth working and material and spiritual perfection of the society as a whole

The *sādhārana dharmas* are universal in scope and eternal in nature Some of the *Purāṇas* enumerate them as ten like the commandments of Christ or the Buddha while others add a few more to the list The *Padma Agni Kūrma* and *Garuda Purāṇas*⁴ mention *ahimsā* (non injury) *ksama* or *ksānti* (forbearance) *indriyanigraha* or *śama* and *dama* (self control) *daya* (compassion) *dāna* (charity) *sauca* (purity) *satya* (truth) *tapas* (penance) and *jñāna* (wisdom) among them *Dhṛti* and *akrodha* (fortitude and freedom from anger) mentioned in other *Purāṇas* are only aspects of *ksamā* *Tyāga* (renunciation) is implied by *dāna* *Asteya* (non stealing) and *ārjava* (uprightness) are aspects of *satya* *Jñāna* comprehends *vidyā* *Tapas* includes *brahmacarya* (celibacy) *dhyāna* (meditation) *īyā* (sacrifice) and *deva pūjā* (worship of gods) *Priyavādītā* (sweet speech) *apaiśūnyam* (freedom from back biting) *alobha* (freedom from avarice) and *ahasūyā* (freedom from jealousy) are comprehended in *ahimsā*

Ahimsā is declared as the *dharma par excellence*⁵ It comprehends all the other *dharmas*⁶ *Ksamā* *dayā* *śauca* and *satya* which result in the eschewing of injury to others are rooted in *ahimsā* It is based on the fundamental conception that the lives in the world from the highest to the lowest are mutually linked up Any part of it can suffer harm only at the risk of another part and ultimately of the whole just as the defect in a nut or screw affects adversely the smooth working of the entire machine The ten varieties of injury enumerated in the *Agni Purāṇa*⁷ include not only the causing of different grades of physical pain but also back biting obstructing another's good and betrayal of a trust The kind treat all beings alike whether man or mosquito for they all belong to the same family of creation⁸ Those who inflict pain are reborn with defective faculties⁹ One who neither kills nor causes killing nor approves of it attains bliss and divinity¹⁰ He best pleases God¹¹ *Ahimsā* rests on the practice of virtues like *dayā* (compassion) and the avoidance of vices like *kāma* (desire) and *krodha* (anger) Since the vices have their root in the absence of self control *indriyanigraha* (control of the senses) is an indispensable prerequisite for practising *ahimsā* The ethics of *ahimsa* is expressed in the significant expression of the *Padma*

Pad II 69 5 *Agni* CLXI 17 *Kur* II 65 7 *Gar* CCXXI 24
Pad I 31 27 *Ahimsa paramo dharmo hy ahimsarva param tapah*
Ibid I 31 37 *Agni* CCCI XXII 4 *Ibid* CCCLXXII 5 6
Pad I 31 28 *Ibid* I 31 34
Brahma CCXXIV 53 54 *Viṣṇu* III 8 15

*Purāna*¹² Do not do unto others what you do not desire for yourself Behind this ethics lies the knowledge of the Ātman (supreme Soul) as immanent in all creatures This is *ātma-jñāna* and one who possesses it will not injure other creatures It leads to the highest bliss

Another aspect of *dharma* is *satya* Its greatness is illustrated in the Purānas through such stories as of Hariścandra and Rukmāṅgada¹³ *Satya* is the highest *dharma* The world is supported on it¹⁴ It purifies speech¹⁵ It is the basis of the *purusārthas* and the source of happiness and bliss *Asatya* its opposite includes such sins¹⁶ as lying betraying back biting and stealing The *Viṣṇu Purāna*¹⁷ condemns even a palatable lie 'What conduces to the welfare of creatures is *satya* says the *Agni Purāna*¹⁸ Further commenting on its scope it says One should speak what is true and what is agreeable But one should avoid an unpalatable truth and a palatable lie This is the eternal law¹⁹ *Satya* endures for ever All laws of Nature (*ṛta*) are expressions of truth and work with perfect accuracy and changelessness *Satya* contributes to the welfare and harmony of society as a whole It engenders mutual trust and love and binds the individuals together On the contrary if the individuals were to distrust, deceive and betray one another the unity and harmony of society would be jeopardized Hatred and discord would take the place of love and harmony The ethics of *satya* is also based on the conception of the unity of the Self One should feel oneself as identical with or at least as similar to other selves Not to tell the truth is tantamount to distrusting the other self Distrust proceeds from regarding the other self as separate from or as opposed to one's self It results in preventing another person from sharing with one's self a common knowledge which should be the same for all selves *Satya* promotes unity It is at once an ethical and a social virtue

Sauca (purity) is another indispensable socio ethical virtue It ensures a healthy life Its external and internal aspects which are mutually complementary are mentioned in the *Agni Purāna* The former is achieved through cleansing with water and other materials and the latter through cleansing the mind of its impurities²⁰ These are the evil propensities like *kāma* (desire) *krodha* (anger) and the like and have to be cleansed through

Pad I 56 33 *Ātmanah pratikūlanā paresam na samācaret*
 Bhag IX 7
¹ *Brahma* CCXXVII 22 38 *satyamūlam jagat sarvam*
¹ *Agni* CLXI 6 7
 Pad I 60 25 *Viṣṇu* II 6 7 *Brahma* CCXVII 87 109
Viṣṇu II 12 114 *prīyaṁ ca nanṛtaṁ brūyat*
Agni CCCLXXII 7 *Yad bhūtaḥitam atyantam vacaḥ satyasya lakṣaṇam*
Ibid CCCLXXII 8 *Satyam brūyat prīyam brūyat na bruyāt satyaṁ apriyam*
Priyam ca nanṛtaṁ brūyat esa dharmah sanātanaḥ
Ibid CCCLXXII 18 *Mṛṇjalābhyaṁ smṛtaṁ bahyam bhavaḥuddherathantaram*

the acquisition of their opposites like *vairāgya* (spirit of renunciation) and *ksamā* (forbearance) These are the *sāttvika* qualities making for enlightenment and have to be developed by a system of discipline consisting of *dama* and *sama* (control of the senses) and *tapas* (austerity) The *Agni Purāna* speaks of the mental vocal and physical aspects of *tapas* in the form of eschewing desires chanting prayers and worshipping God ²¹ In a wider sense *tapas* includes yogic discipline also Disinterested actions also purify the mind In fact every good thought word and deed fulfils this purpose Good thought includes not only kind thought but thinking of God also Good speech denotes besides sweet and beneficent speech singing the Lord's glory Good action consists not only in philanthropic deeds but also in the various modes of divine worship advocated by the Bhakti cult Its purifying and sublimating power is specially stressed in the *Viṣṇu* and the *Bhāgavata Purānas* It is declared as the highest *dharma* the best way of pleasing the Lord and as the harbinger of bliss ²² In prescribing *bhakti* as an effective means of mental purification and of attaining ultimate bliss the Purānas take into consideration the difference in individual tastes Hence they recommend devotion to one's favourite God Śiva or Viṣṇu or any other But in no way do they countenance discrimination and hatred against any God ²³ One who discriminates against a God is the worst sinner for all Gods are essentially one *Bhakti* develops with detachment from our self and attachment to God A mind bereft of evil propensities breeds good thoughts Whatever is done with such a mind pleases the Lord and becomes fruitful Pure mind and its resultant true speech lead to heaven ²⁴ A person pure in mind will not act in a way detrimental to another's interests Thus the mind is the source of all purity It shapes the destiny of an individual²⁵ and of the society to which he belongs Purity is to be observed not only for ourselves but also for the sake of others around us It is a social virtue

Dāna is another aspect of *dharma* stressed in the Purānas It is a social duty based on the ethical virtues of *dayā* *tyāga* *ārjava* and *samatā* (equanimity) Its greatness is illustrated through such stories as those of Śibi Karna and Dadhici The ethics of *dāna* consists in the fact that it benefits both the giver and the receiver While it humanizes and sublimates the former it materially benefits the latter and conduces to

²¹ *Ibid* CCCLXXII 20 *Vācikaṁ mantra jaypādī manasaṁ raga varjanam*
Śāriram deva pūjādī sarvadanto tridha tapah

²² *Bhāg* I 2 6 *Sa vai pumsam paro dharmo yato bhaktir adhoksajē*
Ibid I 2 19 *Na yujyamānāyā bhaktiā bhagavaty akhilātmani*
Sadrśo stī śivah pañthā yoginām brahmasiddhaye

²³ *Nar* XV 58 59 *Śiva eva Hariḥ sākṣat Hariṣreva Śivah svayam*
Dvayor antaradṛg yatī narakam koṭṣaḥ khalah

²⁴ *Brahma* CCXXV 26 27 29 17

²⁵ *Bhāg* III 25 15 *Cetaḥ khalu asya bandhāya muktaye cātmano matam*

contentment and harmony in society allowing for a fair distribution of riches. The ideal *dāna* of the *sāttvika* type which is done in a spirit of duty and detachment is commended because it benefits the good and the needy. The *rajas* and the *tāmasa* types are condemned as they are performed for name and fame and in a haughty spirit. They only demoralize the giver. The *Padma Purāna*²⁶ classifies *dāna* into four types: *nitya* consisting in the daily offering of gifts to the deserving in a spirit of duty without expecting any reward; *naimittika* given to the learned on special occasions for expiating sins; *kāmya* what is offered for obtaining material prosperity in the form of wealth and progeny; and *vimala* the fourth and the best so called because it is pure being given to the enlightened in a spirit of dedication to the Lord. In a wider sense *dāna* includes such philanthropic acts coming under *pūrta* such as digging wells, tanks and canals and constructing parks, hospitals and temples. Gifts and charitable acts lead one to heaven.²⁷ *Ātithya* (hospitality to guests) consisting in the gift of food is *dāna par excellence*.²⁸ The *Brahma Purāna* emphatically declares that the purpose of wealth is its proper distribution among the needy.²⁹ *Dāna* is practical ethics which promotes peace and harmony in society by favouring economic equilibrium.

Sādharaṇa dharma forms the basis of *svadharma* and prescribes the limit within which the latter is to be observed. Non appropriation is a common duty. A person on whom religious sacrifice is ordained should not in performing it appropriate another's property. The individual of a specific community by doing his prescribed duties serves not only his community but other communities also according to their needs and thus serves the whole society. Through specific duties each class should serve the common good. The ethics of *svadharma* does not countenance anti social acts for to cause damage to society is to lower one's own self.

Svadharma as comprehended in the scheme of *varṇa* and *āśrama dharma* holds a prominent place in Purāṇic ethics. In the former society is divided into four classes—Brāhmaṇa, Kṣatriya, Vaiśya and Śūdra each class being charged with specific duties. The basis of this division was the general mental make up (*gunas*) and the aptitude for doing certain types of work (*karma*) of each class.³⁰ And the purpose of this scheme was the creation of maximum efficiency, progress, harmony and welfare in society. Each class as a rule had to strive after maximum efficiency in discharging its duties without encroaching on the specific duties of other classes. Each class was

²⁶ *Pad.* I 57-68 *Kūr.* II 26-48

²⁷ *Agnī.* CCIX 2

²⁸ *Ibid.* CCIX 3

²⁹ *Brahma.* CCXXIX 73 *Tatha sadvinivayogāya vijñeyam gahanam nṛnam*

³⁰ *B. G.* IV 13 *Caturvarṇyam mayā sṛṣṭam guṇakarmavibhagaśah*

considered as the best in its own field and as attaining the highest perfection by discharging its *dharma* conscientiously ³¹ Thus each part of the social machinery was considered as important as any other and all were expected to work smoothly helping one another and having in view the welfare of the whole society The four *varnas* could successfully discharge their functions (*karma*) only if they possessed certain characteristics (*gunas*) A Brāhmana should possess universal sympathy forbearance control of the senses truthfulness wisdom and knowledge of the Ātman ³² The *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* describes universal friendship and objective equanimity as the Brāhmana's wealth ³³ Purity penance and faith in God are also ascribed to him in the *Gītā* ³⁴ His specific duties (*karma*) are study and teaching of the Vedas performing and guiding the sacrifice and giving and receiving gifts ³⁵ Vedic study sacrifice and charity are enjoined on the Kṣatriya and Vaiśya also The natural qualities of a Kṣatriya are heroism smartness fortitude, dexterity lordship and courage in battle Wielding arms and protecting the earth by helping the good and chastising the wicked form his specific duties ³⁶ The specific duties of a Vaiśya are agriculture cattle rearing and trade ³⁷ Humility characterizes the Śūdra ³⁸ Selfless service is his motto The Brāhmana is the custodian of spiritual wisdom the Kṣatriya of physical power the Vaiśya of economic well being and the Śūdra of industrial and fine arts The *Brahma Purāṇa* mentions universal sympathy patience humility truthfulness purity non injury sweet speech friendship, and freedom from jealousy and avarice as the virtues to be developed by all the *varnas* ³⁹

The duties of a Kṣatriya and of the king mentioned in the Purāṇas are almost identical for kings were generally Kṣatriyas The *Agni Purāṇa* enjoins on the king the proper acquisition and distribution of wealth He must not oppress the poor for achieving his personal ends for they would turn their fatal fury against him He should be well versed in both the secular and moral sciences ⁴⁰ Unless he is self controlled he cannot control the subjects He must employ each person in a task for which he is best fitted ⁴¹ He must do such things as would ensure him

Ibid XVIII 45 *Sve sve karmāṇy abhīrataḥ sarvasiddhiṃ labhate narah*
Pad I 54 25 *Kṣamā dayā ca viśñānam satyaṃ caiva damah śamah*
Adhyātma nityata jñānam etad brahmana lakṣaṇam

Bhāg VII 11 21 *Bhag* XLIV 28
² *Viṣṇu* III 8 24 ⁴ *B G* XVIII 42
Agni CLI 7 *Vām* LXXIV 44 47 *Viṣṇu* III 8 22 23 *Kūr* II 38 39

Yajñaṃ yajanaṃ dānaṃ brāhmanasya parigrahaḥ
Adhyāpanam ca dhyāyanam śat karmāṇi dvijottamah
³ *Brahma* CCXXII 6 10 *Viṣṇu* III 8 26 29 *B G* XVIII 43 *Agni* CLI 8
Viṣṇu III 8 30 31 *Kūr* II 39 40 *B G* XVIII 44 *Agni* CLI 9
Brahma CCXXII 16 *Viṣṇu* III 8 37
Agni CCXXXVIII *Mat* CCXV 55 *Mārka* XXIV
Mat CCXV 85

THE ETHICS OF THE PURĀNAS

the love of his subjects and eschew those that offend them⁴² Since the Purānas deal with the ethics of *rāja-dharma* the *Arthaśāstra* recommends the instruction of misguided princes through the Purānas and counts the *Paurānikas* among the court officials⁴³ The ethics of *varna dharma* lies in that each *varna* being a limb of society should fulfil its specific duty to the best of its capacity in order to secure maximum progress harmony and welfare in society

The *āśrama dharmas* are specific duties to be performed by the aspirant after spiritual evolution within specific stages in his life They are *brahmacharya gārhashthya vānaprasthya* and *sannyasa* during each of these stages one has to discharge the respective duties of a student householder recluse and ascetic These are like four halting stations on the path or like four rungs in the ladder leading to spiritual progress The ordinary aspirant has to pass through these different stages But one possessing extraordinary psychic powers might be able to dispense with the intermediate stages but this step is abnormal and beset with difficulties The scheme of *āśrama dharma* takes human nature into consideration and prescribes the final stage of renunciation only after giving room for enjoying the good things of the world and for discharging one's social duties in a spirit of detachment during the preceding stages Man's life becomes one of discipline study service sacrifice penance and renunciation all these leading to the perfection of human personality

Brahmacharya is the period of study and discipline During this stage the student has to devote himself to Vedic study caring little for physical comforts He must serve his *guru* and subsist on alms His life should be characterized by purity simplicity agility moderation and endurance By this the mind becomes alert and the body healthy and strong to shoulder the responsibilities of the next stage⁴⁴

Gārhashthya householdership is the most vital stage in life as it offers the largest scope for service and sacrifice All *āśramas* flow to rest in the householder He is the refuge and the breath of life for those in the other stages of life He should treat the whole world with love He must eschew from his life contempt for others egoism, pride harshness and injury to life⁴⁵ The *grhashtha* discharges his duties and befriends all creatures by performing the five daily sacrifices called *ṛṣi yajña pitr yajña deva yajña manusya yajña* and *bhūta yajña* being meant for discharging

Ibid CCXV 98

Brahma CCXXII 22 27 Kūr II 45 Sk IV 1 36

Brahma CCXXII 28 34 Viṣṇu III 9 14 16 Sk III 2 6 Manu III 77 Kūr

II 42 3 Agnayo tithiśuśrūṣa yajno danam surarcanam

Grhashthasya samāśena dharmo yam munipuṅgavaḥ

⁴ V 3 6

one's debt to the ancient sages gods ancestors men and all creatures All these sacrifices have an outward form and an inner meaning *Ṛṣi yajña* is also called *brahma yajña* since it consists in the study and teaching of the Brāhmanas or the Vedas Through this one is only discharging one's duty to the *ṛṣis* some of them being the seers of Vedic hymns It is based on the ethics that one should share one's knowledge with others All study is a sacrifice since its fruit is meant for being given to others through teaching This serves to preserve promote and propagate Vedic learning in society

The gods are worshipped through *homa* or oblations in the fire They are conceived as the active Intelligences of Nature who contribute to our welfare through rains etc We repay their service by giving them a share in our possessions By this we recognize the relation and interdependence between the physical and super physical worlds

Sacrifice to the ancestors consists in propitiating (*tarpana*) them through the offering of water This can be extended further to comprehend the rites and ceremonies which involve the giving of food clothing and *dakṣiṇa* (useful presents) to the learned and needy Brāhmanas These are termed *śrāddhas* being based on *śraddhā* (faith)⁴⁶ The ancestors when propitiated grant all desires like longevity progeny wealth wisdom and heaven⁴⁷ The Purāṇas expatiate on the importance method varieties and fruits of these *śrāddhas* Their non performance is an ingratitude and sin Gratitude is a great virtue as it binds the world together Ingratitude is the worst sin for it disintegrates, and disharmonizes society The *śrāddhas* have both an ethical and economic aspect Man expresses his gratitude to his ancestors who have bequeathed to him his physical and spiritual body Since the gifts are to be given in the *śrāddha* to the poor and the enlightened both the needy and the worthy section of the society is benefited

Worship of men is hospitality to guests Those belonging to the other *āśramas* who had no fixed abode and who went about in quest of knowledge and truth to centres of wisdom could find refuge only in the householder He acted as their steward By feeding the hungry clothing the naked sheltering the homeless, and comforting the distressed he promoted social harmony and welfare

Bhūta yajña consists in feeding the lives both visible and invisible

⁴⁶ Bḍ II 42 3 *Deśe kāle ca patre ca śraddhaya vidhinā ca yat*

Pitrn uddīśya viprebhyo danam śrāddham udahṛtam

⁴⁷ Agnī CLXII *Brahma* CCXX 118 20 *śrāddhas* are described in *Viṣṇu* III *Brahma* CCXVII CCXIX CCXX *Vāyu* LXXI LXXXIII *Nar* XXII XXVIII *Mark* XXXVI XLIII *Var* XIII XIV *Mat* XVI XXII *Agnī* CXVII CLXIII *Kūr* II 20 23 *Gar* IXG CCXVIII CCXIX *Sk* VI 217 225

around us By this we discharge our duty towards the rest of creation The individual is but a cell in the vast body of creation All lives around him are part and parcel of the huge world family Man is bound to care for the life of even the smallest ant His happiness can be secured only if it subserves the general happiness The ethics of *bhūta yajña* rests on the knowledge of the Ātman as immanent in all creatures The Purānas have recognized life even in the plants Hence rearing trees is considered a great virtue cutting them is a great sin⁴⁸ Thus the householder is able to render practical help to all from the highest *sannyāsin* to the lowest ant He is an indispensable factor in social well being

Vānaprasthya or secluded life in the forest is a stage preparatory to the final stage of renunciation This life is characterized by severe discipline in matters of food dress and other physical comforts The aspirant's fare consists of leaves roots and fruits The hair is left to grow The bare ground serves as bed Skin and *kusa* grass serve as clothing Heat and cold should not affect him He has to bathe thrice a day has to worship his favourite god and guests and has to study and observe penance with perfect equanimity⁴⁹ This is a stage of transition from the life of a householder to that of the *sannyāsin* and it is a period of probation entitling one to enter a state of complete renunciation

The fourth stage is that of the *sannyāsin* Detachment from worldly objects entitles one to enter this stage Kindness to all freedom from desires and passions and complete equanimity in pleasure and pain gain and loss and also sameness of attitude towards friend and foe characterize this stage The *sannyāsin* has to observe non injury in thought word and deed⁵⁰ The *Padma Purāna* speaks of *karma sannyāsins* *veda sannyāsins* and *jñāna sannyāsins* The first devotes himself to the performance of oblations in the sacred fire in a spirit of dedication to God The second constantly practises the Vedas The third who is considered superior to the others is one whose mind is always rooted in the knowledge of the Ātman The *sannyāsin* subsists on leaves and leads a life of peace silence and celibacy not expecting any reward and caring neither for life nor death⁵¹ He transcends the bonds of the flesh and rises into the realm of the Spirit He might move from place to place not sticking to any place for more than a day accepting the hospitality of the good and disseminating spiritual wisdom both by example and precept

The scheme of the *āśramas* is based on the ethical principle that man

Viṣṇu II 6

Brahma CCXXII 39 44 *Viṣṇu* III 9 22 *Pad* I 58 *Kur* II 43 *Agn* CLX 1 5

Sk IV 1 36

Brahma CCXXII 46 54 *Viṣṇu* III 9 27 31 *Kur* II 44 *Agn* CLXI 6 7

Pad I 59 3 10

should discharge his duties fully before aspiring for liberation from the bonds of the flesh and the world. The path of duty is the way to glory. Before desiring to be absolved from the bonds of existence he has to absolve himself from the threefold debt he owes to the sages, gods and ancestors. He does it by Vedic study through sacrifices and through progeny. The first two stages *brahmacarya* and *gārhasthya* offer the aspirant ample scope for discharging these debts. And by discharging them he contributes to the progress of society in its intellectual, economic and numerical aspects.

The theory of Karma and transmigration also plays a prominent and fundamental role in Purāṇic ethics. As a man sows, so he reaps, sums up the Karma theory. Any action, good, bad or indifferent, yields its corresponding fruit. The joys and sorrows of creatures in this life are predestined and determined by the nature of *karma* performed in a previous birth. Even the nature of the bodies taken by the Jīva is determined by the actions of a previous birth. Desire, thought and physical action mutually interlinked form the three threads which are twisted into the cord of *karma*. These three threads have to be well refined. Though *karma* plays a vital part in determining the life here, man is given the freedom to better his life here by doing good deeds for which he is given the discriminative power. This freedom of the individual is emphasized in the Purāṇas. This has an ethical value as it gives man an incentive to overcome fatalism and do good deeds.

It is declared that the *karma* of a previous birth seeks out its doer in this birth to yield the corresponding fruit just as the calf finds out its mother from among thousands of mother cows. Those with gentle nature are born as gods, saints and philanthropists. The cruel and the heartless are born as men, beasts, birds and reptiles of prey. This theory too has an ethical value for no man would welcome rebirth in an inferior body. In this context the Purāṇas mention a number of hells to which the sinners go according to the nature of their sins.⁵²

The doctrine of Karma and hell is a moral law which controls existence, favouring morality and discouraging immorality. *Karma* is an ethical force which tends to improve the world by bringing its spiritual elements to perfection. In penalizing wrong and rewarding right it treats virtue as coincident with happiness.

Many Purāṇas⁵³ deal with expiation for the sins of omission and

| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|---------------|--------|-------|-------------|-----------|--------------|-------------|------|--------|------------|------------|-----|--------------|
| <i>Brahma</i> | CCXXI | CCXV | CCXXVII | CCXXXIII | <i>Viṣṇu</i> | II | 6 | 7 | 21 | <i>Nār</i> | XIV | <i>Mārka</i> |
| <i>Var</i> | CXCIII | CCXII | <i>Agni</i> | CCCLXVIII | CCCLXXX | <i>Brhū</i> | II | XXIX | XXXI | | | |
| XXXIII | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| <i>Brahma</i> | XXII | CLXIV | <i>Agni</i> | CLXIX | CLXXV | <i>Nār</i> | XXII | XXVIII | <i>Var</i> | CXIX | | |
| <i>Sk</i> | I | 3 | 2 | 6 | | | | | | | | |

commission. It includes repentance and the performance of expiatory rites calculated to purify the mind. To err is human. Repentance is a virtue for it leads to the higher virtue of not committing a wrong again. The performance of expiatory rites relieves a person of the depressing thought that he is damned for ever and makes him feel at ease to turn over a new leaf in his career.

A sin is considered as such because it is anti-social. It implies lack of self-restraint, a tendency to trespass into others' rights. Hence theft, murder, adultery, envy and avarice are considered sins. The sin of an individual adversely affects the whole society. By eschewing sin an individual is doing a duty both to himself and to the society.

The Purāṇas⁵⁴ also stress the need for fasting and observing certain *vratas* or religious rites. These have a great spiritual and ethical value. They discipline, purify and sublimate the mind. Hence they are given a prominent place in the scheme of religious duties.

Purāṇic ethics is intensely practical and utilitarian. It takes into consideration the welfare of society as a whole and prescribes the caste and customary duties for the individual. The scheme of *varṇāśrama dharma* has this end in view. While prescribing the practice of great virtues like self-discipline and renunciation as in the absolutist systems, it advocates their practice as far as they are practicable in consonance with *svadharma*. It is a synthesis of the ethical principles enunciated in the literature of the Vedas, the Brāhmanas and the Upanisads. The Vedic emphasis on truth, duty and respect for superiors receives greater emphasis in the Purāṇas. The sacrificial cult of the Brāhmana literature is merged in the scheme of *varṇāśrama dharma*. The Upanisadic conception of the immanent Soul is utilized here for inculcating equanimity, kindness and love towards all the grades of creation. Moreover, the Purāṇas attempt a *rapprochement* between the ritualistic ethics of Brāhmanism and the moralistic ethics of Buddhism and Jainism. The sacrificial cult of the Brāhmana literature appears here in a more popular and acceptable form in the form of the *pañca mahā yajñas śrāddhas* and other rites which eschew injury to and promote love for animal life. The scheme of *sadhārana dharma* lays down general ethical principles common to all, and that of *svadharma* prescribes specific duties for the betterment and welfare of society. The common good of all is the supreme standard and law according to which virtues are to be determined. Purāṇic ethics shows how one should lead a normal life of duties and responsibilities and yet be in peace and contentment and in a state of equanimity and communion with God. The Bhakti cult is given

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

a supreme place in the scheme of self purification. The law of Karma and transmigration serves as a deterrent to evil and promoter of good in society. The scheme of fasting and other *vratas* helps to discipline and purify the mind. The system of religious ceremonies like *śrāddhas* enables the individual to discharge his obligations in a spirit of detachment and to contribute to the balance of social economy. The expiatory rites for the sins of omission and commission serve to rectify wrongs, to purify the mind and thus to point out the right path of duty. Thus Purāṇic ethics besides synthesizing the earlier ethics of the Vedas, the Brāhmanas and the Upanisads has embraced the ethics of Buddhism and Jainism also without detriment to the ethics of the earlier literature. It is highly practical and utilitarian.

PART IV

THE DHARMA ŚĀSTRAS

THE DHARMA SŪTRAS AND THE DHARMA ŚĀSTRAS

INTRODUCTION

THE Vedas are the repositories of Hindu culture. They explain mainly *dharma* and *moksa*—the two great objects of human life (*purusārtha*). Every true Hindu believes in the practice of his *dharma* (duty) which will enable him to live a happy noble and moral life and finally attain liberation (*moksa*) through self knowledge. Next to the Vedas the six Vedāngas and the Smṛtis are the sources of and authorities on *dharma* in that they not only explain the Vedic texts but also form a supplement to them by systematically arranging the *dharma*s scattered over the different recensions of the Vedas.¹ One of the Vedāngas is Kalpa Sūtra which has three sections Śrauta Grhya and Dharma. The Śrauta Sūtras deal with performance of the Vedic rites.

The Grhya Sūtras treat of the numerous ceremonies applicable to the domestic life of a man and his family from birth to death. The performance of the *grhya* rituals requires only the domestic fire (*āvasathya*) and not the three fires *tretagni* required for a *śrauta* sacrifice. It describes nearly forty consecrations (*samskāras*) which are to be performed at different important periods of a man's life beginning with *garbhādhāna* (conception). The first eighteen ending with marriage are bodily sacraments such as *garbhādhāna* *pumsavana* (ceremony for having a male issue) *simantonmayana* *jātakarman* (birth ceremony) *nāmakarana* (naming) *anna prāśana* (first feeding of rice) *caula upanayana* (the holy thread ceremony) *samavartana* (graduation) *vivāha* (marriage). Among others may be mentioned the five *mahā yajñas* (great sacrifices)—*brahma-yajña* *deva yajña* *pitṛ yajña* *bhūta yajña* and *manusya-yajña* daily morning and evening worship the new moon and full moon sacrifices the annual *śrāddha* ceremonies connected with house building cattle breeding and farming and a few magic rites to ward off evils diseases etc. Thus the Grhya Sūtras afford us a deep insight into the life of ancient India. In short they may be called the folklore journal of ancient India.²

Equally important are the Dharma Sūtras directly connected with the Grhya-Sūtras and dealing with *dharma* which means right duty law,

Cf. *Pūruṣa Mīmamsā Sūtra* II 4 2
Cf. Winternitz *HIL* I pp. 272 4

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

religion custom and usage Therefore they deal with both secular and religious laws which indeed are inseparable in India Many of them are supplementary texts to the Śrauta and Grhya Sūtras and originated in the Vedic schools A few Dharma Sūtras like that of the *Gautama* are not parts of Kalpa Sūtras but independent works just like the metrical Dharma śāstras such as the *Manu Smṛti*

The important contents of the Dharma Sūtras may be briefly noted here They are the sources of *dharma*—the Vedas the Smṛtis and the time honoured practices of the great the duties of the four *varnas* and *āśramas* various moral *samskāras* of man, like *upanayana* and marriage according to the different castes the avocations of the four *varnas* in life the duties and responsibilities of the king rules for taxation ownership guardianship witnesses moneylending payment of debts and deposits punishments for the various crimes partition inheritance and different kinds of sons impurities of birth death and other causes different kinds of *śrāddhas* rules about food duties of women and their property *niyoga* (levirate) and its conditions and sins and their expiations and penances and their conditions The Dharma śāstras or Smṛtis also deal with these topics in a more analytical and systematized form under three main heads *ācāra* (rites) *vyavahāra* (dealings) and *prāyaścitta* (expiation)

THE DHARMA SOTRAS

The chronology of the Dharma Sūtras and the Dharma śāstras or Smṛtis is still an unsettled question It is however held by a few western scholars that the Dharma Sūtras are earlier than and perhaps the sources of the metrical codes But since Manu and his extant Smṛti and a few others are found cited by many Dharma Sūtras it is very difficult to maintain that all metrical Smṛtis are evolved from the Dharma Sūtras On the other hand it can be asserted that both kinds of texts in the form of *sūtras* and verses which were equally popular during that period have developed side by side with the result that many Dharma Sūtra texts have also incorporated verses in *anustubh* and sometimes in other metres also

The *Gautama Dharma Sūtra* is believed to be the earliest among the Dharma Sūtras available Since it is specially studied by the Chandogas, it is conjectured that it belongs to the *Sāma Veda* (Rānāyaniya school) It has twenty eight chapters and deals with almost every topic exhaustively Its treatment of marriage of eight kinds and of subcastes by *anuloma* and *pratiloma* marriage (in which the wife is respectively of inferior or superior caste) in Chapter IV is noteworthy It allows *niyoga* under certain conditions as stated in Chapter XVIII Like Manu, Gautama recognizes

twelve sons in Chapter XXVIII Baudhāyana³ Āpastamba⁴ Vasistha⁵ and Yājñavalkya⁶ presuppose Manu His earliest limit is decided by his *sūtras* in Chapter XXVI which is based on the *Samavidhāna Brāhmaṇa* and by *sūtra* II 28 which is probably a reminiscence of *Nirukta* II 3 Hence this *Sūtra* is approximately placed between 600 and 300 B C

The *Āpastamba Dharma Sutra* which forms the supplementary section of the *Āpastamba Śrauta* and *Grhya Sūtras* (being *prśnas* or questions 28 and 29 of the *Āpastamba Kalpa Sutra*) belongs to the *Taittirīya* recension of the *Black Yajur Veda* It is possible to maintain that the authors of the *Śrauta Grhya* and *Dharma Sūtras* are the same though a few scholars hold the view that the author of the *Śrauta Sūtra* is different from that of the others The *Āpastamba Grhya* and *Dharma Sūtras* are closely related to each other They are very brief and what one has explained is at times omitted by the other The *Dharma Sūtra* in II 5 11 15 and 16 tells us that the bride to be married must not be a *sagotra* (of the same clan) or a *sapinda* (a certain degree of consanguinity) the *Grhya Sūtra* is silent on the point Some *Dharma Sūtras* are identical with the *Grhya Sūtras*⁷ and sometimes they refer to each other

Āpastamba quotes several authors and works on *dharma* Besides the Vedic texts and the Vedāṅgas Kanva Kānva Kauśika Kautsa Puskaraśādi Vārsyāyana Śvetaketu and Hārīta are mentioned Though there is close similarity between the *Baudhāyana* and the *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtras* they differ on several points Baudhāyana (along with Gautama and Vasistha) mentions several secondary sons while Āpastamba is silent on them Baudhāyana and others like Āśvatthāmā approve of the practice of *niryoga* (levirate) which Āpastamba condemns Baudhāyana (following Gautama) recognizes eight forms of marriage of which Āpastamba mentions six only omitting *prajāpatya* and *paisāca* Baudhāyana allows a large share to the eldest son on partition of which Āpastamba does not approve Baudhāyana allows *upanayana* to Rathakāras while Āpastamba is silent on it He refers to the views of a few people of whom one might be Gautama⁸

| | |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| Cf Gaut Dh S III 25 34 | with Baud Dh S II 6 17 |
| III 35 | II 6 29 |
| XV 29 | II 8 2 |
| XXIII 8 10 | II 1 12 14 |
| XXIV 2 | II 3 8 |
| Cf Gaut Dh S with Ap Dh S II 6 15 20 | |
| Cf Gaut Dh S IV 34 | with Vas Dh S IV 34 and XIX with XXII |
| Yajñavalkya mentions Gautama as an author on <i>dharma</i> (I 5) | |
| Cf Ap Dh S I 1 2 38 | with Ap Gr S IV 11 10 and 16 |
| Cf Ap Dh S I 1 2 38 | with Gaut Dh S I 23 |
| I 1 2 41 | I 19 |
| I 2 5 20 | I 54 59 |

Again this *Dharma Sūtra* contains many *sūtras* similar to those in *Purva Mīmāṃsā* ⁹ Āpastamba is assigned to a period between 500 and 300 B C ¹⁰

The *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra* belongs to the *Black Yajur Veda* It is the supplementary portion of the *Baudhāyana Śrauta* and *Grhya Sūtras* ¹¹ and presupposes the *Baudhāyana Grhya Sūtra* A *pravacanākāra* Kanva Bodhāyana is mentioned in the *Baudhāyana Grhya Sūtra* ¹² along with *pada kāra* Ātreya *ṛttikāra* Kuṇḍinya and *sūtrakāra* Āpastamba *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra* ¹³ mentions Kanva Bodhāyana *sūtrakāra* Āpastamba and *satyāsādha* Hiranyakeśin one after another (in libation offered to sages—*ṛsi tarpana*) The author of the *Baudhāyana Grhya* and *Dharma Sūtras* is known as Baudhāyana and as such might be a descendant of this Kanva Bodhāyana The commentator Govinda Svāmī explains Baudhāyana in *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra* I 3 13 as Kānvāyana Just as Bhṛgu one of the disciples of Manu has compiled the well known views of Manu in the extant *Manu Smṛti* a later Baudhāyana might have compiled the views of Kanva Bodhāyana in the extant *Dharma Sūtra*

This *Dharma Sūtra* has four *prāśnas* with subdivisions into *adhyāyas* or *kandikās* The authenticity of the text is doubted by many people Govinda Svāmī says in his commentary on *Sūtra* I 2 19 that the author does not care for brevity All the *sūtras* appear to be very loose in structure and several subjects are treated without any logical connection It is full of interpolations also ¹⁴

The *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra* mentions the four Vedas one Aupa janghani Kāśyapa Gautama Prajapati Manu and Maudgalya The earliest reference to the *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra* ¹⁵ might be found in Śabara Svāmī's commentary on the *Pūrvā Mīmāṃsā Sūtra* I 3 3 In several places Baudhāyana states others views which he does not subscribe to and then gives his own views The date of this Sūtra is fixed between 500 and 200 B C

The *Hārīta Dharma Sūtra* ¹⁶ contains thirty chapters It possesses some quotations from some ancient works Hārīta is quoted by Baudhāyana Āpastamba and Vasīṣṭha and is believed to have belonged to the *Yajur Veda* It is said that the citations in Hārīta have much correspondence with *Matrāyaṇiya parīṣista* and *Mānavaśrāddhakalpa* He refers to all the Vedas

⁹ *Āp Dh S* I 1 4 8 I 4 12 11 II 4 8 13 and I 4 12 9 correspond to *Pūrvā Mīmāṃsā Sūtra* I 3 3 IV 1 2 I 3 11 14 and XII 3 19 respectively

Kane *H Dh* I p 45

¹¹ *Baudh Dh S* II 8 20 and I 2 16 refer to *Baudh Gr S* II 11 42 and II 5 66 respectively — *H Dh* I p 10 n 54

¹² III 9 6

¹³ *H Dh* I p 23

¹⁴ II 5 27

¹⁵ I 21

There is a paper manuscript in Travancore University Manuscripts Library which contains the Sūtra text in 30 chapters It is full of scriptural errors

Vedangas Dharma śāstras metaphysics and the customs and practices (*sthiti*) as *srutas* (sources of *dharma*) He speaks of eight kinds of marriages two of which are *ksātra* and *mānusa* instead of *ārśa* and *prājāpatya* He mentions two kinds of women *brahmvādīnī* (*nun*) and *sadyovadhū* (newly wed) of whom the former is entitled to have *upanayana* consecration of fire the study of the Vedas and begging alms in her own house He looks down upon the profession of an actor and forbids the employment of a Brāhmana actor in a *śrāddha*

Hārta might have flourished before Baudhāyana and Āpastamba since they mention him and therefore he can be assigned to a period between 600 and 300 B C The two metrical Smṛtis known as *Laghu Hārta* and *Vṛddha Hārta* undoubtedly of different authorship must have been completed at a later period in the post Christian era

The *Vasistha Dharma Sūtra* is not a part of a Kalpa Sūtra It has thirty chapters It is generally studied by the Rg Vedins according to Kumārila but is considered to be an authority by other schools also It quotes the *Rg Veda* the *Taittirīya* and *Maitrāyanīya Samhitās* and the *Śatapatha Brāhmana* of the *Yajur Veda* It resembles the *Gautama Dharma Sūtra* in style and possesses many *sūtras* similar to those of Gautama and Baudhāyana Like the *Dharma Sūtra* of Baudhāyana it has many interpolations no doubt made at a very early age It has quotations from the *Manu Smṛti* and adaptations in prose and these prose adaptations are considered by Dr Buhler and others to have been taken from an ancient work *Mānava Dharma Sūtra* which they consider as more ancient than the metrical *Manu Smṛti* P V Kane discusses this point at length and comes to the conclusion that there was no work called *Mānava Dharma Sūtra* in existence and that all prose quotations from Manu in the *Vasistha Dharma Sūtra* and other later works are only prose adaptations of the verses of the *Manu Smṛti* by later writers¹⁷

Just as Vasistha quotes Manu Manu also quotes Vasistha This problem can be solved by the supposition that both texts had later additions and that these extant works might be compilations of the views of the original Vasistha and Manu by some latter day followers of those schools Both Manu and Vasistha are known as ancient writers on *dharma* Most of the later Nibandhas quote from the *Vasistha Dharma Sūtra* Vasistha allows *niyoga* (levirate) and the remarriage of child widows He mentions only six forms of marriage *brāhma* *daiva* *ārśa* *gāndharva* *ksātra* and *mānusa* His views are in some places different from those of Gautama Baudhāyana and other writers He prohibits a Brāhmana's marriage with a Śudra woman His Sūtra is generally assigned to a period between 300 and 100 B C¹⁸

¹ *Ibid* p 59

¹⁷ *H Dh* I pp 55 56 79 85

Among the writers of Dharma Sūtras Śankha and Likhita have been enjoying a very high position from early times. They have been mentioned as brothers in the *Mahābhārata* and as writers on *dharma* in the *Yogī Yājñavalkya*. According to the *Parāśara Smṛti* the codes of Manu, Gautama, Śankha, Likhita and Parāśara are of paramount authority on *dharma* in the four *yugas*: *krta*, *tretā*, *dvāpara* and *kali* respectively. Kumārila Bhatta mentions Śankha and Likhita as belonging to the *Vājasaneyi Samhitā* (of the *White Yajur Veda*). The Sūtra text ascribed to these two writers is in both prose and verse. P. V. Kane has published a reconstructed text of the Sūtra.¹⁹ Jivānanda and Ānandasrama collections of Smṛtis contain the metrical versions of *Śankha Likhita Smṛtis* which are evidently later compilations. Between the Sūtra text and the metrical versions there are differences on several points. The Sūtra version allows a Brāhmana to marry from the four castes while the metrical text allows him to marry in the first three castes only and this difference indicates the influence of a few later Sūtras and Smṛtis which condemn a Brāhmana's marriage with a Śūdra woman. The Sūtra text resembles other Sūtras in style and the *Kautiliya Arthasāstra* in particular. It agrees closely with the texts of Gautama and Baudhāyana. Like Baudhāyana and a few others, Śankha Likhita quote themselves among the *dharmaśāstrakāras*. They allow *niyoga*, but do not favour the claim of females to succeed males. They follow Āpastamba on several points and on partition and inheritance they give more details than Āpastamba and Baudhāyana. Though they quote Yājñavalkya who also quotes them in his turn, it is believed that this Sūtra is earlier than the *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* which is placed in a later period, i.e. in the beginning of the Christian era.²⁰

The *Viṣṇu Dharma Sūtra* is peculiar in its origin in that it professes its revelation by the Divine Boar (Viṣṇu). It belongs to the Katha school of the *Yajur Veda* and has a hundred chapters in mixed prose and verse of which four, viz. 21, 67, 73 and 86 are in common with those of the *Kāthaka Grhya* popular in Kashmir.

This work has a few chapters (viz. 3 and 5 on *rāja dharma* and punishment, 15 and 16 on the rules about the twelve sons and the mixed castes and 21 and 22 on funeral rites) which are comparatively old and stand on a level with the *sūtras* of Gautama and Āpastamba. It contains nearly a hundred and sixty verses of the extant *Manu Smṛti* and also many *sūtras* which may be the prose adaptations of the verses of Manu and Yājñavalkya. A few verses of the *Bhagavad Gītā* are also found. Though Yājñavalkya mentions Viṣṇu among the authors of treatises on *dharma*, the extant *Viṣṇu Dharma Sūtra* is a later production. It is curious that Kumārila has not mentioned Viṣṇu though later Nibandhas quote this Sūtra. The date of

the older portions of this Sūtra may be fixed between 300 and 100 B.C. It allows a Brāhmana to marry from the four castes and does not inveigh *nyoga* as Manu and others do. It advocates specially the worship of Vāsudeva.²¹

The *Hiranyakesī Dharma Sūtra* forms the 26th and 27th *praśnas* of the *Hiranyakesī Kalpa Sūtra* which has no independent existence in that it has borrowed almost all its *sūtras* from the *Āpastamba Śrauta* and *Dharma Sūtras* and the *Bhāradvāja Grhya Sūtra*. The contents of the *Hiranyakesī Dharma Sūtra* are therefore practically the same as those of the *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra*. The only difference is that one *sūtra* of Āpastamba is some times split up into many and presented in grammatically more correct language than the original which is in many cases not adhering to Pāṇini. The arrangement of the *sūtras* also is different.

The *Hiranyakesins* form a *Sūtracarana* of the Khāṇḍīkeya section of the Taittirīya śākhā and were formed later than the Āpastamba school. They were the occupants of the region between the Sahya Mountain and the ocean and near Parasurāma (i.e. in Konkan). There are at present many *Hiranyakesins* in Ratnagiri District.²²

The *Vaikhānasa Dharma Sūtra*²³ by Vaikhānasa is an authority on the duties of *vānaprasthas*. Manu²⁴, Gautama²⁵, Baudhāyana²⁶ and Vasistha mention Vaikhānasa. It has four *prasnas*. It gives four kinds of *brahma cārins*, four kinds of householders—*vārtā vrtti śālina*, *yāyāvara* and *ghora carika*, two kinds of *vānaprasthas*—*sapatnika* and *apatnika* with their further subdivisions and four kinds of *sannyāsins*. From its style it appears to be a later production by a devotee of Nārāyana. Dr. Bühler speaks of a *Vaikhānasa Grhya Sūtra* in seven *praśnas*.

The *Auśanasa Dharma Sūtra* in seven chapters deals mainly with the duties of the four castes. It is both in prose and verse, some of the verses being found in the *Manu Smṛti*. It refers to Vasistha, Hārta, Śaunaka and Gautama. From the later Nibandha works like the *Smṛticandrikā* and Haradatta's commentary on the *Gautama Dharma Sūtra*, the *Auśanasa Dharma Sūtra* is supposed to have dealt with all topics—*ācāra vyavahāra* and *prāyaścitta*. Kautilya quotes it several times. He speaks of the Auśanasa method of partition, allowing one tenth as an additional share to the eldest son. The *Mahābhārata* also refers to a work on politics by Uśanas. Later works like the *Nīti prakāśikā*, *Mudrā rāksasa* and the commentaries on the *Smṛtis* of Manu and Yājñavalkya mention the Auśanasa system of politics which is yet to be unearthed.

²¹ *Ibid.* pp. 68-69.

Ibid. p. 47.

²² An English translation of the text with a critical introduction is published by K. Rangachari in Ramanujachari Oriental Institute Publication Vol. III.

²³ VI 21.

III 2.

²⁶ II 6 17.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

The *Kautilya Arthasāstra* though mainly a work on Indian polity contains discussions on *dharma* in one of its sections called *Dharmasthīya* which deals with *vyavahāra* in detail. Like Manu, Kautilya mentions eighteen *vyavahāra padas* but with some modification. Manu²⁷ says that the son of the first three castes by a Śūdra woman does not inherit the father's property while Kautilya allows him a share when there are sons to the father by the higher caste wives or one third when he has no other son²⁸. Manu prohibits the remarriage of widows²⁹ while Kautilya allows not only widows to remarry but also wives whose husbands whereabouts are not known for a particular period³⁰. Kautilya allows a wife to desert her husband if the latter is of a bad character, has become a traitor to the king, endangers her life or has become an outcaste or impotent³¹. Kautilya even allows divorce (unknown to any other law giver) but he bases it only on the ground of mutual hatred and says that a marriage in the approved forms cannot be dissolved³². Manu condemns gambling which Kautilya allows under state control for the purpose of detecting thieves. On the question as to the person to whom the *ksetraja* son belongs to whether to the begetter or to the husband of the mother of the child, Kautilya quotes the views of the *ācāryas* that it belongs to the husband of the mother of the child, next mentions the view that it belongs to the begetter and then gives his own view that it belongs to both³³. Kautilya's date is generally assigned to the third century B.C. though some hold that it cannot be earlier than 100 B.C.³⁴

Besides the writers of Dharma Sūtras mentioned above, there were many more such as Atri, Kānva, Kāśyapa, Devala, Paithinasi, Gārgya, Cyavana, Jātukarnya, Bhāradvāja, Śātātapa and Sumantu whose works dealt with all topics of *dharma*.

THE DHARMA ŚĀSTRAS

The term *dharma śāstra* is generally applicable to both the Dharma Sūtras and the metrical codes otherwise known as Smṛtis. The term *smṛti* indicates that these codes are authorities on the basis of Śruti which is considered a revelation (*pratyakṣa*) from which *smṛti* (remembrance) arose.

Side by side with the comparatively late Dharma Sūtras, metrical Dharma śāstras of varied lengths came to be composed with the growing demand of Hindu society for new provisions in matters of *dharma*, religious and secular. Of these works which were very numerous, only those of Manu and Yājñavalkya and a few others deserve special notice here.

²⁷ IX 155
III 4
III 7

III 6
²⁸ III 2 (last verse)
H Dh I p 99

²⁹ V 161 5
³⁰ III 3

The *Manu Smṛti* is the most ancient and authoritative among the extant metrical works on *dharma*. It has twelve chapters dealing with *ācāra vyavahāra* and *prāyaścitta*. It is popularly said that Manu's statement is healthy and acceptable and consequently his book is looked upon as having served as a model to all later *Smṛtis*. It has many masterly commentaries like those of Medhātithi, Govindarāja and Kulluka Bhatta. The extant work is a version compiled by Bhṛgu, one of the disciples of Manu. The *Smṛtis* of Nārada, Brhaspati and Kātyāyana however make us believe that there was another version different from the extant *Manu Smṛti*.

The work which is next in importance to the *Manu Smṛti* is that of Yājñavalkya which has three *kandas* (sections) on *ācāra vyavahāra* and *prāyaścitta*. It agrees with the *Manu Smṛti* on many points but disagrees in important topics like *niyoga*, inheritance and gambling. It belongs to the Vājasaneyya school and it paraphrases the ideas contained in the *Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad* and *Pāraskara Grhya Sūtra*, both belonging to the *White Yajur Veda*. The text of this *Smṛti* also has undergone many modifications. It has got a few valuable commentaries like *Bālakṛidā Aparārka* and *Mitāksarā* of which *Mitāksarā* is the best and most critical and authoritative.

The *Parāśara Smṛti* is noted for its advanced views and it is considered most suited for the *kaliyuga*. It deals with *ācāra* and *prāyaścitta* only. It mentions the *āpaddharma* of the four castes, agriculture, trade and commerce for the Brāhmanas, etc. Its commentary by Mādhavācārya is very popular and authoritative and explains *vyavahāra* under *rāja-dharma*.

The *Nārada Smṛti* occurs in two recensions, a shorter and a longer and deals with *vyavahāra* only. It closely follows Manu but introduces a few innovations in the eighteen titles of law and permits *niyoga*, remarriage of women, and gambling under certain conditions.

The *Brhaspati Smṛti*,^{ss} as reconstructed by Professor K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar has seven sections dealing with *vyavahāra ācāra* (*samskāra śrāddha āśauca*, and *āpaddharma*), and *prāyaścitta*. It is mostly in verse but has a few prose passages also. It closely follows the *Manu Smṛti* (both Svāyambhuva and Bhṛgu versions) and is known as a *varttika* (metrical gloss) of and a *pariśista* (supplement) to *Manu Smṛti*. Like Manu, Brhaspati is against *niyoga*. He divides the eighteen titles of law into two groups, fourteen under civil (*dhanamula*) and four under criminal and treats of nine ordeals (*divya*).

The *vyavahāra* section of the *Kātyāyana Smṛti* has been reconstructed

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

by P V Kane²² It follows closely the works of Manu Brhaspati Nārada and Kautilya It specially deals with *stridhana* (a woman's personal property) Like Narada Yājñavalkya and Kautilya and some *dharma sūtrakāras* like Baudhāyana and Gautama Kātyāyana allows *niyoga* under certain conditions

Among others mention may be made of the Smṛtis of Angīras Dakṣa Pītāmaha Prajapati Marīci Yama Viśvāmitra Vyāsa Sangraha-kāra and Samvarta who are known from citations in later Nibandhas as writers on *dharma* a few of their works some being abridgements only are found in Jīvananda and Ānandāśrama collections

CONCLUSION

From the foregoing account it will be clear that all these Dharma Sūtras and Smṛtis specially emphasize the practice of *dharma* on the part of every Hindu for his material moral and spiritual edification and happiness They presume the existence of the caste system and its division into four *varnas* and four *āśramas* They also believe in the doctrine of Karma which is the corner stone of Hindu religion and philosophy According to it there is distinction between the soul and body in that the one is imperishable and the other perishable Man has a long chain of births and deaths and assumes a particular body in every birth on the basis of his past *karma* In every birth he is bound to do a good number of actions since he cannot remain idle even if he chooses to be He is instructed by these Dharma Sūtras to do his prescribed duties according to his *varna* and *āśrama* of which some are obligatory and of high disciplinary value He is directed to do *sāttvika dharma* and penance even to control his passions and to attain the mental power of concentration and meditation In the *Gītā* the Lord says that He incarnates Himself in order to protect *dharma* when it becomes corrupt and annihilate *adharma* when it prevails everywhere He exhorts Arjuna to conquer his passions and impulses and perform his appointed duty (*svadharma*) as a born Kṣatriya viz to fight with his enemies whoever they may be, and insinuates that his resolution not to fight is foolish It does not imply that the Lord has completely denied freedom of the will or Arjuna's personal ability to make a deliberate choice of his own between the two alternatives, whether to fight or not to fight The Karma theory implies that man can by his own action influence his future The Dharma Sūtras clearly emphasize also the individual's freedom to regulate his conduct by his own rational volitions and his ability to conquer his own impulses when they become obstacles to his future

²² Published in the *Hindu Law Quarterly* Bombay 1933

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS¹

SMRTI

THE word *smṛti* means memory or recollection of what was previously cognized and the Smṛti works are the recorded recollections of those great sages who had deeply studied the Vēdas and mastered their precepts—their injunctions as well as their prohibitions. The Vēdas are *apauruṣeya* not man made and are therefore self authoritative needing no external support. The Smṛtis on the other hand are man made yet they are authoritative only because they come from men with profound knowledge of the Vēdas. In the phrase *smṛti śīle ca tadvidām* meaning the recollection and conduct of those who are conversant with those i.e. the Vēdas the significance of *tadvidām* is that the validity of the Smṛtis depends on the conformity of their ideas to the Vedic precepts. Where the Vedic texts supposed to underlie a Smṛti usage are not to be found it is presumed that such texts must once have existed.

On a conflict between two Vedic texts an option is indicated as both are equally authoritative but in case of contradiction between a Vedic text and a Smṛti the Vedic text prevails. Kumārila Bhaṭṭa is of the opinion that the latter is really a conflict between two Vedic texts one express and the other presumed and that an express text prevails over a presumed one.

ĀCĀRA

Ācāra (custom) comes next in order of authority. It should not prevail over the Vēdas or the Smṛtis and that is the theory which has explicit support of many of the Smṛti works. But in practice *ācāra* has prevailed over every other authority of *dharma*, and the courts of justice now uniformly maintain that custom supersedes all law. This is not without support in the Smṛtis themselves. Baudhāyana for example, mentions five prohibited practices of the South and five of the North and says that they are valid in their respective areas but not elsewhere. He immediately adds that Gautama dissents. Gautama's view is the orthodox theory but Baudhāyana follows advancing practice.

That *ācāra* should have prevailed over Smṛti is not surprising, since *ācāra* is a response to changed or changing circumstances while the Smṛti satisfied the needs of an earlier time.

¹ Some of the ideas discussed in this chapter interpretatively are dealt with in chapter XXIV and XXXV more descriptively.

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS
INTERPRETATION OF CONFLICTING TEXTS

The Smrtis are many some being in the *sūtra* form and others metrical Pāṇini's *sūtras* are cryptic mnemonic and unintelligible until explained with reference to the *saṃjñā prakaraṇa*. The Dharma Sūtras are not cryptic and unintelligible but are aphoristic pithy and clear requiring assistance only to reconcile them with the other *sūtras*.

That a dissenting opinion exists in the Smṛti is expressed by such words as 'Some say' 'Gautama however says' 'Manu says this but that is not my opinion'. On this subject this opinion is Atri's this is Śaunaka's and this is Bhṛgu's and so on. In such cases there is an *ekavākyatā* rule which means that we should look upon them as the view of one writer and so reconcile differences in that light. They are in many cases irreconcilable but different scope is sought to be given to the different rules and if possible one should act so as not to contravene any text.

An illustration may be given here. One text says that marriages can be celebrated in all the months of the year. Another says that *uttarāyana* or the northern course of the sun is the proper season for marriages. According to a third authority the months of Prausthapada and Mārgasīrsa are not good for the purpose. The reconciler says that first marriage may wait for *uttarāyana* but widowers should not be *anāśramīs* (unattached to any religious order) which they will be before another marriage and they should hurry into marriage even in *dakṣiṇāyana* avoiding the two months pronounced inauspicious. No opinion is flouted by the solution.

There is a science of exegesis developed by the Mīmāṃsakas which has received acceptance from all schools of thought in ancient India and has application even in the sphere of law. Some of the Mīmāṃsā rules find a place in the Smrtis themselves. They have been found to compare favourably with the rules of interpretation in modern statutes.

SMRTIS AND INDIANS HINDUS AND NON HINDUS

As norms of conduct the Smrtis governed all Indians at one time. All were then counted as Hindus—one people. There was no hardship as local customs superseded all laws. Early Christianity required only Christian faith but left Christians to their own laws and social usages then observed. But Christianity has now developed ways of altering the usages and laws of inheritance etc. Islam as a religion had its laws of inheritance and rules of behaviour. In spite of these many Muslim communities followed the Hindu Law of Inheritance till very recently when Muslim Law was imposed on all Muslims with great zeal. There are the Jews and the Parsis divided from the Indian Aryan by an ancient misunderstanding but reunited for centuries by a common brotherhood in a common motherland. If a

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

composite culture should ever emerge in India much that belongs to this ancient land will be found in it Aryan and pre Aryan

There are other groups also which may claim to be outside Hinduism But they are much nearer to the Hindus than any of the above The Buddhists the Jains and the Brahmos are already treated in some respects as belonging to the fold of Hinduism and cannot well disclaim interest in Hindu culture

The remaining population with all its diversity is classified as Hindu Generally speaking the Smritis govern them all as has been already said subject to custom They in the main are of Aryan origin and have pre Aryan roots The later developments have occurred on the Indian soil and they naturally had to and did take into account the peculiar conditions which the meeting of two peoples diverse in origin and outlook always involved in the history of the world South Africa and the United States of America which furnish modern parallels have been much less successful in solving the conflict of races In fact the solution of the problems created by differences has altered the religion of the Indo Aryan settlers there has been a giving and taking in some respects though as might be expected the predominant factor has been the evolution of a composite religion centering round the original faith of the Aryans

HINDUISM

Hinduism is not a religion in the sense in which we now understand religion The word Hindu is not Indian in origin nor was Hinduism ever used by the Hindus as the name of their religion The word *dharma* frequently used in the description of their religion is not easily translated into the English language In fact it is a conception and a way of life *Dharma* was conceived as the only mode of individual and social life at all times and in all places and that is at least one of the reasons why it was qualified as Sanātana Dharma (perennial religion) But when religions arose having distinguishing names derived from their originators or inspirers it became inevitable that a word should be found to designate the way of life lived by the ancient Indians as one form of religion among others by way of contrast The Sanātana Dharma used at one time to be called Brāhmanism and is even now occasionally called so The term Brāhmanism misrepresents its nature in so far as it implies that it had its origin from the Brāhmaṇas The name Hinduism has the merit of avoiding that implication and convenience requires that the word should be retained to describe the Indian's mode of life inclusive of his religion in the strict sense of the term

The name Sanātana Dharma was not intended to stand for each

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

individual observance but only for the *dharma* viewed as a whole and in the abstract² The lawgivers and the Mīmāṃsakas knew only too well that their laws had been changed or modified from time to time according to the needs of an expanding society but the content of *dharma* was in all its essential parts *sanātana* or eternally the same Just as a person may grow and shed particles of his body and yet retain unchanged his individual identity so does this body of Hindu *dharma* retain its unity and individuality across the ages from the time anterior to the *Rg Veda*³ Its *sanātana* character is not destroyed but maintained by its adaptability and adaptations The institutions of today are founded on ideas which were alive and active in the Rg Vedic and pre Rg Vedic times And *dharma* has its roots in ancient ideas and ideals

SCHEME OF THE SMRTIS

As already implied in the definition given at the opening of the chapter the Smṛtis are not mere law books There is involved in the Smṛtis much more than the civil and criminal laws the rules of inheritance and the laws of marriage and families Every detail of the daily life of the individual is included in the Smṛti literature besides social arrangements with all the social institutions The king's duties in relation to the internal and external affairs of the country are also included therein It is difficult to conceive of anything bearing on the conduct of any individual or group of individuals or of society as a whole that does not fall within the regulation attempted by the Smṛtis Worship of the gods ceremonies in commemoration of the dead birth and death pollutions expiatory acts sacrifices and customs and manners to be observed in daily life and behaviour are all included in the Smṛtis indicating thereby their all embracing character

The period of the Smṛtis strictly so called may cover one thousand five hundred years but for an understanding of the Smṛtis and the lives lived under their influence an extension of the period farther back into the preceding age and forward almost up to the middle of the last century is required In the pre Smṛti period that is before the days of the Sūtras and the metrical Smṛtis we had only manuals of different Vedic schools for the instruction of pupils and before that period we had only continuous oral tradition handed down from teacher to pupil The matter of the recorded Smṛtis thus goes back to the Vedic and pre Vedic period If the

1

The opposite view that everything in Hinduism is ancient and nothing is obsolete is not unknown

The hymns of the *Rg Veda* existed and were used before they were collected into a book By the term pre Rg Vedic is meant the time of the hymns before they were collected—not the times before the composition of the hymns of which we know nothing definite

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Rg Veda goes back to at least 1500 B.C. a far more ancient date must be assigned to the beginnings of the culture represented by the Vedas

There is a very precise philosophy of life individual and social behind the scheme of the Smritis. That philosophy is at least as old as the Upanisads. The universe is one vast pulsating life. The manifestation of that life is not all alike or in one grade. It sleeps in metal. It is awake in plants. It moves and knows in animals. It knows and knows that it knows in man. Increasing complexity of biological organization runs through physical evolution. It culminates in man.

Further progress is not in the direction of the evolution of a new and higher species but along a wholly new track that of the cultural evolution of man in organized society. As in physical so in social evolution increasing complexity characterizes a rise in the scale. In both spheres such complexity involves danger. With the break down of any part the whole will collapse. Increasing vigilance is the price of individual and social security and increasing capacity intelligence and power are the result of man's life in society. Division of function and close knit inter-dependent unity are the marks of growth which bring in their train increasing sensitiveness and mutual adjustment and co-ordination of parts acting in unison for the achievement of a recognizable purpose.

Man is essentially divine and immortal. He has sure enough roots in the earth. He is an animal among animals though at the top of the ascending series. This is his physical heritage. But in mind and spirit, with his power to look back and think and philosophize and plan and create he is akin to the Intelligence that is at the heart of the universe. He came from Brahman and unto Brahman he will return. He will be at one with Brahman at the end of the *samsāra* or the cycle of births. Not in one birth but in several does man learn his true nature and grow into a perfect recognition of what in fact, he is and has been all along. Man is but the result of his past and present actions in all the three spheres of his existence physical mental and spiritual. And each new life starts at the point where the previous life ended with the accumulated heritage of aptitudes and capacities. This process of the continuous ascent of man is pursued through the ages and in countless lives.

The individual requires for his growth a certain social environment, and society must take note of it and provide it for him. But this need cannot be satisfied unless the units take their proper places and make their true contributions to the co-operative concern of social life. Each unit truly appreciating its own share in the social process must contribute its quota of service to the collective life of the society.

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

DIVISION OF TYPES AND FUNCTIONS

The functions of the Brāhmana the Ksatriya the Vaiśya and the Śūdra are essential parts of a social organism. Having regard to the nature of these functions they are likened respectively to the mouth the arms the thighs and the legs of the cosmic Purusa. By the perfect co ordination of the functions of these limbs does a society live as an efficient organism. Any of these functions failing society will be thrown out of gear and its unity will be destroyed.

Men are in different stages of evolution. They are of different types and are fit for performing different duties. The Brahmana learns and teaches he ministers to the spiritual needs of the people as priest preceptor and preacher he advises the sovereign expounds and administers laws and helps in framing and carrying out legislative policy. He is the custodian of the intellectual and spiritual heritage of the race. The Ksatriya governs and performs the executive functions of the State protects and preserves order against external aggression and internal forces making for disorder and he is the custodian of social power. The Vaisya class includes the agriculturist the merchant the manufacturer and the trader and all those who provide the sustenance of the race and it is the custodian of the economic functions of the community. The Śūdra is that portion of the population which being incapable of independent initiative on an adequate scale merely assists in the discharge of essential functions by the contribution of manual labour. With opportunity for unimpeded growth a man reaches to the full height of his stature. In pre natal growth he re enacts his biological evolutionary history. After birth the history of a man becomes the history of the liberation of his faculties and their unfolding in active life. Life never rises beyond what the potential capacity of the individual makes possible.

STAGES OF LIFE

Now let us turn to the problems of life as they present themselves to one who entertains the general ideas given above. A social scheme must provide for the continuous prolongation of life to successive generations progressively increasing the population where an increase is required for security or maintaining the population at the optimum level where increase is not needed. This renewal of life is secured by the recognition of a duty to the *pitrs* or the guardians of the physical body of the race. The germ plasm travels from the ancestor to the descendant. There is this physical continuity of the race recognized in the Sūtras. The father is born again in his wife as the son. It is he himself that is named the son. The intellectual and cultural heritage and traditions of the race have to be

handed on This handing on with such augmentations as each generation is able to make is secured by the recognition of a duty to the intellectual guardians of the race the *ṛsis* (seers) Worship and sacrifice are the duties that man owes to the *devas* or divine powers that preside over life This is nothing more than the recognition of the normal needs of all societies at all times only they are founded on the conception of a threefold duty in three spheres of life which in its mode of expression looks archaic and quaint Take two individuals one in the most advanced stratum of life the other in the least advanced one both follow their typical career in society At birth they are both *Sūdras* irresponsible and have little to distinguish one from the other except that the families of both that is the parents are distinguishable Both grow physically and mentally as their individual capacity permits It is only in point of innate capacity that the one is held once born and the other twice born The first cannot usefully be introduced to the abstruse and higher lore of the scriptures He performs indispensable service in his own sphere He is associated with the other classes in their work His sphere is not one of independent responsibility It is subordinate and subsidiary Most of his work is carried on under the direction of others His education and assimilation are effected by association with the superior person in his family life Service is his contribution to society and this serves to train and discipline him as a social unit The other being a twice born with higher capacity is initiated at the age of eight or earlier if precocious but never later than sixteen⁴ when his education namely his scriptural study begins and it generally continues for not less than twelve years A keen student might care to study two Vedas or even three in twenty four or thirty six years⁵ A few may not care to marry but may remain *brahmacārins* for life (*naisthika*) One who so decides has no progeny and may thereby ignore one of the triple debts viz debt to the ancestors (*pitrs*) This is not considered wrong in the case of those whose passion is to advance the higher intellectual and cultural interests of the society The mind born sons of Brahmā refused to marry in response to the higher impulses of their nature and thereby served society and their own spiritual interests more eminently than by rearing a family and these secured eternal recognition from every Aryan making offerings to the *ṛsis* as their spiritual ancestors Normal life takes the temporary student (*upakurvana*) on to marriage He becomes a teacher or priest or official making his learning available to the public and to the

The *Kṣatriya* is generally initiated at eleven and the *Vaiśya* at twelve The numbers eight eleven and twelve seem mystically connected with *Vasus Rudras Adityas* and the metres *gāyatrī tristubh* and *jagati*

Baudhayana adds forty eight years including the *Atharva Veda*

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

State He becomes a father and passes on the heritage of his life in all the three spheres to the next generation. The sacrifices he performs in the latter part of his life in the family are intended to discharge his third debt namely that he owes to the gods. When the son takes to family life and has himself a son the father is ready to withdraw from active family duties and turn his attention to the service of the public. He becomes a forest dweller (*vānaprastha*). His physical and mental disciplines reach a further stage. He may generally live alone. Though his wife may accompany him his sex life has already nearly ended. After a few years he withdraws from even this connection with the world and prepares himself for the other world that is he has no mind for anything but the spiritual concerns of life.

It may be noted that the first stage in this evolved life of the individual is that of a Śūdra but his higher evolution effected through celibate studentship takes him onwards and when he is fully educated he passes on to the next stage of life as a householder which is akin to the Vaisya stage of social evolution. He cannot rest even there and so passes to a stage of public service having discharged his three debts within the framework of family life. This stage is like that of a Ksatriya with his attention centred not in his own self or family but in society and social affairs. The final stage is that of liberation in which accumulation of higher knowledge and things of the spirit occupy his mind and life.

The advantage of a division of types and the assignment of different functions to each is this it is conducive to smooth social life inasmuch as it leads to the cessation of personal conflict and also to the production of increased efficiency secured through the specialization of function. For this people are prepared by the concentration of their aspiration and the concentration of the powers of their sense of perception and sense of action that is by the combination of the eye and the arm. Conflict between different generations of people is also put a stop to by the retirement of each generation in due time when the next generation is ready to take the place of the outgoing one. The above constituted the general theory of life for society and for the individual.

WOMEN AND THE ŚUDRAS

This may give a one-sided picture, if we do not add a few words regarding the real position of women and the Śūdras in society. There is a view which has the support of the Mimāṃsakas, that women had equality with men in acts and sacrifices and property⁶ but this conception is not likely to be accepted without contest so changed are our present views of

The text *Svargakamo yajeta* includes women also. The subject is legislative masculine which includes feminine.

women and their rights and status. Nor is this change a recent one. Those, at any rate, who took the adverse view claimed to have the support of Baudhāyana. Women lacked strength and had therefore no right to a share. Even such rights as they indubitably possessed have fallen into disuse in many places. The wife's share in a partition, as well as the mother's, is no longer enforced in the Brahmarshi deśa or the region below the Vindhya. The daughter's loss is not much. She has lost her one-fourth share only to gain all. In middle class families her marriage often absorbs more than her due share. It beggars many a family. Where a woman does receive property at partition or by inheritance, her right has been reduced to one of enjoyment for life, notwithstanding Viṣṇu's more liberal interpretation of her rights.

The caste system, which so largely dominates the regulations of the Smṛtis as to marriage and inheritance and also in the sphere of criminal law and social usages, is connected with external life and social organization. It does not affect the growth of the inner spirit of man in any sphere. If the exact texts of the Vedic lore are denied to the Śūdra, nothing of substance has been denied to him. His growth in every department is unimpeded. The *Rāmāyana*, the *Mahābhārata*, the *Bhagavad Gītā*, and all other valuable books conceived as man-made are open to study for all. Even the unchanted Vedas, verbally the same, may be listened to and understood by the uninitiated classes. The Vedas is denied, but not its meaning. As the saying goes, *Sasvaro vedah asvaro vedārthah*—The Vedas chanted is Vedas, and the Vedas without chant is the meaning of the Vedas. The Purāṇas and the Itihāsas are not without stories of the non-Aryans being referred to and approached for a solution of problems relating to a conflict of *dharma*. Nor was the position of these well-instructed non-Aryans always one of inferiority. In the purely spiritual sides of life, for example, among the *bhakti*-dominated communities, the spiritual equality of all the *devotees*, irrespective of caste, was recognized. Whether the equality allowed in these brotherhoods was only spiritual and did not touch the regulations of a settled social order may always be a matter of controversy. The Smārtas on one side and the Vaiṣnavas and Vira Śaivas on the other will always differ on this point, the Smārtas being particular about social regulations. It is again to the *bhakti* schools that we must attribute the recognition and canonization of non-caste saints, and among these schools the Vaiṣnavas have shown more liberal tendencies than the Śaivas—as the regulations in the Śrīva and Viṣṇu temples about the different modes of recognition of caste indicate.

Neither women nor the Śūdras in general were treated as slaves in the Smṛti period. One may find harsh words regarding both in some parts of

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

the Smrtis indicating that expressions of ideas have not always been the impressions of our best or most discriminative moods but life has always flowed in right channels For along with these very harsh words we find other passages inculcating the duty of guidance and protection and that of leniency in judging the conduct of the uninstructed When the Aryan householder is exhorted to feed all including the *śvapaca* (outcaste) before he feeds himself one has an idea that these ancient lawgivers were not without a sense of how much social stability depended on social justice

GENERAL REFLECTIONS

It is now possible to gather up certain general ideas that run through the scheme Equality is spiritual inequality is the present fact Equality is only potential Social organization cannot be founded on what will one day be in theory but must be founded on what is here and now There must be differentiation of functions however equal in the eye of law all may be There is no real or presumable inequality between those who perform indispensable functions Each should be fixed up according to his quality and made to specialize No other arrangement for replacement in each function is so easy and self fulfilling as birth settling a person's place in the social organism Rare are the cases where another rule may be called for ' but general unsettlement of the norm for accommodating a rare case is unwise and full of disadvantage in the long run A general rule just in the main deserves to be recognized and enforced

To woman is assigned the care of the home Family being her creation her association with man in every sphere is stressed Her unassociated individuality is ignored and she is advised to turn her back on it even to the total suppression of what may be her individual spiritual need Within the home her influence has been much greater than alien observers imagine When circumstances have drawn her outside the home to high duties she has shown capacity, courage and strength Classes are formed according to capacity and transmission of capacity and quality is presumed in the generality of cases So function on the basis of birth is established as a means of preventing unhealthy competition Living and a due share of family life are secured in this way much more satisfactorily than by leaving the matter to unrestricted competition On some important matters opinion looked like taking one line but it oscillated and finally passed into another line The first line was in deference to theory the second was accepted as the demand of experience The theory covered exceptions

For example Candragupta and śivāji were not Kṣatriyas Candragupta and Aśoka were held in high esteem as rulers and great efforts were made to find a Kṣatriya genealogy for śivāji

and allowed special treatment to exceptional cases. The habit of ignoring the exceptions and so avoiding the dangers of unsettlement and confusion arising from special provisions became one of the cardinal principles of later thought. The abolition of initiation and *brahmacarya* for women falls in this changed line of thought. The few cases of Aryan progeny on non Aryan women being brought up as Aryan and the subsequent abandonment of it also fall in this category. Here again falls the abandonment of the attempt at incorporating the once-born in an Aryan household and raising him by intimate social association. It perhaps deserved to be abandoned. All attempts at uplift in unequal proximate association are bound to fail since they do not take account of the psychological difficulties. There is much of goodwill but little of sound knowledge in such attempts. The superior and the inferior alike by their ever present and unforgettable consciousness of differences in social life tend to be demoralized and to fall from virtue. Examples of this truth are all around us. Therefore much association with the non Aryan is deprecated. He has no longer the same old freedom in the Aryan household. Marriage outside one's caste with the demoralizing inequality of position for the wife is abolished or discounted. A good deal of the injustice of unequal competition is removed by making each class keep within its own fold in marriage.

It is not out of place however to add one or two reflections which are intended as an exposition and not as a criticism. No plan has a chance of success unless it has the general consensus of informed opinion and general goodwill behind it. When the consensus and goodwill fail the conditions for its successful working disappear. It is a question whether the system of *varnas* (castes) has worked within the limits set or has gone beyond the allotted sphere producing what has been called confusion of functions. Mathematical precision is not attainable in estimating the consequences of planning. Life breaks through and disturbs all calculations. A step may not produce the intended consequences or it may produce along with the desired consequences others not foreseen or desired. When unforeseen consequences arise corrections may be needed and these corrections may be as inexact as the original and may also produce other unforeseen consequences. Planning is a continuous process and not, at any time a finished and completed programme which may go on in the expected manner along expected lines without further interference. Facts have not one but two ends or poles. According to the prevailing mood and circumstances we stress the one or the other of them. We do not take account of both. Periodically the weight of collective judgement shifts from one to the other. We do not all think alike. Some are at one pole and some at the other. The same mood does not overtake all of us at the same time. Life

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

flows along lines determined as the resultant of complicated forces set free by differing and contending humanity

These are not by any means intended as a criticism of the conservative Indian view. Those who accept the Indian social philosophy adduce these very reasons to support their view that forces are incalculable and must be allowed to operate naturally without society being forced into a line chosen by a few men however eminent they may be and that individual one sidedness can be corrected only by the sanity of collective judgements allowed to be expressed not by votes but by the preferences expressed in actual life

VARNA AND CASTE

It has been said that caste is a unique and a puzzling institution of Hindu India not to be found anywhere else in the world. The uniqueness of caste is undeniable but it is rooted in intelligible psychology and was almost inevitable in the circumstances in which it arose. It started in ideas which are world wide and have their counterparts in the modern world. There has been much speculation as to its origin. Sir P. S. Sivasvami Iyer in his *Kamala Lectures on Hindu Ethics* says that the system of castes was not the invention of the Brāhmana. No one who knows the real nature of the caste system as it is and as it has been could commit the mistake of supposing that it was brought into being by a single individual or group of individuals. There are in existence today some hundreds of groups that go by different caste names and show all the qualities of separate castes. When did these groups come into existence? Did the Brāhmana ordain these divisions? The *sūdras* show divisions into hundreds of castes. The untouchables show divisions—grades of untouchability and pollution. What possible advantage could the Brāhmana derive in dividing the *sūdras* and the untouchable classes below them? The truth is that divisions have always existed and they are not the creation of any single individual at any point of time. The Brahmana has not sought to disrupt human society but has attempted to bring order into the existing chaos by extending his own fourfold functional division to the grouping of the divided population. The process by which his own conception of a fourfold division came to be brought into Hindu India may now be examined.

There are two clues that may be usefully followed—one is the history of the fourfold division and the other the division of the Aryans into *gotras* or clans. The fourfold division is found among the Parsis also. The Parsi names for these groups are Atharvas, Rathaesthas, Vastryafshuyans and Huiti. The Atharvas were fire priests and their name is connected with the Indian *atharvan*. The priest that feeds the fire in an Indian sacrifice, *agnīdhra*, has his counterpart in the *atarevaksha*—he who has an eye on the

sacrificial fire all the time. The Parsi language has the word *atash* meaning fire which is not found in Sanskrit except in *atharvan* and *atharvāṅgiras* both representing in India names of fire priests. And in Persian history there is evidence that the Atharvas grew not only into a separate class but also became a caste not mixing with any other group. The warrior class is represented by a word which means the highest of the four arms in the ancient military science namely a car warrior.

The Brāhmana and the Ksatriya at any rate were functional names. The abstract terms Brahman and Ksatra indicate their functional character. The Vis was the residual name for the Aryan population after separating those that fell within the definition of Brahman and Ksatra. These three names exhaust the Aryan group. The fourth name is the name of those outside the original Aryan population. We meet the statement in Sanskrit books that the Aryans were men of three *varnas*.

This division of the Aryans into three functional groups was therefore a growing institution in Indo Iranian times. We do not know when exactly the Persian Atharvas developed caste exclusiveness. The *gotra* division in India is anterior to the collection of the *Rg Veda* as a separate book. Sacrifices had by that time been reduced to a common system but there was one group of hymns known as *Āpri sūktas* that varied with the *gotra* of the performer. These again seem to go back to the Indo Iranian times as the Parsis have their *Afrigan mantras* corresponding to *Āpriganas*. The formation of class for ceremonial purposes is again pre Rg Vedic and Indo Iranian.

The class formations were not by any means rigid at first. It is possible to suppose that even when the Parsi Atharvas were forming into an exclusive caste, those who were subsequently grouped under the name of Indian Aryans were only having their divisions in an extremely fluid condition. When the Iranians had settled down as agriculturists the Indians were still nomadic. The Iranians complain of the depredations of these nomads. The Indians in their turn speak of the seasons first obeying and serving the *asuras* and the *devas* securing control over the seasons only subsequently by appropriate sacrificial ceremonies. During this period when the Aryans were still moving and had not formed themselves into definite settlements they must have been performing all the functions of an invading population without any differentiation or exact division of functions. They performed their religious functions as heads of their households and leaders of their communities. They must have fought when necessary and performed the warrior's functions and they must have accumulated property which then and for a long time consisted of cattle (*pasu*). Even when these functions came to be performed by different hands and the differentiation came into

special notice the people did not thereby become divided. Sons followed the profession of their fathers but marriages took place between the still undivided Aryans. It was not the mother that settled the place of the child but the father and there was not yet any question of *anuloma* (wife inferior in caste) and *pratiloma* (husband inferior in caste) differentiation as to marriages. The system was simple and intelligible. The people were one and no restriction as to alliances by marriage had yet arisen or could arise. The sons followed the profession of the fathers as a matter of convenience and were not prohibited from changing it.³

In this fluid social condition the group settles down in the midst of the indigenous Indian population. The freedom of intercourse among the Aryans is at first exercised even in the midst of this new population different in race and quality. The Aryan mixes with the indigenous group and tries to bring up the children of mixed marriages as if they were Aryans. In a few cases such experiments apparently succeed but in the large majority of cases they do not. That some early cases of this type were actually accepted as part of the Aryan sacerdotal group is supported by the *Mahābhārata*. The Aryans discourage the experiment of bringing up the issue of mixed marriages as if they were pure Aryans. But the union is allowed to continue. The issue takes a lower place in the family but they may wield considerable influence. Vidura's place in the family of the Kauravas in the *Mahābhārata* or that of a Nair son in a Sāmanta household of today in the West Coast will indicate the position of the sons of these mixed marriages. Sir P. S. Sivaswami Iyer notices that this recognition of the mixed marriages—no doubt with decreasing influence and status—went on till the time of Bāna but had ceased by A.D. 1100. But long before this stage was reached the mother's class had come to be taken into consideration in fixing the position of the issue. Slowly the position of the father as the determining factor fell into the background and the mother's status became the sole determining factor. It is the presence and influence of the racial factor in the case of the fourth caste that affected the relations among the first three also and the free intermarriage of the first three came to be replaced by the rule of inferior and superior *anuloma* and *pratiloma*.

The ancient discussion about the dominance of the seed or the field came to be definitely settled in favour of the field when we come to Manu with his clearly enunciated *varna* division. Incidentally one may express a doubt as to the legitimacy of the comparison between the father's function fixing the sons' function in older times and the mother's caste fixing

Manu's Kṣatriya women married Brāhmanas. The Brahmana Śukra's daughter married Yayāti a Kṣatriya and the Smṛti of Uśanas supports the validity of that marriage.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

the sons caste in later times. The conception of class was functional in the first period but it became a caste in the second.

GOTRA AND PRAVARA

Gotra is clan with a specific name. Each *gotra* has what is called a *pravara*—names of *rsis* or seers who are stated to be their ancestors. A person who pays his respect to an elder announces himself in these terms: I invoke your blessing. I am the descendant of Angiras, Brhaspati and Bharadvāja of the *gotra* of Bharadvāja, follower of the *Āpastamba Sūtra* of the name of N N venerable Sir! The use of *gotra* and *pravara* in a sacrifice is twofold. It fixes the *Āprī* hymn. The other use is in the invocation of the gods. The gods do not know any except their own devoted hymn makers of the *Rg Veda*. They do not respond to the invocation of any who are not the descendants of those devotees. So every sacrificer announces himself as the descendant of A, B and C (authors of hymns). Another priest mentions the same names in the reverse order as in the case of C, B and A. The gods are invoked to attend the sacrifice as they did in the sacrifice of his ancestors. This necessity to specify the ancestry of the sacrificer in sacrifices was an established idea from before the time of the *Rg Veda*.

Seven are the primal *rsis*. Four of them are ancestors of human beings. But eighteen separate groups arose out of these four. If the *pravara rsis* were common, marriage was not permissible between the families. But Bhrgu and Angiras, two out of the four, do not exclude such marriages in all cases. As our object here is not the study of these *gotras* and *pravaras*, it is not necessary to recount all the *pravaras* or the relations among them. It is enough to say that ten out of the eighteen families are of Ksatriya origin. Bhrgu took into his family four Ksatriyas who were also makers of hymns—Mitrayu, Śunaka, Vena, Vīṭahavya. The first name in all the families is Bhrgu in the *pravara* list. But Bhrgu's own descendants and the descendants of these four Ksatriyas constitute five different groups and they intermarry. Angiras had similarly affiliated six Ksatriyas—Hārīta, Kanva, Mudgala, Rathītara, Sankṛti, Viśnuvṛddha, and Angiras's own family and these six families, all of which invoke Angiras as their first *pravara rsi*, intermarry. Viśvamitra became a *gotra* originator without getting affiliated to anybody else and he is generally cited as the one who, having been a Ksatriya, became a Brāhmana in assertion of his own independent right, his claim to Brāhmanahood being a matter of contest for a long time until finally, according to the current tradition, Vasīṣṭha agreed to accept his status as Brāhmana. The Ksatriyas who have not thus passed into Brāhmana groups have either Manu alone or Manu, Ila

and Purūravas as the *pravara*. And Bhalandana Vatsapri and Mankila are considered the progenitors of the Brāhmanas who were Vaisyas in origin.

The above narrative leads to the following conclusion. There was a time when it was possible to pass from one group to another. The groups were not yet castes but only represented functions. While the groups closed their gates against new entrants there was struggle against such closure and for a time entry was allowed unwillingly. The circumstances in which entry was allowed by affiliation are the subject of stories which sound natural. The Ksatriyas fight and chase one another. They enter hermitages for protection against attack much as sanctuary in churches was resorted to for escape from punishment and settled down as part of the priestly groups that gave them shelter. Well known Ksatriya names occur among the Brāhmana *pravaras*. Vena Prthu Divodāsa Prsadasva Ajamīdha Kanva Purukutsa and Trasadasyu. There has thus been a period when the class to which one belongs is coming to be recognized and yet his moving into another class is permitted but very naturally each gets slowly fixed up in separate groups.

When the *Mahābhārata* states that there was a time when there was no caste and all were Brāhmanas (being born of Brahṁā) it refers to an early time when the Aryan group considered itself one and undivided either as castes or classes. Then the fighting class emerged in the *tretā* and lastly came the Vaisya or the trading group. Some speculation there is in the account but it does correspond it would seem to a real stage in the evolution of castes.

MIXED CASTES

Not until the Aryan settled in the country of the non Aryan did the threefold division of the Aryan himself assume its final form. First came the recognition of the Śūdras as non Aryans. Next came the division of the Aryans into three groups. The idea of division into classes as high and low according to function the contact between the high and the low and a consciousness of degradation by such contact between the groups must have partly contributed as causal factors in laying down successive rules that a Brāhmana produced Brāhmana issue only on a Brāhmana woman. When this result was reached new names were being given to the issue of mixed marriages. Marriages in *anuloma* forms produced intermediate issue—above the mother's caste and below the father's. Mixed marriages between Aryans produced issue of the regenerate caste but the issue of a Śūdra woman by an Aryan of the three castes produced a child which had *samskāras* only as a Śūdra. If the marriage was a mixed one in the *pratiloma* form the issue was considered degraded. Still, if the

parents were Aryan they were not wholly excluded Their *samshāras* were like those of Śūdras but their touch did not pollute The Śūdras progeny on the women of the higher castes and more particularly on Brāhmana women were execrated the last being described as Candālas or untouchables The most elaborate calculation on what may be called a eugenic or dysgenic scale will be found in chapter ten of the *Manu Samhita* Many other Smṛtis have the same scale not always with the same names Uśanas has many names for mixed castes and the issue of mixed castes married to mixed castes and his views on *pratiloma* marriage is more liberal than those of Manu It is unnecessary to go into details

Some of the names of mixed progeny are connected with the performance of essential functions in social economy some are the names of well known tribes These are explained as resting on the basis of a mixture of castes known and unknown These names are a fanciful attempt at explaining the origin of the many groups that actually existed They are not less fanciful than the description of some of the tribes viz Pundrakas Colas Drāvidas Kāmbojas Pāradas Pallavas Cīnas Kīrātas Daradas Śakas and Yavanas as degraded Kṣatriya tribes Perhaps this latter statement may have much more justification in that it indicates that these are Kṣatriyas in function that is to say by instinct character and profession but that they were degraded because they did not conform to the Smṛti requirements of a perfect Aryan life The fixing of the names of mixed castes has not even that degree of justification They only embody the fancy or the speculative estimate of the writers that the tribe or group by its quality and function may be a cross of the castes represented as the origin of the tribe

The rules about raising the status of the issue of mixed castes by successive hypergamous unions are to be found both in Manu and Yājñavalkya No case is recorded not even a mythical one in the Purānas But its possibility on the Indian conception of castes is conceded by what must be accepted as high authority Uśanas goes so far as to put in different groups those born of marriage in irregular order and also of illicit unions How are the places in society to be determined except by supposing that the parents furnished the information or some record was available to furnish the basis for classification? If successive marriages should raise the child to a higher status in five six or seven generations the caste of the parent has to be remembered or recorded and the result accordingly decided and maintained It requires also to be stated that the rule has been practically a dead letter embodying nothing but a theory almost impossible of enforcement in practice

Only one more curious rule has to be noticed in this connection with

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

its implications In the ancient sacrifices the sacrificer was required to name ten ancestresses As often as he reached the name of a non Brāhmana ancestress it is to be omitted and the next Brāhmana ancestress is to be named This rule reminds one of the times when the caste distinction was hardening but the marriage of a Brāhmana with a Ksatriya or a Vaisya woman was still considered to produce the equal or nearly equal of a Brāhmana

VEDIC STUDY

The Aryans alone had the privilege of Vedic study Aryan women at one time had Vedic discipline but came to lose it There is a belief in the South that there are now no Ksatriyas or Vaisyas The law is bound to recognize them as such however fallen they may be from the ideals set up for them in the Smrtis The Brahmana himself does not retain the old discipline except the most nominal vestige of it He has invariably the initiation and the *upākarmaṇ* Of Vedic study during the term there is a little in the villages and next to nothing in the urban areas While the Ksatriyas and the Vaisyas have wholly discarded the discipline the Brāhmanas retain its forms

In an earlier age women had their initiations they studied the Vedas under a teacher performed the daily *gāyatrī japa* and fire worship (*samid-ādihāna*) (both held in great reverence) and had the option to marry or settle as *brahmanvādīnis* For reasons which can only be guessed early marriage was thought desirable for women The Smrtis without exception recommended for them marriage before puberty As popular sentiment deepened in favour of early marriage the condemnation took more violent forms The father was blamed with increasing penalties in another world for his neglect Though Manu said that the girl might wait for three years and marry herself after puberty and neither she nor he whom she married incurred any guilt or sin the later Smrtis condemned both as having fallen out of the Aryan fold

Naturally with marriage before puberty Vedic study could not go on Women's attention was turned to the cleansing of the household Though their native intelligence could not be suppressed and they wielded considerable influence in domestic and other affairs the Smrtis contracted the habit of linking them to the Śudras because both were excluded from Vedic study Marriage is the one sacrament with *mantras* for women which takes the place of *mauñjī bandhana* (i.e. a student's tying of the girdle of *muñja* grass) and these *mantras* contain passages which only the wife can address to her husband in privacy They now appear to be mechanically recited by the husband According to one view, a wife may

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

recite these *mantras* by reason of *mantra linga* (what the sacred formula signifies) although the Vedas are not open to her in this age. Inconvenient *mantras* have been dropped elsewhere but by some oversight this tell tale *mantra* remains in marriage.

ĀSRAMAS

Varna (caste) is fixed at birth. *Āśrama* (order of life) is a connected institution and no one can be compelled to move into a new *āśrama* at any stage of life. Though *upanayana* (the holy thread ceremony) appears compulsory from modern practice among Brāhmanas that was not however the case in early days. The penances and disciplines laid down for those who were not initiated in time prescribed and for those whose ancestors were not initiated for one, two or three generations indicate that initiation was neglected in some families.

STUDENT LIFE

Brahmacarya came to mean two things—the study of the Vedas (*Brahma*) and chastity which was its necessary concomitant. The object of the *āśrama* was to build up the student in all the spheres of life: the physical, the mental and the spiritual. That was the foundation of all the *āśramas*. He studied the Vedas, performed *gāyatrī japa* (muttering of the *gāyatrī*) with control of breath in the two *sandhyas* (junctions of day and night) as fixed by the Vedas and in mid day also as the Smṛtis ordained; had to worship fire twice a day and then beg for alms from householders; eat twice a day with no intermediate meal; lie on the bare ground; limit his contact with young women and perform the necessary salutations to women, avoiding the touch of their feet when he came to age. He was to avoid luxuries like honey, meat, etc. His bath was to be in cold water without scrubbing or cleaning. The object of these and other similar prescriptions seems to be that everything which might excite sexual feeling and lead to lapses from chastity was to be avoided by him.

The student's growing constitution was remembered when he was allowed to eat as much as he liked while the other three *āśramas* had limits fixed for them—thirty-two morsels, sixteen and eight—decreasing the quantity of food with each change of *āśrama*. Moderation was advised by Manu in the interests of health and that was secured by the rule that the alms were to be placed before the *acārya* who decided how much the student should eat.

The teacher was *in loco parentis* and was not to inflict physical punishment on the student unless necessary when he might use only a rope or a

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

light cane Any severe punishment would be visited with chastisement by the king

The teacher neither stipulated nor charged a fee for his teaching He received a fee at the end according to the ability of the pupil During study the latter's contribution was only service He brought water fuel and *darbha* grass for his teacher's ceremonies He put his *ācārya* to sleep by massaging his legs went to bed after him but got up earlier He was taught how he should behave to his teacher to his teacher's teacher to his parents and to others elder and younger Strict discipline is indicated by the penances and purifications ordained for even involuntary happenings The student generally learnt his own Veda but sometimes there were ambitious students who learnt more than one Veda The modern titles *Dvivedin* *Trivedin* *Caturvedin* remind us of such students

The term of study was five months—generally from *śrāvanī* (July August) to *paus* (December January) Of about one hundred and fifty days thirty were holidays—the *astamīs* (eighth lunar day) the *caturdasīs* (fourteenth day) and the full moon and new moon days Even the *pratīpads* (days after the new or full moon) were sometimes omitted which meant another ten days in five months With the *naimittika* (occasional) stoppages of study about a hundred days remained Twelve years were allotted to each Veda but apt pupils perhaps acquired the Vedas sooner Four Vedas and forty eight years would not otherwise leave time to enter the life of a householder Even a householder might perhaps continue studies He certainly kept up the repetition of what he had learnt without any holiday cessation

When a Brāhmana teacher was not available even Ksatriyas and Vaisyas might teach though their normal duty was in other spheres This must have happened when the Aryans freely passed from one duty to another

HOUSEHOLDER

Now one can deal with a view that there was only one *āśrama*—that of the householder as recognized by the Vedas One *sūtrakāra* (aphorist) stated *Aikāśramyam manyanta ācāryāḥ* meaning that his teacher was of the view that there was but one *āśrama* A householder brought up children for the next generation and he was the one who was the support of all other *āśramas* He added *artha* (wealth) and *kāma* (legitimate enjoyment) two more *puruṣārthas* (ends of life) to that of the student He performed the *Vaiśvadeva* sacrifice among other observances and fed the guests to whatever caste they belonged and also his servants before he himself ate He had many other disciplines pollutions purifications

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

penances and *śraddhas* (memorial exercises) for the ancestors. The student was free from all pollutions except when he was himself the performer of exequial rites at which even before initiation he recited Vedic *mantras* by reason of his potential Vedic competence.

As the Upanisad says a competent householder prayed for many students to study under him. As the water flows down the canyon and the months run into the year so to me the *brahmacārins* should flock. O' Dhātār! * Studying teaching entertaining the hungry guests and fulfilling his many duties he might pass into the *vānaprastha* when his skin was wrinkled and his hair turned grey.

FOREST LIFE

He left his wife with his son or she accompanied the husband. He continued Vedic recitation and had his worship of the fire which he was to carry with him and he also entertained guests as the hermits entertained Rāma in the forest. Anasūyā and Lopāmudrā are there to show that great women accompanied their husbands to the forest. That Kṣatriyas went into the *vānaprastha* stage is shown by numerous kings abdicating after installing their sons on the throne and by Kanva's reply to Śakuntalā when she asked whether and when she would again visit the hermitage. A Vaiśya's becoming a *vānaprastha* is nowhere mentioned. It is doubtful whether a Kṣatriya became a *sannyasin* and a Vaiśya perhaps never aspired to be one.

RENUNCIATION

A *vānaprasthin* differed from the householder inasmuch as he had to live under greater discipline and has to keep *artha* and *kāma* under stricter control. He was not to shave and so became venerable looking with his beard. Later on he passed into the stage of *sannyāsa* leaving both home and wife and not staying in any one place for more than a day except during the *cāturmāsya* (four monsoon months). The *sannyāsin* shaved his hair and beard put on brown red garment as an emblem of the order subsisted on alms and slept on the ground as did the *vānaprasthin*. He ceased to have any fire worship. Having determined the emptiness of life with its joys and sorrows he meditated on the Reality attained *ātma jñāna* (Self knowledge) and preserved his equanimity unaffected. He returned blessings for curses and strove to remain in what is described as *jīvan mukti* (liberation in life). On death he became one with God and freed from the round of births and deaths.

THE SMRTIS THEIR OUTLOOK AND IDEALS

If one studies the requirements which each *āśrama* imposes on the *āśramin* it becomes quite evident that there was great insistence on higher morality. The West has an incorrigible view that morality is inconsistent with pantheism. Chastity, self control, purity and other virtues receive recognition in the Smrtis and the golden rule is there from at least the time of the first Upanisad.

RAJA DHARMA

Two chapters of *Manu Samhitā* deal with what we should now describe as foreign relations and the home department. The choice of qualified ambassadors and domestic advisers, consultations with them, appointment of the commander in chief, the proper time to attack the enemy and to put oneself under a powerful sovereign and alliances in general are all discussed there in the seventh chapter. Among domestic matters, the method of receiving complaints, the panel of judges to decide civil and criminal cases and the duty of witnesses to help in the administration of justice by giving truthful evidence are set out in the eighth chapter. The basic ideas of the system are given in *Manu* VIII 15. Buhler translates *dharma* in the stanza as justice not inappropriately, but Manu applies this verse having wider meaning to a limited context. The following rendering of it equating *dharma* with righteousness reveals it.

Righteousness violated destroys
Righteousness observed in action protects
Righteousness should not be violated
Lest violated righteousness destroy us

That is exactly the message of *Bhārata sāvitrī*¹⁰ the substance of which may be stated thus. From *dharma* comes every good. Even for the sake of saving your life, one should not depart from *dharma*. The *varna dharma* was intended to secure the harmony and smooth course of social life. Duty, not rights, constituted the foundation of life. While this world was not neglected, bread was not all. Successive *āśramas* were intended to improve the spiritual side of the life of people in all grades and they were designed to lead all to the highest ideal they entertained as the supreme end of man. Those who worked under a sense of duty to man and God without desiring the fruits of action were not bound.

While the highest goal was taken to be open to all without distinction of caste, creed or sex, each man's duty was considered as God given from birth. The *varnāśrama* system provided a place for every one and the con-

ception of *svadharma* avoided conflict at the same time no function was left unprovided for. There were many professions in which the son had his training and attained a proficiency which new entrants could not. They believed that generations working in any art could attain an otherwise unattainable perfection in it.

There may be objections to such regimentation as it controls life and reduces individual freedom of choice. But the scheme does allow choice within limits. Freedom of choice must face competition, struggle, discord, and all other modern ills which in their turn can be relieved only by a system no less authoritarian. But regimentation of this new type is often found to exalt the economic concerns as the *summum bonum* of life. The economic side of life is important, however, it is not the only important thing in life.

It may not be inappropriate to end this chapter with an ancient prayer adapted for modern purposes. May we have divine protection, may we live together with all our differences, may we not hate each other, may what we acquire in the way of knowledge be strongly efficient in its results.

THE MANU SAMHITĀ

PERSONALITY PRE EMINENCE AND ANTIQUITY

IF Pāṇini has determined the nature of Sanskrit for all time Manu has determined Hindu conduct for all time¹ Manu became the lawgiver *par excellence* and his name a byword for what was righteous and proper The Vedas say that whatever Manu said is wholesome like medicine *yad vai kṛñcana Manur avadad tad bhesajam*² Not only was his code pre eminent among the Dharma śāstra texts but it embraced in its sway the whole of India and the neighbouring countries of South East Asia³

The antiquity of Manu and the heritage associated with his name are both attested by the *Rg Veda* where we already find the main ideas that Indian tradition has always associated with him viz his being the progenitor (Pitar or Prajāpati)⁴ of the human race and his having laid the path that his progeny the human race should follow for securing its good He is said to have formulated the rites and brought welfare to mankind and in one hymn⁵ the poet explicitly prays that people may not be led far astray from that path of the ancestors that Manu laid for them *mānah pathah pītryāt mānavād adhi dūram naista parāvatah* a prayer that has found its echo in Kālidāsa's *Raghuvamśa*⁶

HISTORY OF THE TEXT RELATION TO OTHER TEXTS

That Manu's teachings handed down in a mass of floating verses of rules and observations were governing the life and conduct of people and that they were invoked as authority is known from early literature The *Nirukta* of Yāska (c 700 B C) quotes a verse mentioning Manu Svāyambhuva on the right of both sons and daughters to inheritance⁷ The earliest Dharma Sūtras—*Gautama Vasiṣṭha* and *Āpastamba*—quote Manu In the *Mahābhārata* which has a large number of citations from Manu we are told⁸ that the Supreme Being gave a treatise on *dharma* in a lakh of verses that Manu Svāyambhuva produced his work on the basis of that treatise and that Uśanas and Brhaspati composed texts based on the work of Manu

It is interesting to note that in both the cases the technique employed was *samskara*
Taitt Saṁh II 2 10 2 and elsewhere also
 See Kewal Motwani *Manu Dharma Sastra* (Ganesh & Co Madras 1958) pp 312 ff
R V I 80 16 114 2 II 33 13
R V VIII 30 3
 III 3
 I 17
 XII 336 38 46

Svāyambhuva⁹ The *Narada Smṛti*¹⁰ states in its prose introduction that Manu's large treatise on *dharma* was abridged by Nārada whose work was in turn abridged by Mārkaṇḍeya and from this abridgement Sumati Bhārgava produced a further condensed version in 4 000 verses This tradition is supported by the version of Nārada's text with Bhavasvāmīn's commentary¹¹ which is actually called in the manuscripts *Nārādīya Manu Samhitā*¹² In the current *Manu Smṛti* we find at the beginning Manu imparting his teaching to Bhṛgu which agrees with the statement in the *Narada Smṛti* That our present Manu text could be taken as the version of Bhṛgu is further supported by the *Nārādīya Manu Samhitā* which thrice quotes from the *Bhārgava Samhitā* and these quotations are found in our present Manu text¹³ According to another form in which the tradition is repeated in the *Bhaviṣya Purāṇa* the original text of Svāyambhuva Manu was redacted in four forms by Bhṛgu Nārada Brhaspati and Angiras The relation between Manu and Brhaspati mentioned here is clearly borne out by the fact that the *Brhaspati Smṛti* forms to adopt Jolly's characterization a *vārttika* (gloss) so to speak on Manu's text¹⁴

Max Muller Weber and Buhler the last writer especially¹⁵ assumed that the Vedic schools had each its own Dharma Sūtras along with its Śrauta Sūtras and Grhya Sūtras and that accordingly the present metrical *Manu Smṛti* goes to an earlier *Mānava Dharma śāstra* in *sūtras* which belonged to the Mānava school of the Maitāyanīyas of the *Kṛṣṇa Yajur Veda* But the evidence adduced appears to be illusory¹⁶ there never was a Mānava text in *sūtras* forming the basis of the later verse treatise

An analysis of the verses of Manu quoted in the *Ādi Āraṇyaka Śānti* and *Anusāsana parvans* of the *Mahābhārata* shows as Hopkins¹⁷ and Buhler have pointed out that the great epic knew a Manu text closely connected with the current one but not identical with it and that as the basis of both the epic and the present *Manu Smṛti* there existed a floating mass of verses embodying the proverbial wisdom of philosophical and legal schools ascribed generally to Manu These verses dealt with *dharma* as well as *rāja dharma*

Vatsyayana in his *Kama Sūtras* I 1 6 records a similar tradition that out of Prajapati's large treatise on *dharma artha* and *kama* Manu Svayambhuva separated *dharma* and dealt with it in a special treatise

See Jolly *Institutes of Narada* Calcutta 1885

Published in the Trivandrum Sanskrit Series XCVII 1929

See T. R. Chintamani *C. K. Raja Presentation Volume* (Adyar Library 1946) pp 154 96 and also Jolly *Institutes of Narada* Calcutta 1885

Cf *Nārādīya Manu Samhitā* pp 134 147 and 169

See *Brhaspati Smṛti (Reconstructed)* K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar GOS LXXXV and its Introduction

SBE Vol XXV Translation of *Manu Smṛti* with Introduction

⁹ See Kane *History of Dharma śāstra* Vol I

The Great Epic

THE MANU SAMHITĀ

and it seems therefore unnecessary to assume with K P Jayaswal¹ that the references to Mānava views in *Kautilya* not traceable to our present text of Manu show the existence of an early *Mānava Rājanīti śāstra*. From this floating mass of Manu verses the present *Manu Smṛti* the redaction of Bhṛgu might have taken shape between the second century B C and the second century A D¹⁹. While literary historical and epigraphical evidences the evidence of the Buddhistic *Vajrasūcī* and the mention of Yonas Kambhojas etc in the present text of Manu would all support this date it is not possible to be so categorical as Jayaswal who would identify the *Manu Smṛti* with the work of a historical Manava and Sumati of the Brāhmanic revival under the Śungas.

The relation of the text of the *Manu Samhitā* to the other Smṛtis is now considered more specifically. Manu is earlier than Yājñavalkya whose work shows a more developed treatment of legal procedure. *Nārada* and *Brhaspati* are later being based on Manu. The Sūtras of Gautama, Vasistha and Āpastamba quote Manu. There is agreement between Manu on the one hand and Gautama, Baudhāyana and Āpastamba on the other and there are common passages in Manu, Vasistha and Viṣṇu. According to Brhaspati²⁰ Manu takes the foremost place because his work is based on the teaching of the Vedas and any Smṛti text which is opposed to Manu is not to be valued.

The importance of Manu is also attested by the large scale citations and frequent invocation of Manu and his authority in the epics and by the fact that his text has had the largest number of commentaries²¹ composed by writers in different parts of India.²²

THE TEXT OF THE SAMHITĀ

The *Manu Samhitā* or *Manu Smṛti* as it exists now is in twelve chapters and 2 694 *anustubh* couplets. A study of its manuscripts has not shown any difference in the text. The different redactions of the *Mānava Dharma śāstra* have already been noticed. In regard to the current text itself orien

¹ *Manu and Yājñavalkya* (Tagore Law Lectures) Calcutta 1930.

The present text of Manu mentions the following branches of Sanskrit literature the four Vedas the Āraṇyaka the Upaniṣad or Vedānta the Vedāṅgas the Dharma śāstras particularly the *dharma* writers Atri Bhṛgu Śaunaka Vasistha and Vaikhāṇasa Ākhyanas Itihāṣas and Purāṇas Khilas heretical Smṛtis Daṇḍanīti Ānvikṣiki Ātma vidya Vartta and Dhanvantari (III 85).

GOS LXXXV pp 228 233

Vedarthopaniṣadbaddhatvat pradhanyam tu Manoh smṛtam

Manvārtha viparita tu ya smṛtiḥ sā na śasyate

For an edition of the whole text with some of these see *Mānava Dharma śāstra* with *Medhātithi* Sarvajña Narayana Kulluka Raghavananda Nandana and Ramacandra by V N Mandlik Bombay 1886.

In modern times also when the traditional Hindu sociology is attacked it is Manu whom the social reformers name and blame.

talists like Buhler were of the opinion that it has several contradictory passages which could be explained only on the theory of several recasts and interpolations and accretions. But as Kane has observed the facts of the case do not require the assumption of many recasts and additions of topics like cosmogony philosophy etc. A closer examination of the context and the understanding of the passage concerned on the basis of accepted rules of interpretation would remove the need to resort in all cases to the theory of interpolations. The apparently divergent statements²³ on taking a Śūdra wife resorting to *niyoga* (levirate) and eating flesh found in the work are not really contradictory for they are based on the doctrine of *nivṛttis tu mahāphalā* (greater benefit from abstention) which Manu himself enunciates and which is basic to the approach and philosophy of Manu and of Hinduism as moulded by Manu and other teachers²⁴.

A REAL PICTURE

The graphic picture one gets from a very large number of inscriptions and grants to Brāhmana scholars and families and from descriptions of the life in *āśramas* (hermitages) courts and houses found in the poems plays and prose works of Kālidāsa Śūdraka Bāna Dandin and others will bear out the reality of not only the Brāhmana and the Ksatriya but also of the administration of law by the king as conceived in the *dharma* texts. Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* confirms a great part of the Smṛti texts. There are also some works in the form of encyclopaedias for example the *Aṅgīrāś tārtha cintāmaṇi* of King Someśvara of Kalyāṇ in which we see how kings set apart a time to look after legal representations with the help of learned advisers. The very existence of a mass of Smṛti digests and commentaries many of which were compiled by State officials ministers or learned men who were *dharmādhikārins* at Courts²⁵—not a few ascribed to the kings themselves—is proof of the fact that the *dharma* institutions were in force in the country down the centuries. I have drawn attention to an interesting document on an enquiry which a ruler conducted through a learned scholar of the times on the status and genuineness of the claim of certain communities calling themselves Vaiśyas²⁶. Even the detailed distinctions and gradations of intermediary classes of the society in addition to the four set forth in the *Dharma śāstras* can be verified by conditions obtaining at least till recently in Kerala. A close student of Indian literature and history Julius Jolly says that there is a strong presumption in favour of the practical nature of these works of *dharma* and that the legal rules contained in

²³ See Kane *History of Dharma śāstra* Vol I pp 148-9

²⁴ See *Manu* V 56 and *Bhā* XI 5-11

²⁵ e.g. Lakṣmidhara's *Kṛtyakalpataru* Hemādri's *Caturvarga cintāmaṇi* etc

²⁶ *The Vaiśya varṇa sudhārnava* of Kolācala Mallinātha *NIA* II 442 ff

them must have corresponded to the laws actually enforced in the native courts of justice ²⁷ The ideal elements that may exist in the scheme of Manu or the Dharma s  stras do not make these texts more unreal than the principles laid down in modern constitutions or underlying modern institutions like democracy or even the laws of a State today—some of which may be honoured more in their breach than observance—make these constitutions institutions or laws unreal As it is said because there is *purusa dosa* (incapacity or evil propensities in some men) the system itself cannot be discredited There is a dictum of the Dharma s  stra that while Manu is authority for the *krtayuga* (the Golden Age in the past when people really rose to Manu's standards) *Par  sara* holds good for the *kaliyuga* the current Age allowing for the deterioration of standards of *dharma* owing to passage of time and historical developments the Smrti framework as shown above was something which was obtained in actual life and not a mere theoretical fabrication

CONTENTS OF THE WORK

It would be useful first to have an idea of the range of subjects dealt with by Manu The opening chapter sets forth the origin of the world creation of beings the origin of the text as Manu taught it through Bhrgu the epochs of time (*yugas*) and the difference in *dharma*s according to them the four classes of men and the differences in their respective *dharma*s It gives also a list of the topics to be subsequently dealt with in the work The second chapter with which the main subject matter begins speaks of the four sources and grounds or proofs of *dharma* the person for whom this *dharma* holds good and the area where it prevails After dealing with these general questions the text proceeds to describe the *dharma*s as applicable to each of the four classes Br  hmana Ksatriya Vaisya and S  dra Of these the first three the twice born (*dvijas*) are considered first and the sacraments (*samsk  ras*) are described for them in relation to the four stages of life (*  sramas*) These are dealt with primarily with reference to the Br  hmana This chapter takes us through the *Samsk  ras* beginning with birth and going up to study in the establishment of the teacher that is up to the end of the first stage called *brahmacarya* (studentship) In Chapter III the householder's life which is the second stage is taken up marriage and its eight different forms married life daily and periodical observances of a householder the vital character and the important social role of the householder his five daily *yaj  nas* or sacrifices (viz study and teaching of scripture propitiation of the manes adoration of the gods by oblations in the fire

²⁷ *Outlines of a History of the Hindu Law* (Tagore Law Lectures) Calcutta 1885 pp 28 9 32

reception of guests and gratification of other living beings) and the periodic *śrāddhas* are described. Chapter IV continues the description of the householder's life with many details some relating to *dharma*s already mentioned and some enjoining further *dharma*s others relating to the ways of earning one's livelihood and yet others relating to a number of personal habits and details of daily routine and principles of character and conduct. Chapter V opens with the subject of proper food two other topics dealt with here are death together with obsequies and pollution and purificatory ceremonies. The last section of this chapter speaks of women (wives and widows) and their special *dharma*s. Chapter VI is devoted to a description of the two further stages of man the *vanaprastha* and *sannyāsa* denoting life of retirement in forests and complete renunciation respectively both having spiritual realization as their purpose. The pursuit of the spiritual aim and resignation by one who continues to be in the household life is also dealt with at the end of the chapter. Chapters VII and VIII together form a section about rulers and their duties (*raja dharma*) which include not only their qualities and equipment but also the art of statecraft in peace and war. Ministers and counsel diplomacy messengers army fort wars conquest treatment of the conquered administration of villages communities merchants collection of revenue punishment and clearance of anti-social elements—these are spoken of in Chapter VII. The next chapter deals with administration of justice and describes legal procedure in respect of the eighteen titles of civil and criminal disputes judges evidence offences and punishments. Chapter IX states details about women particularly from the standpoint of law their *dharma*s duties expected of and towards them and their importance regarding progeny and the family and also about property inheritance and partition which arise in the wake of the family. The latter part of the chapter speaks of other matters coming under the administration of justice like debts gambling contracts between the employer and the employed and theft. After touching upon some of the other *rāja dharma*s left over the chapter concludes with a brief description of the *dharma*s of the *Vaiśyas* and the *śūdras*. In Chapter X the people outside the pale of this system of *dharma* and those born by promiscuous mingling of the four classes and a system by which they could be fitted into the scheme are set forth. In the case of the four classes and their ordained duties confusion may occur owing to extraordinary developments of a private or public nature *dharma*s permissible under such emergencies (*apad dharma*s) are therefore dealt with. The main subject of Chapter XI is different kinds of sins major and minor and their expiations (*prāyaścittas*). The last chapter falls into two sections. The former section speaks of the theory of *Karma* the fruits and kinds of birth high and low which result from different acts

good and bad and through which the soul has to pass. The latter speaks of those *dharma*s which help the spiritual goal—the seeking of Self knowledge (*ātma jñāna*) and the attainment of the everlasting good (*nīḥsreyasa*). Incidentally the matter of doubts on questions of *dharma* and the constitution of *paṛisads* (assemblies of the learned) for deciding such questions is also dealt with in the latter section of the last chapter.

CONCEPTION OF DHARMA ITS SALIENT FEATURES

The conception of *dharma* that we see in the *Manu Samhitā* is all comprehensive and at the same time difficult to define or understand. The word *dharma* is from the root *dhr* meaning to support or to sustain. In usage it covers a wide range of meaning from the qualities and characteristics of things to the highest virtue and spiritual effort, natural characteristics and tendencies as also what men should do or ought to do. Accordingly as we shall see from some of the cases discussed below the statements in *Manu* are to be understood some as records of facts, some as concessions to such practices as have obtained wide vogue and some—and this is the most important—as what ought to be done as the most proper thing. A second characteristic of the *dharma*s described in the *Manu Samhitā* and other allied texts is that it includes besides civil, religious and spiritual matters, counsels of general prudence, safety and even personal habits like those of cleanliness, sanitation and civic consciousness, gentlemanly behaviour, courteous and polite ways of conduct and even other subjects of common sense making it a guide to conduct in things big and small. Thirdly a fundamental feature of the concept of *dharma* is that it can be enunciated or understood only as applicable differently to different classes of beings and status of life and differently to men and women. It is a network of diversified but interrelated duties. Fourthly it is a consolidating scheme within which practices which are not objectionable and are not opposed to the teachings of the Vedas are included. Even within the fold of the ordained *dharma*s of the four classes (*cāturvarṇya*) all *Smṛti* writers including *Manu* give a leading place to *ācāra* (accepted conduct) handed down from generation to generation by well disciplined members of a community.²⁸ Outside the range of the ordained *dharma*s there are immemorial customs peculiar to places, to classes and to families (*deśa jāti* and *kula*) peculiar to guilds, to communities outside the pale of *cāturvarṇya*, to the *pāśandas* (heretics) and to republican groups (*ganas*). These too are taken into account.²⁹ A king who is administering justice³⁰ as well as one consolidating his kingdom in the conquered areas is to see that the local

customs are given safeguards and maintained³¹ Fifthly just as we can speak of *dharma* only with reference to some class or station and for this reason it is always qualified by person and situation so also there is a relativity in the concept of *dharma* caused by time and age (*yuga*)³² The doctrine of *yuga dharma* which introduces an element of adaptation and adjustment has a parallel in the concept of *āpad dharma*³³ Concessions in the matter of adopting vocations not normally ordained respectively for Brāhmanas and others in emergencies point to another aspect of the realism and liberalism of the Smritis Lastly the most important feature of this *dharma* is the inclusion of the spiritual purpose within its scope the final realization of the Self is not only dealt with as the legitimate and culminating part of it but the very activities of life here are oriented to and harmonized with the spiritual end

Beginning his account of *dharma* Manu says³⁴ that there is hardly any activity of man which is not prompted by *kāma* or desire but to act solely on the urge of desire which is the outcome of *tamas*³⁵ (inertia) is not praiseworthy and so to enable man to act properly³⁶ by the control of the activity according to his desire *dharma* was promulgated In the *Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad*³⁷ it is said that *dharma* is stronger than even the Kṣatra (ruling class) there is nothing greater than *dharma* since it is possible for a weak righteous man to vanquish one who is only physically strong and this *dharma* is identical with *satya* (truth) As the antecedent of this *dharma* we had in the *Rg Veda* the concept of *rta* the Moral Order³⁸ *Dharma* was thus like the rule of law something above the ruler who was also bound by it To the extent society respected it society protected itself to the extent society made inroads into it to that extent society was also undermining itself³⁹ Even in *rāja dharma* therefore when the relative merit of the Artha śāstra and the Dharma śāstra was in question the latter prevailed over the former

This *dharma* is governed by the four ends of life or aims of human endeavour called the *purusārthas* *Dharma* figures as the first of these *purusārthas* The fourth and highest of these is *mokṣa* spiritual emancipation *mokṣa* was included under the first *purusārtha* which was classified into the *dharma* of activity (*pravṛtti dharma*) and that of retirement (*nivṛtti dharma*) and the ends were counted as three, the *trivarga* *Dharma* is the controlling factor and *artha* and *kāma* are to be subject to it While some advocate *dharma* and *artha* or *kāma* and *artha* or *artha* alone as important

VIII 41 46

³¹ Cf *Mbh* XII 35 266 314 quoted by Bhagavan Das *Science of Social Organisation Or The Laws of Manu in the Light of Ātmaśāstra* (2nd Edn Adyar 1932) I p 88

Manu X 98 118

II 25

³² *Manu* II 2

Samyag vṛtti I 5

I 4 11 14

e.g. *R V* I 90 IV 23

VIII 15 *dharma eva hato hanti dharmo rakṣati rakṣitaḥ*

THE MANU SAMHITA

others would advocate *dharma* alone as good⁴⁰ Although paramount consideration is due to *dharma* and this view should be accepted Manu sets out his own view⁴¹ that there should be a balanced pursuit of the *trivarga* In the second stage of life as the householder scope has been given to *artha* and *kāma* as regulated by *dharma* and according to Manu and the general run of Smṛti writers one should take to the path of *mokṣa* after going through the experiences of life as a householder

UNIQUENESS OF THE CONCEPTION

There is a uniqueness in the conception of *dharma* according to Manu and others As pointed out already there is a lower *dharma* in which a thing is permitted and a higher *dharma* where refraining from it is considered more meritorious and fruitful No doubt this *dharma* is the same as *satya* but Manu says that for enforcing it one should not adopt any violent or severe methods thus the same *dharma* which is *satya* is also *aहिंसा* (non violence) This uniqueness is best brought out in the verse

*Satyam brūyāt priyam brūyāt na brūyāt satyam apriyam
Priyam ca nanrtam brūyāt esa dharmah sanātanaḥ*⁴²

One should speak the truth but without giving offence although one should never compromise truth for being nice In accumulating *dharma* again one should go about it without causing trouble to any being⁴³ It is good to teach *dharma* to the world but it should be done without hurting people and by using sweet and refined words⁴⁴ Surely *artha* and *kāma* which are barren of *dharma* should be abandoned even so a *dharma* which ends up unhappily and is derided by the world⁴⁵ In fact the *Mahābhārata* which states more explicitly the idea in Manu says *Dharma* is that which is attended by welfare of the world and by non injury to beings⁴⁶

The scheme of the classes their respective *dharmas* and the obligatory character of the discharge of these their disinterested performance being itself considered a perfection to be aimed at—these have inculcated into the Indian mind a strong sense of duty acceptance of specified work and voluntary submission to discipline With this doctrine of duty went the principle of *adhikāra* or qualification The modern theory of rights irrespective of *adhikāra* is something alien to Manu's attitude towards life

Dharma is also a positive concept The enunciation of the highest possible ideal namely Self realization and Soul emancipation as the goal of *dharma* further gives a person the longest possible course of progress and ascent to strive for As the scheme of the *purusārthas* includes a

II 224
IV 238
XII 109 10 15

II 224
II 159

IV 138
IV 176

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

balanced enjoyment of *artha* and *kāma* as the ideal of the householder has been held by Manu to be the best one and the basis of the entire living world and as the final spiritual goal to be attained is also a state of everlasting bliss there is no room for despondency or pessimism in this scheme. It is one continuous striving and the Karma theory promises that no good effort made is ever lost⁴⁷. One of the most inspiring verses of Manu states: One should not allow one's spirit to be frustrated by earlier failures; one should not disregard oneself till death; one should strive for prosperity and should never consider it difficult of attainment⁴⁸. It is perhaps this aspect that enthused Nietzsche to exclaim about *Manu Smṛti* that it has an affirmation of life, a triumphing agreeable sensation in life and that to draw up a lawbook such as Manu means to permit oneself to get the upper hand, to become perfect, to be ambitious of the highest art of living.

THE SOURCES AND PROOFS OF DHARMA

At the very outset Manu defines the nature of *dharma*. He gives its sources and proofs as four: the Vedas or *śruti*, the *Smṛti* or the recollected traditions, as also the conduct⁴⁹ of those who know the Vedas, the practice of the good and the satisfaction of one's own heart or conscience⁵⁰. The qualification given in the second, namely, of those who know the Vedas, applies to the third and fourth also. Where for a particular *dharma* the first source or authority, the Vedas, is not found, the *smṛti* (recollection) and the *śīla* (conduct) of those that know the Vedas are the authority, where for the practices, such as we find in marriage, even *smṛti* source is not found, the *ācāra* of good men is the sanction, where even that is not found, one should do a thing only when one's mind and conscience are pleased at doing it, particularly when one is faced with two alternatives, one should prefer to do that which is to one's mental satisfaction. The Vedas are the ultimate and overriding authority and where the other three would go against it, they would not be deemed authoritative⁵¹.

THE CONCEPTION OF THE ŚIṢṬA

As outside of the Vedas all the three sources *smṛti*, *ācāra* and *ātma tuṣṭi* turn on the *śiṣṭa*, some attention must be devoted to the conception of a *śiṣṭa*. In the last chapter Manu defines the *śiṣṭa* as a person who has

Cf. B.G. II 40, VI 40, IV 137, ⁴⁷ *Manu* II 6.
⁴⁸ As in this, a single individual forms a sanction unto himself, the commentator Sarvaśīla Narayana says that this last sanction is inferior to the second and third, where there is the advantage of a consensus of opinion or practice and possibility of verification by a body of people. It is of course the testimony of the heart of one learned in the Vedas and attuned to doing always the proper thing that is counted as the fourth sanction of *dharma*.
Jaimini, *Mīmāṃsā Sūtra* I 3 3.

THE MANU SAMHITA

studied in the proper manner the whole Vedas together with their supplementary and supporting literature *śistas* are elsewhere defined as those who are left over at the time of the deluge and who by virtue of remembering (*smṛti*) the laws of the bygone epoch are able to reveal them again for the good of mankind ⁵² Whatever be its derivation the term *śista* signifies a person of irreproachable character who is free from desires and whose acts are not prompted by any worldly motive A body of *śistas* would be a *paṛisad* or assembly fit to decide a question of doubt in matters of *dharma* The *śistas* form the human medium maintaining and exemplifying the impersonal injunctions to which they give flesh and blood and a practical significance this presupposes also a set of conditions congenial to their existence The region where Manu's *dharma* held good that is where the *śistas* *sats* or *sādhus* were able to keep up the *dharma* according to his own statement is an expanding belt which starts with Brahmāvarta between the Sarasvatī and the Drsadvatī and embraces the whole of the land between the seas in the east and the west and is called Āryāvarta in between there is the Brahmarsī deśa comprising the Kuru ksetra Matsyas Pāñcālas and Śūrasenas and the Madhya deśa between the Himalayas and the Vindhya up to Prayāga (Allahabad) in the east In the course of the history and the movements of peoples the habitat of a *dharma* shifts and it becomes a less important factor in the recognition of the *dharma* than the society which provides it with a living substratum As Medhātithi explains ⁵³ the land by itself is not reproachful or defective it is the people who live there and their conduct that determine the Dhārmic or Adhārmic character of a place if this *dharma* is established in a new territory of Mlecchas that too becomes *yajñīya* a fit place for the observance of Vedic rites

SAMSKĀRA VARNA ĀŚRAMA

The purpose of *dharma* is to uplift man from this physical plane and make him function at higher levels To fit him for this higher role is to recondition his body and mind Reference was made at the beginning of this chapter to the analogy of grammar where the colloquial speech raw and fluctuating is pruned shaped and systematized for rendering it fit to play a universal and higher role The *samskāras* of the Dharma sāstra play the same part As Kālidāsa says The body as it is born is like the raw stone from the mines and the *samskāras* are like the grinding and polish that it gets at the hands of the gem cutter ⁵⁴ the result is as in the case of the gem that the person who has undergone *samskāras* shines with a new

⁵² *Mat P CXLV manvantaresu ye śistāḥ*
In his commentary on Manu II 23

⁵⁴ *Raghuvamśa* III 18

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

glow and lustre. Angiras in his *Smṛti* employs an analogy from the art of painting and says that as by the application of several colours a form is brought out in a picture even so by *samskāras* the real personality Brāhmanahood etc. of man is brought out⁵⁵. With the *samskaras* done one on the stage of *dharma* appears as if in a new make up and a different person. He has as the texts say taken a second birth and is now called *dvija* the twice born. To quote Manu: With the holy Vedic rites the sanctifying acts which purify the body (*śarīra samskāra*) are to be done by these oblations and other acts the impurities of the seed and the uterus are wiped off and by the rites of initiation and the austerities connected with study of the Vedas oblations and other sacrificial acts the body undergoes a spiritual transformation it becomes capable of helping to realize the Supreme Being⁵⁶.

The *samskāras* with some differences of details are common to the three classes Brāhmana Kṣatriya and Vaiśya all of whom are called for this reason *dvijas*. The fourth is called *eka jāti* meaning thereby that he has no sacramental rebirth but actually the text says⁵⁷ that the Śūdras may if they want to acquire merit follow in the footsteps of the *dvijas* and do certain rites the five daily sacrifices etc. without the *mantras*. The fact that they are done without *mantras* does not deprive them of effect for the women of the higher classes too go through these without *mantras*⁵⁸.

The *samskāras* cover the whole life of an individual. Manu does not specify the total number of the *samskāras* different *Smṛti* works specify their number differently while Gautama gives the largest number forty the principal ones are sixteen. Some of these are of greater importance and form landmarks in the life of the person. *nīseka* or *garbhadhāna* relates to proper conception and is the very basis of life. *Jātakarman* is performed at birth. Of those that follow *upanayana* or initiation is of foremost importance it is indeed the symbol of all *samskaras* and may well be the last in some cases as some persons may not elect to marry. Without *upanayana* the *dvija* becomes deprived of initiation into the adoration of the *gayatrī* and Manu says that without it he is no better than a *vrātya* (outcast)⁵⁹.

The initiation and Vedic studies cover the first of the four stages or *aśramas* called the *brahmacarya* literally cultivation of the Vedas as a

Citrakarma yathanekeṣāṁ rangair unmiḥate śanaiḥ

Brahmanyam apī tadvat syat saṁskaraṁ vidhispurvakaṁ

II 26 28

Manu X 127

Manu II 66 Many *Smṛti* writers allow *samskaras* without *mantras* for Śūdras. Vyasa allows as many as ten *samskaras* and others more. Interesting information on the *samskaras* of Śūdras may be found in works like the *Śūdra kamalakara*.

Ibid II 39

person does this in boyhood and as a bachelor and in this stage of student ship he eschews strictly all kinds of sense pleasures and attractions the term *brahmacarya* means also celibacy and continence At the end of the studentship the first *āśrama* there is the ceremony of *samāvartana* or *snāna* bringing the life with the teacher to a close The treatment of *brahmacarya* and *upanayana* embodies the ancient ideals of education and the description in Chapter II of the discipline to be observed by the student and the conditions of life in a teacher's establishment (*guru kula*) contains several seminal ideas which would be of profit to educationists of all ages

After the *brahmacarya* stage one may elect to enter the next stage of the householder (*grhasthāśrama*) As the greater part of the *dharma*s ordained by the *śāstra* including the sacrifices big and small have to be performed with a wife as the *brahmacārins* and *sannyasins* have to live with the help of the householder and as his life with all its duties to the gods sages and fellow beings forms an excellent ground for the discipline of the body and the mind this stage of life the *grhasthāśrama* has always been eulogized in the *Smṛtis* ⁶⁰ The glorification of the ideal of a disciplined *grhastha* holding it out as the proper course for the bulk of the people gives the lie direct to the criticism that Hinduism is negative pessimistic and other worldly

In the treatment of the *grhasthāśrama* Manu deals also with marriage which is a major and central *samskāra* with which the organization of *varna* (caste) is inseparably bound As in the case of other activities based on desire marriage too is made into a *samskāra* in order to sublimate this most important aspect of human relationship This institution again has been conceived as an instrument of *dharma* and meant for the discharge of ordained duties Hence one could marry only a woman of one's own *varna* but of a different *gotra* (clan) ⁶¹ This condition is in the best interest of eugenics and ensures the purity of the line and the elimination of defects of the species On the whole Manu recognizes eight kinds of marriage *brāhma darva ārsa prājāpatya āsura gāndharva rāksasa* and *paisāca* ⁶² It is in the first four that excellent and virtuous issues are born ⁶³ Not only the way of marrying and the kind of wife but the choice of proper times for cohabitation regulated by several considerations gives best results ⁶⁴

During the household life men are enabled to discharge the three debts with which they are born—the debt to the gods to be discharged

Ibid III 77 78 VI 87 89 90
Ibid III 5
Ibid III 39 40

Ibid III 21
Ibid III 45 59

by performing sacrifices the debt to the *rsis* (sages) by maintaining the study and teaching of the Vedas and allied learning and the debt to the ancestors (*pitars*) by begetting children Daily the householder should also do five propitiations (*yajñas*) Of these the first *brahma yajña* relates to the maintenance of learning and its tradition *pitṛ yajña* is the offering of water (*tarpana*) for the gratification of one's ancestors *deva yajña* consists of the oblations in the fire for the gods *bhūta-yajña* is the offering made to living beings animals birds etc *nr yajña* is the reception and attention paid to guests (*atithi pūjana*)⁶⁵ The ancestors are to be further propitiated by *śrāddhas* (memorial rites)⁶⁶ It is after feeding the guests and those dependent on them in and around the home that the husband and wife shall themselves eat⁶⁷ He who cooks for himself alone eats sin not food⁶⁸

In respect of the means of livelihood also Manu's picture of the householder is noteworthy Manu's code presents to us the picture of a high minded person of simple habits free from greed and the tendency to hoard The means of livelihood resorted to should involve the least harm to anyone⁶⁹ The householder should gather only so much as is necessary for sustenance his accumulations being just for the morrow or for three days only or only so much as a jar or a granary could contain⁷⁰ He should not receive gifts from unworthy persons nor choose to eat at their places⁷¹ In fine he should be soft and controlled at the same time firm and resolute in action having no truck with those who behave in a callous manner himself harming none restrained in himself and generous to others he gains heaven⁷² To this picture of goodness and strength, the lining of beauty may also be added for this picture of Manu's *grhastha* is not of an emaciated sullen untidy person the householder shall not when able to avoid it mortify himself with starvation nor put on tattered or dirty clothes he should have his hair cut nails clipped and face shaved wear white cloth and be clean⁷³ One cannot fail to be struck by the exalted and at the same time radiant humanism of Manu's conception of the householder

The care taken over marriage and the sublimity of daily domestic life and habits ensure the purity of line of the families *kulas* It is these *kulas* and the high character of private life in them that have formed the citadels of Hindu culture But these *kulas* would come to ruin by

| | |
|---|--|
| <i>Ibid</i> III 68 81 | <i>Ibid</i> III 122 285 |
| <i>Ibid</i> III 116 7 | <i>Ibid</i> III 118 |
| <i>Ibid</i> IV 2 | <i>Ibid</i> IV 3 7 |
| <i>Ibid</i> IV 84 91 186 190 191 205 24 | |
| <i>Ibid</i> IV 246 | No wonder Bana in the <i>Harsa carita</i> calls the ideal householders sages at home (<i>grha munayah</i>) |
| <i>Ibid</i> IV 34 5 | |

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

king should try to avoid a war⁸⁷ Manu speaks also at length about the king's administration of justice⁸⁸ under eighteen titles of law⁸⁹ Although the treatment of civil law here is not so advanced as in *Narada* or *Yājñalkya* it is fairly detailed and touches most of the essential points Under inheritance it may be noted that Manu's special view is recorded that there are twelve kinds of legal sons⁹⁰ One of the duties of the king is called *kantaka sodhana* which is clearing the state of anti-social elements The king should be impartial and punish those dear to him as he would do others⁹¹ There is no blind exercise of regal power the Ksatriya shall always be guided and guarded by the Brāhmana⁹² the marriage of the temporal and the spiritual is emphasized here also

A word might be added about Vaisyas and Śūdras The fields of commerce and labour which now sway the whole world and shake and shape governments it may be noted receive meagre notice in Dharmaśāstra Manu describes these two *varnas* very briefly⁹³

CASTE UNTOUCHABILITY WOMEN

We find the four castes among the Iranians also (Atharvan for Brāhmana Rathesthar for Ksatriya Vastriya for Vaisya and Huiti for Śūdra) The organization of society into these functional classes four or three or two is of common Indo-Germanic origin and its parallel could be sought in all ancient communities⁹⁴ Caste has been discussed perhaps more than any other subject recently The expression caste is foreign and cannot be said to describe exactly the social organization called *varna* At the same time it is difficult to know the exact meaning of the word *varna* in its earliest usages in the *Rg Veda* although it is usual for scholars to take it as indicating colour The *Rg Veda* knows the *varna* system as inclusive of its hereditary character⁹⁵ The hereditary character of the classes is also clinched by the use of the word *jāti* as a synonym of *varna* Stray cases like that of Viśvāmitra and the incidence of *ksatriya pravaras* among Brāhmanical *gotras* show a kind of fluidity but do not prove the total absence of the hereditary character of the *varna* Even in *Manu* the distinction is made of a *jāti Brāhmana* devoid of *vratas* and attainments⁹⁶ who may not be included in the *parisad*, and this together with

⁸⁷ *Ibid* VII 199

⁸⁸ *Ibid* VIII 47

⁸⁹ *Ibid* IX 307 Cf Kalidasa *Raghuvamśa* I 28

⁹⁰ *Ibid* IX 322

Cf J H Hutton *Caste in India* (Oxford 1951) Part III pp 133-47 Analogous Institutions Elsewhere G H Mees *Dharma and Society* pp 75-85 Plato and Aristotle also spoke of this classification

See Keith *Cambridge History of India* I pp 93-4 In Egypt it was hereditary cf Hutton *op cit* p 140

VIII 20 XII 114

Ibid Chs VIII and IX

Ibid IX 158-60

Ibid IX 325-35

expressions like *brāhmana bruva* and *brahma bandhu* confirm the birth basis of the *Varṇa*. The statement of the *Gītā* does not warrant the assumption that according to one's *guṇa* and *karma* one may either oneself or through some friends declare oneself as a *Brāhmana* or *Kṣatriya*. The basis of *guṇa karma* is to explain the rationale of the fourfold classification.

The organization according to *varṇa* has served as a steel frame that has preserved the Hindu community down the centuries. Its marriage selection and vocational specialization have contributed to the refinement of the species⁹⁷ and the conservation and perfection of its skill. They have eliminated confusion, perplexity and wastage. According to Sidney Low: "There is no doubt that it (caste) is the main cause of the fundamental stability and contentment by which Indian society has been braced up for centuries against the shocks of politics and the cataclysms of Nature. It provides every man with his place, his career, his occupation. It protects him through life from the canker of social jealousy and unfulfilled aspirations. The caste organization is to the Hindu his club, his trade union, his benefit society. There are no workhouses in India and none are as yet needed."⁹⁸ Abbé Dubois considered the institution of caste among the Hindu nation as the happiest effort of their legislation. Meredith Townsend characterized caste as a marvellous discovery, a form of socialism which through ages protected Hindu society from anarchy and from the worst evils of industrial and competitive life. It is the only social system, says S. C. Hill⁹⁹ ever proposed upon a basis stronger than force and is entirely independent of any form of political government. No serious student of caste will propagate the abolishment of the caste system.¹⁰⁰

The *varṇa* organization is not like classes of today formed on material aims and competitive basis. It forms a co-operative effort. Its working can be best understood on the analogy of an orchestra and a harmonic composition in which there are a number of complementary parts separately written and assigned to different instruments. To each his part, whatever its nature,¹⁰¹ is important and all fit into an artistic whole. This is the doctrine of *svadharma* and the basis of *cāturvarṇya* in which every class by the perfection of its part is an aristocracy of quality and every vocation

Sedgwick (*Report on the Census of Bombay* 1921) points out that the Indian caste system with its endogamous caste and exogamous *gotras* is a perfect method of preserving what is called in genetics the pure line. See Hutton *op cit* p. 131.

Cf. Kane *H. Dh.* II pp. 20-2.

People of India quoted by Hutton *op cit* p. 120.

G. H. Mees *op cit* p. 192.

¹ Cf. *Rām* I 1 14 *rakṣita svasya dharmasya* and II 1 16 *kṣātram dharmam svayam bahu mānyate*.

a priesthood ¹⁰² The so called exaltation of the Brāhmana is balanced by the more onerous duties and more severe standards expected of him the *varna dharmas* show that as we go lower *dharmas* are less and lighter There is no sin for a śudra as stated by *Manu* in X 126 Equality such as is expounded in the present ballot box *yuga* in which there is a levelling down was of course not part of the *varna* scheme which was hierarchic in conception Intellectual moral and spiritual attainments on the part of the members of the lower classes were always recognized by those of the higher the Ksatriya philosophers of the Upanisads the Vaiśya Tulādhāra Vidura and the hunter philosopher of the epics and the Purānas and the mediaeval saints who were drawn from the lowest classes were all accepted and revered by the higher classes including the Brāhmana ¹⁰³ Any sense of difference of the higher and the lower was offset by the strong belief that in the eyes of God or from the point of view of the Supreme Brahman which indwells all beings all were *essentially* equal Further the Karma theory shifted the basis of lower birth from the person proper to a principle and guaranteed that with acculturation and consequent improvement in the acts done ascent in the hierarchic *varna* scheme could always be had in the course of some births This provided a healthy incentive for moral advancement As G H Mees says There will be always higher rungs to be reached by him in the natural hierarchy *Dharma* always holds out further prospects in the distance ¹⁰⁴

Manu as also other *dharma* authorities speak of a number of classes of persons born of certain types of sexual relation of both *anuloma* (wife of a lower caste) and *pratiloma* (husband from an inferior caste) type ¹⁰⁵ and some of these issues are given names which are also the names of certain tribes outside the pale of the *cāturvarnya*—Nisāda Candāla Ābhira Pukkasa and the rest It cannot be said that the entire tribes known by these names were born of such sexual relationship What was actually done was that in respect of lack of *dharma* these offspring of improper alliances were considered suitable for alignment with those tribes On the other side this theory and the one that holds that all the *vrātyas* and *mlecchas* were really those who had lapsed from the *varna* ideal served to draw on to the fringes of the *varna* system the numerous tribal communities and assign them all a place in the society The *varna* organization

See A K Commaraswami *The Religious Basis of the Forms of Indian Society etc* (New York 1946) pp 39 40 In matters of education and vocational training the diversified courses of study adopted by modern educationalists come only to the same principle of *varna* though partially

Cf *Manu* II 136 7 on persons in all *varnas* to whom respects are due

⁴ G H Mees *Dharma and Society* p 188 See also *Manu* X 64 a regular hyper marriage of a śudra woman with a Brahmana for seven generations makes for Brāhmanahood *Manu* X 8 52

served in this respect to impose an order on the heterogenous population and consolidate it Says Hutton ¹⁰⁶ one important function of caste perhaps the most important of all its functions and the one which above all others makes caste in India a unique institution is or has been to integrate Indian society to weld into one community the groups composing it some of these groups have been occupational or religious Others and this is more important have been national political and tribal societies that must otherwise have either been absorbed or transformed or remained as unadjusted and possibly subversive elements The caste system has effectively dealt with problems such as these which other societies have failed to solve

Manu says¹⁰⁷ that there is no fifth *varna* and therefore all the mixed *jātis* described by him are to be taken as included under the fourth *varna* He refers to Candālas Śvapacas and certain others as living outside the village *bahur grāma* though they too belonged to the same (fourth *varna*) The idea of their untouchability must have grown from their segregation to the fringes of the villages their filthy habits and food Primitive clans and tribes in various parts of the world are known to have perished by contact with other immigrant races owing to lack of immunity or resistance to racial contamination The idea of untouchability must have entered the system for similar reasons and Smṛti writers interested in the *varna dharma* based on a religious philosophy cannot be blamed for its creation aggravation or enforcement

Regarding the position of women a text frequently cited in *na strī svātantryam arhati* (woman is not fit for freedom) ¹⁰⁸ In the ideology of Manu and Dharma śāstra the home and the family constitute the bed rock of society and woman is the person on whom the stability and sanctity of the home and household life rest the wife is the home not the structure *na grham grham ityāhuh, grhīni grham ucyate* Manu and other ancient Indian thinkers had also a conception of women according to which they did not like women to be exposed to the rough and tumble of an unprotected independent life and it is in this spirit that Manu says that a woman shall always be taken care of by someone—by her father in her girlhood by her husband in her youth by her son in her old age and that she should not be left to herself ¹⁰⁹ The woman may not go about earning herself but Manu says¹¹⁰ that she should be entrusted with the husbanding

Ibid pp 119 20

Ibid X 4

Ibid X 36 39 50 51

In ancient Greece at no time of her life could a woman be without a guardian If her father was not alive it would be her nearest male relative After her husband's death her son was her guardian G Tucker *Life in Ancient Athens* quoted by Sir P S Sivaswami Aiyer *Evolution of Hindu Moral Ideals* (Kamala Lectures Calcutta 1935) p 57
Manu IX 11

of the financial and material resources of the home with collecting and spending. There is no difference between the housewife and the Goddess of Fortune both illumine the home and are to be adored as such¹¹¹. Everyone in the house the parents in law brothers in law and husband shall honour her and keep her happy and bedecked if they want to prosper¹¹². Where women are honoured there the gods revel where they are not honoured all religious acts become futile¹¹³ that home perishes in which the daughter in law suffers homes cursed by them come to grief¹¹⁴. In that home in which husband and wife are mutually happy there is invariable auspiciousness¹¹⁵. No religious rite could be performed without the wife. Indeed the husband and wife are one¹¹⁶. As mother she takes precedence over the father in receiving respect—a higher encomium can not be showered on women. The recognition of a large variety of marriages and of different kinds of sons and provisions for them shows the practical and liberal attitude of Manu and his consideration for women in general¹¹⁷. It is sin for relatives to take away the *stridhana* (property exclusively belonging to a wife) which a woman has received¹¹⁸. The statement that a woman has no property of her own¹¹⁹ has no reference to *stridhana* which is hers property according to Dharma śāstra is that which helps one to perform an enjoined Dharmic act and as a woman has no such acts to perform the property other than *stridhana* which she may earn could only be her husband's who alone can perform the rites¹²⁰. A girl may remain a spinster rather than her father shall give her in marriage to a worthless man¹²¹. If within three years of attaining age her father is not able to find her a suitable husband she might herself seek one¹²².

Critics of women's position as set out above should note that they are indulging in unfair comparisons when they judge conditions in ancient India from the point of view of conditions which have come to prevail only in recent times in the West. Till recently the position of women there was hardly praiseworthy¹²³ whereas the Indian lawgivers in those remote ages of antiquity had great regard and consideration for women. Strictures on women in Manu and elsewhere should not so prejudice us as not to note the high praise bestowed on them and we should understand the condemnatory passages according to the well known Mīmāṃsā rule of

Ibid IX 26

Ibid III 56

¹¹¹ *Ibid* III 60

Certain other Smṛtis go even further and condone their sexual lapses

Manu III 51 54 X 198

See Kulluka on *Manu* VIII 416

¹¹² *Manu* IX 89

¹¹³ See P. S. Sivaswami Aiyer *op cit* pp 57 63 65 the last page especially where the quotations are given to show that till comparatively recent times women in England could be beaten with a stick by their husbands

Ibid III 55

¹¹⁴ *Ibid* III 57 58

Ibid IX 45

Ibid VIII 416

Ibid IX 90

interpretation that the real intention of the condemnation is to praise the opposite namely the greatness of chastity (*pāṭivratya*) On questions like the field of activity proper to women the special training they should have and so on even modern thinkers hold divergent opinions

A word may be added about Manu's stand on the questions of widow remarriage and divorce On such questions it is sometimes difficult to be dogmatic as Manu as well as other Smṛti writers adopt three stand points the first recording what is obtaining in the world as a result of *kāma* the second conceding to some extent as a result of the vogue and the third stating his personal or ideal opinion In some passages Manu records the existence of sons of widows¹²⁴ and marriages of girls who had secretly conceived¹²⁵ at one place¹²⁶ a girl whose proposed husband passes away before the actual marriage or one whose marriage has not been consummated is allowed further marriage But he says that for the virtuous widow *sādhvī* there is no second marriage¹²⁷ or raising of issue by another that the Vedic marriage *mantras* are only for maidens¹²⁸ and that marriage is only for once¹²⁹ As for divorce Manu has no passage advocating supporting or conceding separation in any form he emphasizes that there is no kind of separation and marriage is indissoluble for life¹³⁰

NOT MECHANICAL BUT MORAL AND ETHICAL BASIS OF DHARMA

A criticism likely to be made against Manu's *dharma* is that it is rather mechanical and consists mostly in the adherence to or observing of a set of prescribed duties and sacraments for different types of men Nothing could be farther from the truth than such an opinion For not only do the prescribed duties themselves have a bearing on morality but in addition to the scheme of *samskāras* and ordained observances for such classes of persons Manu emphasizes a body of personal ethical virtues as of fundamental importance and universal application Whatever a Brāhmana might observe or not observe he should be essentially one who is friendly to all *matra*¹³¹ Some of the daily rites included in the five daily *yajñas* have a social and humanitarian bearing for example the *nr yajña* which is the entertaining of guests and *bhūta yajña* which is the gratification of other living beings dogs insects etc¹³² He whose speech and thought are pure and under control attains the highest spiritual fruit¹³³ One should not touch the sore spots of another never intend harm nor utter that unwholesome

¹²⁴ *Manu* III 174 IX 175

Ibid IX 69 176

Ibid VIII 226

Ibid IX 46 101

Ibid III 90 3

Ibid IX 172 73

Ibid V 162

Ibid IX 47

Ibid II 87

Ibid II 160

word which will make another shudder¹³⁴ The householder should see that he causes no harm to others nor displease others even by begging of them¹³⁵ Crooked and deceitful ways of livelihood must be eschewed¹³⁶ Hatred vanity pride anger and severity should be avoided¹³⁷ Of the two sets of virtues and observances *yamas* and *niyamas*, the former are more important and must be always observed¹³⁸ the *yamas* are continence, compassion contemplation truth non attachment non violence not taking what is another's sweetness of behaviour and self control One wins heaven by being soft and subdued non violent and generous¹³⁹ Apart from the special *dharma*s of the respective *varnas* there are ten personal qualities *ātma gunas* which are insisted upon by Manu as the *sāmānya dharma*s for all irrespective of class or station These ten qualities or *dharma*s are¹⁴⁰ fortitude forbearance self control not taking others possessions purity sense control learning knowledge of the Self truth and absence of anger Similarly he mentions¹⁴¹ five virtues as constituting the common *dharma*s of all the four *varnas*—non violence truth non thieving purity and sense control

The purpose of a ceremonial manner of expiation is to make one's sin public thereby making one feel ashamed of it and refrain from doing it again A sinner gets purified of his sin by making it public by repentance by penance and by sacred study As the sinner goes about telling people of the wrong committed by him the sin falls away from him even as a slough from a snake To the extent his own mind derides him for having admitted the sin to that extent his body becomes rid of that sin By repentance by the resolve that he will not repeat it the sinner is purified For any act which leaves no peace of mind one shall submit oneself to voluntary austerity till one gains mental peace¹⁴² Thus what is intended in expiation is a real mental transformation

Outside of the Veda enjoined sacrifices the principle of *ahimsā* should be observed in all matters and Manu lays due emphasis on the two basic principles—*ahimsā* and *satya* Water may wash the body but it is truth that cleanses the mind,¹⁴³ one should speak words purified by truth do acts purified by conscience¹⁴⁴ *Dharma* flourishes through truth¹⁴⁵ If one can make it up with one's own heart and conscience, wherein is seated the Lord of Judgement Yama one no more needs holy waters or places of

¹³⁴ *Ibid* II 161
¹ *Ibid* IV 2 Manu's words here are *adroha* and *alpa droha* and Medhātithi interprets the latter as begging of others
Ibid IV 11
Ibid IV 204
Ibid VI 92
Ibid XI 227 33
Ibid VI 46
⁷ *Ibid* IV 163
³⁰ *Ibid* IV 246
⁴ *Ibid* X 63
Ibid V 109
Ibid VIII 83

THE MANU SAMHITA

pilgrimage¹⁴⁶ Also universal benevolence and friendliness are commended Insult not others nor make enmity with anyone¹⁴⁷

A TREASURY OF WISDOM

If the *Manu Smṛti* is not a mere code of ordained duties and if it rises in its philosophical parts to grave dignity it ranks high also as a master piece of ancient literature which in pithy and effective couplets gives expression to some of the most precious ideas and noblest virtues and ideals No appreciation of Manu can be complete without drawing attention to its *subhasitas* or observations of profound wisdom Some of these could be cited One does not become an elder by reason of one's grey hairs he who is well read though young him the gods deem an elder¹⁴⁸ The good should be taught to people without hurting them one who desires merit should use his words sweetly and delicately¹⁴⁹ He who is insulted goes to sleep happily and happily does he get up and move about in the world it is he who has insulted that perishes¹⁵⁰ Contentment is the root of happiness its opposite is the root of misery¹⁵¹ Whatever makes one dependent on another is misery and all that helps to rest on oneself is happiness this in short is the definition of happiness and misery^{1 2} That in doing which one has an inner satisfaction should be done even if it requires some effort the opposite should be avoided¹⁵³ Of all kinds of cleanliness that in monetary affairs is the greatest he who is pure in this is really clean he who is cleansed by water etc is not really clean¹⁵⁴ *Dharma* is the only friend that accompanies one even in death all the rest perishes with the body¹⁵⁵ One's self is one's witness it is the final resort do not disregard your own self the greatest witness of man¹⁵⁶

VĀNAPRASTHA SANNYĀSA SPIRITUAL QUEST

Manu's treatment of the spiritual quest is permeated with the terms and ideas of philosophical literature¹⁵⁷ This subject cannot be considered

¹ *Ibid* VIII 92

² *Ibid* II 156

³ *Ibid* II 163

Ibid IV 160

Ibid V 106

⁴ *Ibid* VIII 84

⁵ *Ibid* VI 47

Ibid II 159

⁶ *Ibid* IV 12

⁷ *Ibid* IV 161

⁸ *Ibid* VIII 17

The Vedānta or Upaniṣad its study repeating it (*svādhyāya* and *japa*) the truth taught therein and its fruit are referred to in II 160 VI 81 83 and 94 Brahman the Absolute of the Upaniṣads Its exponents (*Brahma vādins*) and Its realization are mentioned in I 81 83 VI 39 79 (*Brahma sanatanam*) 81 85 XII 13 123 (*Brahma śāśvatam*) 125 as also the terms Ātman Adhyātma Parama Purusa Antarātman Paramātman in VI 49 (*ātma rati*) 63 65 73 80 93 96 XII 92 118 119 122 the distinctions into (*kṣetrajña bhutatman jīvatman*) are to be seen in XII 12 13 14 *Samyagdarśana jñāna ātma jñāna* are seen in VI 74 XII 85 92 *Mokṣa mukta parama gati parama padam sukham śāśvatam svāraja amṛtatva Brahma bhūya nīśreyasa* could be seen in VI 35 37 44 58 60 XII 82 83 88 91 102 103 104 107 125 The differentiation into *abhyudaya* and *nīśreyasa* worldly welfare and the everlasting good is met with in XII 88 The Yogic process of breath control

extraneous to Manu's work. The very genius of the Hindu scheme of life here is that it is synthesized with that in the hereafter for this a picture of the whole cosmogony creation after life etc is necessary without such a background the principles enunciated by Manu the distinctions diversified duties the theory of Karma etc cannot be understood. In the scheme of the four stages of life the latter two concern a life of retirement. In both these respects the treatment of philosophy is quite germane to the text. Apart from this Manu has been remembered as the promulgator of a philosophy¹⁵⁸. The philosophical texts also count Manu among the teachers of philosophy¹⁵⁹.

The viewpoint adopted by Manu is that of the Vedānta incorporating into it in the manner of the epics and the Purāṇas elements of the Sāṃkhya system. The world has been created by the self-manifest and transcendent reality which is the Soul of everything¹⁶⁰ the eternal Ultimate Cause which is of the form of existence as well as non-existence¹⁶¹. The body is not a physical entity but a habitation of the Supreme Self¹⁶². All beings born are the products of *karma* and it is with the impressions of past *karma* that beings attain new birth. To distinguish between *karma*, good and bad the Lord created *dharma* and *adharma*¹⁶³. As beings are born according to their heritage of *karma* they are naturally of diverse natures and in order that the world might grow and prosper and might be well protected under some system that the Lord determined the distinction of these into four *varnas* with their respective duties¹⁶⁴. In accordance with the *Vedānta Sūtras*¹⁶⁵ Manu says that all this creative activity of the Lord is His sport *līlā*¹⁶⁶.

Although the spiritual goal has been given its due place in the Dharma śāstra ideology it should be noted that the special viewpoint of Dharma śāstras is that normally man should discharge his duties and debts as a householder and then with a duly disciplined mind mature and free from sins and attachments think of a life of retirement. Manu says¹⁶⁷ that it (*pranayama*) *dharanā* the *yamas* and *niyamas* Dhyana yoga Karma yoga may be seen in I 83 IV 204 VI 70 73 79 82 83. Ratiocination (*tarka*) the three means of knowledge (*pramāṇa*) *pratyakṣa anumāna* and śāstra (Āgama śabda) are spoken of in XII 105 6 (Here all the references are from *Manu*)

B G IV 1

¹⁶ *Brahma Sūtras* III 1 14 and Śaṅkara thereon. In his *Brahma Sūtra Bhāṣya* Śaṅkara quotes *Manu* about seven times and it is to be specially noted that in his *Brhadaranyaka Upaniṣad Bhāṣya* Śaṅkara quotes some of the philosophically important verses of *Manu* viz on I 4 6 *Manu* XII 123 I 7 and XII 50 on I 4 15 *Manu* II 87 on IV 5 6 *Manu* VI 38 on *pravrajya* and II 16.

Manu I 57 *Manu* I 7 has been quoted by Śaṅkara in his *Brhadaranyaka Upaniṣad Bhāṣya*

¹⁷ *Manu* I 8

¹⁸ *Ibid* I 26 28 30

¹⁹ *Ibid* II 1 33

²⁰ *Ibid*, I, 80 *kṛdānṛva etat kṛute Parameṣṭhi punah punah*

¹⁶⁷ *Ibid* VI 35 7

Ibid I 17 18 *Tasya murtih*

⁶ *Ibid* I 31 87

is only after discharging the three debts that one should direct one's mind towards *mokṣa* to do otherwise is sinful. This is called the *śamuccaya vāda* or theory of co-ordination of the *āśramas* as against the view of Upaniṣads like the *Jābāla* which also advocate *sannyāsa* directly from *brahmacarya*. Life is accordingly mapped out by the Dharma sāstras in four stages and the latter two stages *vānaprastha* and *sannyāsa* refer to retirement¹⁶⁸. When wrinkles and grey hair appear in a person and a grandson has also appeared in the house it is time for a householder to retire and he should leave the village and go to the forest. He may go either with his wife or leaving her in the care of his sons but in the forest he should live a life of continence and abstinence from sense enjoyments¹⁶⁹. In this stage of forest life he would perform rites like the *agni-hotra* but would otherwise in dress food etc. live the life of a recluse subsisting on roots fruits and water constantly engaged in the study of the scriptures subdued friendly to all composed giving but never receiving compassionate towards all beings¹⁷⁰ bearing everything¹⁷¹ and engaged in austerities¹⁷².

He then passes to the next stage that of a *parivrājaka* which would roughly cover the fourth part of his life¹⁷³. He takes into himself so to say the sacrificial fires and moves out of his habitation¹⁷⁴. He should keep moving on till his body falls¹⁷⁵. By such control of the senses extinction of likes and dislikes and non violence towards all beings one becomes qualified to attain to immortality¹⁷⁶. Practising control of breath and contemplation he should see the course of the self through high and low births through regions of heaven and hell through the pleasures and miseries of life¹⁷⁷. Manu is one with the Vedānta on some of the fundamental tenets for instance firstly knowledge *jñāna* alone is capable of giving *mokṣa* anything that might be done without the knowledge of the Self will be futile¹⁷⁸ it is knowledge that bestows immortality¹⁷⁹. Secondly the Absolute Brahman is the One Truth and it is This that is called by the various names through which in different ways different aspirants adore It¹⁸⁰. It is again with a disquisition on the spiritual goal and the means to attain it that Manu closes his exposition of *dharma*¹⁸¹. Of all knowledge that of the Self is the greatest¹⁸² the observance of *dharma*s of activity (*pravṛtti*) could at best take one to the heavenly regions

¹ *Manu* VI
Ibid VI 5-8
Ibid VI 23
Ibid VI 25
Ibid VI 60
Ibid XII 104 *vidyaya mrtam āsnute*
Ibid VI 74 82
Ibid XII 82 ff

Ibid VI 14
Ibid VI 47 8
² *Ibid* VI 33
Ibid VI 31 45
Ibid VI 61 73
³ *Ibid* XII 123
Ibid XII 85

and to the status of divine beings but it is the doing of things with knowledge (*jñāna pūrvā*) and without desire or attachment (*niskāma*) that helps one to be liberated¹⁸³ *Svārājya* or revelling in the bliss of Self is gained by one who adores the Ātman seeing in everything around the same Self that is within himself¹⁸⁴ While acts and austerities (*tapas*) can purify a person by destroying his sin it is knowledge (*vidyā*) that can give him immortality (*amṛtam*)¹⁸⁵ The one unfailing way to ensure that one's mind never turns to *adharma* is to see the Ātman in everything¹⁸⁶ for the Ātman is verily everything¹⁸⁷ The Ātman is that which controls one from within being subtler than the subtlest it is the Ātman which some adore as the gods having different names as teachers or as one's own life breath and others as the eternal Absolute Being

KARMA YOGA RAJA YOGA

In the *Bhagavad Gītā* it is especially the philosophy of Karma yoga taught in Chapter III that the Lord associates with Manu In his commentary here¹⁸⁸ Śankara explains that it is to enable the Kṣatriyas to rule the earth and to provide them with a philosophical basis for and special outlook on their activity that the Lord taught this *yoga* to Vivasvat from whom Manu learnt and passed it on to the kings From this point of view it is legitimate to take the characterization of the teaching as *rāja vidyā* and *rāja guhya* (kingly secret)¹⁸⁹ as having a special significance to the *rājarsis* or saintly kings for whom this wisdom was pre eminently intended though as applicable to others also engaged in activity this came to be esteemed as the king of *vidyās* or philosophies and the most precious of esoteric wisdom That the name *rāja vidyā* might be taken in a straight manner as meaning the philosophy of the Kṣatriyas is supported by the *Yogavāsistha* which explains,¹⁹⁰ quoting the very words of the *Gītā* why this philosophy is called the mystic lore of the kings The *Yogavāsistha* says that as humanity went about gathering things for its life and began to indulge in mutual fight it became necessary to have rulers over them and they could not discharge their duty without punishing people and themselves entering into wars but wars demoralized them and to remove their depression and provide them with the right evaluation (*saṃyag drsti*) the sages taught them this philosophy As it was first taught to the kings this philosophy, which later spread to others came to be called *rāja vidyā*¹⁹¹

Ibid XII 89 90

Ibid XII 104

¹⁸⁷ *Ibid* XII 119

¹⁸⁸ B G IX 2

¹⁸⁹ *Ibid* II 11 14 18

JOR Madras XIII pp 74 5

¹⁹⁰ *Ibid* XII 91

Ibid XII 118

Ibid IV 1

Yogavāsistha II 11 4 8

The *Yogavāsistha* and the *Bhagavad Gītā*

It is this special doctrine of Karma yoga which is associated with Manu. It would be interesting and fruitful to see how its chief features as set forth in the *Gītā* are stressed by Manu in his Dharma sāstra¹⁹². This doctrine of non attachment called Anāsakti yoga or Asparsa yoga strikes the balance between *karma* and *sannyāsa* and between *pravṛtti* and *nivṛtti* it takes away the sting or the binding taint from *karma* by the surrender of its fruit or by its dedication to the Supreme and by the disinterested discharge of it as one's ordained duty. Along with the sterilization of *karma* by *phala tyāga* the *karma yogin* is also to develop equanimity in respect of the outcome of his endeavours or their attendant circumstances whether he is faced with success or failure gain or loss pleasure or misery honour or humiliation. It requires no demonstration to show that these are the leading ideas which run all through the *Gītā*. If we turn to the *Manu Smṛti* we find Manu speaking of this doctrine in more than one important context. At the very outset when he sets forth the *dharma*s of the different *varṇa*s Manu includes among those of the Kṣatriyas non attachment to sense pleasures *viśayesu aprasaktiḥ*¹⁹³. Manu says like the *Gītā* that one should not feel depressed or elated whatever the sense experiences be (*na hrsyati glāyati*)¹⁹⁴. The freedom from *mātrā sparśa*s (sense contacts) and *dvandvas* (pairs of opposites) is insisted on one should not be depressed by loss nor exhilarated by gain and should be out of the contamination of *mātrā sanga*¹⁹⁵. *Indriya sanga* (sense attachment) *sanga tyāga* (renunciation of attachment) and freedom from all *dvandvas* find mention¹⁹⁶. Manu states expressly that not only is the path of abandoning *karma*s called *nivṛtta* (detachment) but that the disinterested performance of *karma* by a person of *jñāna* is also as much *nivṛtta*¹⁹⁷ (cf *niskamam jñāna pūrvam tu nivṛttam upadiśyate*).

Keith says in his observations on the *Manu Smṛti*¹⁹⁸ that in its philosophical parts its tone often rises to a grave dignity reminiscent of the *Bhagavad Gītā*. This similarity with the *Gītā* is not merely in tone but in the mode of thought and expression also and in addition to what has already been shown above many more parallels between the *Manu Samhita* and the *Bhagavad Gītā* can be pointed out.

The extension of the above mentioned *rāja vidyā* of Karma yoga to all

¹ There is of course a difference that in the *Manu Smṛti* it is Svayambhuva Manu and in the *Gītā* it is Vaivasvata Manu but the distinction being non historical it does not affect our position really.

¹ *Manu* I 89

Ibid II 98

Manu used *matra sanga* here in the same sense as the *Gītā* uses *matra sparśa* in II 14. It is not known how Kulluka takes it differently and in a round about way.

Manu VI 75 VI 81

Ibid XII 89

¹ *HSL* p 445

those engaged in activity was referred to earlier. In *Manu* too we find its application to the *grhastha* (householder) chiefly the Brāhmana. After describing the *vānaprastha* and the *sannyāsin* Manu describes the *grhastha* who could remain in his house and get released by cultivating the requisite virtues and by gradually renouncing desire after desire including the rites ordained for the householder by the Vedas¹⁹⁹. Manu praises the *grhasthāśrama* here and shows how a *grhastha* could become a *Veda sannyāsika* (one who gives up Veda ordained rituals) and practise Karma yoga²⁰⁰. Earlier too when setting forth the *dharma*s of the householder²⁰¹ Manu speaks of these *grhasthas* who observe the *jñāna yajña* which the commentators have explained as referring to the *grhastha* who is a *Veda sannyāsika*. Cultivating the ten *dharma*s (the *ātma gunas* as they are also referred to)²⁰² common to all the four stages of life and along with them the knowledge taught in the Vedānta the *grhastha* should renounce all acts and live in retirement on the support of his son²⁰³. Thus by ridding himself of all desire (*asprhā*) and intent solely on the seeking of the Self he attains the supreme stage²⁰⁴.

Thus even while enjoining the different *dharma*s of activity (*pravṛtti*) for a *grhastha* Manu does not fail to give them the silver lining of spiritual ideology and the final goal of emancipation. While observing his ordained duties the householder is to cultivate slowly virtues of resignation. There are certain things which he is permitted as his *dharma* for example a Brāhmana is permitted to live by receiving gifts (*pratigraha*). Like *pratigraha* there are a number of other things the doing of which will not entail any drawback on him but abstaining from which brings him greater fruit. As part of the Karma yoga in which one finds *nivṛtti* in *pravṛtti* and as a golden path that makes the life of duty a great opportunity for disciplining and gradually sublimating oneself Manu teaches this doctrine of slow transcending of desires by abstaining from such acts as are linked to desire and are likely to lead to the corruption of the spirit and thus be an impediment to the realization of the spiritual goal²⁰⁵.

Manu VI 86-96

Ibid IV 24

Ibid VI 86-90

¹⁹⁹ In these ten we find two qualities *dhi* and *vidya* and to distinguish the two Medhatithi in his *bhasya* explains the latter as knowledge of the Self (*ātma jñāna*).

²⁰⁰ See also *Manu* IV 257

Ibid IV 98-96

²⁰¹ See also M. Hiriyanna, *A Neglected Ideal of Life*, *Nivṛttiḥ tu mahāphala*, *Indian Philosophical Congress Silver Jubilee Volume* (Calcutta 1950), pp. 222-7. That this sublime doctrine is accepted and advocated by all schools of Indian thought is borne out by the observations of the Teṅkalai Śrīvaiṣṇava philosopher Lokācārya in his *Śrī vacana bhusana vihitā viśaya nivṛttiḥ tan n erram* (abstinence from even the enjoined or permitted enjoyment makes for one's elevation) and again *vihitā bhogam nisiddha bhogam pole loka viruddham anru naraka hetuvum anru prapya pratibandhakamayale tyajyam* which states the same thing in terms very close to Manu and with arguments.

THE MANU SAMHITĀ
ATMA JNANA THE GREATEST DHARMA

At the conclusion of his work taking an over all view of what had been dealt with at length under different heads in the course of the work Manu sums up that of all the acts those conducive to the everlasting welfare (*nihśreyasa*) or spiritual salvation are the greatest for of all kinds of activities the knowledge of the Soul (*ātma jñāna*) is the highest and as that alone brings immortality over and above all kinds of knowledge and learning it stands supreme²⁰⁶ Thus the *dharma* expounded in the Dharma sāstra of Manu comprehends all the aspirations of man leading up to the highest namely the everlasting beatitude for the realization of which all the other aspirations and pursuits are adjusted and synthesized Manu's work presents a whole picture of life here as harmonized with the hereafter Minute and thorough and going into details it at the same time does not miss the over all picture of the complete integrated life of a soul progressing through its many incarnations and opportunities for working out its destiny to its ultimate goal of perfection and Self realization

Keith who is impatient with Nietzsche for ranking Manu above the Bible yet says that the *Manu Smṛti* is not merely important as a law book but it ranks as the expression of a philosophy of life and in *Manu* we have the soul of a great section of a people²⁰⁷ Says Brhaspati in his *Smṛti* „Different Śāstras strut about only so long as Manu the teacher of *dharma artha* and *moksa* does not appear on the scene²⁰⁸

²⁰⁶ *Manu* XII 85
HSL pp 443 4
HOS p 233

THE NIBANDHAS

ABOUT AD 700 when the great Kumārila Bhatta is supposed to have been living and Muslim armies were preparing to knock at the western gate of India the earlier period of the Dharma sāstra literature may roughly be taken as closed. The number of Vedic Dharma Sūtras and traditional Smṛti samhitās all ascribed to infallible sages had then swelled together to well over a hundred forming along with the relevant portions of the *Mahābhārata* and the Purānas almost a bewildering mass of original texts which had gradually become authoritative in every part of India. They contain dicta covering all topics of civil criminal social and religious laws and customs sometimes full of apparent contradictions. The supreme task before the Aryan society now was to turn out regular codes of law from a synthetic study of these dicta. The scholastic system of the Mīmāṃsa with its thousand rules of interpretation highly developed by the classical works of Śabara Svāmīn Kumārila and Prabhākara mainly formed the logic of this literature and the best intellects of the country were thereby attracted to take up the above task with avidity. For more than a thousand years they engaged themselves in writing glosses on the important texts comprehensive digests manuals on special topics of law and various other books all of which pass by the name of Nibandha. But scholars differed honestly in their interpretations and it gave rise with local popularity and sanction to many different schools and sub-schools of law with a healthy rivalry among them all of which happened from the very start of the Nibandha literature. Every book which was law in particular areas almost as binding as the modern High Court rulings derived its authority mainly from the fact that the author was looked upon as an *apta* (an ideal person) who had attained the highest moral and intellectual standard and as the ultimate sanction of the Vedas must be stamped on every law book he must be a man of religion too in the best sense of the term. A very large number of such books were written in every part of India in successive ages and it is impossible at present to give an accurate and adequate account of this vast literature most of which is now lost and of the small number so far discovered and acquired only a few have been printed the rest lying in private and public libraries of manuscripts practically beyond the reach of scholars. The following brief survey can only seek to focus somewhat dimly on the history chronology jurisdiction and varying authority of the Nibandhas

THE NIBANDHAS
THE COMMENTARIES

Some of the ancient texts like those of *Manu* and *Yājñavalkya* which had become all India classics in matters of *dharma* were formally analysed in a large number of so called commentaries varying from the expansive *bhāṣya* to the concise *vr̥tti* by eminent scholars of all ages and climes. The following among them belonged to the top rank in point of time and well merited authority.

Asahāya mentioned already by Viśvarūpa Medhātithi and various other authorities may probably be regarded as the first *bhāṣyakāra* in the literature. Except for a fragment of a revised version of his *Nārada bhāṣya* where the reviser Kalyāna Bhatta took ample liberties with the lost original all of his works—the *bhāṣyas* on *Gautama Manu* and *Nārada*—are now lost. He flourished before A.D. 750. A few of his rulings on succession have been preserved in later works notably the *Sarasvatī vilāsa* and these may be looked upon as marking the first attempt to codify Indian law.¹

Viśvarūpa's commentary (*vyākaraṇa*) named *Bāla kr̥dā* on *Yājñavalkya* published in its entirety from Trivandrum in 1922-24 reveals a veritable mine from which scholars may dig out historical facts. His identity with the Śāṅkarite Suresvara on the one hand and the poet Bhavabhūti on the other as stated by later authors if accepted would place him about A.D. 750 rather than A.D. 800-25 as Kane² supposed. A past master in the Mīmāṃsā though with a philosophic leaning towards Śāṅkara he adorned his annotations on many of the sections with ample elaborate and advanced dissertations in a style reminding us of Kumārila some of which as the one on *śrāddha* (memorial rites) significantly called the *Śrāddha kalpa*³ may well pass for separate books. The famous theory of ownership preceding partition established in the *Mitākṣarā* really originated with Viśvarūpa⁴ many of whose liberal views however are in disagreement with this. His piquant reference to the monarch and in the same breath to schools of law (*sampradāya*) and their interpreters⁵ clearly suggests where the operative part of the Nibandhas took final shape. It appears that a different Viśvarūpa wrote a large digest cited by many ancient writers like Jīmūtavāhana about A.D. 1050 the numerous quotations of this later Viśvarūpa being mostly untraceable in the *Bāla kr̥dā*.⁶

P. V. Kane *History of Dharmasastra* I pp. 247-51 Sec. 58. This monumental book has been consulted at every step.

History of Dharmasastra I p. 253.

Bāla kr̥dā I p. 173.

Ibid. p. 244-5.

² *Ibid.* p. 201.

Indian Historical Quarterly XXII p. 140.

Medhātithi's extensive commentary (*bhasya*) on Manu printed on several occasions under the editorship of V N Mandlik J R Gharpure Ganganath Jha and others is another mine of information on all topics of *dharma*. An erudite scholar of the Mīmāṃsā he referred to Kumārila by name and probably quoted Śaṅkara. He flourished therefore in the ninth century A D and has been supposed to be a Kashmirian. He also wrote what must have been the first regular digest of Indian law named *Smṛti vivēka* cited by himself and later authors which remains yet to be discovered.

Viṣṇanesvara's commentary (*ṭīkā*) named *Mitāksarā* on Yājñavalkya was composed about A D 1120 when the Cālukya king Vikramāditya VI of Kalyāṇa (A D 1076-1126) was at the height of his power.⁷ Profound scholarship in the Mīmāṃsā, rare judgment in the synthesis of varied legal dicta, the asceticism of a Paramahansa and the patronage of one of the greatest monarchs of the age—all combined to achieve for Viṣṇanesvara the unique glory of completely superseding all previous authors and becoming the supreme authority in legal matters in the whole of India (except Bengal). Propinquity as the guiding principle in inheritance and the principle of ownership with birth are among the peculiar views strictly adhered to in the *Mitāksarā* which has several sub-commentaries to its credit including those of Viśveśvara (A D 1360-90) and Bālam Bhatta (c A D 1770).

Kullūka Bhaṭṭa's handy commentary (*ṭīkā*) on Manu, professedly based on a critical absorption of the previous works of Medhātithi and Govinda rāja, achieved a remarkable celebrity from the very time it was written and in spite of its lack of originality deserves in a manner the memorable eulogy passed on it by Sir William Jones that 'It is the shortest yet the most luminous, the least ostentatious yet the most learned, the deepest yet the most agreeable commentary ever composed on any author ancient or modern.' It was composed about A D 1300 and was already cited by Candēśvara in the *Rajanīti ratnākara*. Kullūka belonged to a well-known Vārendra Brāhmaṇa family of Bengal and his family history corroborates the above date.⁸ He wrote at Kāśī where he must have found easy means for speedy circulation of his single work which earned for him a glorious place among classical authors. It should be mentioned here that the *Śrāddha-sāgara* ascribed to him turns out on a careful scrutiny to be an amazing forgery.

We conclude this sketch with a bare mention of the ancient commentaries of Bhartr̥yajña (before A D 800) and Bhāruḥ (early in the ninth

K V R Aiyangar *Kṛtya kalpataru* Dana kāṇḍa Introduction I 38 and 44. We have preferred this view to that of Kane.

THE NIBANDHAS

century A.D.) both now lost and those of Govindaraja on *Manu* and *Aparārka* (i.e. the Śīlāhāra king Aparāditya I who reigned between A.D. 1110-1130) Śūlapāni and Mitrāmīśra on Yājñavalkya all of whom were reputed authorities on Indian law

THE NIBANDHAS PROPER—BENGAL SCHOOL

In the earlier period which might be termed the golden epoch of commentaries there is a distinct paucity of independent works on *dharma* no such book preceding the eleventh century A.D. having survived not even the *Smṛti viveka* of Medhātithi. This curious fact is explained I believe by the prevailing sense of rare reverence for the hallowed works of the sages. The evolution of regular digests as distinguished from commentaries is better illustrated by the accounts of numerous schools of law that flourished in various parts of India from the earliest times. The account of the so called Bengal school that preserved its separate existence intact for almost a millennium is given here first of all for its well documented history which falls into three well marked periods pre Muslim pre Raghunandana (A.D. 1200-1550) corresponding to the Pathan period of Indian history and post Raghunandana. In the first period the earliest author whose works have partly survived is Govindarāja who belonged to Bengal.⁸ He wrote two digests the extensive *Smṛti mañjarī* and as its very name denotes a smaller compendium *Rju pañjikā* both cited by himself in his later work *Manu vṛtti*.⁹ The latter is lost and only two large fragments of the former are known—the London manuscript on *prāyaścitta* and the Calcutta manuscript on *śrāddha* copied in the Newari year 265 i.e. A.D. 1144. The contents of the book given at the end of the London copy prove that it dealt with all the principal topics of *dharma* including on the evidence of a citation by Jīmutavāhana administration (*vyavahāra*). He flourished about A.D. 1050 and was evidently eclipsed by the success of Bhavadeva and Jīmūta vāhana.

Bhavadeva Bhatta surnamed Bala valabhi bhujanga was a native of Uttara Rādhā in West Bengal and settled at Vikramapura in East Bengal as a minister of King Harivarmadeva (A.D. 1073-1119) and his son. His Mīmāṃsā work *Tautātita mata tilaka*¹⁰ was one of the classics of the Bhāṭṭa school and made him famous outside Bengal. In Bengal he is immortalized by the *Daśakarma paddhati* (also called *Karmānusthāna paddhati* *Daśakarma dīpikā* etc.) which still continues to be the most authoritative guide book of the tenfold rites of the Sāma Vedins. His *Prāyaścitta prakarana*¹¹ for its

close reasoning and advanced treatment could not be fully superseded even by the standard works of Śūlapāni and Raghunandana on the same topic. So also was the short manual of his on marriage named *Sambandha vivēka*¹². The fourth extant work of this great writer is the *Śava sūtakāsauca prakāraṇa* which has been brought to light very recently and of which we had no information before. The rest of Bhavadeva's works notably the *Vyavahāratilaka* and the *Nirṇayāmṛta* often cited by later authorities are now lost. His outstanding political and scholastic career is recorded in a unique contemporary panegyric (*kula praśasti*) originally discovered in Dacca and now placed through a mistake in a temple of Bhuvanesvara in Orissa. Most of his books were composed before A.D. 1100.

Jīmūtavāhana belonging to the Pāribhadra family of Rādhiya Brāhmanas wrote a comprehensive digest named *Dharmaratna* of which only three parts are known and have been put in print. The *Dayabhāga* is the paramount authority in Bengal in matters of succession and inheritance the fountain source of the vast literature that grew up in Bengal upon that vital topic. Bharat Chandra Shiromani's edition of the book (A.D. 1863-66) published seven commentaries including those of Raghunandana and his teacher Śrīnātha Ācārya-cūdāmani. The *Kāla-vivēka* is an exhaustive analysis of the auspicious moments for the performance of sacred ceremonies another vital topic of Aryan society and gives us a refreshing glimpse of a vast ancient literature that grew up thereon in Bengal and was completely supplanted by it. There is clear evidence in the book itself that it was written soon after March A.D. 1093 the last of a number of exact dates examined in it. The *Vyavahāra mātrkā* is the earliest extant treatise on judicial procedure and one of the best ever written on that subject exhibiting the boldness, precision and dialectic powers of the author quite rare in that age. Ownership after partition, spiritual benefit as the guiding principle of inheritance and the principle of *factum valet* are some of the bold and peculiar doctrines of the great author and the Bengal school with which he is identified has sometimes been called reformed as a consequence of it.

Several other authoritative works of this period have survived in Bengal and as they are still consulted in the seminaries they have all been published. The much commented *Suddhidīpikā* by Śrīnivāsa of the Mahantāpanīya family of Rādhiya Brāhmanas is still a standard work on the time element of ceremonies and astrology. His lost work *Ganīta cūdāmani* was composed exactly in Śaka 1081 (A.D. 1159-60) evidently under King Ballala Sena who respectfully engaged him to compose for him the *Adbhuta*

sāgara the great work on omens which was commenced in Śaka 1090 (A D 1168 69) The *Dāna sāgara* (finished in Śaka 1091) of the same king one of the best works on gifts was however written by the king's *guru* Aniruddha Bhatta of the Campāhitta family of Vārendra Brāhmanas who also wrote two other standard books the *Hāra latā* on impurities and the *Pitr dayitā* on the common rites of the Sāma Vedins Lastly the *Brāhmana sarvasva* of Halāyudha a *dharmādhyaksa* (an officer in charge of religious affairs) under King Laksmāna Sena is still a familiar book on the exegesis of the Vedic texts commonly used in the ceremonies

In the next period of Muslim invasion and occupation there was a temporary disruption and decay almost everywhere in every sphere Bengal seems to have withstood the onslaught well enough as indicated by the large output of Smṛti works during the period¹³ Most of these are now lost or gone beyond our reach—the works of Nīlāmbārācārya Bhīmopādhyāya of the Kañjivīlva family Rājapandita Kuberopādhyāya of the same family (who composed a commentary on the *Bhāṣya* in Śaka 1229 i e A D 1307 8)¹⁴ Balabhadra's *Asauca sūtra* and Nārāyanopādhyāya's masterpiece *Samaya prakāśa* to name only a few The last named author also wrote the *Parisista prakāśa*¹⁵ and was long regarded as the leading Smṛta of Bengal during this period only yielding his place to his critic and successor Śulapāni Mahāmahopādhyāya¹⁶ the founder of what is called Navya Smṛti in Bengal Born in the Sāhudīyāla family of Radhīya Brāhmanas Śulapāni wrote many books some time between A D 1415 and 1465 of which twenty have been counted so far Two of his most intricate works the *Śrāddha viveka* and the *Prāyaścitta viveka* are still assiduously studied in the seminaries of Bengal The former his masterpiece being full of abstruse Mīmāṃsā technicalities has invited right from the end of the fifteenth century A D some of the best scholars of Bengal to write learned commentaries on it and we see those of Śrīnātha Ācāryacūdāmaṇi (who knew older glosses) Haridāsa Tarkācārya (composed soon after A D 1503) Govindānanda Kavikāṇkācārya Haridāsa's son Acyuta Cakravartin Maheśvara Nyāyalankāra and Śrīkṛṣṇa Tarkālankāra in the chronological order Most of the above mentioned scholars were prolific writers of various other treatises of great authority and it was Śrīnātha who introduced

Indian Historical Quarterly XVII pp 459 65

Indian Culture XI pp 33 6

Published in the *Bibliotheca Indica* Series

Haridasa Tarkācārya bore testimony to the unrivalled eminence of the two great scholars in a panegyric verse in the *Śrāddha viveka pradīpa* (fol 60b of manuscript No 1591 of the Vāṅgīya Sāhitya Parisad Calcutta) beginning as follows (cf *Sahitya Parisat Patrika* XLVII p 51) —

*Gauda smṛta samūha maṇi muktāṅkāra maṇikayayoh
Śrī Nārāyaṇa Śulapāni viduso(r)*

perhaps for the first time in Bengal Navya Nyāya terminology and methods in his exegesis. It appears that the works of Śrinatha twenty in number as so far counted of Haridāsa four in number and of Govindānanda about a dozen in number lay constantly before Raghunandana who was profoundly inspired by them. About A.D. 1440 Brhaspati Miśra better known by one of his titles Rāya mukuta wrote an authoritative and comprehensive digest *Smṛti ratnahara* a large unique fragment of which has been preserved in the library of the Asiatic Society Calcutta. Before him Soma Miśra wrote an interesting *Śūdra paddhati* ascribed to his patron Apipāla a local chief of Varendra living about A.D. 1350-1400. Both of them were respectfully cited by Raghunandana and other premier scholars.¹⁷

Raghunandana Bhaṭṭācārya employed his great intellectual powers in carefully scrutinizing and laying under contribution the vast literature on *dharma* that had accumulated before him and practically superseded all the previous authorities except Jimutavāhana and Śulapāni by his grand performance the *Smṛti tattva* in 28 parts with the addition of several practical guides and about a dozen other tracts on odd topics. The period of his activity is fixed as A.D. 1550-75 the latest authority cited by him (in the unpublished *Rāsa yātrā tattva*) being Govindānanda whose *Śuddhi kaumudī* recorded the *mala māsa* (intercalary month) Śrāvana in Śaka 1457 (July of A.D. 1535). The secret of his unique success lies in the fact that he lived, studied, taught and composed his works at Navadvīpa which had already become the greatest centre of Sanskrit culture in eastern India attracting scholars from the farthest corners of the country. What should properly be called the Nadia school of Navya Smṛti (new law) which has started with Śulapāni about a century before was firmly established by Raghunandana the Jagad guru who carried the world before him. Studies of the seven major works of his viz the *Tattvas* on *tithi*, *udvāha*, *prāyascitta*, *śuddhi*, *śraddha*, *mala māsa* and *ekādaśī* have been current throughout Bengal for over three centuries and being gradually developed through the famous commentaries of Kāśīrāma Vācaspati (c. A.D. 1725-50) and Radhā mohana Vidyāvācaspati (better known as Gosvāmin Bhaṭṭācārya c. A.D. 1800) and also through the advanced notes by various scholars assumed enormous proportions in academics. Raghunandana's texts however did never constitute the last word on topics of *dharma* on the other hand they were interpreted and revised by a galaxy of renowned scholars including Gopāla Nyāyapañcānana (A.D. 1613) and Raghunātha Sārvabhauma (A.D. 1661). Most of the works of these post Raghunandana Śmārtas have survived and contain many interesting views. For instance the *Dāya rahasya*

Cf *Indian Historical Quarterly* XVII pp. 456-71 for date and works of Rayamukuta and *SLP* LIV pp. 5-7 for Apipāla.

THE NIBANDHAS

of Rāmanātha Vidyāvācaspati (A D 1622 57) which according to Colebrooke obtained a considerable degree of authority in some of the districts of Bengal ¹⁸ boldly argued for the inheritance of the daughter in law and other women Most of them owed allegiance to Navadvīpa but belonged to separate *samājas* or socio religious communities into which Bengal had been divided from ancient times Final decisions in matters of *dharma* rested with such leading scholars of each locality who fully enjoyed public confidence and support ¹⁹ A healthy rivalry kept these local sub schools in a flourishing condition until the British times when they were ruthlessly uprooted and displaced by the different courts of law under foreign domination and imported ideals The vanishing line of uprooted scholars of the old type nevertheless continued to produce laudable works such as those of Chandrakanta Tarkalankara (A D 1836 1910) and Krishnanatha Nyaya panchanana (A D 1833 1911)

MITHILA SCHOOL

It is unfortunate that no Nibandha of the pre Muslim period has yet been traced in the land of Yājñavalkya This however was fully compensated for in the next period (A D 1200 1550) when Mithila produced by far the largest number of works on *dharma* in the whole of India thanks to the patronage of the Karnāta and the Brāhmana kings Śrīdattopādhyāya who was preceded by Graheśvara Miśra Ganeśvara Miśra and several others and who is not to be confused with a later Śrīdatta Miśra wrote as many as seven treatises of the greatest authority in Mithilā on the daily rites times of ceremonies religious vows funerals and purifications As he is cited by Candēśvara he must have lived about A D 1300 or a little earlier His frequent references to the Gaudas should be noted Harinātho pādhyāya's *Smṛti sāra* in two parts on *ācāra* (daily rites) and *vivāda* (legal disputes) is a complete digest of about the same age and equally authoritative The eight oceans (*ratnākara*) ²⁰ with a few supplements of the minister Candēśvara quickly made their mark in all the eastern regions for their extensive thorough up to date and lucid treatment and amply fulfilled the author's ambition of superseding the five previous classics viz *Prakāśa Pārījata Kamadhenu Halāyudha* and *Kalpataru* As he was alive still about A D 1370 when he wrote the *Rājanīti ratnākara* under

Colebrooke (Ed) *Dayabhaga* preface p ix

H P Sastri *Notices of Sanskrit Manuscripts* (old series) XI (1895) p 2 This is the only place where we find a reference to the important *samājas* of Bengal whose existence from ancient times has been completely forgotten and ignored by recent scholars

The titles of these works are *Kṛtya ratnākara* *Dana ratnākara* *Vyavahara ratnākara* *Śuddhi ratnākara* *Puja ratnākara* *Vivāda ratnākara* *Grhastha ratnākara* and *Rāja nīti ratnākara*

King Bhavēśa he must have begun his literary works about A.D. 1330. About the same time the great logician Varddhamānopādhyāya son of Gangesa wrote the *Smṛti paribhāṣā* and the *Śrāddha pradiṣa* both respectfully cited by all later authors of Mithilā and Bengal. He should not be confused with his namesake whom Raghunandana carefully distinguished by the term *navya* (new).

In the fifteenth century A.D. Mithilā produced quite a galaxy of great Smṛti writers too numerous to be mentioned adequately. The towering figure among them all was Vācaspati Miśra who shared with Gangesa the supreme title Parama guru (the Greatest Teacher) only twice used in the vast Pañjī literature of Mithilā. He wrote ten works on the Nyāya philosophy and at least thirty-one works on Smṛti and his period of activity lay between A.D. 1425 and 1475.²¹ Many of his works are still current in Mithilā and parts of Bengal and Assam. His *Vivāda cintāmaṇi* on civil law is one of the best work on the subject. His *Dvaita nirṇaya* on doubtful points of law is the most learned of all his Smṛti works and several eminent scholars wrote commentaries on it. A critical edition of his *Vyavahāra cintāmaṇi* a digest on legal procedure has recently been published.²² The great success and eminence of Vācaspati Miśra are proved by the fact that he is commonly identified with the Mithilā school. In spite of him however several works of his elderly contemporary Rudradhara have survived while those of his close contemporary and kinsman Śankara Miśra who made his mark as one of the foremost scholars of the Nyāya Vaisesika are all but lost. The famous poet Vidyāpati who slightly preceded Vācaspati wrote a few Smṛti works of which the *Gangā vākyaavalī* (ascribed to Queen Viśvasadevī), the *Dāna vākyaavalī* (ascribed to Queen Dhīramatī) and the *Durgā bhakti taranginī* (ascribed to Narasimhadeva of Mithilā) are the best known. The *Vivāda candra* of Miśra Miśra²³ and the *Danda viveka* of Vācaspati's pupil Varddhamāna Miśra²⁴ are two authoritative works on civil and criminal law both written in the third quarter of the century. A few more works were also written in the subsequent centuries including the *Smṛti kaumudī* of Devanatha (partly published at Darbhanga) but none of them circulated beyond Mithilā where the glaring activities at Banaras and Navadvīpa seem to have had a deterrent effect. The Mithila school it should be noted differs from the so called Banaras school only on minor points.

Journal of the Ganganatha Jha Research Institute IV p. 311

²¹ Ed. by Ludo Rocher, Gent. 1956

²² *Vivāda candra* Ed. Benares 1931

²⁴ *Danda viveka* Ed. Baroda 1931

THE NIBANDHAS
KAMARUPA SCHOOL

Kāmarūpa like many other places of India is guided in matters of law by its own literature on the subject existing from ancient times which forms therefore a separate school in that sense. The earliest work that has survived is the *Gangājala* by Dāmodaia Mahāmīśra² composed in Śaka 1356 (A.D. 1435) under an unidentified king Bhumijaya. It is still an authority in parts of Assam and North Bengal and is a concise work mostly metrical complete in five parts—*prāyascitta* (expiation) *vivāha* (marriage) *tithi* (luni solar days) *āsauca* (pollution) and *srāddha* (memorial rites). By far the greatest authority in Kāmarūpa is Pītāmbara Siddhāntavāgīśa surnamed Jagadguru Bhattācārya who had composed as many as twenty two *kaumudis* (so far counted). Many of them have been published and some have recorded their dates of composition: the *Dāya kaumudī* was written in Śaka 1526 the *Suddhi kaumudī* in Śaka 1534 the *Vyavahāra kaumudī* in Śaka 1525 (copy at Baroda) and the *Sankrānti kaumudī* in Śaka 1540. The period of his activity was therefore A.D. 1600-25. A profound scholar of both the Mīmāṃsā and the Nyāya he consulted important works of both Mithilā and Bengal which influenced his views to a very great extent. His works are extremely valuable therefore for a comparative study of the two rival schools. In width of learning thoroughness and precision of judgement he was in no way inferior to Raghunandana whom he has criticized though very rarely and without naming him. Besides *Vyavahāra* and *Vivāda*, both on civil law he wrote a separate *Danda kaumudī* on criminal law. He also wrote commentaries of the Tāntrika work *Śārada tilaka* and Vācaspati's *Dvaita nirṇaya*. The next great writer in Kāmarūpa was Śambhunātha Siddhāntavagīśa also a Jagad guru (World teacher) who composed under royal patronage a number of *bhāṣakas*: one *Akāla bhāṣaka* in Śaka 1639 and another in Śaka 1640 just a century after Pītāmbara. None of his works are available in print nor the *Pūrṇa candra* of Ripuñjaya Bhattācārya or the *Daśakarma paddhati* of Pañcānana Kandalī both regarded as authorities in the school.

BANARAS OR MID INDIAN SCHOOL

Banaras the nerve centre of Indian culture was the meeting ground of scholars from all parts of India belonging to different schools and systems. The Banaras school of law as the term is used in the modern courts, is consequently a great misnomer and really constitutes what should properly be called the Mid Indian (Madhya deśa) school. After the death of the great Mālava ruler Bhojadeva the patronage of scholarship and religious

Gangājala Ed. Gaunipur 1930 1936

institutions received a remarkable impetus from the sudden rise of the powerful Gāhadavāla kings of Kānyakubja. It was under Govindacandra the greatest ruler of the dynasty that his chief minister Bhatta Lakṣmīdhara composed the *Kṛtya kalpataru* in fourteen parts. It was the most comprehensive and authoritative digest of *dharma* of the pre-Muslim period and quickly circulated throughout India. Scrupulous about the purity of his sources he has almost put a final seal on the authenticity of original texts which he selected with rare discrimination adding very brief notes of his own. His eminence put to shade all the earlier codes which are now totally lost—the *Mahārṇava* (*prakāśa*) of Bhojadeva the *Parīṣāta* the *Kāmadhenu* of his friend Gopāla the code of Halāyudha and the *Ratna malā*. The *Kalpataru* was composed about A.D. 1110 early in the reign of Govindacandra and for over 500 years it was the main source of inspiration for all the subsequent Dharma śāstra literature except in South India. Ballāla Sena of Bengal Hemādri of western India and Candesvara of Mithilā to name only the most distinguished authors were immensely influenced by it. One reason for this unique position of the *Kalpataru* is the fact that Mid India (Madhya desa) had continued from the times of Manu to be the most enlightened place in India. In Śaka 1480 (A.D. 1558) Kāśīnātha Vidyānivāsa Bhaṭṭācārya one of the most distinguished Bengali scholars settled at Banaras composed among many books a comprehensive treatise named *Saccarita mīmāṃsā* where he cited the *Kalpataru* much oftener than any other work and regarded the customs of Mid India as faultless.²⁶

The historic defeat of Jayacandra followed by the sacking of Banaras and its temples caused a havoc in North India and for over a century all cultural activities seem to have shifted to safer places specially in South India. Nevertheless zealous Hindu chiefs came forward all around to protect the *dharma* which was considered to be in peril and many of them engaged competent scholars to compile new digests for the people of their own dominions. A systematic account of these laudable attempts is hard to compile as only a few outstanding works have survived. The most famous compilation of the Pathan period is the *Madana parīṣāta* written by Viśveśvara Bhatta for a comparatively petty Tāka chief named Madana pāla significantly called the *abhinava* (new) Bhoja who ruled over a small kingdom to the north of Delhi. He lived in the last half of the fourteenth century A.D. the date of composition of his medical lexicon being exactly

Manuscript at the Oriental Institute Baroda (accession No. 12694) a photographic copy is preserved in the Asiatic Society Calcutta. An account of this very important work was published in *Sahitya Parīṣat Patrikā* LVI pp. 70-4. One passage runs (fol. 63b of the last part) —

Ayam ācāro (a)ṅgīta Madhya deśacāratvat sarva deśīyair anusartum ucita iti

THE NIBANDHAS

1431 Vikramābda (A D 1375) It is an extensive code covering all topics of *dharma* (except *vyavahāra*) and became popular in all parts of India including Mithilā and Bengal A sister work called *Mahārṇava* (on the subject of what is called *karma vipāka* i.e. evils of antenatal acts and their remedies) is ascribed to Māṇdhata a son of Madanapāla and another the *Smṛti kaumudī* dealt with the duties of the śūdras The real author Viśveśvara was probably a Drāvida and wrote a learned commentary on the *Mitāksarā* named *Subodhinī* in his own name

Madanasimha a Mahārājadhiraṇya who probably ruled near Delhi wrote an extensive digest complete in seven parts²⁷ with the help of several scholars one of whom Viśvanatha Bhatta was a resident of Banaras This book named the *Madanaratna pradīpa* or *Madanaratna* though quite unknown in Mithilā and Bengal was respectfully cited by all the distinguished scholars of Banaras—Nārāyaṇa Bhatta Kamalakara Nīlakantha and Mitra Mīśra It was probably written about A D 1425 We close this account of the royal protectors of *dharma* with the mention of one more name which is a household word in India Rānī Durgāvati of Garh Mandala who was killed in the battlefield fighting bravely against Akbar's commander Asaf Khan in 973 A H (A D 1565-66) engaged Padmanābha Mīśra one of the greatest scholars of the age to compose an extensive digest named after her as *Durgāvati prakāśa* in seven parts Only the first part called *Samayāloka* was completed before her tragic end when the project fell through²⁸ The book was cited in Śankara Bhatta's *Dvaita nīrnaya* As a happy result of Akbar's policy his finance minister Todaramalla compiled a large encyclopaedia on *dharma* named *Todarānanda* between A D 1565 and 1589²⁹ All the above works however gradually became obsolete during the great revival of learning at Banaras proper under the leadership of the Bhatta family of Viśvāmītra gotra (clan) It started with the rebuilders of the Viśvanātha temple Jagad guru Nārāyaṇa Bhatta who was born in A D 1513 In the Dharma sāstra he was the author of three standard works still consulted largely by scholars viz *Antyesti paddhati* *Tristhālī setu* (on the three shrines) and *Pravoga ratna* (on the purificatory rites) Two of his sons Rāmakṛṣṇa and Śankara were also distinguished scholars but they were eclipsed by the grand performances of their respective sons Kamalākara and Nīlakantha Kamalākara a voluminous writer of twenty two works on various subjects composed the *Nīrnaya sindhu* in

²⁷ One part of *Madanaratna pradīpa* has been published from Bikaner edited by I V Kane

An excellent copy of the *Samayaloka* dated V S 1621 (Dec 5 A D 1564) is preserved in the Asiatic Society Calcutta This copy was made in the lifetime of Rānī Durgāvati very soon after the composition of the book

²⁹ Published in the Anup Oriental Series Bikaner edited by P L Vaidya

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

A D 1612 This work is now recognized as a great authority in both the Banaras and Bombay schools of law and is a monument of industry and erudition Krsnabhata Ārde composed a gloss on it named the *Ratna mālā*³⁰ Nilakantha a less ambitious scholar concentrated all his energy on a single work the encyclopaedic *Bhagavanta bhāskara* complete in twelve *Mayūkkhas* (rays) composed at the request of his patron Bhagavanta who was a Bundella chief³¹ Some of these *Mayukhas* are regarded as great authorities in Banaras and Bombay Nanda Pandita of the Dharmādhikarī family of Banaras was also a voluminous writer of at least thirteen works His *Dattaka mīmamsā* was regarded as the standard work on adoption in the whole of India while his extensive commentary on the *Viṣṇu Sūtra* called *Kesava varjayanī* is also a leading authority in Banaras It was composed in A D 1623 at the request of a certain Brāhmana chief named Kesava Nāyaka who migrated to Banaras from South India Vīrasimha of Orchha (A D 1605 27) and his protege Mitra Mīśra are immortalized in the *Vira mitrodaya* which was by far the bulkiest and the most comprehensive of all digests of those times It has separate parts on *vyavahara* (judicial procedure) *pūjā* (worship) and *moksa* (liberation) besides all the common topics of *dharma* Mitra Mīśra is regarded as an authority not only in North India but also in Drāvida We close this section with the bare mention of Anantadeva's *Smṛti kaustubha* written under Bazbahādur (A D 1638 78) of Ālmorā two of its several parts viz on *samskāras* and *rāja dharma* are accepted as authorities

SOUTH INDIAN SCHOOLS

References to Dāksinātya Nibandhas are found in many books of North India As the whole of South India denoted by the word *dāksinātya* never formed a single unit political or cultural an artificial unity due to its geographical situation south of the Vindhya is imposed by the term much like the so called Bombay and Madras schools of Hindu law upon different cultural institutions whose number must have varied almost with the number of monarchies in that region Only a few scraps of the lost history of these separate schools of law are now available

Utkala or Orissa was governed in matters of *dharma* by its own works for a long time Of the several standard works still current here the *Nityācara paddhati* by Vidyākara Vājapeyī composed about A D 1425 50 is the greatest authority respectfully cited by Vidyānīvaśa Raghunandana

Published in the Chawkhamba Sanskrit Series Banaras

The titles of these *Mayukhas* are *Samskara Acara Kala* (or *Samaya*) *Śrāddha Niti Vyavahara Dana Utisarga Pratistha Prayaścitta Suddhi* and *Santi* All of these have been published from Banaras while some have been published from Bombay and other places

and other authors of Bengal The *Nityacāra pradīpa* of Narasimha Vājapeyīn the *Kāla dīpa* and the *Śraddha dīpa* of Divyasimha Mahāpāṭia the *Ācāra sāra* and other works of Gadādhara and the *Prāyascitta manohara* of Murāri Mīśra are the ruling authorities in Orissa The celebrated Rāja Pratāparudra (A D 1496 1539) was the author of two famous books *Sarasvatī vilāsa*³² and the *Pratāpa mātānda* The extant portion of the former on *vyavahāra* is a mine of information much of which is no longer available elsewhere It is a recognized authority in the so called Madras school of Hindu law The title Vājapeyīn along with Agnī cit and Soma yājñin proves that Vedic sacrifices had not yet disappeared from Orissa

For over two centuries (A D 1335 1565) the kingdom of Vijayanagara stood as the great bulwark of Indian culture against foreign aggression and the name of Mādhavācārya the ascetic minister of its earlier kings shines forth as by far the greatest scholar of southern India in the mediaeval Age Two of his works on Dharma śāstra have been regarded as great classics throughout India viz extensive *bhāṣya* (commentary) on the *Parāśara Samhitā* popularly called the *Parāśara Mādhavīya*³³ and the *Kāla nīrṇaya* called the *Kāla Mādhava* The latter was written soon after Śaka 1281 (A D 1359) the last of several exact dates recorded in the book and within a decade or two it was commented upon by Rāmacandrācārya the celebrated author of the grammar *Prakriyā kaumudī* in the *Kāla nīrṇaya dīpikā* Rāmacandra's son Nrsimha again wrote a sub commentary (*vivarana*) on the *Dīpikā* in the year Śaka 1331 (A D 1409) Mādhava was cited both by Śūlapāni and Raghunandana He is a recognized authority in the so called Madras school of Hindu law

Next only to Mādhava Hemādri was the brightest star in South India He composed among many works on different subjects the *Caturvarga cintāmani* intended to be complete in five parts—*vrata* (vows) *dāna* (charity) *tirtha* (pilgrimage) *moksa* (liberation) and *parisesa* (the rest)³⁴ He was then the minister in charge of the state records of Mahādeva (A D 1261 1270) the Yādava ruler of Devagiri The Yādavas seem to have come forward as the saviours of Indian culture when Muslim armies were attacking the northern provinces An idea of the extent of the great book is gathered from the fact that the printed portion of roughly half of it covers about six thousand pages Hemādri was a profound scholar of the Mīmāṃsā and its maxims are employed by him at every step of his arguments Parts of the book especially those on *vrata* and *dāna* soon became

³² Published from Mysore edited by R Samasastry

Parāśara's *Dharma Samhitā* with the comm of Śāyana Madhavacarya ed by V S Islampurkar BSS 3 vols Bombay 1893 1919

³³ Ed by Bharatachandra Siromani BI Calcutta 1873 1911

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

standard works both in the South and the North. He was cited by Mādhava and Madanapāla.

Over two centuries after Hemādri, when the kingdom of Devagiri passed to the Muslim rulers, one Dalapati, sometimes called a Mahārājā dhirāja, was the minister and keeper of imperial records like Hemādri of a Muslim overlord named Nijamsaha, probably identical with Ahmad Nizam Shah (A.D. 1490-1508). He composed an encyclopaedic work named the *Nṛsimha prasāda* in twelve parts, including one on *vyavahāra*; it was therefore more comprehensive than Hemādri's book. It is a notable instance of the tolerance of a powerful Muslim ruler in allowing his minister to write a Hindu code with his name subscribed.

The rest of the South Indian works—and their number is quite large—cannot unfortunately be referred to exact localities and particular patrons. Among them Devanna Bhatta's *Smṛti candrika*³, an extensive digest very frequently cited by Hemādri, is regarded as a great authority next only to the *Mitākṣarā* in civil law in the Madras State. As he has named Aparārka, his date is fixed at about A.D. 1200. The *Smṛtyārtha sāra* of Śrīdhara³⁸ is another famous book which must have been composed about A.D. 1150 as it was already cited by Devanna Bhatta. Nṛsimhacārya, the celebrated author of the *Kala nīrnaya dīpikā vivaraṇa* (A.D. 1409), wrote another authoritative book *Prayoga pārijata* in five parts—that on the *samskāras* has been published³⁷. We close with the mention of the *Vyavahāra nīrnaya* of Varadarāja mentioned in the *Sarasvatī vilāsa* as a recent author who probably preceded Mādhavācārya³⁸.

UNDER BRITISH RULE

Early in the British period there were laudable attempts on the part of the foreign rulers to codify the civil laws of the Hindus in select matters. We mention here two interesting compilations which were used in the courts for a long time to decide cases of Hindu law. Eleven eminent scholars from all parts of the kingdom readily responded to an invitation from Warren Hastings and came over to Fort William, Calcutta, where with the help of authentic books they compiled a code in Sanskrit called the *Vivādārṇava setu* in February A.D. 1775. The greatest and the oldest among them was Rāmagopāla Nyāyāṅkārī, who came from Navadvīpa, the greatest centre of learning in that region. For a long time he was the leading Smārta of Bengal and his position as such was in no way inferior to the chief judge

Ed. by J. R. Ghorpare, Bombay, 1918.

Ed. by R. S. Vaidya, ASS, Poona, 1912.

³⁷ Published from Bombay (1916).

Published by the Adyar Library (1941), edited by K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar.

THE NIBANDHAS

of the Supreme Court. He died about A.D. 1791 at the great age of 100 years and his wife became a *sati* ³⁹. The code was first translated in Persian and thence into English. Jones found out that the original was succinct in the law of contracts and the translation had no authority. So at his suggestion a more ample repertory of the Hindu laws of contracts and inheritances was undertaken and entrusted to Jagannātha Tarkapañcānana of Triveni who finished the original named the *Vivada bhagārnava* in A.D. 1792 with the assistance of his own six pupils. Jagannātha was the most learned and the most long lived scholar of Bengal and died in A.D. 1807 at the age of 114. Colebrooke translated the huge book in A.D. 1798 in four large volumes and this English version guided the courts for a long time though the original remains unpublished.

CONCLUSION

The contents of the Nibandhas fall under three main heads corresponding to the three chapters of the *Īśānavalkya Samhitā* viz *acāra vyavahāra* and *prāyascitta*. The supreme end of all the three streams of regulations elaborated therein is an all round perfection of the individual in his religious, civil and moral relations. The ramifications of each branch are almost as numerous as the circumstances of human life. After the establishment of Muslim rule in many parts of the country there was a great check on the development of the *vyavahāra* part of the Indian digests as many of the provisions of the civil and criminal laws elaborated therein became inoperative in the country at large and were observed only in a few pockets of Hindu monarchies that raised their heads from time to time. This is reflected in the remarkable fact that hardly a dozen pre-British works on *vivāda* (civil law) have survived and the number of extant works on *vyavahāra* (judicial procedure) is comparatively very small.

The establishment of a foreign power of a different race and faith in India acted however as a special inducement to the Hindus to zealously guard their *dharma* from dissolution. For the fact remains that the non-civil part of the literature developed during this period to a pitch almost unparalleled in literary history and the number of works so far discovered is already legion. The sacred trust of the king as the ultimate dispenser of justice now reposed in the social institutions that flourished everywhere in spite of the foreign domination. The literature forms therefore the most important material for the social and religious history of India in the Muslim period. The fundamental identity of ideology running through

N. B. Halhead *A Code of Gentoo Laws* (London 1776) Preliminary Discourse p. 5 and Preface p. 6. W. Ward *Account of the Writings, Religion and Manners of the Hindoos* (Serampore 1811) II p. 560.

the whole literature constituted its real strength the idea of the whole man where the mere citizen was never divorced from his religious and spiritual entity powerfully appealed to the public at large till the British times Laksmīdhara Hemādri and Mitra Miśra significantly included a part on salvation in their codes of law Upon the bed rock of this unity of purpose flourished the network of the various schools and sub schools of law creating a great solidarity and cohesion among the various classes of society which enabled it to hold its own against heavy odds Their rivalry related to differences in intricate minor details and theoretical views only with ever increasing intellectual appeals In practice a sinner in Cochin for instance would be prescribed the same course of penance as one in Assam Every civilized society is initially confronted with the danger of the brute in man overpowering his divinity The rigours of civil and religious laws prescribed by the Nibandhas were able to dispel this danger completely and more successfully we should say than modern codes of law In the language of Laksmīdhara as he wrote at the commencement of the *dāna* and *niyata-kāla* chapters of his digest the Iron Age (*kali*) was completely kept under check by the prescribed performances Under a bigoted foreign domination *kali* again attempted to scare away *dharma* and if the magnitude of the great danger is calculated the success achieved by the literature under review can by no means be regarded as small This success excites our admiration all the more when it is considered that the literature grew up under the most distressing conditions there was no state sanction to support it nor any sympathies for the ideals from the alien rulers There is a tendency among recent scholars to criticize the authors of the Nibandhas adversely for raising subtle arguments and revolving within narrow grooves It is however generally forgotten that the Nibandhas were designed not only for the purpose of regulating society but also for constituting a separate branch of literature for studies in the advanced academies, where intricacy of arguments is not certainly regarded as a fault Śrīkr̥ṣṇa of the Bengal school catered for society by composing the admirable and handy monograph on inheritance called the *Dāya krama samgraha* and at the same time delighted the academicians by his extremely intricate commentary of the *Dāya bhāga* Moreover the role of the academies as an important factor in society should not be underestimated

PENANCES AND VOWS

ONE of the three main pillars upon which the superstructure of *dharma* (duty) rests is designated as *prāyascitta* (penance) a highly technical term coined by the Indian sages and universally adopted everywhere in India from the earliest times. The highest perfection of man cannot be attained unless his religious and civil conduct (*acāra* and *vyavahāra*) is refined by a proper regulation of his moral and spiritual relations. The Indian sages started with this fundamental concept and its realization led to the formulation from very ancient times of an elaborate scheme of penances and vows which sought to eliminate all sins and evils from society.

LITERATURE ON PENANCE

Any student will be struck by the vastness, antiquity and remarkable continuity of Sanskrit literature on penance which forms an integral part of the Dharma sāstra. It is dealt with by all the extant Dharma Sūtras notably those of *Gautama* ¹ *Baudhāyana* ² *Āpastamba* ³ *Vasistha* ⁴ and *Viṣṇu* ⁵ as well as by most of the comprehensive Samhitās and Nibandhas. There are besides a large number of independent treatises on penance about a hundred of which have been listed by Kane ⁶. Of the Nibandhas the *Prāyascitta prakarana* of Bhavadeva Bhatta ⁷ is the earliest and probably the best book on the subject now available in print and forms together with the standard works of Śūlapāni and Raghunandana the three ruling authorities on the subject in the Bengal school. One of the last works on the subject is the *Prāyascitta vyavasthā samgraha* of Kāśinātha Tarkālankāra who lived in Calcutta and died in A.D. 1857. It was published in the lifetime of the author in Śaka 1774 (A.D. 1852). Kāśinātha was a distinguished pupil of the famous Jagannātha Tarkapañcānana and a leading Smārta of his time. From Gautama who is supposed to be the earliest among the writers of the surviving Dharma Sūtras to Kāśinātha there is almost an unbroken period of nearly 2500 years during which time the moral foundations of the Aryan culture stood like a rock against waves of hostile forces. The innumerable writers and exponents of the literature on penance played an important part in this great array. But while Gautama

Chs 19-27
Chs XX-XXV
Rajshahi Ed 1927

² II
Chs 33-55

Praśna I
H Dh I pp 591-4

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

was hailed as a great sage in his time Kāśinātha had to face an aggressive modernism in the metropolis of British India

PENANCE IN THE VEDAS

There are many Vedic texts where expiation of sins by means of penances is referred to One interesting case is cited here Manu⁸ states that a penance may be performed even for an intentional act of sin on the strength of the Vedic texts According to Medhātithi the legend of Upahavya (Upahavya Brāhmana) should be cited here as an illustration Indra the chief of the gods threw some (heretic) ascetics unto wild dogs⁹ It was obviously an intentional act technically constituting a *brahma hatyā* (murder of a Brāhmana the highest of sins) for which a censure confronted him Indra ran to Prajāpati who prescribed as a penance a single-day Vedic rite thenceforth called *upahavya* The whole text as cited and explained by Kulluka is found in the *Tandya mahā brāhmana*¹⁰ where Indra is stated to have expiated the same sin by other similar means¹¹ Viśvarūpa in his commentary¹² based his arguments on the same Vedic text more fully cited The most striking feature of the story is the fact that Indra went through all the essentials of a penance as performed in India even today for the commitment of a sin—repentance through public censure (or the bidding of conscience the word *aśhila* may after all mean *aśarira*) approaching the proper authority for the prescription of a penance and its actual performance It only proves that a convention had already grown about the practice of penances in the age of the Brāhmanas

DEFINITION AND SCOPE OF PENANCES

According to Medhātithi¹³ the word *prāyaścitta* denotes in a traditional sense (*rūdhi*) a particular kind of causal (*naimittika*) act Bhavadeva however quotes a verse ascribed to Angiras by Śūlapāni and others which derives the word as a compound of *prāyas* meaning austerity and *citta* meaning resolution Raghunandana defines it on the basis of a text of Hārta cited and explained by him that a penance is an act enjoined in a sacred precept as the means of only removing sins¹⁴ The occasion for penances is the widest possible range of offences for according to the well known texts of Manu¹⁵ and Yājñavalkya¹⁶ supported by older authorities

XI 45

XVIII 1 9 Chowkhamba Ed II p 305

VIII 1 4 XIII 4 17 XIV 11 29 XIX 4 7

On *Yaj* III 212 Trivandrum Ed II p 81

On *Manu* XI 44

Prayaścitta tattva p 5 This definition has been subjected to intricate analysis e g

by the famous commentator Gosvamin Bhattācārya to the delight of the academicians

XI 44

Taitt Saṁh VI 2 7 5

III 219

PENANCES AND VOWS

a man who omits a prescribed act or performs a blamable one or cleaves to sensual enjoyments must perform a penance. According to the interpretation of Medhātithi and Visvarupa it extends to all the four castes i.e. in the language of Govindarāja to every man. The law of penances is mainly founded on the correct interpretation of these basic texts. Medhātithi clearly states that the real incentive to the performance of an act—and in the above text of Manu the reference is to all obligatory acts whose omission is an offence (*pratyavaya*)—is traceable in the *arthavāda* (exegesis) portion of the Vedas for the fear complex stored up therein is as stated in a cited text an infinitely more powerful force than the injunctions.

In this connection a pertinent question arises that has been a matter of great controversy among the Indian philosophers and writers on the Dharma sāstra whether an act of penance can remove the effects of an act of sin. One opinion is as stated pointedly by Gautama¹⁷ the earliest among the authors of the Dharma Sūtras now extant that penances should not be done because the deed does not perish. After Gautama onwards all the writers on *dharma* agree that penances do remove the effects of sinful acts. Medhātithi refuted an opinion¹⁸ that acts cannot perish without giving effects which must be tasted but the non performance of penances in each case creates an extra sin. This compromise is unacceptable to the Smārtas. Śūlapani for instance restricts the above rule beyond the pale of penances¹⁹. The efficacy of penances is also accepted in the Purāṇas where sectarian views are promulgated on that basis. The *Viṣṇu Purāṇa*²⁰ for instance regards the recollection of the name of Hari as the best penance for all repentant sinners and according to the commentator Śrīdhara Svāmīn other penances are nevertheless useful for those who do not believe in the name of Hari.

The institution of penances moreover is based on certain notions and beliefs which are confirmed articles of faith in the Aryan culture. The mythological conception of heaven and hell is one such fundamental thing which is ingrained in the whole Indian literature from the Vedic period.

PENANCES AND HELLS

The relation between penances and hells is clearly stated in the *Yājñiaka Samhitā*²¹—men addicted to sins without repentance and without

XIX 45
Dīpalālaka (Chrupur s Ed p 94) Cited under Manu XI 46
Nabhiṭkta i ksīyate karmetyadi pīṭyāścittetara
viśayam Trivandrum Ed II p 84
 II 6 36 III 221

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

performing penances go to hells According to Visvarūpa²² this applies only to intentional sinners and not to those who commit sins unintentionally Twenty-one hells are enumerated here by Yājñavalkya²³ which fairly agree with the list given by Manu²⁴ The various Purāṇas also agree that the hells are for those who do not perform penances for sinful acts²⁵ The number and description of these zones however vary in the different Purāṇas considerably²⁶ It should be mentioned here that both Manu²⁷ and Yājñavalkya²⁸ include *nāstikya* (heresy) among minor sins (*upapātakas*) and the term primarily means according to Medhātithi and others disbelief in the existence of the other world (of heavens and hells) The mention of hells in the very first line of the section on penances in *Yājñavalkya* points to the inseparable connection between the two which is further proved by the fact that for the words man must perform a penance in the basic text of Manu²⁹ cited above Yājñavalkya substitutes the words man courts a hell in the corresponding passage³⁰ Viśvarupa curiously interprets the phrase addiction to sensual enjoyments both in *Manu* and *Yājñavalkya* as equivalent to non performance of penances³¹

KARMA VIPĀKA

Another fundamental article of faith established in the Dharma sāstra literature is the theory of *karma vipāka* or the ripening of antenatal acts This is essentially based on the connected theory of the transmigration of souls and according to it all diseases of the human body are the result of sinful acts committed in previous lives In some cases according to Manu³² they are the result of misdeeds committed in the present life as well Manu³³ and Yājñavalkya³⁴ cite a few interesting instances of the working of the theory e.g. a stealer of food (in a former life) suffers from dyspepsia (in the present life) These are in consequence of a remnant of former misdeeds subsisting after the inescapable hell life fated to the unrepentant³⁵ Another consequence of such misdeeds is a rebirth among the lower animals and Yājñavalkya³⁶ has specified them by way of example for the mortal sinners Penances prescribed for the repentant are considered to have the power of removing all the three successive horrors of hells animal lives and human afflictions

III 222 4

Kane *H Dh* I p 165

XI 67

Cf the word *patanam* in III 219 which according to

Trivandrum Ed II pp 78 9

XI 49 53

² IV 88 90

The *Padma Purana* gives a list of one hundred and forty hells

III 236

Cf *Viṣṇu Purana* II 6 3^o

XI 44

XI 44

śulapani means hell

XI 48

⁴ III 207 15

³ *Manu* XI 53 with the correct reading *karmavaśisena* as explained by Medhātithi Govindaraja and Kullūka The word *karmakṣayāt* in the corresponding text of Yājñavalkya (III 206) is explained exactly in the same way by Viśvarupa (p 73)

³⁶ III 207 8

PENANCES AND VOWS

The theory so briefly sketched by Manu Yājñavalkya and other ancient sages was later on elaborated into a regular scheme and an important section of the Dharma sāstra named *karma uṣpāka* grew up on the subject. The well known manual ascribed to the ancient sage Śātātapa and long available in print is a comparatively late work—the reading of the *Harivamsa*³⁷ is a penance prescribed in it. Many famous authors composed separate books on the subject. We mention only the *Mahārṇava* in forty chapters a sister work of the famous *Madana parijata*³⁸. It appears that no specific penances for antenatal misdeeds inferred from the present bodily ailments were known to Medhatithi³⁹ who applies the rule of Gautama in the matter—the *krcchra* and *atikrcchra* and the lunar penance for all unspecified sins though he also cites a text of Vasiṣṭha recommending a partial observance of the penance suitable for each supposed original sin. At present however almost every disease is taken by the above theory to be caused by a particular sin of the previous birth and an appropriate penance is prescribed and duly performed before death by a good number of the believing public.

CLASSIFICATION OF SINS

All ancient sages from Gautama downwards have divided sins into two broad classes viz *mahāpātakas* (mortal sins) and *upapātakas* (minor sins). There is practically no difference of opinion in the enumeration of the former they are killing a Brāhmana drinking wine stealing and adultery with a *guru's* wife. They unmistakably point to the four corner stones of Aryan criminology and their bracketing together lends colour in a peculiar manner to the Indian standard of morality. The murder of a Brāhmana as the greatest of all crimes is already an admitted fact in Vedic times. One such Vedic text is cited by Viśvarūpa⁴⁰. Association with the four above mortal sinners is regarded as the fifth great sin after which both Manu⁴¹ and Yājñavalkya⁴² enumerate a number of sins which are equal to the four great sins. Falsely accusing one's teacher for instance is regarded as equal to *brahmahatyā* (killing a Brahmana). A long list of the minor sins (*upapātakas*) follows in Manu⁴³ and Yājñavalkya⁴⁴. These lists differ considerably in the different texts and are not as pointed out by Viśvarūpa⁴⁵ exhaustive in any way. Cow killing tops the list of the minor sins.

Bhaviṣya arranges all sins in a more scientific way under five categories viz murder taking forbidden food theft adultery and association

II 90 Kane H Dh I 382 f On Manu XI 47
On Yaj III 221 Trivandrum Ed II p 81
XI 56 9 4 III 228 31 XI 60 71
III 234 41 Trivandrum Ed II p 93

with the wicked They are dealt with in five successive chapters of his *Prāyascitta prakarana* ⁴⁶ which ends with a small chapter the sixth and last on the nature of the hard penances The book opens with a brilliant dialectic on the term murder ⁴⁷ according to his analysis a murderer is of seven kinds or of fourteen with intention as an additional factor

Śūlapani in the *Dīpakalikā* ⁴⁸ and the *Prāyascitta vrveka* adopts a better and more detailed classification on the authority of *Viṣṇu Dharma Sūtra* and *Samvarta* The deadliest sins called *atipātakas* are adultery with one's mother daughter and daughter in law If intentional no sort of penance not even suicide can expiate them Next come the well known *mahā pātakas* while their equals are placed in a separate class next in order named *anupātakas* A miscellaneous class is added at the end The *Śabda kalpadruma* (under the word *prāyascitta*) adopts a nine fold classification adding four minor classes after the longest list of *upapātakas*

PENANCES AND OTHER MEANS OF EXPIATION

There is wide divergence among the sages in the matter of formulating the exact means of expiation of the various sins The great task before the authors of the Nibandhas is to reconcile the ancient texts and evolve out of them a uniform law of penances Viṣvarūpa's commentary on the section of *prāyascitta* in *Yājñavalkya* which can well pass for a separate book is the first attempt to bring the conflicting views on the subject to a harmony The ever expanding literature on the subject that grew up subsequently succeeded in evolving a regular code of penances applicable in all parts of India The word *prāyascitta* in a wide sense covers all the various means of expiation only a few typical specimens of which are touched below

1 In the earlier Vedic period Vedic rites and recitals were largely prescribed and performed as penance Gautama in his *Dharma Sūtra* ⁵⁰ mentions twenty one purificatory texts which include nine *sāmans* In the typical section on Brāhmana killing Manu ⁵¹ prescribes among numerous alternatives the horse sacrifice and six (or four according to Medhātithi) other Vedic rites as well as thrice reciting a whole Veda ⁵² But these privileges of kings and others of higher caste were never open to the lower classes and they fell away in the course of time Bhavadeva altogether omits them and under cow killing makes the interesting remark that the conflicting views of ancient sages about the penances of cow killing evidently

Rajshahi Ed 1927 pp 127-32
⁴⁶ On *Yaj* III 259 Trivandrum Ed II p 99
 Chs 34-42 XIX 12

⁴⁷ *Ibid* pp 18
 XI 75

Manu, XI 77

hot water milk clarified butter and air the twelve day *prājāpatya* (a combination of three morning meals three evening meals three unasked for meals and three fasts successively) the twelve day *paraka* fast and the lunar penance *cāndrāyana* with food regulated by the phases of the moon Their observance in many more intricate forms has not yet completely vanished from the austere section of the Aryans

5 Among other means of expiation the gift of cows is prominently mentioned by sages like Āpastamba⁶⁶ Manu⁶⁷ and Yājñavalkya⁶⁸ In one case Manu⁶⁹ prescribes a *krcchra* which normally means the *prājāpatya* when one is unable to make the proper gift This suggests an equation of a twelve days vow with the gift of a single milch cow as actually stated in a text of Mārkaṇḍeya cited by Bhavadeva⁷⁰ Accordingly all the hard penances have long been converted by a convenient convention to such gifts for the benefit of the rich who are unable to observe the former A twelve years vow for instance is equal to a gift of three hundred and sixty milch cows⁷¹ By one more subsequent convention elaborately worked out by Śulapāṇi the latter again is convertible to its money value the traditional price of a cow accepted for calculation being only three copper coins Such gifts of money as penance are still largely practised in India

All penances are practised subject to certain common rules They are doubled when the sins are committed intentionally and are reduced to half for minor old invalid and women sinners They are performed openly when the sins are known to the public but secretly otherwise These secret penances somewhat different from the public ones are specially noted by Bhavadeva and other authors on the basis of ancient texts⁷² The two well known classes of virtues *yama* and *niyama* (self control) are enumerated by Yājñavalkya under penance⁷⁴ On the other hand the main aim of a penance is the purification of the soul (*atmaśuddhi*) This moral and spiritual appeal runs through the whole literature on penance imparting an elevating character to it

Those who do not perform penances out of heresy are in the first instance dealt with by the people of their respective communities who must ostracize them in the Indian style⁷⁵ For the effect of a penance is the fitness for social fellowship (*samvyava haryata*) Secondly they come under the provisions of the *danda* (criminal law) and are inflicted with corporal punishment and fines⁷⁶ If however they perform the due penances fines alone are to be imposed on them⁷⁷

I 9 24 1

XI 140

Manu XI 249 66

Manu XI 228 43

Ibid IX 236 9

XI 128 130 1 etc

Prayaścitta prakarana p 11

Yaj III 302 14 etc

III 313 4

III 266 7

Ibid

⁷ Manu XI 183 6

Ibid IX 240 1

PENANCES AND VOWS

The law of penances is to be administered by an assembly (*parisad*) consisting of three members learned in the Vedas according to Manu⁷⁸ though by a text of Yama (cited by Raghunandana in the *Prāyascitta tattva*) one or two members also would suffice. They must be well read in the *Mīmāṃsā* and *Dharma śāstra*. Such a competent person must not refuse to state the proper penance to a penitent who again must approach him with due respect and ceremoniously ask him for a ruling in the open assembly. Auspicious moments are observed for the purpose. The *Brāhmana* administering the law should be properly remunerated. Formerly it was the gift of a milch cow and a bull or garments. At present a written ruling duly signed is obtained by a penitent with some money and in matters of controversy healthy disputes arise among scholars over it.

The law of penances we conclude comes under and forms only a part of the great law of castes and orders universally established among the Aryans in India from very ancient times. This explains why Gautama in his *Dharma Sūtra* commences the chapter on penances with the head line 'Laws of castes and orders'.⁷⁹ To shut our eyes under the blinding forces of modernism against the achievements of these ancient institutions subsisting through the millenniums is in a sense denying the first lesson of Indian history that she possesses an undying culture and a glorious past.

XI 86
Varnaśramadharmā XIX 1

HINDU SACRAMENTS (SAMSKĀRAS)

HINDUISM as an organized religion provides a comprehensive scheme for the enlightenment elevation and purification of man. Broadly speaking the whole integrated scheme of Hindu thought and practice is divided into (1) *jñāna kānda* (2) *upāsana kānda* and (3) *karma kānda*. The term *kānda* here signifies a branch or department and *jñāna*, *upāsana* and *karma* denote respectively knowledge, meditation and action as taught by the scriptures. But the word *karma* when used in the general sense covers all the activities of a person including the practice of universal ethical virtues, general and particular social duties and symbolic and mystic rituals. The last mentioned item again has a very wide scope as it includes all sorts of religious or socio-religious ceremonies. The sacraments form an important section of the *karma kānda* because they are believed to reform and sanctify the person for whom they are performed marking various occasions of his life from conception in the mother's womb to the cremation of the body at death; they have influence even beyond death as they determine the course of the soul. Besides the obvious material and cultural value of the sacraments, the Mīmāṃsakas developed a theory about the potency of sacramental rituals assuming a category known as *apurva* or *adrsta* which relates the visible ritualistic act to the result aimed at by it, namely the sanctification of the recipient. *Karma* flawlessly performed purifies the mind and when it is in the form of a sacrament it brings about the complete sanctification of the personality.

MEANING AND SIGNIFICANCE OF THE TERM SAMSKĀRA

The nearest English word by which the term *samskāra* may be translated is *sacrament*. The common word *ceremony* does not give the full and precise meaning for *samskāra* does not mean merely an outward rite or observance which is religious or held sacred. It has been defined as a peculiar excellence accruing from the performance of the rites ordained (by the Śāstras)—an excellence residing either in the soul or in the body.¹ The word sacrament is defined in *The Concise Oxford Dictionary* thus: Religious ceremony or act regarded as outward and visible sign of inward or spiritual grace and this is applicable to *samskāra* also.

The Sanskrit word *samskāra* is derived from the root *kr* with the prefix *sam* and suffix *ghañ* added and is used in different senses. The various

Ātma śarīranyatara nistho vihīta kṛiyā janyah atisaya unśeṣah samskārah

systems of philosophy employ it to signify different meanings an attribute of sacrificial objects arising from sprinkling and the like (Mīmāṃsakas) a false attribution of physical action to the soul (Advaita Vedāntins) self reproductive quality or faculty of impression (Naiyāyikas) and so forth In classical Sanskrit literature *samskara* has the sense of education cultivation training ² refinement perfection and grammatical purity ³ polishing embellishment decoration and ornament impression form mould operation and influence ⁴ conative tendency which gives rise to recollected knowledge ⁵ a purificatory rite a sacred rite or ceremony consecration sanctification and hallowing ⁶ effect of past work merit of action ⁷ etc. Thus it may be seen that the Hindu sacraments aimed at not only the formal purification of the body but also at sanctifying impressing refining and perfecting the entire individuality of the recipient producing a special merit in him

THE SCOPE AND NUMBER OF THE SAMSKARAS

The first systematic attempt at describing the *samskāras* is found in the Grhya Sūtras But they do not use the term *samskāra* in its proper and peculiar sense as they adopt its Mīmāṃsā meaning and include the *samskāra* proper in the list of the domestic sacrifices In these *sūtras* there seems to be no clear distinction drawn between sacrifices in general and the *samskāras* performed to sanctify the body and perfect the personality It is in the *Vaikhāṇasa smārta Sūtras*¹⁰ that a clear distinction between the *samskāras* relating to the body (*astādasa samskarāḥ sarvārāḥ*) and sacrifices in general is met The twenty two sacrifices separately mentioned are also included there in the list of the bodily *samskāras* but which are really speaking daily and occasional sacrifices

The Grhya Sūtras¹¹ generally deal with the bodily *samskāras* beginning with *vivāha* (marriage) and ending in *samavartana* (graduation) The majority of them omit *antyeṣṭi* (funeral) perhaps because of impurity and inauspiciousness attached to the dead body the Grhya Sūtras of Pāraskara Āśvīlayana and Baudhāyana have sections dealing with it The number of *samskāras* in the Grhya Sūtras fluctuate between twelve and eighteen

V 3 35 *Nisarga samskara vinuta ity asau nrpena cakre yuvaraja śabda bhak —Raghuvamśa*

Sa nskāravatyeva gira manasi taya sa putasca vibhūṣitaśca —Kumarasambhava I 28

Praṇika samskara tvadhikam babhau —Raghuvamśa III 18

Svabhava sundaram vastu na samsk ram apeksate—Abhijana śakuntala VII 23

Yan nave bhajane lagnaḥ samskaro na yatha bhavet —Hitopadeśa I 8

Samskara janayam jnanam smrtih —Tarka saṁgraha

⁸ *Ka-yah śarī samskaraḥ pavanah pretya ceha a —Manu II*

Plā anumeyal bīarambhah samskaraḥ praktana iva —Raghuvamśa I 20

I 1

Āśvīlayana Gr S I 1 1 Paraskara Gr S I 1 2 Gobhila Gr S Khadira Gr S

¹¹ *2 1 Baudhāyana Gr S I 1 1*

In course of time sixteen became the classical number comprising the following (1) *garbhādhāna* (conception) (2) *pumsavana* (engendering a male issue) (3) *simantonayana* (parting the hair) (4) *jātakarman* (natal rites) (5) *nāmakarana* (naming) (6) *niskramana* (first outing) (7) *annaprasana* (first feeding with boiled rice) (8) *cūdakarana* (tonsure) (9) *karna vedha* (piercing the ear lobes) (10) *vidyārambha* or *aksarārambha* (learning the alphabet) (11) *upanayana* (holy thread ceremony) (12) *vedārambha* (first study of the Vedas) (13) *kesānta* (cutting the hair) (14) *samāvartana* (graduation) (15) *vivāha* (marriage) and (16) *antyeṣṭi* (funeral) Of these items (10) (12) and (13) are later in origin

THE PURPOSE OF THE SAMSKĀRAS

The *samskāras* are first of all based on the simple unquestioned faith of the unsophisticated mind and so they have a popular import. The Hindus of early times believed that they were surrounded by superhuman influences good or evil and they sought to remove the evil influences by the various means they devised for the purpose and they invoked the beneficial ones for affording them timely help. Among the means adopted for the removal of evil influences the first was propitiation. When the unfavourable power was propitiated it turned away without injuring the person purified by the *samskāra*.¹² The second means was deception.¹³ The evil influences were diverted either by hiding the person exposed to them or by offering his substitute. The third means was to resort to threat and direct attack—when the above two methods failed—either by the person himself or by any one officiating or administering authority.¹⁴ The gods were also invoked to prevent the evil influences reaching the recipient of the *samskāra*. Water fire noise a staff or other materials were also employed for driving away the troublesome influences.

Just as hostile influences were shunned by people favourable influences were attracted and invited for their benefit. It was believed that every period of a man's life was presided over by a deity and therefore when ever occasion arose that deity was invoked to confer boons and blessings on the person concerned. Men help themselves also. Suggestions and references to analogous phenomena played a great part in attracting favourable influences. Touching breathing feeding anointment dramatic utterances etc were frequently used for this purpose.

In the next place *samskāras* have a cultural purpose governing the evolution of the society because they comprehend sacrifices and rites that

Tatastustia evam kumaram munca—*Parashara Gr S I 16 20*

¹² *Anuguptam etam sakeṣaṁ gomaya pīṇḍaṁ etc*—*Parashara Gr S II*

Āpastamba Gr S I 15

have for their aim domestic felicity resulting from the gain of cattle progeny long life wealth prosperity strength and intellectual vigour. Though not outside the common run of men the priest who was above the masses further introduced considerable refinement in the customs and rites of the society in various ways. He always welcomed and blessed the material aspirations of the householders and attempted to sanctify the members of the community and help them in their spiritual growth.

The cultural purpose sought to be served by the ancient Hindu rites and ceremonies chiefly related to the formation and development of personality. Just as a picture is painted with various colours so the character of a person is formed by his undergoing various *samskāras* properly.¹⁵ The Hindu sages realized the need of consciously moulding the character of individuals born into their society instead of letting them grow in a haphazard way. This moulding of character was however not mere patternizing rather it aimed at affording the subject timely orientation and help.

Thirdly the performance of the *samskāras* served the purpose of self-expression. The householder was not for ever a terror-stricken beggar petitioning the gods for favours. He performed the *samskāras* also for expressing his own joys, felicitations and even sorrows (as for instance the death ceremony) at the various events of life.

Apart from the popular and cultural purposes served by the *samskāras* according to the seers and the lawgivers they helped also in imparting to life a higher religious sanctity. Impurity associated with the material body—real or imaginary—is removed by the performance of the *samskāras*. The whole body is consecrated and made a fit dwelling place for the soul. The body is made a fit instrument for realizing Brahman by Vedic studies observance of the vows offering of oblations performance of sacrifices procreation of children and practising the five *maha yajñas* (great sacrifices) and *yajñas*.¹⁶ The theory is still current that a man is born a Śūdra he becomes a twice-born (*dvija*) by the performance of *samskāras* by acquiring the Vedic lore he becomes a *vipra* (an inspired poet) and by attaining Brahman he becomes a Brāhmaṇa.¹⁷ However the *samskāras* were never regarded as ends by themselves they were performed to help the growth and ripening of moral virtues. Gautama¹⁸ while emphasizing the necessity of undergoing the *samskāras* clearly points out that the *samskāras* are by themselves ineffectual in leading man to the ultimate goal of existence unless the virtues of the soul (*ātma-guṇas*) were also developed. So the

Par Sm VIII 19
Cf Atri Sm 141 42

Manu II 28
VIII 24

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

various *samskaras* performed at different stages of life are hedged with appropriate rules of conduct prescribed in detail

The general outlook of the Hindu mind helps to transform the *samskāras* into a spiritual *sādhana* (exercise)¹⁹ Their spiritual significance cannot be given visual demonstration but may be experienced by those who receive the sacraments. Each *samskara* conveys to them more than their constituents—they become for the sacramentally sanctified person an outward visible sign of an inward spiritual grace. The *samskāras* serve further as a mean between the ascetic and the materialistic conception of life. The advocates of the ascetic ideal try to worship the Spirit ignoring the urge and significance of the body. The upholders of materialism do not go beyond the body and deny the spiritual aspect of life. They are deprived of the peace and joy of the Spirit. It is the aim of the *samskaras* to make the body a valuable possession, a thing not to be discarded but made holy and sanctified so that it might become a fitting instrument of the intelligent Spirit residing in it.

THE CONSTITUENTS OF THE SAMSKĀRAS

The *samskāras* embrace various elements and express the beliefs, sentiments and knowledge the Hindus had about the nature of the universe of human life and man's relation to the superhuman powers believed to guide or control his destiny. The first and most important requirement of the sacrament is the sacred fire invariably kindled in the beginning of every rite. The family hearth is the first and holy of holies. The sacred fire that is kept burning in every house becomes the perpetual sign of all the influences that bind men to the family and enter into his social relations. Agni (fire) is regarded as the house lord, protector, high priest, mediator and messenger between the gods and men.²⁰

Prayers, appeals and blessings are also constituents of the *samskāras*. Prayer results from the soul's sincere desire felt or uttered and it is in the form of an address by a personal Spirit to a personal Spirit. Those who are at the lowest level seek through prayers domestic felicity. But gradually prayers raise all those who resort to them in virtue and protect them from vices and they in turn become instruments of morality.²¹ Prayers are also offered for the attainment of intellectual stimulation, purity and communion with the deity. Blessings in the form of wishes and appeals are

Samskarāḥ samskṛtāḥ pūrvāḥ uttaraiḥ ca pī samskṛtāḥ

Nityam aśtaguṇair yuktā brahmano brahma laukikāḥ

Purified by the former *samskaras* (*garbhadhāna* etc.) and the latter (*agnyadhāna* etc.) and always practising the eight virtues of the soul, a Brahmana renders himself fit to attain to the world of Brahman—*Sankha Likhita* quoted in the *Vīramitrodaya*. Chaukhamba Ed. I, p. 140.

Cf. R. V. I. 1. 1.

Cf. R. V. I. 189. 1.

expressed when a person undergoes the *samskāras* by those interested in him and it is also believed that they will benefit the person who prays. Another important constituent of the *samskāras* is sacrifice. The belief is that the gods also like men are propitiated by praise and prayer. man naturally thinks that the gods accept presents and gifts like men. The recipient of a *samskāra* or his agent offers presents and pays homage or tribute to the beneficent gods either as a token of gratitude or in anticipation of further benefits. But above all the sacrifice is the symbol of a universal law which requires complete dedication of the person before any act of creation or consummation. This spiritual significance of the sacrifice is the underlying principle of the *samskāras*.

Bath, sipping of water, lustration and baptismal sprinkling with water are used as purificatory media in the performance of the *samskāras*. Bath is regarded as the complete washing off of physical, moral and spiritual impurities. Sipping of water and lustration are partial or symbolic baths. Ceremonial purification is a universal feature in almost all the *samskāras*.² Orientation is another element of the sacrament. It is based on the picturesque symbolism of the path of the sun and also on the myth that different directions are associated with different effects. The eastern direction is associated with light, warmth, life, happiness and glory. The western direction is associated with darkness, chill, death and decay. According to Indian mythology the northern direction is associated with Soma (Moon) symbolizing peace, gentleness and agreeableness and the southern direction with Yama, the god of death. The recipient of a *samskāra* has to face the direction appropriate to the occasion.

At various stages of the *samskāras* many taboos are observed—taboos connected with articles of food, with lucky and unlucky days, months and years. Magical elements are also found mixed with the *samskāras*. In early times the ethical conception of man was influenced by the magical determination of things injurious. It is things thus determined to be injurious that were placed under taboo and carefully avoided. The Hindus accept the existence of supernatural powers associated with the dangers and problems of life, confronted them frequently and demanded vigilance, investigation and prompt action. The supernatural powers had to be controlled or made use of by directive or coercive procedure. The term *magic* is applied to this tendency of man to control those powers. Magic operates on the basis of sequence of incidents and imitation of nature and man. Pure religion which is based on submission and

II 6 9 *Tena mam abhiscramy śrīya yasase brahmane brahmanavarcasaya—Paraskara Gr. S*

obedience to the supernatural Powers is to be differentiated from magic Divination also plays an important part in the performance of the *samskāras*. By divination people seek to discover the will of supernatural Powers desire to know the causes of their past and present misfortunes and what will happen in the future so that they may determine at any moment what will be the best way to follow. It is believed that natural phenomena indicate the purpose of the superhuman forces. Of all divination methods astrology is of the greatest service to the *samskāras*. The splendour and myths of the sidereal heavens and the belief that the heavenly bodies are either divine or controlled by divine beings and that they are the abode of the dead gave great importance to astrology. The movements of the stars were looked upon as signs indicating the will of the gods.

Symbolism is another constituent of the *samskaras*. A symbol is a material object or an apparent action adopted to convey a mental or spiritual significance. Analogous objects or imitative behaviour stand as symbols and it is believed that like things produce like effects. Psychologically a symbol stimulates the human mind in the right direction for the achievement of an object in view or an ideal to be approximated or realized. The *samskāras* are full of apt symbols which present concrete and idyllic pictures of ideas to be understood and the ideal to be reached. In addition to the above constituents the *samskāras* include social customs and usages and rules about eugenics ethics hygiene and medicine. In religion the different aspects of life are not departmentalized. The whole life is a compact unity saturated with an all pervading idea of a spiritual experience. As the influence of the *samskāras* covered the whole life of an individual his physical mental and spiritual training was combined to create for the Hindu a sacramental atmosphere fragrant with spiritual significance.

THE PRE NATAL SAMSKARAS

A brief description of the *samskāras* is given below in the order they are enlisted above. The institutor of the *samskaras* took a very comprehensive view of life. The life of a person does not start with his birth it goes farther back as it is conditioned by parentage heredity and environment. Its reformation must therefore start with conception. The very first sacrament therefore is known as *garbhādhāna* which word literally means placing the seed in the womb. According to Hinduism procreation is not to be looked upon as a biological phenomenon only common to all animals, but it should be seen in a socio ethical context. It is a sacred duty of the married couple to approach each other in the proper time for the sake of progeny so that the race might continue. Procreation of children was

regarded as necessary for paying off the debts to the forefathers²³ and failure to comply with the injunction of the scripture in this regard was considered a sin. Fulfillment of this sacred duty however entailed physical fitness and psychological willingness of the couple, selection of a suitable time, proper regard to the eligibility of the parents and the sense of their duty to the race. This *samskāra* is therefore very important from the cultural point of view. We do not find here the primitive man expressing his wonder at the prospect of begetting a child, but a purposive man approaching his wife in an attitude of religious serenity—which he believes will consecrate the expected child—with the blessed intention of having progeny.

After the conception is ascertained, the child in the womb is consecrated by the second *samskāra* called *pumsavana*. It was thought necessary that through the treatment of the pregnant mother, the child in the womb should be influenced, and so medical and mental treatment of the mother was prescribed. *Pumsavana* is performed in the third or fourth month of pregnancy or even later on a day when the moon is in a male constellation, particularly the *tisya nakṣatra*. The mother is required to fast on the day and in the night, the sprouts of the banyan tree are pounded and the juice is dropped into her right nostril with the verses beginning with *Hiranyagarbhah* etc. The significance of the *samskāra* consists in this. The conjunction of the moon with a male constellation is symbolic of a male or virile child, hence the term literally means male procreation through the stimulation of the foetus. The giving of the juice of the banyan is a device or a symbolic treatment to nourish the child properly; this practice has a medical basis. *Suśruta* says: "Having pounded with milk any of these herbs *vataśunga*, *sahadevi* and *viśvadeva*, one should pass three or four drops of it into the right nostril of the pregnant woman for the birth of a son. She should not spit the juice out."²⁴

The third sacrament is called *śimantonnayana* in which the hairs of a pregnant woman are ceremoniously parted. The purpose of this *samskāra* is symbolic as well as practical. When a woman is in her pregnancy, it is believed she is attacked by evil spirits and for her protection proper rites should be performed. The religious intention behind the performance of the *samskāra* is to bring prosperity to the mother and long life to the unborn child. The physiological knowledge of the Hindus was also responsible for instituting this *samskāra*. From the fifth month of pregnancy the mental formation of the child starts²⁵. So the pregnant woman is required to take

*Jayamāno vai brāhmanas tribhīr nva jayate brahmacāryena ṛṣibhyo yajñena deva-
bhyah prajāyā pitr̥bhayah esa va anṛṇo yah putrī yajva brahmacārī vasi —Taittirīya Samhitā*
VI 3 10 5

²⁴ *Suśruta Śarīra sthāna Ch II*
Pancame manah prabuddhata am bhavati saṣṭhe buddhih Suśruta Śarīra sthāna
Ch XXXIII

the utmost care to facilitate it by avoiding physical or mental shock to the foetus. In order to keep her in good cheer she is addressed as *rāka* (full moon) and *supesa* (of beautiful limbs). With caressing attention the husband himself parts the hairs of the pregnant wife and after that he ties the *udumbara* (fig tree) branch round her neck with the words 'Rich in sap is this tree like the tree rich in sap be thou fruitful'.²⁶ Then the following words of blessings are uttered: 'Be the mother of heroic sons be the mother of living sons etc.' Under this *samskāra* detailed rules of eugenics and hygiene are prescribed for the pregnant woman and her husband. One of these rules relates to *daurhrda* or *dohada* which means fulfilling the wishes of the pregnant wife.²⁷ After the sixth month of pregnancy the husband should avoid tonsure coition and the performance of *srāddha* (memorial rites). The wife is advised that from the time of pregnancy she should avoid coition over exertion sleeping in the day keeping awake in the night mounting a carriage all the sources of fear sitting like a cock purgative phlebotomy and retention of excretion urine etc.²⁸ These rules make it clear that according to these ancient authorities every possible care had to be taken to preserve the health of the pregnant woman and the unborn child.

THE SAMSKARAS OF CHILDHOOD

The second phase in the life of the child starts when it is delivered by the mother and assumes an independent existence. This occasion is celebrated and the newborn is consecrated with apt ceremonies. There are a number of accessory rites performed for the safety of the child and the mother. A day or two before delivery the expectant mother enters the well protected *sūtikā grha* the lying-in chamber. A number of medical and psychological precautions are taken. Before the *jātakarman* proper a ceremony named *sosyantī karman* is performed to expedite the delivery of the child and in this rite some *Atharvan* hymns are recited.

The *jātakarman* ceremony is made up of several items and is generally performed before the severing of the navel string. The first item is *medhā janana* (the generation of talent)²⁹ which is performed repeating the formulā *Bhūs tvayi dadhāmi bhuvās tvayi dadhāmi bhūr bhuvah svās tvayi dadhāmi* (*bhuh* (the earth) I place in thee *bhuvah* (the sky) I place in thee *svah* (heaven) I place in thee). The above formulas are repeated while the child is fed with ghee and honey with a thin gold strip—these substances are symbolic of strength and intelligence.³⁰ This speaks for

²⁶ *Ayam ūrjavato vrksah urjīva phalini bhava*—*Parashara Gṛ S I 15 6*

²⁷ *Yāj Sm III 79*

Parashara Gṛ S I 16

Suśruta Sārīra sthāna Ch II

Suśruta Sārīra sthāna Ch XLV

the high concern of the Hindus for the intellectual well being of the child which they regarded as their first duty to the child. The second item is *āyusya* (longevity). All possible instance of long life such as *ṛsis* (seers), *pitṛs* (the manes), Agni (fire) and Soma (Moon) are cited before the child and by this association of thought and through these utterances it is believed that the life of the babe will be lengthened.³¹ The third item relates to *śakti* (strength). The father dramatically tells the babe: Be a stone, be an axe, be an imperishable god. Thou indeed art the self called son, live thou a hundred years.³² The mother is congratulated by the husband with the words: Thou art like the admirable Arundhatī, the wife of Vasiṣṭha. Through me who am a man, thou hast borne a son. Be thou blessed with many sons, thou who hast blessed us with a son.³³ Next the umbilical cord is severed and the child is washed and given an opportunity of sucking the breast of the mother. The birth of a child is regarded as the fruition of conjugal life and it is a highly auspicious occasion because of its racial importance.

The name giving ceremony *nāmakarana* comes next. Ever since men evolved language they gave names to persons and things. The Hindus very early realized the importance of naming persons and elevated the act to the position of a religious sacrament. The choice of a name for the child is often connected with religious ideas though there are also other considerations. The child is frequently named after a god who is regarded as its protector or it is named after a saint whose blessings are sought for it. Secular ideas too determine the names, a particular quality denoting a name is expected to be in the person so named. The adoption of the father's name is prevalent which is based on family attachment and pride. Secret names are found being given for the name involves the personality of a man and is therefore withheld from enemies. The social status of a person is also a factor determining the choice of his name³⁴. The surnames of the four *varnas* are also to be different³⁵.

The Grhya Sūtras discuss the composition of the name. According to the *Pāraskara Grhya Sutra* ³⁶ the name should be of two or four syllables beginning with a sonant with a semi vowel in it with a long vowel or with *visarga* at the end—a name formed from a root with a *krt* affix and not a nominal derivative formed with a *taddhita* affix. Other Grhya Sutras give varying suggestions. The name of a girl should contain an uneven number of syllables it should end in *ā* and should be a *taddhita* ³⁷. It should be

p 27 Paraskara Gr S I 16 6 Ibid 1 16 6
Ibid I 16 15 Manu II 31
Paraskara G S I 17 Baudhayana G S I 11 10 Yama quoted by Apararka
Iśnu Purāna III 10 9
I 17 1 Paraskara Gr S I 17 3

easy to pronounce not harsh to hear clear in meaning charming auspicious ending in a long vowel and containing some blessings³⁸ She should not be given an awkward name indicating a constellation a tree a river a mountain a bird a servant and a terror³⁹

Fourfold naming is suggested—first according to the constellation under which the child is born secondly according to the deity of the month thirdly according to the family deity and fourthly according to the popular calling The selection of the last one depends on the culture and education of the family It is desired to be auspicious and significant But in the case of a child whose birth is belated or who is born after the parents had sustained the loss of many children an awkward or repulsive name is given in order to frighten away disease and death *Nāmakarana* is ordinarily performed on the tenth or twelfth day after the birth of the child

Niskramana is the name given to the taking of the child for the first time out of the house Every important step in the life of a progressing child is a festive occasion for its parents and kinsmen who celebrate it with appropriate religious ceremony In the beginning the child is confined to the lying in chamber and then to the house in which it is born But within a month or two even the house is found to be too small a world for the growing child the satisfaction of its curiosities and the movements of its limbs require a wider field and so it is brought out to the world outside with the performance of *niskramana* Life outside the house however is not free from natural and supernatural dangers Therefore a number of precautionary measures physical and religious are adopted to ensure the safety of the child On the day of the *niskramana* a square area in the courtyard from where sun can be seen is plastered with cow dung and clay the sign of a *ṣvastika* is marked on it and over it grains of rice are scattered by the mother The child is brought out by a nurse and the ceremony ends when the father makes the child look at the sun⁴⁰ with the sound of conch shell and the chanting of Vedic hymns The sacrament is significant as it recognizes a vital need of the growing child brought face to face with the sublime splendour of the universe

Annaprāsana is the first feeding of the child with solid food it is primarily connected with the physical necessity of the child This fact is endorsed by Suśruta⁴¹ who prescribes the weaning of the child in the sixth month and feeding it with the type of food suitable to growth Food sustains life but it is believed that there is something mysterious or spiritual

Manu II 33

Ibid III 9

According to Yama quoted in *Vīramitrodaya* I p 250 a child should see the sun in the third and the moon in the fourth month after its birth
Ṣaṇmasam carvaṇ annam praśayet laghu hītam ca Ch X 64

about it and that life emanated from it⁴² On the day of the feeding ceremony the sacramental food is prepared out of cleaned materials while muttering appropriate Vedic hymns Different types of food are prescribed for different results intended for the child Honey and butter in a golden pot are suggested by some authorities One oblation is offered to Speech (Vāc) another to Vigour (Ūrjā or Ojas) Further four oblations are offered with these words *Prānenānnam asīya svāhā apanenānnam asīya svahā caksusā rūpānyasīya svāhā srotrena yasośīya svāhā* (With up breathing may I enjoy food *svāhā*! With down breathing may I enjoy food *svāhā*! With the eyes may I enjoy visible things *svahā*! With the ears may I enjoy fame *svāhā*!)⁴³ Here the word food is used in a wide sense The significance of this sacrament is that it marks the weaning of the child from the mother at the proper time that it impresses the need of food suitable for the age and that it imparts to the child a sense of the sanctity of food

Cūdākarana (tonsure) is the eighth *samskāra* the purpose of which is the achievement of long life and beauty for its recipient⁴⁴ Life is prolonged by tonsure and shortened without it therefore it should be performed by all means⁴⁵ That tonsure conduces to long life and beauty is endorsed by Suśruta who states that shaving and cutting the hair and nails remove impurities and give delight lightness prosperity courage and happiness⁴⁶ and by Caraka who opines that cutting and dressing the hair beard and nails give strength vigour life purity and beauty⁴⁷ It is the opinion of some anthropologists that this ceremony had originally a dedicative purpose that is hair was cut off and offered to a deity as a gift⁴⁸ but this dedicative purpose is unknown to the Grhya Sutras and the Smṛtis No doubt the sacrament is sometimes performed in the temple of a deity this however is done only in the case of those children who are born either after long disappointment or after the death of previous children As a rule there is no connection between tonsure and the dedication of the shaved hair to a deity

According to the Grhya Sutras the *cūdākarana* ceremony should take place at the end of the first year or before the expiry of the third year though later authorities extend the age to the seventh year The most distinguishing feature of this sacrament is the arrangement of the hair tuft

⁴² Y V XVII 33 Tai U III 7 9 ⁴ Parashara Gr S I 19 3
Yena dhatā brhaspati agner indrasya cayuṣe vapat tena te ayuṣe vapamī suślokaya
svastaye—Āśvalayana Gr S I 17 12

⁴³ Vasiṣṭha quoted in the *Vīramitrodaya* I p 296

Papopāśamanam keśa nakha roma parimarjanam

Harṣa laghava saubhagya karam utsaha vārḍhanam

—Cikitsā sthāna Ch XXIV 72

Paustikāṁ vrsyam ayusyaṁ sucirupam virajanam

Keśa śmaśru nakhadānam kartanam samprasadhanam

Crawford Howell Toy *Introduction to the History of Religions* p 81

(*śikhā* or *cūdā*) as the very name of the *samskara* suggests. The vital connection between *śikhā* and life is thus explained by Susruta. Inside the head near the top is the joint of a *sira* (artery) and a *sandhi* (critical juncture). There in the eddy of hairs is the vital spot called *adhipati* (overlord). Any injury to this part causes sudden death.⁴⁹ In course of time *śikhā* developed as a universal symbol of Hinduism and its removal came to be regarded as a grave sin.⁵⁰

Karnavedha is the sacrament connected with the boring of the ear performed between the first and the fourth year of the child. Boring of the limbs for wearing ornaments is a practice current among various peoples all over the world. Throughout the history of civilization the love of ornamentation has continued. The boring of the ears is a custom undoubtedly ornamental in its origin but later on it was believed also to be useful from the point of view of health and in order to emphasize this importance it might have been given a religious sanction. Susruta says that the ears of a child are to be bored for protection and decoration.⁵¹ The same authority explicitly prescribes the boring of the ears for preventing hydrocele and hernia.⁵² The type of needle—gold for Kṣatriya, silver for Brāhmana and Vaisya—with which the ears are to be bored is also prescribed. The *Vīramitrodaya* quotes Brhaspati to this effect. A gold needle lends elegance but those who have no means to have it may use a silver or an iron needle. When *karnavedha* assumed a religious importance it became compulsory like the keeping of the *śikhā*. Devala, a mediaeval Smṛti writer, warns that all accumulated merits would disappear at the sight of a Brāhmana through whose ear holes the rays of the sun do not pass.

EDUCATIONAL SAMSKARAS

Vidyarambha is the tenth sacrament and it marks the beginning of study or the learning of the alphabet. When the mind of the child has developed and become ready to receive education the first thing that is to be done is to teach it the alphabet—to handle the most advanced medium of education. The alphabet is regarded as the route to all knowledge just as rivers lead to the ocean. By the proper mastery of the alphabet he entered the wide domain of literature (*vānmayā*) as one reaches the ocean through the mouth of the river.⁵³ This sacrament is also known as

Śarīra sthāna Ch. VI 83

Laghu Harita IV

Rakṣa vibhūṣaṇa nimittam balasya karnau vidhyat—*Śarīra sthāna* XVI 1

Śaṅkhopari ca kartante tyaktva yatnena sivanam

Vyatyāsād va śīram vidhyed antaryuddhi nivṛttaye

—*Cikitsa sthāna* XIX 21

Līḥer yathāvad grahanena vānmayam

Nadī mukhenariva samudram avīṣat—*Raghuvamśa* III 28

vidyārambha aksararambha and *aksaralekhana* and these names suggest that it must have originated at an advanced stage of culture when alphabet was evolved and used for literary purposes. It was perhaps historical in origin as it is mentioned only in later literature. This *samskāra* is performed in the fifth year of the child but according to Visvāmitra it may be extended up to the seventh. Some authorities prescribe that it should take place just after the *cūdākarana* ⁴. When the sun is in the northern hemisphere an auspicious day is to be fixed for its performance. It is prohibited during the rainy season when Visnu denoting also the sun who gives light is supposed to be asleep.

Upanayana or the sacrament of initiation stands for taking the child to a teacher for education. From the cultural point of view it is the most important sacrament. *Vidyārambha* may be regarded as the beginning of primary education. *upanayana* marks the beginning of secondary education. From the sacramental point of view it may be compared with the initiation ceremony met with in various cultures which seeks to introduce the youth to the privileges of the communal life and so it is as important as any similar class of social procedure the object of which is to prepare the initiate for the active duties of a citizen. The initiate is trained in communal discipline and racial culture and a knowledge of traditional and current subject is imparted to him. The Hindu ideal of *upanayana* has made universal education the indispensable test and insignia of the race. It is a great advance over the primitive types of initiation like endurance test temporary seclusion or mutilation of the body still current among many religious communities. The most striking feature of the *upanayana* lies in the belief that by its performance the initiate is given a cultural and spiritual rebirth ⁵⁵. The physical birth of a child is crude as it is associated with animality but rebirth through discipline and learning is considered exalted and holy ⁵⁶.

The meaning and purpose of the *upanayana* have changed in the course of time. In the *Atharva Veda* the term *upanayana* is used in the sense of taking charge of a student ⁵⁷ while later it meant the initiation of a child by a teacher into sacred lore. It had the Vedic connotation in the Brāhmana and the Sūtra periods also but when its mystic significance increased the idea of the second birth through religious ceremonies overshadowed the original idea of initiation for education. Thus originally education was the main purpose of this *samskāra* and ritual was an ancillary item. But

⁴ *Kṛta caula karma līpī samkhyānam ca upayunjīta —Arthashastra I 5*

Manu II 146 48

Vas Dh S II 35 Ap Dh S I 1 1 13 1,

Ācārya upanayamano brahmacarīnaḥ kurute garbham antah (the teacher taking him in charge makes the student an embryo within) *XI 5 3*

in course of time the performance of the ritual and the *vratādeśa* or the undertaking of the vow became the chief object and education but secondary

The first thing connected with this sacrament that now comes up for discussion is the age of the recipient and it is decided on the basis of the social status and the professional requirements of the child. A Brāhmana is to be initiated at the age of eight, a Ksatriya at eleven and a Vaiśya at twelve. In the case of promising and ambitious children initiation may be given earlier. A Brāhmana has to spend the longest period in studentship as he has to master and specialize in the Vedic lore which the other *varnas* (castes) are not expected to do. The last permitted limit of age for the performance of the *upanayana* of a Brāhmana is sixteen, of a Ksatriya twenty-two and of a Vaiśya twenty-four. If after the above limit people remained uninitiated they became *vrātyas* fallen from *sāvitṛi* (the sacred hymns) and discarded by the Aryans.⁵⁸ They are however readmitted into the Aryan community after performance of the *vrātyāstoma* sacrifice. Thus the rule regarding the *upanayana* was strictly observed even at the penalty of excommunication from the society.

The second matter to be considered at the time of the *upanayana* is the selection of a proper teacher. The main object of this sacrament being the acquisition of knowledge and the building of character, if the teacher himself lacks in knowledge and virtue he cannot shape the life of his students and elevate them. From darkness to darkness he goes when an ignorant person initiates. Therefore one should desire an initiator who comes of a good family, is learned and is self-controlled.⁵⁹ Long lists enumerating the qualifications of an ideal teacher are found in the scriptures. A Brahmana who is well-read, of good family, of good character and purified by penance should initiate a child.⁶⁰ One should not engage for a sacrifice a person who is not steady in his character nor should one select him as a teacher as hands besmeared with fat cannot be cleaned with blood.⁶¹ An *ācharya* (teacher) should be truthful, talented, capable, merciful towards all creatures, faithful, given to Vedic studies, pure, etc.⁶² The *upanayana* further must be performed in a specified season. A Brahmana is initiated in the spring, a Rājanya (Kshatriya) in summer, a Vaiśya in autumn and a Rathakāra (chariot maker) during the rainy season.⁶³ This choice of a season according to the *varna* has reference to temperament, the three seasons and the three *varnas* are respectively calm, hot and pliable.

⁵ *Manu* II 39

Tamaso va eṣa tamah praviśati yam avidvan upanayate yaścāvidvan itī hi Brahmanam tasmin abhijana vidya samudītam samskārtāram īpset Quoted in *Vīramitrodaya* I p 408

Śaunaka *ibid* p 408

Jama *ibid* p 408

Harita *ibid* p 409

Baudhāyana *Gṛ S* II 5 6

The next item to be observed is the last meal with the mother which marks the end of childhood and the beginning of a career outside the home. In connection with this sacrament the initiate has to undergo a bath which symbolizes the ceremonious purification of the body and the mind before he can enter the domain of *brahmacarya* which is regarded as a prolonged sacrifice. Then a *kaupina* (loin cloth) is offered to him to cover his privy parts. Social consciousness has already dawned upon the boy so from now onward he is particularly instructed to observe social decorum and to maintain his own dignity and self control. *Mekhalā* (girdle) is another equipment given to the initiate and it is tied repeating a verse which has this meaning: A daughter of faith, a sister of the sages, possessed of austerity, beneficent to all creatures⁶⁴, Protector of moral order, observer of *tapas* (austerity), destroyer of evils, etc.⁶⁵ The girdle was originally meant to support the loin cloth but later on it was turned into a religious symbol suggesting moral purity and preparedness for the vigorous duties of an austere student. Investiture of the student with *yajñopavita* (sacred thread) has become in course of time the most important item of this sacrament. The teacher performs this ceremony with an appropriate *mantra* asking for the recipient's long life, purity, strength and illumination while the latter remains looking towards the sun⁶⁶. The constant wearing of the *yajñopavita* suggests that the life of the twice born is a continuous sacrifice necessitated by the socio-religious duties. Similarly *ajina* (deer skin) and *danda* (staff) are also presented to the student who has to lead a strict life of discipline almost like an ascetic.

The items that follow are of psychological and educational importance: *surya darśana* (looking at the sun)—this indicates the need of constant exertion and watchfulness on the part of the celibate student, who turns to the sun as to a perpetual witness; *hrdaya-sparśa* (touching the heart) symbolizes the mental and emotional communion between the teacher and the taught; *aśmarohana* (climbing the stone) suggests the need for steadfastness in studies and character; *hasta grahana* (taking by the hand) as the teacher's charge is quite significant. The teacher asks: Whose pupil art thou? The student answers: Yours. The teacher corrects: Indra's pupil art thou. Agni (fire) is thy teacher. I am thy teacher. N N⁶⁷. After taking charge of the student the teacher delivers the following:

⁶⁴ *Śraddhayāḥ duḥkṛta tapaso dhṛyatā swasa ṛṣinām bhūta kṛtā babhūva*—A 1 VI 133 4
Ṛasiṣṭha Gr S V

*Yajñopavītaṁ paramaṁ pavitraṁ prajāpater yat sahaṇam purastat
 Ayusyaṁ agryaṁ pratimunca śubhram yajñopavītaṁ balam astu tejaḥ*

—Paraskara Gr S II 2 13

*Mama vrate te hrdayam dadhami mama cittam anu cittam te stu mama vacam ekam
 manṛ jura ta bṛhaspatistva nyunaktu mahyam*

—Paraskara Gr S II 2 18

commandment A student art thou drink water do thy work do not sleep during day time keep silence be obedient to the teacher and study the Vedas fetch alms morning and evening morning and evening put fuel into the fire observe *brahmacarya* (continence) for twelve years or till the Vedas are learned The *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa* explains Sip water Water doubtless means ambrosia sip ambrosia is thus what he means Do thy work Work doubtless means vigour exert vigour is what he tells him Put fuel into the fire Enkindle thy mind with fire with holy lustre that is what he thereby tells him Do not sleep Do not die that is what he thereby says to him ⁶⁸ After this the most sacred *savitṛi mantra* is taught to the student which means Let us meditate on the most excellent light of Savitr the Creator May He stimulate our intellect ⁶⁹ Such a prayer is particularly apt for a celibate student seeking intellectual development in the proper direction After this the student enkindles the sacred fire the symbol of warmth austerity exertion and brilliance Lastly he takes a round for alms this is an act that indicates his dependence on society whose debts he has to discharge throughout his life

The sacrament of *upanayana* performed at the beginning of study marks the dawn of a new life The student is now an *upanita*—one who is introduced to a life of perfect discipline The sacrament symbolizes the student's entering the boundless realm of knowledge it marks for him his destination it asks him to be vigilant and steadfast in his path and it reminds him of the need of complete harmony between him and his teacher In his venture the student is assured of the help of society of all living creatures and of the invisible powers Brhaspati (the lord of knowledge) Indra (the lord of power) and Agni (the source of brilliance and energy) are held before him as his ideals If a student acts in the manner suggested by the symbolism of this sacrament he is bound to be a successful scholar and a full fledged citizen fit to share the responsibility of the world

Vedārambha (beginning of Vedic study) forms the thirteenth *samskāra* in the list This sacrament as also the next one are not mentioned in the earliest lists of the *samskāras* preserved in the Dharma Sutras in which we have four Vedic vows (*catvāri veda vratāni*) instead It seems that though the *upanayana* marked the beginning of secondary education it did not synchronize with Vedic study when the non Vedic studies grew in extent Therefore a separate *samskāra* was felt necessary to initiate Vedic study independently the *vedārambha samskāra* thus came into existence Every student has to master his own branch of the Vedas as settled by his parentage and in consequence this sacrament is performed differently in

XI 5 4

Tatsvatitvarenyam bhargo devasya dhīmahi dhियो यो नः प्रचोदयाति

the case of different types of students Its significance lies in the fact that it still emphasizes the predominance of the Vedas in the curriculum of studies ⁷⁰

The *keśānta* as the name suggests is a sacrament connected with the first shaving of the student's beard when his age is about sixteen years As the consciousness of manhood dawns upon him he is required to exercise greater watchfulness over his youthful impulses and so by this sacrament he is once more reminded of his vows of *brahmacarya* The procedure of this sacrament is almost the same as that of the *cūḍakarana* *Keśānta* was also called *godāna* (the gift of a cow) the reason being that at the end of the ceremony the student offered a cow to the teacher ⁷¹

Samāvartana is the sacrament performed when the student returns from the home of the preceptor after completing the studies It is also called *snāna* (bath) The period of *brahmacarya* being regarded as a great sacrifice ⁷² an *avabhṛtha snāna* or ritual bath is taken as it is customary on the completion of all sacrifices Figuratively an erudite scholar is called a *nīṣṇata* or *snata* because he is considered to have crossed the ocean of learning and discipline There were three types of *snātaka*s or graduates *vidyā snātaka* (versed in learning) *vrata snātaka* (proficient in discipline) and *ubhaya snātaka* (distinguished in both) ⁷³ Completion of learning and return home is a very momentous event in a student's life because he is either prepared to marry and plunge into the busy life of the world or he has acquired the Vedic knowledge that may give him the power to keep off from the turmoil of the world in order to lead a life of physical and mental detachment Those students who choose the first path are called *upakurvāna* that is who honour the preceptor by gifts on their leaving his residence to enter the married life and those pupils who choose the second path are known as *naisthika* ⁷⁴ that is who dedicate themselves to lifelong studentship [and who continue as *brahmacārins*] remaining in the preceptor's home The majority of students follow the first course and a few the second In every case the permission (*anujñā*) of the teacher is regarded as necessary it is a kind of certificate proving the eligibility of the student who has completed the course either to marry or to remain a *naisthika* The permission is preceded by the students giving the *guru daksinā* the proper fee to the preceptor ⁷⁵ The student does not pay

See *Āśvalayana Gr S* quoted in the *Saṃskara mayūkha* p 64 *Garga Paddhati*

See *Āśvalayana Gr S* I 18

Dirgha satraṃ va eṣa upaṣṭi yo brahmacaryam upaṣṭi Quoted by Gadādhara on *Paras*
hara *Gr S* II 2 15

⁷¹ *Parashara Cr S* II 5 32 36

⁷² *Yaj* I 49

Vidyante gurum arthena pīmantrya kṛtanujñānasya snanāṣṭi *Āśvalayana Gr S*
III 8 *Manu* III 4

anything to the *ācārya* except service till the study is complete but when he leaves it is expected that he should honour him with an acceptable fee according to his means even though the services rendered by him have been valued highly According to the ancient texts Even the earth with its seven continents is not sufficient for the *guru daksinā* ⁷⁶ Even though a student is not able to pay the teacher anything material he should at least go to him for his permission The latter would gladly say My child never mind about money I am satisfied with thy merits ⁷⁷ and would instruct him with impressive words of which we have a memorable example in the *Taittirīya Upaniṣad* I 11

The ceremonies connected with *samāvartana* mainly consist of two items (1) shutting the *snataka* in a room in the morning and (2) his undergoing the formal bath The first item is symbolic of the *snataka*'s splendour According to the *Bhāradvāja Grhya Sutra* ⁷⁸ the first act is done so that the sun may not be insulted by the superior lustre of the *snataka* with whose borrowed light he shines The formal bath symbolizes (1) washing away the divinity or superhuman influence lest it be defiled by worldly contact (2) cooling down the heat of the ascetic celibate student life and (3) crossing the ocean of learning The *snataka* after taking his bath puts off the meagre ascetic insignia of a student and accepts the comforts of life which were denied to him previously Dressed in his new attire he proceeds in a chariot or on an elephant to the nearest assembly of the learned to which he is introduced as a competent scholar by his teacher and which recognizes his merits and learning so that he comes out as a worthy scholar

MARRIAGE

Of all the Hindu sacraments *vivāha* marriage is the most central one The *Grhya Sūtras* generally describe the *samskaras* as beginning with it because it is the source of all domestic sacrifices and ceremonies and also because in the view of the writer of these *Sūtras* every man normally would marry and run a home *Manu* enjoins Having spent the first quarter of one's life in the house of one's *guru* the second quarter in one's own house with the wife and the third quarter in the forest one should take *sannyāsa* in the fourth quarter casting away every worldly tie ⁷⁹ Classical Hinduism does not encourage premature retirement or asceticism it emphasizes the importance of the life of the householder

Tapaniya śruti quoted in *Vīramitrodaya* I p 565 Cf *Cha U* III 11 6
Alamariṭhena me vatsa tvadgunair asmi toṣitah *Samgraha* quoted in *ibid*
 II 1 8
⁷⁹ *Manu* IV 1

Manu thus extols the householder Just as every creature lives by air so the orders of life exist by the support of the householder ⁸⁰ a wife is the main source of *dharma artha* and *kāma* and so an unmarried person irrespective of the *varna* (caste) to which he belongs is unfit for the discharge of his duties ⁸¹ The sacrament of marriage impresses upon a person that earthly life is not to be despised rather it should be consciously accepted and elevated to the level of a spiritual experience

The eight forms of marriage mentioned in the Smṛti⁸² are *paśāca rāksasa gāndharva asura prājāpatya ārsa darva* and *brāhma* listed in an ascending order of merit and these may be viewed as fraudulent forcible romantic commercial racial austere sacrificial and spiritual marriage respectively The last four are approved religiously (*prasasta*) but the first four are not (*aprasasta*) In the case of the approved marriages the sacrament is a condition precedent while in the case of the unapproved ones it may be performed after the marriage on the basis of non religious considerations The sacrament however attempts to bless and consecrate every possible form of human union Nuptial ceremonies are supposed to impart sanctity to the marital relation ⁸³

First of all the determination and selection of the couple control and shape the institution of sacramental marriage Normally a person should marry in the same *varna*⁸⁴ but outside the same *gotra* (clan) and *pinda* (consanguinity) ⁸⁵ *Anuloma* marriage (in which the wife is of an inferior caste) was permitted but not encouraged *pratiloma* marriage (in which the husband is of an inferior caste) though tolerated early was later on discouraged and banned ⁸⁶ Restrictions regarding *sagotra* and *sapinda* marriages have been invariably observed their breach is regarded as incest and is legally forbidden In the selection of the bride and the bridegroom their family age traits of body learning wealth and resourcefulness are considered The examination of the bride and the bridegroom is a regular item in the negotiation for marriages as that helps the preservation of racial and social types The selective principles are of domestic and eugenic importance A great stress is laid on biological intellectual and spiritual homogeneity between the bride and the bridegroom

A marriage sacrament consists of items pertaining to the pre marital marital and post marital stages The most important of these are ⁸⁷

⁸⁰ *Yathā vāyur samasṛitya vartante sarvajantavah
Tathā grhastham aśṛitya vartante sarva āśramah*

—*Ibid* III 77

⁸¹ *Yaj* I 51

Devula quoted in the *Vīramitrodaya* I

Manu III 4

Ibid III 5

Manu III 21 ff

Ibid III 12 15

For fuller details see the *Parashara Gr S* and *Pañdhatis* of *Mandalika* and *Gadadhara*

(1) *vāgdāna* (betrothal) (2) *vara varana* (formal acceptance of the bridegroom) (3) *kanyā dāna* (gift of the bride to the bridegroom by the legitimate guardian) (4) *vivāha homa* (marriage offerings) (5) *pānigrahana* (clasping the hand) (6) *hrdaya sparsa* (touching the heart) (7) *saptapadi* (seven steps symbolic of prosperity and felicity) (8) *asmarohana* (mounting the stone symbolic of stability) (9) *sūryāvalokana* (looking at the sun as a witness to the sacrament) (10) *dhruva darsana* (looking at the Pole Star a symbol of constancy) (11) *trirātra vrata* (three nights continence) (12) *caturthi karma* (fourth day ceremony or the formal unification of the couple)

The Hindu marriage which the nuptials symbolize is not a social contract in the modern sense of the term but a religious institution a sacrament. Besides the two parties to a marriage—the bride and the bridegroom—there is a third party that is *dharma* or their joint religious duty as the married couple through which they are united. The marital union is effected not by the wife and the husband alone but by society the guardians and the supernatural powers—the symbols of spirituality. Such a marriage is therefore regarded as indissoluble⁸⁸ and if any dispute arises between the wedded couple it is the third party namely *dharma* that mediates and unites them. *Dharma* would not allow them to separate without it the conjugal life would lose its charm and stability.

Several symbolic acts constitute the marriage ceremony commencing with the betrothal. The *vāgdāna* is a semi legal and psychological engagement which should materialize into actual marriage. The *vara varana* symbolizes that the bridegroom chosen is the best and the fittest of his sex. The bridegroom says 'I am the highest one among my people as is the sun among the shining ones'⁸⁹. In the *kanyā dāna* ceremony the father or the guardian of the bride formally hands over the bride to the bridegroom with a declaration of purpose (*samkalpa*) calling to witness the sacred fire round which the pair takes the symbolic walk for the fire is the centre and the symbol of the union of the couple effected by the rite. The bridegroom accepts the bride as the wife formally by clasping her hand which suggests that he has accepted the responsibility of her companionship. 'I seize thy hand for the sake of happiness that thou mayest live to an old age with me thy husband. I am this thou art that. The *sāman* am I the *rc* thou the heaven I the earth thou. Come let us marry'⁹⁰. The act of *hrdaya sparsa* indicates a complete emotional harmony between the husband and the wife. 'Into my will I take thy heart

⁸⁸ Let mutual fidelity (between husband and wife) continue till death this in brief may be understood to be the highest *dharma* of man and woman. *Manu* IX 101

Pāraskara Gr S I 3 9
Āśvalayana Gr S I 7 3

thy mind shall dwell in my mind in my word thou shalt rejoice with all thy heart may *Prājāpati* join thee to me ⁹¹ *Saptapadi* is the next rite. The husband asks the wife to take seven steps in the northern direction with the words Step one for sap two for juice three for the prospering of wealth four for comforts five for cattle six for the seasons Friend! be with seven steps (united to me) So be thou devoted to me ⁹² This formula contains all the essentials of domestic felicity That marriage is a permanent union and not a temporary contract is symbolized by the five items beginning with *asmārohana* ⁹³ noted above The primary function of marriage is the continuity of the race through the procreation of children and so the union of the pair should be fruitful ⁹⁴ The fact that marriage is not a licence for indulgence but a human institution aiming at moderation in conjugal life is symbolized by the *trirātra vrata* (three nights continence) observed at the end of the nuptials ⁹⁵ Through utterances promises hopes and fears this sacrament impresses upon the minds of the couple that marriage is an act of sacrifice in the interest of the community and so its biological function should be elevated to a spiritual plane

ANTYESTI OR THE FUNERAL

The last sacrament in the life of a Hindu is the *antyeṣṭi*. A Hindu consecrates his entire life through the performance of various sacraments at suitable stages and at his death the survivors consecrate the event by death rites for his future good and spiritual felicity Though performed after a man's death this *samśhara* is not the less important because for a Hindu the value of the next world is higher than that of the present It is well known that through the *samskāras* after birth one conquers the earth and through the *samskāras* after death the other world ⁹⁶

The horror of death the consolation sought by the survivors the acceptance of death by all as the natural end of existence on earth the need of disposing of the dead—all these seem to have contributed to the evolution of the *samskāras* Baudhāyana says Death is inevitable in the case of a man who is born Therefore one should not be happy at birth nor bemoan death A creature comes from the unknown and goes to the unknown so the wise regard birth and death as equal Such being the fact people give their dues to their mother father preceptor wife son disciple cousin maternal uncle agnates and cognates and consecrate their cremation with proper sacrament ⁹⁷

⁹¹ *Paraskara Gr S I 8 8*

Ibid I 8 1

⁹² *Sankhayana Gr S I 8 19*

⁹³ *R V X 85 40 41 Hīranyakeśi Gr S I 6 20*

Paraskara Gr S I 8 21

Baudhayana pīrmedha sutras III 1 4

Ibid III 2 3

The conception of life after death the mixed feeling of dread and love for the dead eagerness for an easy and peaceful passage from the world of the mortals to that of lasting happiness ensuing for the departed a fit place in the company of the manes and the gods and the motive of securing the final liberation of the soul from the cycle of births and deaths must have occasioned several items of the funeral ceremonies

When the cult of the sacrifice was adopted by the Hindus the idea of sending the dead to the world of the gods through the fire must have struck them for Fire was regarded by them as a messenger between men and the gods The disposal of the dead by cremation was treated as a sacrifice and became the prevalent mode though in special cases burial and water burial also were allowed The whole life of a Hindu is looked upon as a continuous sacrifice and death is celebrated as the last sacrificial act of his earthly existence Death and the disposal of the dead fall under the following heads (1) Approach of death The person whose death is near bids farewell to his assembled relatives and the world alms and gifts are distributed for his future happiness (2) Pre disposal ceremony Oblations are offered into the sacrificial fire maintained by him It has become customary now to drop Gangā water and *tulasi* leaves into the mouth of the dying (3) The bier A special oblong frame is prepared to remove the dead body to the place of cremation and the body is formally laid on it with the words Give up the clothes that you have hitherto worn remember the *ṛta* (sacrifices) and the *pūrta* (acts of public utility) you have performed (4) Removal of the corpse In ancient times the bier was put on a bullock cart with the verse I harness these two bullocks to the cart for the conveyance of your life so that you may repair to the region of Yama to the place where the virtuous resort Now the bier is carried by men—the nearest relatives and friends of the deceased—as an act of honour to him (5) The funeral procession The chief mourner usually the eldest son of the dead person is followed by relatives and friends as he proceeds to the place of cremation (6) *Anustarani* (the accompanying cow) She is believed to be helpful in crossing the ocean of mortality She is given away as gift and let off (7) The cremation—burning of the corpse The preliminaries to it include *abhiṣeka* (washing the corpse) and the piling of the pyre Next fire is applied to the pyre with the Vedic hymns 'Agni consume not this body to cinders nor give it pain nor scatter about its skin or limbs O Jātavedas when the body is fairly burnt convey the Spirit to its ancestors'⁹⁸ May the organ of vision proceed to the sun, may the vital air merge in the atmosphere may thou

proceed according to thy virtuous deeds to heaven or earth or the regions of water whichever place is beneficial to thee mayest thou there be provided with food and exist in corporeal existence " (8) *Udakakarma* (offering of water) It is supposed that it cools the dead after the body undergoes cremation (9) Consoling the mourners the disconsolate survivors are soothed in their distress by an expert quoting a number of stories showing the transitory nature of life (10) *Āśauca* (impurity) Social segregation (11) *Asthisañcayana* (collecting the bones) (12) *Śānti karma* (pacificatory rite) (13) *Smāraka* (raising a mound over the remains of the dead) (14) *Śrāddha* (offerings to the dead) (15) *Sapindikarana* (affiliation of the dead with the manes) This last sacrament takes into account the sentiments and requirements of the dead and the surviving who are faced with the inevitable event of life namely death The sublime sentiments expressed through its performance make death less unbearable for the individual who expires and the community that has to deal with it

CONCLUSION

The Hindus realized early that life was a most intricate art that required constant care, cultivation and refinement A man born and left to himself is a mass of elements crude and brutal and slightly removed from his fellow beings in the forest and so his life needs much care and protection The ancient seers and sages gifted with light and resources tried to transform the crude animal into the refined man with the help of the sacraments As in philosophy so in rituals life is regarded as a cycle It starts from where it ends From birth to death it is a continuous series of incidents moving round one pivot—the desire to live to enjoy to think and ultimately to retire All the *samskāras* and allied ceremonies emanate from this In the beginning of civilization life was much simpler than it is at present and it was not divided into compartments Social institutions beliefs sentiments arts and science were all closely interwoven The *samskāras* covered all these fields of life Religion was then an all embracing factor in life and it afforded sanctity and stability to all possible aspects of existence for which end they also utilized all the moral and material resources they could command The *samskāras* were instituted to create the conditions required for the development of the twice born Hindus in order to integrate his personality with the society in which he was born and with the world around him believed to be full of superhuman forces

THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND AND THEORETIC BASIS OF HINDU LAW

THE MAJESTY OF LAW

THE Constitution of India heralds the birth of a new and historical epoch in the history of India. It has pledged the country to the task of securing to all its citizens justice social economic and political. The ideal of a welfare State is based on the evolution of a new social philosophy. The State now accepts the responsibility of meeting all legitimate demands of social and economic justice and in meeting these demands the State has inevitably to fight what the Beveridge Report has so picturesquely described as the giants of idleness disease squalor and want. In pursuit of this ideal the State rejects the doctrine of unmitigated economic individualism and the theory of *laissez faire* on which it is founded. As Friedmann has observed the effect of adopting a new social philosophy is the transformation of the free economic society in which the State is a glorified policeman but otherwise a disinterested spectator into a controlled society in which the State is an active participant in the economic and social life of the citizen.¹ In order to appreciate the expanding role of law in a modern democratic welfare State it has become essential to reconsider the philosophy and principles of law and to re define the rule of law itself. The problem posed by the planned economy of a welfare State can be reasonably solved only if the need of planning and the force of law on which it tends to rely are reconciled with the claims of individual freedom. That is why a proper study of the role of law in the present age of India's freedom presents a fascinating and instructive subject for Indian lawyers and jurists. It is true that too much cannot be expected from law. Nevertheless in implementing the welfare policies of a democratic State law has to play a dynamic role. And it is this aspect of law that must be properly appreciated by all citizens in a democratic State. The majesty of law was never more eloquently described than by the *Brhadaranyaka Upanisad*. Says the Upanisad: "He was not yet developed. He created still further a better form law (*dharma*). This is the power of the Ksatriya class namely law. Therefore there is nothing higher than law. So a weak man controls the strong man by law just as if by a king. Verily that which is law is truth therefore they say of a man who speaks the truth he speaks the law or of a man

W. Friedmann *Law and Social Change in Contemporary Britain* (1951) p. 81

who speaks the law he speaks the truth Verily both these are the same thing ² The object of the present article is to deal very briefly with the broad features of two aspects of the study of Hindu law What is the historical background of Hindu law and what is its theoretic basis?

ANCIENT LAW—ITS FEATURES

It is true as Maitland has observed that races and nations do not always travel by the same roads and at the same rate Even so a comparative study of ancient laws in the world has disclosed a number of remarkable affinities Maine showed on the one hand that legal ideas and institutions have a real course of development as much as the genera and species of living creatures and in every stage of that development have their normal characteristics on the other hand he made it clear that these processes deserve and require distinct study and cannot be treated as mere incidents in the general history of the societies where they occur ³ The general conclusions reached by Sir Henry Maine in regard to the characteristics of ancient law have now been broadly accepted as correct If by any means we can determine the early forms of jural conceptions observed Sir Henry Maine they will be invaluable to us These rudimentary ideas are to the jurist what the primary crusts of the earth are to the geologist They contain potentially all the forms in which law has subsequently exhibited itself ⁴ According to Maine the earliest notions connected with the conception of law are those contained in the Homeric words Themis and Themistes When a king decided a dispute by his judgement the judgement was assumed to be the result of direct divine inspiration Themistes the plural of Themis meant really the awards themselves assumed to have been divinely dictated to the judge According to Grote Zeus or the human king on earth is no law maker but a Judge and his judgements divinely inspired constitute law It is fairly certain that in the earlier stages of the human race no trace of any legislature in the modern sense of the term or even of any author of law can be found At that stage law has not reached even the footing of custom properly so called It is rather a habit as Maine observes It is to render a French phrase in the air

The next stage in the development of ancient law witnesses the transfer of authority to pronounce judgements from the king to the aristocracies Military and religious oligarchies appear on the scene and though the authority of the king was not superseded and the judgements pronounced by the king were the result of the consultation held by the king with members

² Br U I 4 14

Sir Henry Maine *Introduction to Ancient Law* (1906) Pollock p xvi

Ibid p 2

of the military and religious oligarchies. Maine's theory is that in the East these aristocracies became religious while in the West they became civil or political. This era of aristocracies succeeding the era of the king may be regarded as a feature of the growth of law in the Indo-European family of nations. Even during this era the aristocracies do not purport to make the laws. Their claim is based on the monopoly of the knowledge of laws and the decisions based upon this assumed knowledge of laws tend to give rise to customary law. In this sense during this epoch the stage of customary law can be said to have been reached.

The study of Roman law shows that the period of customary law in due course led to the era of jurisprudence. This era may be called the era of Codes. The Twelve Tables of Rome can be treated as the best representative of this era. The Twelve Tables it may be noticed deal rather with adjectival laws and not with substantive laws. Even during this early stage of development of ancient law students of history notice that whereas law tends to be stable and seeks to make the social structure steady and enduring changing social environments exercised pressures for a change and an attempt appears always to have been made to bridge the gulf between the letter of the law and the needs of the changing social structure.

There is another feature of all ancient law which deserves to be noticed. Law does not make any distinction between religion, ethics or morality on the one hand and the provisions of what may be called the positive law on the other. Though in its progress the legal order appears to have tried to meet the new demands arising out of a multitude of unsatisfied social desires, human agency did not claim the authorship of law. Its origin continued to be divine. The Mosaic Law or Hammurabi's Code or the *Manu Smṛiti* each one in its own way claimed to be based upon divine inspiration. Demosthenes gave to the Athenian jury four reasons why men ought to obey the law. He said: Men ought to obey the law because laws are prescribed by God; because they were a tradition taught by wise men who knew the good old customs; because they were deductions from an eternal and immutable moral code; and because they were agreements of men with each other binding them because of a moral duty to keep their promises.⁵ Similarly it is recorded that Cicero believed that justice and the whole system of social life depended upon the gods and man's belief in them. The law according to Roman ideas, rested upon the double foundation of divine regulation and human ordinances.⁶

It appears that in mediaeval Europe the Church successfully claimed

Roscoe Pound *An Introduction to the Philosophy of Law* (1946) p. 22
S. Varadachariar *The Hindu Social System* (1946) p. 33

exemption from secular authority for the clergy and also exercised jurisdiction over all people in respect of certain matters which would now be regarded as the subject matter of civil jurisdiction. During this period the State regarded itself as under a duty to enforce obedience to the laws of God and ecclesiastical courts were the instruments through which the State acted.⁷ In this connection it would be interesting to notice the effect of the sentence of excommunication during this age. Excommunication not merely involved imprisonment by the church till the Bishop withdrew the writ on submission by the excommunicate it led to several temporal consequences as well. According to Bracton the excommunicate cannot sue any one though he may be sued. He cannot serve upon juries cannot be a witness in any court and worst of all cannot bring any action real or personal.⁸ It was only after the Renaissance that there set in a period of faith in reason and the Protestant jurist theologian developed a theory of law divorced from theology and resting solely upon reason. That however is a much later development.

Sir Abdur Rahim expresses the opinion that Mohammedan law sought to supervise the whole life of its subjects not merely the material or secular sides. According to Sir Abdur Rahim law has two aspects religious and secular. The end of law is to promote the welfare of man both individually and socially not merely in respect of life on this earth but also of future life.⁹ It would thus appear that during the early stages of the development of law what were regarded as rules of law were invariably assumed to have divine origin and they purported to receive their sanction from the fact that they embodied the dictates of Providence. During this stage of the development of law the main idea which according to Pound supplied the basis of the law was that law exists in order to keep the peace in a given society to keep the peace at all events and at any price. This is the conception of what may be called the stage of primitive law.¹⁰ In support of this proposition Pound has referred to the typical theory of Plato. As Plato puts it the shoemaker is to be only a shoemaker and not a pilot also the farmer is to be only a farmer and not a judge as well the soldier is to be only a soldier and not a man of business besides and if a universal genius who through wisdom can be everything and do everything comes to the ideal city State he is to be required to move on. Aristotle puts the same idea in another way asserting that justice is a condition in which each keeps within his appointed sphere that we first take account of relations of inequality treating individuals according to their worth and

Holdsworth *History of the Ancient Law* p 616

Sir Abdur Rahim *Muhammadian Jurisprudence* p 55

⁹ Pound *An Introduction to the Philosophy of Law* p 72

Ibid p 631

then secondarily of relations of equality in the classes to which their worth requires them to be assigned POUND concludes that when St Paul exhorted wives to obey their husbands and servants to obey their masters and thus everyone to exert himself to do his duty in the class where the social order had put him he expressed this Greek conception of the end of law ¹¹

At this stage it may be relevant to refer to the subsequent theories about it According to Kant law is a system of principles or universal rules to be applied to human action whereby the free will of the actor may co exist along with the free will of every one else whereas according to Hegel the law is a system of principles wherein and whereby the idea of liberty was realized in human experience Bentham however rationalized law as a body of rules laid down and enforced by the State's authority whereby the maximum of happiness conceived in terms of free self assertion was secured to each individual ¹² Lastly Austin resolved every law into a command of the lawgiver an obligation imposed thereby on the citizen and a sanction threatened in the event of disobedience Austin further predicated of the command which is the first element in law that it must prescribe not a single act but a series or number of acts of the same class or kind ¹³ It must however be remembered that these are points of view which were evolved much later in the history of law It is clear that in the early stages of law no distinction was made between *vinculum juri* and *vinculum pudoris* The broad features of ancient law which have been indicated give us a glimpse into the background of ancient law and its theoretic basis It is the object of this article to inquire how far these features were present in ancient Hindu law by examining very briefly the historical background and theoretic basis of Hindu law

THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND OF HINDU LAW

It may sound platitudinous but it is nevertheless true to say that like Hindu culture Hindu law can justly claim the most ancient pedigree in the history of the world Unfortunately absence of reliable chronological data has presented an almost insoluble problem before Oriental scholars in the matter of fixing the dates of ancient Sanskrit works It was not usual in India in ancient times for authors to supply any biographical data or to indicate the place and time when they wrote their works The dates of historical personages and eminent authors are thus left to be determined in the light of intrinsic evidence furnished by literature, and naturally, such a determination has led to a sharp difference and diversity

¹ *Ibid* pp 76 77

Sir Henry Maine *Introduction to Ancient Law* p 67

² *Ibid* p 84

in the scholastic opinion. Generally Western Orientalists were not inclined to concede sufficient antiquity to ancient Sanskrit literature whereas Indian Orientalists sometimes showed a subconscious bias in favour of theories which assigned to ancient Indian literature a very ancient antiquity. It is not my present purpose to enter into a discussion about the chronology of the ancient Sanskrit literature bearing on the question of law. I shall however be content to take the chronology as accepted by Mahamahopadhyaya Dr P V Kane in his *History of Dharma sastra*. I think on the whole the chronology accepted by Dr Kane can be taken to be sound and correct.

Students of Hindu law know that the Vedas occupy a place of pride among the sources of Hindu law recognized by Dharma sāstra literature. The period of the Vedic Samhitās Brāhmanas and Upanisads ranges between 4000 B C and 1000 B C. The composition of the principal Śrauta Sūtras of Āpastamba Āśvalayana Baudhāyana Kātyāyana and others and some of the Grhya Sutras such as those of Āpastamba and Āśvalāyana can be assigned to the period between 800 B C and 400 B C. From 600 B C to 300 B C was the period of the Dharma Sutras of Gautama Āpastamba Baudhāyana and Vāśistha and the Grhya Sutras of Pāraskara and others. The *Arthasastra* of Kautilya may have been composed between 300 B C and A D 100 whereas the present *Manu Smṛti* can claim to have been composed between 200 B C and A D 100. The *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* followed between A D 100 and A D 300. The period of the *Kātyāyana Smṛti* on *vyavahāra* can be taken to be roughly between A D 400 and A D 600. Most of the other Smṛtis can be assigned to the period between A D 600 and A D 900. Viśva rūpa wrote his commentary on the *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* between A D 800 and A D 850 whereas Medhātithi wrote his commentary on the *Manu Smṛti* in A D 900. Viṣṇāneśvara's *Mitaksarā* must have been written between A D 1070 and A D 1100. Jīmutavāhana the author of the *Dāyabhaga* flourished between A D 1100 and A D 1150. Raghunandana the author of the *Dāyatattva* lived between A D 1520 and A D 1575 whereas the period of Nanda Pandita the author of the *Dattaka mīmamsā* is between A D 1590 and A D 1630. Kamalākara Bhatta the author of the *Nirnaya sindhu* must have written his work between A D 1610 and A D 1640 and Nilakantha Bhatta the author of the *Vyavahara mayukha* must have composed his work between A D 1615 and A D 1645. The *Vīramitrodaya* was composed during the same period whereas Bālam Bhatta wrote his commentary on the *Mitāksarā* between A D 1750 and A D 1820 and the *Dharma sindhu* of Kāśinātha was composed in A D 1790¹⁴. It would thus be seen that the

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

history of the development of Hindu law spreads over a period of nearly 6 000 years until the British conquered India. During the British rule, the progress of Hindu law was in a sense arrested. The age of commentators came to an end and in the age of Judges that followed commentaries usurped the place of the main source of Hindu law. That however is another story. When we speak of the historical background of Hindu law, we must take a broad review of the political, social and economic developments of India during this long vista of time.

ANCIENT INDIAN POLITY

What then was the political system prevailing in India in the earliest Vedic times? Dr. Jayaswal has referred to the Vedic theory about the origin of kingship which is found in the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa*. The *Brāhmaṇa* asserts that the *devas* i.e. their worshippers the Hindus originally had no king. In their struggle against the *asuras* when the *devas* found that they were repeatedly defeated they came to the conclusion that it was because the *asuras* had a king to lead them they were successful. Therefore they decided to try the same experiment. And they agreed to elect a king. The *devas* and *asuras* were fighting. The *asuras* defeated the *devas*. The *devas* said: 'It is on account of our having no king that the *asuras* defeat us. Let us elect a king.' All consented.¹ The nature of this monarchy can be ascertained from the *White Yajur Veda*¹⁶ which requires the following verse to be repeated at the coronation: 'This State to thee (is given). Thou art the director, regulator, firm bearer (of this responsibility) for (the good of) agriculture, for well being, for prosperity, for growth (of the people) (that is) for success.' A. C. Das also substantially agrees with the same view. He observes that a distinguished *ṛsi* having usually been the moral, spiritual and political guide of the royal clan that ruled a tribe we may take it for granted that no successor to a deceased king was appointed without his knowledge or approval. In fact, we have positive evidence to show that he was the real king maker. In two hymns of the *Atharva Veda*¹⁷ the Sage Priest has been called the king maker. It was he who suggested the name of a successor to the king probably in consultation with the other members of the royal clan and court, and his nominee presented himself or was invited for election by the people as their king. The monarchy as Zimmer holds, was elective though it is not clear whether the selection by the people was between the members of the royal family only or extended to members of all the noble clans.¹⁸

¹⁶ K. P. Jayaswal *Hindu Polity* (1955) p. 184.

IX 22

IV 22 3 5 VIII 7 6

¹ *Vedic Index* II p. 211

There is a verse in the *Rg Veda*¹⁹ which suggests election of a king by the people or subjects themselves. Wilson has translated it thus: 'Like subjects choosing a king they (the waters) smitten with fear fled from Vṛtra'.²⁰ A. C. Das also refers to a hymn in the *Rg Veda*²¹ which indicates that the stability of a king on the throne was contingent on the goodwill of his subjects. The coronation oath called the *pratiṣṭhā* which was administered to the king on the occasion of his coronation seems to lead to the same conclusion. In the *Mahabhārata* this oath is described as *śruti* which means it is based on a Vedic text. This is how the oath runs: 'Mount on the *pratiṣṭhā* (take the oath) from your heart (without any mental reservation) in fact and by word of mouth. (a) I will see to the growth of the country regarding it as God Himself and (this) ever and always. (b) Whatever law there is here and whatever is dictated by ethics and whatever is not opposed to politics I will act according to unhesitatingly. And I will never be arbitrary. When the king took this oath the members of the assembly who had gathered to witness the election of the king said in response: Amen'.²²

What was the nature of the State governed by a king thus elected by popular will? Was the State sacerdotal? Was it paternalistic? Did it recognize the divine right of kings? Rangaswami Aiyangar in his *Ancient Indian Polity* observes that if it is necessary to sum up the several aims and features of our ancient polity in a single word we shall have to find an equivalent for the French word *étatisme* so as to have it clear that the root principle of our ancient polity was that every function of the State had to be conditioned by and to be subordinated to the need to preserve both Society and the State.²³ The State was not sacerdotal nor even paternalistic. The king was subject to the law as any other citizen and the divine right of kings known to Western political science was unknown in India. On the whole the aim of the ancient Indian State may be said to have been less to introduce an improved social order than to act in conformity with the established moral order. It is undoubtedly difficult to describe precisely or in definite terms the nature of the State when the basic idea on the subject was being adjusted to changing social environments and the process of adjustment was spread over such a long period of several thousand years. It would not be possible within the narrow limits of the present article to enter upon a detailed discussion of this subject. On the whole then it may be said that the picture of ancient

¹⁹ X 124.8

A. C. Das *Rig Vedic Culture* (1925) p. 307

X 173

²⁰ K. P. Jayaswal *Hindu Polity* p. 216

²¹ K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar *Consideration of some aspects of Ancient Indian Polity* (1935) pp. 115 f.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Indian polity which evolves from a careful and analytical study of ancient Sanskrit literature is one of kingship elected by popular will and later acting in consultation with the priestly class the ancient Indian theory of kingship treated the kings as trustees of the State put obedience to divine law above everything else and required the king to take the oath that he would safeguard the moral spiritual and material well being of the State entrusted to his care

SOCIAL STRUCTURE IN ANCIENT INDIA

During the Vedic period the caste system based on birth was probably unknown The early social structure evidenced classification of society into three divisions based on occupational differences and the fourth class included the original residents of this country whom the Aryans had to fight and conquer before establishing themselves in their new home in India Tilak's theory that the Aryans came to India from the Arctic regions and had to conquer the original citizens of India whom they described as Dasa can be said to have now been accepted by many Oriental scholars A C Das however is of the opinion that there is no evidence in the entire range of Sanskrit literature beginning from the Vedas that the Aryans came to India as invaders or that they had a foreign origin²⁴ During the subsequent period when the performance of rituals became more important the Brāhmanas attained position of prominence and power and considerations of purity and notions of spiritual hierarchy tended to make the social divisions known as castes more rigid and artificial The various factors says Dr Ghurye that characterize caste society were the result in the first instance of the attempts on the part of the upholders of the Brahmanic civilization to exclude the aborigines and the Śudras from religious and social communion with themselves Thus the Vedic opposition between the Ārya and the Dāsa is replaced by the Brāhmanic classification of the *dvijātī* and the *ekajātī* (the Śudra) suggesting the transmutation of the Dāsa into the Śudra in the minds of the writers of the Brāhmanic and later periods As an important constituent of the Brāhmanic culture in connection with the sacrificial ritual there arose very exaggerated notions of ceremonial purity² According to Dr Ambedkar however there are two roots from which untouchability has sprung (a) contempt and hatred of the Broken Men as of Buddhists by the Brahmanas (b) continuation of beef eating by the Broken Men after it had been given up by others Dr Ambedkar is of opinion that there was no racial or

² *Ibid* p 325
Castes and Races in India

THE HISTORICAL BACKGROUND AND THEORETIC BASIS OF HINDU LAW

occupational basis for untouchability²⁶ The subsequent history of the Hindu social structure shows that the caste system which thrived on the artificial notions of sacrificial purity led to further and further divisions of Hindu society and it has shown ominous signs of perpetuating itself In determining the character and assessing the effect of the contribution made by the Brāhmana priestly class to the development of Hindu law which recognized the existence of the caste system and gave effect to the principles of social superiority and inferiority in many respects it may be pertinent to refer to the tribute paid to the Brāhmana class by Maine who was himself a merciless critic of this class Says Maine It would be altogether a mistake to regard the class whose ideas are reflected in the literature as a self-indulgent ecclesiastical aristocracy The life which they chalk out for themselves is certainly not a luxurious and scarcely a happy life It is a life passed from first to last under the shadow of terrible possibilities It is possibly to this combination of self-assertion with self-denial and self-abasement that the wonderfully stubborn vitality of the main Brahmanical ideas may be attributed²⁷

VILLAGE COMMUNITIES IN ANCIENT INDIA

In considering the historical background of Hindu law it would also be necessary to remember the existence of the village communities in ancient India As Sir George Birdwood has truly observed India has undergone more religious and political revolutions than any other country in the world but the village communities remain in full municipal vigour all over the peninsula Unlike the village communities which thrived in other ancient societies in India these communities had not been consciously created by autonomous centres within themselves by devolution and delimitation of their own functions but they were practically *sui generis*²⁸ It is in the light of this social economic and political background that the story about the origin and growth of Hindu law and the principles on which it is based must be studied

THE EVOLUTION OF THE CONCEPT OF LAW

The Vedas are usually regarded by Hindu convention as a primary source of Hindu law In fact the Vedas do not contain any material which can be regarded as the lawyer's law in the modern sense of the term They consist of hymns which mainly deal with religious rites true knowledge and liberation Some of the hymns contain exquisite descriptions of

Untouchables—Who were they and why they became Untouchables (1948)

Early Law and Custom p 46

²⁸ Dr Radhakumud Mookerji *Local Government in Ancient India* pp 26

nature and can be justly regarded as the best specimens of the most ancient lyrical literature. No doubt some hymns contain passages which make incidental references to the social customs and conventions prevailing at the time and it is from these incidental references that rules of law have to be gleaned and collected. It is remarkable that the English language does not seem to contain any generic term which denotes both legal and ethical meanings in the concept of law whereas the Sanskrit word *dharma* which is generally used in Smṛti literature to denote law cannot be dissociated from considerations of ethics and morality. But even the word *dharma* has passed through several vicissitudes and it is really difficult to render its meaning definitely or precisely. The most ancient concept of law which is found in the *Rg Veda* is represented by the word *ṛta*. This word denotes the supreme transcendental law or the cosmic order which rules the universe and to which even the gods owe allegiance. As Dr Kane points out *vrata dharma dhaman* and *svadha* represent special aspects of *ṛta*. *Ṛta* is the organized principle of the universe and the divine ordering of the earthly life.²⁹ Subsequently the concept of *dharma* took the place of *ṛta*. Dr Kane has observed that the word *dharma* occurs at least fifty six times in the *Rg Veda*. The word is clearly derived from the root *dhr* (to uphold to support to nourish). In most of the cases the meaning of *dharma* is religious ordinance or rites. In some passages it appears to mean fixed principles or rules of conduct. In the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa* the word *dharma* seems to be used in an abstract sense viz the whole body of religious duties.³⁰ Dr Kane's conclusion is that the word *dharma* passed through several transitions of meaning and ultimately its most prominent significance came to be the privileges duties and obligations of a man his standard of conduct as a member of the Aryan community as a member of one of the castes and as a person in a particular stage of life.³¹ Jaimini defines *dharma* as a desirable goal or result that is indicated by injunctive passages.³² The *Vaisesika Sūtra* defines *dharma* as that from which result happiness and final beatitude.³³ In the Buddhist sacred books the word *dharma* often means the whole teaching of the Buddha. In the Smṛti literature the word *dharma* was used in a comprehensive sense and it included amongst many other topics what may be regarded as rules of secular law. This branch of *dharma* dealing with secular law known by the word *vyavahāra* can be regarded as the most developed phase in the evolution of the concept of law which corresponds with the modern sense of municipal or secular law. According to Kātyāyana the

²⁹ MM Dr P V Kane *H Dh* III pp 244 245
VII 17

³² *Pūrva Mīmāṃsā Sūtra* I 1 2

H Dh I p 2
I 1

absolutely untrustworthy. Hence it is that there arises a feeling of uncertainty regarding their trustworthy character³⁷. Thus the Smṛtis are treated as a source of Hindu law primarily because they purport to reproduce from memory the provisions in the Vedas themselves. That is the conventional view about the part played by the Smṛtis in the growth of Hindu law. The history of the development of Hindu law shows that custom which is regarded as a source of law has played a very important role in making Hindu law progressive and introducing into it from time to time provisions to bridge the difference between the letter of the law and the requirements of changing social needs. Ancient Hindu jurists seem to recognize that if there is a conflict between the practice prevailing in the community and the letter of the law found in the Smṛtis or Śrutis it is generally the practice that would prevail. Manu says *Ācaras* (customs and usages) are transcendent¹ law and so are the practices declared in the Vedas and the Smṛtis. Therefore a twice born person desirous of his own welfare must make efforts to follow it. Dr Kane takes the view—and I am inclined to agree with him—that the *ācāra* which is mentioned by Manu has to be taken by itself and not as qualified by the words *śrutyukta* and *smṛtā*. Texts of Gautama, Manu, Kātyāyana and other writers show that the customs and usages of which notice has to be taken are those of districts (*deśa* or *janapada*) towns and villages, castes, families, guilds and corporations or groups³⁸. In this connection it would be pertinent to refer to the significant observation of Viṣṇuśeṣvara while commenting on *Yājñavalkya* II 118-119 that the texts in the section are mostly *recitals of what actually prevails among the people*. In other words the *Mitākṣarā* makes it clear that the relevant provisions contained in the *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* have given effect to the prevailing local practices among the people. In ancient Dharma śāstra literature we find illuminating discussions as to how a conflict between laws evidenced by different texts has to be resolved. Kautilya says that in any matter where there is conflict between Dharma śāstra and practice or between Dharma śāstra and any secular transaction the king should decide that matter by relying on *dharma*. If the Śāstra comes in conflict with any rational or equitable rule the latter shall be the deciding factor and the strict letter of the text shall be nowhere³⁹. Indeed Āpastambī has mentioned that some jurists in his time held that the rest of the Dharma Sūtra not set out in his book might be gathered from women and men of all castes⁴⁰. Both Brhaspati and Nārada lay down that legal decisions should not be arrived at merely on the basis of the Śāstra and that when a decision

¹ *Tantravarttika* Translation p. 105
² *Kaut.* II 1

³ *H. Dh.* III pp. 875-876
⁴ *Āp. Dh.* S, II 11 29 14 15

is devoid of reasoning there is loss of *dharma* for in a judicial proceeding even a good man may be held to be a bad one or what is good may be held to be sinful just as Māṇḍavya was held to be a thief on a decision without thoughtful reasoning⁴¹ This shows that even when the texts of the Śruti and Smṛti were respected jurists pointed out the inevitable importance of adopting a rational approach in deciding legal issues

In due course of time when the distance between the letter of the Smṛtis and the prevailing customs threatened to get wider commentators appeared on the scene and by adopting ingenious interpretations of the same ancient texts they achieved the laudable object of bringing the provisions of the law into line with popular usages and customs The part played by Viṣṇūśvara in this connection deserves special mention The fiction of interpretation is seen in the three systems of jurisprudence known to us the Roman the English and the Hindu system But as Mr Sankararama Sastri points out there is an interesting distinction among the three systems on this point Whereas the authority of the English case law is derived from the Bench that of the Roman *Responsa Prudentium* and the Sanskrit commentary is derived from the Bar While in England the development of law is left entirely to the exigencies of disputes actually arising for adjudication in India and at Rome it was possible for the jurist to evolve a coherent and homogeneous body of laws without reference to actually contested cases⁴² In this connection it may be interesting to refer to the observations of Bentham that a legal fiction is a wilful falsehood having for its object the stealing of legislative power by and for hands which could not and durst not openly claim it—and but for the delusion thus produced could not exercise it Nevertheless the legal fiction of interpretation has played a very progressive part in the development of Hindu law It is because this process was arrested during the British rule in this country that Hindu law came to be fossilized as judges relied mainly on the commentators without taking into account the changing customs and usages in the Hindu community

The genesis of Hindu law to which incidental references are found in the Vedic literature still remains to be considered Jayaswal has propounded the thesis that the ancient and primary source of Hindu law is *samayas* that is to say resolutions passed by popular bodies Āpastamba describes the *dharma* laws as those which regulate conduct and which are based on resolutions or *samayas*⁴³ The word *samaya* may mean a resolution passed by corporate bodies According to Jayaswal the *dharma samayas*

⁴¹ Quotation from Apararka on Yaṅ II 1 H Dh I p 208

Sankararama Sastri *Fictions in the Development of the Hindu Law Texts* (1926) p 169

⁴² I 1 1 1

were laws resolved upon by certain popular bodies which were bodies of the Vedic schools collectively or individually. The *samayas* were originally communal rules agreed upon in assemblies.⁴⁴ It is these assemblies which in due course may have developed into village communities which are a special feature of the ancient Indian political life. In his last *sūtra* Āpastamba refers to the same source of law when he says that the authoritative works do not exhaust the *dharma*—laws and hence the unanimous practice of all the Aryan countries is to be referred.⁴⁵ It is true that the Dharma Sūtras mention the Vedas as the chief source of Hindu law. The *samaya* source to which Āpastamba refers is not to be found in the later literature. Patañjali recognizes the authority of the Dharma Sūtras collectively calling them Dharma śāstra. The sources of law mentioned by Manu and Yājñavalkya have already been indicated. That the conventions or resolutions of corporate bodies formed part of law is shown by an interesting inscription referred to by Dr Mahalingam in his book *Administrative and Social Life under Vijayanagar*.⁴⁶ The inscription in question records an agreement between the Brāhmanas of the locality that they should perform marriages only in the *kanyādāna* form and that those who pay or receive money shall be excommunicated and punished by the king. It may therefore not be unreasonable to assume that the primary and ancient source of Hindu law may have consisted of the resolutions or agreements reached by groups of people in their corporate assemblies.

THE RELATION BETWEEN ARTHA ŚĀSTRA AND DHARMA ŚĀSTRA

The discussion about the sources of Hindu law and the rules adopted by Hindu law in resolving the conflict between these sources *inter se* inevitably leads to the most important question in the present study. What is the relation between Artha śāstra and Dharma śāstra? The publication by Dr Shama Sastri of the *Arthaśāstra* of Kautilya in 1909 in the Mysore Sanskrit Series was an epoch making event in the history of the research on Hindu law. Kautilya wrote this work between 300 B.C. and A.D. 100. This work is anterior to Manu and the discussion contained in the Dharmasthīyam part of the work is absolutely unique in legal history. It can legitimately claim to be one of the earliest secular codes of law in the world and the high level at which legal and juridical principles are discussed, the precision with which statements are made and the absolutely secular atmosphere which it breathes throughout give it a place of pride in the history of legal literature. It throws a flood of light on the social, economic and

K. P. Jayaswal *Manu and Yajnavalkya—A Basic History of Hindu Law* p. 65
⁴⁴ Āpastamba I 1 1 (23) Madras 19 p. 252

political conditions of the country at the time Kautilya's *Arthasāstra* is divided into 15 *adhikaranas* and 150 chapters and it deals with nearly 180 topics. The total number of verses in the work is about 6 000. In between verses prose is also sometimes interspersed. This work shows a systematic arrangement of topics and a remarkable unity of design. There can be no doubt that it is the work of a brilliant author who approached his problem in a purely secular legalistic and objective manner. It appears that Kautilya's *Arthasāstra* refers to more than a dozen previous authors on *Artha sāstra* and this naturally leads to the inference that municipal and secular law had been expounded before Kautilya by several other authors. And it would inevitably take the foundation of the school of *Artha sāstra* to a date much anterior to that of Kautilya. The question which arises for consideration is did secular law as propounded in the *Arthasāstra* begin to function and progress independently of Hindu law which is to be found in *Smṛti* literature?

Jayaswal has strongly pleaded for the view that *Artha sāstra* had progressed independently of the *Dharma sāstra* until the present *Manu Smṛti* was composed⁴⁷. According to him the *Arthasāstra* in substance embodies the imperial code of law of the Mauryas whereas the *Mānava Dharma sāstra* is based on the psychology of the Hindu nation of the Brāhmana empire of the Śungas. Yājñavalkya on the other hand who followed Manu represents the view of Hindu law as it prevailed in the Satavāhana regime. It is more liberal than Manu in its general aspects and less generous to the Brāhmanas. In some important matters it has more affinity with the *Arthasāstra* than with Manu. Unlike Manu Yājñavalkya devotes larger space to the consideration of the problems of civil law properly so called. Yājñavalkya deals with contract generally and with partnership of sea traders and artisans and the law of corporations is also considered by him. According to Jayaswal's theory after the *Manu Smṛti* achieved eminence and authority the independent existence of the *Arthasāstra* came to an end and *vyavahāra* became merely a part of the *Dharma sāstra*. The *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* which virtually repealed the *Manu Smṛti* no doubt adopted a more liberal and less Brāhmanical approach but even Yājñavalkya treated *vyavahāra* as a part of *dharma* and that settled the pattern and form of Hindu law for the future. In course of time commentators followed and they made requisite adjustments in the provisions of Yājñavalkya and consistently with the social trends of their times the liberal provisions of Yājñavalkya came generally to be narrowed down. Rangaswami Aiyangar seems broadly to agree with this view⁴⁸.

⁴⁷ Jayaswal *Manu and Yājñavalkya*

⁴⁸ *Considerations of some aspects of Ancient Indian Polity* (1930)

The theory thus propounded by Jayaswal has been strongly criticized by S Varadachariar⁴⁹ He points out that it is not correct to say that the *Manu Smṛiti* was the first book of Dharma śāstra which included the discussion of law and that it could not be assumed to have come into existence only during the Śunga period He also relies on the fact that some topics of law have in fact been dealt with even in the Dharma Sūtras of Gautama Baudhāyana and Āpastamba and that the supremacy of the Brāhmanas did not commence with the Śunga dynasty it had in fact begun after the fall of Buddhism But the main point which Varadachariar makes is that Jayaswal's theory is inconsistent with the history of evolution of the other systems of law to which I have already adverted Dr Kane seems to take the view that Artha śāstra is really a branch of Dharma śāstra since the former deals with the responsibilities of kings for whom rules are laid down in many treatises on *dharma*⁵⁰

I am inclined to agree with Jayaswal It would be interesting to notice a few of the points of difference between Kautilya and Manu because these differences indicate a sharp and radical disparity of approach Kautilya allows *niyoga* (levirate) in its ancient fullness to widows and to the wives of men afflicted with disease Manu condemns it Kautilya would recognize the existence of courtesans and would seek to organize them whereas Manu would punish them as a public scourge Kautilya would attempt to regulate gambling and drink Manu condemns it as sin Kautilya knows of remarried widows and unmarried mothers Manu would forbid remarriages except in the case of widows who were virgins Manu strongly disapproves of heresy while Kautilya does not seem to share that view because he would go no further than deprive apostates of the right of maintenance from the family estate and even in respect of apostates he would require the mother to be maintained by her offspring Kautilya and Manu differ in regard to the shares to be allotted to sisters on inheritance Kautilya forbids suicide and disapproves of *sati* whereas Manu does not seem to renounce *sati* expressly Kautilya condemns addiction to astrology Manu would only discourage the pursuit of astrology as a profession There are also several differences in regard to the status privileges and concessions enjoyed by Brāhmanas under Kautilya and Manu These differences can be satisfactorily explained on the theory that the *Arthaśāstra* was dealing with secular law and approached the consideration of relevant questions from a purely secular point of view whereas Dharma śāstra considered the same problems from an ethical religious or moral point of view and gave effect to the notions on which the Hindu social structure was based

⁴⁹ Radhakumud Mookerji *Endowment Lectures on the Hindu Judicial System* pp 38 f
⁵⁰ *H Dh I* p 87

There is another aspect of the matter which leads to the same conclusion. Kautilya holds that *dharma vyavahāra* customs and royal ordinance are the four legs of lawsuits; that the latter in each case supersedes the former. This clearly assigns a prominent position to royal ordinance. This position of royal ordinance is not recognized by Dharma śāstra. Then again Kautilya refers to the *dharma* rule as distinguished from the rule of *vyavahāra* in dealing with the question of awarding interest. He says that interest allowed by the *dharma*—law is one and a quarter per cent per month and he adds that the rate allowed by *vyavahāra* is five per cent per month. This clearly shows that the provisions of *vyavahāra* according to the *Arthasāstra* on the question of interest were distinct and separate from similar provisions in Dharma śāstra. On the whole then it appears to be reasonable and sound to assume the existence of Artha śāstra functioning independently of Dharma śāstra and dealing with secular or municipal law not necessarily as a part of *dharma* or religion. The *artha*—law under Artha śāstra recognized the authority of the king's laws and treated the kingly enactments as of binding character.

It is true that the emergence and development of a purely secular body of law at such an early date would be a very remarkable achievement and it would seem to be somewhat inconsistent with the well recognized theory of the evolution of laws in ancient societies. But the existence of a large body of legal literature passing under the name of Artha śāstra poses a problem and it cannot be resolved by merely treating Artha śāstra as part of Dharma śāstra because the scope of the inquiry in the two sets of works, their approach, their outlook, the nature and number of the topics taken for discussion by them and the disparity in the specific provisions on material points do not easily admit of the said explanation. It may be that subsequent to Manu Artha śāstra ceased to exist or function separately and the Hindus began to take their law from Smritis and commentaries on them. But the discovery of Kautilya's *Arthasāstra* has administered a healthy shock to the accepted notion about the origin of Hindu law and it would not be right to reject Jayaswal's theory substantially and principally on the ground that it does not fit in with the development of law in ancient times in other countries.

Indeed it may be legitimate to say that the very harsh criticism made by Maine against ancient Hindu law must now be regarded as unjustified. On the whole says Maine the impression left on the mind by the study of these books (books on Dharma śāstra) is that a more awful tyranny never existed than this which proceeded from the union of political, intellectual

and spiritual ascendancy ⁵¹ And he adds that Hindoo jurisprudence has a substratum of forethought and sound judgement but irrational imitation has engrafted in it an immense apparatus of cruel absurdities ⁵² Maine speaks very highly of the Twelve Tables and observes that they were not entitled to say that if the Twelve Tables had not been published the Romans would have been condemned to a civilization as feeble and perverted as that of the Hindoos but this much at least is certain that with their code they were exempt from the very chance of so unhappy a destiny ⁵³ It must be stated in fairness to the great author that at the time when he wrote his book Oriental scholars were not aware of the existence of Arthaśāstra and Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* had not seen the light of day But if the *Arthaśāstra* had existed long before the Roman Tables were composed the harsh language used by Maine about ancient Hindu lawyers must be characterized as wholly unjustified and based on insufficient knowledge of the development of Hindu law

I am free to confess that before the last word is spoken on this vexed question of the relation between Arthaśāstra and Dharmaśāstra it would be necessary to examine all available literature comprehensively and critically Perhaps in course of time other works on Arthaśāstra may be discovered and they may throw additional light on the question Unfortunately during the British rule Hindu law has not been studied from within with the help of Sanskrit texts As the Privy Council observed in the case of *Collector of Madura v Mootoo Ramalinga* ⁵⁴ the duty of a judge administering Hindu law was not so much to enquire whether a disputed doctrine is fairly deducible from the earliest authority as to ascertain whether it has been received by the particular school which governs the District with which he has to deal This approach imposed limitations on judges and in the administration of Hindu law commentators respected in several areas assumed paramount importance But for a proper study of Hindu law its origin growth and development it would be necessary to undertake a study of all the Sanskrit texts available on the subject The relevant literature offers as Dr Rash Behari Ghose observed long ago a rich and varied field for enquiry The harvest has long been ripening for the sickle but as yet to our reproach the reapers are few in number and that wealth of materials which should be our pride is now our disgrace ⁵⁵ Dr Ghose also prophetically expressed the hope that Hindu

Early Law and Custom p 46

Ancient Law p 17

Ibid p 17

12 Moore's Ind App 397 436

Dr Rash Behari Ghose *Law of Mortgages* IVth Edn p 35

law will at no distant date render the same service to jurisprudence that Sanskrit has already done to the sister science of philology I believe that when the part played by Artha śastra in the development of Hindu law is fully discovered the prophecy made by Dr Ghose would come true

THE HINDU JUDICIAL SYSTEM

A truly magnificent administration of justice synchronizing the highest principles with the fairest procedure is the contribution of the Hindu judicial system in India. Itself a product of centuries of evolution this system anticipates future centuries of legal thought. This oldest system older than the jurisprudence of Rome and England is surprisingly modern. Legal and historical scholars have yet to work hard and long in this vast field of research to explore and appreciate the wisdom, excellence and maturity of the Hindu judicial system.

SABHA

The origin of the Hindu judicial system can be traced from the prehistoric Vedic times. It is certainly more than 3000 years old if not older still. The *sabhā* (Judicial assembly) is usually associated with the later period of the *Rg Veda*. In the *Atharva Veda*¹ reference is made to the fire which used to be kept in the court room or the *sabhā* and the Vedic term *sabhya* appears to indicate such fire. The *Rg Veda*² describes the *sabha* and refers to the delights and relief of litigants when they came out successful from the *sabhā's* deliberations. In the *purusamedha* of the *Śukla Yajur Veda*³ the *sabhā* is described as the place where a litigant receives justice. In the *Pāraskara Grhya Sūtra*⁴ there is the description of the function and atmosphere of the *sabha*. It indicates animated discussion with lively debate and formulation of justice. Jayarāma describes the *sabhā* as resounding and shining because of the performance of justice. The Jātakas describe the high standards which the *sabhā* was expected to maintain. According to the Jātakas the *sabhā* which had no good people was no *sabhā* and the people who did not proclaim the *dharma* (justice) were not good people; those who avoided personal sentiments and fearlessly proclaimed justice were the good people of the *sabhā*.⁵ Nārada emphasizes the importance of elderly people, *dharma* and truth in the court of justice.⁶

INDEPENDENCE OF THE JUDICIARY

The independence of the judiciary was one of the outstanding features of the Hindu judicial system. Even during the days of the Hindu

VIII 10 5
III 13

X 71 10
V 509

* XXX 6
III 18 Cf *Mbh* V 35 58

monarchy the administration of justice always remained separate from the executive. It was as a rule independent both in form and in spirit. It was the Hindu judicial system that first realized and recognized the importance of separation of the judiciary from the executive and gave this fundamental principle a practical shape and form. The case of *Anātha pindika v Jeta* reported in the *Vinaya Pitaka*⁷ is a shining illustration of this principle. There a prince and a private citizen submitted their case to the law court and the court decided against the prince. The prince accepted such a decision as a matter of course and as binding on him. The evolution of the principle of separation of the judiciary from the executive was largely the result of the Hindu conception of law as binding on the sovereign. Law in Hindu jurisprudence was above the sovereign. It was the *dharma*. The laws were then not regarded so much as a product of supreme parliaments and legislatures as at present. Certain laws were regarded as above all human authority. Such for instance were the natural laws which no parliament however supreme could abolish. Technically speaking a supreme parliament may proclaim a law abolishing the law of gravitation but it will not in fact be abolished by the parliament's fiat. The doctrine was not merely confined to natural or scientific laws but extended to certain social laws which the experience, wisdom and intuitive powers of highly developed personalities could discover as unalterable having regard to human nature and the laws of biology. All this body of laws which had a higher authority than human agencies was compendiously called the *dharma*. The judicial system in Hindu India always worked on this first premise. Its genius lay in adapting this first premise to the changing patterns of society with which it had to deal from time to time. The first premise is not the same as *Jus Gentium* or *Jus Naturalis* of Roman jurisprudence but was a much larger, more scientific and more concrete concept.

The other agency which helped to establish the independence of the judiciary was the fact that in the Hindu judicial system lawyers were appointed judges and lawyers as a rule at that time came largely from the Brāhmana class who as exponents of the *dharma* had to be obeyed by the executive and the sovereign. The *Śatapatha Brāhmana* as well as the Jātakas refer to the division of the Brāhmanas into two classes the priests and the politicians. In fact the divisions are described as being composed of *purohita* (priest) politicians and the Brāhmana ministers.

This independence of the judiciary was ensured by high standards followed in appointing judges. Nārada states that judges should be

⁷ *Cullavagga* VI 4 9

selected from among Brāhmanas Ksatriyas and Vaisyas The sovereign was the appointing authority but was assisted and advised in the selection by the *sabhā* and other members of the King in Council The judge or the *prādurvāka* had to have the following qualifications

The judge must be self controlled of a respectable family impartial not given to excitement steadfast afraid of the hereafter virtuous energetic, and free from passion ⁸

THE COURT

It was a significant fact that the judges under this system were helped by society in the administration of justice They were both judges of law and the jury being the judges of fact Their number was always odd in case there was a necessity to decide by the majority The rule of the *sabhā* was that everyone should speak according to law It was considered that to keep silent or to speak what was not the law was sinful According to Nārada either the judicial assembly (*sabha*) must not be entered at all or a fair opinion delivered That means he who either stands mute or delivers an opinion contrary to justice is a sinner ⁹ The king appointed councillors to assist deliberations in the court It was the rule of the day that every person versed in law should attend the court and if occasion arose should be invited to give his own opinion on a disputed point of law to prevent obvious miscarriage of justice This procedure is comparable to the modern practice of calling upon a lawyer not engaged in the case to assist the court as *amicus curiae* a friend of the court Indeed Manu declares that silence in such a case is culpable ¹⁰ This is clear from the verse of Nārada referred to above This however was not an invitation for public participation in a litigation Nārada is anxious to make it clear that in a litigious dispute one who has no appointed function should not be allowed to say anything and one who is versed in law should alone be allowed to speak what is proper, and that too only when he has no leaning towards any of the particular litigants

The court scene in the *Mṛcchakatika* (c third century A.D.) makes a reference to the jury ¹¹ The *Śukra nīti sūtra* ¹² Brhaspati ¹³ and Nārada ¹⁴ all describe the function of the jury There the jury was composed of either seven or five or three persons, and they were described as the examiners of the cause while the judge their president was called the speaker¹⁵ and the king as carrying out the punishment There were thus

⁸ Cf. *Kat* (64) quoted in the *Mitaksara* on *Yaj* (I 6)

⁹ Cf. *Nār* Intro. III 10 (*SBE* XXXIII p 48)

VIII 13

IX 14

IV 5 26 7

I 62 3 (*GOS* p 10 f)

Intro. I 4 5 (*SBE* XXXIII p 36 f)

checks and balances so that even when justice was dispensed with by the judge there was a safeguard against the leanings of any particular judge

To keep the judiciary free even from the influence of the king the law was that the king himself was not allowed to hear cases Nārada¹ as well as Brhaspati¹⁶ expressly declares that the king was not allowed to decide cases by himself alone The king was present and sat in his council which included the Chief Justice These were cases which in the modern world would be cases on appeal and the court with the king was the highest Court of Appeal In the *Rajataranginī* this procedure of the King in Council finds confirmation in the case described there in the reign of King Yaśaskara¹⁷

The modern practice of all the courts and their processes functioning in the name of the head of the State or the king was also the rule in the Hindu judicial system In theory the king always presided over the court whether he was personally present there or not This is supported by the *Vīramitrodaya*¹⁸ and Manu¹⁹ The decree also was given under the seal of the court and was described as a document given in the name of the king The king's name also appeared in the summonses to attend the court as well as in all other processes for execution

Full records of cases decided by the courts were kept The Jātakas make frequent references to such records They are sometimes described as *vinīścaya pustaka*²⁰ Vasistha also makes reference to the judicial records of cases decided by the courts

It was a part of the Hindu judicial system that justice had to be administered openly and not in private (*na rahasi*) and never by one judge alone

The *Sukra nīti sāra*²¹ gives a graphic picture of the king the court and the procedure According to the Dharma sāstras being devoid of anger and greed with the Chief Justice and the Council attended by good Brāhmanas collected in mind observant of the procedure and sequence never one-sided but an attentive listener a king should examine the dispute and never himself decide in the *sabhā*

The doctrine of *res judicata* (plea of a former judgement) was well recognized in the Hindu judicial system and uniformly followed both during the Hindu and the Buddhist periods²²

SYSTEM OF JUDICIARY AND JUDICIAL ADMINISTRATION

The system of judiciary and its mode of judicial administration anticipates almost all the ideas which we now trace as products of the British

Ibid I 35 (SBE XXXIII p 14) ¹⁶ I 24 (SBE XXXIII p 280)
VI 14 69 Ed by Jivananda Vidyasagar Bhattacharya 1875 p 39 f
¹ VII ¹⁷ III 292 ¹⁸ IV 5 5 6
Cullavagga V 4 14 21

legal history and call modern. The *Sukra nīti sāra*²³ gives us as complete a picture of the system as possible in a few words.

First there was the Chief Justice called the *pradvivāka* who presided over the Supreme Court in the capital of the kingdom. Next in order of precedence came the Minister of Justice who prescribed the law and the procedure after ascertaining the opinion of the majority of the jury on the subject and then advised the king accordingly. It almost appears to be like the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council who advise the British Sovereign. The *pradvivāka* along with the members of the jury gathered in a meeting and ascertained by majority of opinion the procedure and the laws. Then proof was examined and scrutinized. This proof consisted of evidence given by witnesses and that contained in documents. Three different kinds of proof were recognized in the Hindu judicial system according to the *Sukra nīti sara*²⁴. They were direct evidence (*pratyaksa*) inference (*anumāna*) and analogy (*upamana*). It was the duty of the *pradvivāka* to advise the king ultimately. The Minister of Law sometimes called the *dharmadhikarana*²⁵ is called the *pandita* in the *Sukra nīti sara*²⁶. The duties of the *pandita* are to consider first the ancient and the present laws test them in the light of the current codes and jurisprudence and then recommend to the king laws which will be acceptable to the community.

No account of the Hindu judicial system can be complete without some reference to the fact that there were Hindu republics in ancient times as much as monarchies. There was a remarkable interlinking coordination in the judicial system in both the monarchies and the republics. It was possible only because law as *dharma* was common to both.

The Hindu law books refer to the laws of *kula* States and those of *ganas*²⁷. The *kulikas* or aristocrats presided over the *kula* courts²⁸. The laws provide that an appeal lies from the *kula* court to the *gana* court²⁹. According to the *Mahābhārata*³⁰ it was the duty of the *kula* elders to take notice of criminal cases and these *kula* elders administered justice through a President and punishment was given in his name. These were not the only courts known in the Hindu judicial system. It recognized what may be called guilds which were given some judicial power. These guilds were mainly industrial organizations. They were more or less the counterparts and forerunners of the modern Industrial Tribunals and Courts. Appeals were allowed from these Industrial Courts which were called

II 92 100
^a *Viṣṇu dharmottara* II 24 24 5 *Mat* (215 24) has *dharmadhikaranin*
 II 85 *Yaj* I 360 II 186 *Br Sm* I 94 (GOS p 16)
Nār Introd I 7 (SBE XXXIII p 6) *Manu* VIII 2
 XII 107 6 32

pūgas These appeals came to the *kula* and *gana* courts When *ganas* became subject to the monarchs subsequently the decision of the *gana* was subject to an appeal to the monarch or the Royal Chief Justice This is supported by the law books of Nārada Brhaspati and others³¹ These *gana* courts were really the courts administering the laws of the Hindu republics in India and it is from this feature that they draw their name *gana* meaning the people or the republic The Greek writers paid great tributes to the laws of these *gana* courts The *Mahābharata*³² also praises their excellent legal system The laws of the *ganas* were called *samaya* by Nārada³³ Brhaspati quoted in the *Smṛti candrikā* shows that the word *samaya* literally means a decision arrived together in an assembly³⁴

HINDU JUDICIAL SYSTEM IN SIX STAGES

Any analysis of the Hindu judicial system must make a reference to at least six different stages through which it had to pass The first stage of the Hindu law was the stage in which there was no writing The Śruti and the Smṛti were then the only sources The duties of the courts of law of this period were performed by the heads of the family of the *gotras* (clans) and of the *pravaras* (progenitors) by themselves or by getting an umpire selected by the parties That is how the *Smṛti candrikā* quotes Bhṛgu on the point³⁵

The second stage commences with the introduction of writing which first appeared as a substance of the Smṛtis and of some of the Brahmanas in the form of *sūtras* (aphorisms) This second stage is the stage of the written Sūtras The main function of the judicial system and the courts of law at that time was the application of the Sūtras in deciding individual disputes The third stage is the stage of codification The Vedas were embodied in the forms of Samhitas A new departure was also made in the Smṛti from the Grhya and the Dharma Sūtras to the Samhitās or institutes which were called the Dharma śāstras These Dharma śāstras can be compared to the Institutes of Justinian or to Blackstone's Commentary They were really text books on law While they did not have the force of statutes they nevertheless were regarded as authorities of such great persuasion that much if not the whole of law was inspired by them and they acted as guides for the courts of the time on all controversial and disputed points of law and their application to practical life

By the third stage the administration of justice was becoming elaborate and complicated During this period there were really two sets of courts

Nar Introd I 7 (SBE XXXIII p 6) Br Sm I 31 (SBE XXXIII p 289)
XII 107 Nar X 12
II pp 222 3 II p 18

available to the litigants. First there were the courts directly under the authority of the State. Secondly there were the courts of a popular character constituted by the people themselves either through local *sabhās* or *pañcāyats* or village councils or even family or tribal councils. The valuable research in this field made by Colebrooke reveals to us three different categories of State Courts and three different categories of People's Courts. The State Courts where people could go for redress were (1) The Court of the Sovereign assisted by the learned Brāhmanas as assessors. This was the Privy Council or the King in Council. This Court was ambulatory and was held wherever the king sat or went. (2) The Tribunal of the Chief Justice or the *pradurvāka* appointed by the Sovereign and sitting with three or more assessors not exceeding seven. This was the Supreme Court. It was a stationary court held at an appointed place. (3) The Subordinate Judges appointed by the Sovereign's authority for local areas and local jurisdictions. From their decisions appeals used to lie to the Court of the Chief Justice and thereafter to the Privy Council or the King in Council. The three different types of popular courts mentioned by Colebrooke are (1) Assemblage of townsmen or meetings of persons belonging to various tribes and professions but inhabiting the same place. (2) The court represented by companies of traders or artisans or persons belonging to different tribes but subsisting by the practice of the same profession. These appear to be Industrial Courts or the Courts of Professions or courts of disciplinary bodies of different professions. (3) The court of kinsmen or relations connected by consanguinity mainly confined to personal and family laws and customs.

According to Colebrooke these courts were technically called in Hindu law (1) *pūga*, (2) *sreni* and (3) *kula*. Their decisions or awards were always subject to revision. The *kula* decisions were revisable by the *sreni* courts and the *sreni* decisions by the *pūga* courts. From the decision of the *pūga* an appeal could be made to the Court of the *pradurvāka* and finally thereafter to the Court of the Sovereign. The Hindu judicial system, therefore, shows a regular hierarchy of courts and appeals with well defined jurisdictions.

The fourth stage of the development of this system was in the Buddhist period. Buddhism did not interfere with Hindu law and Hindu usages and customs. This is proved by the very significant fact that Burmese law books did not only profess to be based on the Code of Manu but they also have actually a great number of rules in common with that great work. Whenever courts in the Buddhist period found difficulty in administering Hindu law or obtaining the co-operation of the orthodox Brahmana assessors attempts were made to prepare some digest or compilation of

Hindu law by the Buddhistic courts. These compilations were naturally free from the more orthodox features of Hindu conservatism. Visvaśūpa's commentary on Yājñavalkya which was followed by Vijñānesvara in writing the *Mitāksara* was such a compilation. The *Mitāksarā* bears a large impress of Buddhistic influence. Similarly the *Agni Purāna* contains evidence of the development of Hindu law during the Buddhistic period. This development may be compared to the growth of Equity in English law. The orthodoxy and stubborn formalism of the more ancient Hindu system were mellowed by rules of fairness and equity almost in the same manner as equity relieved the rigours of common law in England. A kind of Hindu equity grew up and developed during this fourth stage under Buddhistic influence. The process of humanization and adaptation of law was carried out through the instrumentality of the courts as well as through the new text books and compilations that appeared in this period.

The fifth stage of Hindu law covers the period of the Mohammedan rule. A true view of the history of the effect of the Muslim period on the Hindu judicial system and Hindu law is that the Mohammedan rulers did not upset either Hindu law or its machinery of administration. They were more concerned with the collection of revenue and left undisturbed the civil judicial administration of the Hindus although there was naturally enough some encroachment in the sphere of the criminal law administration. Two outstanding events of this period show the great contribution which the Mohammedan rulers made to Hindu law and judicial administration. The first relates to the sixteenth century when Dalapati, one of the ministers of the well known Nizam Shāh of Ahmednagar wrote the stupendous encyclopaedia and digest of Hindu law which was known as *Nṛsimha prasada* ³⁶. The second event is the celebrated digest of Hindu law called the *Vyavahāra saukhya* containing chapters on Civil Procedure and the Law of Evidence compiled by Todarmal, the famous Hindu minister of the Emperor Akbar ³⁷. The Civil Procedure shows the working of the Hindu judicial system. History records the fact during this Muslim period the State very often took the advice of the Hindu *panditas* in administering laws relating to the Hindus.

The last phase of the development of the Hindu law and judicial system ends in the British period. The British followed the same policy towards Hindu law as their Muslim and Buddhist predecessors. The personal laws of the Hindus were left untouched by the British except where they affected the political and fiscal interests of the country. In the early period of the British rule the personnel of the judiciary being foreign always

³⁶ *Nṛsimha prasada (Vyavahāra sara)* ed by V. S. Tillo, Benares, 1934.
Todarananda ed by P. L. Vaidya, Ganga Oriental Series, Bikaner.

took the advice and opinion of the Hindu *panditas* in deciding questions of Hindu law but later this practice was discarded as the Indians were gradually taken in as members of the judiciary

From this brief analysis it will be clear that the current of the Hindu judicial system and administration is an unbroken one ever since the Vedic times extending over many thousands of years and surviving in spite of many vicissitudes of fortune in the history of the country

JUDICIAL LEGISLATION THROUGH INTERPRETATION

Although Hindu law was normally considered traditional and from that point of view could not be altered by direct changes introduced by the State except only occasionally by precepts of the sovereign yet law was continually being made by the judges through interpretation according to the famous principles that came to be known as *Mīmāṃsā* rules of interpretation. One of the greatest contributions of the Hindu judicial system was the development of the *Mīmāṃsā Sūtras* or the rules of interpretation. The *Kalpa* and the *Nirukta* dealt with questions of interpretation. The *Kalpa Sūtras* although called *prayoga sūtras* (rules of application) undoubtedly served the purpose of rules of interpretation such for instance as the *Sūtras* of *Āśvalayana*, *Āpastamba* and others. *Mīmāṃsā* aphorisms are really associated with *Jaimini Sūtras*, which *Bhartrhari* held as being the oldest *Sūtras*.

The rules of interpretation do not grow in a vacuum and the historic reason for their origin, growth and development was provided by the Hindu judicial system which used rules of interpretation as one of the most powerful instruments for what is known as judicial legislation by decisions in individual cases. *Jaimini's* book is the first outstanding work of antiquity. In some places it appears that *Jaimini* was more analytical than *Austin* and more modern than *Goodhart* in discovering the real sanction behind the law. The development of such high principles of interpretation would not have been possible in such early times but for the fact that the Hindu judicial system was keen and anxious to interpret the laws and extend them to meet the challenge of changing times.

JUDICIAL PROCEDURE

The procedure of law in the Hindu judicial system was remarkably modern and anticipated the evolution of centuries. How fair and modern it was will be apparent from a brief and broad study of such procedure.

No civil action could be started without a complaint. Neither the king nor his officers were permitted to foster civil litigation by starting an action without a complaint from a plaintiff. Only a person actually

aggrieved could start an action Nārada states that if a person who has no concern or who is not interested personally in the litigation institutes any complaint then he should be punished³⁸ That was how vexatious or champertous litigation was avoided The only exception was made in criminal law where it was enjoined that the king might and in fact should take notice of a crime without a formal plaint

The complaint in the civil action had to be instituted by petition to the court stating only the barest facts constituting the grievance The plaintiff's statement was taken down accurately by an officer of the court called the *lekha* or writer Then the judge and such assessors or councillors as there were in the particular court having jurisdiction to deal with the matter could put any questions that they thought proper in order to elucidate and clarify the complaint It was provided that the answers made by the complainant or the plaintiff to those questions should be taken into consideration to see whether the complaint disclosed a proper cause of action It was only when it did so that a summons was issued through the officer of the court appointed for that purpose who was called the *sādhypāla*³⁹ As in the modern age the Hindu judicial system even at that time exempted certain persons like a soldier on duty or an ambassador or emissaries or persons engaged in public duties from personal attendance Disobedience to a summons without excuse was punished with a fine There was a peculiar sanction by which obedience to a summons was sometimes enforced This was called *āsedha* or the imposition of legal restraint The Hindu judicial system developed four kinds of such legal restraints The first was local The second was temporary The third was inhibition from going abroad The fourth was prevention from pursuit of work or occupation⁴⁰

When the defendant appeared in obedience to the summons the plaintiff was again called upon to repeat his complaint in the presence of the defendant When he did so it was again taken down and that corresponds to the modern plaint On this occasion the plaintiff had to go into greater details so as to make his allegations specific and definite as regards time place object and the manner in which the cause of action arose⁴¹ Any serious discrepancy between the complaint as originally preferred and the plaint as finally recorded in the presence of the adversary almost always proved fatal to the cause This was a special feature of the Hindu judicial

Nār Introd II 23 (SBE XXXIII p 29)
 Cf Vyasa in *Parāśara Madhaviya* III p 130 *Vyavaharamayukha* p 5
 For *āsedha* see Nār Introd I 47 54 (SBE XXXIII p 17f) Br Sm I 159 63
 (GOS p 26) Kat 103 110
 4 Yaj II 6

system to make the parties come together from the earliest stage long before the actual trial

RULES OF PLEADINGS

The rules of pleadings were progressive. The plaintiff was required to be technically precise, comprehensive, direct, unequivocal, consistent, susceptible of proof, concise and yet not deficient in meaning.⁴² According to Nārada, amendment of a complaint was permissible, but no amendment was allowed after the plaintiff was finally taken down in the presence of the adversary.⁴³ The defendant was allowed to file a defence and could also get reasonable adjournment for putting in his answer. The defence also had to be taken down in the presence of the plaintiff in pursuance of the principle of confronting the two parties from the earliest stage when they start unfolding their cases. It was the rule that the defence had to be confined to the grounds raised in the plaintiff and the answers had to be unhesitating, clear, consistent, free from prolixity and not obscure.⁴⁴ Katyāyana describes four forms of defence, viz. (1) confession, (2) denial, (3) special exception, and (4) plea of a former judgement or *res judicata*.⁴⁵ which remind one of the most advanced forms of pleading recognized in the modern age. Brhaspati's definition of special exception (*pratyavashandana*, also known as *kāranottara*)⁴⁶ shows that it was the modern plea of confession and avoidance in the law of pleadings in advanced jurisprudence.

Hārta defines the plea of *res judicata* (*prān nyaya* or *pūrvā nyāya*) in defence as being the plea where the defendant avers that the matter in controversy was the subject of a former litigation between him and the plaintiff and in which the latter was defeated.⁴⁷

Brhaspati describes a judicial proceeding as consisting of four different stages: (1) the plaintiff, (2) the answer, (3) the trial, and (4) the deliberation, followed by the decree.⁴⁸

When the answer amounted to an admission of the claim, the decree could follow at once without any further proceeding.

RULES OF TRIAL

It is surprising to find elaborate and technical rules in the Hindu judicial system dealing with the complicated question of the right to begin

⁴² Cf. *Br Sm* II 14.5 (GOS p. 31)

⁴³ *Nār* Intro II 7 (SBE XXXIII p. 27)

⁴⁴ *Ibid* Quotations III 2 (SBE XXXIII p. 239)

⁴⁵ St 165 Cf. also *Nār* Intro II 2 *Śukra* IV 5 144

III 19 (GOS p. 29)

*Asmīnnarthe sahānena vadaḥ pūrvamabhūtāda
jito yam ti cedbruyat prān nyayah syattaduttaram*

II 1 (GOS p. 29)

THE HINDU JUDICIAL SYSTEM

Normally this right belonged to the plaintiff. But in cases of confession and avoidance the defendant had the right to begin. According to Haritz, the plaintiff led the evidence in cases of denial while the defendant did in cases of special exception and *res judicata*; no evidence was necessary in cases of admission.⁴⁹

After deciding who has the right to begin at the trial the party who has the right is called upon to state the evidence by which he proposes to support his case Yajñavalkya says that a competent surety should be taken from each party for the satisfaction of the judgement if it goes against him ⁵⁰ If a party was unable to furnish a competent surety steps were taken to ensure his attendance during the trial The procedure anticipated the procedure of courts of the present age calling for security for costs and attendance

Counter claims were not usually entertained until the completion of the trial of the original complaint⁵¹

Nārada recorded and laid down five rules showing who should lose a case ⁵² (1) A person who having his case recorded in one way afterwards sets up a new case (2) A person who shows his aversion to the trial by refusing to help its progress (3) A person who fails to appear at the time of the trial (4) A person who being called upon to answer keeps silent (5) A person who absconds with a view to avoiding the process of the court

It was the rule that a litigation once started could not be compromised except with the clear sanction of the court⁵³ This again accords with the modern judicial proceeding

LAW OF EVIDENCE

The Hindu judicial system used a very highly developed law of evidence. Evidence is broadly divided into three classes (1) documents (2) witnesses and (3) conduct. Of conduct possession was always taken as evidence giving rise to a presumption of title which was later to be developed by modern jurisprudence. Documents were divided into two classes the official and the private. Their proof differs in the same way as it does in the modern law of evidence. Custom could be proved both by the evidence of witnesses and by documentary evidence. Interesting descriptions are to be found about the qualities and demeanour of a reliable witness. The test of such a witness was said to be that he should be Religious, generous, of a respectable family, devoted to truth, a lover of virtue, candid and possessed of offspring.⁵⁴ The characteristics of the

I 29 ³ *Yaj* II 10^{od} *Ibid* II 9^{ab}
⁵ *Nār* Introd II 33 (SBE XXXIII p 31f)⁵ Cf *Yaj* II 68 *Manu* VIII 62 3
⁵ *Bṛ Sm* III 42 (GOS p 42)
 445

demeanour of an untruthful witness are graphically described thus. He constantly shifts his position and licks the corners of his lips, his forehead sweats, his countenance changes colour, his mouth dries up, his speech falters, and he very often contradicts himself. He does not look up, is slow in returning answers, and contorts his lips.⁵⁵ It is difficult to find even in modern books on the law of evidence a more graphic description on the demeanour of witnesses with such great precision. While giving his deposition, the witness was placed near both the plaintiff and the defendant. The judge always put the witnesses on their oath and had the right to interrogate them about the case. Distinct forms of ordeal were also prescribed in the law books of the Hindus, but they were to be avoided if other kinds of evidence were forthcoming.⁵⁶

JUDGEMENT

No trial was allowed to be held either behind closed doors or outside jurisdiction or at night, and any trial so held was declared to be void and liable to be annulled. This anticipates the modern law that a judicial trial should normally be open to the public and should be attended with publicity.

The decree of the court always followed the end of the trial. Time was taken for consideration of the judgement. The judgement embodied the decision of the court, called either the *vidhāna* or the *jayapatra*. It was required to contain (a) a summary of the pleadings, (b) evidence adduced by the parties, (c) the court's deliberation thereon, and (d) the law applicable to the case as determined by the court.⁵⁷ A judicial pronouncement in the modern age contains no more. It bore the signature of the judge and the mark of the royal seal.

CRIMINAL LAW DOCTRINE OF EQUALITY

No account of the Hindu judicial system can be even reasonably complete without some reference to the theory and procedure of Criminal Law evolved and adopted by that system.

There was equality before the law. No one was exempted from punishment. Even a relation of the king could not avoid punishment if he was guilty of an offence. Yajñavalkya says that no one who has transgressed the law is exempted from punishment, be he the king or a brother, a son, an object of worship, a father-in-law, or a maternal uncle.⁵⁸

This doctrine of equality of the law for all was in fact carried to the

Yaj II 13 5 Nar I 193 7 (SBE XXXIII p 90f)
Yāj II 22 Br Sm VII 52 (GOS p 97)
Br Sm VI 26 7 (GOS p 64) I 358

THE HINDU JUDICIAL SYSTEM

opposite extreme. If persons of a responsible position and social status and officers in the administration committed an offence they had to suffer punishment higher than that of an ordinary citizen committing the same offence. In fact Manu in one of his well known verses declares that where an ordinary man is punishable with a fine of one *karsāpana* the king himself committing the offence should be punished a thousand times the amount⁵⁹. This doctrine was applied uniformly and a person belonging to a higher caste was subjected to a heavier punishment than a person belonging to a lower caste found guilty of the same offence. The principle then was the greater the position and authority the greater were the responsibility and the standard of behaviour expected.

PUNISHMENT CRITERIA AND PURPOSE

Punishments in criminal law under the Hindu judicial system were carefully graded. Yājñavalkya describes four kinds of punishment in criminal law namely (1) Censure (2) Rebuke (3) Pecuniary punishment and (4) Corporal punishment. They could be used separately or jointly according to the nature and circumstances of the crime⁶⁰.

Pecuniary punishment included fine and forfeiture of property. Corporal punishment included imprisonment, penal servitude and death sentence.

The Hindu judicial system developed a number of rules and standards as guides for inflicting the right punishment and the right sentence. The place and time of the offence, the age, occupation, strength and position of the offender, the circumstances in which the offence was committed, the intention and the value of the articles stolen or robbed were all said to be proper considerations to determine the sentence and the punishment. Whether the offence was the first offence or a repetition was also a consideration in sentencing the offender⁶¹.

The object of punishment was always kept in view in the administration of criminal law. According to Manu, one of the primary objects of punishment is protection of the people. He says: "Penalty (*danda*) keeps the people under control; penalty protects; penalty remains awake when people are asleep; so the wise have regarded punishment as a *dharma* leading to righteousness"⁶². This appears to indicate that punishment was regarded not only as a deterrent but also as retributive and reformatory⁶³.

The Hindu judicial system offers a rich field of research. It promises

⁵⁹ VII 336

Yaj. I 367

Ibid. I 368 II 275 cf. *Manu* VII 16 VIII 126

Manu VII 18

Reference to the criminal procedure followed by the Hindu judicial system can also be found in *Mbh.* XII 107 27

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

rewards which are not merely historic and antiquarian but offers models and inspirations for progress and development towards the goal of a fairer jurisprudence and the ultimate object of ideal justice through human agencies

PART V

ARTHA SĀSTRA NITI ŚĀSTRA AND OTHER SOURCES OF
POLITICAL AND SOCIAL ORGANIZATION

A GENERAL SURVEY OF THE LITERATURE OF ARTHA ŚĀSTRA AND NĪTĪ ŚĀSTRA

I

THE EARLY SCHOOLS AND AUTHORS OF ARTHA ŚĀSTRA

ARTHA ŚĀSTRA is defined by Kautilya the last and greatest master of the science as the branch of knowledge which deals with the acquisition and preservation of dominion. It is held in other words to comprise the art of government in the widest sense of the term. This definition is justified by the list of contents of Kautilya's *Arthashastra*—a work produced probably in the last quarter of the fourth century B.C. and the only surviving one of its class. The list comprises the branches of internal and foreign administration, civil and criminal law as well as the art of warfare. As regards the term *Nīti śāstra*, it is used in the narrow sense of the science of polity as well as in the wider significance of the science of general morals.

From a number of quotations and references in later works we learn that there arose (probably in the fourth century before Christ) no less than four distinct schools and thirteen individual teachers of *Artha śāstra*. The loss of this fairly extensive literature is to be attributed to its supersession by the masterly treatise of Kautilya, which itself has been recovered from the oblivion of centuries by the fortunate discovery of a complete manuscript of the work and its publication by R. Shama Sastry in 1908. Among the old masters of the science special mention should be made of those of the schools of Manu, Brhaspati and Uśanas (Śukra) and the two teachers Viśālākṣa and Bhāradvāja, who are singled out for salutation and are quoted by later writers in different branches of learning.

The discussions of the ancient *Artha śāstra* authorities are centred in the first place upon a few basic concepts and categories. Such are the categories of the seven constituents of the State, the four traditional sciences (*vidyās*), the four political expedients (*upayas*) and the six types of foreign policy (*gunas*) as well as the concepts of the State system (*mandala*) and the king's coercive authority (*danda*). The early *Artha śāstra* masters themselves, as we learn from Kautilya's quotations, deal with such items as the scheme of the prince's education (based upon a comparative estimate of the four sciences), the recruitment and selection of the ministers and the constitution of the ministerial council, the policy of a

king's security against his sons and that of a minister in the crisis of the king's death the application of the king's coercive authority civil and criminal law the characteristics of the State structure (founded upon a comparative estimate of the calamities of the constituent elements thereof) and the policies of the inter State relations in particular those of attacking the enemy waging offensive and defensive wars and application of different sub types of treaties

II

THE ARTHASĀSTRA OF KAUTILYA

In Kautilya's political nomenclature a king's provision of security and prosperity (*yoga ksema*) for his own people is conveyed by the technical term *tantra* and his arrangement for keeping watch over the neighbouring rulers is expressed by another technical term *āvāpa* and as such Kautilya's *Arthasāstra* consists of two great divisions the *tantra* portion comprising the first five Books (*adhikaranas*) which are divided into ninety four sub sections (*prakaranas*) and the *āvāpa* portion consisting of the next nine Books which are divided into eighty four sub sections The fifteenth Book consisting of a single *prakarana* may be regarded as somewhat outside the two divisions of *tantra* and *āvāpa* An attempt will now be made to give a brief summary of the topics discussed by Kautilya under the above fifteen Books or *adhikaranas*

Book One deals with the discipline and education of a king He must be conversant with the knowledge of all the four *vidyās* (branches of learning) viz *ānvīkṣikī* (metaphysics), *trayī* (the three Vedas of course including the fourth or *Atharva Veda* and also the *Itihasa Veda* and the six *Vedāngas*) *vārtā* (signifying pastoral pursuits trade industry and commerce i.e. economics) and *dandanīti* (the science of polity or government) The whole of Kautilya's theory of polity is based on the proper and peaceful performance of the assigned duties of the four *varnas* (castes) and the four *āśramas* (stages of human life) Kautilya states that a king who is severe in repression becomes a terror to his people and one who is mild in the award of punishment is treated by them with contempt while he who awards punishment as deserved is respected So he thinks that *danda* should be awarded after full and just consideration, and it must not be awarded wrongly nor allowed to remain in abeyance for in this case, it will produce the condition of *mātsya nyāya* or anarchy On proper discipline and education of the king under experts and specialists depends his power of awarding *danda* Unrivalled suzerainty can only be attained by a fully disciplined and educated monarch The king is trained to control

A GENERAL SURVEY OF THE LITERATURE OF ARTHAŚĀSTRA AND NITIŚĀSTRA
the six internal enemies viz lust anger greed vanity airogance and jealousy Kautilya next discusses fully¹ the institution of ministership the necessity for creating ministers their appointment according to their requisite qualifications and the test of their honesty and loyalty by a method called *upadhā* (allurement) The *buddhisacivas* or *matiasacivas* i.e. *mantrins* (counsellors and policy makers) according to Kautilya are more important than the *karmasacivas* or *amātyas* (executive functionaries and departmental heads)

Premising that deliberations (*mantra*) come first and administrative undertakings (*arambha*) next Kautilya refutes² the views of some of the earlier teachers on the question of the adequate number of *mantrins* which according to him should not exceed three or four But he does not restrict the number of *amātyas* or *karmasacivas* who constitute the so called *mantri parīśad* (the council of ministers) In matters of grave importance Kautilya continues all the *buddhisacivas* and *karmasacivas* should be convened together in a joint session and the king should do what the majority decides he should accept even the verdict of the minority if it is deemed necessary and conducive to the object in view

Kautilya's statecraft is mainly based on an efficient system of espionage In the *Arthasāstra* we find several classes of spies the two main groups being the *samsthas* and the *sañcārins* the operation of the former being chiefly static and that of the latter mostly dynamic These different types of spies should have a network of assistant workers and disciples having their sub workers and sub disciples for carrying on their secret business The high State functionaries including even the *mantrins* were subject to their vigilance The most interesting type of spies is the one called *ubhayavetana* who was allowed by his own king to accept surreptitiously salary from his enemy while engaged in collecting information about the latter's kingdom The topic of espionage leads Kautilya to describe how a king should deal both with the groups of discontented factious ambitious haughty alarmed and provoked persons in his own and the enemy's kingdom and the princes of his household Illustrating the manner in which detractors of the monarch should be silenced by the activities of spies Kautilya advises them to tell the people assembled in the course of a public discussion how in the old days Manu son of the Sun³ was elected the first king by the folk suffering from anarchy how in lieu of their offer of one sixth of the grain produce one tenth of their manufactured articles and even cash money Manu undertook the responsibility of maintaining security of people's life and property how even the anchorites

offered the king one sixth of their gleaned grains and how the king was to be the dispenser of rewards (as representing the God Indra) and punishments (as representing the God Yama) and how therefore the king should never be despised

In the next place a ruler is enjoined by Kautilya to keep a vigilant eye on the princes possessing we are told the characteristics of crabs who eat up their begetter. Observing that a royal family having no well trained and well disciplined prince perishes like a worm eaten piece of wood Kautilya advises the king to leave aside the wicked and untrained princes and to appoint instead of them a prince whether or not the eldest possessing the requisite princely virtues to the office of the commander in chief or of the heir apparent. He should never install on the throne a wicked son though he be the only son. Generally but not necessarily the eldest son should succeed to the sovereignty in circumstances other than dangerous. Kautilya even recommends a joint family sovereignty (if the need arises) on account of its invincibility.

Describing next the king's daily routine the author of the *Arthasāstra* directs that the king must at once attend to all urgent calls of business and not put them off for when postponed they may prove too difficult or even impossible to accomplish. Readiness for action is described as a religious vow for a king and the root of all royal business is his enterprise. A king's happiness and welfare it is said depend on those of his subjects. The book concludes with an account of the precautions that are to be taken for the safety of the king's person in his household.

Book Two of the *Arthasāstra* is a veritable mine of information about the running of a bureaucratic system of government in an ancient Indian State. Only a few important features of governmental work carried on by this vast and heavy bureaucracy are briefly noted here. While describing the king's method of distribution of land under colonization to the cultivators the author advises that certain lands should be granted revenue free and perpetually to specified classes of Brahmanas³ and that other lands both arable and fallow should be distributed to farmers only as life tenants. By contrast the king is forbidden by Kautilya to take away fallow land from those to whom it is given for bringing it under cultivation and he is further enjoined to grant special privileges, immunities and remissions to the cultivators keeping of course an eye on the condition of his treasury.

While constructing a fort or a fortified town the king is advised to arrange for storage of all kinds of oils, grains, sugar, salt, medicines, dry vegetables, fodder, dry fish, haystacks, firewood, metals, skins, charcoal

tendons poison horns bamboo barks of trees strong timber weapons and armour which may last for many years The Chief Treasury Officer (*sannidhatā*) has charge of treasuries warehouses storehouses godowns arsenals and prisons The Chief Revenue Officer (*samahartā*) deals with the collection of revenue from the seven sources viz (1) forts and fortified towns (2) the countryside (3) mines (4) cultivated fields and flower and fruit gardens (5) forests (6) pens of domestic animals and (7) traffic routes He is in charge of all these heads of revenue and those of expenditure i.e. of all budgetary affairs The king is directed by Kautilya to examine constantly the character of all departmental heads (*adhyaksas*) and their subordinates such as accountants (*samkhyayaka*) writers or clerks (*lekhhaka*) and coin examiners (*rūpa darsaka*) It is further laid down that no chief officer should be allowed to hold his office permanently Stating that it is hardly possible for officers directly dealing with government finance and revenue not to enjoy even slightly the taste of State money Kautilya prescribes measures against corruption Traffic in salt being a State monopoly imported salt is highly taxed in Kautilya's system and adulteration of salt is punishable For the protection of the community the king should never allow import of useless and harmful commodities from foreign countries but he should permit without toll or customs duties import of goods beneficial to the people and grain seeds not otherwise easily available in the country Sale of commodities at the places (fields or factories) of their production is prohibited The concluding portion of the book deals with the administration of cities under City Mayors (*nāgarikas*) of which we may mention some principal features The *nāgarika* and his staff it is said should prepare registers of municipal holdings Managers of charity houses should note the arrival and departure of heretics and travellers Keepers of hotels restaurants and brothels should only entertain men of attested identity Physicians landlords and householders are to report to the city officers about the diseases of the patients the nature of the tenants and the arrival and departure of strangers respectively Townspeople are to provide themselves with fire extinguishing instruments and vessels filled with water Dead bodies of human beings are to be taken out for cremation or burial through particular city gates The *nāgarika* is to report to the king on nocturnal crimes committed in the city General gaol deliveries should be provided for on the occasion of the king's conquest of a new territory the installation of the crown prince and the birth of a prince Those among the prisoners who are very young old diseased or helpless are to be released on the days of the king's birth anniversary and on full moon days

Book Three (*Dharmasthaya*) of the *Arthashastra* deals with the branch

of civil law The king is regarded as the final authority in judicial matters He is assisted in arriving at legal decisions by a triad of judges (*dharma sthas*) who actually try lawsuits in the company of some specialists in legal *Śāstras* (*vyavahāra*) The author further describes the legal processes regarding statements of the plaintiffs and rejoinders of the respondents The heads of law relate to marriage (including the different kinds of marriage the question of proper and improper marital relations widow remarriage remarriage of males dowry divorce etc) inheritance and partition of ancestral property (including a discussion of different kinds of sonship) holdings fulfilment of contracts debts deposits pledges and mortgages slaves and free labourers partnership revocation of sale and purchase rescission of gifts sale without ownership and relation between property and its owner In Kautilya's legal system a girl of twelve and a boy of sixteen are treated as having attained majority Regarding the law of divorce or dissolution of marriage Kautilya rules that marriages contracted in accordance with the customs of the *brāhma prājāpatya arsa* and *darva* forms cannot be dissolved Slavery is allowed in Kautilya's system under certain legal restrictions It is no crime for the Mlecchas (non Aryans) to sell or mortgage their own offspring but an Aryan cannot be enslaved The principle recommended by Kautilya for the guidance of guilds or unions of workmen and those who carry on co operative work is that they should either divide their earnings according to the terms agreed upon or in equal shares Some topics of the law of crimes such as violence slander assault dicing gambling with animals are also dealt with in this context In the cases of slander and assault theft violence and abduction even hermits and ascetics are not immune from the penalties of law

Book Four named *Kantaka sodhana* (removal of thorns or anti social elements) deals with a number of miscellaneous topics Those relate to public protection against deceitful and fraudulent artisans and merchants penalty for manufacturing counterfeit coins and for disturbing the currency fraud in respect of weights and measures remedies against providential calamities e.g fire flood epidemics and famine protection from the acts of evil doers living by secret and foul ways seizure of criminals on suspicion along with the stolen property or in the act of theft *post mortem* examination in the case of sudden deaths eliciting confession from suspects by questionings or physical tortures protection of the people from the oppressions of government servants ransom or fine in lieu of mutilation of limbs of criminals when ordered by the court death penalty with or without torture outrage on girls and punishment for transgression of social obligations The high functionaries who try criminal cases are called *pradestrs* and they are assisted in the trial by a tribunal or bench of three

A GENERAL SURVEY OF THE LITERATURE OF ARTHA ŚĀSTRA AND NITI ŚĀSTRA experts In Kautilya's penal code no Brāhmana could be tortured for any criminal offence nor could he be awarded the death penalty all that could be done in the case of an offending Brāhmana is that he was to be branded with a mark on his forehead for his criminality and banished from the country On the other hand Kautilya does not make the king immune from punishment for violation of justice

Among the topics discussed in Book Five of the *Arthasāstra* are included the following Secret measures against seditious ministers replenishment of State coffers in a financial emergency emoluments for the royal *entourage* and other government servants behaviour of the king's dependants towards him consolidation of the kingdom after the sovereign's demise and similar catastrophes and establishment of sovereignty of the single son of a king after his death A few points under the above heads may be noted A king may in the interest of righteousness inflict secret punishment even on his favourite courtiers and country chiefs A king of attenuated treasury may collect money from the people even by unfair and despotic methods such as the levy of benevolences (*pranaya*) But such demands for money should be made only once Various pretexts for collection of money during financial stringency are also permitted Kautilya however enjoins that only the wicked men and never the innocent should be victimized for such purpose He rejects the view of Bhāradvāja who advises the minister to usurp the throne after his master's death He declares instead that hereditary kingship in the single line of rulers should be preserved since usurpation of the throne by the minister cannot be a righteous act and it may also lead to popular fury The minister should make even a wicked prince succeed to the throne while asking the other ministers and members of the royal family to regard the new king as only a flag under which they themselves would be the real rulers

The essential characteristics of the seven constituent elements of the State are first described in Book Six Reference is then made to the six political expedients (*gunas*) viz peace (*sandhi*) war (*viraha*) expedition (*yāna*) neutrality or halt (*āsana*) dubious attitude (*dvaiddhibhāva*) i.e. peace with one and war with another and alliance (*samsraya*) According as a king deals carefully or doubtfully or carelessly with these expedients he attains the condition of augmentation (*vrddhi*) stagnation (*sthāna*) or deterioration (*ksaya*) of his dominion The author next defines the twelve constituents of the circle of states (*mandala*) viz the *vijigīsu* or the would be conqueror (in the centre) his immediate neighbour regarded as an enemy the would be conqueror's friend the enemy's friend the friend's friend and the enemy's friend's friend (the last five being in front) the rearward enemy the rearward friend the ally of rearward enemy and the ally of

rearward friend (the last four being in the rear) the mediatory king and the most powerful neutral king Kautilya next defines the three kinds of power (*śakti*) of a king namely the power of deliberation the power due to treasury and the army and the power of energy and their corresponding successes

Proper utilization of the six political expedients in the field of diplomacy is discussed in Book Seven of the *Arthasāstra* The king we read should strive intently to pass from the state of deterioration to that of stagnation and gradually therefrom to augmentation through an intelligent application of the six expedients According to Kautilya a king should always prefer peace to war in consideration of the immense disadvantages involved in waging war against an enemy for war leads to wastage of human life enormous expenses of money sojourning in distant and strange lands perpetration of cruel acts etc In case the *vijigīṣu* feels himself inferior to his enemy he should try to enter into any one of the various *sandhis* described in this treatise A king may march against an enemy in combination with his allies of superior equal or inferior status by agreeing upon his share of the spoils of war The destruction of an enemy must be undertaken in an open fight even at a heavy loss of men and money

A lively discussion on the several kinds of *vyasanas* (dangers or calamities) befalling a king and his kingdom both from within and without is the subject of Book Eight A *vijigīṣu* is to consider them with respect to his own kingdom and that of his enemy Kautilya endorses his teacher's view on the seriousness of the dangers to the seven constituent elements of the State in the following descending order the king the ministers the country people the fort (and fortified towns) the treasury the army and allies To remove internal troubles caused by the *amātya* (minister) the king should keep the treasury and the army under his own control Want of proper education and discipline is the cause of a king's vices due to anger and passion The king is to guard against and provide for providential calamities such as fire flood epidemics and pestilence A king is advised by Kautilya to avert financial troubles in the interest of the prosperity of his people

The topic of leading an expedition by a *vijigīṣu* is dealt with in Book Nine Before launching an invasion a king should carefully weigh his own strength and weakness with those of his enemy He should also consider the measure of his three *śaktis* the place and time for his march recruitment of forces possible troubles in the rear loss of men and money ultimate gain expected and internal and external dangers that are likely to be encountered Kautilya next describes the proper time for the enlistment of the six kinds of infantry hereditary troops mercenary troops

troops raised from corporate bodies received from the allies troops seduced from the enemy and those enlisted from forest tribes Kautilya thinks that though the Ksatriya army is better than the Brāhmana one which can be won over by prostration the Vaisya and Śudra armies consist of very virile men and they can be obtained in larger numbers Before starting on an expedition Kautilya is of opinion that success eludes the fool who consults possible internal and external troubles that may arise during his absence from his capital A king undertaking a march should carefully weigh the profits likely to accrue therefrom and beware of the impediments to his expedition Kautilya is of opinion that success eludes the fool who consults the stars too much He next describes the methods of encompassing the death of seditious and hostile subjects This is followed by an account of the use of strategic measures for averting all other kinds of political dangers and a description of the remedies against providential visitations

Book Ten concerns itself with war During the king's absence in camp the officer in charge of the capital city should strictly enforce the passport system so as to arrest armed men going out without writ The king should protect his own army by all possible means during its march through difficult and dangerous paths the soldiers being required to be looked after when afflicted by disease and pestilence or in any other emergency Kautilya advocates treacherous fight if the *vijigīsu* fails to cope with his enemy in a fair fight Other topics treated by him relate to grounds suitable for deploying the elephants the horses the chariots and men and the formation of various kinds of array on the wings and in the front The services of unarmed labourers (*vistis*) were to be requisitioned for examining camps roads bridges wells and river crossings for carrying machines weapons armours food and other paraphernalia and for removing the wounded from the battle field All sorts of secret contrivances were to be laid under contribution for example the use of bravoos and traitors setting fire to the enemy's camp false announcement of burning down of the enemy's fort or of rebellion in the enemy's family or elsewhere The author says The arrow shot by an archer may or may not kill even a single man but the sharp intellect applied by a wise man can kill those lying in the mother's womb ⁴

Book Eleven deals with economic guilds and political corporations in the shape of tribal republics both being called by the generic title of *sangha* The king is advised to acquire military aid from these *sanghas* since they are invincible on account of their corporate unity A *vijigīsu* is enjoined to secure the services of the *sanghas* by a careful application of the methods

of conciliation and bribery if they are favourably disposed towards him and by those of dissension and punishment if they are opposed to him. The seeds of dissension are to be sown among the hostile leaders of *sanghas* and they are to be won over by engaging the services of beautiful women as spies.

Book Twelve describes the various Machiavellian contrivances which a weak *vijigishu* should use in fighting against a stronger one. When attacked by the latter the former it is observed should either take shelter under a third superior king or resort to an impregnable fort. Aggressors are generally of three varieties. One contented with the surrender of the vanquished, one contented with the acquisition of his territory and wealth, and one seeking not only his territory, treasure, sons, and wife, but also his life. The battle of intrigue is to be adopted by the weaker king against the stronger invader by producing internal disturbances through the agency of spies. Secret methods are to be applied against the high State functionaries, princes, and chief army officers of the aggressor. Destruction of his stores and granaries is also recommended. The weak *vijigishu* may encompass the death of his enemy when entering the precincts of a temple for offering worship. The strong enemy should be made to accept through a pretended friend belonging to the weak king's camp, a supply of poisoned food for use in his own capital city. How the weak king should achieve triumphant success by bringing about the death of the stronger enemy by secret methods is told at the end of the book.

In Book Thirteen we are first told how a *vijigishu* should sow seeds of dissension in the enemy's country before attempting to seize it, how in that act he should strive to enthruse his own men and frighten the men of his enemy by the proclamation of his own omniscience and his association with divinities, and how he should entice the enemy to come out with his entire family and his ministers to visit an improvised ascetic and bring about his assassination at the time of the visit. Then follows a description of the *vijigishu's modus operandi* for besieging and storming the enemy's fort which is made to serve as the pattern of the four steps to his attainment of the position of an imperial suzerain. The new conqueror should enjoy the fruits of his conquest by following the duties prescribed for a king, and seeing that the proper division of castes (*varnas*) and stages of life (*asramas*) is strictly adhered to by the people. A *vijigishu* should consolidate his new position by the creation of confidence in the mind of the conquered people. He should cover his enemy's vices by his own virtues and the enemy's virtues by doubling his own. He should bestow favours, remit dues, distribute gifts, and confer honours on the people conquered. A new conqueror should adopt the same mode of life, dress, language, and customs.

as those of the conquered people he should show devotion to the local deities and follow the festivities convivial assemblies and amusements of those people he should award land grants gifts of other properties and immunity from taxation to learned men orators and religious people He should introduce righteous customs and order full gaol deliveries

In Book Fourteen Kautilya deals with certain recipes for the destruction of a king's enemies and for causing in them blindness insanity and various kinds of bodily diseases and deformities Among these delusive devices are found certain medical formulas for making a man invisible to his enemies and providing him with the power of vision in night's darkness Incantations are to be uttered for causing men and animals to fall asleep Remedies are to be used against the application of poisons and poisonous drugs by the enemy to the king's own troops

Book Fifteen gives the plan of the entire work *Arthasāstra* is defined by the author as the science which treats of the means of acquiring and ruling the earth⁵ This is followed by an explanation of thirty-two technical terms used by him in his work In the concluding verses he says that this *sāstra* establishes and maintains the triad viz virtue wealth and pleasure (*dharma artha* and *kāma*) and sets down unrighteous acts detrimental to wealth (*artha*)

III

KĀMANDAKIYA NĪTISĀRA

This treatise belonging to the third century A.D. is based mainly on Kautilya's *Arthasāstra* In fact Kāmandaka at the beginning of his work acknowledges Viṣnugupta (i.e. Cānakya or Kautilya) as his master and eulogizes him as the creator of the science of polity who has drawn from the great ocean of Artha śāstra the nectar of *Nītisāra*⁶ This book is composed in an epic form and old commentators regard it as a great *kāvya*

Kāmandaka's *Nītisāra* or the Essence of Polity consists of twenty cantos and thirty-six sub-sections (*prakaranas*) on special topics A summarized list of its contents is given below Canto One Subjugation of the senses and discipline under elderly teachers Canto Two Divisions of the branches of learning establishment of the four castes and the four stages of life and benefits of (the king's application) of punishment Canto Three Establishment of the rules of conduct Canto Four Perfection of the seven constituent elements of the State Canto Five The

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

behaviour of the king and his dependants Canto Six Removal of the unsocial elements Canto Seven Security against the princes and the king's self protection Canto Eight Requisites of a king's *mandala* or circle of sovereign States and conduct of that circle Canto Nine Various kinds of treaties Canto Ten Different kinds of hostilities Canto Eleven Various kinds of expedition neutrality duplicity and seeking the protection of allies Canto Twelve Deliberation over policies Canto Thirteen The institution of envoys and the movements of ambassadors and spies Canto Fourteen The glory of strenuous effort and the operations and afflictions of the constituent elements of the State Canto Fifteen The category of seven vices Canto Sixteen Expeditions and the nature of aggressors Canto Seventeen Encampment of the army Canto Eighteen The category of four political expedients Canto Nineteen Examination of the strength and weakness of various divisions of the army the duties of the commanders of the armies security of the army during expeditions and different kinds of treacherous warfare Canto Twenty The employment of elephants cavalry chariots and infantry proper locations for deploying them award of prizes to the troops various kinds of battle arrays and righteous warfare

It may easily be realized from the above summary of contents that Kāmandaka is very indebted to Kautilya for his subjects But he has omitted almost everything that is concerned with the actual reality of life in a State such as administration control of trade and commerce and the administration of justice—in fact those very things which impart to Kautilya's book an incomparable value in people's eyes Kāmandaka does not go much beyond the general maxims of *niti* His book often delights in didactic maxims which appear to be absent in Kautilya's treatise

IV

NITIVĀKYĀMRTAM OF SOMADEVASURI

The *Nitivākyāmrtam* or the Nectar of the Science of Polity an interesting treatise on statecraft was written in A.D. 959 by the Jain scholar Somadeva the author of the romance *Yasastilaka* in which also his vast knowledge of political science is in evidence The work cited above consists of thirty two discourses dealing with religious practices (*dharma*) wealth (*artha*) coveted worldly objects (*kāma*) the six internal enemies (*arisadvarga*) teachers of different lores (*vidyā vrdhha*) metaphysics (*ānvīksiki*) the Vedas (*trayī*) agriculture cattle breeding trade (*vartā*) the science of politics (*dandanīti*) counsellors (*mantrin*) royal priests (*purohita*)

branches of learning *kalās* or the fine arts and literature) and economic, (including statistics prices and wages) Hence it may be said that the *Śukra Nītisāra* is a socio political and socio economic work It combines in itself the most salient features of Artha śāstra and Dharma sastra and even of Kāma śāstra to the exclusion of Mokṣa śāstra

POLITICAL ORGANIZATION THE MONARCHICAL STATES

I THE VEDIC PERIOD (c 1500-700 B.C.)

IN the oldest period of their history namely that of the *Rg Veda* the Vedic Aryans then in occupation of the north eastern fringe of the Iranian tableland and the land of the five rivers immediately to its east, were divided into a number of tribes (*janas*). Each tribe consisted of a number of clans (*visas* in the narrower sense of the term) who were further subdivided into families (*kulas*). When subsequently during the period of the *Yajus Samhitās* and the *Brāhmanas* the Aryans expanded eastwards along the course of the Gangā and probably also southwards across the Malwa tableland to the Narmadā and beyond the small tribal groups were merged in larger units of the Folk and what is more there emerged (at least among the more advanced peoples) a new type of polity namely the territorial State. A further development was marked by the rise of overlordships which fleeting and transitory as they doubtless were anticipated the principal types of empire known to later times. Accompanying these political changes there arose a new pattern of social structure which was based on the well known division into four castes (*varnas*) namely *Brāhmanas* *Rājanyas* (or *Ksatriyas*) *Vaiśyas* and *Sūdras*.

The Vedic kingship was associated from the first with high dignity prosperity and authority. Reference is made to the king's quasi-divinity by means of single epithets or short descriptions in the older Vedic *Samhitās*² and this conception of divinity is developed in the *Yajus Samhitās* into the doctrine of the king's association or even identification with the gods either by means of the omnipotent sacrifice or independently of it. But the king had no claim to divine descent his human parentage being

The subject of ancient Indian political organization has been treated by many scholars both Indian and foreign. The more important works are *The State in Ancient India* by Beni Prasad *Hindu Polity* (3rd Ed.) by K. P. Jayaswal and *State and Government in Ancient India* (3rd Ed.) by A. S. Altekar. For a complete critical account of the Vedic polity see *A History of Hindu Public Life* by U. N. Ghoshal Part I Calcutta (1945). Among the special studies may be mentioned *Corporate Life in Ancient India* (2nd Ed.) by R. C. Majumdar and *Local Government in Ancient India* (2nd Ed.) by Radha Kumud Mookerji. Chs. on administration occur in *The Nandas and the Mauryas* (ed. by K. A. N. Sastri), *The History and Culture of the Indian People* Vols. I—V (ed. by R. C. Majumdar and A. D. Pusalker), *The Gupta—Vakataka Age* (ed. by R. C. Majumdar and A. S. Altekar), *A Comprehensive History of India* II (ed. by K. A. N. Sastri) and in various regional and dynastic histories too numerous to mention. The summary given in this section is based on my *A History of Hindu Public Life* Part I. The status of the Vedic king and the constitution and functions of the popular Assemblies of the Vedic period are further discussed by me in Chapters V and XI of my work *Studies in Ancient History and Culture* Calcutta (1957).

R V IV 42 8 9 A V IV 22 7 VI 86 3

prominently mentioned even in the solemn ritual texts of his consecration ceremonies. From the evidence of the texts which becomes more direct and positive in the later works we can infer that the king combined in himself the highest executive, judicial and military functions, especial stress being laid on his possession of criminal jurisdiction and his guardianship of the sacred law.

The rudiments of administrative machinery, retaining to the end more or less traces of the household system, go back to the Vedic Samhitās and the Brāhmanas. Like his divine prototype Varuna, the king undertook the detection and suppression of crimes through the agency of spies. He claimed from an early period contributions from his subjects, probably in the form of a share of the agricultural produce and the livestock belonging to the villagers, and this must have involved an agency for collection of the same. The texts mention a number of officials under separate designations, but their functions are imperfectly known. The officials occupied a conspicuous place in the royal court. The *sūta* (court minstrel and herald) and the *grāmanī* (village headman, but probably at first a mere troop leader) are included, at least from the time of the *Atharva Veda*, in a class of non-royal king-makers, ranking immediately below the *rājanyas* (princes and nobles) who are called the royal king-makers. The representative *sūta* and *grāmanī* as well as *ksattr* (distributor of food) and *samgrahītr* (chariot-ee or superintendent of the treasury) are included in a list of jewel-holders (*ratnins*) at the ceremony of royal consecration (*rājasūya*). The male and female relations of both the *sūta* and the *grāmanī* are mentioned among the guardians of the sacrificial horse and the attendants of the queens respectively at the *asvamedha* sacrifice, the ceremony of imperial consecration.

The most remarkable feature of the early Vedic polity consisted in the institution of popular assemblies, of which two, namely the *sabhā* and the *samiti*, deserve special mention. Amid the obscurity of the texts and their inconclusive interpretations by different scholars, we may draw the following general conclusions about the constitution and functions of these bodies. The *samiti* was the Vedic folk assembly *par excellence*, which at least in some cases enjoyed the right of electing the king, while the *sabhā* exercised probably from the first some judicial functions. Both the *samiti* and the *sabhā* enjoyed the right of debate—a privilege unknown to the popular assemblies of other ancient peoples. In the late Vedic period (that of the Yajus Samhitās and the Brāhmanas) the *samiti* disappeared as a popular assembly, while the *sabhā* sank into a narrow body corresponding to the king's privy council and court, by a process analogous to that which gave rise to the witenagemot in place of the folk-moot in the Anglo-Saxon constitution.

In forming a critical estimate of the Vedic polity it is well to remember that the confident views of some scholars in recent times making it out to be a constitutional monarchy or a public trust are not authenticated by facts. We may however fairly conclude from the evidence of the texts that the Vedic king was subject to three kinds of limitation. In the first place the Vedic society and State were as yet too imperfectly organized to permit concentration of authority in the king's hands. In fact the king's office and his relations with his subjects were still in a fluid state. Secondly the old Vedic concept of an omnipotent divine law (*vrata* or *dhaman*) and custom (*dharma* or *dharman*) must have operated as a moral though not as a constitutional check on the king's authority. In a famous passage of the *Bṛhadaranyaka Upaniṣad*³ we have already an anticipation of the later Smṛti conception of the supremacy of *dharma* (the sacred law or else the law of the social order) over the king. Thirdly the order of princes and nobles as also the officials called *sutas* and *grāmanis* who took a prominent part (as we have seen above) in the two great ceremonies of royal consecration together with the two popular assemblies must have collectively exercised a large although undetermined measure of influence over the king's administration. More indefinite appears to have been the influence of the order of the Brāhmanas. It is true that a fundamental principle of the Vedic polity is the separation of the ruling power (*ksatra*) from the spiritual power (*brahma*) a principle which was pressed in some Brāhmaṇa texts to the point of essential incompatibility or even antagonism between the two powers. Again the texts generally hold *brahma* to be dominant over *ksatra* although they sometimes assert their interdependence and equivalence, or even the superiority of *ksatra* to *brahma*. On the whole it is correct to state that while the Vedic relationship of *brahma* to *ksatra* anticipated by many centuries the relation between the Church and the State in mediaeval Europe the Brāhmanical Order lacking the strength of organization of the Roman Catholic Church and also its will to power failed to establish what its counterpart did at some time or other an effective control over the temporal power. In the office of the *purohita* or the king's domestic chaplain the Brahmanas would seem to have found a pillar of their strength for he was regarded from the first as the necessary adjunct of the king and in fact was characterized as the protector of the realm. From some later Vedic texts however we learn that the *purohita* could be in danger of losing his position owing to the tyranny or caprice of his patron. We may then reasonably infer that such influence as was exercised by the Brāhmanas in general and the *purohita* in particular over the king depended more upon personalities than upon the established law or usage.

In the epoch of the rise of Buddhism (fifth or sixth century before Christ) there arose within the vast area comprising the Indo Gangetic plain and the Malwa tableland a chain of territorial States which are commemorated in some early Buddhist and Jaina texts in a conventional list of sixteen Great States (*mahā janapadas*). The States which were relatively small were of two principal types namely the monarchical and the republican. Leaving the consideration of the second type for the next chapter I may here start by pointing out how the first type was standardized in the Smṛti scheme of social order with the king as one of its units and how in the early Arthaśāstra list of seven constituents (*prakṛtis*) of the State the ruler was at the head of the whole group.

The position and functions of the king appear to have attained a much greater definiteness and volume during this period than in the Vedic times. The king's prerogatives to begin with are defined in the Dharma Sūtras (or early Smṛtis) in terms of the rules of social precedence of ceremonial purity and of personal security based on social and moral sanctions while in the *Arthaśāstra* of Kautilya (the greatest work of its class) they are interpreted in terms of the State law laying down stringent clauses for protection of the king's dignity and authority as well as his property. What is more we can trace in some early Buddhist canonical texts a historical reference to what looks like a law of treason prevailing in the Magadha kingdom in Buddha's time. The king's functions are described in the Dharma Sūtras as comprising the protection of the person and property of his subjects (which involves as its corollary the guardianship of the property of minors and others the custody of lost and ownerless property and compensation for property stolen and not recovered for its owner) the administration of justice the guardianship of the law of the social order the regulation of trade and commerce and so forth. These functions are highly developed in the *Arthaśāstra* of Kautilya a work of maturity achieved no doubt on the basis of its predecessors. Passing to the evidence of historical traditions and of the realistic pictures of public life in the Jātaka stories we may conclude that the king had *inter alia* the right of appointing and dismissing his officials of plenary jurisdiction over civil and criminal cases and of supreme command in wars. Indeed, the Jātakas habitually describe thieves and robbers as being arrested and sent up to the king for trial thus testifying to the undisputed prevalence of the king's peace throughout the realm.

The most important and characteristic development of political organization traceable to this period is concerned with the rise of a bureaucracy of the officials of the central government. In the works of

this period for the first time we come across a class or order (though not a caste) of officials variously called *amātyas* (in Sanskrit) and *amacchas* or *mahamattas* (in Pali). In the stories of the Jātakas we read how the *amacchas* (counsellors) were often asked by the king to deputize for him during his temporary absence from his duties and how they even decided the question of royal succession in the event of incapacity or minority or default of an heir to the throne. The early Buddhist texts mention various categories of *amacchas* such as those in charge of the army and the judicial administration and above all the king's guides in temporal and spiritual matters. In the objective accounts of the Pali canon and the Jātakas as well as in the systematic thought of the *Arthasāstra* the highest ranks in the official hierarchy were occupied by the crown prince (*yuvārāja* or *upārāja*) the king's domestic chaplain (*purohita*) the military commander (*senāpati*) and the minister (*mantrin*). In actual practice the fluidity of the administrative organization is indicated by the fact that arbitrators by choice of the parties are often mentioned in the Jātakas as deciding the cases of suitors. It remains to mention that this period witnessed the rise of the two pillars of a centralized administration namely a permanent revenue and a standing army. The Dharma Sūtras contain an outline of the branches of the king's revenue which are developed into a complete system in the *Arthasāstra* of Kautilya. The stock list of the seven constituents of the State mentioned in the ancient Artha sāstra tradition includes the army and the revenue along with the king and his officials in its composition.

Coming to the branch of local government it appears to have been dominated throughout this period by the king's central administration. In the Jātakas we are told how the heads of families and even the royal officers assembled on occasion for the transaction of local business. But of a regularly constituted village council or assembly with self governing powers there is not the slightest trace. The Jātakas refer to village head men (or perhaps village landowners) as well as town administrators with sufficiently wide powers who do not appear to have been elected by the people. An old Dharma Sūtra text⁴ requires the king to appoint officials in charge of towns and villages with definite police duties within their respective jurisdictions.

The Dharma Sūtras lay down a high standard for the king's duties. Not only is he required to provide for an extensive system of State relief to the indigent the helpless and the learned but also enjoined to keep before him the objective of securing for his subjects freedom from want and fear. The early Buddhist texts likewise hold before us the examples

of good kings who observed what are called the ten royal virtues and more specifically the duties of the pious Buddhist layman. On the other hand we have highly realistic pictures in the Jātakas of tyrannical kings endangering the lives and properties of their subjects.

In the period following the epoch of the small States we come across two parallel but contradictory movements in the history of northern India. In the Gangā basin the smaller kingdoms and the republics were absorbed into large kingdoms like Kosala and Magadha and eventually into the single empire of the Nandas. By contrast the Indus valley after being merged for a time in the mighty empire of the Achaemenids of Persia broke up into a group of independent kingdoms and republics which were afterwards overthrown by the invasion of Alexander of Macedon. Of the administration of the larger kingdoms just mentioned we have but little information. But we may well believe from the known facts about the enormous wealth and the huge size of the armies of the Nanda rulers that they developed a centralized administration of a high order doubtless on the older foundations. The Greek writers especially bear witness to the unpopularity of the Nandas which may have been due in part to the financial burdens imposed upon the people by the necessities of their extensive civil and military administration. The same writers however speak highly of the good laws and the flourishing condition of some of the kingdoms of the Indus valley (those of Taxiles, Sophytes and Mousikanos) at the time of Alexander's invasion in 326 B.C.

Coming to the period of the imperial Mauryas we may mention at the outset that they built up not only the largest empire but also as far as we can judge from the available evidence the most highly developed administration known to our ancient times. To begin with the position of the emperor it may safely be concluded that he retained the traditional headship of the executive, judicial and military branches of the administration. In a famous and oft quoted passage Kautilya (traditionally identified with the minister of Candragupta Maurya) places the king's judicial decree first and foremost in a list of four modes of judicial decision. In the same context the author repeating the factual references in the Jātaka stories credits the king with the authority of issuing executive edicts which have the force of laws. The royal edict however significantly enough is not included by Kautilya in his accompanying formal list of the four sources of the law. Indeed it appears from other evidence that Kautilya agreeing with the Smṛti tradition on this point held the king's executive authority to be limited not only by the supreme law of the social order but also by specific clauses of the State law.

The bureaucratic organization of the Mauryas marked the last and the highest stage of development of a process that had begun in the preceding centuries. At the head of the Mauryan bureaucracy stood the council of ministers called *parisa* (Sanskrit *parisad*). There are not sufficient reasons for agreeing with the far reaching conclusions of some Indian scholars in recent times that the ministers in Asoka's time had the right of discussing and even rejecting the king's oral orders or of controlling the State funds or of depriving the ruler of his sovereignty in defence of the constitutional laws of the realm. As regards the old class of officials it is recalled in the account of Megasthenes (the well known ambassador of Seleucus Nicator at the court of Candragupta Maurya) by his reference to the Indian caste of councillors and assessors and in Asoka's inscriptions by the persons called *mahamātras*. The old division between the civil and military branches of government as well as specialization of the town administration was maintained and developed by the Mauryas. Speaking of Candragupta Maurya's administration Megasthenes divided the magistrates into three classes called the *agronomoi* (district officials) the *astynomoi* (town officials) and the officers in charge of the army. Kautilya has a parallel division consisting of officials in charge of the rural administration (the *samāhartā* the *sannidhātā* and their staff) the town administration (the *nāgaraka* and his assistants) and the army administration (the *senapati* and his subordinates). From Megasthenes's further description we learn that the *agronomoi* were entrusted with superintendence of the rivers and land surveys as well as inspection of the irrigation canals. They were required also to maintain the roads with great care. The town officials were divided into six boards having charge severally of industrial arts, foreign residents, the registration of births and deaths, trade and commerce, manufactured articles and collection of the taxes to sales. The military branch of the administration was controlled by a war office which was divided into six boards of five members each. These boards had charge of the admiralty, the transport and commissariat and the army units of the infantry, cavalry, chariots and elephants respectively. In a fuller account Kautilya mentions an extensive ramification of the central administrative machinery so as to embrace within its orbit nearly thirty departments with their respective staffs and jurisdictions as well as office procedures. What care was taken by the Mauryas for the construction and maintenance of public works is proved by other facts. Megasthenes records that the roads were marked by milestones at regular intervals and that a royal road connected Pataliputra, the imperial capital, with the North West Frontier. From a famous inscription of the second century after Christ, the Girnar rock inscription of the Śaka ruler Rudradāman, we learn that a great irrigation lake was

constructed in that distant frontier of the Maurya empire by order of the local governor under Candragupta Maurya and that it was restored after a temporary breakdown by the local authority in the reign of Asoka

In the time of Asoka the outlying provinces were governed by prince viceroys called *kumāras* while the home provinces were directly ruled by the emperor. The provinces were divided into districts called *ahāras* or *visayas*

The branch of local government under the Imperial Mauryas appears to have been centralized equally with the central administration. Kautilya refers to three tiers of officials (the *samāhartā* and the *nāgaraka* at the top, the *sthānikas* in the middle and the *gopas* at the bottom) in charge of the rural and the urban areas. While the *samāhartā* was charged with direction of the State revenue and expenditure in all its branches, the *sannidhātā* controlled the receipt of the State dues at the government treasuries and storehouses. It is an index of the thoroughly bureaucratic character of the administration that the *samāhartā* and the *nāgaraka* are charged with preparation of exhaustive registers and census lists within their respective jurisdictions.

In trying to form an overall estimate of the Maurya administration we may state to its credit that it undoubtedly ensured peace and order over a vast extent of our country so as to make it possible for the people to attain a high degree of material prosperity. It reached its height of moral grandeur under Asoka who employed the whole machinery of a highly organized bureaucracy and set his personal example for the moral as well as material well being of his subjects after being struck with passionate remorse for his one war of aggression for the conquest of Kalinga. On the debit side of the account we have to mention the continuance of the hateful system of espionage and strict official control bequeathed by the older rulers. To this has to be added the heavy taxation as well as the harsh penal code which were also legacies from earlier times and which continued even under the benign rule of Asoka.*

The theory of legislative authority of the Mauryas (H. C. Raychaudhuri *Political History of Ancient India* 5th Ed. p. 279 and Radha Kumud Mookerji *A Comprehensive History of India* II p. 63) and the theory of an un-Indian exaltation of the royal power in their time (K. A. N. Sastri *Nandas and Mauryas* pp. 174-75 and *A Comprehensive History of India* II p. 51) are not supported by facts. (For a discussion of it vide my two papers in *IHQ* December 1952 pp. 307-11 and September 1953 pp. 286-92). Equally unwarranted is the view (K. A. N. Sastri *Nandas and Mauryas* p. 178 *Comprehensive History of India* II pp. 57-58) that the Mauryas in organizing an orderly bureaucracy departed from the usual Indian practice of limiting the State activities to the prevention of hindrances to lawful pursuits of the subjects and followed instead the model of the Achaemenids. Of the deep rooted principle of local and sectional autonomy (K. A. N. Sastri *Comprehensive History of India* II p. 58) or of the truly democratic foundations of Maurya rule (R. K. Mookerji *The History and Culture of the Indian People* II p. 62) there is hardly any trace in our sources.

Of the indigenous dynasties that arose on the ruins of the Maurya empire the most important were the Śungas of the Gangā basin the Sātavāhanas of western India and the Cetas of the eastern seaboard. The administration of the Śungas was on the whole a continuation of that of their immediate predecessors with a looser organization than before. The kings were content with the simple title of *rājan* unlike the imperial titles assumed by later rulers. The provinces were governed by prince viceroys with the significant addition of the royal title to their names and they were assisted by the traditional council of ministers (*parisad*). The Śunga feudatories enjoyed a position little short of independence since they could strike coins in their own name and sometimes take even the royal title. The administration of the Sātavāhanas was run on the traditional lines with some important innovations. To the old royal title of *rājan* they added the title of *svamin* which was brought into vogue by their Śaka contemporaries and rivals. The central administration was in charge of *amātyas* who were employed in executive and financial offices. The branch of military administration was controlled by officers like the *senāgopa* (no doubt equivalent to the old *senāpati*). A notable feature of the government of those kings was the creation of civil and military offices with a higher designation than before such as those of the *rājāmātya* and the *mahāsenāpati*. The provinces were divided as of old into districts (*āhāras*) which were ruled by *amatyas* and the villages constituting the district were in charge of the traditional headmen. The feudatories of the Sātavāhanas ruled as kings over large portions of their dominions and they were known by distinctive titles such as *mahārathis* and *mahābhajas*. Of the Ceta dynasty of Kalinga (southern part of Orissa and northern portion of Andhra) the most important ruler was Khāravela who assumed the lofty titles of *ārya* and *maharāja* and otherwise also aspired to become a *cakravartin* (overlord) over the surrounding territory.

Coming to the foreign dynasties that came into power after the down fall of the Imperial Mauryas we have first to mention the Indo Greek kings of the Indus valley and the adjoining regions. In their system of administration these kings borrowed the practice of the contemporary Hellenistic monarchs especially that of the Seleucids of western Asia. The kings usually took the Greek royal title (*basileus*) some of them calling themselves instead by the higher title of Great King (*basileus megalou*) which was assumed for the first time by the Seleucid Antiochus III. As among the Seleucids the king sometimes appointed his heir apparent as joint king over the whole realm. But King Futhydemus introduced the practice of appointing a younger prince as sub king over a definite part

of the kingdom. The kings probably had a council of ministers of the traditional Hellenistic type. The Indo Greek kings appear to have organized their Indian territories under provincial governors bearing the Greek titles of *strategus* and *meridarch*. As in other Hellenistic States there were autonomous cities within their dominions such cities having the device and title of some city goddess stamped on their coins. Indian or Indianized feudatories of these kings ruled in Mathurā and the Swat region.

The Indo Greek system of administration was continued by the foreign Saka and Parthian rulers of northern India with some features borrowed from the contemporary Sassanid kingdom of Persia. The rulers at first took the Greek royal title for king or Great King. But afterwards they adopted the Persian imperial title of Great King of kings. The Śaka kings often associated their heirs with themselves as joint kings after the example of their Greek predecessors. They likewise seem to have retained at least in Sind and Kathiawar the old Greek provincial divisions and continued the offices of *strategus* and *meridarch* in their north western territories. At the same time they introduced their characteristic designation of the provincial governor under the name of *ksatrapa* from which was coined in imitation of the Indian official idiom the higher title of *mahāksatrapa*. The evidence of their coin types points to the continuance of autonomous cities under the rule of these foreign kings. The feudatories of these kings struck coins in their own names along with those of their suzerains and they regularly transmitted their office to their descendants.

The great Kusānas who surpassed their Greek Śaka and Parthian predecessors in the extent of their Indian dominion brought with them an exalted conception of monarchy. The imperial title (Great King of kings King of kings or Saviour) was adopted by Kadphises II in his later coin types and that of *mahārāja rājātīrāja devaputra* by Kaniska Vāsiska and Huviska in their coin legends. The divinity of the king is suggested by the devices on the coins of Kadphises II Kaniska and Huviska which show the king's shoulder surrounded by flames or his bust issuing from the clouds or his head enclosed by a nimbus. The Kusānas continued the Śaka system of provincial government under *mahāksatrapas* and *ksatrapas* while they introduced two new grades of military (or judicial) officers called *mahā dandanāyakas* and *dandanāyakas*. From the complete absence of the city goddess type in their series of coins it has been inferred that the autonomous cities dating from earlier times ceased to exist under their rule.

The administration of the two Śaka ruling houses of western India (those of Bhūmaka and Castana) was based on the Indian model. The rulers adapted the title of *rājan* to their old Śaka designations of

mahāksatrapa and *ksatrapa* while their ministers were called by the titles of *sacivas* and *amātyas*. It is to the credit of these kings especially of those of the line of Castana that they identified themselves completely with their Indian subjects. They substituted the indigenous Brāhmi script for the foreign Kharosthī in their coin legends and a highly Sanskritized Prakrit for the old undiluted Prakrit dialect in their inscription. Usavādāta son in law of Nahapana (the greatest ruler of the first dynasty) distributed his charities impartially among the Brāhmana laity and the Buddhist monks thus assuming the role of the Indian princely patron of learning and piety at his best. Rudradāman the greatest ruler of the second dynasty chose to be remembered in his famous inscription as a model king after the Indian standards. How well the Śaka rulers looked after the interests of their subjects is proved by two facts. In the second half of the first century after Christ the kings maintained a regular pilot service for negotiating the dangerous navigation of their great port of Broach (Barygaza). In the following century Rudradāman restored at heavy cost out of his private funds the historical irrigation lake at Gīrnar which had been originally constructed by the provincial governor of Candragupta Maurya.

The period of the Imperial Guptas the Golden Age of ancient Indian history was marked by a great exaltation of monarchy. The rulers assumed the high imperial title of *mahārājādhirāja* (with variants) in their inscriptions coin legends and seals while they claimed for themselves in their inscriptions superhuman qualities raising them almost to the level of the gods. In their outlying North Bengal dominion they chose to be called by a trilogy of titles (*paramadavata paramabhattachāraka mahārājādhirāja*) which with a slight change became thenceforth the characteristic designation of paramount rulers. In their coin types the Guptas followed the Kusāna device of a nimbus around the king's head. The traditional machinery of bureaucratic administration was continued by these emperors with nomenclature mostly borrowed or adapted from their predecessors. But they created the new office of the *sāndhivigrahika* (minister of peace and war) and a new order of *amātyas* (*kumāramātyas*) to which could be assigned not only high imperial officers but also the officials on the staff of the Emperor and the Crown Prince as also those in charge of districts. The status of the Gupta feudatories varied according to their strength in comparison with the paramount power.

In so far as the provincial administration is concerned the Guptas adopted the older models with a changed official nomenclature and some striking innovations. The provinces (*bhuktis*) were governed as in Asoka's times by the princes of the blood or as in the times of the Sātavāhanas by the State officers (*uparikas*). The districts (*visayas*) were ruled by other

officers (*kumārāmātyas āyuktakas* or *visayapatis*) In North Bengal and probably also in Bihar as we learn from the contemporary inscriptions a Municipal Board (*adhishthānadhikarana*) or a District Board (*visayādhikarana*) helped the head of the district or the province as the case might be in the disposal of government lands The Municipal Board in our fullest account consisted of four members namely the guild president (*nagara vresthin*) the chief merchant (*sātha āha*) the chief artisan (*prathamakulika*) and the chief scribe (*prathamakāyastha*)

From the valuable contemporary testimony of the Chinese Buddhist pilgrim Fa Hian we learn that the people in the Gupta dominions (the Middle Kingdom) enjoyed the blessings of peace and prosperity without the vexatious system of police control and espionage which had been the bane of the Maurya administration According to the same observant traveller the revenues of the Gupta empire were mainly derived from the king's share of the agricultural produce He further noted that capital punishment was unknown and that crimes were punished with fines We may sum up by saying that the ancient Indian administration was at its best under the rule of the Gupta emperors The Guptas signified their patronage of learning by the construction of successive buildings (with endowments for their maintenance) at the great Buddhist monastic university of Nālandā while their care for public works was shown by their restoration of the famous artificial lake at Girnar during the reign of Skandagupta

In the period immediately following the downfall of the Gupta Empire King Harsavardhana (c. A.D. 606-48) of the House of Thāneswar and Kanauj made himself the strongest power in northern India He assumed the usual imperial titles and was assisted by the traditional council of ministers The officers of the central government included the high minister of foreign affairs (*mahāsāndhivigrahādhikṛta*) the commander in chief (*mahā balādhikṛta*) the head of the accounts department (*mahaksapatālīka*) besides others of lesser rank The kingdom was divided into provinces (*bhuktis*) and districts (*visayas*) The village administration appears to have been highly official ridden The contemporary Chinese Buddhist pilgrim Hsien Tsang gives high praise to Harsa for his love of justice his unremitting industry in the discharge of his duties and his piety and popularity The king we are told in fuller detail undertook incessant tours for the inspection of his dominion he founded rest houses for travellers and erected *stūpas* and monasteries throughout his kingdom he used to distribute all his accumulated treasures among his subjects at the great quinquennial assemblies at Prayāga We also owe to this most illustrious of the Chinese Buddhist pilgrims a general account of the system of Indian administration at the time of his visit (A.D. 629-45) The ruling class of Ksatriyas we read

was guided by the standards of benevolence and mercy the taxation was light forced labour was used sparingly and families were not required to be registered. On the other hand the penal law was marked by a certain degree of harshness which was quite unlike its exceptional mildness under the Imperial Guptas as stated above.

In the Deccan the administration of the Imperial Cālukyas of Vītāpi was marked by the usual characteristics. The king assumed the familiar imperial titles the central government was in charge of officers with old or similar designations the districts were governed by the state officers (*visaya patis*) and the villages were controlled by the headmen (*grāmakūtas*). A Cālukya inscription of A.D. 720 records the grant of a charter of liberties by the Crown prince in favour of a certain town. The record not only defines the duties of the royal officers concerned in detail but also lays down on a graduated scale the taxes and other charges payable by the householders to the State.⁷

IV THE POST GUPTA PERIOD (c. A.D. 400-1200)

Northern India during this period witnessed the rise of a number of Rajput ruling houses of which the most important were the Imperial Pratihāras of Kanauj and their successor dynasties the Gīhadavālas of Kanauj the Kālācuris of Chedi the Candellas of Jejakabhukti the Paramāras of Malwa the Caulukyas of Gujarāt and the Cāhamanas of Śākambhārī and Ajmīr. The administration of these kings in some respects was of the conventional type. The kings assumed the customary imperial titles a number of high civil and military officials held charge of the central administration the provinces and districts called by different names were governed by appropriate officials and the traditional headman or the executive body of village elders controlled the administration of the villages. To turn to the most novel feature of the polity of these Rajput dynasties they have been shown elsewhere to have introduced the type of clan monarchies which became afterwards the hall mark of the States of Rajasthan. This is the type of State in which the king reserves for himself the central part of the kingdom and distributes the rest among the other clan chiefs. The evidence is furnished by a number of inscriptions mentioning units of eighty-four

The above account is summarized from Chapter XII (*Political Organization post Mauryan*) and Ch. XVI (*Political Theory and Administrative Organization*) of my *Comprehensive History of India* II and *The History and Culture of the Indian People* III respectively. The view (W. W. Tarn *The Greeks in Bactria and India* p. 118 etc.) that the Indo-Greek kings adopted a policy of partnership between the Greek and the Indian in their Indian territories is clearly far fetched and untenable (cf. Johnston in *JARS* 1939 pp. 217-40. Keith in *D. R. Bhandarkar Comm. Vol.* pp. 218-30). The same objection applies to Tarn's view (*op. cit.* p. 230 f.) that the Indo-Greeks introduced into their Indian territories the Seleucid division into provinces called *eparchies* (vide A. K. Narayan *The Indo-Greeks* p. 92).

villages (the exact size of the clan chief's estate in later times) and their subdivisions. We may next mention two records of these dynasties which throw light upon the current methods of municipal administration. In the reign of the Pratihara emperor Bhoja (c. 836-85) two guild presidents and one caravan leader (or leading merchant) held charge of the civil administration of the important city of Gwalior which had besides a town council or assembly with the right of full disposal of lands in some adjoining villages. In a Cahamāna record of A.D. 1141 we find the whole people of a town (headed by sixteen Brāhmaṇa representatives from each of its eight wards) solemnly undertaking by a signed document to trace lost and ownerless property.

In eastern India the Palas who were succeeded by the Senas in the role of the leading power in that region followed the conventional type of administration. The founder of the Pāla dynasty was chosen by the leading people for the purpose of ending a condition of anarchy. But this unique beginning was barren of constitutional results evidently because of the absence of a regularly constituted council of ministers or similar bodies at the time. An important measure of administrative reform due to the Senas is their introduction of the method of cash assessment of land for revenue purposes at standard rates though as yet there was no uniform standard of land measurement.

In the Deccan the Rāstrakūṭas of Mānyakheta and the Calukyas of Kalyāṇī who occupied the paramount position in succession continued the traditional type of administration under the king and various officers of the central government who were known by old and new titles. The structure of local government under these rulers partook of the regional variety of their dominions. The villages were grouped in units corresponding to the size of the typical clan chief's estates above mentioned or else according to their real (or supposed) numbers. The governors of provinces and districts were called by different titles and they enjoyed a position of high authority and dignity. We even hear of their administration being modelled on that of the central government. The towns under Rāstrakūṭa rule were in charge of prefects (*purapatis* or *nagarapatis*) or sheriffs (*ūrgavundas*) while the villages were controlled by the headmen (*gramakūṭas*) and bodies of elders (*mahattaras*) or else village assemblies (*mahājanas*). Under the rule of the Calukyas the towns and villages were usually governed by assemblies of *mahājanas* with a mayor (*ūroḍeya*) sheriff (*gavunda*) or steward (*perggade*) at their head. Corporate bodies exercised wide powers of self government. They attested gifts by private individuals received assignments of local taxes and made grants of land for pious purposes. The great feudatories of the Rāstrakūṭas and the Cālukyas enjoyed

a position of semi independence They waged wars on behalf of the paramount power assigned taxes and alienated lands on their own authority

In South India the administration of the leading powers of this period namely the Pandyas and the Colas was of the standard type with the king and a bureaucracy of high officials controlling the central government The later Cola and Pāndya kings assumed high imperial titles Among the latter there was the peculiar institution of joint kings or co regents The office of prime minister was known to the Pāndya administration while the Colas had instead a body of executive officials who served as liaison officers between the king and the bureaucracy The grant of lands by the Cola kings for pious and charitable purposes involved a highly complex official procedure under the guidance of a chain of officials The advanced system of Cola administration is illustrated by the fact that the great Cola emperor Rājārāja I (A.D. 985-1014) carried out a land revenue survey of his whole kingdom and fresh surveys were undertaken by his successors from time to time Under the rule of the Pāndyas as well as the Colas there were well organized village assemblies with wide powers of self government The assembly (called *ūr* or *sabhā*) had an executive body (*alunganam*) or various executive committees (*vāriyams*) these latter being elected by the members according to rules framed by themselves The assemblies enjoyed such high reputation for integrity and efficiency that they received endowments in cash from kings for pious purposes and were appointed trustees for the proper administration of temple funds Under the Cola rule the assemblies kept their own records of rights and had their own staff of officials for assisting them in their proceedings without sharing in their deliberations They decided disputes granted lands founded and maintained hospitals took charge of charitable endowments and controlled taxes *

The above account is based upon Ch. X (*Political Theory Administrative Organization Law and Legal Institutions*) and Ch. XVII (*Political Theory and Administration*) by the present writer in the works *The History and Culture of the Indian People* Vols. IV and V respectively

POLITICAL ORGANIZATION: REPUBLICS AND MIXED CONSTITUTIONS

THE PRE MAURYA PERIOD

I have observed in the previous chapter that northern India in the epoch of the rise of Buddhism was the scene of a number of monarchies as well as republics. The republics were known in ancient Indian literature by the technical term *sangha* or *gana* used in the strictly political sense. Some recent scholars take these words to signify democratic forms of government or a genus consisting of the species of democracies, aristocracies and a mixture of both or to signify unitary and federal Ksatriya aristocracies or town wide as well as country wide democracies. The correct interpretation seems to be that *sangha* signified an aristocratic clan republic of the Ksatriya order and nothing more.¹

In the pre Maurya period the most important instance of a *sangha* or *gana* as explained above is that of the Licchavis of Vaiśālī (identified with the modern village of Basarh in the Muzaffarpur District of Bihar). The Licchavis are often found to be included in a wider confederacy that of the Vajjis (Vrjis). Less known examples are those of the Mallas of Kusinārā and Pāvā (in the modern Nepal Terai region) as well as the Andhaka Vrsnis (belonging to modern Samāstra) who formed the Sātvata branch of the ancient and widely spread Yadu tribe. Different views have been held by scholars about the constitution of the Licchavis (Vajjis) some taking it to be a unitary republican State, others regarding it as a republic of a complex type (each member of the ruling assembly forming a State in miniature and with the assembly ruling the whole State under an elected president) and still others holding it to be a Federal State with autonomy for each constituent principality. These views are based upon different interpretations of an isolated passage in the Jatakas but on independent grounds they appear to be improbable. Judging from a number of texts of the authentic Buddhist Canon in both the Pālī and Sanskrit versions the Licchavis constitution appears to have been a unitary republic with an executive head (*senapati*) and a sovereign assembly consisting of the ruling Ksatriya clansmen. The decrees of the republic were issued jointly in the names of the *senapati* and the *gana*. The assembly which met at

¹For the bibliography vide fn. 1. The significance of the terms *sangha* and *gana* with special reference to their current interpretations is discussed in my *Studies in Indian History and Culture* pp. 360-71.

the mote hall (*santhāgāra*) was noted in its best days for its full and frequent sessions. It had the fullest right of electing the *senapati* and full criminal jurisdiction over the citizens and it exercised a severely paternal control over their private lives. It has been urged by some scholars in recent times on the authority of a single text in a late canonical commentary (the *Sumangalavilāsinī* of Buddhaghosa) that the judicial procedure of the Vajjian State was such as to ensure for the citizen an unparalleled degree of personal liberty. But this view is discredited by the lateness and evidently unauthentic character of the cited passage.

As regards the constitution of the Śākya of Kapilāvastu (identified with Tilaura Kot in the Basti District of Uttar Pradesh) there has been in recent times a sharp difference of opinion among scholars. Some take it to have been a hereditary monarchy while others have held it to be a republic with a sovereign clan assembly and an elected president. From a full discussion of the available evidence we are justified in concluding that the Śākya had a hereditary monarchy as well as an assembly of the ruling Kṣatriya clan so as to combine both monarchic and aristocratic elements. The later writers apparently interpreted this unfamiliar type of a mixed constitution in such a way as to fit in with the usual type of aristocratic clan republics.²

The problem of the procedure of these republican assemblies has been sought to be solved in recent times by the application of the well known data about the methods of transacting ecclesiastical acts in the Buddhist monastic establishments. The discussion in this case has turned on the point whether the latter was only a replica of the former or whether the two had some features (but not all) in common. Judging from the available evidence we may infer that the procedure of the republican assemblies bore a general resemblance to that of their Buddhist counterpart subject to the inevitable difference arising from the contrast between a sovereign political assembly and an ecclesiastical gathering of monks. The application of this general principle seems to suggest (what is indeed corroborated by the scanty data directly available on the subject) a few important conclusions. Firstly the initiative for bringing forward the proposals before the republican assemblies belonged almost certainly to the chief executive officer (or officers) holding office for a fixed term and not to a presiding officer specially elected for the occasion. Secondly the proposals were normally brought forward in the form of a resolution which being put to the vote once or thrice (as the case might be) was declared carried if there was no opposition. Thirdly in the event of an opposition the

² The current interpretations of the constitution of the Licchavis of Vaisali and of the Śākya of Kapilāvastu are discussed in my *Studies in Indian History and Culture* pp. 381-98.

decision was probably reached by reference to a committee of the assembly, and in the last resort by an appeal to the majority vote subject to a very substantial interference by the presiding officer. Fourthly there were regular rules relating to the quorum the recording of absentee votes and so forth. Fifthly the proposals were probably discussed by the members of the assembly before acceptance or rejection and were not taken to be approved by their mere silence. Sixthly the decisions were certainly enforced by political sanctions unlike the sanctions permissible to the Buddhist assemblies.³

From the above survey of the condition of the East Indian republics at the time of the rise of Buddhism let us pass to a consideration of the republics of north western India at the time of the invasion of Alexander of Macedon (326 B.C.). We may observe at the outset that the companions of Alexander with their well known and acute sense of discrimination between different constitutions were able to distinguish between the two types of the republics they noticed namely the aristocracies and the democracies. On the authority of the scanty data furnished by them the conclusion has recently been drawn that the constitution of the Indus Valley republics had three elements namely a Cabinet, a Second Chamber and a Parliament of which the first consisted of the heads of the *gana* the second was elected by the people and the third consisted of popular representatives. Now apart from the historical anachronism involved in the identification of the ancient Indian institutions with their supposed European analogues in modern times it may be pointed out that the above conclusions rest on a series of guesses and nothing more. In fact the only certain conclusion that can be drawn from the evidence of the Greek writers is that those ancient republics had as a rule a supreme magistrate (or board of magistrates) a council of elders and a general assembly. The magistrates were evidently elected by the assembly but the constitution and functions of the council of elders are not known with certainty. Of the general assembly we can only say this much with confidence that it was confined in the case of the aristocracies to the members of the ruling Ksatriya clan and that it was open to all freemen in the case of democracies. In the instance of one unnamed aristocracy which lay to the east of the Hyphasis (Beas) river we are told that admission to the assembly was limited by a high (if peculiar) qualification consisting in the gift of an elephant. A peculiar constitution resembling (according to the observant Greek writers) that of ancient Sparta was that of Patalene (the

³ The above account is summarized from pp. 371-80 in my studies already referred to in fns. 1 and 2. For a complete account of Buddhist ecclesiastical procedure *vide* Sukumar Dutta *Early Buddhist Monachism* pp. 150-55.

Indus delta) In this State the command in war was vested in two hereditary kings of as many different houses while the council of elders consisting probably of a class of hereditary nobles exercised paramount authority This therefore represented a mixed constitution combining monarchic and aristocratic elements ⁴

THE MAURYA AND POST MAURYA PERIODS

Under the highly centralized administration of the Nanda and the Maurya emperors there must have been very little room for the independent existence of the republics We know that a number of autonomous tribes (including such ancient peoples as the Āndhras and the Bhojas) were included in Aśoka's dominions But these are mere names An after growth of republican freedom took place in northern India after the decline of the Indo Greek and the Śaka powers during the first two centuries before Christ and again after the downfall of the Kuṣāṇa power in the third and early fourth centuries of the Christian era In the first period there flourished in the regions of Rajasthan and the eastern Punjab a number of independent republican tribes such as the Ārjunāyanas the Mālavas the Śivis the Rājanyas and above all the Yaudheyas In the second period, the Ārjunāyanas the Mālavas and the Yaudheyas acquired a fresh lease of independent existence In later times the political authority in this last named republican State was concentrated in the hands of a chief with the exalted title of *mahārāja mahāsenāpati* and of councillors of victory (*mantra dharas*) Other tribes like the Kunindas were ruled directly by kings With this course of development may be compared an interesting discussion in the *Mahābhārata* ⁵ which pointedly advocates concentration of the vital functions of policy making and espionage in the hands of the executive officers in the interest of security of the republics ⁶

With the rise of the Imperial Guptas in the third and following decades of the fourth century of the Christian era the curtain is drawn on the history of the ancient Indian republics A number of autonomous tribes including the Yaudheyas the Mālavas and the Ārjunāyanas of earlier times are stated to have been included in the empire of Samudragupta (c. A.D. 340-80) But nothing is known about their constitution The later tribes who figure on the stage of Indian history were ruled by chiefs or kings

The above is a summary of pp. 400-05 of my studies referred to in fns. 1 and 2. The views criticized in this context are those of K. P. Jayaswal *Hindu Polity* pp. 64-66, 69-73, XII-108.

The above account is based upon Ch. XII pp. 237-38 of *A Comprehensive History of India* II and Ch. XI pp. 162-68 of *The History and Culture of the Indian People* II by me and Dr. D. C. Sircar respectively.

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA
CONCLUDING REMARKS

It is desirable to trace here dispassionately the causes of the periodical decline and final extinction of the ancient Indian republics extending over a thousand years. There is no reason to think with a well known historian of India that the republics were alien to the genius of the Indian people who were always content with autocracy. On the contrary it appears as in the parallel instance of European history between the first century B.C. and the end of the eighteenth century after Christ that the periodical replacement of republics by monarchies was due to a train of historical circumstances and nothing more. In the pre Maurya period the eastern republics fell because of their own internal dissensions and the ambition of neighbouring powerful kings like those of Kosala and Magadha while the north western republics were swept away by the disastrous invasion of Alexander of Macedon. In the following period the republics were forced apparently by the pressure of the foreign invaders to vest the supreme authority in the hands of select individuals or groups so as to bring themselves into line with the normal type of monarchical states.⁷

For the discussion of the problem of the fall of ancient republics *vide* my book referred to in fns 1 and 2 pp 283-87

THE STATE IN RELATION TO RELIGION IN ANCIENT INDIA

THE VEDIC AGE

THE Rg Vedic state is best described as a tribal monarchy and there is no evidence that in India the king performed the public sacrifice as in Homeric Greece. The Vedic sacrifice is almost always the undertaking of an individual *yajamana* the more complex sacrifices needing the assistance of a number of priests because of their composite ritual. The sacrifices performed by the king are no exception to this rule. The nearest approach to a public sacrifice is the *sattra* lasting for some days months or years as the case may be but there is little evidence that kings played a leading part in organizing it and it is not known whether it was the survival of a primitive public sacrifice or a later innovation peculiar to Indo Aryan society. On the other hand the king had a *purohita* (lit one placed before) from the earliest times and Vasistha and Visvāmitra were among the famous *purohitas* of those far off times. The *purohita* was then not merely the priest of the royal household but a public functionary who shared with the king the responsibility for the safety of the State. Visvāmitra claims to have helped King Bharata once to cross the Vipās and the Śutudrī in high flood evidently on the way to or from a military excursion¹. In another hymn we read let us conquer in the Vidatha the Puru of hostile speech which has been rightly held to imply that the priest prayed or sacrificed in the assembly house for the victory of the king while he was actively engaged in war. There was as is well known an element of magic in the sacrifice and as the custodian of this magical power the *purohita* shared the responsibility with the king for the protection of the State. Its security depended on the co operation of physical force (*ksatra*) with spiritual power (*brahma*)². And the *purohita* soon came to be expressly described as *rāstragopa* protector of the realm who alone enabled the king to make acceptable offerings to the gods³.

It would seem that originally the two powers were considered to be of equal importance and their relation one of balance resulting from a mutual check. Thus we read that *brahma* and *ksatra* were created together immediately after the creation of the sacrifice⁴. Again in the prayers at

R V III 83 Ibid VII 18 13 Ibid IV 50 8
 At Br VIII 24 ha na ha ra apurohitasya rajno deya annam adanti and VIII 25
 has Isatrena ksatriya jayati balena bala n asmate yasyavam vidvan brahmanah rastragopa
 purohitah

Ibid VII 19 Also VIII 2 saying brahman khalu vai ksatram pratiṣṭham

the beginning and end of the sacrifice at the royal consecration we read May *brahma* guard me from *ksatra* May *ksatra* guard me from *brahma* ⁸ Traces are not altogether wanting that at some stage the superiority of the *imperium* was clearly asserted and *brahma* had definitely to accept a lower place Soon however the balance is tilted in favour of spiritual power and the change appears to be based almost on a bold trick of etymology by which the name *purohita* (placed before) of the spiritual office is made to gain precedence for it ⁷ This exaltation of the *sacerdotium* over the *imperium* to use convenient terms borrowed from another culture becomes a permanent feature of the ancient Indian constitution accordingly we find that in the short section on Rājadharmā in his *Dharma Sūtra* Baudhāyana lays down that the king should choose a person of high ability as his *purohita* and then obey his behests ⁸ Even Kautilya the most practical minded of our political theorists affirms that the Brāhmana is the chief support of the throne ⁹ He also compares the relation of the king to the *purohita* to that of the pupil to his teacher the son to his father and the servant to his master

This evolution of the office of the *purohita* to a superior and honoured position explains the corresponding elevation of the class to which he belonged and the emergence of a privileged position for the Brāhmanas as a class in the State In a famous maxim which figures in the *rājasūya* the Brāhmana tells the assembled people Here is your king O ye people as for us Brāhmanas Soma is our king ¹⁰ This may appear a dangerous claim but in practice it led only to the exemption of the Brāhmanas property from taxation and it should not be forgotten that the Brāhmana was enjoined not to accumulate property and that he commanded respect according to his learning and not his wealth Baudhāyana reaffirms that the learned Brahmana attains great fame and is counted highborn though he might be poor ¹¹ Let us note also this that according to the same writer not every Brāhmana is entitled to the immunities of the class and there is no violation of the laws in the case of an uneducated Brāhmana ¹²

Baudhāyana includes the temple (*devagrha*) among places which one should enter only after washing one's feet ¹³ Āpastamba lays it down that a person should not stretch his legs in the direction of the temple door

- Ibid* VII 22 *brahma mā kṣatrāṇi gopāyatu kṣatram ma brahmano gopāyatu*
Br U VIII 1 4
Baudh Dh S I 10 7 8 *sarvatoditram purohitam urnuyat tasya śasane varietā*
Kaut I 9 (p 16) *brahmanenaudhitam kṣatram mantrimantrābhumantritām*
jayatyajitam atyantam śāstranugama śāstritam
Taitt Sam I 8 10 12 For exemption from taxes *Śat Br V* 3 3 12 4 2 3
 IX 4 3 16
Baudh Dh S I 10 29 *mantratastu samrddhāni kulanyalpadhananyapī*
Ibid 28 *brahmanatikramo nāsti mūrkhhe mantra uvārjite*
Ibid II 5 2

(*devatādvāram*) among other things¹⁴ These are among the earliest extant references to temples We may infer from these facts that the temple as the nucleus of the religious and social life of the community had come into existence in the late Vedic Age and that it claimed the protection and patronage of the king

SOCIAL AND RELIGIOUS POLICY OF ASOKA

The reign of Asoka forms a landmark in the history of the Indian State in its relation to religion It has been said that during the last twenty five years of his life Asoka was a Buddhist monk and as much ruler of the Church as of the State¹⁵ Such a view seems however to rest on an incorrect appreciation of the evidence That Asoka did enter the *sangha* of monks once and wore the robes of a monk is clear from his statements in the Rūpnāth Brahmagiri and Maski inscriptions but it is by no means evident that he became a *bhikkhu* and actually received formal ordination which he could not have done without abdicating his throne¹⁶ As for being ruler of the Church the Buddhist Church was not organized in a regular hierarchy with a single spiritual head at the top It was a loose confederation of independent *viharas* (monasteries) with chapters (*sanghas*) of their own bound only by a common allegiance to the *triratna* (Buddha *dharma* and *sangha*) and the analogy of Christendom with the Emperor and the Pope as its secular and religious heads has no application whatever in Indian conditions According to Indian notions the king's main duty was just to uphold the existing social order which consisted of an infinite number of autonomous groups each with its own constitution laws and practices formed for various purposes like local administration industry trade or religion It is only in the rare instances of disputes arising among them proving incapable of adjustment that the king's aid was invoked it was only then and even then only to the extent needed to procure a just settlement of the matter in dispute that the king did interfere in the affairs of these groups

Three acts of Asoka call for a brief discussion since they may appear to lend colour to the view that regards him as the head of the Buddhist church in his day viz his commendation of certain scriptural passages to the special attention of the monks his edict on *sanghabheda* and the summoning of the Buddhist Council The Bhābhārū edict in which Asoka selects some sacred texts and commends them for special study by the *sangha* (Order) is not an exercise of royal authority much less of ecclesiastical

Ap Dh S I 30 25

Smith *Early History of India* 4th Ed pp 168 9

For rules of *upasampadā* cf SBE XIII pp 183 238

power but just an expression of opinion formed by the emperor after a close study of the canon and deep reflection with the aid of the *sangha* itself. This opinion would obviously have been received with all the respect due to it on the merits of the subject and on account of the position of the person who addressed the *sangha*. The edict on *sanghabheda* may with better justice be regarded as the exercise of royal authority for in clear terms it orders the king's officials to see that within their respective jurisdictions all schismatic monks are unfrocked so to say i.e. expelled from the *sangha* compelled to wear white robes and driven to live in places not suited for the residence of monks (*āvāsa*).

To understand the need for this edict and its correct import we should look into the history of the Third Council. The *Dīpavamsa*¹⁷ contains the earliest account we possess of this Council. According to it Asoka's patronage of Buddhism resulted in the enrichment of the *sangha* and the relative impoverishment of other faiths. Many adherents of the neglected creeds Ājivakas and sectarians of different descriptions to the number of sixty thousand began to wear the yellow robe and dwell together with the *bhikkhus* in the Asokārāma for the sake of the revenue. They proclaimed their own heresies as the doctrines of the Buddha and caused much confusion by their unruly behaviour. This went on for a period of seven years during which the *uposatha* ceremonies were performed by incomplete congregations, saintly, clever and modest men not making their appearance at them. At last Asoka summoned to his aid the venerable Moggaliputta Tissa who was living at that time in solitary retreat to avoid the confusion prevailing in the Asokārāma. Under Tissa's presidency a Council was held at which all the adherents of false doctrines who had stealthily attached themselves to the *sangha* were unfrocked, compelled to put on white robes and expelled. At the same time the Theravāda was firmly established and the great Tissa set forth the treatise belonging to the Abhidhamma which is called the *Kathāvatthu*. The Council comprised one thousand of the best *arhats* (monks of the highest class) was held under the king's protection and lasted nine months.

Now this narrative shows unmistakably that the Third Council was held to reform serious abuses that had crept into the *sangha* owing to a large increase in its material wealth under royal patronage. To some extent the monarch had a duty to right the wrongs he had unwittingly generated but even then he supplied just the regulative force necessary to enable the *sangha* to regain its spiritual integrity by expelling interlopers and schismatics and the edict on *sanghabheda* is just a continuation of

¹⁷ VII 34-59 cf *Mahāvamsa* V 228-82

the same arrangements by which the *sangha* was secured from disturbances due to the violence of heretics and schismatics. Let us note that the *sangha* even in this crisis carried on its own affairs and depended on the secular arm of the State only for protection from evil doers. The edict on *sangha bheda* is therefore calculated only to employ the machinery of government to give effect to the ascertained wishes of the *sangha* by affording it the police protection necessary to function unhampered.¹⁸

Thus Asoka's personal faith was Buddhism and he lavished his patronage on the *sangha*—this gave rise to troubles from other sectarians who palmed themselves off as members of the *sangha* for the sake of pelf and these were dealt with by the Third Council and the edict on schismatics. That Asoka was by no means unfriendly to other faiths is evident from his exhortations addressed to his subjects to honour the Brāhmanas as well as Śramanas (Buddhist monks) and by his presentation of three good sized caves with polished interiors to Ājivakas and others in the Khalatika mountain (Barabar hills). In fact even the most powerful Asian monarchs of antiquity as a rule did not like to impose their personal faith on the subjects inhabiting their vast empires and evinced no anxiety to build up States fanatically wedded to a single religious creed. In the immense Achaemenid empire of Cyrus and Darius I every subject people kept its own religion. The great kings were eclectics who did not proselytize—on the contrary we find them being initiated into the worship of foreign deities and taking them for their protectors.¹⁹ Asoka's religious policy was very similar and the good tradition of religious freedom and toleration thus established was seldom departed from till Islam burst upon the world with its pronounced antipathy to alien religious faiths. Asoka indeed stands out unique for all time by the ringing statement of his own policy and the passionate plea for tolerance he set forth in his celebrated Twelfth Rock Edict.

But this policy of toleration did not stand in the way of Asoka's undertaking and carrying out humanitarian reforms even where they involved interference with current practices closely bound up with religion. He preferred the method of persuasion to that of force but did not shrink from the use of the minimum force needed to secure his ends through the elaborate machinery of administration which he controlled and directed. He deprecated the observance of many vulgar and useless (*ksudra* and

¹ A similar instance of the state aiding in the settlement of relations among rival sects comes from Vijayanagar history. Quarrels between Jains and Śrivaishnavas in the realm were settled in 1368 by Bukka I summoning the leaders of both the sects from all important centres to a round table conference which succeeded in hammering out an agreed set of regulations for the future. See T. V. Mahalingam *Administration and Social Life under Vijayanagar* (Madras 1940) pp. 315-16.

¹⁹ Huart *Ancient Persia and Iranian Civilization* p. 80.

nirarthaka) ceremonies particularly by women on sundry occasions as during marriage child birth illness and so on. Again he laid great stress on *ahimsā* and devised an elaborate code for its practice and for the prevention of cruelty to animals.

RELIGIOUS TOLERATION AFTER ASOKA

After the active promotion of the Buddhist faith under Aśoka there was a revival of orthodox Vedic religion under the Śungas marked by a renewed emphasis on the performance of sacrifices particularly the *asvamedha* as the symbol of imperial suzerainty. Buddhism continued to be a flourishing religion for several centuries; it prospered under the Śātavāhanas in the lower valley of the Kṛṣṇā river though the Śātavāhanas themselves were mostly Hindus. It seems to have appealed strongly to the Greeks Śakas and Kusānas and the north west of India became a celebrated home of Buddhist architecture and sculpture. A General Council was held in the reign of Kaniska. Under the Guptas staunch Vaiṣnavas though they seem to have been. Fa Hien found many Buddhist *sanghas* well looked after and the illustrious University of Nālandā was rising into fame and beginning to attract scholars from all over Asia. The Śaiva monarch Harśavardhana treated Buddhism and Hiuen Tsang with great consideration and the Pālas of Bengal became distinguished patrons of that creed and supported a justly celebrated school of Buddhist art. Likewise Jainism found its votaries and patrons in many a monarch who with the notable exception of Kharavela of Kalinga generally ruled in western India and Mysore. But when all is said the general trend was strongly in favour of Brāhmanical Hinduism in its various forms though all the creeds were more or less impartially patronized by the rulers irrespective of their own personal faith.

We must note however that the State in the person of the ruler was by no means the sole patron of religion. The official nobility rich merchants acting individually or grouped in more or less powerful guilds sometimes even regiments of soldiers besides craft guilds of artisans competed and co-operated with one another in religious undertakings. These usually took the form of excavating caves as *vihāras* and *caityas* (Buddhist temples) construction of *stūpas* endowing the maintenance of monks by the supply of food clothing and medicine and providing for the performance of worship at different shrines. The structural temple is a more common feature of Hinduism and Jainism and the temple came in course of time to develop a strong social side to its organization attracting numberless endowments which accumulated in its hands through several generations. It became the bank the landlord the school and the hospital of

the village or town where it was located and offered scope for the display of the piety and liberality of all types of persons and groups. The inscriptions on the walls of the famous temples especially in South India like Tanjore and Drakṣiṇama or Śīrangam are seen to form a veritable cyclopædia of the history and culture of the surrounding area. But generally the major works were carried out by the ruling monarchs like the excavation of the Kailāsa temple at Ellorā by Rāstrakūṭa Kṛṣṇa I, the erection of the magnificent temples at Tānjore and Gangaikondacolapuram by the Cola monarchs Rājarāja I and his son Rājendra I and those at Puri and Konarak by the Ganga kings of Orissa, not to speak of the grandeur that was Vijayanagar which impresses so much even in its present ruined condition. In almost every instance private charity supplemented the effort of the State in a striking and useful measure.

Toleration or encouragement of faiths other than the monarch's own was the normal rule of the Hindu State. The Arabs testify to the freedom of worship they enjoyed on the west coast of India which they frequented for trade and perhaps earlier still a number of Christian communities had sprung up there and in Ceylon as Cosmas Indicopleustes noted and somewhat later the Parsis found a safe asylum in the Bombay coast when they were driven out of their native land by Muslim intolerance. The rulers of Vijayanagar when they began to employ Muslims in their service caused a copy of the Koran to be placed in front of the throne so that the followers of the Prophet might take part in the court ceremonies without violating the tenets of their faith. It cannot be said however that this enlightened and liberal rule of conduct was never broken by Hindu monarchs. Buddhist tradition is strong that Puṣyamitra the founder of the Śunga line persecuted that faith relentlessly. Towards the close of the sixth century a Śaiva ruler Śaśāṅka of central Bengal is said to have dug up and burnt the holy Bodhi tree at Buddha Gayā, broke the stone marked with the footprints of the Buddha at Pāṭalīputra, destroyed the convents and scattered the monks, carrying his persecutions to the foot of the Nepalese hills. In the South we have many stories, often much exaggerated and boastful of public disputations in which the Jains and Buddhists were worsted by the Śaiva saints who flourished in the Tamiḷ country from the seventh to the ninth century and of the hardships to which the defeated sects were subjected by the contemporary Pallava and Pandya rulers. A Śaiva monarch of Gujarat Ajayadeva is stated to have begun his reign towards the close of the twelfth century by a merciless persecution of the Jains, torturing their leader to death. Sectarian animosities then were not altogether unknown and some rulers here and there did earn notoriety by departing from the noble example of Aśoka and the established law of

the land But considering the extent of the country and the duration of time involved we must hold that the rule of the freedom of religious worship was remarkably well observed in the Hindu State Places like Ellorā and Kāñcīpuram attest at once to the liberal and impartial patronage of all sects on the part of kings merchants and others and the prevalence of a general atmosphere of harmony among the votaries of the different sects Ellorā exhibits rows of Brahmanical Buddhist and Jain caves and temples in one and the same neighbourhood and Kāñcīpuram was divided for long into four quarters known respectively as Śiva Viṣṇu Jina and Buddha Kāñcī the last has disappeared altogether in relatively modern times while traces of the Jina section survive Śaivism and Vaiṣṇavism are still the flourishing faiths of the city

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL AND POLITICAL EVOLUTION IN INDIA

INTRODUCTORY

THE aim of this chapter is to show how the genius of Indian society has expressed its philosophy of life in legal and social forms because the evolution of legal doctrines is one of the best tests and examples of such philosophy. Professor Filmer S. C. Northrop of the Yale University stresses the unity and the aesthetic and intuitive nature of Oriental culture as contrasted with the theoretic component in knowledge characteristic of Greek, Anglo-American and even Marxian ideologies. A study of the sources of the Indian philosophical theories as applied to politics and law would be of assistance not only to the student and philosopher but also to the man of affairs who is grappling with the crucial problems of the present day world. I shall present here an *aperçu* of the Indian doctrines relating to social and political evolution referring to the important original texts as well. It will have a vital bearing on the practical day to day life also because the ideas and ideals of each country as they progress from age to age have and indeed ought to have something racially characteristic in them. In politics and philosophy as well as in literature and the arts nothing that is not evolved from within and is not in harmony with inherited as well as individual traditions will be characteristic or essentially fit to live. While we shall do well as throughout our history ever to be tolerant and hospitable to fresh views we must also be alive to the need for assimilating them with our own culture and we must imitate the wise gardener when for improving the yield he skilfully inserts a graft. A nation's philosophy and politics are the outward expressions of its culture and sentiment and they use the symbols best understood in the country of their origin. They bespeak an acquaintance with national life and thought. Our political ideas are a function of our intellectual and civic life.

We have had in India a succession of thinkers who like the mediaeval Churchmen in Europe were the founders and partakers of what may accurately be called a university tradition and an educational system which was based on and culminated in religious training but included also in its scope an attempt at universal research born of catholic sympathies and curiosities. The term *upanisad* meant etymologically sitting near a person and is the exact synonym of the French *seance* or session. The

Upanisads represent the outcome of sittings or gatherings which took place in the hermitages and forests. They not only profoundly influenced Indian thought and through China and Persia Asian thought but also filtered to Europe through Persia Arabia and Asia Minor and left their impress on Thales and Pythagoras as also on the Gnostics and Neo-Platonists and through the universities of the Middle Ages and ultimately through Machiavelli Descartes Spinoza and Schopenhauer have become part of most European cultures. The comprehensiveness of the studies at Nālanda and Vikramasīlā as well as the Kāñcipuram was not surpassed in the early universities of the West—Paris Bologna and Salerno.

The lineage of ideas is indeed a marvellous thing. In the *Harsacarita* of Bana there occurs a passage relating to a royal visit paid in the seventh century AD to a forest university. The passage says that the king saw Buddhists from various provinces Jains in white robes mendicants ascetics followers of Kapila Lokayātikas (materialists) followers of Kanāda (of the atomic schools) followers of the Upanisads students of legal institutions students of the Purānas adepts in sacrifices adepts in grammar followers of Pāñcarātra and others besides all diligently following their own tenets pondering urging objections raising doubts resolving them expounding etymologies and disputing discussing and explaining moot points¹. Can there be a more thought provoking and suggestive description of a true university with no exclusions and many preferences?

We have been in touch with the current Western thought and speculation and under their influence for nearly a century in our universities. We have overlooked if we have not disdained our past traditions and history. There is a great danger of our not securing the full benefit of the newer culture for lack of proper assimilation. Should it not be our aim to build on the foundations of our own accumulated lore and inherited stock of capacities and temperament a stately and enduring structure with the full aid of Western learning and science and thus to develop our own soul? Especially is this process called for in the study and practice of politics an art and a science more intimately connected with national aptitudes and national outlook than almost any other. What is in the bone cannot be eliminated and as pointed out by the author of the *Dangerous Sea*, one realizes with a shock the cyclical character of life and ideas. He shows how the whole history of the French Revolution and the dictatorship which followed it constitutes really a transplanted chapter of Roman history. The Fascists the Spartacists and the Nazi revolution of our own times have also had their prototypes in the past. The curious student may also discover analogies between certain developments of

communism at the present moment and similar phenomena which are described by the compilers of the Purānas not to mention incidents in the history of the later Roman Empire and the Middle Ages. It was in these so-called Dark Ages that there arose the idea of a League of Nations fulfilling the functions which were part of the programme of the Holy Roman Empire and which were elaborated by the mediaeval theorists both regal and private who strove to bring about an effective policing of the nations. No nation building its future political or social habitation can afford to ignore its past racial culture or the lessons of its history. Our endeavour should therefore be to find out how far in the various departments of political and socio-economic theory we can get guidance from our own heritage of speculation and action.

THE IDEAS OF LAW

Manu describes the monarch as embodying in himself the four ages and Śukra describes him as the maker of the age³. Bhīṣma also says in the *Śāntiparvan* of the *Mahābhārata* that the king makes the age⁴. The great rulers of whom we have authentic records adopted the same view. Beginning with the times prior to recorded history we find that the evolution of what are termed Kerala *ācāras* is a conclusive proof of the flexibility of ancient lawgivers and pristine laws. The fact that the Nambudiris observe customs different from those followed by the Brāhmanas of other parts shows that Hindu *ācāras* or laws have been modified to suit special or local conditions. The *sarvasva dāna* (gift of everything) form of marriages, the *dvyāmusyāyana* (filial relation to two families) form of adoption, the absence of any rigid insistence on the early marriage of women (the last mentioned obviously a later innovation in Hindu law forced on the people on account of the foreign invasions and the insecurity of the times), the possibility of a woman remaining unmarried to the end of her days, the modification of the rule that a man should marry within his own caste, the importance given in worship and ritual to the *tantras* as distinguished from the *mantras*—all these and many other differences in social usage indicate that there was no crystallization of social or even religious law and practice in ancient India and that there was an abundant scope for changes to meet altered situations and conditions. This policy was not confined to the early times but was followed even later as was triumphantly demonstrated by what is historically known regarding Rāmānuja's gospel and that of the Tēngalai saints who brought about the adoption of Tamil as a concurrent language with Sanskrit. We notice attempts actively supported and fostered by the sacerdotal castes

³ IX 301

Śukra IV 1 60

Mbh XII 69 79

during the reign of the Vijayanagar kings seeking the active assistance of the State for implementing an agreement to put down the pernicious dowry system and punishing the breakers of such agreement. This document bears the signature of the exponents of all branches of sacred studies in the kingdom.⁵

The basic idea of *dharma* underlies alike the ethical, social and political ideas of the Indian lawgivers. Wherever there was doubt or controversy, the practice of right-minded Aryans was the touchstone and determining factor. In the *Śikṣāvallī* of the *Taittirīya Upaniṣad*⁶ occurs the well-known passage: "Those Brahmanas in thy neighbourhood who are of sober judgement, who are meek and intent upon the performance of their duties, as they would act in any matter so also shalt thou act therein." As a logical result, it was ordained that the higher the station or caste, the more serious was the offence when a moral law was broken. Manu says that a king should be fined a thousand times as much as a common man for the same offence. The *Mahābhārata*⁷ lays down that the greater the position of the man, the weightier should be their punishment. It must, however, be admitted that the later developments and the hardening of the caste system led to conditions and regulations analogous to those present in other countries where a small racial or religious aristocracy is surrounded by a large number of so-called inferior races.

The source of political authority was the king. The law and order to be maintained by him was the *dharma*, or right order of the world, which was generally equated with ancient divine rules and age-long usage. Such usage was held to stand next to the revealed scripture in authority.⁸ The real lawgiver was thus not the king, but the right usage, the enforcement of which was vested in the king.

The elimination of conflict and strife and the avoidance of interference with another man's right to happiness and peace, undisturbed by a neighbour's violence, were the objectives of this polity. It is noticeable that there has always existed in India, side by side with the elaboration of ritual and propitiatory ceremonies, the realization that *dharma* transcends sacred or ritual observances. He that has performed all the sacred observances and has not the following qualities, we are told in the *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra*, comes not to a union with Brahman. These qualities are compassion, patience, purity, active endeavour and thought (*anāyāsa*) as well as freedom from turmoil, avarice and envy.¹⁰ Righteousness or *dharma*, which has to be promulgated and enforced by the king, implies

Cf. Salestare, *Social and Political Life in the Vijayanagar Empire*, II, p. 189.
⁵ I 11 VIII 336 XII 267 16
Ap Dh S I 1 2 1 *Baudh Dh S*

and connotes a comprehensive code of behaviour and attitude necessary to maintain peace and order. A noteworthy canon of conduct is laid down for the king that as he owes a deep debt of obligation to his soldiers and people who help him in his campaigns and the defence of his kingdom he should redeem that debt by embarking on public works such as rest houses, places of assemblage, tanks and irrigation works.¹¹ The importance of natural law and of conscience is recognized by way of guidance in matters of doubt where the Vedas, usage and custom and divine commands do not furnish any help.¹

In Europe law has been regarded sometimes as the embodiment of eternal justice as a part of the natural heritage of man and as embodying natural reason. Another school of thought holds that law is that which is brought into existence by the fiat of a lawmaker in other words that law is obeyed not merely because it is just or good but because it has been laid down by the State. In this way arises the distinction between positive law and ethics. The ethical conception of law was the first to be expounded by Indian lawgivers and philosophers in the *Brhadāranyaka Upaniṣad*, *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra*, *Baudhāyana Dharma Sūtra*, *Vasistha Dharma Sūtra*, *Manu Smṛiti* and *Yājñavalkya Smṛiti* as shown elsewhere. Kautilya lays down that the royal edict (*rājaśāsana*) which he explains as the command of the kings (*rājñam ājña*) is one of the four legs of law.¹² Corroborating this Śukra insists that the greatest amount of publicity should be given to the laws by the king who should have them inscribed in all public places with his signature and date.¹⁴ This interpretation gives rise to the theory adumbrated in the *Śukra Nitisāra*¹ that the king is the maker of the age and the promulgator of the principles of virtue and vice. The philosophical basis of this concept of law is also illustrated by Jaimini in his definition of *dharma* which lays down that *dharma* brings about its object as the result of command (*codana laksano rtho dharmah*).

IDEAS OF ORIGIN OF SOCIETY AND THE STATE

There are certain passages in ancient Hindu literature pointing to a condition of society without a king. In the *Aitareya Brāhmaṇa*¹⁶ it is stated: The *devas* and the *asuras* were fighting. The *asuras* defeated the *devas*. The *devas* said: It is on account of our having no chief that the *asuras* defeat us. Let us create a king. All agreed. A family was composed of several members living under a common head. An aggregate of several families made up a village. *Viś* was a larger formation implying settlement while *gana* was an even more comprehensive term.

¹ *Mbh.* XII 42 7
II 606 8

Cf. *Manu* II 1
IV 1 60

Kaut. III 1
I 3

embracing as it did the entire population occupying a particular area which subsequently converted it into a *rāstra* or State. Society in those days had to keep itself in constant readiness for combat not only to quell external aggression but also internal dissension and the origin of the Rājanya (Ksatriya) class has to be traced to this circumstance. The invocation of the blessings of unseen powers through an adept agency became a necessary incident of that arrangement and this gave rise to the Brahmanas as a distinct class. The bulk of the Aryan community not included in either of these categories was known as the *viś* or *Vaiśyas* while the exigencies of conquest led to the absorption of numerous non Aryans into the Aryan fold who eventually became Śudras.

The *Mahābhārata*¹⁷ narrates the following story on the origin of kingship. In ancient days men were ruined in consequence of the prevalence of anarchy. They devoured one another just as the stronger fish devour the weaker ones in water. A few men then assembled together and agreed among themselves that the babler the cruel the voluptuous and the greedy among them should be disowned. That arrangement worked for some time. On seeing that it was also not satisfactory they approached Brahmā with a prayer to grant them a king. Brahmā thereupon induced Manu to take up the kingship. The people agreed to pay certain taxes and prayed that in return the king should destroy their enemies to enable them to lead peaceful lives. Bhīṣma who relates this incident to Yudhisthira gives a slightly different version of it in a previous chapter. There he says that in the *kṛtayuga* there were no sovereignty no king no punishment and no punisher and that all men used to protect one another actuated by a sense of righteousness. They however soon found that this work was too much for them and became gradually a prey to error (*moha*) greed (*lobha*) desire (*rāga*) and lust (*kāma*). When such confusion set in and righteousness perished men sought the help of Brahmā who thereupon composed a stupendous treatise on the *purusārthas* (the ends of human life) of which the works of Brhaspati Śukra and others were but abridgements. The *devas* then prayed for a king to rule over men and Viṣṇu created Virajas. Virajas however did not relish the kingship conferred on him and Ananga his great grandson became the first king of Bhāratavarṣa.¹⁸ Both these stories as well as the passage referred to from the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa* show that the Aryans had no ruler in the olden days and that kingship with them was regarded as a comparatively late institution. There are certain passages in the Vedas pointing to the king's divine origin and this has

¹ XII 67 17 26

² XII 59 14 15 87 91

become an accepted belief by the time Manu's *Dharma sāstra* was composed. Manu¹⁹ states that when men were without a king and dispersed through fear in all directions the Lord created a king for the protection of all of them and that the essence of the *Dīkṣā* (lords of the quarters) was used for his creation. There is however no doubt that this was merely a metaphorical description of the paramountcy of the monarch designed to enforce obedience from the subject. In a striking passage Kautilya says that the vulgar opponents of a king may be silenced by the argument that the duties of Indra (the rewarder) and Yama (the punisher) are blended in him and that whoever disregards him will be visited with divine punishment.²⁰ The Buddhist *Dīgha Nikāya*²¹ also says that mankind was righteous at the beginning and that when sinfulness gradually crept into human society men selected one who was the most handsome, gracious and powerful among them and made him king. He was called *mahāsammata* because he was selected by the great.

IDEAS OF POPULAR CONTROL OVER KINGSHIP

From a passage in the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa*²² it is seen that the *purohita* (priest) took a promise from the king to the following effect at the time of the *mahābhiseka* the great coronation ceremony. Between the night I am born and the night I die whatever good I may have done my heaven my life and my progeny may I be deprived of if I oppress you. The ritual of the *rājasūya* sacrifice described in the *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*²³ requires that the king should take the consent of the earth in the following words: Mother Prthivī injure me not nor I thee. The commentator thus interprets this passage: the king and the country should enter into friendly relations with each other like son and mother. Somadeva in his *Nītvākyaṃrta*²⁴ states that the king should recite a hymn every day to the following effect: I am protecting this cow (earth) which bears the milk of the four oceans whose calf is righteousness whose tail is enterprise whose hoofs are castes and the stages of life whose ears are enjoyment and wealth whose horns are diplomacy and valour whose eyes are truth and purity and whose face is the law. I shall not be patient with any one who injures her. Śukra who also propounds the theory of the divine origin of kings is careful to explain at the same time that they resemble only Indra and other *Dīkṣā* in the performance of certain functions.²⁵

Although the early rulers were elected kingship in the course of time

VII 3 4
 Kauṣ. Trivandrum Ed. Vol. I pp. 63-64
¹⁹ D. R. Bhandarkar's Carmichael Lecture (1918) p. 121
 VIII 4
²⁰ Jaina-granthamālā Ed. p. 256
²¹ V 4 11 11
 Śukra I 73 7

became hereditary. But some vestiges of popular control are still visible in epic and Purāṇic literature. The story of Prthu, one of the greatest of the early kings of India, is worthy of note in this connection. Vena, a descendant of Ananga, referred to already, was invested with regal power by Bhṛigu and other sages according to the *Bhagavata Purāṇa* ⁶ when there was no king to govern men although their choice was contrary to the will of the people. Vena, who like Charles I of England was a firm believer in the divine right of kings and an atheist to boot, began to oppress his subjects. The sages thought that Vena was preying on his people as a serpent fed with milk bites the very person who nourishes it. They told him: Righteousness is of supreme worth and compasses the welfare of the subjects. Do not suffer it to run to waste. If righteousness is lost, the kingdom and wealth of a king come to nought. The king who protects his people from thieves etc. and gathers due tribute attains good fortune both in this world and the next. Vena turned a deaf ear to their entreaties whereupon he was slain by them and Pṛthu was created out of his arms. Pṛthu, according to the *Mahabharata* ⁷ asked the sages what he was expected to do and being advised by those assembled that he should fearlessly perform all righteous acts, promised to do so and became king. Other instances of the election of kings are also mentioned in the *Mahābhārata*. Thus Kuru was elected on account of his virtue ⁸. Again Jānamejaya, although he was only a child, was installed in the position of the king by the people on the death of Parīkṣit ⁹. Ordinarily the crown descended from the father to the eldest son, but if that son was a minor, if a younger son had to be preferred to an elder, if an heir apparent had to be ordained, or if an interregnum had to be avoided by the appointment of a temporary ruler, the express consent of the people was imperative. The same was the case in the event of a king's desire to abdicate. Thus Devāpi, although he was the eldest son of Pratīpa, was prevented by the people from succeeding him, since he was a victim of leprosy, and Śantanu had to be preferred by the father, much against his natural inclinations ¹⁰. Dasratha proposed the anointment of Śrī Rāma as *yuvārāja* (Crown Prince) after taking the representatives of the people into his confidence and discussing the question with them in all its bearings ¹¹.

Apart from these rights which include the tacit assent of the people even in cases of regular succession, there were several other ways in which the king's possible leaning towards the exercise of unbridled authority was kept in check. In the first place, the right to oust an unrighteous king

⁶ IV 14 2 9 1, 32 4
Mbh I 44 6

XII 29 10 4
Mbh V 14 22 3

Mbh I 94 49
Ram II 1 45 2 15 16 21 4 16

conduct himself thereafter is well explained in the *Mahābhārata*⁴³ by the observation that just as an expectant mother without caring even for the objects which she likes best seeks only the well being of her forthcoming child so also should the king sacrifice what he loves best for securing the well being of his subjects. The same idea is repeated in the *Agni Purana*⁴⁴. In the *Mahābhārata*⁴⁵ it is stated that everywhere all the people from Brāhmanas to cowherds were more attached to Yudhishthira than to their own parents. Kautilya⁴⁶ says: In the happiness of his subjects lies the king's happiness; in their welfare his welfare. Whatever pleases himself he shall not consider as good, but whatever pleases his subjects he shall consider as good. In a touching scene in the *Āśramavasāparvan* of the *Mahābhārata*⁴⁷ Dhṛtarāstra on the eve of his departure for the forest informs the people assembled as follows: I make over to you this Yudhishthira as a pledge. I entrust you also as a pledge to Yudhishthira. Elsewhere in the same work it is stated that the king is the best body of his subjects and the subjects the best body of their king; the eternal duty of the king is to make his subjects happy⁴⁸. If he performs the duty of protecting his subjects well, no other penance or sacrifice is needed for him⁴⁹. Manu says that a king who protects his subjects righteously and punishes the wicked duly offers sacrifices in which lakhs are given as fees⁵⁰. Kautilya expresses the same idea when he says: The religious vow of a king is his readiness for action; the discharge of duties is the performance of his sacrifice; and equal treatment of all is his offer of fee and ablution at consecration⁵¹. Somadeva also points out that the sacrifice to be performed by a king is the protection of his subjects and not the killing of animals (which is incidental to ordinary sacrifices)⁵².

Paripalanam or all round protection is an expression embracing a very wide meaning. It is not merely the preservation of law and order. It is the administration of the State to such a degree of perfection as to enable the king and every one of his subjects to pursue undisturbed the paths of *dharma*, *artha* and *kāma*. The king himself is to be an exemplar to his subjects; since whatever *dharma* is respected by him will be respected everywhere and since the subjects will generally like to move only along the path trodden by him⁵³. Righteousness should therefore be first practised by him before he enforces it on his subjects. The king according to the *Mahābhārata* was created in order that righteousness might emanate

⁴³ XII 56 45 6

⁴⁴ *Mbh* II 13 18

9 14 15

Ibid XII 69 73

⁴⁵ *Kauṭ* I 17

Mbh XII 75 4

Cf *Ram* II 109 9

Kam I 15

222 8

I 19

Mbh XII 68 58

VIII 306

Nītv p 273

from him and if he was devoid of it he should be called a *vr̥sala* ⁴ One becomes a king for advancing the cause of *dharma* and not for acting capriciously All creatures depend on *dharma* and *dharma* depends on the king He therefore is the true king who maintains *dharma* The question what is *dharma* has been clearly answered in Chapter 109 of the *Śāntiparvan* *Dharma* is that which is conducive to the advancement of everybody which prevents injury to everybody and which is capable of upholding everybody It need not be precisely what is stated in the Vedas because everything has not been ordained in them ⁵⁶

Śukra says that tax is the price for protection paid by the subjects to the king who is only their servant though he appears to be their lord ⁵⁷ According to Manu the king derives not only one sixth of the tax in grain but also of the righteousness and unrighteousness of his subjects ⁵⁸ In the *Mahābhārata* it is observed A king should milk his kingdom like a bee collecting honey from trees He should act like the cowherd who takes milk from a cow without injuring her udder and without starving the calf He should like the leech take in the blood mildly He should treat his subjects like a tigress carrying her cubs touching them with her teeth but never biting them He should behave like a mouse which although it has sharp and pointed teeth nibbles at the feet of sleeping animals in such a manner as to keep them unaware of it ⁵⁹ Again it is laid down that the tax should vary according to the capacity of the taxpayer No tax should be levied without determining the outturn and the amount of labour needed for production because no one can be expected to work without incentive

The *Kaccit adhyāyas* of the *Mahābhārata* and the *Rāmāyana*⁶⁰ contain numerous suggestive allusions to the duties of kings Thus in the *Mahābhārata* Nārada asks Yudhishthira whether agriculturists were being kept away whether all men were not being allowed to approach the king without fear as if he were their father and mother whether the cultivators were not contented whether for purposes of irrigation large tanks filled with water were not being maintained at convenient distances whether loans of seed grain were not being advanced to agriculturists whether officers in charge of the municipal and military departments as also those in charge of trade agriculture and justice were not working in unison and whether villages were not being converted into towns and hamlets

Ibid XII 90 13 5

Ibid XII 109 10 3

VIII 304 Kalidasa refers to a sixth share of the tax belonging to the king (*Śakuntala* II 13)

XII 88 4 6

Ibid 3 5

I 188

of the *tapas* of ascetics in the forest as

Mbh II 5 *Ram* II 100

into villages ⁶¹ Kautilya mentions *utsavas* (festivals) and *samājas* (gatherings) as popular institutions to be encouraged by the king ⁶²

The protection of subjects necessarily involves as a correlative the punishment of the wicked. There were very few cases of theft in ancient India. That is due to the fact that thieves were brought to book and the stolen property recovered promptly. Otherwise the king had to make good the value of that property from the State coffers. Even so late a writer as Viṣṇūśeṣvara emphasized this duty ⁶³. A king should neither be too lenient nor too severe but administer such punishment as may be deemed fit and proper. Kautilya says: "Whosoever imposes severe punishment becomes repulsive to the people while he who imposes mild punishment becomes contemptible. But whoever imposes punishment as deserved will be respected" ⁶⁴. In the *Mahābhārata* it is stated: "Although the most impregnable fortress of a king is the love of his subjects and it is therefore essential that he should be merciful if he is always forgiving the lowest of men may guide him as a *mahout* (driver) an elephant. Nor should he be ferocious. He should be like the vernal sun neither too hot nor too cold" ⁶⁵. This aphorism is very like what a mediaeval monk demanded of a king namely that he should not be too salty lest he be spat out nor too sweet lest he be swallowed. The *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* ⁶⁶ says that the Kṣatriyas take up arms in order that the oppressed may not weep or wail. This part of the subject may well be concluded with the following amusing observation made in the *Mahābhārata* ⁶⁷: "These six persons should be abandoned like a leaky boat on the sea viz a teacher who does not teach a priest who does not study the scriptures a king who does not afford protection a wife who utters disagreeable words, a cowherd who wishes to live in a village and a barber who desires to live in a forest".

MINISTERS

The ministers form an important and indispensable part of the State constitution. The *Mahābhārata* says that it is impossible for a king to look after all his duties and hence he should devolve his duties on his ministers ⁶⁸. Kautilya also points out: "Sovereignty is possible only with assistance. A single wheel can never move. Hence a king should employ ministers and hear their opinion" ⁶⁹. Kautilya draws a distinction between *amātyas* (officers) and *mantrins* (councillors). Manu says that the king may appoint seven or eight ministers who are learned in the sciences heroes

Mbh II 5 19 56 76 81
Comm on Yaj II 36
⁶¹ XII 56 39 40
⁶² XII 57 44 5
⁶³ I 7

⁶⁴ I 21
⁶⁵ I 4
114 36 Cf Kālidāsa *Sākuntala* I 10
XII 93 76

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL AND POLITICAL EVOLUTION IN INDIA

skilled in the use of arms descended from noble families and well tried. It is impossible for a man to discharge even an easy duty singly much less the duties relating to kingship. The king should therefore hold deliberations with his ministers ascertain each minister's opinion separately as also their conjoint opinion and then decide upon the course that may be the best. He should also appoint as many other officers as may be needed for the due transaction of business and see that they are honest wise firm etc.⁷⁰ Numerous other qualifications for ministers are enumerated in the *Mahābhārata* and the *Agni Purāna*.⁷¹ The *Mahābhārata* says that a king who is angry at the advice tendered by a well wisher merely because it is not to his taste and who does not follow the conduct of the wise deviates from the duty of a Ksatriya.⁷² Kautilya states that a cabinet of ministers may consist of as many members as the needs of a kingdom call for that they should start what is not begun complete what is commenced improve upon what has been accomplished and enforce strict obedience to orders. He further observes that one thousand sages form Indra's cabinet of ministers and hence he is called Sahasrākṣa although he has only two eyes.⁷³ Somadeva insists on ministers giving the correct advice to kings although for the time being such advice may be distasteful to them. His commentator quotes the author of a *Smṛti Bhāṣya* who is of opinion that the minister who represents what ought to be done as untruth and what ought not to be done as truth is the king's enemy though he puts on a minister's appearance. He asks: When a child refuses to drink milk is it not slapped on its cheek?⁷⁴ The king should not have one or even two ministers three should be the lowest number of members of his cabinet.⁷⁵ At the same time he should himself look into matters affecting his subjects.⁷⁶ Somadeva advises the king not to act against the advice of his ministers.⁷⁷ He should not create a situation in which the country would rise against him because of all the dangers to which he is liable the anger of the people and their representatives is the most formidable.⁷⁸ He should say the *Mahābhārata* employ each of his officers in such work as he is fit to perform and act in unison with them as the strings of a musical instrument do with its respective notes.⁷⁹

SOCIAL SYSTEM

The Indian social structure like the Indian political as well as municipal structure was based on the same principles of *salus populi*

⁷⁰ *Manu* VIII 54 7 60

⁷¹ *Kaut* I 15

⁷² *Ibid* p 182

⁷³ XII 120 24

238

Nīti p 123

Ibid p 124

XII 93 29 30

Ibid p 127

Ibid p 157

suprema lex esto (Let the welfare of the people be the supreme law)—of the supremacy of the ethical and spiritual life over the mere life of the senses and of harmonizing progress with order. *Dharma* includes not only the rights and duties of States and the inter relations of States and subjects but also the rights and duties of individuals *per se* and *inter se*. The social life also like the political life or the municipal life is not the supreme end or aim of life. Its essential basis is *svadharma* (one's own duty) and it is founded on duties rather than upon rights. The performance of individual and social duties by the subjects in a spirit of *niskāma karma* (work not motivated by the desire of personal gain) is as vital as political or civic administration and are complementary to each other. Nay it is itself an act of worship of God and is a means of self realization. Such a society properly inter related and organized would result in the attainment of *abhyudaya* (worldly progress and prosperity) and *nishreyasa* (spiritual beatitude). The sphere of individual domestic and social duties includes not only diverse ceremonial observances (*samskāras*) but also diverse observances of individual domestic and social ethics. As in the sphere of political and municipal administration so in the spheres of the performing individual domestic and social duty also the vigilant supervision of the king was required by precept by example by warning and by punishment. This is made clear by Kalidāsa in his *Raghuvamśa* where he says about King Dilīpa⁸⁰ His subjects like chariot wheels which go along the track determined by the charioteer did not swerve by even a line from the broad oft trodden path laid by Manu. Thus statecraft and society craft were dependent on each other and intensified each other.

SUMMARY

The above paragraphs give a rapid and necessarily imperfect survey of some of the political and social ideas and theories that were evolved and obtained currency at various periods of Indian history. They point to a continued tradition of a strong central government where the king was a real factor to be reckoned with and not a *roi faineant* (a do nothing king). His authority and powers were however exercised after constant consultation with a ministry and through heads of departments whose jurisdiction was extensive and who under wise kings were always encouraged to speak their minds. Kingship was mainly hereditary but sometimes elective. Political speculation was active and there was the theory of a compact with the king as also the idea that taxation was the return for good administration and protection. These were some of the conspicuous features

of ancient Indian polity The old dispensation was outwardly and in later theory and practice actually unfettered and autocratic Nevertheless by reason of the grant of complete local freedom and the practice of what in effect was a form of State socialism the king acted as being ever in the Great Task Master's eye—the task master being what was indifferently called *dharma* or the voice of the people which latter when it expressed itself was clear and unequivocal Popular gatherings if the *Artharva Veda* furnishes an accurate picture were full of life but at the same time animated by a lively desire to achieve concord⁸¹ The greatest contribution to posterity made by the Hindu tradition was the broad mindedness sympathy and the toleration of different view points exhibited almost alone in India amongst the civilized communities of the earlier days When Egypt persecuted and hounded out the Jews when racial and communal conflicts disfigured the history of Babylon and Nineveh when later on we see that in the States of Greece and Rome slaves formed the basis of those marvellous cultures and when in the mediaeval ages the baiting of Jews alternated with the baiting of Roman Catholics by Protestants and *vice versa* we had the spectacle in India of unflinching hospitality to foreign religions and foreign cultures It would be unfair and inaccurate not to mention that the Buddhists and Jains suffered some pains and penalties especially in the South of India But which country can show anything like the treatment of the Parsees who flying from oppression in their own country of Persia asked for and obtained succour of the wise west coast king to whose protection and active encouragement of their faith and tradition they ultimately owe their dominant position in the India of today? Which country can furnish a parallel to what happened in Travancore under the rule of extremely conservative and religious minded monarchs? From the days when Christian congregations were split into innumerable and warring factions owing to the Arian controversy at the Council of Nicaea and the question of images the Chera kings of Travancore gave a whole hearted welcome to the followers of the Eastern Church whose Patriarch of Antioch even now boasts of a larger following in Malabar than perhaps anywhere else in the world Which king outside India has surpassed the monarchs of Travancore and Malabar who conferred sacerdotal honours presents lands and dignities on the ministers bishops and archbishops of the Christian Church with the result that today the largest Christian population in India is found in the State of Travancore? Which ruler in the world's chequered history has enunciated in more moving and powerful language than is found in the Edicts of

Aśoka the Great the principles of tolerance and comprehension of differing creeds and ideals co existing with a spiritual urge towards the consolidation and regeneration of the Ruler's own faith?

Such have been the marks and the characteristics of Indian civilization not only at its peak points but also through the centuries. Can this instinct of universality this understanding of all points of view and the feeling that the realization of the Supreme must connote a sympathy with and a reconciliation of many forms of thought and belief be better expressed than in the words of Tāyumanavar in his *Hymn to Pārvatī*. The light and bliss of supreme knowledge that envelops and absorbs all forms of belief as the ocean absorbs all rivers?⁸² In his Rock Edict Twelve the Emperor Aśoka declares that he does reverence to men of all sects whether ascetics or householders and he adds that he who does reverence to his own sect while disparaging the sects of others wholly from attachment to his own with intent to enhance the splendour of his own sect in reality by such conduct inflicts the severest injury on his own sect and he ends the Edict with these ever memorable words. Concord is the supreme good (*samavāya eva sādhuḥ*)

This is the idea that underlies the United Nations Organization. It has uniformly characterized the philosophies that have been evolved in India these have always been based on *ahimsā* and *abhaya* and on the recognition of the conformity and unity of all existence.

Cf *Raghuvamśa* X 26

SOME BASIC IDEAS OF POLITICAL THINKING IN ANCIENT INDIA

THE DOCTRINE OF MATSYA NYAYA

AT the back of political thinking in India there was the process of dichotomy at work. Hindu thinkers tried to understand the State by differentiating it from the non State. Their method was logical as well as historical. That is in the first place they tried to investigate in what particulars the State analytically differed from the non State and in the second place they tried to picture to themselves how the pre State condition developed into that of the State i.e. how the State grew out of the non State. The chief solution of both these problems they found in the doctrine of *mātsya nyaya*—the maxim that the larger fish devour the smaller.

Now what is the non State according to the Hindus? The same question was asked by the philosophers of Europe thus: What is the state of nature? And the answer of the Hindu is identical with that of the European.

According to Hooker (1554-1600) in the *Ecclesiastical Polity* the state of nature is a state of strife. The *Leviathan* of Hobbes (1588-1670) declares similarly that the state of nature is a state of war and of no rights. In Spinoza's (1632-77) opinion also in the *Tractatus Theologico Politicus* the state of nature is a state of war and a state of the right of might. The non State is thus conceived to be a war of all against all—an anarchy of birds and beasts or a regime of vultures and harpies as John Stuart Mill would have remarked. This Hobbesian law of beasts and birds or the *Naturprozess* of Gumplowicz is the Indian maxim of the larger fishes devouring the smaller. Should there be no ruler to wield punishment on earth says the *Mahābhārata*. The strong would devour the weak like fishes in water. It is related that in the days of yore people were ruined through anarchy devouring one another like the stronger fishes preying upon the feeble. In the *Manu Samhitā*² likewise we are told that the strong would devour the weak like fishes if there be a virtual reversion to the non State (if for example the king is not vigilant enough in meting out punishments to those that should be punished). The *Rāmāyana*¹ also describes the non State regime as one in which people ever devour one another like fishes. And a few details about the non State condition are furnished in the *Matsya Purāna*. The child the old the sick the ascetic

¹ XII 67 16 17 68 11 13

VII 20

² II 67 31

the priest the woman and the widow would be preyed upon according to *matsya nyāya* ⁴ (should *danda* or punishment fail to be operative at the proper time)

The idea of the fish like struggle for existence was thus a generally accepted notion in the floating literature of ancient India. It found an important place in the exclusively political treatises also. Kautilya (c fourth century B C) observes in his *Arthaśāstra* ⁵ that *matsya nyāya* prevails while the State is unformed. In the absence of the wielder of punishment the powerful swallows the powerless. And Kāmandaka (c A D 500) who generally follows Kautilya writes in his *Nīṭisāra* ⁶ that in the absence of punishment (*danda*) the destructive or ruinous *matsya nyāya* operates because of mutual animosities of people and leads to the disruption of the world. Nor was the doctrine confined within the circle of academicians and theorists. We find it prevalent even among diplomatists and practical statesmen e.g. of the ninth century. In the declarations of Dharmapāla of the Pala dynasty of Bengal we are told that it was in order to escape from *mātsya nyāya* i.e. from being absorbed into a larger kingdom that the people made his father Gopāla accept the sovereignty.

This theory of the non State or the state of nature has had important bearings on other doctrines of Hindu political philosophy. *Mātsya nyāya* for instance is an expressive technical term in India's legal phraseology. In Raghunātha's (fifteenth century) *Laukika Nyāya Samgraha* we find *mātsya nyāya* coupled with *sundopasunda nyāya* ⁷. *Mātsya nyāya* arises as Raghunātha explains it under a double set of conditions. First there must be a conflict between a powerful and a comparatively powerless unit. And secondly the latter must have been crushed and obliterated by the former. It is frequently referred to says he in the Itihāsas and the Purānas and he quotes the following passage from Vasistha. By this time that *rasatala* region had become extremely sovereignless i.e. an anarchic non State characterized by the ignoble *mātsya nyāya*. Vasistha's verse is elucidated by Raghunātha with the gloss that strong fishes began to make an end of the weaker ones.

The non-State is then a state of anarchy one in which the tyranny of robbers has full play justice is non-existent and the people prey upon one another. It is the greatest evil ⁸. Enjoyment of wealth and wives is impossible under it. Only the robber is then happy. Even his happiness is precarious because a single man is deprived of his loot by two and the

CCXXV 9

I 4

II 40

This analogy is based on this Puranic allusion. The demons Sunda and Upasunda were brothers like Pyrochles and Cymochles in Spenser's *Faerie Queene*. They quarrelled over the nymph Tilottama and destroyed each other in the contest.

Mbh XII 67 13 12 15

two are robbed of theirs by several combined. A free man is made a slave and women are assaulted. The psychology of men in the state of nature is brought out in the *Sāntiparvan* of the *Mahabhārata*⁹ establishing the following causal nexus. Then foolishness or stupidity (*moha*) seized their minds. Their intelligence being thus eclipsed the sense of justice (*dharma*) was lost. Cupidity or temptation (*lobha*) overpowered them next. Thus arose the desire (*kāma*) for possessing things not yet possessed. And this led to their being subjugated by attachment (*rāga*) under which they began to ignore the distinction between what should and what should not be done. Consequently there appeared sexual licence, libertinism in speech and diet and indifference to morals. When such a revolution set in among men Brahman (the idea of Godhead) disappeared and with it law (*dharma*).

THE DOCTRINE OF DANDA (PUNISHMENT COERCION SANCTION)

The phenomena of government are founded on the data of human psychology and the general trend of thought in regard to them seems to have been the same all the world over. In ancient China Hsun Tze (305-235 B.C.) strongly condemned the doctrine of Mencius (373-289 B.C.) who had postulated the original goodness of human nature. For according to his counter theory man is by nature wicked; his goodness is the result of nurture. Su Hw states: 'The ancient rulers understood the native viciousness of man and therefore created morals, laws and institutions in order that human instincts and impulses might be disciplined and transformed.'

Let us now turn to the western world. Seneca, the Stoic philosopher of the first century A.D., looked upon the institutions of society as being the results of vice, of the corruption of human nature. They are conventional institutions made necessary by the actual defects of human nature. This doctrine of human depravity and the natural wickedness of man was entertained by the Church Fathers also. The idea that the institution of government was made necessary by sin and is a divinely appointed remedy for sin was continued and developed by St. Augustine and St. Gregory the Great. It was emphatically restated by the ecclesiastical and political writers of the period from the ninth to the thirteenth century and found a champion in Pope Hildebrand, Gregory VII (1073-1085).¹⁰

The verdict of Hindu political thinkers on the nature of man is identical. According to Kāmandaka¹¹ men are by nature subject to

⁹ 59-15-21
Cf. A. J. and R. W. Carlyle, *Mediaeval Political Theory in the West*, II, pp. 143-6
III pp. 97-105, 187
¹¹ Kam. II, 42

passions and are covetous of one another's wealth and wife. Rare says Manu¹² is man pure or sinless (by nature). The lower ones tend to usurp the places of the higher. People are prone to interfere with the rights of others and violate morals and manners. Not that there was no Saturnian golden age of pristine purity and bliss. For anticipating by over a millennium the dogmas of Father Lactantius and others, the *Mahābhārata* says. At first there was neither State nor ruler, neither punishment nor anybody to exercise it. The people used to protect one another through innate righteousness (*dharma*) and sense of justice.¹³ But as among the Stoics and Canonists, the fall of mankind is accounted for by the Hindus also on the basis of a postulate of sins, the loss of true religion, *moha*, stupidity and the like.

On the whole, therefore, it is not a roseate romantic conception of human tendencies and instincts that the *Mahābhārata* offers. We read in the *Sānti-parvan*. By nature men tend to overthrow one another. Left to itself, the whole world would be in a mess like a devil's workshop. As a rule, men are used to behaving like the creatures that cannot see one another when the sun and the moon do not shine, or like fishes in the shallow waters, or like birds in places safe from molestation where they can fly at one another's throats in a suicidal strife. Men, we are told, normally acknowledge only one right, and that is the right of might. Those who do not part with their property for the asking run the risk of being killed. The wives, children, and food of the weak are liable to be seized perforce by the strong. Murder, confinement, and persecution constitute the eternal lot of the propertied classes. The very phrase 'This is mine' (*mamedam*) may be lost from the vocabulary, and *mamatva* or ownership become extinct. The natural tendency of human relations again is toward sexual promiscuity. The formation of marriage alliances or of stable societies is not instinctively prompted in man as he is. And if possible, he would shirk even agriculture, commerce, and other means of livelihood, preferring a state of slothful ease and the primrose path of dalliance.¹⁴

Such is the natural man, or man as Nature made him, in the political anthropology of the *Mahābhārata*. Instead, therefore, of postulating with the writer of *Emile* that all things are good as their Author made them, but everything degenerates in the hands of man, or finding reason to complain of what man has made of man, the Hindu students of political theory set a high premium on the institutions and conventions that make up the artificial thing called civilization. In fact, it is to educate man

¹² *Manu* VII 21-4
Mbh XII 68 10 11 14 15 18 21

¹³ XII 59 14

out of the deplorable mire of primitive licence and beastly freedom that government has been instituted they say The State is designed to correct human vices or restrain them and open out the avenues to a fuller and higher life And all this is possible only because of *danda*

In all discussions of political theory therefore the doctrine of *danda* occupies the foremost place Some writers have even called their treatises on politics and statecraft *danda nīti* or the science of *danda* In the *Manu Samhitā*¹⁵ at any rate no other category is calculated to command greater attention For is not *danda* divine God's own son the protector of all beings and as powerful as law itself? Indeed it makes all created beings keep to their respective duties (*svadharma*)—the virtue of Plato or the functions of Bradley and other neo Hegelians like Bosanquet and the Italian philosopher Croce and makes them co operate with one another in procuring the enjoyment (*bhoga*) or happiness of all The *division du travail* (of work) of which Durkheim speaks is brought about by *danda* according to Manu Nay it is in reality the king the male (all other being female) the manager of affairs the ruler the surety for the four orders pursuing their own duties in life Further it governs protects and watches and last but not least it is identical with law To crown all the whole world is rectified by *danda* and even the gods and demi gods are subject to its authority

Danda as interpreted by Manu is obviously the very principle of omnipotence comparable to the *majestas* of Bodin or the *summa potestas* (highest power) of Grotius It is the abstraction of that power whose concrete embodiment is *aśvarya* (lordship) *svāmitva* (ownership) or sovereignty in a State which is explained by Figgis as the real divine right of kings It is absolute with jurisdiction over all uncontrolled by any entity To use a very recent category *danda* is the most signal feature of *Staats rason* (reasons of State) an expression of *Machtpolitik* (power politics) and marked by *autolimitazione* (self limitation) in the sense of Jellinek and Redano

In Hindu political thought *danda* is a two edged sword and cuts both ways On the one hand it is a terror to the people and is corrective of social abuses It is a moralizer purifier and civilizing agent As the *Nītisāra*¹⁶ observes it is by the administration of *danda* that the State can be saved from a reversion to *mātsya nyāya* and utter annihilation and it is by *danda* the people are set right It is through the fear of punishment according to the *Śukra Nītisāra*¹⁷ that people become virtuous and refrain from committing aggression or indulging in untruths *Danda* is efficacious moreover in causing the cruel to become mild and the wicked

¹ VII 14 23

Kam II 40 2

" IV 1

to give up wickedness. It can subdue even beasts and of course it frightens the thieves and terrifies the enemies into submission as tributaries demoralizing all those who are wayward. Nay it is good also for preceptors and can bring them to their senses should they happen to be addicted to an extra dose of vanity or unmindful of their own vocations. Finally it is the foundation of civic life being the great stay of all virtues and all the methods and means of statecraft would be fruitless without a judicious exercise of *danda*. Its use as a beneficent agency in social life is therefore unequivocally recommended by Śukra.

But on the other hand *danda* is also a most potent instrument of danger to the ruler himself to the powers that be. The maladministration of *danda* says Kāmandaka leads to the fall of the ruler. Manu¹⁸ does not hesitate to declare that *danda* would smite the king who deviates from his duty from his station in life. It would smite his relatives too together with his castles territories and possessions. The common weal depends therefore on the proper exercise of the *summa potestas* the *aśvarya*, the *Staatsrason*. Manu would not allow any ill disciplined man to be the administrator of *danda*. The greatest amount of wisdom accruing from the help of councillors and others is held to be the essential pre condition for the handling of this instrument. And here is available the logical check on the eventual absolutism of the *danda dhara* (punisher) in the Hindu theory of sovereignty.

In the two edged sword of the *danda* then we encounter on the one side *Staatsrason* (interests of the State) and on the other *Sittlichkeit* (i.e. morality virtue *dharma*, etc). The conception of this eternal polarity in societal existence is one of the profoundest contributions of the political philosophy of the Hindus to human thought.

THE DOCTRINE OF MAMATVA (PROPERTY)

According to the *Śāntiparvan* of the *Mahābhārata*¹⁹ property (ownership) does not exist in the non State (*mātsya nyāya*) i.e. in the condition of men left to the pursuit of their own sweet will. In the non State of course men can possess or enjoy, but they do not own. Property however is not mere *bhoga* i.e. enjoying or possessing its essence consists in *mamatva* or *svatva* i.e. ownership. It is one's ownness that underlies the magic of property. To be able to say *mamedam* (this is mine) about something constitutes the very soul of owning or appropriation. This proprietary consciousness is created in men for the first time by the state through its sanction *danda*. For it enjoins that vehicles apparel ornament and jewels must be enjoyed by those to whom they belong and that

¹⁸ VII 28 30

XII 68 13 29

one's wife children and food must not be encroached upon by others. And it is only through *bhaya* or fear of the State that the people observe these injunctions and the sanctity of property is kept entire. A distinction is here brought out between mere *bhoga* and *mamatva* as the basis of the difference between the non-State and the State. In Europe the identical discrimination has been made by Rousseau in his *Social Contract*. In the state of nature, says he, there is but possession which is only the effect of the force or right of the first occupant, whereas ownership which is founded only upon a positive title is an incident of civil society.

Two miraculous changes are effected in social life once private property is thus ushered into existence. First, people may sleep at night without anxiety with doors open. And secondly, women decked with ornaments may walk without fear though unattended by men.²⁰ Property is in Hindu philosophy thus considered to be not the cause but the effect of the State. The position is entirely opposite to that of the Marxian economic interpretation of history.

This sense of security as regards property is therefore the first great achievement in the humanization of Caliban. This is the first item in the civilizing of man by *danda* out of the *mātsya nyāya* or law of beasts or birds. One may therefore discover in *danda* the very foundation of human liberty and progress. And this is the standpoint of Hindu political philosophy as well as of modern idealism in European philosophy.²¹

THE DOCTRINE OF DHARMA (LAW JUSTICE AND DUTY)

Property is the first acquisition of man through the State. His second acquisition is *dharma*. The doctrine of *dharma* is like the doctrine of *mamatva*, an essential factor in the theory of the State and both have their foundations in the doctrine of *danda*.

Dharma is a very elastic term. Like *jus*, *Recht*, *droit*, *diritto* it has more than one meaning. It really admits of almost all the ambiguities associated with the term law as analysed by Holland in his *Jurisprudence*. For purposes of political theory we may confine ourselves to the import of *dharma* as law, justice and duty as somewhat new values of life. The doctrine of *dharma* then enunciates three propositions: first, that the State differs from the non-State as a law-giving institution; secondly, that the State differs from the non-State as a justice-dispensing institution; and thirdly, that the State differs from the non-State as a duty-enforcing institution.

In *mātsya nyāya* there is no law, no justice, no duty. The State is the originator of law, justice and duty.

Dharma (law) is the creation of the State and the State as such has the sanction of *danda*. Theoretically therefore every *dharma* if it is nothing but *dharma* is *ipso facto* what should be called positive in the Austinian sense. *Dharma* is obeyed as *dharma* only because of the coercive might of the State.

In ancient European theory law is the embodiment of eternal justice. Thus according to Demosthenes (fourth century B.C.) laws are the gifts of the gods and the discovery of the sages. In Aristotle's conception law is the rule of God and reason. Stoics like Cicero and Seneca believed that law lay in the hearts of all men. The doctrine of natural law of law as the king of all things was maintained by the jurists such as Gaius and others whose views are codified in the *Digest* of Justinian. It was the theory also of Celsus and other Church Fathers. In mediaeval European (Teutonic) theory²² so far as there was any theory independent of the tradition of Roman jurisprudence law was not something made or created at all but something which existed as a part of the national or local or tribal life. The modern theory of law in Europe may be said to have originated in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries with Bodin and Hobbes in their analysis of sovereignty. It has since become classical however as the handiwork of Austin the father of analytical jurisprudence. According to this view law is the command of the sovereign enforced by a sanction. Thus there are two theories of law—first law as uncreated or original existing either as a part of the universal human conscience taught by natural reason or as a custom among the people and secondly law as created by the fiat of a law maker as something which is to be obeyed not because it is just good or eternal but because it has been enacted by the State. Both these conceptions are to be found among the speculations of Hindu political philosophers.

The ethical conception of law as the dictate of conscience i.e. as *jus naturale* has a long tradition in Hindu thought. In the *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad*²³ law is identical with truth and as powerful as the king. It is of course the creation of God. Brahman (God) we are told was not strong enough so he created still further the most excellent *dharma*. There is nothing higher than the law. Thenceforth even a weak man rules a stronger with the help of the law as with the help of a king. Thus the law is what is called the truth. And if a man declares what is truth they say he declares the law and if he declares the law they say he declares

²² Carlyle *op cit* I p. 235 G. L. Coombe *Folklore as an Historical Science* (London 1908) pp. 84, 100
I 4 14

what is true Thus both are the same According to Āpastamba ⁴ law is what is unanimously approved in all countries by men of Aryan society who have been properly obedient to their teachers and who are aged of subdued senses and neither given to avarice nor hypocrites In the *Manu Samhitā* ²⁵ again law is whatever is practised and cherished at heart by the virtuous and the learned who are devoid of prejudices and passions Vasistha ²⁶ and Baudhāyana ²⁷ also hold the view that law is the practice of the *śistas* i.e. those whose hearts are free from desire The *śistas* or *rsis* i.e. passionless and unavaricious persons of India are obviously analogous to the sages of Demosthenes In the *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* ²⁸ law is defined as *sadācāra* i.e. the practice or conduct of good men what seems pleasant or good to one's self and the desire that springs from mature consideration In the *Vyavahāra Darpaṇa* law is described as something eternal and self-existent the king of kings far more powerful and right than they In these two definitions we have once more the Oriental counterpart of Greek Stoic Roman and Patristic conceptions of law as morality

In Hindu analysis *dharma* came to be defined as positive law also The conception of law as *rājñam ājñā* in Kautilya's language i.e. as command enforced by sanction finds clear expression in the writings of Nārada Śukra and Jaimini In the *Nārada Smṛti* ²⁹ we are informed that the performance of duty having fallen into disuse positive law (*vyavahara*) has been introduced and that the king as superintending the law is known as *danda dhara* or wielder of *danda* the power to punish The sanction is definitely mentioned in the *Śukra Nītisāra* ³⁰ according to which the sovereign should categorically state in his command that he would surely destroy by severe punishment those offenders who after having heard his decrees would act contrary to them In order that the law may be seriously recognized as command Śukra stipulates that the greatest amount of publicity should be given to it For instance it is the duty of the sovereign to have the laws publicly announced by sounding the State drum ³¹ or have them inscribed in esplanades as written notices The documents embodying these commands (*śāsana patra*) are to bear the king's signature date etc ³² Laws thus being promulgations of the State we read further in the *Śukra Nītisāra* ³³ that the king is the maker of the age the cause of time and of good and evil practices and that since the ruler is the dictator of virtues and vices people make it a point to practise that by which he is satisfied Besides as the law is upheld by sanction we can easily understand why Śukra advises the sovereign to make use of his terrible weapon ³⁴

Ap Dh S I 7 20 8
Baudh Dh S I 1 1 4 6
Introd 1 2
II

II 1
I
IV

Vas Dh S I 5 6
I 7
Śukra I
4 I

in order to maintain the people each in his proper sphere. The same idea of positive law is expressed by Jaimini in the very definition of *dharma*. The *Mīmāṃsā Sūtra* declares *codanālakṣano rtho dharmah* (*Dharma* is that desired object *artha* which is characterized by command *codanā*). Jaimini has also examined the reason why that which is determined by a command should be obligatory. He analyses the reason as lying in the fact that the relation between the word of command and the purpose to which it is directed is eternally efficacious.

B DHARMA AS JUSTICE

We have now to understand the doctrine of *dharma* as justice in its bearing on the theory of the State. The dignity of justice has been declared by Manu³⁵ in the following terms. If justice is violated it destroys the State; if preserved it maintains the State. Therefore justice should not be destroyed. Such sentiments in the *Manu Samhitā* could be bodily incorporated in the writings of a Jonas or an Alcuin of the ninth century and other mediaeval European theorists³⁶ with whom the maintenance of justice is the *sine qua non* of the State and kingship.

But what is justice? It is a very practical or pragmatic definition that the Hindu theorists offer. According to Manu³⁷ justice consists in the application of law to the cases arising between the members of the State. And that law is to be known from the customs and from the *Smṛtis* (*Institutes*) e.g. those of Gautama, Yajñavalkya and others. Justice as interpreted by Śukra³⁸ consists of two elements. First it consists in a discrimination of the good from the bad (of course according to the laws). Secondly it has a utilitarian basis inasmuch as it is calculated to minister to the virtues of the rulers and the ruled and promote common weal. The doctrine of *dharma* as justice is thus organically connected with the theory of the State as contrasted with the non-State.

C DHARMA AS DUTY

Mātsya nyāya is a condition in which duties are nil. According to the *Śānti-parvan* men left to themselves tend even to persecute their mothers, fathers, the aged, the teachers, the guests and the preceptors³⁹. It is the fear of *danda* that brings about an order among men, each man minding his own duty (*svadharma*)⁴⁰. This theory of *svadharma* (one's own duty) or My station and its duties, as Bradley would put it, has a political significance as well. It has the sanction of the State behind it for says

VIII 15

VIII 3

Mbh XII 68 8 *Manu* VII 21 22 24 *Śukra* I

Carlyle *op cit* III p 109

IV

68 18

Manu⁴¹ neither a father nor a teacher nor a friend nor a mother nor a wife nor a son nor a domestic priest should be left unpunished if they do not keep within their duties. According to Śukra⁴² also the people should be kept each in his proper sphere by a terrible use of the weapon of sovereignty.

Altogether then the doctrine of *dharma* in its entirety imparts to the State the character of an institution for the advancement of *la civilite Kultur* or culture. The State elevates man out of the law of beasts by instituting legislation, adjudication and the enforcement of duties. The functions of the State are thus in keeping with the ideas involved in the doctrine of *danda*. The State as a pedagogic or purgatorial or moral training institution is not merely a *manutva* insuring instrument i.e. an ownership securing agency but a *dharma* promoting *samūha* (public association) i.e. *lo stato etico* of Redano, the *Rechtsstaat* of Jellinek i.e. the *Kulturstaat* of Fichte or Hegel or the virtue State of Plato. And herein the Hindu theory meets Aristotle's conception of the State as the means to the furtherance of the highest good of man.

THE DOCTRINE OF VARNĀŚRAMA (CLASSES AND STAGES)

In the *mātsya nyāya* condition there is the *prajā* or the people but no State because there is no *danda* to enforce *dharma*. If the *prajā* is not to remain *ad infinitum* an amorphous mass of *selbstständig* atoms it must follow *svadharma* i.e. the members of the society must perform their respective duties which as we have seen are really laws turned inside out. The observance of these duties would necessarily imply the organization of the people into a unified State a *samūha* or a *polis*.

Now organizationally speaking *prakṛti* or the members of a society naturally fall into economic and professional groups or classes the *groupements professionnels* the so called castes of India. These groups of the people or classes of members of the State are known as *varnas* classes lit. colours probably designated after some typical (or hypothetical?) ethnic complexion. Further from the standpoint of the individual we have to notice that people pass through well marked metabolistic or rather physiological stages e.g. infancy, adolescence etc. Similarly the stages of life in every person are called the *āśramas*. The total population with all the interests and problems of all its different groups and periods of life is then comprehended by the two categories *varnas* (classes) and *āśramas* (stages)⁴³. If therefore the people are to constitute a State every member of each of the *varnas* (no matter what their number and their occupations) must have to observe the *Ordnung* system or discipline i.e. perform the

duties (*svadharma*) of his station at each of the four *āśramas* or periods of life. Thus the soldier at the front must do or die, the young man while at school must practise continence, the king must keep to the coronation oath and so forth. This is the doctrine of *varnāśrama*, the counterpart of the Platonic correlation of virtue and status.

As soon as the people are organized into a State, be it in any part of the world or in any epoch of history, *varnāśrama* spontaneously emerges into being. It is inconceivable in this theory that there should be a State and yet no *varnāśrama*. To say that the State has been born and yet the various orders or classes of the people do not follow *dharma* would indeed be a contradiction in terms, a logical absurdity. *Svadharma* (*Recht*) leads inevitably to *varnāśrama* (*Ordnung*). The two are relative terms. In Koellreutter's terminology⁴⁴ *der Rechtsstaat* is at the same time *der Ordnungsstaat*. They indicate coexistent phenomena in the social world. In other words, the doctrine of *varnāśrama* is a corollary to that of *dharma* as duty; *varnāśrama* is but *svadharma* writ large.

The non-existence of *varnāśrama* is possible only under conditions of the non-performance of duty. Suppose the *varnas* do not follow *dharma*: e.g. the soldier flies from the enemy in a cowardly manner, the husband does not maintain the wife, the judge encourages the fabrication of false evidence, the king violates the *samaya* or compact with his subjects and so forth. Then, according to Śukra⁴⁵, the offenders are to be rectified by the *danda* of the State. This is the supreme moment for the exercise of *aīśvarya* (sovereignty) and *Staatsrason* (interests or reasons of the State). Why, even the king is not immune from penalty. Rather, as Manu⁴⁶ declares, the settled rule where a common man would be fined one *kārsāpana*, the king shall be fined one thousand. Really, a State is no State unless it can enforce as duty the *dharma* that it has enacted as law. This should be postulated in the irreducible minimum of the State's functions. One can therefore easily understand with Kāmandaka⁴⁷ why, if *dharma* is violated by the members of the State, there is bound to be a *pralaya* or dissolution of the world. Verily, with the extinction of *varnāśrama*, there is a reversion to *mātsya nyaya*. The violation of *svadharma* and of *varnāśrama* brings back the state of nature, and the State automatically ceases to exist.

Varnāśrama, though obviously an ethnico-economic and a socio-pedagogic term, is thus fundamentally a political concept. It is an indispensable category in an organic theory of the State. It is identical with *rāstra* from the demographic (*prajā* or population) aspect. The doctrine of *varnāśrama* is therefore the doctrine of *rāstra* minus the doctrine of

⁴⁴ *Deutsches Verfassungsrecht* (Berlin 1935) pp. 115

⁴⁵ IV

VIII 336

II 34

ownership and further the doctrine of *dharma* (as law and duty) applied to the total *prakṛti* (or members of the State) coincides with the doctrine of classes and stages. The doctrine of *varnāśrama* then is clearly an integral part in a consistent philosophy of politics.

THE DOCTRINE OF MANDALA (GEOPOLITICAL SI HERE)

The conception of external *aśvarya* (sovereignty) was well established in the Hindu philosophy of the State. The Hindu thinkers not only analysed sovereignty with regard to the constituent elements in a single State they realized also that sovereignty is not complete unless it is external as well as internal that is unless the State can exercise its internal authority unobstructed by and independently of other States. The doctrine of independence (*svārājya aparādhīnatva*) implied in this conception of external sovereignty was obviously the foundation of the theory of the State in relation to other States. And it gave rise to certain categories of *droit des gens* or *jus gentium* i.e. right of the people which normally influenced Hindu political thinking from at least the fourth century B.C. These concepts can more or less be grouped under the doctrine of *mandala* i.e. sphere or circle (of influence interests ambitions enterprise and the like). Using the expression of Karl Haushofer one may describe this *mandala* as a complex of geopolitical relations⁴⁸ i.e. all those situations relating to boundaries and the contacts with foreign races which every statesman must carefully attend to.

This doctrine of *mandala* underlying as it does the Hindu idea of the balance of power pervades the entire speculation on the subject of international relations. It is hinted at by Sukra⁴⁹ and referred to by Manu⁵⁰. Kāmandaka has devoted Chapter VIII entirely to the topic. It has been exhaustively treated by Kautilya⁵¹. We are not concerned here with the doctrine as such we shall only study it in its bearing on the theory of sovereignty.

First then in regard to the doctrine of *vijigīṣu* (the aspirant to conquest). According to Kautilya it is the ambition of each State to acquire strength and happiness for the people. The *elan vital* (fundamental urge) of a ruler in Kāmandaka's conception also lies in the aspiration to conquer⁵². The king says he should establish in himself the *nābhī* (or centre of gravity) of a system. He should become the lord of a *mandala*. It is part of his duty to try to have a full sphere around him just as the

⁴⁸ K. Haushofer *Geopolitik der Pan Indien* (Berlin 1931) K. Haushofer (Ed.) *Raum überwindende Mächte* (Leipzig 1934) Henning *Geopolitik* (Leipzig 1931) B. K. Sarkar Haushofer's Cult of Geopolitik (*Calcutta Review* April 1934)

⁴⁹ IV
⁵⁰ VI 2

VII 154 156 207
Kām VIII 1 3 6

moon is encircled by a complete orb The full sphere is of course the circle of States related to the aspirant to conquest as allies enemies and neutrals Perpetual preparedness must therefore be the first postulate of *Realpolitik* in Hindu theory One should be ever ready with *danda* (the mailed fist) declares Manu⁵³ quite seriously should always have one's might in evidence and policies well guarded as also be ever on the look out for the enemy's holes Further one should bring to subjection all those elements that are obstacles to the career of triumph

The *rationale* of this preparedness is very simple indeed It is as elemental as human blood itself It goes without question in the *Śukra Nītisāra*⁵⁴ that all rulers are unfriendly nay they are secret enemies to those who are rising vigorous virtuous and powerful Further in Hindu political philosophy the essence of foreign politics lies only in the conflicting relations or rivalries of the peoples What wonder in this? asks Śukra and his solution is given in another query which carries its own answer viz Are not the rulers covetous of territory? Such being the data of international psychology Kamandaka⁵⁵ frankly suggests that in order to do away with one's enemies their kith and kin should be employed whenever possible For is not poison counteracted by poison diamond cut by diamond and the elephant subdued by the elephant? Fishes again swallow fishes similarly relatives The *Rāmāyana* is cited in the *Kamandakīya Nītisāra* for a corresponding precedent in diplomatic tactics The fact is well known that in order to overthrow Ravana his brother Bibhīṣana was exploited by Rāma

The theorists who propounded the cult of *viyigīsu* would have been in good company with the philosophers of ancient Greece In Aristotle's postulate of natural slaves natural masters natural wars and so forth the writers of *Nītiśāstras* could easily find a place for the natural aspirations natural allies and natural enemies of their doctrine of *mandala* The *Politica* assumes that the barbarians or non-Greeks were intended by nature to be slaves⁵⁶ and ruled by the Greeks And since slaves are property like other things warfare with the object of making slaves and thus acquiring wealth is a legitimate and naturally just occupation⁵⁷ The opinions adumbrated in the *Nītiśāstras* are in any case neither exclusively Oriental nor exclusively mediaeval or primitive Nor need they be dubbed exclusively Machiavellian For has not the *Prince* furnished the fundamental logic of statesmen from the Athenian Pericles and Macedonian Philip down to the Metternichs Bismarcks and Cavour of our own times? It is on such considerations that like Machiavellism

the doctrine of *vijigīśu* maintains its legitimate place in a theory of international relations. It provides an unvarnished statement of the only hypothesis namely that of *Staatsrason* which can satisfactorily explain the innate militarism that the human world inherits from beasts and birds.

Let us now examine the other aspects of the doctrine of *mandala*. The proper study of the *vijigīśu* is according to the *Manu Samhitā* ⁸ his own and his enemy's spheres—the politics of his boundaries. And how are these spheres located in his imagination? Śukra ⁹ gives a brief summary of the investigations of the aspirant to conquest as to the balance of forces or conjuncture of circumstances with a view to the next war. We are told that the enemies diminish in importance according as they are remote from the centre of the sphere. First to be dreaded by the *vijigīśu* are those who are situated around or very near to his own State then those who live farther away and so on. With the remoteness of location enmity hatred or rivalry naturally declines. Whether a State is to be treated as inimical indifferent or friendly depends *per se* on its propinquity or distance. The *Śukra Nītisāra* ¹⁰ gives another order in which the States may be distributed. According to this computation first are situated the enemies then come the friends next the neutrals and the most remote on all sides are the enemies again.

These are the elementary principles of international dealings of which elaborate accounts are given in the writings of Kautilya and Kamandaka. The theory holds that there is a hypothetical tug of war always being fought between the *vijigīśu* and his *ari* (the enemy). These two are the combatants or belligerents. Along with these are to be counted another two States in order to furnish a logical completeness to the hypothesis. The quartet consists of the following members ¹¹ (1) The *vijigīśu* the aspirant to conquest e.g. an Alexander bent on conquering (2) The *ari* (the enemy) the one who is situated anywhere immediately on the circumference of the aspirant's territory (3) The *madhyama* (the mediatory middling or medium power State) the one located close to the aspirant and his enemy and capable of helping both the belligerents whether united or disunited or of resisting either of them individually (4) The *udasīna* (the towering or the highest State) the one (situated beyond the first three) very powerful and capable of helping the aspirant the enemy and the *madhyama* together or individually or resisting any of them individually. These four states then constitute the smallest unit or international grouping—the geopolitical complex so to say. From the standpoint of the *vijigīśu* all other States are either his own allies or the

⁸ VII 154

IV

IV

⁹ *Manu* VII 156 *Kam* VIII 20 *Kaut* VI 2

allies of his enemy. Such States are held to be eight in number according to the hypothesis. How now is the aspirant to select his own allies from the crowd? He need only study the geographical position of these States with reference to the belligerents i.e. to himself and to his enemy.

The *madhyama* (the middling) and the *udasina* (the highest) may be neglected by the aspirant to conquest for the time being in his calculation of the possible array of forces directly allied or inimical to his career of conquest. The two belligerents with the eight others (divided in equal proportion as their allies *in potentia*) are then located in the following order of *entente cordiale* by Kamandaka⁶² and Kautilya⁶³. The aspirant occupies of course the hypothetical centre. Next to his front is the enemy. Now we have to calculate frontwards and rearwards. Next to the enemy is situated (1) the aspirant's ally next to that is (2) the enemy's ally next (3) the ally of the aspirant's ally and last (4) the ally of the enemy's ally. Rearwards from the aspirant. First is situated (1) the rearward enemy next is (2) the rearward ally then comes (3) the ally of the rearward enemy and last (4) the ally of the rearward ally. In this scheme we have the geometry or formal morphology of *soziale Beziehungen* (social stringing) from the international standpoint.

It is to be observed that the doctrine of *mandala* as developed by the Hindu philosophers is geopolitically too naive and elementary because the only factor that has been considered is the geographical propinquity or distance. They have considered neither the race (or blood) question nor the religious, linguistic or other cultural forces nor of course the economic factors. And yet this almost puerile looking one-sided geometry of diplomatic planning possesses a profound importance in political speculations as well as applied politics.

Be that as it may we have to observe that the group of ten States or a *decennium* constitutes one complete *mandala*. The *vijigīṣu* is the centre of gravity of this sphere. Now each State can have the same legitimate aspiration that is each can be fired by the same ambition to form and figure out a sphere of its own. The inevitable result is a conflict of interests a pandemonium of the aspirants to conquest united in discord. The problem of statesmen in each State is to find out the methods of neutralizing the policies of others by exploiting the enemies of its rivals in its own interests. The doctrine of *mandala* thus makes of *Nītiśāstra* or political science essentially a science of enmity, hatred, espionage and intrigue as understood by Schmidt and Spengler and an art of the thousand and one methods of preparedness for the next war.

The Hindu theory of sovereignty did not stop however at the doctrine of a universal *mātsya nyāya* i.e. of a world in which each State was at war with all. It generated also the concept of universal peace through the establishment of a *Weltherrschaft* (world monarchy) as in the French chauvinist Pierre Dubois's *De Recuperazione Terre Sancte* (1307) or in the Italian mystic patriot Dante's *De Monarchia*⁶⁴. The doctrine of *mandala* as a centrifugal force was counteracted by the centripetal tendencies of the doctrine of *sārvabhauma* (the ruler over the whole earth). In this theory of the world State we are presented with the concept of what may be called *Pax Sarvabhaumica*. Monarchy at its highest we read in the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa*⁶⁵ should have an empire extending right up to the natural boundaries; it should be territorially all embracing up to the very ends, uninterrupted and should constitute and establish one State and administration up to the seas. In their geopolitical planning the ancient theorists were evidently thinking of the Indian continent as identical with the entire world.

Hindu political thought produced several other categories to express the same idea of the world State or universal sovereignty. We have first the doctrine of *cakravartin*. It indicates that the *cakra* or wheel of the State chariot rolls everywhere without obstruction. The wheel is the symbol of sovereignty. It is this conception of a political dominion of a secular overlordship that is employed metaphorically with a spiritual significance in the conception of the Lord Buddha as *cakravartin*. A king I am, Sela says the Buddha using the language of his contemporary imperialists: the king supreme of righteousness. The royal chariot wheel in righteousness do I set rolling—that wheel which no one can turn back.⁶⁶

Secondly we have the doctrine of *sārvabhauma* expressed in the more popular and conventional conception of *saṃrāj*. The *Mahābhārata* for instance uses this category in order to convey the idea of a world dominion. There are *rājās* (kings) in every home (State) doing what they like; we read in the *Sabhāparvan* but they have not attained to the rank of *saṃrāj* for that title is hard to win.⁶⁷ And this rank is at last won by Yudhisthira who would thus be the Veltro of Dante's *Divine Comedy* so to say.

Another category in which the doctrine of *sarvabhauma* is manifest is that of *cāturanta* of which Kautilya⁶⁸ availed himself in order to establish his ideal of imperial nationalism. The *caturanta* State is that whose authority extends up to the remotest *antas* (limits) of the *catur* (four)

I 4 8 10
Sela sutta in *Sutta nipāṭa* III 7 7
Mbh II 15 2

VIII 4 1
I 5 7

quarters The ruler of such a State enjoys the whole earth with none to challenge his might In the *Arthasāstra* he is known also as *cakravartin* for the territory of such a *caturanta* is called *cakravartī ksetra* (dominion of a *cakravartin*)

The *sārvabhauma cakravartin samrāj* or *cāturanta* of Hindu political theory is identical with the *dominus omnium* or lord of *universitas quodum* in Bartolus's terminology⁶⁹ the *hwangti* of the Chinese⁷⁰ He is the monarch of all he surveys He rules a State whose limits extend from sea to sea (*āsamudraksīta*) and his chariots have free passage up to the skies (*ānāka ratha vartman*) as Kālidāsa the Virgil of India puts it in his *Raghuvamśa* The pretensions of the doctrine of *sārvabhauma* thus bear close analogy with the universal authority claimed by Pope Hildebrand (c 1075) for the Papacy or with that rival conception of his opponents the Ghibelline imperialism of the German Hohenstaufens Herein is to be perceived the Hindu counterpart of the doctrine albeit from the monarchical angle of a single State for the entire humanity the futurist version of which has embodied itself from time to time in diverse forms—in the visions of permanent peace or in the pious wishes for a parliament of man or for the League of Nations or for its antithesis the communist Third International of the proletarian world

The doctrine of *sārvabhauma* does not stand alone in Hindu political philosophy It is backed by several other concepts which may be regarded as its logical feeders First is the concept of the gradation of rulers in the scale of *aiśvarya* (sovereignty)⁷¹ This concept of a scale of nationalities or a rank of States as first class powers or great powers and small nations or the like according to income and title is essentially linked in Hindu theory to the concept of political *yajñas* sacrifices and rituals which are fully described in the Brāhmanas The *Gopatha Brāhmana*⁷² says that Prajāpati became *rajan* by the *rājasūya* sacrifice *samraj* by the *vajapeya* *svarāj* by the *asvamedha* *virāj* by the *purusamedha* and so forth According to the *Satapatha Brāhmana*⁷³ again the office of the king is lower and that of the emperor is higher and therefore one becomes a king by performing the *rājasūya* and an emperor through the *vajapeya* But the *rajasūya* is known to be the highest sacrifice in the *Taittiriya Brāhmana*⁷⁴ which lays down that it can be performed only by universal monarchs exercising sovereignty over a large number of princes as the lords of an imperial federation The *Āitareya Brāhmana*⁷⁵ also says that by virtue of the *rajasūya* Janamejaya

C. N. S. Woolf *Bartolus of Sassoferrato* (Cambridge 1913) pp. 22, 196
 R. S. Hardy *Manual of Buddhism* (London 1880) p. 126
 Cf. *R V* IV 21 1 *Sat Br* XI 3 2 1 6 *Āit Br* VIII 4 1 *Sukra I*
Bib Ind Ed Part I pp. 77, 8 *IV* 1 1 13
IV 4 1 *VIII* 21 3

śaryāti and ten other rulers subdued the earth and became paramount sovereigns. In the *Āpastamba Śrauta Sūtra*⁷⁶ however *asvamedha* the sacrifice in which a horse is the victim offered possesses the greatest dignity for it can be performed only by a *sārvabhauma* (the ruler of the whole earth)

It is obvious that authorities differ as to the relative importance of the political sacrifices but all are united in the conception that the rituals have obviously a State value and that it is the greatest power or the largest nationality alone that is entitled to the highest sacrifice (be it the *rājasūya* or the *asvamedha* or any other). The concept of *yajña* like that of the scale of the States is therefore an important element in the theory of *Weltherrschaft* world monarchy or federated universe embodied in the doctrine of *sārvabhauma*.

Last but not least in importance as a foundation for the doctrine of *sārvabhauma* is the concept of *digvijaya* or conquest of the quarters of which the *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa*⁷⁷ speaks. A natural concomitant of it is the idea that the *sārvabhauma* has all the other rulers related to him not as to the *vijigishu* of a *mandala* i.e. not as to the ambitious storm centre of an international complex of geopolitical relations but bound as to a *rāja rāju* or king of kings to whom allegiance is due as overlord. With the rise of the *sārvabhauma* the *mandala* necessarily disappears. The old order of the enemy and the other States has vanished the new order of the world State has arisen. An epoch of universal peace has replaced the age of warring nationalities conflicting *ententes* armed neutralities militant attitudes and geopolitically planned economies. The doctrine of *sārvabhauma* as the concept of federal nationalism imperial federation or the universe State is thus the keystone in the arch of the Hindu theory of sovereignty. The message of *Pax Sarvabhaumica* in other words the doctrine of world unity and international concord is the final contribution of the *Nīti śāstras* to the understanding of the State and of Hindu philosophy to the political science of mankind.

LAISSEZ FAIRE AND UNIFICATION

It should not be surmised that strong centripetal forces were wanting in India. From Sanskrit and Pali sources we learn that the conception of *federation de l'empire* was the permanent source of inspiration to all aspirants (*vijigishu*) to the position of the *cakravartin* or the *sārvabhauma* i.e. the *dominus omnium* of Bartolus. And more than one Indian Napoleon succeeded in giving a unified administration financial as well as judicial to extensive provinces in Hindustan. Organization in India under the

sārvabhauma or *cakravartin* emperors was no less thorough than in China under the Manchus. The census department of the Maurya empire as described by Megasthenes and Kautilya was a permanent institution. It numbered the whole population as also the entire live stock both rural and urban. Causes of immigration and emigration were found out. The managers of charitable institutions were required to send information to the census officers. Merchants, artisans, physicians, etc. had also to make reports to the officers in charge of the capital regarding people violating the laws of commerce, sanitation, etc. The centralization manifest in the collection of vital statistics marked every department of governmental machinery. The central government bestowed attention upon the question of irrigation even in the most remote provinces. For instance, Girnar is situated close to the Arabian Sea at a distance of at least 1000 miles from the Maurya capital (Pataliputra on the Gangā in eastern India, the site of modern Patna) but the needs of the local farmers did not escape the imperial notice. It is an open question if imperialism was ever more effective in any period of European history. Candragupta's and Asoka's highest court of judicature might have served to be the model for the *Parlement* of Paris first organized in the thirteenth century by Louis IX. The judicial hierarchy of the traditional law books was equally well centralized. A case tried in the village assembly goes on appeal to the city court as we read in the *Nārada Smṛti*⁷⁸ and the one tried in the city court goes on appeal to the king.

But communication, conveyance, transmission of messages, transfer of officers, etc. howsoever efficiently managed, could not by any means cope with the area and the population except for short periods under masterful organizers. The absolute limit of imperialism was offered by the extent of territory and similar natural hindrances. Even the best conceived organs of unification could not under the circumstances permanently withstand the tendencies to centrifugal disruption. No political organism of a tolerably large size could therefore possibly endure either in the East or in the West. It is not a special vice of the Orient as has been alleged that the empires were ephemeral and that the kingdoms were in a state of nature. Rather on the basis of comparative history it has to be admitted that if the territorial limits and the duration of effective imperialism be carefully remembered, the Oriental administrators would not yield the palm either to the Romans or to the Franks and the Hapsburgs who prolonged the continuity of the Augustan empire by a legal fiction.

A consolidated empire worthy of the name, i.e. one in which influences radiate from a common centre as the sun of the administrative system

could not be a normal phenomenon anywhere on earth before the era of steam and the industrial revolution. It is this fundamental influence of physics on politics that more than any other single cause forced the ancient and mediaeval empires of the world to remain but bundles of states loose conglomerations of almost independent nationalities *Staaten bunden* cemented with the dilutest mixture of political blood.

Regional independence was thus the very life of that geopolitical system in Asia as in Europe. It was the privilege into which the provincial governors the *Markgrafen* the local chiefs and the aldermen of rural communes were born. Their dependence on their immediate superior consisted chiefly in payment of the annual tribute and in occasional military service. They had to be practically let alone in their own platoons. Even the strongest universal monarchs such as Shi Hwang ti, Han Wu ti, Tang Tai tsung, Manchu Kanghi, Candragupta Maurya, Samudragupta, Akbar and Śivāji could not but have recourse to a general policy of *laissez-faire* specially in view of the fact that each of them had to administer a territory greater in size than the Napoleonic empire at its height.

It is already clear at any rate that the nineteenth century generalization about the Orient as the land exclusively of despotism and as the only home of despotism must be abandoned by students of political science and sociology. It is high time therefore that comparative politics so far as the parallel study of Asian and Eur American institutions and theories is considered should be rescued from the elementary and unscientific as well as in many instances unfair notions prevalent since the days of Maine and Max Muller. What is required is first a more intensive study of the Orient and secondly a more honest presentation of Occidental laws and constitutions from Lycurgus and Solon to Frederick the Great and the successors of Louis XIV. In other words political science and sociology are eminently in need of a reform in the comparative method itself.

THE TIRU K KURAL

A SUMMARY OF THE CONTENTS

IF Indian culture is different from that in any other Aryan country in the world it must be traced largely to the influence of Dravidian civilization in India. In the South we have in manners social organization religious forms and ceremonies and literature something out of which we can infer what this Dravidian basis was. There are a few Tamil literary compositions of a very old date which give us an insight into this material. The *Tiruk Kural* of Tiruvalluvar is one of such books. Scholars place it in the first century B.C.

The *Kural* is in many senses a remarkable work. It is a masterpiece of brevity and is in point alike of content and form without parallel. It consists of one thousand three hundred and thirty couplets strung together to form three Books dealing respectively with the first three *purusārthas* (objects which govern men's action) namely *dharma* (duty) *artha* (wealth) and *kama* (enjoyment). The last of the *purusārthas* namely *moksa* (liberation) according to the Hindu mind is the final beatific and timeless state of the enfranchised soul and it is not susceptible of approach through mere mental processes or literary effort hence the great author saint preferred so it would seem not to treat of it in the *Kural* but to be content with prescribing the attributes of a good life.

Of the three Books of the *Kural* the first is perhaps the most widely known and appreciated work in Tamil literature. It deals with man's *dharma* that is with the duties of man both as a householder and as an ascetic. The second Book deals with policy in worldly affairs. It is not so widely read as the first but it is full of interest for the scholar and the historian. The third Book is a vigorous plea for purity of mind and utterness of devotion in love between man and woman.

This essay is confined to a brief exposition of the second Book. That the great moralist should have sought to preach eternal *dharma* seems natural enough. The second Book however shows that the moralist poet was not a mere impractical visionary unused to the ways of the world but had a deep insight into human nature and was possessed of great practical wisdom. The seventy chapters of that Book lay down with characteristic terseness the principles that should govern the conduct of wise and good men in the affairs of the world. Some chapters are particularly addressed

to princes and those around them while others are applicable to all persons engaged in secular affairs

The poet begins by laying down the six essentials of a prosperous State viz an adequate army an industrious people ample food resources wise and alert ministers alliance with foreign powers and dependable fortifications¹ The ideal ruler says the poet is the warrior who possesses in unfailing measure fearlessness liberality wisdom and enthusiasm in action² He never swerves from *dharma* He will not allow his military honour to be sullied³ The wise prince thinks well before resolving on action but having decided on a particular course he does not hesitate and he never mistimes He chooses his executive with circumspection not by affection but by exacting standards⁴

Loyalty a discriminating mind clear headedness and freedom from the lure of property—these are the essential qualifications prescribed for the executive but the true touchstone for distinguishing the qualified from the unqualified is conduct⁵ The poet would have the king transfer full responsibility once he has fixed upon a man for he says that one cannot get the full value of a man unless one trusts him completely⁶ One of Tiruvalluvar's aphorisms states that those who are not vigilant can never attain greatness—a piece of advice useful to all and not only to princes and applicable to the problems of moral conduct as much as to worldly affairs⁷ The ideal king accepts without question the supremacy of the moral law and avoids at all times action not in accordance with it The whole world will be at his feet if his rule be just because he is well beloved of his people in accordance with whose just wishes he governs⁸

The poet's prescriptions are not for kings and princes only man's activities in every sphere constitute his theme and there is literally no aspect of human life that has not come into his ken Truly is the *Kural* a veritable treasure house from which all may benefit One can only gasp in reverence and wonderment at the author's amazing grasp of the essentials of ordered life Look at this one on resoluteness Real wealth is the will to action without it riches are worthless⁹ Or again An aspiring mind is the quality of manhood lacking it men are but trees¹⁰ Perhaps there is nothing so full of hope for man as the couplet which says that even if through misfortune the object aimed at is not attained the effort pays its own wages that is honest effort is its own reward Every honest endeavour raises one a step further in the evolution of the soul¹¹

Kural 39 1
Ibid 47 49 51 52
Ibid 54 2 6
¹ *Ibid* 60 10

Ibid 39 2
⁴ *Ibid* 52 3 4
Ibid 55
Ibid 62 9

Ibid 39 4
Ibid 52 7 8
Ibid 60 1

The poet adjures man not to be arrogant in success nor pitifully grieve when fortune frowns. Not to lose oneself in pride and joy over good fortune is the means whereby strength is acquired to face misfortune—perhaps a more positive philosophy than what the *Gītā* teaches¹². The extreme practicality which Tiruvalluvar combines with his unsurpassed idealism is illustrated by the following. Do not do that which you better sense tells you that you may afterwards regret. But if you have done such a thing it is well that you at least refrain from such folly again.¹³

The historian and the scholar will find plenty of material in the *Kural* from which to reconstruct the political life of the Tamil community in Tiruvalluvar's time. The emphasis on the art of persuasive speech shows that decisions were taken after debate in assemblies. Never speak over the head of the audience. Before an assembly of seniors restrain yourself and avoid preceding them with your speech. What makes a counsellor invincible in debate is a convincing style, a good memory and courage that is the absence of nervousness. These are some of the tips offered for the debater, tips obviously of undeniable value even according to modern standards¹⁴. No discussion of this part of the *Kural* can be complete unless a reference is made to Tiruvalluvar's aphorism concerning the exchequer. Wealth gives worth even to worthless men. If acquired through righteous means, wealth leads to *dharma*, but if obtained without compassion and love, it benefits neither the giver nor the acquirer. Applied to the king, this condemns cruel exactions. Besides the fraction often stated as one sixth, that is levied as a tax by the king on income, the following belong to the royal coffers. Ownerless property, such as treasure trove and escheat, transit duties on imports, and what is gained in war.¹⁵

The *Kural* is of inestimable value to those whose work keeps them near kings. One is strongly reminded of Bacon—who incidentally came many centuries after Tiruvalluvar—when reading the chapter entitled the Dangers of the Palace. Not too far, nor too near, like one who warms himself in front of a fire—that is how one should conduct oneself before the great. Do not presume on the familiarity born of long connection, and never act contrary to etiquette, says the poet to the courtier aiming at success¹⁶. Do we need more striking proof of the poet's shrewd understanding of human nature? One more sample of the wisdom of Tiruvalluvar. He poses the question, What is knowledge? and answers thus in ten verses. Knowledge is the fortification that enemies cannot destroy, and is the ultimate impregnable defence. It controls thought and conduct.

¹ *Ibid* 63
Ibid 76 6

Ibid 66 5
Ibid 70

Ibid 65

and keeps them both from evil It is what enables one to understand the true import of things and not to be misled by the circumstances in which they appear It befriends the world by fostering a spirit of equanimity The man of true knowledge understands how the world moves and moves accordingly Knowing beforehand what will befall he acts sensibly so as to avoid grief He fears what is truly to be feared and refrains from it A discriminating mind is the greatest of possessions and without it wealth is poverty ¹⁷

ILLUSTRATIVE EXTRACTS

A few extracts may serve to help the reader to appraise t'us ancient Tamil book

Do not choose men who have no relatives Having no social ties they do not fear social blame and are therefore not to be depended on ¹⁸

Entrust work to men only after testing them But after they have been so appointed accept their service without distrust It is wrong to choose men without care and equally wrong to distrust men whom you have chosen ¹⁹

It is not a matter for blame but it is rather the duty of a king who should protect his subjects against external foes and look after their welfare that he should be severe with those who are found to offend against the law ²⁰

Capital punishment for grievous offences is like the weeding of fields necessary for the protection of the crops ²¹

It is only those who have not learnt to speak well and briefly that indulge in much speaking ²²

Anyone may announce a plan but it is only exceptional men who are able to carry out their plans to fulfilment ²³

Some men there are in whom an unimposing appearance is coupled with great strength of mind and action like the little axle pins that keep the wheels of a great chariot in place Appearances deceive Do not judge men by the insignificance of their external form ²⁴

Plan with a clear brain and when once you have decided and launched on an undertaking be firm and unmoved by difficulties and avoid dilatoriness in action ²⁵

Good men s friendship is like the beauty of a good book It does not lose its freshness but gives increased pleasure every day just as with deeper study one derives enhanced pleasure from a book ²⁶

¹ *Ibid* 43
²¹ *Ibid* 55 10
Ibid 76 8

Ibid 51 6
Ibid 65 9
² *Ibid* 79 3

Ibid 51 9 10
Ibid 67 4

Ibid 55 9
Ibid 67 7

Perhaps two of the most beautiful verses in the *Kural* are these

Friendship is not for pleasant laughter but for harsh advice promptly to be given when one swerves from the right path ²⁷

True friendship is that which comes swiftly to the rescue in the hour of trouble even as the hand goes instinctively to hold the dress when it chances to slip down in company ²⁸ (The emotion of love should approximate to the reflex action of the nerves)

The identity of feelings makes friendship it is needless to meet often or be long together i.e. neither place nor time counts for much but the union of feelings does ²⁹

Do not think thoughts that damp enthusiasm Do not befriend those who weaken you in difficult situations ³⁰

It is a gain by itself if one gets away from the friendship of fools ¹

There are some who seek to befriend you at home and in private but who attack your fair name on public occasions Avoid all advances on the part of such people ³² (Politics must have been fairly advanced to bring out the need for such advice)

Learning and culture have no effect on hatred They do not help to remove enmity (How true!) The mind has a capacity for dividing itself into compartments so that unreasoned hatred persists along with learning and philosophy ³³

Bad character is more indecent than any part of the body It is folly to imagine that by wrapping oneself in clothes one has covered one's indecency when the greater indecency of a bad character is still exposed ³⁴

If you have no allies and are faced with two enemies immediately become reconciled with one of them and make him a fast friend ³⁵

When you are down in luck make neither friends nor foes be neutral even as regards those whom you have found reason either to trust or to distrust ³⁶

To show reason to one who is drunk is like holding a light to search for a man who is drowned in deep water that is to say the light of reason cannot pierce the darkness of a drunkard's mind The poison has bereft him of the power of response to reason ³⁷

Gambling even if you win is a thing to be avoided Such winning is like a fish swallowing the hook ³⁸

To those who cannot laugh this big world is all darkness even during the day i.e. joy is the light that lightens the world ³⁹

Ibid 79 4
Ibid 80 8
Ibid 83 3
Ibid 88 6
Ibid 100 9

Ibid 79 8
Ibid 80 7
Ibid 85 6
Ibid 93 9

Ibid 79 5
Ibid 82 10
Ibid 88 5
Ibid 94 1

THE TIPU K'KURAL

It is the men of valour who bear the responsibility of the many not only in the battlefield but in peace also wherein the braver and more capable members take upon themselves the burden of working for the community ⁴⁰

The man who makes up his mind to reform his community must be prepared for unmitigated suffering and give up his whole earthly existence to it. He must look upon his body as a receptacle to hold griefs and sufferings for the benefit of others ⁴¹

All reform is built on the consecrated suffering of the reformers. That sorrow is the only immediate reward of public service or rather that suffering is the way of service is recognized here in a remarkable manner

THE INDIAN SOCIAL ORGANIZATION AN ANTHROPOLOGICAL STUDY

INTRODUCTORY

THE most salient feature of Indian social tradition or cultural history is its long and unbroken continuity. No country in the West has a similar tradition. In the East China and Japan alone possess it. India has received peoples from outside for thousands of years but this age long contact of varied cultures has never resulted in a conflict so severe that one culture attained survival by the complete annihilation or suppression of the others. A cultural compromise was always effected between the old and indigenous on the one hand and the new and foreign on the other so that elements of all the cultures have survived in the resultant tradition. This process was helped by polytheism and its logical concomitant—an attitude of tolerance towards other gods other creeds and other customs.

The peculiarities of the cultural process in India are responsible for the relative importance which different social institutions have for the life of the individual. Because of infinite variety in the patterns of social institutions and an almost complete lack of a central agency of social control either in the shape of political power or a well-organized church the institutions of the family have been strengthened beyond all others and the sentiments relating to family life have become all powerful. By the family is generally meant the extended family where kinship is reckoned through the blood bond and marital connection. The institution next in importance is the caste system which is an extension of the principle of the blood bond and marriage relationship but leads also to the civic unit of the village and is thus a link between the familial and the regional principles of social grouping. The village is the basic civic unit in which the family and caste function as representing hereditary ownership of land and of certain types of work for the community from times immemorial. Villages have been grouped into certain natural regions which were also the regions beyond which marriages were generally not allowed. These regions were again grouped into bigger cultural and linguistic regions. The folk consciousness was alive to the cultural unity of the linguistic regions from about the ninth century and in some cases even earlier. And above all these there has always been a keen sense of the cultural heritage and unity of the whole of India. The sacred places which pilgrims should visit have been

enumerated for the last fifteen hundred years and they all lie within the geographical limits of India and extend from the Himalayas to Cape Comorin and Gauhati in Assam to Dwaraka in the west

THE INSTITUTION OF THE FAMILY

In Indian social evolution the family has always meant the joint family made up of many generations of collateral relatives living under one roof and sharing a common heritage. In the North such a family is patriarchal in the extreme south west it is matriarchal and between these geographical and cultural extremities are to be seen all variations leading from one type to the other.

Among people living in the foot hills of the Himalayas in the region of Jaunsar and Bewar the prevalent pattern is that of the joint patriarchal family. These people call themselves Ksatriyas profess the Hindu religion and worship Hindu gods. They are mentioned in the *Mahābhārata* as the Khasas. The joint family is made up of all brothers and their children living together. The eldest brother is the head of the family holds the family lands is responsible for feeding and clothing the family and expects and gets obedience from all. The wife of the eldest brother becomes automatically the wife of all the other brothers. The land belongs to all but is held by the eldest and is never divided. The children are assigned to different brothers by a convention that the eldest child belongs to the eldest brother the second to the next and so on.

Hindu tradition relates that before the time of the great lawgiver Manu inheritance in property and succession to office vested solely in the eldest son. There are certain passages in the *Rg Veda* and the *Atharva Veda* which refer to the act of a younger brother's marrying before an elder one as a great sin on the part of all the members of the family. These would therefore suggest that the eldest son not only alone inherited the property and succeeded to the office of his father but that he also had alone the right to marry first.

South of the Himalayan range the whole of the river system fed by the Himalayas comprises a region where languages derived from Sanskrit are spoken and where patriarchal institutions prevail. In the Punjab Sind Delhi Uttar Pradesh Bihar Bengal and parts of Orissa the family pattern is that of a patriarchal patrilocal joint family. The property is held jointly by the male descendants of a common ancestor but in this the ownership of each living male and even of unborn heirs is recognized and elaborate rules of succession and partition exist for the eventuality of a split in the family. Each male has his own independent wife or wives. Within a big household every child knows his own father and mother, though kinship

terminology and certain customary behaviours point to an ancient usage similar to that of the Khasas. In this whole region a woman is not allowed to speak with the elder brother of her husband; she must not uncover her head before him. In Bengal a man may not enter the inner apartments of the house if the wife of the younger brother is alone there. On the other hand the relations of a woman with the younger brother of her husband are of complete familiarity. In modern times this relationship is depicted as that between elder sister and younger brother or between mother and son. But folk songs and proverbs and older literature leave no doubt at all that the relationship was that between lovers. In the whole of this region children of father's brother or sister and mother's brother or sister are called brothers and sisters and marriage among them is strictly prohibited. It is customary among certain castes to avoid altogether the marriage of a boy or girl in the family bearing the *gotra* of their maternal uncle's family. This avoidance of the maternal uncle's *gotra* (clan among the non Brahmanas) is a peculiarity of the northern plains. Thus the present family institution marriage practices kinship systems and terms taboos and familiar relationship all point to a patriarchal system with junior levirate as the starting point in the near past and perhaps fraternal polyandry and patriarchal household in the distant past.

The region south of the northern plains comprises Rajputānā Kathiawar Gujarat the central highlands of the broken Vindhya range and the forest belt with its western extension in the Aravali and Satpura and eastern extension in the Chattisgarh plateau old Bastar State and Sironcha hills. This region is a physical and cultural barrier between the North and South though great and historically important corridors of migrations exist which have carried people from the North to the South and vice versa. This is also a region for the cultural isolation and preservation for primitive peoples and lastly it is a region of culture contact. One finds here the purely northern cultural pattern existing side by side with the purely southern and in a majority of cases a blend of the North and South.

In Rajputānā Gujarat and Kathiawar the predominant pattern for family institutions and marriage is that of the northern plains. The kinship terminology is analogous to that of the North with the same behaviour pattern for a woman and her husband's younger brother. Folk songs folk tales and proverbs make clear the sexual implications of this relationship though today among the majority of castes sexual licence between these two relatives is frowned upon and a widow's marriage with her younger brother in law is not allowed. There are however castes which allow such a marriage and a Gujarati word *diyē vatū* exists for such a relationship. Thus the region

daughter is not customary. The marriage of a widow with the younger brother of the husband is not allowed. Distinct terms for husband's elder and younger brothers are found in mediaeval literature but in modern times the distinction has vanished. The terms used for husband's brother are the same as those for a cross cousin. Husband's sister and brother's wife become almost interchangeable terms while the terms for mother-in-law and father's sister or mother's brother's wife and father-in-law and mother's brother are identical. The whole terminology suggests a dual organization which would arise if a group of families exchanged daughters for generations. This does happen in some cases but in a majority of cases such a close inbreeding does not take place. In the folk song and folk tale the maternal uncle plays a very great role. The brother-sister relationship which is sung in all folk songs in India receives a peculiar meaning inasmuch as these comrades of childhood separated by the marriage of the sister are united again by the marriage of their children. Succession in inheritance and residence go in the father's line but sentiment as evidenced in folk literature is for the mother's relations. Except for Brāhmanas and high class Marathas widow re-marriage is a universal custom. The Brāhmanic marriage ritual and the ritual at a boy's holy thread ceremony are inextricably mixed up with customs based on cross cousin marriage. Thus when a bride is brought home for the first time the groom's sister bars the door and does not let the bride in until she promises to give her daughter in marriage to the son of the groom's sister. In the same way the young boy when initiated into the *gāyatrī* hymn starts to go off to Banaras and is brought back by his maternal uncle who promises to give him his daughter in marriage.

The region south of the Maratha country belongs to people speaking Dravidian tongues—Kannada, Tamil, Telugu, Malayalam. Of these the first three have institutions similar to those of the Marathi people with a few changes. Cross cousin marriage is the prevalent form of marriage. There is no bar to the marriage of a man with his father's sister's daughter; in fact this seems to be as frequent as the other type and some sociologists assert that it is more frequent than the other type. In addition to this a man may marry his sister's daughter, i.e. the marriage of maternal uncle and niece is almost as common as the cross cousin marriage. Such a marriage is also found on the southern border of the Maratha country. Inheritance and succession are in the father's line. Residence is patrilocal. A woman has invariably to live permanently at her husband's place. There are however some castes which practise nepotistic inheritance whereby a man is succeeded by his sister's son. In the heart of Karnātak in the Mysore hills and in the adjoining region are met a polyandrous people called the Todas.

They have patriarchal institutions and practise fraternal polyandry. It was first thought that they were an isolated case in the South of a primitive people practising polyandry and patriarchal institutions. But recent investigations have shown that the neighbouring people of Coorg also show traces of polyandry and a student has reported polyandry in the caste of goldsmiths on South Malabar coast. It should be noted that all these polyandrous folk have patriarchal institutions.

The south west corner of India where Malayalam is spoken is occupied by people having matriarchal institutions meaning not that women have the right of inheritance and succession but that these two are in the woman's line. The matriarchal joint family is called the *tarwad* and is made up of a woman and her male and female descendants. The members of such a family are all united by the blood bond relations by marriage find no room in it while certain blood relations i.e. the children of the males are also excluded. Certain stresses and strains which are inevitable in the pattern of the northern patriarchal households are entirely unknown in such a household. In the northern household women born in the family are given away in marriage and must spend their lives among strangers while alien women are brought as brides and become mistresses of the home. The folk song and folk tale give vivid descriptions of the enmity and rivalry between the mother in law and the daughter in law and between the bride and her husband's sister. These can have no place in the southern *tarwad* as a bride remains in her parental home and never meets except on ceremonial occasions her mother in law and husband's sister. Even in South India the matrilineal family is giving way before the individual patrilineal family and the law has given permission to sons of joint families earning their own livelihood in professions to found separate families of their own with their wives where they can leave their property to their own children. Evolutionists might see in this tendency a trend towards patriarchy but it must be remembered that it has arisen only after contact with patriarchal peoples and more especially after the establishment of British rule. In accordance with the custom of the land in the kingly houses of Travancore and Cochin there is nepotic succession. A Rājā is succeeded by his sister's eldest son. The Rājā's sister is called the Mahārānī or the reigning queen.

As an interesting study in culture contacts one may note here the family institution of the Nampūtiris. This is a Brāhmana caste living in Malabar. The residence is patrilocal the inheritance and succession are also in the paternal line. The Nampūtiri family is a patriarchal joint family. The eldest son alone inherits the ancestral lands the house and other assets. He alone has the right to marry. The younger sons however

are not allowed any rights to the wife or wives of the eldest brother. They would thus have to remain bachelors. There is however one social adjustment. The younger sons of the Nampūtiri Brāhmanas form alliances with Nayar women who belong to matriarchal households. Thus they get a wife and children for whose maintenance they are not responsible and who are not recognized as belonging to the Nampūtiri family. These alliances were not formerly recognized as marriages but recently the Government of Madras has given them the status of a legal marriage with the result that many younger sons of Nampūtiri leave the parental house to found a separate family with Nayar women who in their turn give up the joint matriarchal family. As only one man, the eldest son in each family can marry, a vast majority of Nampūtiri girls remain unmarried. If a man wants to arrange the marriage of his sister, he has generally to agree to marry a daughter of the house where his own sister is being given as a bride. In this way the eldest son generally has more than one wife. As a consequence of this peculiar custom, in which only a few Nampūtiri women can get married, the community is perhaps the only one in the whole of India which shows a decrease in population. It appears that the Nampūtiris who originally belonged to a northern patriarchal polyandrous stock or at least practised levirate as is shown by their kinship terminology gave up both polyandry and levirate as did the other northern Indian Brāhmana communities and on their having migrated and settled into a matriarchal country a ready solution was found for the satisfaction of the younger sons which kept the land and the family intact. Thus the interrelation of the matrilineal Nayars and the patrilineal Nampūtiris is a curious adaptation arising out of two dissimilar cultures.

In the extreme north east corner of India, in Assam, the Khasis, a semi-primitive tribe, show full-fledged matrilineal institutions analogous to those of the people of Malabar. The Khasis are a semi-Mongoloid people and there does not seem to be any historical or racial connection between them and the people of Malabar.

There are a few things which need clarification in this short description of the family institutions in India. The custom of levirate has been mentioned in connection with certain regions. The reverse custom of sororate exists all over India. A man may marry the younger sister of his wife either during the lifetime of his wife or after her death. Kinship terms in many regions differentiate sharply between wife's elder and younger sisters. Kinship usage prescribes very formal and respectful behaviour between a man and the elder sister of his wife. In fact the pattern of behaviour on the part of a man is the same as prescribed towards the mother-in-law. On the other hand, great familiarity and joking talk are the prescribed form of

behaviour towards the younger sisters of the wife Folk song and folk tale describe the love and marriage of a man to his younger sister in law and in proverbs such a sister in law is called half a wife Even in present times such marriages take place all over India Nobody condemns them especially if a man's wife dies early leaving very young children It is thought that if the mother's sister comes as their step mother the little ones would be well looked after

The question of the remarriage of widows is very interesting Until a few decades ago it was not allowed among the Brāhmanas and a few other castes but among all other castes widows could choose a new partner But almost all the castes and tribes in India deny the right of marriage to a widow By marriage is meant the ritual sacred and ceremonial union of a woman with a man That can happen only once for a woman A man may ceremonially marry virgins as many times as he likes The words for the remarriage of a widow are always different from the words used for marriage The same terms are used for the marriage of a divorced woman with a new mate The first marriage always has the officiating of a priest much feasting and some type of instrumental music In the remarriage of a widow however no guests are invited and the officiating priest does not belong to the usual order of priests Sometimes it looks as if the ceremonies performed were in the nature of expiation In the Maratha country for example the ceremony is performed on a dark night and a cock is sacrificed The same differentiation is made by certain primitive tribes It would be interesting to find out whether this stigma on the remarriage of a widow is Brāhmanic in origin or whether it predates Brahmanism That it is spread throughout India indicates that it may predate Brāhmanism We have noted that even among polyandrous people a woman is married ceremonially to one man only though she is shared by many On the death of that man she passes automatically to the younger brothers who claim compensation if she wishes to marry outside her husband's family One meets with expressions like giving of a girl in a family in an ancient text (*Āpastamba*) If marriage is viewed in the light of providing a bride for a certain family widowhood is not a very likely contingency Also where the custom prevailed among prehistoric people of killing a man's wife so that she might accompany him in the other world the contingency of the remarriage of a widow did not arise When that usage was given up the widow was simply inherited by the younger male relatives of the deceased These ancient usages make it very probable that the difference connoted by the words used for the first marriage and the widow remarriage rest on thought habits inherited from very ancient times

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA
THE INSTITUTIONS OF CASTE AND CLAN

In all these marriage regulations there is a certain outer circle beyond which a man or a woman is not allowed to marry. This circle is termed the caste or *jāti*. A caste or sub caste is an endogamous social group. An investigation of smaller castes easily shows by the method of genealogy that every member of the group is related to every other. So we have to view caste as an extension of the family. The principle of grouping appears to be the blood bond and relationship through marriage.

Between caste and family there is another kind of social group based on the blood bond and that is the clan. A clan may be defined as a group of families all tracing their descent to a distant common ancestor either male or female. Such a clan is always exogamous and has always an appellation which is sometimes used as a surname by people who belong to that clan. The clan organization is not found in northern India in the Gangetic plain where the exogamous unit is generally the family or the village. It is also absent among certain Brāhmanas of Central and South India among whom the exogamous unit is the *gotra*. Members of one *gotra* trace their descent from a mythical sage whose name is given to the *gotra*. All the Brāhmanas in India are patrilineal and so the *gotras* are also traced through the male line. Among other castes and tribes of western Central and South India the clan system is well developed. The Rajputs have patrilineal clans arranged in an ascending order. The men of the higher clan may marry the women of the lower clan but a woman of the higher clan is not allowed to marry a man of a lower clan. In the highest clan which may have but few equals there is generally a surplus of unmarried women and in the lowest clan there is a dearth of marriageable girls so that marriage is sought outside the clan group into a lower stratum of society. This same type of hypergamous clan system is found also among the Marathas. A peculiarity of the Rajput and Maratha clans is their regional distribution. Each clan has generally its own region of occupation. The land in this region is generally owned by families bearing the clan name. In Rajputānā we have thus regions in which only one clan name or surname is found e.g. in the region round Ajmer we have the Chauhans in the region round Jaipur we have the Kachwah clan and so on. In the Maratha country in the Ratnagiri District there are over forty villages whose population consists of people called Sinde. In the Satara District the Vagh clan has its own region so also the Jādv the Pisal etc. Each has its own region. In one village I counted eighty houses of the Malusra clan. The old State of Sawantwadi owes its name to the Sawant clan. The Chitpāvan Brāhmanas whose surnames are exogamous clan names have also their clan region well defined in the

native districts of central Konkan Many a Maratha village is shared by families belonging to two clans which may intermarry very often however historical records show that in spite of the exchange of daughters the Rajput and Maratha clans were mutual rivals ready to draw blood on the slightest provocation real or imaginary

Clan organization is found among the primitive tribes of Central and South India as also among the agricultural castes of South India The clan names among the Marathas Brāhmanas and other castes and tribes may denote any object inanimate or animate and sometimes no meaning can be given to the clan name while in certain cases they appear to be nicknames based on mental qualities like timidity and valour or physical qualities like black white one legged etc In some cases they appear to be totemistic but in a great majority of the Rajput Maratha and Chitpāvan clans totemistic practices cannot be found

We have seen that the clans are exogamous Such exogamous clans are included in a bigger endogamous unit called popularly caste or sub caste In India the caste sets limits to the possible choice of a mate for every one In pre British days marriage out of one's caste was almost impossible except where castes were arranged in a hypergamous series A caste is an extension of the group principle as manifested in the joint family All members of a caste can be shown to be related by blood or marriage I stress this point in spite of the fact that there are certain castes in India whose people run into millions and in which by no stretch of imagination can a person be related to every other member of the caste Such caste for example are the Marathas of Mahārāstra the Reddis or Kapus of the Āndhra country and Ahirs of Uttar Pradesh My investigation has shown that the Marathas include today smaller distinctly endogamous units where intermarriage was as impossible as that between Marathas and non Marathas Thus when anthropometric measurements were taken it was found that Konkan Marathas represented racial elements different from those of the Deccan Marathas

The caste is inclusive of the clans which in their turn include several joint families while the latter two groups are exogamous the caste is endogamous A caste generally has a well defined regional extension If a few clans from a caste migrate to a distant region it becomes a separate caste after a few generations The Devang Koshti is a numerous caste in Karnātak A few clans of this caste have settled in the last century near Poona in the Maratha country Today they call themselves Maratha Devangs and do not intermarry with the Karnātak branch The Levas of north western Khandesh are a Marathi speaking agricultural caste today Their history shows that they have migrated from Gujarat and belonged

to the Levas Kanbi community originally and yet today the Khandesh Levas do not intermarry with the Gujarat Levas. Even the nomadic Vanjari community has its endogamous castes in Telingana, Karnātak and the Maratha country. In olden days when families migrated they generally made their home in the new region, took up the language and customs of the surrounding population and became a new caste. Only the tenacious memory of migration, the caste name, the caste deity and the names of the clans remained as proofs of its being one with the original caste. Among some people, however, the caste ties have proved stronger than regional or linguistic considerations. Such are the various Marwari castes spread all over India as traders, shopkeepers and money lenders. They always go back to their native places for marriage and worship. They have thus always remained strangers to the region which gives them their livelihood and are always looked upon as pure exploiters and outsiders by the population of a region.

Under the British rule, travel became easy, quick and safe in all parts of India, and this tendency of the castes to keep intact their ties with their native land was greatly strengthened. In spite of this we can state as a general rule that a caste has its well-defined region, not only as regards the great linguistic provinces but also as regards sub-areas within such a province. Thus we see that the Brāhmana caste, which is found in all linguistic provinces, is divided into regional castes which do not intermarry. Even within each such region the Brāhmanas are divided into various endogamous sub-castes according to various principles of grouping. One is the principle of habitat. Brāhmanas on the sea coast do not intermarry with the Brāhmanas on the plateau in the Maratha country.

A caste is thus primarily a regional unit and it also comprises people who generally follow one type of profession. Wherever there is a change in professional technique or division of labour, people following each type of activity within a profession tend to form themselves into endogamous units or castes. Among agriculturists, the farmers who cultivate cereals depending on monsoon rains form a caste distinct from horticulturists who grow vegetables and fruit and some money crops on garden plots watered by wells throughout the year. These latter are called Mālīs (gardeners). Among Mālīs, those who grow flowers only (for temple worship) are banded into an endogamous caste holding themselves as higher than all the other Mālīs. Among weavers, those who dye the yarn belong to a special caste different from those who weave. Among dyers, those who print cloth hold themselves apart from those who dye yarn. In this aspect the caste approaches a trade guild, the difference being that apprenticeship is not allowed to any outsider and those belonging to the caste must be born

in the caste Each craft has its own process which the young people must learn it has its own patron gods and goddesses who must be worshipped in a particular way lastly each has its customary ways of behaviour dress and food which makes it necessary that the bride must be chosen from among families who belong to the caste and know its traditions

This brings us to another important feature of this institution All castes are grouped in a hierarchical fashion The Brahmanas are theoretically supposed to be at the apex and certain untouchable castes at the base Actually the Brahmanas have not been at the top always as historical records show The Buddhist and Jaina monks and teachers enjoyed as great respect as the Brāhmanas The Brāhmanas were given certain posts like that of the judge by the kings They were priests and received gifts at the hands of their patrons Learned Brāhmanas received lands from great kings who were patrons of learning but they do not seem to have wielded power except in a few cases which must be taken as exceptions rather than the rule In Jaina stories and in folk tales fun is made of Brāhmanas and they are shown sometimes as greedy folk and sometimes as fools For the last five centuries in northern India (especially in the Uttar Pradesh and Bengal) the Kāyasthas have been the most powerful caste In Rajputānā the Brāhmanas come third after the Rajputs and the Banias in Gujarat the Banias form the most influential caste In the Maratha country Marathas have been the ruling race though the Brāhmanas temporarily gained the first position through the Peswā rule In the South Brāhmanas demanded and received the respect due to the foremost caste until quite recently After the Brāhmanas come the numerous fighting classes today represented by the several ruling chiefs After these are to be reckoned the traders then the artisans then the great mass of agriculturists then the semi-nomadic wandering tribes and last of all the untouchables

Within these primary classes there are ranks sometimes tacitly agreed to by all sometimes disputed Among the Brāhmanas each sub caste considers itself the highest—a claim not countenanced by the others Among the ruling Ksatriyas some clans are supposed to be higher than the others and the Rajputs as a body may be given the first rank as the endeavour of all other ruling classes in India is to show that they are of Rajput origin Among the artisans those who work in gold and silver hold themselves higher than those who work in brass and copper who again are higher than the blacksmiths The great weaver castes are higher than the blacksmiths and carpenters but below the braziers and goldsmiths Among the agriculturists many call themselves Ksatriyas others are pure farmers still others are apparently new recruits to farming and hold a very

inferior position e.g. the Audhs on the border of Berar. The cowherds and shepherds come next after these the fishermen. Between these and the lowest are innumerable semi-primitive semi-tribal people who are gradually being absorbed into the great mass of agriculturists e.g. Malhar Kolis Varlis etc. The last great group belongs to castes that receive different names in different parts of India. No higher castes can even touch them much less accept food from them. The occupation of some of them may have led to this attitude e.g. the scavengers (Bhangis) and tanners. The Mahars who are very numerous and ubiquitous in the Maratha country are not assigned work which is necessarily repellent or dirty though they have to carry and bury dead animals (cows oxen and buffaloes) and that may be the reason of their pollution. In the South the number of untouchable castes increases enormously. Not merely scavengers and tanners are untouchable but also those who tap the toddy palm those who fish and the semi-primitive jungle tribes have all been relegated to the position of untouchables. The number of the untouchable castes and the severity of the taboo on them increase from the North to South. In the Uttar Pradesh the Bhangi or Mehtar and Dom may stand outside a house or the marriage booth to receive food and money presents which are their due on ceremonial occasions. Though their direct touch pollutes one may drop food into their outstretched hands. In Gujarat and the Maratha country the Dheds Mahars and Bhangis are untouchables and so are the Chamars or shoemakers even their shadow was held to pollute one. In the South definite distances are allotted to different castes while approaching one another. The greatest distance is demanded by the Brāhmanas.

The number of castes and their interrelations divide India into certain regions of greater or lesser social integration. The Punjab and the Uttar Pradesh seem to have reached the greatest integration. The caste distinctions are existent but not so humiliating as in the South. The Brāhmana does not enjoy the social prestige he does in the South. The universal custom of buying ready-made sweetmeats from shops has lessened food taboos. In Central India the Brāhmanas have a certain position of respect as in the Maratha country but the great majority of agriculturists have the appearance of homogeneity and are culturally the most important group. In the Maratha country the caste groups are numerically big the number of castes comparatively small. In Gujarat the process of integration has been hindered by a tendency to split up each caste into innumerable endogamous sub-castes so that the whole society is divided into minute endogamous consanguine cells. There are thus over a hundred sub-castes of the Brāhmanas and the Banias. The agricultural Kanbis,

however are divided into comparatively few castes. The number of untouchables is small. In the extreme south the number of castes and the minute rules of inter caste behaviour are innumerable. At the head are the Brahmanas after whom come the agriculturists and then many small castes all untouchable. This is the land of least social integration and the greatest admixture of races and cultures. Caste seems to be the device through which all racial and cultural elements were kept separate and more or less intact in a small region without complete extinction even of the oldest and the most primitive element.

After describing caste as an endogamous social group with a regionally defined extent, certain hereditary occupations and a certain place in a hierarchy of similar groups, we have to describe how the group functions. Its function as regards similar social groups as a regulator of marriage and as a repository and jealous guardian of arts and crafts has already been touched upon. It divides the whole Indian population into mutually exclusive, competitive, rival, jealous communities. The element of trade unionism in caste has both enhanced and marred the arts and crafts of India. The hereditary transmission of certain skills has made artisanship and real art into almost an instinctive habit in certain castes. The feeling for form, colour and shape is sure and unerring. But the great drawback is that it is traditional. There is neither the urge nor the occasion for new creations. All the extravagances and vulgarities of art exposed to competition and enforced to create vogues are entirely absent in Indian tradition but it has avoided the cheap and the bizarre at the price of creativeness. It has chosen to stagnate. The same applies to learning. The Brāhmanas as jealous of their learning as other castes of their crafts made it their monopoly and cruelly suppressed all attempts at Sanskrit learning by individuals from other castes. The result has been the marvellous perfection of form achieved by Sanskrit literature in all its branches. But it soon lost its creativeness. More time was given to learning what the ancients had written on writing commentaries and elucidations than on new creation and worst of all the masses were kept jealously away from the original sources and they had to assimilate the great cultural and literary tradition through bards and story tellers. Caste has thus a double aspect. No social device for the preservation and transmission of culture can compare with the institution of caste—none exists either in which stagnation and social antagonisms can arise to the extent they do in this system. Much of the diversity of Indian life is due to the caste system which jealously guards and conserves its own peculiar *mores*, dams small cultural streams within its narrow limits and is a barrier to free intercourse and cultural assimilation.

Caste however has another aspect. Its function towards other groups is one of negative aloofness and self preservation but towards its own members it is almost a social universe. A person is born as a member of his caste and his life's vocation, the skills he will learn, the food he will eat and the conduct he will follow are determined by this one fact. He learns early the trade of his caste. He inherits his attitude to other castes from the other members. The caste council demands his co-operation and obedience on all major occasions. His behaviour towards the members of his caste is regulated by the rules laid down by this council which decides what bridal price he shall pay, what punishment he shall receive for ill treatment of his wife, whether he is entitled to divorce or not, and how much he should contribute to caste dinners. The council also used to sit in judgement on the antisocial behaviour of one caste member towards another—crimes like petty thefts, abuse and disorderly behaviour were dealt with very effectively by the council. This power has been much curtailed since the establishment of a central judiciary system by the British. In former times misbehaviour involving members of one class rarely came before the Government judges. In this respect also the system shows that it is an extension of the family which in ancient times had similar regulative powers over its own members. When a man dies it is the members of his caste who help to bury or cremate him and who receive a caste meal on the thirteenth day. Many castes own common property in the shape of big cooking vessels, wooden seats, decorative furniture etc which is lent to individual families on occasions of marriage or other ceremonies. Many castes also own temples and common halls where members can gather together for recreation, worship or dinners. The caste temple or hall serves the purpose of a club for the male members after working hours and for the women at other times. These are of great use in modern crowded cities where individual families may be housed in one—three room tenements and where there is no room for any ceremonial functions or family gatherings. The common hall and the common utensils and carpets make it possible for individual families or for the whole caste to come together in spacious well lighted rooms which no member can afford singly. The caste as a whole tries to raise funds for the free education of the poorer members, holds sports meetings or dramatic performances where prizes are distributed and raises money to help a poor widow or a destitute family. When a man gets employment in a firm or a factory he generally tries to employ people of his own caste in that firm or factory. In northern India when a man celebrates a marriage in his family and has to spend some money he generally receives about half of the amount from his caste brethren in the shape of presents at a

particular ceremonial function during the celebrations. An accurate register is kept showing the names of the donors, the amounts given, and the day and the occasion on which the gifts were given. The man or his family is in honour bound to make similar gifts to all those who gave gifts. This is called the *nyotā* (invitation) money, and the registers of these gifts are kept generation after generation by the caste council.

In a society which lacked central political or religious organization, social security depended very largely in the first instance on the prosperity of the joint family, and secondly on the strength and solidarity of the caste group. Every new invasion, every new dynasty, but strengthened the caste loyalties. The system grew for over a millennium. Neither Buddhism nor Jainism could shake it. They only created new castes. Mohammedanism, with its ideas of forcible conversion, was so strange and so repulsive to the general Hindu mind that the whole population drew further back into its caste shell, and converts to Mohammedanism soon adopted the caste system. The same fate met Christianity. Rajput converts among Mohammedans have kept registers of their original clans and marry only among those clans, strictly observing hypergamous rules of marriage as among Hindu Rajputs. How tenacious the caste and clan memories are can best be seen when one takes into account recent movements started in Rajputānā to receive the converted Mohammedans back into the fold of Hindu clans. In the same way, in the Maratha country, Brāhmana Christians will contract marriages only with one another. Even sub-castes among the Brāhmanas converted to Christianity are kept intact. In the South, until recently, the outcaste Christian knelt outside the church, while the higher caste converts sat inside. Among Mohammedans and Christians, not only are taboos on intercaste marriages strictly observed, but taboos about the acceptance of food are also adhered to. Thus a high caste Mohammedan lady refuses to be served by Mahar servants. While Europeans and Anglo-Indians avail themselves of the services of Hindu or Christian Mahars in their households, Mohammedans and Indian Christians generally refuse to do so.

The British, who established in India for the first time in Indian history a continuous central political body which kept peace throughout the country, could have made positive attempts to break the caste system, with what success one cannot venture to say, but they were not interested in the project. They, however, gave equality and certain preferences to the most downtrodden castes. In the political struggle for freedom, it became clear to the Indian leaders that the abolition of untouchability and social discrimination arising out of the caste system was not merely a matter of social justice, but a political necessity. Every effort was made, and is being made, to destroy the most inhuman and obnoxious practices arising

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

out of the caste hierarchy. The most conspicuous instance is furnished by the passing of the Anti Untouchability Act of the Indian Parliament. And yet the question remains: will caste ultimately vanish from India? Once the injustice of hereditary status is removed, is there enough cohesion left in the caste group? Hutton remarks that the inequality of status is only an incidental property of the social group called caste. If caste is viewed as an extension of the family, Hutton's contention seems to be true. He is also justified by the history of the last few decades, in which certain castes have rapidly become alike in their status, education, economic conditions and social ideology, and yet each caste has remained separate from similar castes.

THE FUTURE OF THE CASTE SYSTEM

This brings us to the future of the caste system and the attitude of the progressive Indian public towards this question. Almost every Indian of note talks of abolishing caste distinctions, and the opposition to it comes from the great masses of agricultural castes. This seems on the face of it paradoxical, but is completely logical if we analyse the situation properly. Today the majority of posts in higher paid government service are held by the Brāhmanas, Kāyasthas and a few other castes. Political power is also wielded by these. They are the most literate and have established a tradition for higher collegiate education, which has given them a virtual monopoly of such professions as teachers, lawyers, doctors, and clerks in government offices and private banks. The abolition of caste today would mean a competition for all the above items on terms of equality between the already well entrenched and highly educated castes on the one hand and the poorer, illiterate majority of the agricultural and other castes on the other. The only way to break this monopoly of the higher castes is for the lower castes to unite as castes and fight for preferential treatment. The handicapped castes must first be brought on a par with advanced castes as regards education and economic opportunities before one can talk of breaking the caste system. Today the untouchable leaders of outstanding ability can rise high only by subjecting the advanced castes to political pressure through their caste membership.

There is a feature of the old caste system which makes it necessary for this group to break its isolation. Every caste, as we have seen, has a definite sphere of action allotted to it. It may do only one type of work or one kind of process required for certain crafts. Because of this specialization, each caste is economically dependent on all others. Even the agriculturist caste, which would appear to be economically the most self-sufficient, suffers through specialization. An agriculturist will tend his fields, but will not

THE INDIAN SOCIAL ORGANIZATION AN ANTHROPOLOGICAL STUDY

manufacture even the simplest implements needed by him he gets these services from the artisans. The other castes which are not directly concerned with tilling the soil are even more dependent on one another for their subsistence. And so out of these consanguine groups comes into being a real civic unit whose community life is based on division of labour and co operation in production and distribution. The best known of such units is the Indian village.

THE INDIAN VILLAGE

The village is made up of land owners. Every family in the village owns land. The major portion is owned by the cultivating caste and a small portion is divided among certain families for hereditary services. In the Maratha country the majority of the cultivating families belong to one or two classes. Of these again one is usually recognized as the chief class and the eldest male of the eldest branch of the chief family of that clan is generally the headman of the village and is called the Patil. There is generally one village street on two sides of which are located the houses of the Patil family and clan. Sometimes two clans may be on opposite sides of the street. There is keen rivalry between various families and clans and the village street serves both as the dividing boundary and an occasional battle ground. Those families whose piece of land is very small may work on the land of the richer neighbours and come to be distinguished from the chief family as semi dependents. The Patilship is a hereditary office. A Patil is responsible to the government for sending annually the revenue of the village for keeping the peace in the village and for imposing small levies needed for common utilities like the village *chavadi* (a place where the tax is paid) the village temple the school road and wells. He is the head of the village council which is made up of five or ten elders representing different castes and families in the village. This was called the Village Pañcāyat and records are extant which show that this council sat in judgement on all village disputes as also gave advice to any family in times of stress. Proceedings of the council were kept and its decisions endorsed by the central Government. Only very few matters were referred to the higher authority for final disposal. The Patil and his clan made up over eighty per cent of the village population. Besides these there were one or two houses of Brāhmanas also a shopkeeper or two a carpenter a washer man a smith a leather worker or Chamar and a few Mahars. The Brāhmanas also belonged to one clan and did the work of keeping the register of village holdings and revenue dues. The work was done either by the eldest male of the oldest branch of the original founder or by all the families in turn. This officer is termed Kulkarni. As he was the only

literate man in a village he could abuse his power to cheat the poor villagers or even the Patil. The carpenter, washerman, etc. all belong to their own caste and have a family or two in the village. The carpenter, smith and leather worker manufacture and repair agricultural implements like the plough, the scythes and the leather bags required for drawing water from big wells, etc. The washerman washed clothes of the rich on ceremonial occasions like the puberty ceremonies and marriages. The barber cut the hair of all inhabitants except the untouchables. The Mahars are untouchables and live outside the village. They are village watchmen, street sweepers and messengers. They must always accompany the Patil and are chief witnesses in disputes about field boundaries. There are generally quite a number of Mahar families and the various offices are performed by each family in turn. The symbol of a Mahar family is a stout bamboo stick and when one family lays down its office it is said to have handed the bamboo stick to another. Besides these, according to the size, prosperity and geographical position of the village, there may be a goldsmith, a few milkmen, a few shepherds, oil pressers, etc. All these people are permanent settlers in a village and a small holding is given to each original family in return for some specific piece of service. They all receive from the field of each landholder a certain amount of grain at the harvest time.

In the Maratha country in Rajputānā and in Telangana the cultivators are also fighters and each village generally looks after its own defence. Its social relations with neighbouring villages are guided by the sentiments of the ruling clans. If they are rivals the villages also carry on a never ending feud. Even if they are friendly it is found that many villages have a day of mutual fights which end in quite serious wounds. For such fights the villagers gather on the opposite banks of a dividing stream and a fight ensues with bows and arrows or sometimes even with spears. The fight goes on from morning till evening and ends when the sun goes down. Such fights are celebrated every year even at the present day. A village is thus a microcosm of social relationships. It is self-sufficient for food and very few articles are imported from outside. It has its own hereditary servants and artisans, its own temples and fairs and its own games. It is visited on definite days every year by itinerant story tellers, dancers and actors who provide amusement and receive gifts in kind. It defends itself and every one of its inhabitants is bound to its soil, but in this splendid isolation lie the seeds of its ruin and degeneration.

All that is good or bad in the Indian social organization seems to have come to fruition in the Indian village. As already pointed out, it is possessed mainly by families of one or two clans. These clans are generally

rivals so are the families and these feuds are carried on for generations. A study of murders committed in certain districts in the Maratha country reveals the fact that the majority of these murders are due not to personal quarrels but to family feuds and that they are committed by a large number of people all relatives taking vengeance for a wrong which may have been done years ago. These rivalries are so great that if a village school is established on the estate or in the house of one influential family it is boycotted by all those who belong to the other party. The people of the other castes who are generally in a minority wisely keep away from these feuds, but sometimes if caste rivalries are aroused family feuds are forgotten by the agriculturists for the time being to wreak terrible vengeance on these minorities. The Mahars—the friendless untouchables—are the oftenest to suffer through such frenzies. Especially during the British rule when all castes were equal before the law if a Mahar dared assert his rights he and his fellow castemen got severe beatings and all their houses were burnt down in no time. The Brāhmana who has taken to English education and practises money lending is also hated generally by all the castes and comes in for severe punishment every now and then.

Thus the co-operation of various castes towards creating a common life is very superficial. The injustices of the caste system, the caste rivalries and the family feuds never allow common life to evolve in a village. The hereditary principle of service with its meagre wages is no stimulant to honest service or improvement in technique. Artisanry stagnates. The hereditary leadership of the Patil family though generally liberal may develop into intolerable tyranny. The mass of population is conservative, illiterate and steeped in unhygienic habits. People live together for generations bound to the soil within a small compass, compelled to work together but divided for ever by castes stratified into higher and lower ranks. The majority is not far removed from the level of primitive subsistence standards. Latterly there has been a way out of this bondage: the most despised have found their way to the modern cities as industrial labourers; the Brāhmanas have also taken the same way in search of larger material and cultural gains and are becoming more and more urbanized; these are now followed by the more intelligent and enterprising agriculturists who are taking up professions in towns and cities.

The village today has lost even that vitality which it possessed two hundred years ago. The farmer is being dispossessed more and more of his land which is going gradually into the hands of money lenders and merchants who do not form a part of the hereditary pattern of the village. They have no ties of common life with the villagers and are beyond the vengeance of the villagers. The salvation of the village lies not in keeping isolated

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

and self sufficient in a primitive way but in linking itself organically to the other civic units. The tyranny of the caste system and the village group's isolation and inadequacy to protect itself have resulted in the loss of the whole of East Bengal which succumbed to Mohammedanism and of major parts of south western Mahārāṣṭra which succumbed to Christianity. These examples can be multiplied as they exist for each cultural area in India and they have created new barriers for creating a unified national life. Mohammedanism and Christianity by dividing people into believers and unbelievers have created new divisions without in any way obliterating the older ones. It is a feature of the Indian cultural process that its contact with each new culture creates new problems and solves no older ones.

The scattering of cultural entities, the complete lack of a central political power as also of a central religious body and the resulting isolation and stagnation have preserved the Hindu social organization in spite of the powerful attacks of Christianity and Mohammedanism. A village or a caste or even a whole region could be converted without affecting the rest. The looseness of the bond between social groups was such that if one changed over to new modes or was lost the rest did not feel the shock. Hindu religion could not be attacked centrally. So both the gains and losses became localized and finally the rising tide of national consciousness put a stop to further conversion thus preserving the great mass of the Hindu population in its age long beliefs, customs, traditions and social organization. These have withstood pressure from outside. It is to be seen whether the impulse for change and reorganization from within can effect what outsiders have failed to do. One only hopes that while the changes destroy inequalities and injustices in Indian society the essential tolerance, good naturedness and many-sidedness of Hindu culture are retained as the prized possession of all.

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL LIFE IN ANCIENT INDIA

INTRODUCTORY THE IDEALS

THE socio religious institutions of the Indians in their evolution were guided by the belief in the eternity of the existence of each individual man. They took their characteristic shape and form under the guiding principle that they must help man in his struggle for the eternal progress of his soul—in his endeavours to reach by a life of rigorous discipline and purification the highest levels of spiritual bliss. This it was recognized was the *summum bonum* of life its maximum happiness to be realized. The pervasive spirituality of Indian culture attracts our notice at every turn from the earliest times of which we have any record the Indo Aryan had his eyes turned to the eternity of existence beyond death rather than to the short lived joys and sufferings of this world the interests of which he did not entirely overlook. It was discovered early in the evolution of Indian civilization that the path to the final goal to immortality to the eternal life of bliss lay through renunciation of material enjoyments and not through acquisition¹

The basis of Indian society was a sort of realistic idealism. The practice of life was made to agree with its philosophy there was no partition wall in the Indian mind between the secular and the spiritual which were wonderfully blended into a harmonious whole. Social institutions in their evolution gave expression to the principles thus lying in the background. The Indian life in all its aspects both in its ordinary daily course and in the more important relations was bound up with religious observances calculated to bring about a realization of the ultimate truths by a graduated course of mental and moral discipline. Even the care of the physical body was looked upon as a sacred duty.

In his relation to the rest of society the individual according to the Indian scheme lays stress upon his duties—his *dharma*—by which he is to secure his own advancement and thus he may be distinguished from the European who emphasizes his rights. At his very birth an individual is born charged with liabilities as the Brāhmaṇa works declare. 'Verily, whoever exists is born as owing a debt to the gods to the *ṛsis* to the fathers, and to men'². A verse in the *Atharva Veda* gives expression to this solicitude for getting freed from all debts and obligations. Debtless in this

¹ *Kaivalya U* 2
² *Taitt Br* VI 3 10 *śat Br* I 7 2 1

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

world debtless in the other debtless in the third world may we be what worlds there are traversed by the gods and traversed by the fathers may we abide debtless on all those paths³ We find this sense of debts working in the Indian mind at all stages of the evolution of Indian civilization.

When a man has paid the three debts let him apply his mind to the attainment of final liberation he who seeks it without having paid his debts sinks downwards—thus declares Manu⁴ In fact this appreciation of the debts to be cleared off that is of the duties to discharge has a powerful hold over the Indian mind.

THE FOUNDATIONS OF INDIAN SOCIETY

The framework of ancient Indian society was founded upon *varna* and *āśrama*—a fourfold classification of the entire people into *varnas* (castes) and a fourfold division of the life of each individual into *āśramas* (stages). We shall begin with a few observations on the part played by *varna* in the carrying out of the Indian ideals.

VARNA

The Indo Aryans were divided into three classes among themselves—Brahman Rājanya and Viś in the earlier age and Brāhmana Ksatriya and Vaiśya in later times. The first class included those who devoted themselves to a conservation of the ancient ideals they were to maintain and develop the ancient ritual which was already elaborate in the Rg Vedic times they were to probe the mysteries of the universe to investigate the relation between the supreme Spirit and the individual soul and besides to find out how best to translate the truths discovered into actual practice. Therefore the conduct of a Brāhmana is naturally characterized by tranquillity self-restraint penance purity, forgiveness straightforwardness knowledge wisdom realization of truth and faith⁵ These selfless workers and thinkers naturally took the lead in a society whose ideals were spiritual. The second class was charged with the task of protecting the people of defending them against foreign aggression and hence worldly power and rulership came naturally to the Ksatriya. His conduct is naturally characterized by prowess dignity fortitude skill presenting an undaunted front in battle liberality and lordliness⁶ and he must abstain from attaching himself to sensual pleasures⁷ Sometimes though but rarely there was an interchange of functions between these two classes. Some Brāhmana families like the Jamadagnis and some Bharadvājas took to fighting and some Ksatriyas to metaphysical investigations. Brāhmana

A V VI 117 3
Ibid XVIII 43

VI 35
Manu I 89

B G XVIII 42

householders of high position and great Vedic learning had no scruples in repairing to kings like Aśvapati Kaikeya or Pravāhana Jaivali for instruction in truths known to them⁸ The third class formed the general mass of the Aryan people They were the producers of wealth in the community and formed the basis upon which the other two classes of society the Brahman and the Ksatra rested⁹ The normal duties of the Vaiśya comprehended agriculture cattle rearing and trade¹⁰ In the whole social policy the Vaiśya was in charge of agriculture industry and commerce the Ksatriya of political and administrative functions and the Brāhmana of the spiritual concerns It was incumbent upon every member of these three classes that made up the Aryan community to study the Vedas the great storehouse of ancient traditions and ideals so that the people might not forget them and fall off from the standard set up by them

The Aryan community was further enlarged by the addition already in the Rg Vedic Age of a fourth class the Śūdras mainly recruited perhaps from the aborigines Their normal function was service They could not be expected to study the Vedas the language and the culture being strange to them but for their spiritual uplift they had access to the great body of traditional lore drawn up in popular speech—the Itihāsa and the Purāna—which had grown up as distinct departments of Indian literature so early as the time of the *Atharva Veda*¹¹ and in the Brāhmanas these branches of literature are given the rank of the Fifth Veda¹² The Indian method of conversion of a primitive people is not by forcing its own culture upon them but by a slow process of infiltration and absorption which is still going on teaching them more by example than by precept

THE ĀSRAMAS

The *āśramas* are four life stages with a graduated course of duties calculated to lead an individual step by step towards a realization of the supreme spiritual ideal they are stages through which by intensive exertion and effort (*śrama*) of the body and the mind by acts of religious exercise and austerity by self denial and self discipline one may bring one's whole self under subjection Hence Deussen properly translates *āśramas* by places of mortification and rightly observes The whole life should be passed in a series of gradually intensifying ascetic stages through which a man more and more purified from all earthly attachment should become fitted for his *asta* (home), as the other world is designated as early as the

⁸ *Chā U* II 4 § 6
¹ *XV* 6 4 etc

Śat Br XI 2 7 6
² *Chā U* VIII 1 2 4

B G XVIII 44

Rg Veda (X 14 8) The entire history of mankind does not produce much that approaches in grandeur to this thought ¹³

The first stage is that of the *brahmacarin*—the student—who has to study the Vedas so that he may be acquainted with the high standard of spiritual perfection that it should be the ambition of his life to reach and to pass through a course of rigorous discipline so that he may be trained successfully to withstand the temptations that flesh is heir to specially the sex impulse chastity and continence are specially associated with the *brahmacarin*

The next stage of life is that of the *grhastha* or house holder the main stay of the whole social structure and his most imperative duties are to set up a family to beget offspring and to progress towards the ideal by sacrifice worship charity and renunciation Placed as he is in an environment ordinarily unfavourable to spiritual growth the *grhastha's* struggle is taken to be the hardest As Manu observes The duties of this order which cannot be practised by men with weak organs of sense must be carefully observed by him who desires imperishable bliss in heaven and constant happiness in this life ¹⁴ But the duties of these two stages of the student and the householder if conscientiously discharged would lead him to the ultimate goal and save him from all chances of rebirth as stated by the *Chāndogya Upanisad* when it rounds up its teachings at the very close of the work He who has learnt the Vedas from a family of teachers according to the sacred rule in the leisure time left from the duties to be performed for the teacher who after receiving his discharge has settled in his own house keeping up the memory of what he has learnt by repeating it regularly in some sacred spot who has begotten virtuous sons and concentrated all his senses on the Self never giving pain to any creature except at the *tirthas* (sacrifices etc)—he who behaves thus all his life reaches the world of Brahman and does not return yea he does not return ¹⁵

The householder when he sees signs of old age coming upon him—when his hair is growing grey and his sons or daughters are getting children of their own—should be ready to renounce the comforts of settled life at home to retire from the world ¹⁶ to give up all desire for children desire for possessions and desire for the world as the *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad*¹⁷ puts it He leaves the crowded habitation of men becomes a *vānaprastha* a resident of the forest where he castigates the body to purify the soul and lives upon such wild berries and herbs as the forest may offer him The rule about confining himself to the forest is very strict He shall never

¹³ *The Philosophy of the Upanisads* (Eng. trans. by A. S. Geden) p. 367
 III 79 VIII 15 *Manu* VI 2
 III 5 1

enter a village not even step on ploughed land and he shall wear a dress of materials procured in the woods. He may build there a hut and live in the company of his wife but it must be a life of chastity and austerity. The *vānaprastha* takes his fire also to the forest and offers in it the daily oblations to the gods morning and evening he has to recite the Vedas regularly to make offerings to the manes to receive guests of all castes with hospitality and to feed all animate beings that is he has to attend to the five great sacrifices (*mahāyajñas*) with wild growing forest produce—fruits roots and herbs he may hoard these things for a short while but he shall not eat anything that has been hoarded for more than a year ¹⁸

In the last quarter of his span of life a man enters into the fourth stage which offers him a final and certain means of reaching the supreme goal of acquiring a knowledge of the Self and of emancipation from the bondages of life and death ¹⁹. He devotes himself more intensively and exclusively than ever before to the supreme quest of life unfettered by any duties and obligations absolutely detached from hearth and home from friends and relatives from caste restrictions and sacrificial observances. The *yati* (one who has restrained his passions and senses) builds no hut keeps up no fire stores up nothing (*anīcaya*) and calls nothing his own (*amama*). He shall live without a fire without a house without pleasures without protection says Āpastamba ²⁰. He is absolved from making offerings to the gods or men he discontinues performance of all ceremonial observances. He shall wear clothes thrown away by others as useless ²¹ to cover his nakedness ²². He shall not wear any visible mark of his order nor follow any visible rule of conduct ²³. On the bare ground only is he to sleep ²⁴. The forest shall be his constant abode and he shall not wander about even within sight of the village cattle ²⁵. He shall enter a village only in order to beg after the people have finished their meals when the kitchen fire has been extinguished and when the cleansing of the dishes has been finished ²⁶. He shall beg just as much food as will sustain his life he must not eat even so much as will fully satiate his hunger ²⁷. He is not to stay a second night in the same village but he wanders about neither caring for this world nor for heaven. Perfect equanimity of mind he has to strive for. Let him not be dejected when he obtains nothing nor glad when he receives

For rules about *vanaprasthas* reference may be made to *Āp Dh S* II 9 21 18 and II 9 23 2 *Baudh Dh S* III 3 *Gaut Dh S* III 25 34 *Vas Dh S* IX *Manu* VI 1 32 *Yāj* III 44 55 etc.
The rules about *sannyasins* are given in *Āp Dh S* II 9 21 7 20 *Baudh Dh S* III 6 21 7 and II 10 *Gaut Dh S* III 10 24 *Vas Dh S* X *Manu* VI 33 86 *Yāj* III 56 66 etc.
Āp Dh S II 21 10 *Gaut Dh S* III 18 9
Vas Dh S X 18 *Ibid* X 10 1 *Ibid* X 15 6
Baudh Dh S II 11 22 *Vas Dh S* X 25

something Let him only ask as much as will sustain life without caring for household property He forsooth knows the road to salvation who cares neither for a hut nor for water nor for clothes nor for a house nor for a seat nor for food nor even for holy places ²⁸ He is free from all injunctions and prohibitions He shall be even minded (*sama*) towards all creatures in an injury as well as a kindness He shall not take life in any form not even by crushing a seed He shall not take parts of plants and trees except such as have become detached spontaneously ²⁹ The *muni* (man of meditation) who wanders about at peace with all creatures forsooth has nothing to fear from any living being But he who becomes an ascetic and does not promise safety from injury to all beings destroys the born and the unborn and so does an ascetic who accepts presents ³⁰ The *yoti* must live in chastity (*urdhvaretas*) he shall not enjoy objects of sensual gratification He must restrain his speech his eyes and his actions Abandoning truth and falsehood pleasure and pain this world and the next he shall constantly seek in his heart the universal Soul Freedom from future births is certain for him who constantly dwells in the forest who has subdued his organs of sense and action who has renounced all sensual gratification whose mind is fixed in meditation on the supreme Spirit and who is wholly indifferent to pleasure and pain ³¹ Let him not desire to die let him not desire to live let him wait for his appointed time as a servant waits for the payment of his wages ³² A twice born man who wanders about (*parivrajati*) after the successive performance of the above mentioned acts, shakes off sin here below and reaches the highest Brahman ³³

The last stage of the *yati parivrajaka* or *sannyāsin* is meant says the *Vaikhāṇasa Dharma Sūtra* only for a Brāhmana who according to the *varna* constitution of Indian society is required to pass through a more rigorous course of self-denial and discipline than the others and is thus better fitted to take up this life of absolute surrender to the ideal taking into no account the severe physical endurance and hardship demanded of him in ripe old age Three stages ending with that of the forest recluse are ordained for the Kṣatriya who by the nature of his duties and station in life has a greater taste of worldly comforts and power the last stage of severe mortification was found for the majority of them perhaps too strenuous The Vaiśya whose outlook on life was mainly economical governed by the acquisition of wealth found it too much of a hardship to renounce the comforts of life in advanced years hence the first two *āśramas* alone are prescribed for him he ends his life as a householder The Śūdra having not to study the Vedas knows only the householder's stage of life

²⁸ *Ibid* X 22 3
Ibid X 77

Gaut Dh S III 20
Manu VI 45

Vas Dh S X 2 3
Ibid VI 85

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL LIFE IN ANCIENT INDIA

and none other. Nevertheless caste is no impassable bar to the realization of the supreme ideal as we find illustrated in the *Mahābhārata* in the case of Vidura who though born of a Śūdra mother was throughout his life marked by superior spiritual purity and attained we are told the position of a *yati* or ascetic at the fourth stage of life and as such it was ordained that his body should not be cremated. King Dhṛtarāstra with Gāndhārī and Kuntī however laid down their lives at the third stage.

A BRIEF HISTORIC SURVEY

In the *Rg Veda* the *āśrama* stages are not mentioned as such but the institutions of the student (*brahmacārin*) householder (*grhapatī*) and ascetic (*muni*) are already there³⁴. The *vānaprastha* is not mentioned in the *Rg Veda* and possibly the life after the householder's stage had not yet been divided into two grades. In the earlier Upanisads we find the same state of things but we see in them the *āśramas* taking a more definite shape though not yet fully developed³⁵.

This system of life stages developed in the Upanisads is found in full operation at the time when the Vedic Kalpa Sūtras were composed. It appears that the fourth stage of the ascetic as affording opportunities for reaching the highest state was growing into popularity in spite of its rigour and it seems that many persons were embracing it without passing through the regular sequence prescribed for the four orders. In fact according to some social legislators on the completion of the duties of studentship one is declared free to enter any of the *āśramas* at one's pleasure. Thus a student has the option of staying in his own *āśrama* up to the last day of his life as a perpetual and professed student (*naisthika brahmacārin*) or he may become a householder a hermit in the forest or an ascetic³⁶. The stories in the Buddhist Jātakas which are supposed to represent an early state of Indian society show how many young men on the completion of their education directly adopted the wandering life of the *rsi* and repaired to the sacred forests of the Himalayas³⁷.

Such indiscriminate admission of men into the ascetic order from any of the other orders without the natural gradation through the preceding stages was likely to draw into that order many undesirables who by their imperfect discipline were not yet fitted to be there and the social legislators felt that this influx of immature persons into the order of homeless

³⁴ R V X 109 5 (*brahmacārin*) VII 56 8 (*muni*) The householder (*grhapatī*) is repeatedly mentioned in the hymns.

³⁵ Cf. *Cha U* II 23 12 V 10 16 VIII 15 *Jabala U* IV

³⁶ *Āp Dh S* II 9 21 *Baudh Dh S* II 10 17 14 *Gaut Dh S* III 1 *Vas Dh S* VII 13

³⁷ Cf. Jātakas Nos. 99 117 175 273 528 in Fausboll's edition.

wanderers would tend to produce a general deterioration in the health of the society and besides to disturb the economic foundation of the whole social structure. They therefore insisted upon people passing from one order to the next in regular sequence, sought to press it home that the householder was the basis and support that held up the entire social frame, laid down severe punishments by way of penances for those who failed to keep up the standard of purity of the three ascetic orders of the *brahmacārīn*, *vānaprastha* and *sannyāsīn* and at last pointed out that it was not indispensable for an individual to enter formally into the ascetic order but that the highest realization was possible to a person who stayed at home but detached himself from worldly pursuits³⁸. Manu goes further than the Dharma Sutras by declaring: When the householder has paid according to the law his debts to the great sages, to the manes and to the gods, let him make over everything to his son and dwell in his house, not caring for any worldly concerns. Let him constantly meditate alone in solitude on that which is salutary for his soul, for he who meditates in solitude attains supreme bliss³⁹.

To understand this attitude of Manu's code in trying to dissuade the householder from a formal renunciation of the world, we have to take note of the time when the present version of Manu's code was compiled, viz. when Buddhism had made the order of ascetics more popular and more accessible than ever before. The Buddha had founded a new order of ascetics on the pattern of the ancient Brāhmanical ones, but while the older orthodox ascetic order had become restricted to the Brāhmana caste, the Buddha threw the gates open to all castes of all ages and he was even persuaded, though it is said against his inclinations, to admit into the order women also, who according to the Brāhmanical rules were ordinarily permitted to pass on to the *vānaprastha* stage and no further. Hence the Brāhmanical legislators felt it incumbent upon themselves to hold up the ancient ideals and to stop this senseless rush to the ascetic orders of men and women not prepared for them by a necessary course of discipline and restraint, hence the urgent and repeated insistence on the cultivation of the genuine ascetic attitude even at home, as distinguished from the formal entrance into the order. Besides, the tendency of this pseudo asceticism to lower the birth rate in the community was considered a criminal breach of social laws. When a young man is about to enter the world on the completion of his education, the teacher dismisses him with the injunction: Thou must not cut off the line of children⁴⁰. Manu proclaims distinctly that one who seeks salvation

Vide Āp Dh S II 9 21 2 23 24 24 15 Baudh Dh S II 10 17 5 6 Gaut
Dh S III 3 36 Vas Dh S VIII 14 6 Manu III 77 8 VI 89
IV 257 8 Cf also VI 95 6 Tar U I 11

without discharging his debt to his fathers by begetting children tumbles down the ladder of life—maiches farther off from the goal instead of getting nearer ⁴¹

Kautilya in his tough and ready way condemns such a man as a criminal liable to punishment by the State ⁴ Notwithstanding the prohibition by Kautilya of initiating women into the ascetic order it appears from his work that there was no dearth of women ascetics in his age The king is advised to employ an ascetic woman (*parivrājika*) who was a poor widowed bold and clever Brāhmana lady desirous of earning her livelihood thereby she would be honoured in the king's family and would frequent the houses of the chief ministers (*mahamātrakulas*) and work as a secret spy ⁴³ Ascetic women (*pravrajitās*) appear to have been employed by the Superintendent of Weaving in spinning ⁴⁴

On the condition of Indian society in the fourth century B C (when according to one view Kautilya was writing his work on polity) we have the independent evidence of Megasthenes the Greek ambassador at the Maurya court who speaks of the two orders of ascetics (*sramanas*) Thus we read Of the *sarmanes* Megasthenes tells us that those who are held in most honour are called the Hylobioi they live in the woods where they subsist on leaves of trees and wild fruits and wear garments made from the bark of trees they abstain from sexual relations and from wine they communicate with the kings who consult them by messengers regarding the causes of things and who through them worship and supplicate the deity Next in honour to the Hylobioi are the physicians since they are engaged in the study of the nature of man They are simple in their habits but do not live in the fields their food consists of rice and barley meal which they can always get for the mere asking or receive from those who entertain them as guests in their houses This class and the other class practise fortitude both by undergoing active toil and by the endurance of pain so that they remain for a whole day motionless in one fixed attitude ⁴⁵ The Hylobioi have been identified with the hermits in the third stage and the physicians with those in the fourth Megasthenes also says Women pursue philosophy with some of them but abstain from sexual relations ⁴⁶ These may be the women in the *vānaprastha* stage who practised austerities with their husbands or they may be ladies studying the Vedas (*brahmavādinīs*)

⁴ VI 35 7

II 1 19

Kaut I 12 8

Ibid II 23 40

McCrindle *Megasthenes and Arrian* pp 101 2

Ibid p 103

The Indian social legislators took cognizance of the whole life of man because as we have said his life was co extensive with *dharma* (duty)⁴⁷ and for them a man's life commenced not with his birth but from the moment he was conceived in his mother's womb. The sacred purificatory rites were to be performed from conception onwards from time to time in the course of his life up to his marriage when he becomes a full fledged citizen fit to take up the duties and responsibilities of a householder and occupy his proper place in the social organization and finally to realize the ultimate goal of human life—the union with the Supreme Brahman. Manu makes the significance of these purificatory rites very clear⁴⁷. Gautama and Vaikhānasa enumerate forty of these purificatory rites. Gautama however takes care to point out that the mere formal performance of these rites would be of no efficacy in securing the ultimate goal of human life unless they have developed in man the great qualities of the inner self the *ātmagunas* viz compassion on all creatures forbearance freedom from over exertion (*anāyāsa*) auspiciousness (*mangala*) performance (of praise worthy deeds and avoidance of blameable ones) freedom from depression of spirit combined with pleasure in sharing with others whatever one possesses (*akārpanya*) and freedom from covetousness combined with satisfaction with whatever one may possess (*asprhā*)⁴⁸. Vyāsa in his Dharma sāstra (quoted in *Maskarī bhāṣya* on the above Sūtras of Gautama) defines the eight great qualities at some length and declares that one possessed of all these qualities would reach the sphere of Brahman and also by the performance of the purificatory rites. Harīta (quoted in the *Parāśara Mādhaviya*) distinguishes between two groups of *samskāras*—*brāhma* and *daiva*—one sanctified by the first group of rites (beginning with *garbhā dhana*) attains to equality and union with the *ṛsis* while another purified by the *daiva* sacraments acquires equality and union with the gods.

There are three—according to some four—sacramental rites before birth. One of them *pumsavana* is performed specifically for the birth of a male child but in all the other rites also including the *sosyanti homa* performed just before the moment of birth there is manifest a strong desire for the birth of a male child. The desire for a male child so predominant in the Indian mind seems to have had a reason. The Indo Aryan family organization being patriarchal a son was necessary for the continuance of the family line for performing the necessary funeral rites for presenting oblations of food and water for the satisfaction of the manes, and also for succeeding to the family property. Even in the *Rg Veda* we

⁴⁷ Manu II 26 8

Gaut Dh S VIII 21 3

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL LIFE IN ANCIENT INDIA

find this desire for a son expressed in many passages some of which indicate that though adoption was prevalent it was not looked upon with favour ⁴⁹ The *Atharva Veda* ⁵⁰ which gives us glimpses into the secular life of the early Vedic times also shows the desire for sons in several of its hymns and many of these verses are used at the ceremonies of impregnation and male conception (*garbhādhana* and *pumsavana*) The *Āitareya Brāhmaṇa* ⁵¹ quotes several verses apparently very ancient about the blessings conferred by a son Similarly a passage in the *Satapatha Brāhmaṇa* ⁵² describing the ceremony of *garbhādhana* evinces the strong desire for getting a male child

STUDENT LIFE—MEANS AND METHODS OF EDUCATION

Education was compulsory for every youth of the three Indo Aryan castes in order that he might participate in the magnificent heritage handed down by the mighty thinkers of old the *ṛṣis* who built the Indian civilization and specially that his advance step by step towards the realization of the supreme ideal of human life might be ensured Hence student life was a life of *brahmacharya*—of rigorous discipline of body and mind which would harden the physical system to go through austerities without demur and drill the mind in the exercise of the moral qualities of self control self denial and self sacrifice In this scheme of Indian education therefore discipline and work occupied the first place and mere book learning was of minor importance The *Chāndogya Upaniṣad* distinctly lays down that the student living in the household of his teacher is to study the Vedas in the leisure time left from the duties to be performed for the preceptor ⁵³ The Indian system of education was education through work something quite distinct from mere book education acquisition of some truths by the learner and owned by him as a possession it aimed at the development of the inherent potential faculties through work—at the growth of a consciousness of strength acquired by overcoming resistance We all know the story told in the *Mahābhārata* ⁵⁴ how Ārūṇi of the Pañcāla country failing to stop the inrush of waters into his teacher's field laid himself down at the breach in the dike and continued there for hours until he was discovered there by the teacher who gave him the title Uddālaka as he came up in obedience to his call This one act of the young learner was enough to convince the teacher that his education was complete and he discharged him at once with the blessing All the Vedas will come out clear to you and also the whole literature on *dharma* and whoever has

| | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|---|----|----|------|----|----|----|----|---|----|-----|----|----|---|----|---|----|---|-----|---|----|----|----|----|
| | Cf | RV | III | 1 | 23 | 5 | 11 | 6 | 11 | 7 | 11 | 15 | 7 | 22 | 3 | 23 | 5 | VII | 4 | 7 | 8 | 34 | 20 |
| X | 85 | 25 | 45 | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
| | | V | 25 | 10 | 3 | VI | 11 | 3 | | VII | 15 | | | | | | | IX | 4 | 14 | 20 | | |
| | | | VIII | 15 | | | | | I | 3 | 21 | 77 | | | | | | | | | | | |

read the Upanisads knows that Uddālaka Āruṇi of the Pāñcāla country was one of the greatest seekers of truth pre eminent for *Brahmaṇḍya*

Reverence for the teacher and obedience to his behests form the indispensable requirements of a learner the student must practise the spirit of obedience and cultivate reverence but if the heart does not go out to the performance of the deed it is an empty formality A well known passage of the *Samhitopanīsad Brāhmaṇa*⁵⁵ quoted in the *Nirukta* and Dharma sāstras (Vasīṣṭha Viṣṇu Manu etc) gives expression to this fundamental principle of the Indian system of education very beautifully Science (*vidyā*) approached the teacher versed in *Brahmaṇḍya* (Brāhmaṇa) and charged him thus Preserve me I am verily thy treasure deliver me not to one who is full of envy and discontent one who is not straight in his conduct nor to one of uncontrolled passions—thus shall I be possessed of strength and vigour (*vīryavatī*) But deliver me as to a keeper of the treasure to him whom thou wilt know to be pure attentive intelligent and firm in chastity who will not grieve thee nor revile thee The man who fills his ears with truth frees him from pain and confers immortality on him the pupil shall consider as his father and mother him he must never grieve nor revile As those scholars who after receiving instruction do not honour their teacher by their speech in their hearts or by their deeds will not be of profit to their teacher even so that sacred learning which they acquired will not profit them

Education was imparted not for finding a career for a boy—that was fixed for him by his birth but for his spiritual growth the ceremony of *upanayana* marking the beginning of education was regarded as a second or spiritual birth⁵⁶ This birth for the sake of the Vedas ensures eternal rewards both in this life and after death it is exempt from age and death⁵⁷ Hence the age for the commencement of the discipline was determined according to the spiritual purity each lad was expected to develop For a Brāhmaṇa boy who was expected to take care of the spiritual welfare of the community and to set an example of ideal Aryan life to the other three classes this age was fixed by the *Gṛhya* and *Dharma Sūtras* ordinarily at the eighth year from conception but if it was intended that he should shine in *brahmavarcas* (splendour of the Vedas) that is attain special pre eminence in sacred knowledge then it was to be so early as the fifth year from conception⁵⁸ That is a Brāhmaṇa boy is to begin the severe life of discipline of the *brahmacārīn* at the tender age of four from birth In no case should the initiation of a Brāhmaṇa boy be deferred beyond the

Ch III

Ap Dh S I 1 1 137 Vas Dh S II 35

Manu II 146 8

* Gaut Dh S I 57

sixteenth year. In the case of the ruling and commercial classes the final limit was fixed at a more advanced age twenty two and twenty four. Failing to be initiated within this limit an Aryan youth forfeited his claim to initiation in the study of the Vedas and became an outcaste from society with whom no decent man would care to associate. Neither should any one accept such *vrātya* (degraded) youths as pupils nor teach them nor associate with them nor form says Gobhila matrimonial alliances with them. The descendants of such men as have forfeited the *śaṅkṛ* (a sacred text) for three generations are excluded from sacraments (*samskāras*) and to regain admission into Aryan society they must go through very arduous and painful penances and purificatory rites such as the *vrātyastoma*. In the Buddhist Jataka stories we find that Brāhmana and Kṣatriya youths who had neglected their education in early years felt it incumbent to commence it at sixteen. The Hāthīgumpha Inscription on the Udaygiri rock records that Prince Khāravēla of Kalinga about the second century B.C. passed fifteen years in boyish sports and in the sixteenth year his education was commenced.

Besides the usual discipline which was compulsory after initiation a student had to take up special vows (*vratas*) when he studied particular portions of the Vedic literature. Thus for example before a student began to study the *mahanāmnī* or *śakvarī* verses forming a supplement to the *Sāma Veda* he had to prepare himself by keeping a vow the *śakvarī vrata* for twelve nine six or at least three years. In case his ancestors also had studied these verses this period might be reduced to one year. Among the many duties connected with this vow the student was required to wear a single cloth and that a dark one and eat dark food he should keep standing during the day time and pass the night sitting when it rained he should not seek cover he was not to get into a boat unless his life was in danger that is he had to cross rivers by swimming after he had prepared himself by these and other austerities the verses were recited to him. Notwithstanding their hardships these vows were far from unpopular. Mothers while suckling their babies urged them Endeavour my little darling to accomplish the *śakvarī vrata* as we learn from an ancient passage in the *Raurukī Brahmana* (quoted by Gobhila in his *Grhya Sūtra*)⁵⁹ Other vows involving a more or less severe course of discipline had to be undertaken to entitle the student to study other parts of the sacred literature until he was discharged by his teacher.

When a young man obtained the permission of his teacher to retire from student life he celebrated his retirement by a ceremonial bath.

(*samāvartana snāna*) and was henceforth called a *snātaka*. He was considered to have fully completed his education if he was a *vidyā vrata snātaka* that is if he had finished his study as well as fulfilled all the vows properly. He would be a mere *vidyā snātaka* if he had acquired the knowledge of the Vedas but not fully accomplished his vows or even a *vrata snātaka* by fulfilling the vows but not finishing the Vedas. The first ranked highest the other two were of equal status. The mere acquisition of knowledge without the proper discipline was not given a high place in the Indian system of education.

A magnificent address by the teacher to the student on the eve of his retirement has been preserved in the *Taittirīya Upaniṣad*⁶⁰ embodying noble maxims told in words unique for their strength, brevity and vigour. We read of this Convocation address as it were in the Vedic Age. After having taught the Vedas the teacher instructs the pupil. Speak the truth. Do thy duty (*dharma*). Neglect not the recitation of the Vedas (*svādhyāya*). Bring thy teacher a present that pleases him and then beware not to break off the line of children. Swerve not from truth. Swerve not from duty. Disdain not what is good (for thee). Deviate not from (the path to) greatness. Neglect not to recite the Vedas for thyself nor to teach it (to others). Neglect not to discharge thy duties to the gods and the Fathers. Be thy mother to thee like a deity. Be thy father to thee like a deity. Be thy teacher to thee like a deity. Be thy guest to thee like a deity. Whatever acts are above reproach should be regarded not others. Whatever acts were good in our conduct thou shalt respect and not the others. Whatever Brāhmanas are better than ourselves thou shalt rest by offering a seat. Thou shouldst give with respect and not without respect with grace with modesty with fear with friendliness. This is the commandment. This is the instruction. This is the hidden import of the Vedas. This is the ordinance. Thus shalt thou act with worshipful regard. Thus should this verily be observed with worshipful reverence.

That this standard of life thus held up by the teachers bore ample fruit is testified to by the account the students gave of themselves in actual life as organic parts of the Indian social structure. We learn from Megasthenes (fourth century B.C.) that the Brāhmanas neither love gold nor fear death. Of people in general including all grades of persons in society the same foreign observer records. Truth and virtue they hold alike in esteem. They seldom go to law. That the ancient Indian system of education did develop the inventive faculty the power of making new discoveries through persistence in struggling against difficulties is manifest from the mighty

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL LIFE IN ANCIENT INDIA

achievements in the various departments of knowledge—art astronomy mathematics chemistry and medicine and especially in philosophy and metaphysics This disproves the fear that the memorization of the Vedas would tend to develop sharpness of memory to the exclusion of deliberate judgment The memorizing of good literature of genuine intrinsic merit is considered even by modern educationists an indispensable element of sound education In India it enabled the students to understand and respect their own civilization and culture the magnificent heritage left by their forefathers

THE HOUSEHOLDER

When a young man after the completion of his studies comes out as a *snātaka* or graduate he conducts himself decently like an educated man—he assumes a dignified demeanour in short as Gobhila⁶¹ puts it He is honoured wherever he goes a great being indeed is a *snātaka* says Āśvalāyana⁶² on the road everyone makes way for him and it is said that even a king meeting him shows him respect and yields him precedence⁶³ He is reverentially welcomed when he visits any house and he readily gets a bride

As soon as a man marries and sets up as a householder he enters a life of sacrifices He must realize that the householder is the economic support of the entire social structure composed of the four *āśramas* He is the bread winner of the whole social family He should therefore be ready to share whatever he earns with the other three *āśramas* and he must earn it by honourable means by following irreproachable occupations He should not hoard wealth⁶⁴ Every day of his life he has to offer to the gods and the manes to feed his guests and to give food to all animals before he sits down to his meal At the same time he must study the Vedas the first thing in the morning so that the traditional ideals handed down by the ancient *ṛsis* might not be forgotten

The importance of sacrifices has been great in the evolution of the religious and philosophical thought of the Indo Aryans The Vedas including the earliest hymns were compiled in their present form to aid in the performance of these sacrifices *Yajña* sacrifice or renunciation of things in favour of the gods as Kātyāyana⁶ puts it was the earliest form of religious exercise of the Vedic Indians In this worship no images were required but the worshipper renounced his claim to things by placing them in the fire and saying This is offered to Agni (Indra or Soma) it is no longer mine The animal that does duty for him at the sacrifice stands as a substitute for the worshipper himself At the end of the sacrifice liberal gifts

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

are made to the officiating priests and others sometimes the entire belongings of the sacrificer (*yajamana*) By these renunciations he becomes prepared for the greater renunciation afterwards of everything that binds him to things of the earth and for entering into the bliss of Brahman Some acquired immortality by renunciation say the Upanisads⁶⁶ Even in the seventh century we find Harsavardhana Śilāditya convoking a grand assembly and distributing there the stores of his treasures in charity⁶⁷

The duties of the householder are enumerated in every detail in the Indian sacred literature because as we have said his life was co extensive with *dharma*

FAMILY LIFE—POSITION OF WOMAN

Marriage according to the ancient Indian ideas is a sacrament and not a contract it is a sacred bond of union between two persons for their eternal progress through the performance of their duties In the ritual of marriage this relation through *aharma* is insisted upon The marital union is also a divine dispensation a heaven ordained relation therefore no one has a right to dissolve it—man cannot and should not separate those whom the gods have joined together She stands beside him in life and through death in the gladder life beyond she is not separable from him but a part of his very self⁶⁸

When the young man carries his wife home in a chariot (*vi vah*) the nuptial fire is carried with him and is set up in his house as his domestic fire it is the symbol of his married life It has to be kept up till he retires from the world from it the wife lights the kitchen fire in it he offers oblations (*agnihotra*) every day morning and evening jointly with his wife On all occasions whenever he makes any offerings to the gods by sacrificing in fire she always participates and co operates with him it is a duty which they have in common and therefore has to be discharged jointly⁶⁹ The position of the wife in the Vedic Age was therefore very high A man offers oblations to the gods jointly in a pair⁷⁰ they are like a pair of horses yoked to a chariot⁷¹ The seer Atri expressly tells Agni Married pairs worn out by devout rites jointly offer abundant sacrificial food Agni to thee who art mighty⁷² and Ghosā the lady seer speaks of the loving husbands who make their wives sit down at the sacrifice⁷³ The *Taittiriya Brāhmana*⁷⁴ declares There is no sacrificial rite for a man who is without a wife and

Kaivalya U 2
Yuan Chwang Life Book V Beal p 83
R V X 85 36 *A V* XIV 1 51 1 *Āp Dh S* II 13 12 cf *Manu* II 29 95
Manu IX 96 *R V* I 173 2 *Ibid* VIII 33 18
Ibid V 43 15 *Ibid* X 40 10 *Ibid* II 2 2 6

Panini⁵ tells us that the wife is called *patni* because of her participation at the sacrifice

The Rg Vedic hymns speak feelingly of the couple who are united in mind and the gods are invoked to shower their blessings on such a pair as they make their offerings to the gods together.⁶ This spirit of union comes out beautifully in the marriage ritual when after piling the seven steps together the bridegroom addresses the bride. A friend be thou having paced these seven steps with me the couple who paced seven steps together became friends. May I gain thy friendship may I never fall off from thy friendship may thou never fall off from my friendship. Let us unite together let us resolve together that bound in love and ever radiant in each other's company meaning well towards each other sharing together all enjoyments and pleasures we may unite our thoughts our duties and our ideals.⁷

In the *Atharva Veda*⁸ we find the husband and the wife offering a prayer for unity of mind. The eyes of us two be of honey aspect our face be ointment put thou me within thy heart may our mind verily be together. The author of another hymn inspires the members of a family with unity of mind and heart. Like heartedness like mindedness non-hostility do I make for you do ye show affection the one towards the other as the inviolable cow towards her calf when born. Be the son submissive to the father like minded with the mother let the wife speak to the husband words full of honey beneficent. Let not brother hate brother nor sister sister becoming accordant of like courses speak ye words auspiciously. Your drinking be the same in common your share of food in the same harness do I join you together worship ye Agni united like spokes about a nave. United like minded I make you of one bunch all of you by conciliation be like the gods defending nectar (*amṛta*) late and early be well willing yours.⁹

The tender affection of the devoted wife comes out in many a metaphor while the poets of the hymns are speaking with rapture of the gods whom they not only revere but also adore and love.¹⁰ The goddess of Dawn Usas resplendent in her beauty inspires the poetic fervour of the Rg Vedic seers who speak of her feelingly as a virgin as a youthful bride decked with every grace as a lovely wife who displays her charms to win her husband's

⁷ IV 1 33

Cf RV IV 58 8 V 3 2 VIII 31 5 9 84 7

Aṣṭamba Mantra Brāhmaṇa I 3 14

⁸ VII 36

RV I 62 11 66 3 73 3 IV 3 2

Ibid III 53 4

AV III 30 1 3 6 7

III 3 1 10

affection as a wakeful matron who rises betimes and wakes up the laggards and so on

The wife is identified with the Vedic Indian's house and home. The wife is verily the home declares a seer⁸¹ and the *Śatapatha Brahmana*⁸² asserts. The home has verily its foundation in the wife and we have an echo of the same sentiment in later literature. They say The house (one lives in) is not the home the mistress of the house is called the home (proper)⁸³

No greater calamity could befall a Vedic householder than the untimely death of his wife. The household fire now burns her mortal remains and becomes no better than the funeral fire (*savāgni*)⁸⁴. The widower must set up a new fire and seek a new partner at the daily offerings. Two courses are open to him—either he must forsake the world and become a forest recluse (*vānaprastha*) or he must marry immediately on the expiry of the period of impurity if he prefers to continue in the householder's state because the paramount duty of the householder the daily offering of the *agnihotra* cannot be carried on without the wife⁸⁵. Without such marriage he will be outside the *āśrama* scheme (*anasramin*) and this is incompatible with the entire scheme of organization of Indo-Aryan society⁸⁶.

The Rg Vedic hymns present portraits of a noble band of ladies illustrating the high position enjoyed by women in the Vedic Age as seers and sacrificers their independence and courage and their womanly love and conjugal devotion. There is no exaggerated colouring in the delineation of these characters they are drawn to life with a few masterly strokes—in a brief dialogue a short prayer or even a single verse of impassioned utterance. In the first place we may mention the dignified matron Viśvavārā⁸⁷ a lady of the Atri family who in her short but vigorous hymn of six verses reveals herself as a lady of forceful personality dignified and restrained making offerings to the gods for herself and withal she shows her woman's heart praying for an atmosphere of love and concord in her home. Next we have the picture of Indrasenā Mudgalāni⁸⁸ a heroic lady who bravely drove her chariot and helped her husband in winning hundreds and thousands of cattle well pastured in a memorable conflict in which both of them took part. It is probable that the fight was with a band of robbers who had lifted their cattle as the tradition puts it or it may refer to a hotly contested chariot race in which the husband and the wife succeeded in winning the rich wager of cattle as some modern scholars hold. Then again the sorrows of Lopāmudrā⁸⁹ draw our sympathy as she pines away

⁸¹ *Pancatantra* IV 81

Manu V 167 8 *Yaj* I 88

Cf. Dakṣa I 10

Ibid I 179

Kathaka Samhitā

R I V 28

⁸² *Ibid* X 102

hungering for the company of her husband (Agastya) who is intent upon austerities and penances. In later literature women are sometimes spoken of as leading men astray from the path of ascetic purity⁹⁰ But Varāhamihira enters a strong protest against such one sided condemnation for he says 'Those who from the ascetic point of view enumerate the faults of women to the exclusion of their virtues are it seems to me bad men their words do not proceed from good sense. Speak in truth what fault is there among women which is not practised by men? Out of audacity women are condemned by men they are superior in virtues says Manu⁹¹ The high regard for the wife in the Vedic Age also appears from the fact that she is regarded as the half that completes the husband⁹²

The two great Indian epics the *Ramāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* present a brilliant galaxy of grand women—some of the noblest figures that would do honour to any country and any age⁹³ And yet there is a striking difference in the types of women portrayed in the two epics. In the *Rāmāyana* they are soft gentle and delicate—Sītā Kauśalyā and even Kaikeyī who makes use of her husband's love for her in gaining her ends. On the other hand in the central story of the *Mahābhārata* apart from the episodes we have portraits of heroic ladies strong and impetuous mothers of heroes. We miss in the laments of Sītā the impassioned utterances of Draupadī in the wails of Kausalyā the boiling ire of Gandhārī a single glance of one of whose covered eyes was enough to maim a limb of Yudhisthira for the rest of his life. Nor can we omit from this list the brave Sāvitrī who could wrench her husband from the icy grip of death and who in her youth although exquisitely beautiful in every limb had such an aureole of dignity about her that she looked a veritable goddess and no young man would venture to seek her hand in marriage. Nor can we forget Vidula the heroic mother of Prince Sañjaya of the Sauvīras on the banks of the Sindhu. The son had suffered a crushing defeat at the hands of his neighbours the Sindhus and lay dejected and low and would rather save his life than risk another battle with his fierce enemies. But the mother would not listen to it the words of fire with which she sought to inspire her son and rouse him to action are told in more than a hundred verses in the *Udyogaparvan* of the great epic⁹⁴ and with a recitation of them the mother of the Pāndavas seeks to revive the drooping spirits of her sons. This section of the *Mahābhārata* has deservedly been designated *jaya*

⁹⁰ Cf. *Manu* II 213 5
Taitt Br III 3 3 5 *Sat Br* V 2 1 10 *Āit Br* VII 13 *Gopatha Br* I 1 2
⁹¹ Cf. *Manu* IX 45
⁹² Cf. the weighty arguments of Mrs. Annie Besant (*The Dawn* Oct 1901 p 82) and Monier Williams *Indian Wisdom* pp 378 ff
⁹³ *Mbh* V 133 6

(victory) and is ordained to be recited to a king when he suffers at the hands of his enemies. Out of the numerous women characters in the Purāṇas one stands out prominent Madalasa the queen of King Rtadhvja⁹⁵. She inculcated to her four sons the superiority of spiritual life to worldly life and thus enabled them to win emancipation.

It has been said that woman in ancient India was never regarded as man's equal and that she was not to be independent at any stage of her life. The question requires to be examined with some care. Equality as understood in the West means an equality of rights and in this sense it has no place in Indian thought where life is valued as affording opportunities for spiritual uplift through duties to be discharged by one's own self and not for claiming material comforts through rights to be asserted against others. Equality of rights the Indian sages never discuss except as regards the common human right of winning salvation and equality of duties for all persons irrespective of inherent differences is an impossibility in the family, the society or the nation.

Each unit in the whole organic scheme of society has its own function and a neglect of this function will bring down its own punishment. This applies to woman as it does to everyone else. That the husband is not doing his duty to her is no excuse for the neglect of her own duty. Hence even if the husband be bereft of virtues a wife who cares for her own spiritual progress must not neglect her own duty towards him⁹⁶. Her duty is to serve the husband not to seek service from him.

Her duties as a mother are too exacting to permit a woman to pass through the course of rigorous discipline and austerities requisite for moral purification and spiritual advance. Therefore the scriptures assure her that if she but carries out her own duties and associates herself with her husband in the religious exercises she fully shares in the advance towards the goal. Therefore in the joint performance of their duties the wife is to follow the initiative of the husband and these duties are determined by his *varna* and *āśrama*. Hence Gautama⁹⁷ ordains. A wife is not independent with respect to (the fulfilment of) the sacred duty and he adds⁹⁸.

Let her not violate her duty towards her husband. She must not supersede her husband. She should be restrained in word in look and in deed. The wife can have no religious observances apart from those of her husband.

There is no sacrificial performance nor a vow nor a fast for women apart from their husbands as she attends upon her husband she will for that reason be exalted in heaven says Manu⁹⁹. The *Viṣṇu Smṛti*¹⁰⁰ and the

given in marriage and only once does a man say I give ¹¹⁶ The husband dies but really he is not dead he is waiting on the other side where she is sure to go if she does not insult his memory ¹¹⁷

In practical life some widows did find this ideal of conjugal fidelity too high for themselves as will appear from the reference to the *punarbhū* (the re married woman) or her son in Dharma sāstras ¹¹⁸ and remarriage is definitely permitted by some of the comparatively late Dharma sāstras

When her husband says Nārada (who is generally placed about the early centuries of the Christian era) is lost (i.e. gone no one knows whither) or dead or is impotent or has become a religious ascetic or been expelled from caste these are the five cases of legal necessity in which a woman may be justified in taking another husband ¹¹⁹ Parāśara who belongs to the same period repeats this ¹²⁰ but says in the very next verse that a life of *brahmacarya* would be immensely preferable

Vātsyāyana who gives a matter of fact account of the society of his time presents a beautiful and detailed account of the life of a remarried woman—her privileges and her limitations There could be no regular marriage for a widow but if she was too weak to restrain herself she might join a man who was a seeker after pleasures (*bhogin*) In the selection of her second master Vātsyāyana advises her to be guided by the natural inclinations of her own heart The *punarbhū* in her new home enjoyed a degree of independence unknown to the wife wedded according to the sacramental rites At her lover's house she assumed the role of a mistress patronized his wives was generous to his servants and treated his friends with familiarity but was not permitted to participate in his religious observances She cultivated a greater knowledge of the arts than his wedded wives She took part in his sports and festivities drinking parties and so on She might leave her lover (*nāyaka*) but if she was driven out she did not give back anything In the king's harem where there were separate quarters for the various categories of women the *punarbhū* occupied chambers midway between the queens who were quartered in the innermost apartments and the courtesans and actresses in the outermost and this exactly indicated the position occupied by the remarried woman in society In the ordinary households also the wedded wife who participated with her husband in the religious rites lived in comparative seclusion in the inner apartments and never came out to receive his friends nor joined his sports and parties In Vātsyāyana's time it appears public opinion

Ibid IX 46
Ibid V 151 Also cf *Manu* V 156 8 166 IX 65 6
Vasistha XVII 19 20 *Manu* IX 60 69 70 175 6, *Visnu* XV 7 9 *Yaj* I 67
Nārada Śrīrāmā St 97 Cf *Agnī* P 154 5 6
² *Parāśara* IV 30

permitted the widow to live with the man of her choice but she could never receive the same regard nor acquire the same social status as the married wife^{1 1}

Even the man who took a widow to wife had to suffer from certain disabilities. Manu¹²² prescribes that the husband of a re married woman is to be excluded from *śrāddha* (memorial rites)

It appears that the re marriage of a widow was in vogue in India from early times. It is known to Vasistha¹²³ Kautilya whose *Arthasāstra* is certainly older than the extant *Manu Smṛiti* not only allows the widow to remarry but also the wife whose husband has not been heard of for a long time. Vatsyāyana who belonged to the same epoch as Nāiada and Parāśara makes it very clear that the position of the re married widow approaches nearer to that of a mistress than that of a wedded wife. Widow marriage was never looked upon with favour by Indo Aryan society and whatever vogue it may have had in early times up to the early centuries of the Christian era it gradually fell into disfavour and still later writers on law prohibited it as a custom not to be observed in the later times—as a *kalī varjya vidhi*. Mādhavācārya the great commentator on Parāśara in his comment on the above quoted passage of Parāśara¹ quotes a text from the *Āditya Purāṇa* to show that the re marriage of a married woman was not to take place in the *kalīyuga*¹²⁶

CONCLUSION

The Vedic Indians made a supreme effort to understand the fundamental meaning and the purpose of life. They discovered that life was a continued pilgrimage to the infinite and the eternal and they applied the truths discovered in the course of their philosophical investigations to the organization of society—made philosophy the essential basis of everyday life and activity. Success in reaching the ultimate goal lies according to the Indian scheme of society in each unit of the whole social organism attending to its own duty as determined by its environments its varying stages of life as well as sex. The very fact that this society with spiritual freedom as its goal has endured so long notwithstanding the terrible onsets of cultures basically different from its own is a proof that there is truth in the principles underlying its structure—that it is broad based upon the fundamental truths of human life. Nevertheless it cannot be denied that

Chakladar *Social Life in Ancient India* *Studies in Vatsyayana's Kamasutra* (Calcutta 1929) pp. 181-4
III 166
IV 30

XVII 19-20

Kaut. III 4

For a fuller treatment of the prohibitions in later times see Batuknath Bhattacharya *Kalivaijyas* (Calcutta 1943)

this social organization is decadent owing not so much to external opposition or any inherent weakness in the ideal but to a falling off from the ideal itself. The decay set in when the spirit of the law through which the ideal found expression came to be lost sight of and the letter of the law acquired an undue importance. The rules and ordinances sanctions and prohibitions governing popular life and activity came to be obeyed without enquiry about the spirit and sometimes in violation of it. The essence of religion was sacrificed to form and convention to dead ritual and lifeless worship. The buried spirit has to be rediscovered and the law flamed anew where needed and obeyed with a consciousness of the spirit within.

There is need however to guard against false spirituality—against inactivity and sloth passivity and feebleness which not infrequently masquerade as spirituality. Genuine spiritual life must be intensely and withal selflessly active, it will manifest itself in purity in clear vision in cheerful and resolute devotion to a definite high purpose it can never consist in a base retirement from active life in passivity dullness and stolidity. This sham spirituality dreads trouble and hankers after security it is marked by ignoble ease and fear.

Added to this internal decay there is an inrush of external forces that has thrown us off our feet. The aggressive civilization of the West, with a conception of life which is mainly materialistic and thus fundamentally different from ours has caught us in its iron grip. Many of us have been blinded by the dazzling glare of its industrialism. They are beginning to think that our salvation lies through an importation of Western institutions, and are duped by the illusion of a so called progress which is quite often nothing but a positive retrogression. They would even unthinkingly introduce in our midst institutions that the best thought in the West has found defective and even harmful. But nothing short of a catastrophe like this could rouse us from the stupor into which we had sunk. It has given us an awakening for which we cannot but be thankful. Contact with Western life for over a century has now made it amply clear that the modern European or American life has its bright and dark aspects equally with the present day Hindu life. At this juncture we require a searching analysis of both the civilizations a critical appreciation of all that is great and good as also weak and defective in both the cultures. A comparative study of the two cultures by and for the Indians has become a vital necessity. Let us hope that this very struggle with an alien civilization will impart new life and vigour to us. Let this stimulus from without advance our growth not retard it.

Our case is not so hopeless as might at first sight be supposed. The

SOME ASPECTS OF SOCIAL LIFE IN ANCIENT INDIA

impact of Islam on Indian culture brought forth Ramananda and Kabir Nānak and Caitanya India accepted their interpretation of the purpose and meaning of life adopted the course of discipline and conduct sketched out by them and still follows their lead And the race of these supermen is not extinct yet That great souls like Sri Ramakrishna out of their abounding love for suffering humanity deign to come down and dwell amongst us inspiring us with their lives and precepts shows that there is still hope for us They shape their course not from injunctions and ordinances but from an intuitive perception of right and wrong from a direct vision of truth it is they who can break the shell of form and convention that hides the great truths embedded in our sacred literature and interpret them anew for us in words that we can understand and apply to our life it is they who can give us the true lead Even thus is vindicated the promise conveyed in the *Bhagavad Gita* that the supreme Spirit incarnates Itself when the need arises ¹²⁷

¹²⁷ B G IV 7

MONASTICISM IN INDIA

THE INSTITUTION OF HOMELESSNESS

MONASTIC orders and institutions are found in different ages countries and systems of religion and in the religious and cultural history of India monasticism has played a long and distinguished role Its institutional types in India dating back to various ages in their origin are presented by *vihāras āśramas mathas gurudvaras alīdas* etc They belong to different creeds sects and religions and differ widely in function and organization as well as in size and status But they all have the common characteristic of collective living for the sake of a higher spiritual life

In the religious history of man efforts for spiritual attainment have taken innumerable forms One form however seems peculiar to Indian civilization it is *sannyāsa* leaving one's home as well as kith and kin and embracing homelessness In no other civilization ancient or modern has homelessness a like significance or a similar institutional character It is from the Greeks that we have the first eyewitness accounts however scraggy and faulty of Indian *sannyāsins* but the institution of *sannyāsa* itself must have been a few centuries earlier¹ Its origin is unknown but we may infer that it was post Vedic from the complete absence of any allusion to it in the Vedic hymns In the sixth century B.C. if the earliest scriptures of Buddhism and Jainism reflect as scholars like Rhys Davids and others hold the traditions of life and society in eastern India of that age the institution not only existed but flourished Seekers after spiritual attainment would pass from home into homelessness (*agārasmā anagāriyam*—a standing phrase in the Buddhist Pāli scriptures to describe this condition) and the Buddha himself was one of them It seems that in that century the adherents of the institution the homeless men of religion formed a populous community in the north eastern parts of the country They were known as *parivrājakas* (wanderers *paribbājakas* in Pāli) which was a general name while special designations also were given to members of the community hitting off some aspect or other of a *parivrājaka's* condition of life—*sannyāsin* (one who has cast off home and worldly life) *śramana* (a toiler for spiritual life) *bhikṣu* (a mendicant living on alms,

¹ See McCrindle's *Ancient India Its Invasion by Alexander the Great* passim

In the Vedic hymns two classes of homeless wandering men are referred to viz *muni* and *vratya* in *R V* X 196 and *A V* XV respectively I have given my reasons for differentiating them from the *sannyāsin* in *Early Buddhist Monachism* pp 259

bhikkhu in Pali) etc. No creedal or other distinctions in the community were originally implied by these denominations.³

In later developments of Indian religion when differences of creeds and systems became more clearly defined the wanderers of each religion had their own body of practices, rules and regulations, disciplinary and organizational. The various names denoting the condition of the religious homelessness were appropriated by different religious systems: *bhikkhu* and *samana* by the Buddhists; *yati* (less commonly *samana*) by the Jains; and *sannyāsin* by the followers of Brāhmanism. The institution had its regulations in each system. In Buddhism these regulations are known technically as *vinaya* (conduct) and occupy a whole division (called *pitaka* meaning basket) of its scriptural collection. In Brāhmanism they are inserted *passim* in Sūtra (aphoristic) works, but an ancient body of regulations meant specially for the wanderers seems to have existed though it is no longer extant.⁴ In Jainism, however, no specific rules and regulations seem to have been devised except the rules of the observance of the *pajjūsana* (staying somewhere during the rainy season).

The institution of *sannyāsa* however went against the grain of the socio-religious culture which the Aryan founders of Indian civilization had sought to develop and stabilize. In both Pali and Sanskrit literature there are clear indications that the system which western scholars have called Brāhmanism was at odds with the institution of homelessness, termed Śramaṇism.⁵ But the latter seems to have enjoyed great popular esteem and the Brāhmanical sages who elaborated later the theory of life in four stages (*āśramas*) admitted homelessness as the fourth or last condition of life, but their preference was always for the condition of the householder which was the second stage.⁶

ORIGIN OF COENOBIUM

The development of coenobium (collective life under rules of discipline for the purpose of spiritual self-culture and self-realization) from the homeless wandering unsettled life of the primitive *religieux* was determined by a peculiarity of the Indian climate. India is the land of monsoon rains. There are two monsoon periods in India—an earlier and longer period at the end of summer and a later and shorter one in winter, confined to the north-western parts. These periodic rains have been a feature of the

For example, the *Br U* mentions Śramaṇa in contradistinction to Brahmana in IV 3. 22. Medhātithi in his commentary on *Manu* VI 25 refers to *śramaṇaka Sūtra* as an authority on the practices of a religious mendicant. Pāṇini refers to a *Bhīṣu Sūtra* by Parāśara in the *Aṣṭadhyaṣi* II 1. 10.

This was perhaps the *Bhīṣu Sūtra* by Parāśara referred to by Pāṇini. See fn 3. I have dealt with this point at large in *Early Buddhist Monachism* on pp. 60-74. The relevant passages are collected with translations in *ibid.* pp. 71-74.

Indian climate from primitive times There is a Vedic hymn which describes with picturesque effect the violence of these rains—how they congregate in the sky and oppress the earth with the fury of their torrents⁷ The meteorological factor had to be reckoned with and it appears that it was a custom of the primitive wandering community to suspend wandering and take up residence until the skies cleared making movements easy again An ancient custom is apt to assume in course of time a sanctity and ceremonial character It was so with the above custom of seeking shelter during the rainy season The wanderers of all religious persuasions observed the rainy season residence ceremonially The Sanskrit scriptures prescribe it for the *sannyāsins* the Buddhists call it *vassa* and the Jains *pajjusana*⁸

The manner in which this period of a wanderer's yearly round from three to four months was to be spent is prescribed in Buddhism with much elaboration With regard to the Hindu *sannyāsins* and the Jain *yatis* it is not so clear But it may be assumed that living in company was the rule In India it was the Buddhist monks styling themselves *bhikkhus* and differentiating themselves from the wanderers⁹ who developed coenobium to such an extent that settled life throughout the year at a monastery became the rule of religious life among them and wandering life became the exception

BUDDHIST AVASAS AND VIHARAS

It was the life of a perfect religious wanderer that the founder of Buddhism inculcated upon his followers who had gone from home into homelessness Let not two of you come along the same way¹⁰ is an injunction of his Free wandering life was perhaps the original ideal of the followers of the Buddha it is emphasized in a number of Buddhist scriptures and seems to have been traditionally retained as an ideal to be kept in view even when Buddhist monastic life and its regulations had been completely developed¹¹ Originally a Buddhist *vihāra* did not mean

A V IV 15

⁷ For the *sannyāsins* see *Āruneṣa Upaniṣad* IV *Gaut Dh S* III 13 *Baudh Dh S* II 6 11 20 For the Jain *yatis* or *samanas* see Jacobi's *Jaina Sūtras* (SBE) pt 1 p 296 For the Buddhists see section on *vassa* in (Pali) *Vinaya Piṭaka* (The *Āruneṣa* text for *sannyāsins* is *varsasu dhruvaṣiṣṭau mā śasanekāki yatisāreḍ dvāveva va*)

For example see *Pācittiya* (41) in the *Pātimokkha* where it is made an offence for a *bhikkhu* to deliver with his own hand food or drink to a naked ascetic or a *paribbajaka* Also *Cullavagga* V 23 2 (in the *Vinaya Piṭaka*) where *bhikkhus* and *paribbajakas* are distinguished (They are not *bhikkhus* but *paribbajakas*)

⁸ *Mahāvagga* I 11 (*ma ekena dve agamittha*) In the *Suttanipata* the *Theragathā* and the *Dhammapada* the unsocial eremitical life is recommended How to reconcile this ideal with the practice of monastic life is one of the two edged questions (*ubhayakotiḥ pañha*) put by King Milinda to Nagasena (41st Dilemma) See Treckner's *Milindapañho* p 211

a congregational monastery but a shelter for an individual *bhikkhu* from the inclemencies of the weather. The legend that describes the origin of *vihāras* speaks of a merchant of Rājagṛha building sixty *vihāras* in a day for the *bhikkhus* and the Lord blessing the donor for providing those shelters for them from rough wind and weather¹². They must have been mere cottages and convenient lodging places for individual eremites; the idea of coenobium had not yet developed.

At a certain stage probably in the fourth century B.C. the Buddhists thought of the observance of the *vassa* in company and of betaking themselves for at least three months in the year to congregational life and activities.

So they started staking out *āvāsas* (colonies) where during rains the *bhikkhus* could find what was termed bed and sitting accommodation (*senāsana*)¹³. An *āvāsa* was circumscribed by metes and bounds so that the residents therein during the period of the rain retreat formed a unitary communion.

The rules for the staking out of an *āvāsa* lay down that its limits must coincide with natural boundaries such as a mountain, a hill, a river, a wood, etc. but they must not exceed three *yojanas* nor extend to the opposite side of a river unless there were facilities for crossing. Within the boundaries thus settled, those who were allotted bed and sitting accommodation would form a communion of which a tangible token and ceremonial expression was found in the holding of a fortnightly congregational service called *uposatha*. There were rules of admission to and exclusion from the *uposatha* service calculated to safeguard the unitary organization of each *āvāsa*. The residents constituted what was called a *sangha* (brotherhood).

Within the boundaries of the *āvāsa* the lodging houses were called *vihāras* and they developed in course of time perhaps in a couple of centuries from the single eremitical to the larger congregational type from *vihāras* into monasteries. This development can be traced from the archaeological remains of successive ages of ancient Buddhist *vihāras* all over India. The oldest *Vihāras*, says Fergusson¹⁴, consist of one cell only, little hermitages in fact for the residence of a single ascetic. In the next class they were extended to a long verandah with one cell behind it. As these had however several doors opening outwards they probably were divided by partitions internally. In the third class and by far the most numerous class, the cell expands into a hall generally with pillars in

Cullavagga VI 1 5

For detailed treatment see *Early Buddhist Monachism* pp. 125-36 and Chapter VII (Communal Life at an *Avāsa*).

The Rock-cut Temples of India (1864) Intro. pp. xv-vi.

the centre and around this the cells of the monks are arranged. The archaeological evidence is supported by the developments in meaning and connotation of the term *vihāra* in Pali.¹⁵ In the picture of monastic life presented by the Pali Buddhist scriptures which date back in their contents in the opinion of competent authorities to the fourth century B.C. we find descriptions of these monastic colonies (*āvāsas*) with residential quarters (*vihāras*) scattered within their boundaries. In after ages however the *āvāsa* became obsolete; it was replaced by a single large and many mansioned edifice of brick or stone called *sanghārāma* (house for the Sangha) with adjuncts and outhouses and this was the type the Chinese pilgrim Fa hian saw at many places in northern India at the beginning of the fifth century A.D.

MONASTIC LIFE AND ORGANIZATION IN ANCIENT BUDDHISM

The life and organization of an ancient Buddhist Sangha i.e. a company of monks settled at an *āvāsa* ostensibly at first for the rain retreat but for permanent domicile afterwards had some outstanding and distinguishing features. It had been the custom among the primitive religious wanderers for each sect to be organized under a head who was called the Master (*satthā*). A convert to the sect would embrace the Master's faith (*dhamma*) and place himself under his guidance and regiment.¹⁶ But the sect founded by the Buddha developed after his decease a different organization which on the evidence of some Buddhist legends seems to have been looked upon by the contemporaries of other sects as somewhat strange and peculiar.¹⁷ The headship was abolished; all members of a Sangha were on a footing of equality and the principle of obedience to a Master was watered down to respect and reverence for instructors and elders and politeness to and consideration for equals. For the discharge of the functions of its collective life the whole body of monks constituted a perfectly democratic community at an *āvāsa*.¹⁸

It has been suggested¹⁹ that this peculiar organization of a Buddhist Sangha—the absence of headship, the recognition of equality of all members and collective modes of ecclesiastical action based on voting—was perhaps prescribed by the founder himself who had lived till his twenty ninth year in close touch with the traditions of the republican States. The religious

See examples given by Childers under *Parivenam* in his *Dictionary of the Pali Language*. In the Buddhist legends are instances of one religious wanderer accosting another with the questions: 'Who friend is your Master (*satthā*)? Whose Faith (*dhamma*) do you prefer? To whom is thy discipleship directed (*uddeśa*)?' See *Mahāvagga* I 6.7 and I 23.

¹⁷ See *Gopala Moggallāna Sutta* in *Majjhima Nikāya* where Vāsakara asks Ananda how in the absence of a *satthā* unity can be maintained in the Order (*Further Dialogues of the Buddha* Vol. II).

¹⁸ See *Early Buddhist Monachism* pp. 143-46.
K. P. Jayaswal *Hindu Polity* (2nd Ed. 1943) p. 44.

Sangha of the Buddhists it is suggested copied the political *sangha* with which the founder had been familiar in his youth

The Sangha could act only as a corporate body All its functions from the settling of the boundaries of an *āvāsa* to the enforcement of discipline on a delinquent monk were discharged in the name and form of *sangha kammās* (transactions or acts of the Sangha) The *Vinaya* section of the early Buddhist scriptures contains elaborate and sometimes complicated rules governing a *sanghakamma* Ecclesiastical acts are classified and the rules pertaining to each are meticulously laid down The form however is common In all cases an assembly of the whole congregation present at the *āvāsa* is called a Resolution (called *natti* meaning announcement) is put which is then formally declared to the assembly—a procedure technically called Declaration (*anussāvanā*) if the assembly does not signify by the token of silence its unanimous consent ballots (called *salakā* meaning voting sticks) are cast by all the members present and the majority opinion which is to prevail is ascertained by counting them ²⁰

It appears that a Sangha of Buddhist monks *vis a vis* the State in ancient India had the legal status of a body corporate—its rules and regulations being recognized and given effect to by the State as conventional law (called *samaya* in Sanskrit jurisprudence) ²¹ We find Emperor Asoka in his concern to prevent dissensions in the Sangha declaring in some of his edicts his intention to enforce the penal provision in the Buddhist *Vinaya* relating to the expulsion of schismatics

The principal religious ceremony at an *āvāsa* was the holding of the fortnightly service of *uposatha* The custom had its origin in the Vedic sacrifices called *darsa* and *pūrnāmāsa* performed on days of the new moon and the full moon respectively and the observance of these two dates as holy seems to have been taken up by the wandering religious communities of post Vedic Age though in their case rituals were substituted by religious discourses selected by each sect for itself At a certain stage the Buddhists appropriated the occasion to the recital of the *Pāṭimokkha* a fundamental code comprising a classified list of ecclesiastical offences and the penalties therefor The original code it seems was enlarged and improved upon and finally re edited for the ceremonial service It was ostensibly intended to be a confessional service ²² but assumed later on a purely ceremonial character since anyone guilty of any of the listed offences had to obtain

²⁰ The procedure of a *sanghakamma* is expounded in *Early Buddhist Monachism* (Ch VI Internal Polity of a Buddhist Sangha) Narada X 12 *Manu* VIII 219 and Medhātithi's comment thereon in which the *sangha* of the *bhiksus* is mentioned Sarnath Pillar Edict and other edicts *Mahāvagga* II 1

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

purification (*parisuddhi*) before being allowed to join in the service. It became only a collective symbolical expression of the communion of the monks much like the Christian Holy Communion.

There were two other ceremonies which were rather of a quasi religious character—*pavāranā* and *kathina*. They marked the close of the rain retreat (*vassa*). The *pavāranā* was a solemn conference at which each monk in turn requested the assembly to call him to account if they had seen or heard or suspected him to be guilty of any transgression during the period of the rain retreat. If proved guilty a monk had to make due amends by undertaking the prescribed penalty meanwhile he suffered exclusion from the assembly. The *kathina* was the ceremony of the distribution of robes out of the general store. It was conducted by an officer duly appointed by the Sangha in the *sanghakamma* form.

All property belonged to the Sangha and individual right to property was not recognized.

BUDDHIST MONASTIC CULTURE

Early Buddhism not being a religion of rites and ceremonies left a large scope for and laid great stress upon cultural development for every monk. There was a system of tutorship in each *avāsa*²⁴. There was also complete freedom of thought. In matters of doctrine no authority personal or academic was recognized and the insistence always was on perfect comprehension and honesty of thought and belief. Differences of opinion might lead to schisms in Sangha but schisms based on honest differences were allowed²⁵—to such an extent indeed that sects began to proliferate even at a very early stage in Buddhist history. The very atmosphere of an *avāsa* was surcharged with the spirit of questioning scrutinizing and debating this in effect bestowed on the members intellectual curiosity and abilities and they attained an extraordinarily high premium in a monastic community. An engrossing activity of the Sangha even from the beginning was the holding of learned debates on the doctrines (*Abhidhammakathā*)²⁶ starting thus with a strong bias for intellectual culture. Buddhist monasteries in their later development evolved a pronounced academic character. The

It was usual for a newly admitted monk to live at the monastery in tutelage (called *nissaya*) with a senior of at least ten years standing who was called in this relation *upajjhaya acarya*. The usual period was ten years. The very word *brahmaccariya* (meaning the learner's stage of life in Brahmanical scriptures) is used to describe the condition of a *bhikkhu* who lives in *nissaya* (*Mahāvagga* I 32.1).

See *Early Buddhist Monachism* pp. 191-96.

An *Abhidhammakathā* (Debate on the Doctrine) between two *Bhikkhus* is described in the *Mahāgosiṅga Sutta* (*Majjhima Nikāya* Ed. Pali Text Society I p. 214) in which the *bhikkhus* are said to put questions to one another furnishing answers and not collapsing but gaining edification by their discussion. These discussions perhaps provided the main contents of the *Abhidhamma* text books in the Pali canon.

scope of monastic culture and learning expanded from age to age. Purely canonical and exegetic at the beginning they drew into their purview in later times the results of the philosophical speculations of other systems of thought and religion as well. The continual interpenetration of Brāhmanical and Buddhistic elements so marked a feature of India's later cultural history is perhaps due in a large measure to the extreme catholicity and receptiveness of the Buddhist monastic culture of later ages.

BUDDHIST MONASTIC UNIVERSITIES

The earlier Pālī and the later Sanskrit Buddhist scriptures abound in references to particular monasteries of great contemporary fame and sanctity as well as of ancient foundations (e.g. Jetavana, Asokārāma, Kāñcī, etc.). But the history of none of them is traceable beyond occasional references. It is only at a late stage in the development of Buddhist monachism that some light on the functional side of the monasteries is received from the Chinese pilgrims. Two Chinese records, viz. Yuan Chwang's *Sī Yu Ki* (Western countries Record) and I tsing's *Nan hai chi kwei nai fa chuan* (Record of Buddhism written and sent back from the South Seas) containing accounts of their authors' experiences in India during A.D. 629-45 and A.D. 671-95 respectively are of especial importance in this context. We gather from these records that in eastern India a few monasteries called *mahāvihāras* (Great Monasteries) for the sake of their distinction developed under the patronage of the enlightened Gupta emperors (c. A.D. 320-500) primarily into the universities which were resorted to by teachers and learners and were organized on a more or less large scale as seats of learning. In the practices and observances of communal life their monastic character was maintained, as also the traditional religious and monkish atmosphere. But their *raison d'être* was decidedly cultural rather than religious. Fully equipped with the usual educational paraphernalia—professors and students, graded courses and syllabi, academic regulations, lecture halls, libraries, and even a system of examinations—they were practically universities in their organization.

Such monastic establishments having the character of a university, varying of course in size and reputation, were flourishing in Magadha and elsewhere in the east of India when the Chinese pilgrim Yuan Chwang was in this country. The largest and foremost among them was the *mahāvihāra* at Nālandā, of which we have accounts at first hand from both Yuan Chwang and I tsing. They agree in extolling this *mahāvihāra* with its thousands of residents as the most famous place of learning, the most eminent seat of scholarship and culture in the West, organized as a university, as distinct from an ordinary monastic establishment. As pilgrims and seekers after

knowledge came to Nālanda from the Far East so did young scholars in trepid in their eagerness to learn from the bleak trans Himalayan north. When Yuan Chwang was residing at Nālanda in A.D. 637-38 there was also a less known Tibetan scholar prosecuting his studies there. He was Thoumī Sambhota, an officer under the contemporary king of Tibet. After completing his Indian studies, this Tibetan scholar went back to his own country and expounded to the king the religion of the Buddha as he had learnt it at Nālanda. The king whose name was Sron Tsan gam po and who had a Chinese Buddhist wife was so impressed and convinced that he at once proclaimed it as the State religion of Tibet. This was at the end of the thirties of the seventh century.²⁷

It seems that at least for a couple of centuries after the time of Yuan Chwang and Thoumī Sambhota the University of Nalandā continued to function. Several manuscripts going back to these later centuries have been discovered in Nepal and Tibet in which the scribe states in the colophon that the copy was made at Nalandā.²⁸ Long after the Chinese records a descriptive account of Nalandā and its three vast libraries occurs in a Tibetan historiographical work of the seventeenth century and it also preserves a tradition that this age-old university ended in a conflagration started by a Turuska (Turk probably meaning a Mohammedan).²⁹

During the declining years of Nalandā after its heyday in the middle of the seventh century two other universities came to the fore—Odantapura and Vikramasīla, the former being the older.³⁰ Odantapura was located somewhere on the border between Bihar and Bengal and it was here that the illustrious Indian missionary of Buddhism in Tibet, Dīpankara Śrījñāna, deified by the Tibetans as Atīsa, received his education. Dīpankara, after completing his training at Odantapura, passed on to Vikramasīla where he was posted as the head of the establishment (*ācārya*) during 1034-48, after which he left the university for Tibet. The site of Vikramasīla has not been definitely identified yet. It is described in the Tibetan records as the most famous place of learning in the East, situated on a bluff hill on the right bank of the Gangā where the Holy River flows.

The story of Thoumī Sambhota from Tibetan sources is given in S. C. Das's *Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow* published in 1893 and now extremely rare.

²⁷ The works and the colophons are referred to *passim* in Rajendra Lal Mitra's *Sanskrit Buddhist Literature of Nepal* (1882) and S. C. Vidyabhusan's *Mediaeval School of Indian Logic* (1909).

²⁸ Sumpa's *Pag sam jon nang* (History of the rise, progress and downfall of Buddhism in India) edited in two volumes in 1908 by S. C. Das with a list of contents and an analytical index in English. The final extinction of Nālanda was probably synchronous with the Mohammedan invasion of Bihar. Taranatha, whose history of Buddhism in Tibetan is earlier than Sumpa's and was completed in 1608, says that when Bihar was sacked by the Mohammedans the Buddhist teachers fled to other regions (see Schiefner's German translation of Taranātha Ch. 37).

²⁹ In S. C. Vidyabhusan's *Mediaeval School of Indian Logic* there are two appendices on these two universities in which Tibetan sources of information are drawn upon.

northwards The university which was in its most flourishing state under the Buddhist Pālī kings of Bengal was a stately establishment with six noble gates each guarded by a university officer called the Guardian Scholar of the Gate (*Dvāra pandita*) The degree of *Pandita* (equivalent to Master of Arts) used to be granted by this university Its fame in Tibetan records is due in a large measure perhaps to its association with Dīpankara Śrījñāna (A D 980 1053) who was most probably a Bengalee ³¹

MONASTICISM IN OTHER RELIGIOUS SYSTEMS

It is in the Buddhist religion that monasticism flourished most Buddhist scriptural records define its typical features its laws and regulations and its corporate organization and historical records (Chinese and Tibetan) afford a passing view of some of its most important centres in India from the fifth century A D The monastic system was so well developed in Buddhism and its laws and regulations called *Vinaya* were so elaborate as to occupy a whole division of the Buddhist canon that western scholars have sometimes mis-conceived Buddhism as a religion for monkhood It is out of the institution of homelessness as we have seen that coenobium evolved and collective living during a part of the year was a fixed custom in the wandering religious community irrespective of credal and sectarian difference But it was the Buddhists who evolved out of the ancient custom a complete and well organized system of coenobitical life In Jainism there is nothing corresponding to the Buddhist *Vinaya* rules although the homeless *yatis* who adhered to the faith of Mahāvīra observed as well as the *bhikkhus* the customary rain retreat The Sanskrit texts which bear on the regulations of the life of a Brāhmanical *sannyāsin* prescribe only living at a fixed place during the rains without indicating whether singly or in company ³ The surmise is perhaps not a haphazard one that Buddhist *vihāras* being the most ancient in origin and growth afforded to other religious systems and sects the exemplar of corporate living of monks under discipline The

There is a contemporary Life of Dīpankara Śrījñāna written by Nag tcho a learned Tibetan monk who was sent by the Tibetan king to meet Dīpankara at Vikramaśīla and escort him to Tibet Nag tcho became Dīpankara's most prominent disciple The work is extant in Tibetan but has not been edited An abridged English version is given in S C Das's *Indian Pandits in the Land of Snow* Nag tcho records that after his first taste of Tibetan tea Dīpankara uttered some words of appreciation which are set down as *bhālo bhālo atī bhālo* These are Bengali words meaning Good good very good Dīpankara lived for thirteen years in Tibet and died at the age of seventy two at Nethan in the Tibetan interior where he was cremated A handful of his ashes and charred bones was deposited there in a tomb known locally as Sgro ma It was visited by Captain Waddell and is described in his book *Lhasa and its Mysteries* (1905) Dīpankara (under the Tibetan name Atīśa) is now among the Tibetan gods and an image of him among those of other gods may be seen in the Tibetan monastery (*gumbha*) at Ghoom near Darjeeling

In the *Āruneya* text quoted in footnote 8 the words mean one or two In his comment on the rule of Gautama *Dhruvaśīlo varsāsu* Haradatta interprets the first word as *ekatra* which may mean at one place or together preferably the former

institution is now well established in Hinduism under the name of *āśrama*

The term *āśrama* has undergone a development in meaning. Originally it meant a stage of life and then a hermitage to which a person in the third stage of life called *vānaprastha* used to resort. The hermitage was just a convenient shelter for a sage living aloof from the world but with family or a group of disciples. An *āśrama* in its current modern sense however is a different kind of establishment—a monastery where Hindu monks live together in a more or less organized and corporate society.

HINDU AŚRAMAS

Compared with the antiquity of Buddhist monasticism the monastic institutions of Hindu religion and culture may be said to be modern. Their origin is probably contemporaneous with the Vedāntic Renaissance in Hinduism led by Śrī Śaṅkarācārya I. Though there is still a good deal of chronological obscurity over the actual historical beginnings of the Hindu Neo Vedāntic movement some of its main trends seem to indicate that it must have arisen when Buddhism was in its decline as a religion but was yet active as an influence on forms of thought and cultural institutions. Perhaps this occurred in the early part of the ninth century A.D.

The central doctrine of Neo Vedāntism viz *māyā* (illusoriness of phenomena) was assailed by its late sixteenth century critic Vijñāna Bhikṣu as a surreptitious borrowing from Buddhism³³. Buddhism perhaps lent to the Neo Vedāntic movement the example of its monastic orders and institutions also. The legend is that the founder of Neo Vedāntism Śaṅkarācārya whose life however remains mostly a bundle of historically unverifiable legends founded four *mathas* or monastic establishments at four extreme corners of India—Josi Matha in the Himalayas Śringerī Matha in Mysore Sārada Matha in Gujarat and Govardhana Matha in Orissa. These *mathas* dotting India's extreme north south west and east are functioning still but how far back each *matha* goes in time and whether they were all contemporaneous in origin has not yet been investigated. But the particular legend decidedly points to the idea which probably inhered in the Vedāntic Renaissance movement of early ninth century of covering the whole of the Indian sub-continent with a network of Hindu monasteries as it

In his commentary called *Saṅkhyā pravacana bhāṣya* on the *Vedānta Sūtra* Vijñāna Bhikṣu says (I. 22) 'Where the modern so called Vedāntins show indications of Mayāvāda there however the traditional saying of God Śiva in the *Padma Purāṇa* beginning *Māyā vāda* is unorthodox tenet and is also Buddhist in disguise. O Goddess so I myself have said to pretending Brahmanas in the *kalī* Age is applicable owing to its affinity to the doctrine of the (Buddhist) Viśiṣṭadvaitins (*yat tu vedāntibruvanam adhunikaṣya mayavadasyatra lingam dīśyate tat tesam api viśiṣṭadvaitikadeśitaya yuktameva Mayavadamasacchāstraṁ pracchannam Bauddhameva cha Mayava kathitam deṣi kalau Brahmanarupīṇe Ityādi Padmapurāṇastha Śiva vākya paramparabhyaḥ*)' (See Garbe's edition in HOŚ p. 16)

had been in the past covered with Buddhist monasteries. Hinduism in the first flush of its latest renaissance sought to take the wind out of the sails of Buddhism by renovating and reaffiliating not only its philosophy but also its typical cultural institution.

When India passed under Mohammedan rule these centres of Hindu monasticism survived silently and kept up the monastic tradition which the followers of Kabir and Nānak in the fourteenth century followed and which obtained a footing in the *gurudvāras* of Sikhism.

The revival of the *āśrama* institution in modern India is mainly the achievement of the Ramakrishna Mission. It is however more a renovation than a revival for the Mission has given to the ancient monasticism of India a modern reorientation—a turn towards a new purpose, a new outlook and in its humanitarian emphasis a new relation to the welfare of humanity at large.

SOME ASPECTS OF THE POSITION OF WOMEN IN ANCIENT INDIA

WOMEN'S ACHIEVEMENTS

THIS survey of the position of women in ancient India may be begun with some account of their education. Girls in their early age were given lessons in dancing and singing. Princess Rājyasrī daughter of Rājyavardhana king of Thaneswar grew up in the company of friends expert in song and dance. Girls received their education at home with the help of teachers engaged by their parents. The result was that the women belonging to the poorer classes who could not afford to engage a teacher were deprived of the benefit of education. As Asahāya commentator of the *Narada Smṛti* who flourished in the eighth century A.D. remarks owing to the absence of education the intelligence in women was not as well developed as in men. Women particularly of the middle and upper classes could read and write. Nārada makes mention of the love letters exchanged between men and women. The *Pavanadūtā* and many other literary works of the period also refer to them.

In A.D. 1058 a lady named Māmakā wife of Dhaneśvara professing the Mahāyāna system of Buddhism caused a copy of the *Astasāhasrikā* to be written in the Saddharma cakṛa pravartana Mahāvihāra at Sārnāth. Ketaladevī queen of the Cālukya Vikramāditya VI (A.D. 1076-1126) of the Deccan was called Abhinava Sarasvatī for her literary achievement. Śilabhattachārikā composed poems in the Pāñcālī style in which there is a graceful harmony of sense and sound. The Poetess Vijayānkā of Karnāta was considered equal to Sarasvatī and again as second only to Kālidāsa. The poems of Devī a poetess of Lāta (southern Gujarat) are said to have soothed the heart of the people long after her death. Avantīsundarī wife of the well known poet Rājasekhara was a literary critic and earned also reputation as a poetess. Bālapanditā daughter of the Poet Dhanapālī was a poetess of great merit. About this time a poetess named Sītā lived in the court of the Paramara Bhoja. She composed songs eulogizing the achievements of Upendra the founder of the Paramāra dynasty. Other poetesses of this age included Bhāvadēvī, Rajakasarasvatī, Sarasvatī, Vikatanītamvā, Phalguhasīnī, Mārulā, Morikā and Vijjakā whose poems have been quoted in the anthologies. A lady named Rūṣā wrote a medical book on the diseases of women which was translated into Arabic in the eighth century. Tradition relates that Mandana Mīśra's wife Ubhayabhārati

(Śāradā or Sarasavānī) served as an umpire when there was a religious debate between her husband and Śankarācārya

MARRIAGE

The Dharma sāstra writers of the period viz Nārada and Brhaspati enjoin that girls must be given in marriage as soon as the signs of maturity become apparent. The marriageable age of a girl as given by Dakṣa, Angīras, Yama and Parāśara varies from eight to twelve. The father of a girl who fails to observe it is deemed to have committed a great sin. Bāṇa relates that King Prabhakaravardhana of Thaneshwar became anxious for the marriage of his daughter when she was nearing maturity. Al Birūnī (A.D. 1030) remarks that the Brāhmanas in India married girls twelve years old. Evidence however is not lacking about the marriage of girls at a fairly advanced age. Mr̥nalavatī, the sister of Taila II (A.D. 997) king of the Deccan remained unmarried even when she was mature in age. In royal families girls were sometimes given chances to select their husbands in an assembly of kings (*svayamvara sabhā*). The Cāhamāna Mahendra king of Nadula in Marwar organized a *svayamvara sabhā* for the marriage of his daughter. The Calukya Vikramāditya VI of the Deccan was selected as her husband by the Śilāhāra princess Candralekhā in such a *sabhā*. Ordinarily the selection of the bridegroom was made by the girl's father or by her brother with the father's authority or by the paternal grandfather, maternal uncle, agnates or cognates. In the absence of all of them the mother gave her in marriage. A girl having no such relatives could according to Nārada select a bridegroom of her own choice with the consent of the king.

CONDUCT OF WOMEN

Married women used vermilion. Women also used turmeric, saffron, *kajjala* (lamp black for the eye), betel, auspicious ornaments and articles for keeping the hair in order. The practice of using veils by women, particularly in well-to-do families, was in vogue. Prabhākara-vardhana's daughter Rājyasrī put on a veil when she met her husband, the Maukharī Grahavarman of Kanauj, for the first time. In the *Kādambarī*, Pratalakhā is described as wearing a veil of red cloth. It is known from Vacaspati Miśra (ninth century A.D.) that women in good families observed the *pardah* system and did not appear in public without veils. This was however not the general custom. Dhoyī, the author of the twelfth century poetical work called the *Pavanadūta*, relates that the women of Vijayapura (in Bengal) did not observe the *pardah* system. Harsavardhana's mother Yasomatī is found giving instructions to the ministers of the State before

her death The Arab geographer Abu Zaid (ninth century) reports that most princes in India allow their women to be seen when they hold their court No veil conceals them from the eyes of the visitors

The contemporary law books and the Purānas give us pictures of the ideal wife She was the mainstay of the domestic life and was a source of happiness Troubles and calamities were averted by her She took care of the family deity and entertained the guests She rose before the others paid reverence to the elders of the family and prepared food and condiments She worked hard like a slave offered food like a mother and gave advice like a counsellor in adversity She was absolutely devoted to her husband She revered him more than Śiva and Viṣṇu She served the Lord by serving him She took her meal after her husband She did not utter his name since this action was believed to shorten his longevity When the husband went abroad the wife removed her ornaments from her body She avoided decorating herself partaking of sumptuous food and drink as well as dancing singing and witnessing public festivals or spectacles When the husband came into the house she washed his feet offered him a seat and betel fanned him and wiped off his perspiration She did not mix with women who were hostile to her husband nor did she join the *samāja* (public festival) It is stated that as the body is purified by an ablution in the Gangā so a house is purified by the existence of a *pativrata* (chaste wife) Wives were to be protected by their husbands from evil The husbands were advised to achieve this end by being devoted to them and not by beating and tyrannizing over them Women would participate in the religious activities of their husbands but they could not take to religious fast perform *vrata* (a particular form of religious rite) or go on pilgrimage without the consent of their husbands Vilāsadevi queen of Vijayasena (1095-1158) of Bengal performed in the palace of Vikramapura a *homa* (offering in the fire) in which gold equivalent to a person's weight was given away The queen is not known to have performed this ceremony with the express permission of her husband Sometimes wives even subscribed to creeds different from those of their husbands The Gahadavāla Govindacandra (A.D. 1114-1156) of Kanauj had a number of queens of whom two were Buddhists The Pāla king Madanapāla (c. A.D. 1150) who was a Buddhist granted land to the Brāhmana Vateśvara Svāmin as his fee for reading out the *Mahābhārata* before his queen Citramatikādevi Mācīkabbe the wife of the Ganga Mārasīmha who was a Śaiva adopted asceticism and meditating on the Jainā attained salvation by fasting The Cālukya Jayasīmha II Jagadekamalla (A.D. 1015-1043) who was a Jain is said to have been converted to the Śaiva faith by his queen Suggaladevi Women do not seem to have

SOME ASPECTS OF THE POSITION OF WOMEN IN ANCIENT INDIA

suffered any religious disabilities. The Princess Pambabbe, sister of the Western Ganga Butuga II (A.D. 971) devoted her life to practising penance for thirty years. Many women entered the Buddhist church as nuns.

LEGAL PROTECTION

As regards the general treatment of women, Brhaspati says that a woman must be watched day and night by her mother-in-law and other women of the family. The same authority lays down that if a man violates an unwilling woman, his property is to be confiscated and he shall be paraded on an ass. The Smṛti writers of this period do not advocate the abandoning of the wife by the husband for adultery, but on the contrary allow her to regain all her normal rights after performance of the appropriate penance. The woman was to be abandoned only if she had conceived as the result of the adultery. Some later writers were more liberal in this matter. In their opinion the woman, even when she had conceived by adultery, did not become an outcast. She was considered impure till delivery; the illegitimate child born was handed over to someone else for rearing. Some Smṛtis and Purāṇas of this period condemn women for their moral lapses. But other authorities give us a different picture of the moral life of women. Women in general, says Varāhamihira (c. A.D. 500) are pure and blameless; they deserve the highest honour and respect. The same author castigates some writers for dilating only on the vices of women instead of their virtues. This picture of the character of women is reflected in the works of Kālidāsa, Bāṇa, Bhavabhūti and other classical writers of the age.

SUTTEEISM AND AUSTERITIES

The Smṛti writers of this period lay down that a woman after the death of her husband may become a *satī* or may lead a virtuous life according to the injunction of the Śāstras. Al-Bīrūnī also observes that a woman in India has to choose between two things after the death of her husband—either to burn herself or to remain a widow till her death. It is true that some Smṛtis and Purāṇas encourage the performance of the *satī* rite, as when Brhaspati says that a woman is declared devoted to her husband when she is his companion in his weal and woe and if she dies when he dies, or when the *Brhadharma Purāṇa* declares that a widow who follows her husband on the funeral pyre, though she commits a great sin, does good to the departed soul. The authorities, however, prohibit those wives who have not attained the age of puberty, are pregnant, or have children very young, from becoming a *satī*. Al-Bīrūnī similarly reports that women of advanced age and those who had children did not burn.

themselves. Although according to the same authority the widow preferred to burn herself because of ill treatment by her relations it is a fact that the widows were not coerced to do so during this period. As the merchant Sulaiman (ninth century) says the choice as to whether a woman would burn herself or not lay entirely with her. The practice of the *sati* rite can be traced with the help of historical records throughout this period. The wife of Goparāja the general of the Gupta king Bhānugupta is known to have ascended the funeral pyre of her husband in A.D. 510. Some queens of Kashmir and Queen Rājyavatī of Nepal (eighth century) performed the *sati* rite. Gundāmba the wife of Nāgadeva a minister of the Cālukya Satyāśraya of the Deccan (tenth century) burnt herself with her husband who had lost his life in battle. During the reign of the Cola king Rājendra I of South India a śūdra woman named Dekabbe burnt herself at the news of the death of her husband in A.D. 1057. The existence of a large number of *sati* memorial tablets proves that the practice was popular in Central India and in the Deccan during this period. King Harsavardhana's mother Yasomatī however burnt herself to ashes as soon as it became definite that her husband would be passing away within a short time. The practice of performing the *sati* rite was evidently not universal. Many well known ladies of this period such as Prabhāvatidevī (of the Vākātaka dynasty of the Deccan) Mayanallādevī (mother of Jayasīmaha Siddharāja of Gujarat) Karpuradevī (mother of the Cāhamana Prthvirāja III of Ajmer) and Alhanadevī (mother of the Kalacuri Narasīmaha of Tripurī) did not practise this rite and at the same time were highly esteemed for their devotion to their husbands.

Under the rules of the Smṛtis a widow had to lead an austere life. She slept on the floor and was not allowed to use a cot. She did not put on a bodice and dyed garments and did not use collyrium in the eyes and yellow pigment on the face nor any kind of scent. She took only one meal a day. She made oblations every day in memory of her husband and listened to recitations of the Purānas. Bāna in his *Harsacarita* refers to the tying of the tuft of hair by the widows. Similarly a Pratihāra inscription of the early tenth century from Pehowa (in the Karnal District of West Punjab) mentions widows having profuse locks of hair. On the other hand the *Skanda Purāna* advocates the tonsuring of widows. It seems that this practice did not come into use prior to the eleventh century.

The re-marriage of widows is not advocated by the Smṛti writers and the Purānas. Again Al-Biruni states that in India there is no custom of re-marrying the widow. The system of *niyoga* or levirate is advocated by Nārada following the early Smṛti writers. But later on the practice was

SOME ASPECTS OF THE POSITION OF WOMEN IN ANCIENT INDIA

discouraged As Brhaspati remarks On account of the successive deterioration of the (four) ages of the world it must not be practised by mortals

During this period the independent status of women was not recognized She was dependent on her father before her marriage on her husband after the marriage and on her son after the death of her husband In the absence of a son she was dependent on the nearest relation On the other hand the right of the sonless widow to the property of her deceased husband was admitted In Gujarat up to the middle of the twelfth century the property of a person dying without a son escheated to the crown but the Caulukya Kumārapāla king of Gujarat abolished that custom and allowed the sonless widow to inherit her husband's property

WOMEN RULERS AND GENERALS

In actual life women occasionally participated in the public administration as rulers regents and governors In the first half of the eighteenth century the Deccan was ruled by Queen Rattā About a century earlier the same country is found to have been administered by Vijayabhattachārikā of the Cālukya dynasty Queens Sugandhā and Diddā ruled Kashmir for some time in the tenth century A D Tribhuvanamahādevī and her granddaughter Dandimahādevī of the Kara dynasty ruled in Orissa in the eleventh century The Kākatiya Rudrāmbā occupied the throne of Warangal for some time in the thirteenth century Marco Polo describes her as a lady of much discretion She administered her kingdom efficiently she was a lover of justice equality and peace Queen Ballamahādevī ruled the Ālupa country (South Kanara) from the capital Varāhakanyā in the thirteenth century Queen Mayanalladevī acted as a regent for her son the Caulukya Jayasimha Siddharāja of Gujarat Karpūradevī queen of the Cāhamāna Someśvara of Ajmer served as a regent for her son Prthvīrāja III Nāyikādevī carried on the administration of Gujarat as a regent during the infancy of her son the Caulukya Bhīma II Akkādevī, sister of the Cālukya Jayasimha II of the Deccan acted as the governor of Kīśukād Women also acted as ministers and judges occasionally Queens Śīryadevī and Mahaladevī flourished in Bhor Bombay State in the last quarter of the eleventh century A lady named Somanāthaiyā acted as a minister of Śīryadevī and another lady named Balaiyā occupied the post of a judge under Mahaladevī Sometimes women are found leading the army in the battlefield Akkādevī referred to above is described as fierce in battle and in destroying hostile kings Some time before A D 1047 at the head of an army she laid siege to the fort of Gokage modern Gokak in the Belgaum District In A D 1197 a lady named Umādevī invaded

Belagavatti in the Shimoga District Mysore when it was ruled by the feudatory Mādhavarasa Cagaladevi wife of a feudatory of Toragale led in person an attack on the town of Nīlagunda in the Deccan In A.D. 1178 when Gujarat was invaded by Mohammed Ghorī Nāyikadevī taking her infant son Caulukya Bhīma II in her lap conducted the army against the invader and inflicted a severe defeat on him

RECREATIONS OF WOMEN

A word may be said about the recreations of women Ma Twan Lin says that in the houses of the Indians the young girls danced and sang with great skill The statement of Brhaspati that a woman must avoid dancing when her husband is abroad shows the popularity of this art Among the festivities at the birth of Harsavardhana dancing by women of all ranks formed a prominent feature as described by Bāna Dancing was to the accompaniment of musical instruments such as tambourines cymbals reeds lutes and *kahalas* (drums) with their brazen sounding boxes The Ganga Udayāditya's queen was expert in dancing and singing All the three queens of the Hoysala Ballāla I were highly accomplished in dancing Sāvaladevi the queen of the Kalacuri Somadeva of Kalyāna was well known for her skill in music and dancing and is said to have displayed her accomplishments in public

During this period dancing girls known as *devadāsīs* were engaged for temple services Four hundred of them were attached to the great temple of Tanjore during the reign of the Cola Rājārāja I Bhattabhavādeva minister of King Harivarman of East Bengal gave a hundred dancing girls for the service of the temple of Ananta Vāsudeva About as many were engaged in the temple of Śiva at Deopārā in the Rajshahi District East Bengal during the reign of Vijayasena Padmāvatī was the chief of the dancing girls in the temple of Nilakantheśvara at Kālāñjara during the reign of the Candella Madanavarman These girls are generally described as living an immoral life Giving a different picture of the life and character of the *devadāsīs* however Marco Polo states that parents sometimes consecrated their daughters to the temples of the gods for whom they had great devotion the daughters lived with their parents and on festive occasions went to the temples and entertained the deity with their dance and songs they rendered this service till they were married The dancing girls are known to have enacted dramas occasionally During the reign of Jātavarman alias Vira Pāndya of South India a dancing girl named Virāśekharaṅgarī received grants of lands for enacting dramas on festive occasions Vācaspati Miśra also refers to the dancing girls who gave performances on the stage

SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

INTRODUCTION

IDEALS constitute the very heart and soul of a nation the real worth and dignity of which have to be judged not only by its actual achievements but more so by its inner inclinations and inherent endeavours towards a goal that eternally guides its destiny Hence the true study of a nation means really a study of its aims and ideals of the means adopted and the paths followed rather than its actual successes and failures That is why a real understanding of Indian womanhood essentially depends on that of its ideals in their various aspects

From time immemorial India has unequivocally recognized one and only one *summum bonum* of life viz *ātmopalābhi* or self realization—the realization of the divine in the human of the spiritual in the physical of the Ātman or Soul in the mind body complex It is true that four aims of life (*caturvargas*) are spoken of in Indian literature viz *dharma artha kāma* and *moksa* moral behaviour wealth worldly pleasure and salvation But it is at the same time unanimously and unambiguously asserted that *moksa* is by far the highest ideal of man It is in this universal perspective that the whole Indian view of life is to be understood and evaluated

IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

In spite of occasional lapses India is a country that has always preached and lived the highest philosophical and ethical doctrines of equality and fraternity of universal love and service It is in this hoary and holy land that the first as well as the foremost clarion calls of unity and universality were given by our seers in the form of sublime yet simple *mantras* like *Sarvam khalvidam Brahma* (verily all this is Brahman)¹ *Idam amṛtam idam Brahmedam sarvam* (this is immortality this is Brahman this is all)² *Ayamātmā Brahma* (the Ātman is Brahman)³ *Tat tvamasi* (thou art that)⁴ *Aham Brahmasmi* (I am Brahman)⁵

Hence according to our age old Indian tradition there is no distinction between man and man all being equally Brahman More specifically it is also asserted in some places with due dignity that no distinction between

Chā U III 14 1
Ibid II 5 19
Br U I 4 10

Br U II 5 1
Chā U VI 8 7

man and woman is ever tolerated by our holy books nay a woman is even said to be superior to man *Stri cāvisesāt*⁶ (The scripture does not discriminate between man and woman) *Samskāro hi ātmani samavairi na strainam paurusam vā vibhāgam apeksate*⁷ (Genius inheres in the Soul—it makes no distinction between man and woman)

That is why the ideals of India are alike for men and women There is a general misconception that the ideals of Indian women are entirely different from nay even opposed to those of men It is perfectly true that as mothers as creators and sustainers of life on earth women have some special duties to perform some special paths to follow some special ideals to strive after But these by no means lower their dignity and status or narrow down their outlook and ideals On the contrary these infinitely elevate and enliven them Hence apart from these special aims rights and duties the ideals of Indian women are very much the same as those of Indian men That is why the women of India too have been eternally inspired by the common twin ideals of unity and equality greatness and fullness purity and perfection These have been equally manifested in all the walks in a woman's life domestic social spiritual Hence it may safely be asserted that in India *bhuman* (greatness and fullness) constitutes the very life blood the very soul of women In the home or outside it is these fundamental ideals of infinity and universality that have illumined the lives of our women throughout the chequered history of Indian womanhood infinity implying depth of life universality its breadth Again depth stands for inner worth and breadth for the outer expansion of that worth

But in spite of the fact that the fundamental tendencies and strivings of all Indians are very much the same we have also to recognize individual differences and peculiarities befitting the special inclinations and capacities of different persons Accordingly two great classes of persons have been generally recognized here ascetics and householders (or those who are interested in supra mundane or spiritual values and those who are interested in mundane or worldly ones) Of course it has never been contended in India that the above two classes are mutually exclusive or opposed to each other Still a difference between the two corresponding to a difference of emphasis outlook and standpoint has always been admitted For women also India has recognized two main ideals viz that of a *brahma vādini* and that of a *sadyovadhū*

A *brahmavādini* is of an ascetic type striving for the highest philosophical knowledge knowledge of Truth of the Self of Brahman Thus

SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

her ideal of life is spiritual well being. A *sadyovadhū* on the other hand is of a domestic type dedicating herself to the welfare of her family and spending her time mostly in daily domestic duties of an ordinary kind. Each was great in her own place. Hence there is no real opposition between the status of a *brahmavādinī* and that of a *sadyovadhū* and no such opposition was tolerated in India at least in the earliest Vedic Age as also for many centuries later. That was why it was by no means obligatory for a *brahmavadinī* to take the vow of celibacy renounce the world and carry on meditations in a far off secluded mountain cave. On the contrary quite a number of *brahmavādinīs* who came to be blessed with the realization of Brahman were married women. In the same manner many *sadyovadhūs* were also of a high spiritual nature and even in the midst of their multifarious domestic duties they strove for spiritual perfection and attained realization. Thus whether a woman was married or unmarried was not the main thing to count the main thing was to consider her inner inclinations and ingrained ideals.

We may profitably consider here how these two ideals of spirituality and domesticity have fashioned the lives of Indian women throughout the ages down to the modern times. Only one or two prominent examples from each age will suffice to show the eternal and inexhaustible driving force of this pair of ever green ideals of Indian womanhood. There might have been times when one was over emphasized at the expense of the other. But there has never been a time when one was totally absent or suppressed by the other.

WOMEN IN VEDIC LITERATURE

The very high standard of learning, culture and all round progress reached by Indian women during the Vedic Age is too well known a fact to need detailed elucidation here. The best proof of this is the fact that the *Rg Veda*, the oldest known literature in the whole world, contains hymns (*sūktas*) by as many as twenty seven women, called *brahmavādinīs* or women seers. Śaunaka in his *Brhaddevatā*^a (c. fifth century B.C.) a work on the *Rg Veda* has mentioned the names of these twenty seven women seers. The well known Vedic commentator Sāyana has mentioned the names of two more of such seers in addition to the above twenty seven.

During the Vedic Age domestic life was not in any way conceived to

Ghosā godhā viśvavara apalopaniṣan nīsat
brahmajaya jutsur namā agastyasya svasa dītiḥ
indrānī cendramatī ca saramā romaśorvāṣī
lopamudra ca nadyāś ca yamī nārī ca śaśvatī
śrīr lakṣmī sarparajñī vak śraddhā medhā ca dakṣiṇā
ratrī suryā ca savitrī brahmavādinīya irtah—II 89-91

be inconsistent with spiritual life and *brahmavādinīs* were not ascetics roaming in forests or squatting in caves after renouncing the world as ordinarily understood. On the contrary apart from many *brahmavādinīs* who did not give up family life even amongst the above twenty seven more celebrated *brahmavādinīs* whose hymns were thought to be fit for being included in the *Rg Veda* many were married or desired to be married. Hence some of their hymns are but simple and frank expressions of their inner womanly desires for a worthy loving husband, a happy and prosperous home life free from co-wives and so on.⁹ The highest ideals of a *brahmavādinī* and a *sadyovadhū* are best illustrated in the celebrated and exhilarating hymns of Vāc¹⁰ and Sūryā¹¹ respectively.

In the Upanisads which constitute the last part of the Vedas we meet with the brightest example of a *brahmavādinī* as well as a *sadyovadhū*. The *brahmavādinī* is Gārgī of immortal fame daughter of the Sage Vacaknu whose highly learned philosophical discussions with the great sage Yājñia valkya have been recorded twice in the old and celebrated *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad*¹². The glorious example of a *sadyovadhū* too is found in the same Upanisad¹³. When the Sage Yājñiavalkya on the eve of his retirement from the world desired to divide his property between his two wives Maitreyī and Kātyāyanī Maitreyī refused to have it with the profound utterance 'What should I do with that through which I cannot be immortal?'—which has really made her immortal. Accordingly she was given the choicest gift of knowledge by her husband in a most illuminating discourse on the unity of the Self. This discourse has the repeated refrain

This is the Immortal this is Brahman this is All Here we find a sublime example of a *sadyovadhū* and a *brahmavādinī* rolled into one In the *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad*¹⁴ the lofty ideal of a wife as the other half of the husband has also been beautifully delineated by a very effective simile of the half of a shell

In the Rg Vedic Grhya Sūtras of Āśvalāyana¹⁵ and Sāṅkhāyana¹⁶ the names of three *brahmavādīnīs* are mentioned viz Gārgi Vacakanavi Vadavā Prāthitheyī and Sulabhā Maitreyī

WOMEN IN GRAMMATICAL LITERATURE

The age of Pāṇini (fifth century B C) continued the Vedic tradition of culture and education. Those *brahmacārīs* who themselves taught were reverentially called *upādhyāyā* or *upādhyāyī* and *ācāryā* while the

| | | | | | | | |
|------------------|------|---------|------|-----|-----|---------------|----|
| Cf R V | V 28 | VIII 80 | X 30 | 109 | 145 | etc | |
| <i>Ibid</i> X | 125 | | | | | <i>Ibid</i> X | 85 |
| III 6 | 8 | | | | | II 4 | |
| ⁴ I 4 | 3 | | | | | III 4 | 4 |
| IV 10 | | | | | | | |

SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

sadyovadhūṣ who were wives of teachers were called *upādhyāyānī* and *ācāryānī*. Bhattoji Dīksita in his *Siddhānta Kaumudī* explains the first two terms as *ya tu svayam eva adhyāpikā* (She who herself is a teacher). In the commentary *Bāla manoramā* by Vāsudeva Dīksita on the above work the same view is corroborated. Both Pāṇini and Patañjali refer to the high Vedic knowledge acquired by the *brahmvādīnīs* during the Vedic Age necessitating special names for them. Thus women scholars of the Katha School were called *Kathī* of the *Rg Veda Bahavrcā*. Brāhmana women scholars of the Grammar of Āpīśali were called *Āpīśalī* and of the Mīmāṃsā School of Kāśakrtsna, Kāśakrtsna (Patañjali). Pupils of the woman scholar and teacher Audamedhyā were called *Audamedhā*.

WOMEN IN THE EPICS AND THE PURANAS

In the immortal epics of India the *Rāmāyana* and the *Mahābhārata* too we find many instances of the above two types of Indian women ascetic and domestic. A magnificent example of a *brahmvādīnī* in the *Rāmāyana* is Anasūyā wife in the truest sense of the term of the Sage Atri. She too practised severe penances constantly spent the whole of her life in deep meditation and reached such heights of spiritual perfection as are rarely reached by even great seers¹⁷. Another celebrated woman ascetic of the *Rāmāyana* is Śramanī Śabarī a low caste woman. She was the disciple of the great sage Mātanga and had her hermitage on the bank of the lake Pampā. She is described as wearing bark and matted locks as having reached the highest standard of asceticism and as being honoured by great ascetics¹⁸.

On the other hand the highest manifestation of domestic perfection in the *Rāmāyana* nay in the whole of Indian literature is found in the inimitable personality of Sītā the idol of Indian womanhood throughout the ages. In fact as Swami Vivekananda rightly asserted all the various ideals of Indian womanhood throughout the long and chequered history of India have been concentrated and consummated in this one unique incomparable ideal of Sītā as wife as mother as one endowed with infinite purity of heart strength of character courage and confidence. Her holy life story is too well known to need recounting here. But what strikes us most in her character is this superb combination of softness and hardness so aptly described by Bhavabhūti in the *Uttara Rāmacarita* as the main characteristic of great persons like Rāma.

The *Mahābhārata* too is resplendent with a galaxy of great women fulfilling their destinies pursuing their ideals and attaining their ends in different spheres of life in a manner at once simple and superb. As a

¹ *Rām* II 117 9

Ibid III 74

glorious example of a *brahmavadinī* during that age mention may be made of Sulabhā of immortal fame¹⁹ She belonged to the clan of Rājarsī (kingly sage) Pradhāna But she being a great scholar no suitable bride groom could be found for her Accordingly she became an ascetic for life and roamed about alone from place to place in search of knowledge Other celebrated *brahmavādinis* of the *Mahābhārata* are the daughter of Sāndilya described as a *brāhmaṇī* who has attained perfection who has adopted the vow of celibacy and purity who practises *yoga* who has reached heaven who has attained perfection in austerity and who is an ascetic²⁰ and Śivā described as a *brāhmaṇī* who has attained perfection and who has mastered the Vedas These are not the only instances of highly learned ascetic women found in the *Mahābhārata*

Far more numerous are the instances of women who led dedicated lives at home Mention need be made only of Gandhārī Kuntī Draupadī Sāvitrī Damayanti Śakuntalā and Satyabhāmā amongst a great galaxy of noble women who though housewives were also reputed scholars and saintly characters The single case of Gāndhārī proves what heights of excellence wifehood and motherhood could reach An exemplary wife a *sahadharminī* in the truest sense of the word who went to the length of bandaging her own eyes for the sake of her blind husband Dhṛtarāstra she yet never hesitated to remonstrate with him when she thought he was in the wrong That was why she openly and firmly requested him to disown their sinful sons Duryodhana and the rest²¹ Her superb injunction *Yato dharma tato jayah* (Let Victory pertain to the righteous) has become a proverb in India Another fiery utterance of a mother has also become equally famous She was Vidulā who sternly reprimanded her son Sañjaya when he being defeated by the king of Sind was leading a life of abject dejection To inspire him to fight for his lost royal glory she used the following classic simile *Muhūrtam jvalitam śreyah na tu dhumāyitam ciram* (It is far better to blaze up even for a moment than to go on smoking continuously)

The Purānas of India present the philosophical and ethical doctrines of the Vedas and the Upanisads in a simple form through dialogues and narrations in which figure men and women of great eminence One of the most celebrated women of the Purānas is Madalasā the consort of King Rtaadhvaja She was at once a great scholar a saintly woman a dutiful housewife and a devoted wife and mother²² Another saintly woman of the Purānas is Devahūti wife of the great sage and *prajāpati* (patriarch) Kardama and mother of the greater sage Kapila the propounder

¹⁹ *Mbh* XII 320

¹ *Ibid* II 75 8 10

Ibid IX 54 6

²² *Mark P* XX XLIV

SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

of the Sāmkhya system of Indian philosophy Her philosophical discourses with her learned husband and son go to prove her unique spiritual attainments even though she lived a household life ³ The eternal idols of Indian womanhood viz Satī and Umā shine in their never fading glory in many of the Purānas as the brightest examples of devoted wives dedicating their whole lives to the service of their lords

WOMEN IN THE SMRTIS

The position of women in India gradually deteriorated as the golden Vedic ideals of unity and equality began to fade off through the passage of time During the period of the Smrtis—the period of codification of social laws—women were bracketed with the Śūdras and were denied the right to study the Vedas to utter Vedic *mantras* and to perform Vedic rites Hence during such an age it was not to be expected that women would continue to enjoy the old privilege of choosing a life of celibacy and asceticism On the other hand marriage or domestic life became compulsory for women and unquestioning devotion to and self effacing service of husbands their only duty To quote the wellknown dictum of Manu ²⁴ A woman is protected by her father during childhood by her husband during youth and by her sons during old age She is never fit for freedom But mothers were honoured as before as the very pivots of their families and wives as *sahadharminīs* or spiritual partners of their spouses Here we are happily reminded of another dictum of Manu ²⁵ which too has almost passed into a classic An *ācārya* or a Vedic teacher excels ten *upādhyāyas* or salaried sub teachers in glory a father excels a hundred *ācāryas* but a mother excels a thousand fathers In fact all the spiritual strivings of men were considered useless unless their wives also participated Hence according to the famous grammarian Pāṇini the ultimate etymological meaning of the word *patnī* or wife is One who participates in the religious ceremonies of her husband

Thus in the Smrtis too the women of India are pictured as setting before themselves not only the ideal of domestic efficiency but also and above all that of spiritual supremacy which alone makes one a conqueror in the truest sense of the term

WOMEN IN THE MODERN AGE

During the modern age the women of India are indeed standing at the cross roads which they had never done before Even during the middle ages when foreign invasions and conquests made the position of women the worst in history the problems that are facing them to day were not there

Bhag P III 21 33

²⁴ IX 3 Cf V 147

²⁵ II 145

For those foreigners who became the rulers of India no longer remained foreigners ruling the conquered land from their distant home they soon became sons of the soil part and parcel of the country itself But during the modern period the conquest was made by a foreign race from a far off country which neither settled in India nor identified itself with her interests Hence the impact of the foreign western ideas and ideals on our country and society which has been almost one sided has changed our lives to an extent never possible before That is why the women of India now find themselves today facing an unprecedented dilemma namely the choice between the old and the new the eastern traditionalism and the western modernism

At this critical juncture in the lives of Indian women both the ancient ideals of spiritualism and homebound life seem to be absolutely out of date a modern girl seems neither to care for religion and spiritual perfection nor hanker after domestic life as before But has the eternal ideal of India really changed to that extent and can it ever do so? It has been repeatedly seen in the long and variegated history of this country that its inmost soul has ever remained untouched in spite of all external appearances to the contrary That is why even during the turbulent modern age of over materialism over realism over individualism over rationalism and over cynicism we find clear proofs that the immortal ideals of Indian womanhood are still there inspiring and heartening thousands of women in all walks of life

IMMORTAL IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

For a clear proof we may point to the sublime personality of the Holy Mother Śrī Saradamanī Devī the spiritual consort of Śrī Ramakrishna Paramahamsadeva It is she who at the beginning of the present century combined in her lofty life the twin ideals of a *brahmavādinī* and a *sadyovadhū* in a manner at once unique and inspiring

What strikes us most in the life of the Holy Mother is this wonderful synthesis of ordinary home life and the highest spirituality That these two are not opposed to each other but that spirituality is the very basis of ordinary life is the greatest message of the life of the Holy Mother to all and sundry Thus it was she who proved beyond doubt that even a *brahmavādinī* could be a *sadyovadhū* and *vice versa* For although she admitted like the holy sages of old that it was by no means possible for all women to give up the world go to a forest and practise austerities there yet she repeatedly insisted that even those who stayed at home and led the ordinary married life must be *brahmavādinis* in the sense of being spiritually minded and moulding their lives according to spiritual and

SOME REFLECTIONS ON THE IDEALS OF INDIAN WOMANHOOD

ethical maxims Simply because they have chosen a domestic life they must not lead a narrow selfish uncontrolled and unworthy life They must not remain submerged in the mire of worldly life but must spring up like beautiful lotuses spreading their charm and fragrance far and wide

In this way even in our ever changing aggressive restless and worried modern age we are infinitely blessed to have before us this benign example of the Holy Mother a *brahmavādinī* and a *sadyovadhū* in perfect fusion and highest development

CONCLUSION

This very brief and rapid survey of the ideals of Indian womanhood through the ages will suffice to show that in spite of many changes as regards educational facilities and domestic social political legal and economic rights the women of India have remained fundamentally unchanged This is due to the fact that their ideals their visions and their outlooks manifesting the perennial culture and the ever throbbing heart of India are at bottom one and the same This sameness of ideals of course does not indicate any static stagnation in the course of India's progress it is rather a clear sign of its dynamic development For when a nation starts on its zigzag hazardous journey towards its cherished goal it has to go through ups and downs through pitfalls and labyrinths generation after generation And so unless there be the same sustaining spirit and the same indefatigable drive behind the nation concerned may lose its way and flounder in despondency in its long and arduous struggle Hence the ideals of a nation are not something to become stale with age On the contrary as the nation cannot change its soul so it cannot also change its ideals The sameness of its ideals rather shows its firmness of purpose and dynamism of outlook and enables one to gauge its depth of feeling and strength of will which alone make it what it is Hence the eternity of our ideals is something to be proud of the bed rock of our culture the strongest cement in our multifarious civilization which is a unity in diversity This is specially so when this eternal ideal of India for men or for women outside or inside is as pointed out above one and only one viz spiritual development Spirituality is something that can never grow old never fade off never die The women of India too have naturally been imbued with the same supreme Ideal all through the ages As housewives as ascetics and as both combined they have always kept burning the torch of their inner spirituality purity and beauty their inherent sweetness softness and spirit of service

FOREIGN ELEMENTS IN INDIAN POPULATION

PREHISTORIC MIXTURE OF RACES

FROM the earliest times India has received successive waves of foreign peoples with diverse languages cultures and racial affiliations. Of the two main palaeolithic industries of India—that of pebble tools with its primary focus in the North West and that of bifacial tools predominant in the South—the first is affiliated to the comparable industries of South East Asia and the second to its counterparts in Europe and Africa. What forces of diffusion were at work to produce similar tool types over such widely-dispersed lands it is difficult to guess but the possibility of an actual migration of palaeolithic folks from different directions though not yet substantiated by the find of contemporary skeletal remains is not ruled out. In the Neolithic Age we find the neolithic types of East India again similar to those of South East Asia and southern China—indicating a cultural wave reaching India from that direction. In this case as well it is not unlikely that the wave had its genesis in a folk migration. There are strong grounds for believing that the Dravidians came to India from the east Mediterranean region long before the Aryans. An extra Indian origin of the great Indus valley civilization of the third millennium B.C. is not proved though its contacts with contemporary riverine civilizations of West Asia are abundantly clear. There is little doubt however, that in the next millennium the Vedic Aryans poured into India from the north west bringing with them an altogether new culture. By the fourth century before Christ the creation of the Indian Man and the main fabric of Indian civilization is almost accomplished. Behind this creation lies the fusion of four principal language culture groups (loosely called races) in blood speech and culture. They are the Austric or Austro Asiatic (Nisādas) the Mongoloid or Sino Tibetan (Kīrātas) the Dravidian (Drāvidas) and the Aryans (Āryas). Of these the Austric people entered India from the west and spread all over India and are now represented by such primitive tribes as the Kolas and the Mundas living in the hills and forests of central and eastern India. The Mongoloid peoples however emigrated from the east and settled mostly in the Himalayan sub tracts and eastern India. The impact of the Dravidians was much stronger than that of any of these races and they practically Dravidianized the whole of peninsular India. The Vedic Aryans the last of these peoples to settle in India however Aryanized the whole of India by their language. When transformed into classical Sanskrit by large borrowings

from the Austriacs and the Dravidians it became the *lingua franca* of the Indian culture and the sacred language of Hinduism (in its comprehensive sense embracing Brāhmanism, Buddhism and Jainism) The food habits dress furniture and architecture of the Aryans came to be greatly influenced by the new surroundings while their ritual beliefs and practices underwent far reaching changes due to the impact of the pre Aryan settlers The very name Ārya lost its ethnic significance and came to mean nobility and aristocracy of character and temperament

The ethnic intrusions however continued unabated and the country lay exposed to the successive invasions and infiltrations of the Persians Greeks Scytho Parthians Ābhiras Kusānas Hūnas Gurjaras, etc one after the other By this time however India had developed her own distinctive culture in the midst of which none of these foreigners could maintain their individuality for any length of time they learnt the language adopted the names and the religions of the vanquished and became one with them In the present paper it is proposed to deal with the more important foreign peoples who entered India from the sixth century B C to the fifth century A D and their absorption in and contribution to Indian culture

IMMIGRATIONS IN HISTORIC TIMES

The exact process by which the foreigners were brought into the Hindu fold and merged in the general body of the Indian people can only be indicated in general outline The ancient lawgivers did not lay down any special purificatory rites and ceremonies which the outsiders had to undergo in order to find room in Hindu society On the contrary efforts were not lacking to ignore the non Indian origin of the foreigners by regarding them as the offspring of inter-caste marriage or as belonging to one of the castes and having lost in status in consequence of heretical tendencies Thus according to Manu ¹ the Yavanas Śakas Pāradas Pahlavas Cīnas Kīrātas Daradas Khasas and others were originally Ksatriyas who were degraded to the status of Śūdras owing to their non-observance of the sacred rites In such statements no doubt is to be detected the *ex post facto* recognition of the existence of foreigners in Hindu society by giving them a place in the *cāturvarṇya* (four-caste) system In the *Mahābhārata* ² Indra in reply to a query of Māndhātṛ regarding the duties to be performed by the Yavanas Śakas Tusāras Pahlavas Cīnas and other alien peoples prescribes the duties of obedience to parents preceptors kings and hermits performance of Vedic rites digging of wells making of presents to *divijas* (the twice born) abstention from injuring absence of wrath truthfulness purity peacefulness maintenance of wives and children and performance of sacrifices in

¹ X 43 44

² XII 65 13 22

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

honour of the *pitr̥s* (manes) and performance of the *pāka yaṇ̥ās*. All this indicates that foreigners were expected to practise the same normal pieties as the Hindus and the latter in return considered them henceforth as belonging to their own social organization. The Bhakti cult again was also a prime factor in breaking the barrier between the native and the outsider. Thus according to the *Bhāgavata Purāṇa*³ taking resort to Viṣṇu and his devotees is enough for the purification of the Kīrātās Hūnas Andhras Pulindas Pukvasas Ābhīras Suhmas Yavanas Khasās etc as also other persons who were sinful. Instances are also not rare in which the Indians in ancient times contracted matrimonial alliances with the foreign immigrants and this also played a great role in the Indianization of the latter. The wonderful assimilative power of the Indians helped to Hinduize the alien races so much so that when they were absorbed there was hardly anything left which could mark them off as socially and culturally distinct from the children of the soil.

But it will be a misrepresentation of fact to state that the foreigners only took and gave nothing. The Indians by reciprocation of thought and culture learnt much from them. They were influenced by the religion, science and art of the newcomers. Foreign words crept into the local languages and changes were also brought about in Indian costume. The Indians imbibed some of the beliefs of the alien peoples. But whatever they borrowed they absorbed completely and made their own by the stamp of their genius. The cross currents of diverse cultures could only ruffle the outer surface of Hinduism for the time being but in the inner depths it underwent little change.

THE IRANIANS

There is enough in the Vedas and the Avesta to show that the Vedic Aryans and the ancient Iranians had a close relationship in language, religion, traditions, rituals and beliefs. But this became more intimate when the Achaemenians became the rulers of Iran. The north western part of India formed part of the empire of Darius the Achaemenian Emperor (c. 522-486 B.C.) for in his Behistun inscription (c. 520-18 B.C.) Gadāra i.e. Gandhāra (Peshawar and Rawalpindi Districts) figures in the list of twenty-three foreign countries that came to him. It is not unlikely that the conquest of Gandhāra was due to Cyrus the founder of the empire himself (558-30 B.C.). To the credit of Darius goes the conquest of Hindu (Sindhu

³ II 4 18

*Kīrātā Hunāndhṛā Pulinda Pukhasā
Ābhīra Suhma Yavanah Khasadayah
Ye nye ca pāpa yadubāśrayaśrayāḥ
Sudhyanti tasmai prabhaviṣṇave namah*

or the Indus valley) According to Herodotus India formed the twentieth satrapy of his empire I though the Iranian conquest of Gandhāra and the Indus valley was not very long lived (these regions had certainly thrown off the foreign yoke by the time of Alexander's invasion in 327-26 B.C.) the influx of some Iranian population in the trail of conquest resulted in the introduction of a few quaint customs in India That Taxila was influenced by the Iranian method of disposal of the dead is evident from the statement of Aristoboulos as quoted by Strabo ¹ The dead are thrown out to be devoured by vultures The marriage market of Taxila where girls were given off in marriage recalls a similar Babylonian practice which might have been introduced into India through Iran The language of the north west was affected by Iranian contacts Thus the word *dipi* (for Indian *lipi*) and *nipista* (for *likhita*) in the Kharosthi versions of the rock edicts of Asoka occurring at Shahbazgarhi and Mansehra bespeak Iranian influence The introduction of Kharosthi itself now a dead script is an outcome of India's intercourse with Iran for it was evolved out of Aramaic the court script of the Achaemenian rulers That the Aramaic language and script were introduced into India is proved by an Aramaic inscription found at Taxila Again the similarity between the preambles of the Achaemenian and Asokan inscriptions may not be an accident The influence of Achaemenian court art and architecture on those of the Mauryas which has been widely noted and commented upon appears to have been due to the direct importation of artisans from Persia into India

Mention should be made in this connection of the Magi a section of the Iranian priestly class who entered India probably in the wake of the Scytho-Parthians They are known in India as Maga dvijas or Maga Brāhmanas A detailed though legendary account of their immigration into India is given in some Purāṇas The substance of what is given in the *Bhavisya Purāṇa* ² is as follows Śamba a son of Kṛṣṇa was stricken with leprosy He was cured of the disease through the worship of the Sun god and he erected a temple of the god at Mitravṇa on the Candrabhaga No Brahmana being willing to serve as priest at the temple Śamba had to bring in eighteen families of the sun worshipping Māga Brāhmanas descendants of Jatasabdi (viz Jalagambu Jatasastri evidently Zoroaster) from Śākadvīpa and settle them at Śāmbapura built by him These Brāhmanas were given daughters of the Bhoja line in marriage and hence became known as Bhojakas The association of Zoroaster the founder of the Zoroastrian religion and some of the special customs of the Maga Brāhmanas such as wearing the girdle called *avyanga* (the *avvyaonghan* of the Avesta and the *kusti* of the modern Parsees) having beards eating in silence the prohibition

of touching corpses using *barsma* (Āvestān *baresman* modern *barsom*) in place of *darbha* (*kusa* grass) etc leave no room for doubt that they were the ancient Sun worshippers of Iran

The Magas did not confine themselves to Śāmbapura identified with the modern Multan where Hiuen Tsang saw a grand Sun temple in the seventh century They soon spread over other parts of India Ptolemy (middle of the second century A D) vouches for the existence of the Brachmanai Magoi in the South An inscription from Deo Baranark (District Shahabad) records the initial grant of a village to the Sun god by the ruler Bālāditya in favour of the Bhojaka Sūiyamitra its renewal by Sarvavarman and Avantivarman in favour of the Bhojakas Hamsamitia and Rsimitra and its continuance by Jivitagupta II (early eighth century) in favour of the Bhojaka Durdharamitra The Govindapur inscription of 1137-38 attests to the existence in Gayā of a highly cultured Maga family celebrated for its learning Vedic studies, and poetic faculty whom Śāmba himself brought hither⁷ Other references to the Magas in inscriptions show that they completely amalgamated themselves with the Hindus by adopting Indian names manners and customs and except for the accidental mention of the term Maga it is impossible for us to distinguish them as foreigners They took part in every sphere of our activity and enriched our poetry too They contributed much to astronomy and astrology The famous astronomer Varāhamihira was himself a Maga The descendants of the Maga Brāhmanas are still interested in astrology foretelling divination propitiation of planetary deities (*graha yāga*) etc As they enjoyed the gifts made for the propitiation of the *grahas* (planets) they are called *graha vipras* (astrologers) But the most important contribution of the Magi priests (who were elevated to the status of Brāhmanas in some indigenous texts) was the introduction of a particular form of Sun worship which is different from the ancient indigenous mode Varāhamihira directs that the installation of the Sūrya images should be made by the Magas who were the fit persons to worship the god⁸ Iconographic texts enjoin that the images of Surya should be dressed like a northerner with legs covered that he should wear a coat of mail and a girdle The early representations of the god actually follow these injunctions In later times however attempts were made to Indianize the foreign features by discarding some of them and by inventing stories to interpret the others

The *Maga vyakti* of Kṛṣṇadāsa Miśra contains an elaborate account of these Maga Brāhmanas The descendants of the Magas are known in different places by different names In Rajputānā they are called Sevak and Bhojak They are known in Bengal as Graha vipras and Ācārya

⁷ EI II pp 330 ff

Bṛhatsamhitā 60 19

the successor of Alexander in the eastern part of his empire after a trial of strength concluded with Candragupta a treaty cemented by *ius connubii* (right by marriage) and ceded satrapies covered by Herat Kandahar Kabul and Makran to the latter. The inclusion within India of these territories brought her closer to the western world and paved the way for Aśoka's intimate contact with the Greek rulers of the West. Asoka also refers in his edicts to the Greeks within his empire. One Yavana Rāja Tusāspha (the name sounds Persian) was his governor of Saurāstra. The love of the Mauryas for the Greeks is too well known. That they were particularly mindful of the interests of foreigners is amply attested to by the classical writers who affirm the maintenance of a separate department to look after the foreigners during Candragupta's regime.

By taking advantage of the weakness of Asoka's successors the independent Greek chiefs of Bactria made frequent incursions into India in the beginning of the second century B.C. which have left echoes in works of Indian literature like Patañjali's *Mahābhāṣya* the *Gārgī Samhitā* etc. Demetrius was the first Bactrian Greek to establish his hold in India. After the loss of Bactria to the Scythian invaders who were themselves forced to quit their Sogdian habitat by the Yueh-chis the Greeks were compelled to confine themselves to eastern Afghanistan and north western India. Weakened by their internecine strife they ultimately succumbed to the Scytho-Parthians in the first century B.C. The evidence of coins attests to the rule of more than thirty Indo-Greek rulers within a period of less than two centuries. As they were isolated from their motherland by the great wedge of the mighty Parthian empire the Indo-Greek rulers though inheritors of a highly advanced culture developed from the very beginning an attitude different from that of the Seleucid rulers of Asia. They adopted Indian features on their coins. Thus Demetrius issued square coins with a Prakrit translation of the Greek legend in Kharosthī. Some even used the Brāhmī script and purely Indian motifs. The attempt of the Greeks to absorb Indian deities accounts for the non-Hellenic attributes in the persons of the Greek divinities represented on the coins.

The name of the Greek ruler Menander is immortalized in the Pāli Buddhist work *Milindapañha* Questions of Milinda the Sanskrit original of which is believed to have been written in the first century B.C. and was very likely based on genuine tradition. Milinda (Menander) is said to have gone round with five hundred *yonakas* defeating religious teachers in argument till he met the Buddhist *thera* (monk) Nāgasena who succeeded in converting him. The use of the wheel (*dharma cakra*) and of the title *dharmika* on his coins may indicate his inclination towards that faith. Further a relic casket discovered at Shinkot about twenty

miles to the north west of the confluence of the Panjkora and the Swat recording the enshrinement of some corporeal relics of the Buddha by one Vivakamitra during Menander's rule attests to the flourishing condition of Buddhism under him. As if to counteract the Buddhist learnings of Menander Heliodoros the Greek envoy of Antialkidas of the rival house of Eukratides at the court of the Śunga ruler Kasiputra Bhāgabhadra (c. 125 B.C.) became an ardent *bhagavata* (devotee of Viṣṇu) and erected a Garuda pillar at Besnagar (Bhilsa). The second part of the inscription recording the above facts speaks of three immortal precepts *dama* (self control), *tyaga* (renunciation) and *apramada* (alertness) the practice of which should lead to heaven. The inscription shows that the tenets of the religion were exalted enough to captivate the Greeks and catholic enough to admit foreigners.

The process of Indianization of the Greeks through religion was accelerated as time went by. Two railing inscriptions of Stūpa I at Sanchi record the pious donations of a Yavana hailing from Svetaḍvīpa in the first century B.C. The magnificent *cāitya* (Buddhist temple) at Karle dating from the first second century A.D. owes its origin in a considerable measure to the munificence of foreigners e.g. a Yavana of the Yasavardhanas and a Yavana of the Culayakhas (Ksudrayaksas)—all from Dhenukākata. Further inscriptions from the same cave record the donations of other traders from Dhenukākata indicating that the place had a large colony of foreign merchants who actively associated themselves with the excavation of the *cāitya*. Donative inscriptions of Yavanas are not lacking in other caves e.g. those of Junnar (Poona) and Nasik. All these records show that the Yavanas were converts to Buddhism and some of them even prove that they adopted Indian names as well. One of the inscriptions in cave seventeen at Nasik records the gift of a cave a *cāitya* hall and a cistern to monks by the Yonaka Indrāgnidatta son of Dharmadeva together with his son Dharmaraksita for the sake of his parents and in honour of all Buddhas. One Theodorus a Meṇḍarkh is known from his Kharosthī inscription to have enshrined the relics of the Buddha in the Swat region. A few other Kharosthī inscriptions from the north west have the same tale to tell though in these cases in the absence of the word *yavana* we have to identify the Greeks only through their names.

An oft quoted passage from the *Mahābhāṣya* of Patañjali¹¹ indicates that in the second century B.C. the Śakas and Yavanas lived outside the pale of Āryāvarta but were regarded as highclass Śūdras eligible unlike many local Śūdras to offer sacrifices—a fact supported by inscriptions and

archaeological finds at Besnagar—and to take meals out of vessels without permanently defiling them. The *Manu Samhitā*¹² regards the Yavanas as degraded Ksatriyas reduced to the status of *ursalas* (commonly meaning Śūdras). The Dharma Sūtra of Gautama¹³ regards them as the offspring of a marriage between a Ksatriya and a Śūdra woman. From these meagre references it appears that the Greeks unlike many indigenous tribes evoked little repugnance among the Indians. The latter initiated them into their own faiths and did not consider it beneath their dignity to serve as their priests. They were not blind to the superiority of the Greeks in some branches of knowledge and were ready to learn and acknowledge them. This frame of mind is nowhere better illustrated than in the following verse of the *Gārgī Samhitā*

*Mlecchā hi yavanāstesu samyacchāstramīdam sthitam
Rsvat te pi pūyante kimpunar daravard divjah*

The Greeks are Mlecchas but amongst them this science is duly established therefore even they (although Mlecchas) are honoured as *rsis* how much more than an astrologer who is a Brāhmana¹⁴. The extent of Greek influence upon Indian astronomy becomes apparent when we study the Indian astronomical and astrological works of the fifth sixth century. They contain many references to the Greek and Roman astronomers and astronomical works and they have borrowed many terms and ideas from the Greek system. The ideas of *rāśis* (the twelve lunar mensions) appear to have been directly adopted from the West. The Macedonian calendar survived for a long time in India as we have instances of its use in the Scytho Parthian and Kusāna records. The influence of the Indo Greek rulers upon their foreign successors and also the indigenous rulers was equally manifest in the sphere of numismatics. In respect of weight system of manufacture material and size their silver coins inaugurated a standard which was imitated not only by the Scytho Parthians but also by the indigenous tribes and rulers like the Yaudheyas the Audumbaras Vrsni Rājanyagana the Kunindas etc. The different Satrapal families also copied it the obverse bearing invariably the head of the king. Even traces of the corrupt and meaningless Greek legends were retained. The Greek denomination Drachm itself was naturalized and Sanskritized into *drama* shortened into *dāma* in later times. The latter name signifying price survives even now.

One of the most permanent records of the intermingling of the Indian and Hellenistic cultures is the Gandhāra art which had its cradle in

FOREIGN ELEMENTS IN INDIAN POPULATION

north west India¹⁵ It registers the marriage of Buddhist religion with Hellenistic art In the Buddhist images produced by this school which remained active in the first five centuries of the Christian era one sees the Indian iconographic concepts in Greek garb Though its imprint on later Indian art is negligible its influence upon the Buddhist art of Central Asia is overwhelming The Greeks also no doubt brought with them their own architecture Though no Indo Greek city has as yet been laid bare by excavation the Scytho Parthian level of the second city of Taxila Sirkap is regarded as having been laid out on a Greek model The plan of the Scytho Parthian Taxila followed the symmetrical chess board pattern of Greek cities with streets crossing at right angles and regularly aligned houses Outside the city is a temple with a Greek plan Ionic pillars and classical mouldings

THE ROMANS

Unlike the Greeks the Romans came to India not as conquerors but as traders¹⁶ Maritime trade between India and the Mediterranean world received a fillip with the discovery of the periodicity of the south western monsoon wind (wind of Hippalus as the Romans called it) promoting direct navigation across the seas instead of the circuitous and laborious coastal voyages The Romans established a series of trading stations on the west and east coasts of India and no doubt travelled inland for purposes of trade Excavation has brought to light one such Indo Roman emporium on the east coast Arikamedu¹⁷ near Pondicherry probably the Podouke of the *Periplus* (later part of the first century) and Ptolemy Finds from the excavations conducted there include gems bearing in intaglio the motif of Graeco Roman workmanship sherds of the red glazed Arretine ware produced in Italy in the first centuries before and after Christ and stamped with the Italian potters names amphorae (wine jars) of Mediterranean origin and Roman lamps and glass objects—all bespeaking the importance of the port which witnessed a regular marketing of the Mediterranean commodities Indo Roman trade brought impressively huge quantities of Roman coins hoards of which have been found mostly in peninsular India The imprint of the Roman coinage on the contemporary Indian currency

¹ It is noteworthy that the Gandhara art deeply imbued with the classical tradition and technique did not originate—or at any rate was not extensively practised—when the Greeks actually held the Gandhāra region it became popular only after their disappearance as a political power during the rule of the Scytho Parthians and Kusānas Scholars are not agreed upon the source of its inspiration and according to some the Roman element is not to be discounted

It is not unlikely that some of the Yavana traders of the cave inscriptions mentioned above were in reality Romans and not Greeks

Ancient India No II (July 1946) pp 17 ff Also publications de l'institut Français d'Indologie No 2 Les Relations extérieures de l'Inde p 18

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

is appreciable. The busts on the obverse of the coins of Nahapāna are nothing but imitations of those of the Roman emperors. The Kusāna gold issues were struck on the standard of Roman gold coins (*denarius aureus*). The new weight system was continued by the early Gupta monarchs whose gold issues were directly copied from those of the Kusānas. The name *denarius* itself was adopted in Sanskrit as *dīnāra*. The popularity of the Roman coin motifs in the early centuries of the Christian era is demonstrated by the discovery of a considerably large number of clay *bullae* (ornamental amulets) and medallions at places like Kondapur, Chandivalli, Kolhapur, Rajghat, Sisupalgarh, Nagarjunikonda, etc.

To what extent the Roman traders settled down and made India their home is difficult to say, though the establishment of permanent agencies of Roman traders at important emporia is extremely likely. At Muziris (Cranganore, Kerala State) there is said to have existed a temple of Augustus. The Tamil Śāṅgam literature is full of references to the Yavana traders. The *Śilappadikāram* speaks of the existence of the abodes of the Yavanas at Puhār or Kāveripattinam at the mouth of the Kāverī, another leading port of the period.

THE SCYTHIANS AND THE PARTHIANS

The Scythians (known as Śakas in India) who brought an end to the Greek rule first in Bactria and ultimately in India, were originally a nomadic tribe of Central Asia. They were forced to migrate out of their habitat by the hostility of neighbouring tribes. Soon after their infiltration into India, the lower Indus valley came to be named as Scythia after them. Inscriptions and coins attest to the rule of a line of four Śaka rulers viz. Maues, Azes I, Azilizes, and Azes II. The nationality of these rulers is often questioned, some claiming the last three as Parthian (Indian Pahlava). The Parthian traits may be due to the racial admixture which the Śakas certainly underwent during their long stay in eastern Iran before their penetration into India, with the result that the members of the same family bear Scythian, Parthian, and also Persian names. In truth, the political career of the Scythians in India is so much mixed up with that of the Parthians that it is not always possible to differentiate between them. The Śakas and Pahlavas are mentioned side by side in Indian literature and are regarded as degraded Kṣatriyas by Manu.

The rule of Azes II was supplanted in the first quarter of the first century A.D. by that of Gondophernes, unanimously acclaimed as Parthian. The Indo-Parthian supremacy was ephemeral, to be shattered by the more vigorous and extensive rule of the Kusanas, who however retained the services of the Śaka Satraps under their nominal allegiance.

The culture of the Śaka Pahlavas being much inferior to those of the Greeks and the Indians they succumbed to the cultural impact of both. They had very little heritage of their own to contribute to the highly advanced culture of the conquered and they were better known as the champions of the Hellenistic art and ideas. But soon India began to influence her conquerors—they embraced her faiths. Indian deities like Śiva, Umā and Gaja Laksmī (Laksmī being bathed by elephants) made their appearance on their coins. The Śaiva creed of Gondophares is demonstrable not only from his assumption of the title Devavrata but also from the representation of Śiva on some of his coins. Buddhism was in a prosperous condition during their regime. The Śaka provincial Satraps (Indianized into Ksatrapa) in charge of remote provinces as viceroys did not behave differently. Patika son of the Ksatrapa Liaka Kusuluka of Cukhsa near Taxila during the reign of Moha (Maues) enshrined the relics of the Buddha and built a monastery at Taxila. So did the chief queen of the Mahāksatrapa Rajula of Mathurā and she is associated in her pious acts with a host of Śaka individuals. The complete Indianization of Śaka Usavadāta (Rasabhadatta) son-in-law of the Kshaharāta Satrap Nahapāna (first quarter of the second century A.D.) of western India is amply borne out not only by his Indian name but also by a number of inscriptions at Nasik and Karle recording his benefactions. The true spirit of a pious Hindu—exhibited by him was his pilgrimage to Indian *tīrthas* (holy places) and his offering of various kinds of gifts to the Brahmanas and others. He also excavated caves for the Buddhist monks and made large endowments for the latter. Daksamitrā his wife followed her husband by making a gift of a cave dwelling for the use of the monks at Nasik.

The rule of Nahapāna was overthrown by the Sātavāhana king Gautamīputra Śatakarni. But almost immediately a new Scythian satrapal line virtually independent was established in western India. One is struck by the quickness of the complete Indianization of this family which was destined to have a long rule. The name of Castana founder of the line and that of his father Ysamotika are non-Indian. Jayadāman and Rudradāman son and grandson of Castana however bear partly Indianized names. The name of Damaghsada son and successor of Rudradāman is again foreign though the name of his brother Rudrasimha is purely Indian. The later members of the family with occasional use of the ending *dāman* continue to bear Indian names. The use of Kharosthī, Brāhmī and Greek scripts on the coins of Castana was limited in the case of his successors to Brāhmī and Greek, the latter degenerating into an ornamental border. The extent of Indianization can easily be visualized from the Junagarh (Saurashtra) inscription (A.D. 150) of Rudradāman.

recording the restoration of a dam under the supervision of his provincial governor Pahlava Suvisākha where Rudradāman claims not unjustifiably mastery over Sanskrit composition both in prose and poetry. It is noteworthy that while the inscriptions of the contemporary Śātavāhanas are in Prākṛit those of the Ksatrapas are in Sanskrit. Rudradāman's own inscription is itself a landmark in the history of Sanskrit prose. He even married his daughter to Vāsisthīputra Śrī Śātakarni of the orthodox Śātavāhana family. The matrimonial alliance of this family with the Ikāvākus of south eastern India is also attested to by one of the Nagarjunikonda inscriptions where Rudradhara Bhattārikā queen of Vīrapurusadatta (third century A.D.) is said to have made a gift of a pillar in the Mahācaitya at Nagarjunikonda. Other inscriptions tell the same tale about private Śaka individuals. One of the Nasik cave inscriptions records gifts by a Śaka called Vudhika son of Visnudatta another belonging to the reign of the Ābhira Īśvarasena (third century) also records a perpetual endowment for providing medicine to the sick monks by the Upāsika Visnudattā the daughter of the Śaka Agnivarman. Śaka Śrīdharavarman son of Nanda who was originally a *Mahadandanāyaka* but later on assumed independence was a devotee of Mahāsenā. In his Kanakhera (Sanchi) inscription he calls himself *dharma vijayi* (a religious conqueror). Like an orthodox Hindu he aspires to attain eternal abode in heaven by doing pious works such as the digging of a well.

THE ABHIRAS

The origin of this nomadic tribe and the stages of their migration into India are obscure. Most probably they came to India shortly before or along with the Scythians. Patañjali (second century B.C.) couples them with the Śūdras and the same grouping is found in the *Mahābhārata*¹⁸ where the two peoples are located near the spot of the disappearance of the Sarasvatī in southern Punjab or northern Rajasthan. The *Periplus* mentions Aberia with the coastal district Syrastrēne (Saurāstra) and Ptolemy locates Abiria above the Indus delta. Their western association is attested to in many Puranas as well.

In their early days in India the Ābhiras led a nomadic and predatory life—an example of which is the story of their raid on Arjuna and the Yādava women escorted by him¹⁹. But by the second century we find some of them attaining high ranks and even seizing political power. The Gunda (Saurāstra) inscription of A.D. 181 records the digging of a tank by an Ābhira general Rudrabhūti the son of a general named Bāpaka. One Ābhira Īśvarasena son of Śivadatta supposed to be the founder of the Kalacuri Cedi

¹ IX

era beginning with AD 248-49 rose to the royal rank in northern Mahārāstra. Towards the end of the third century the Ābhīras wielded considerable power and along with other Śāka rulers of India an Ābhīra king sent an embassy to congratulate the Sassanian king Narseh (293-302) on his victory against Varhran III. The Purānas also recognize the rule of ten Ābhīra princes covering a period of sixty-seven years after the Sāta-vāhanas. In the fourth century they came into conflict with the Kadamba king Mayurasarman. The Allahabad pillar inscription of Samudragupta refers to the Ābhīras as paying homage to him. Stray references to the Ābhīras as a political power particularly in western India continue in mediaeval literature and inscriptions.

The Ābhīras were at first regarded as barbarians and were despised. The Purānas brand them as *mlecchas* and *dasyus* (robbers). According to the *Amarakosa* Mahāsudrī means Ābhīrī while the *Kāśikā* identifies Mahāśūdra with a man of the Ābhīra descent. According to the *Mahābhārata*²⁰ they were Kṣatriyas degraded from their rank owing to the non-observance of Kṣatriya duties. The position of the Ābhīras was much improved in the estimation of Manu²¹ who regards them as the offspring of a Brāhmana by an Ambastha (descended from a Brāhmana father and Vaiśya mother) woman. The Ābhīras made a strong impression upon the Indians. Their speech obtained a distinct place in the Indian drama as an Apabhramśa (low Prakrit) dialect. They also contributed to the development of Indian music. Almost all musical works recognize the *rāginī* (tune) Ābhīrī or Āhīrī. But their greatest contribution is towards the growth of pastoral legends centring round Kṛṣṇa including his love affair with the *gopīs* (milkmaids). Today we find the Āhīrs (descendants of Ābhīras) scattered over the greater part of India. A number of localities in India are named after this tribe.

THE KUSĀNAS

In the first century AD the Śāka Pahlava power in the north-west gave way before the rising Kusānas a branch of the Yueh-chi a Central Asian nomadic tribe which in the second century BC under pressure from the neighbouring Hunas left its habitat and overran Bactria driving the Śakas to Kipin (modern Kafiristan). The Kusāna ruler Kujula Kadphises entered India at a fairly advanced age but even so the absorbing forces of the Indian culture fully operated upon him for he calls himself on some of his coins *dharmathida* (*dharma sthita*) and *sacadharmathida* (*satya dharma sthita*) meaning steadfast in the true religion (Buddhism?). His son Vema Kadphises was an avowed Śaiva. The reverse device of his coins is almost invariably Śiva or his emblem a combination of a trident and a battle axe.

FOREIGN ELEMENTS IN INDIAN POPULATION

The Kusana empire reached its zenith under Kaniska who conquered the major part of northern India. In his outlook he was a full fledged Indian and took active interest in the all round development of the country—specially in the spheres of religion literature and art. Celebrated as a great patron of Buddhism he attempted to systematize the contradictory views of the various schools and with this object summoned the Fourth Buddhist Council which marked the official recognition of the growing Mahāyānism with far reaching results in both religion and art. The huge *stūpa* which he built in the immediate vicinity of Peshawar his capital evoked great admiration even in later times from the Chinese and Arab travellers. From inside his *stūpa* has been recovered an inscribed relic casket bearing the figure of the Buddha both on its body and lid and recording a gift in Kaniska's *vihāra* (monastery) probably in the first year of his reign. The inscription also preserves the name of the architect Agisala which is undoubtedly a Prakrit form of Agesilaos—an instance of Kusāna rulers requisitioning the services of a Greek. His coins also bear the figure of the Buddha. Both the Hellenistic art of Gandhāra and the indigenous art of Mathurā which witnessed the simultaneous appearance of the Buddha image owe much to the active patronage of this great ruler and his successors. The extra Indian limits of their empire helped to a very great extent the spread of the Gandhāra art in Afghanistan and the neighbouring regions. Kaniska also extended his patronage to Buddhist philosophers and writers like Asvaghosa Pārsva and Viśuṃmitra. It is generally accepted that Kaniska was the founder of the Śaka era starting with A.D. 78 which came to be associated with the name of the Śakas due to its persistent use by the western Śaka Satraps.

The successors of Kaniska continue to bear outlandish names. On the coins of Huviska are introduced some additional Indian deities such as Bhṛuṣa (Śiva) Mahāsena Skanda Kumāra Visākha and Umā. A unique coin of this ruler probably presents one of the earliest representations of the composite deity Hari Har.³ Indeed cult syncretism in India received a great impetus from the syncretic tendencies of the Scytho Parthians and Kusānas who were prone to pay equal homage to the deities of different creeds. The last important Kusana king (c. A.D. 142-176) had a full fledged Indian name Vāsudeva and was a devotee of Śiva the latter appearing on most of his coins. The worship of this deity in his phallic form by devotees dressed like the Kusānas is represented by a few sculptures originating in

³ The use of an era was popularized in India by the Scytho Parthians and Kusanas who are also credited with the introduction of high sounding royal titles like Rajādhiraja Maharajādhiraja etc.

³ J. N. Bhanjey, *Development of Hindu Iconography* (Calcutta 1956) pp. 123 f.

Mathura The decline of the Kusāna power after Vāsudeva was hastened partly by the rise of the local dynasties on the south and partly by the Sassanians of Persia on the north who annexed the north western part of the Kusana empire The Kusāna rulers were also responsible for the development of the ideology behind the divine nature and origin of kings as shown not only by such characteristic features as flames issuing from their shoulders the royal busts rising from the clouds and the halo around their head depicted on their coins but also by their open assumption of the title Devaputra in their inscriptions

THE HUNAS

The Hunas (Epthalites or White Huns) poured into India from the Oxus valley in the fifth century AD laying waste the Buddhist establishments in Gandhāra and sweeping away the declining Kidāra Kusānas The Gupta emperor Skandagupta (c 455-67) succeeded for the time being in arresting their further incursions but within the next few decades we find their chief Toramāna holding a substantial part of northern India including at least a portion of the Madhya Pradesh According to a Jaina tradition he became a convert to that faith and lived at Pavvaya on the Candrabhāgā Toramāna's son and successor Mihirakula ruled over a large part of India including Gwalior up to his fifteenth regnal year But soon afterwards he met with crushing reverses at the hands of the Central Indian ruler Yaśodharman and probably also of the Gupta ruler Bālāditya According to the *Rājataranginī* he repaired to Kashmir where he founded a dynasty the members of which were zealous adherents of Brahmanism That Mihirakula himself was an exclusive worshipper of Śiva is placed beyond all doubt by the Mandasor inscription of Yaśodharman His coins also have on the reverse a bull and the legend *jayatu vrsah* (Victory to Śiva!) The adoption of the Brāhmanical creeds by this turbulent people is admirably represented by a nicolo (onyx) seal depicting a Hūna chief standing in a worshipful attitude before a syncretistic figure of Viṣṇu Śiva and Mihira²⁴ Though the Hūna empire in India collapsed with the defeat of Mihirakula small Hūna principalities and communities survived even afterwards since they are mentioned in the inscriptions of the mediaeval ruling dynasties like Paramāras and Cāhamānas But they soon lost their individuality amidst the natives of the soil and came to be regarded as one of the thirty-six Rajput clans In the eleventh century the great Cedi ruler Karna married a Hūna princess named Āvalladevī The impact of this foreign people on the social structure of India is palpable from the fact that the ethnic name

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

survives even now as one of the caste surnames of Central India and the Punjab. The names of a large number of villages in these regions still preserve the memory of this people.

CONCLUSION

The foregoing brief survey will amply prove that apart from the broad racial groups recognized by anthropologists as constituting the Indian population—most of such groups having entered India in prehistoric or protohistoric times and one or two being autochthonous—there are a number of other racial elements in the population the contribution of which to the enrichment of Indian culture can in no way be ignored. Further in addition to those peoples about whose migration there is recorded history or material evidence there must have been many more unrecorded movements which also brought with them new racial and cultural features that ultimately went to make the cultural pattern of India more and more complex. The quick adoption of the Indian languages and faiths by the incoming peoples due either to the compulsion of circumstances or to the comparative effiteness of the languages and creeds that they brought with them hastened and completed the process of assimilation.

To refuse to take notice of the diverse and exotic elements in the Indian culture and to regard it as wholly or even mainly the outcome of Vedism or even of the more eclectic Purāṇism is to falsify history. At the same time to isolate these elements and to emphasize them unduly is to ignore the basic homogeneity of the Indian culture—the product of absorbing forces that were in operation since the very dawn of human history in India. As Dr. Sunil Kumar Chatterji says: The fundamental trait of this (*scilicet* Indian) civilization may be described as a Harmony of Contrasts or as a Synthesis creating a Unity out of Diversity. Perhaps more than any other system of civilization it is broad and expansive and all-comprehensive like life itself and it has created an attitude of acceptance and understanding which will not confine itself to a single type of experience only to the exclusion of all others.²⁵

Presidential Address: All India Oriental Conference, 17th Session, Ahmedabad (1953)

SOME EXPERIMENTS IN SOCIAL REFORM IN MEDIAEVAL INDIA

INDIAN society in the mediaeval ages¹ appears to have been more or less static. Its dominant feature was custom. Ancient institutions that had been devised after considerable thought and that had stood the ravages of time became stereotyped. Many evils crept into mediaeval society and since leadership in the political field had passed into the hands of an alien race no well thought out attempt was made till the reign of Akbar to rejuvenate society by purging it of evil customs. But the problem was stupendous and no reform that lacked the support of the entire population could bear fruit. Consequently Akbar's well meant attempt as well as the preachings of the saints of the Bhakti cult touched only the fringe of society; its even tenor continued undisturbed.

CHILD MARRIAGE

Of the many evil customs in mediaeval Indian society none was perhaps more prevalent than child marriage which was in vogue among the Hindus and the Muslims alike. Political and social circumstances compelled a father at least among the Hindus² to have his daughter married as early as possible. Custom forbade girls to remain in the house of their parents for more than six to eight years from birth. According to Mukundarāma the author of the famous poem *Candī mangala* composed in the sixteenth century a father who could give his daughter in marriage in her ninth year was considered lucky and worthy of the favours of God³. This custom had become so rigid and coercive that we find the general of a Peshwā who could not arrange the marriage of his daughter at nine writing back home from the battlefield in deep anxiety. If the marriage is postponed to the next year the bride will be as old as ten. It will be a veritable calamity and scandal⁴. These early marriages were no doubt in the nature of betrothals since the actual consummation

¹ Some of the topics in this article have been elaborately treated in the writer's *Some Aspects of Society and Culture during the Mughal Age (1526-1707)* (Shivalal Agarwala & Co Educational Publishers, Agra, 1956) which may be consulted for further details.

² Hindus as a protection against Muslim raiders who would not usually carry off married women resorted to early marriage of their daughters. It also acted as a safeguard against vices and helped the bride to know her husband early enough. Cf. Will Durant *Our Oriental Heritage* (Simon and Schuster, New York, 1942) pp. 489-90.

³ J. N. Das Gupta, *Bengal in the Sixteenth Century* (Calcutta, 1914) p. 178.

⁴ A. S. Altekar, *The Position of Women in Hindu Civilization* (Benares, 1938) p. 73.

took place much later usually after the attainment of puberty ⁵ but the fact remains that the evil was there it had become universal and coercive and no attempt was made to check it till the age of Akbar The enlightened monarch that he was this evil custom could not escape his vigilant eye He issued orders that boys were not to marry before the age of sixteen and girls before fourteen The Emperor was of opinion that the offsprings of such early marriages would be weaklings He was also of opinion that the consent of the bride and the bridegroom together with the permission of the parents was essential for the confirmation of a marriage ⁶ It was the duty of the *kotwāl* to verify and note down the ages of the couple before giving his consent to the marriage The criticism of the bigoted Badāunī that in this way corruption became rife large profits found their way into the pockets of the police officers might be partially true But the imperial regulation was indeed a bold adventure and it must have checked the evil since Badāunī himself admits that no son or daughter of a person (was allowed) to be married until their ages (were) investigated by the chief police officer ⁷ It is however to be regretted that this order was neither rigorously enforced nor renewed by the later emperors and must have fallen into disuse

INTER CASTE MARRIAGE

Inter caste marriage was quite out of vogue in Hindu society ⁸ and no attempt was made in the mediaeval times to reintroduce it In fact even a liberal ruler like Akbar was not in favour of it the reason being as Abul Fazl asserts that he wished that his subjects should have the best progeny and for that physically mentally and morally fit matches were necessary since the children inherited the good or bad qualities of their parents ⁹ The *Ain-i-Akbari* may be referred to for details regarding caste restrictions Careri and Thevenot have also dealt with this topic at some length ¹⁰ No such restriction however existed among the Mohammedans Barring some close relations they had complete freedom in choosing the brides Akbar however disliked this custom and thought it highly improper to get into matrimonial alliance with near relations He allowed marriage

⁵ *Travels in India in the Seventeenth Century* by Sir Thomas Roe and John Fryer (Trubner & Co London 1873) p 185 For detailed references to early marriages see the work mentioned in fn 1 p 111

Abul Fazal *Ain-i-Akbari* (Eng trans by H Blochmann 1873) I pp 195 203 277
M H Azad *Dasbar-i-Akbari* (Urdu 1921) pp 79 80

Abdul Qādir Badaunī *Muntkhab ut Tawārīkh* (Eng trans by G S A Ranking and W H Lowe Asiatic Society of Bengal Calcutta 1884) II pp 367 404 6 Also see Abul Fazl *Akbarnāma* (Eng trans by H Beveridge Asiatic Society of Bengal Calcutta 1904) III p 677

⁶ It was from the tenth century that inter caste marriages began to go out of fashion
Cf Altekar *op cit* p 90
Akbarnāmā III p 677

⁷ S N Sen (Ed), *Travels of Thevenot and Careri* (National Archives of India) p 255

between first cousins in special circumstances when he regarded it as a slight evil for a great good

POLYGAMY

Polygamy which seems to have been prevalent particularly among the upper and middle class Mohammedan families soon attracted Akbar's attention. Hindus with the exception of a small number of princes and very wealthy persons strictly restricted themselves to monogamy as enjoined by their social custom and such too was the case with the generality of the Mohammedans.¹² Almost all the travellers—Alberuni, Della Valle, Mandelslo, Hamilton, Orme and Stavorinus—who visited India during this period corroborate the fact that Hindus take but one wife and never divorce her till death except for the cause of adultery. They could marry a second time only if the first wife proved to be barren.¹³ However there was no such restriction among the Mohammedans whose law ordains: Marry whatever woman you like either three each or four each. Polygamy naturally brought many evils in its train. A single husband could hardly be expected to satisfy several wives who wore the most expensive clothes, ate the daintiest food and enjoyed all worldly pleasures. These co-wives used all devices to excel one another and thereby win the exclusive love of their husband. Domestic unhappiness and immorality in some cases at least was the natural consequence. No check whatsoever was put on this practice till the reign of Akbar who consulted the *ulemā* participating in the religious discourses in his famous *Ibādat khānā* (House of Worship) at Fatehpur Sikri. In spite of the decision of the *ulemā* that a man might marry any number of wives by *mutāh*¹⁴ but only four by *nikāh*¹⁵ Akbar was bold enough to issue orders that a man of ordinary means should not possess more than one wife unless the first proved to be barren. He considered it highly injurious to a man's health and also detrimental to domestic peace to keep more than one wife.¹⁶

YOUNG MEN MARRYING OLD WOMEN

Akbar tried to do away with the evil practice of a young man's marrying an old lady a practice which was widely prevalent particularly among the

Akbarnāmā III p. 352

Badaūnī op cit II p. 367

¹² Adam Olearius (Ed.) *The Voyages and Travels of the Ambassadors Sent by Frederick Duke of Holstein to the Great Duke of Muscov etc. Containing a Particular Description of Hindustan the Moguls the Oriental Island and China (in Book III)* by Albert Mandelslo (Second Edition London 1669) p. 52

A temporary Muslim marriage among *Shiās* (according to the Arab lexicographers marriage of pleasure) a marriage which is contracted for a fixed period on rewarding the woman

¹⁴ A marriage common to *Shiās* and *Sunnīs*. Here marriage is a legal institution

Badaūnī op cit II [p. 212 367 *Chopra op cit* p. 109

Mohammedans The Hindus followed Manus injunction that a bridegroom should be older than his bride¹⁷ There was no such restriction in Mohammedan law Quite often a young man attracted by the wealth of an old lady would marry her disregarding the abnormal difference in age Akbar regarded such acts as against all canons of modesty and issued orders declaring such marriages illegal He further laid down that if a woman happened to be older than her husband by twelve years the marriage should be considered illegal and annulled¹⁸ It is to be regretted however that neither society nor any statutory law prevented an old man from marrying a girl of tender years

DOWRY SYSTEM

Akbar was perhaps the only mediaeval ruler who raised his voice against high dowries which were prevalent in those days Several European travellers have referred to this custom which was harsh to the poor who found it difficult to give their daughters in marriage because of their inability to pay high dowries¹⁹ Sometimes a poor father had not the means to procure even a wedding outfit for his daughter Tukārām the greatest of Mahārāstra saints could give his daughter in marriage only through the contributions of the villagers Vallabhācārya was hesitant to let his daughter be engaged to Śrī Caitanya since he was too poor to pay a handsome dowry²⁰ Huge dowries have been referred to in the works of the period such as *Sursagar Rāmcaritmānas* and *Padmāvat* Akbar was no doubt against high dowries and disapproved of them since as Abul Fazl writes they are rarely ever paid they are mere sham but he admitted their utility also as a preventive measure against rash divorces The *Āin-i Akbarī* records that the two sensible men called *tui begs* or masters of marriages appointed by the Emperor also looked into the circumstances of the bride and the bridegroom

The evil of bridal price was widespread in the South particularly among the Brāhmaṇas of the Pādāivīdu kingdom in mediaeval times The custom became so coercive that Deva Raya II of Vijayanagara who ruled in A.D. 1422-49 in consultation with the Brāhmaṇas of all shades of opinion in that division had to enact a legislation by which all marriages among these Brāhmaṇas were henceforth to be concluded by *kanyā dāna*, and the

G Buhler *The Laws of Manu* (The Sacred Books of the East XLV Oxford 1886) p. 344 cf. *Yāmagalkya Smṛiti* I 52

¹⁷ *Āin* (Eng. trans. by H. S. Jarrett 1894) III p. 311

¹⁸ S. N. Sen (Ed.) *op. cit.* p. 248; Mandelslo *op. cit.* p. 62; *Akbarnāma* III pp. 677-78; M. A. Macauliffe *The Sikh Religion* (Oxford 1927) I pp. 145, 353-54; *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* (Bombay) III p. 15

Nishikanta Sanyal *Śree Krishna Chaitanya* (Madras 1933) I p. 366

SOME EXPERIMENTS IN SOCIAL REFORM IN MEDIAEVAL INDIA

father had to give the daughter to the bridegroom gratuitously. Both the father who received the money and the bridegroom who gave the money were to be excommunicated. Money transactions on the occasion of a marriage were declared to be a legal offence²¹

As in the case of bridal price so in respect of some *maryada* (respectful offering) the people inhabiting the lands from Kondapalli to Rājamahendrapuram decided that the *oli*²² *maryada* in a first marriage should be twenty one *cinnams* (a type of coin) of gold that the bridegroom's party should give twelve and a half *cinnams* of silver and the bride's party twenty and a half *cinnams* of gold

WIDOW REMARRIAGE

Widow remarriage except for the lower caste people had disappeared almost completely in Hindu society during the early mediaeval age. No efforts were made to reintroduce this custom by any of the mediaeval rulers. Akbar too did not think it advisable to enforce widow remarriage though he declared it to be lawful²³. He was of opinion that a young girl who had got no enjoyment from her husband should not be burnt but if the Hindus took it ill she should be married to a widower.

PURDAH

No efforts were made in the mediaeval times to reform much less to abolish the *pardāh* system which was strictly observed in high class families of both the communities. Even a liberal king like Akbar had issued orders that if a young woman was found running about the streets and bazars of the town and while so doing did not veil herself or allowed herself to be come unveiled she was to go to the quarters of the prostitutes and take up the profession²⁴. It is however to the credit of the saints of the Bhakti movement that they raised their voice against the tyranny of the *pardāh*. Pīpa (A.D. 1425) a saint of Gagaraungarh advised the queen of Toda the wife of Sūr Sen that it was not necessary for women to veil themselves in the presence of holy men while Kabīr remonstrated against the observance of *pardāh* by his daughter in law saying that it would not be of any avail at the last moment.

S Krishnaswamy Aiyangar *Social Legislation under Hindu Governments* (Madras 1915) pp 56 T V Mahalingam *Administration and Social Life under Vijayanagara* (Madras 1940) pp 256 57

Oli is the same as bridal price. This term is generally used with reference to the lower classes. Mahalingam *op cit* p 257

²² *Āin-i-Akbari* (Trans. by H Blochmann and revised by D C Phillott Asiatic Society of Bengal Calcutta 1939) p 215. Also see Badauni *op cit* II p 367

²³ Chopra *op cit* pp 103 8

²⁴ This is said to have been an importation into India. Vide Will Durant *op cit* pp 494 96

Some of the Delhi Sultans did try to discourage the custom of *satī* (suttee)² which prevailed among a large section of the Hindu population particularly the upper classes and the Rajputs. Though *satī* was only voluntary in the South and not enjoined upon the widows it is difficult to account for its wide popularity in the Vijayanagara empire whose rulers however do not seem to have put any restrictions on its observance²⁶. Mohammed bin Tughluq was in all probability the first mediaeval ruler who placed restrictions on its observance²⁷. A licence had to be obtained before a widow could immolate herself within his dominions. The law was meant to prevent any compulsion or force being used against an unwilling widow. These rules seemed to have continued as Sidi Ali Reis who visited India during Humāyūn's reign observes that the officers of the Sultan were always present on the scene of *satī* observance and looked to it that the widow was not being burnt against her will²⁸.

Though Akbar did not forbid the *satī* altogether he had issued definite orders to the *kotwāls* that they should not suffer a woman to be burnt against her inclination. Dīn-i Ilāhī Akbar's new faith also condemned this practice²⁹. Sometimes he is said to have personally intervened to save unwilling widows from the practice of *satī*. Not only did he rescue the widow of Jai Mal a cousin of Bhagwān Dās from being burnt but also put in prison her son who had compelled her to burn herself. The European travellers—Della Valle, Pelsaert and Tavernier—testify to the fact that the permission of the governor was absolutely essential before a widow could be allowed to be burnt. The governor according to Pelsaert tried to dissuade her from the act and even offered her monthly subsistence³⁰. Sometimes the permission was refused even to willing widows who had children to rear³¹. The permission was usually obtained after giving a suitable present. Jahāngīr and Shāh Jahān did not make any change in the existing law. The former when he came to know that in the foothills of the Himalayas Muslim converts had retained the Hindu custom of *satī* and female infanticide made these a capital offence. Shāh Jahān would not allow the burning of widows near a Muslim cemetery since it looked offensive to Mohammedans. Aurangzeb was the only emperor who issued definite orders (1664) forbidding *satī* in his realms altogether³² but his orders seem to have

² Mahalingam *op cit* pp 260-61

²⁷ Ishwari Prasad *History of Qaraunah Turks in India* I p 304

²⁸ *Travels and Adventures of Sidi Ali Reis during the years 1553-56* p 60
M. Roy Choudhury *Din-i Ilahi* p 261

²⁹ *Jahangir's India (The Remonstrance of)* Francois Pelsaert trans from the Dutch by W. H. Moreland and P. Geyl (Cambridge 1925) pp 79-80

³¹ *The Six Voyages of John Baptista Tavernier through Turkey into Persia and the East Indies* (London 1678) I p 169

J. N. Sarkar *Aurangzeb* V pp 461-62

had no appreciable effect on the populace who continued to follow the custom as before

USE OF INTOXICANTS

Intoxicants like wine opium and *bhāṅg* were frequently indulged in. In spite of the injunctions of the Qur'an which strictly forbade the use of wine drinking was quite popular among Mohammedans particularly the upper classes and the soldiery who were very fond of it. Ladies teachers and religious preachers too sometimes resorted to it in secret but such instances were few. It was the nobility however which indulged in it indiscreetly with the result that many of them fell victims to it. In the South however the Vijayanagara rulers strictly forbade the use of wine which was looked upon as a great sin. But no effort seems to have been made to put a check on drinking in the North before the time of Alā'ud-dīn Khaljī whose reforms were also an outcome of political exigencies and not of any philanthropic motives. His main objection against wine was that its use made people assemble in gatherings lose themselves and think of revolt.³³ He issued orders strictly forbidding the sale and purchase of wine. Later on intoxicants like toddy and hemp too were prohibited.

The Emperor adopted ruthless measures to enforce prohibition. Vintners drunkards gamblers and vendors of toddy and hemp were driven out of the capital. His intelligence department kept a strict watch over the offenders who were severely punished and sometimes thrown into wells specially dug for the purpose. The respectable people at once gave up drinking but habitual drunkards resorted to manufacture of wine in private and to smuggling. Later on the Sultan relaxed his orders to some extent and allowed private distillation and drinking.³⁴ The prohibition order was neither renewed nor strictly enforced by the later emperors till the reign of Akbar who ordered severe punishment for excessive drinking and disorderly conduct. Even Muzaffar Husain Mīrẓā who had been married to Akbar's eldest daughter was imprisoned for excessive drinking. Akbar also regularized the sale of wine. A wine shop was set up near the palace where the liquid was sold in small quantities to be used as medicine on the advice of the physician after fully ascertaining and writing down in a register the names of the customer his father and his grandfather.³⁵ Though Jahāṅgīr regarded a little wine a prudent friend yet he discouraged its use among his subjects. He found it bad for the temperament and strictly forbade all sorts of intoxicants which must neither be made nor sold.

K. S. Lal *History of the Khaljīs* pp. 262-63.
Ziā'ud-dīn Baranī *Tarikh-i-Firūz Shāhī* (Bibliotheca Indica Calcutta ASB 1862)
pp. 270-71.

* *Badā'uni op cit* II p. 311

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Petermundy who visited India during Shah Jahān's reign found the country dry. Death to the party, destruction to that house where it shall be found was the order of the day. Of course Aurangzeb who drank nothing but water could not tolerate wine. In 1668 he issued orders strictly prohibiting the use of all intoxicating liquors. European travellers of the time confirm the strictness of the measures adopted to enforce prohibition. *Muhtasibs* (municipal officers) were on the look out for offenders and Manucci records. The pots and pans in which the beverage was prepared were broken daily by *muhtasibs*.³⁶ In spite of all this strictness however Aurangzeb failed to keep the Mughal aristocracy back from drink. Jadunath Sarkar notices in the news letters of the court many reports of wine selling and wine drinking in the camp bazar in the houses of his nobles and among the garrisons of the forts.³⁷ There is however no denying the fact that these prohibitory orders had a very healthy effect on the generality of the population who kept themselves back from this evil. While acknowledging the occasional excesses of certain individuals here and there we may accept the verdict of Terry as to the general sobriety of all ranks of the population except the nobles who formed only a small section of it.³⁸

SMOKING TOBACCO AND OTHER NARCOTICS

Tobacco³⁹ gained such rapid popularity soon after its introduction in India in 1605 by the Portuguese that Jahāngīr had to order its prohibition by a special enactment in 1617 on account of the disturbance it brings about in most temperaments and constitutions. But the decree seemed to have remained a dead letter as we learn from the accounts of later travellers. Manucci for instance mentions Rs 5 000 as tobacco duty realized for a day in Delhi alone. The abolition of the Act according to him came as a great relief to the poorer classes. Jahāngīr also prohibited the use of *bhāng* and *buzā* declaring that they were injurious to health.

GAMBLING

Efforts were also made by some of the mediaeval rulers like Alā ud dīn and Akbar to discourage gambling and dicing which seem to have been quite common in those days. Amīr Khusrau describes a Muslim gambler as a familiar figure in society. Alā ud dīn prohibited it altogether and

³⁶ Niccolao Venetian Manucci *Storia do Mogor* (Eng trans by William Irvine 1907 8) II pp 57

³⁷ J N Sarkar *op cit* V p 461

William Foster *Early Travels in India* (Oxford 1921) p 31 Manucci *op cit* IV p 208

Tuzuk-i-Jahāngīrī (trans by Rogers and edited by H Beveridge Royal Asiatic Society London) I p 374 Chopra *op cit* p 48

ordered the gamblers to be turned out of the capital ⁴⁰ Kabīr looked upon gambling as nothing less than a sin. He advises his followers to refrain from it as it is the cause of great sorrow and gamblers come to a very evil condition. However this evil seems to have continued and no notice was taken of it till the time of Akbar who put restrictions on gambling so that it could be indulged in only on certain occasions such as the festivals of *nauroz* and the *divālī* ⁴¹ Jahangīr forbade it altogether ⁴² but the practice seems to have continued and Ihevenot who visited India during Shah Jahān's reign observes that much gambling took place in Delhi and Banāras and a vast deal of money was lost and people ruined. He quotes the instance of a *banīyā* who lost all his wealth and staked even his wife and child.

PROSTITUTION

Alā ud dīn was the first mediaeval Indian ruler to take steps against public prostitution which was looked upon as a necessary evil during that age. The Sultan who was alarmed at the rapid increase of the number of prostitutes during his reign issued orders prohibiting prostitution altogether ⁴³. All the professional women were ordered to get married within a prescribed period of time. The evil however continued since no check was put on it by that Sultan's successors till the reign of Akbar who tried to segregate it. In order to keep the city atmosphere uncontaminated a special quarter outside the city called *saitānpura* or the devil's quarters was assigned to the prostitutes and all the public women were ordered to reside there. A *dārogā* (police officer) was appointed to look after the affairs of the quarter. Everyone who wanted to visit a public woman had to get his particulars noted down in the *dārogā's* office and also pay the State fee. Special permission of the Emperor was necessary if any courtier wanted to have a virgin. The offenders were severely dealt with. Akbar himself inquired into the cases of some of the principal prostitutes and punished those grandees who were responsible for depriving them of their virginity ⁴⁴. These measures must have put a good deal of check on the new entrants at least. Akbar's regulations seem to have continued to be observed during the reigns of the successive emperors and Tavernier notes that it was essential for a woman to have licence from the government before she could adopt this profession. He also refers to the *dārogā's* book which according to him contained 20 000 such names ⁴⁵ which seems to be an exaggeration.

K. S. Lal *op cit* pp 262-63

Badauni *op cit* II pp 348-49 also see *Aīn* (Trans. by Jarrett 1891) II p 190

⁴² *Cambridge History of India* IV 181

Barni *op cit* p 336

⁴⁴ *Aīn* I pp 201-2

The Six Voyages of Tavernier p 65

Jahāngir tried to do away with the horrid practice of making and selling eunuchs which was specially prevalent in Sylhet in East Bengal. He issued orders making it a capital offence. Soon after Afzal Khān Governor of Bihar sent a number of offenders to the capital. Jahāngir sentenced them all to lifelong imprisonment.⁴⁶ But the practice seems to have continued as Aurangzeb felt the necessity of renewing the regulation strictly forbidding castration.⁴⁷ Both these emperors however continued to employ eunuchs in their own service.

SOCIAL REFORMERS

The efforts at reform however were not confined to the kings and emperors in the North. Perhaps more lasting and far reaching were the socio religious reforms of the saints of the Bhakti cult like Rāmānuja Madhva Rāmānanda Kabir Ravidās Nānak Tukārām Purandara Dāsa Śrī Caitanya Śankara Deva and Dādū who flourished during this period and covered the whole country. They raised their powerful voice against the vices prevailing in society and made it incumbent on their followers to desist from them. Their highly enlightened moral teachings their prohibition of the heinous crime of infanticide their injunctions against the practice of *satī* and their powerful attacks on the caste system went a long way in bringing home to the masses the evil effects of some of these long prevailing customs. Ranade summarizes the effects of the Bhakti movement on the life of the people in Mahārāstra and his account is true of other parts of the country as well. The main results of this movement, according to him were the development of the vernacular literature the modification of caste exclusiveness the sanctification of family life the elevation of the status of women the spread of humaneness and toleration, partial reconciliation with Islam the subordination of rites and ceremonies pilgrimages and fasts and learning and contemplation to the worship of God with love and faith the limitation of the excesses of polytheism and the uplift of the nation to a higher level of capacity both of thought and action.⁴⁸

The caste system was a special target of attack for these social reformers particularly Rāmānanda Kabir Nānak Tukārām Śrī Caitanya and Dadu who have declared caste distinctions of the Hindus to be vain and productive of that pride which God abhors.⁴⁹ Guru Nānak described

⁴⁶ Beni Prasad *History of Jahāngir* (London 1930) pp 436 37

⁴⁷ J. N. Sarkar *op cit* III pp 90 91

M. G. Ranade *Rise of Marāṭha Power* pp 50 51

Macauliffe *op cit* I pp xxii 28 278 283 VI pp 103 121 319 Also see Tara Chand *Influence of Islam on Indian Culture* (Allahabad 1946) pp 122 225

caste rules to be a folly while Rāmānanda applied himself to the study of the Śāstras to prove that the observance of caste rules was unnecessary for anyone who sought the service of God. Like Basava (A.D. 1156-67) founder of the reformed Virasaiva faith of Lingāyatas or Jangamas he laid it down as a rule that all persons of any caste who accepted the tenets and principles of his sect might eat and drink together irrespective of caste. Ravidās and Dādū condemned caste distinctions in unequivocal terms while Śrī Caitanya went a step further and said that if a man ate from the plate of a Dom he regarded it as most pleasing to God.⁵⁰ The main contention of these reformers as Nāmdev, a saint of Mahārāstra puts it was that even a low caste man who loves God is superior to a Brāhmana who though irreproachable in his acts possesses no love for creatures.⁵¹ Rāmānuja was perhaps the first social reformer to relax caste restrictions in favour of the Sūdras in the South. How these moralists and poets of the mediaeval times fought against the rigidity of the caste system and untouchability is related by Telugu and Karnāṭaka poets like Sarvajña Kanaka Dāsa, Kapilar and Vemana in their compositions.⁵² It was mainly the preachings of these reformers that brought about some relaxation in caste rules and indifference to rituals at least among some sects in the South. We find for instance a Cola monarch granting the privileges of blowing conches, beating drums etc. to the stone masons (Kan Malār) of Sonte Kongn and some other areas.⁵³ An inscription (A.D. 1632) of the reign of Śrīranga Deva, a Vijayanagara king, refers to an undertaking by the inhabitants of the village Tiruvamattūr in South Arcot not to ill treat the artisan communities of their villages and in default to pay a certain fine.⁵⁴

These spiritual teachers also made a fierce attack on some religious customs of both the communities such as the worship of cemeteries and cremation grounds, pilgrimages, fasts, circumcision, the sacred thread ceremony (*upanayana*) etc.⁵⁵ and advised their followers to refrain from these customs and develop in their place love of God and His creatures.

Guru Nānak and Kabir deprecated the practice of *sati*. Nānak in his hymns disapproves of this custom since in his opinion the widow who followeth her husband and dieth hath no pure love. The Gurus contended that the con cremation of widows was useless and did not serve any purpose.

Dinesh Chandra Sen, *Chaitanya and His Companions*, pp. 160-61.

Macauliffe, *op cit*, VI, p. 31.

B. A. Saletore, *Social and Political Life in the Vijayanagar Empire* (Madras, 1954).

II, p. 58.

⁵² K. A. Nilakanta Sastri, *The Colas* (Madras University, 1934), II, p. 357.

Saletore, *op cit*, II, p. 202.

Macauliffe, *op cit*, I, pp. 16, 17, 50; II, p. 50, 84, 240, 420; IV, pp. 293, 420; VI, pp. 126, 127.

If the widow loves her husband his death is a torture to her and if she loves him not his life or death is of unconcern to her Therefore cremating her by force or for the sake of custom or fashion is utterly useless ⁵⁶ Kabir discouraged the practice by pointing out the futility of the universal belief that the woman who immolated herself on her husband's pyre would obtain salvation Guru Nanak also in his hymns disapproved of the practice of self immolation of Hindu devotees at Banaras and Prayag

It was due to the preachings and efforts of the Vaisnava reformers like Rāmānuja Madhva Śrī Caitanya Vallabha and others in later times who placed absolute emphasis on the self sufficiency of the path of devotion that the last vestiges of bloodshed connected with human or animal sacrifices were practically done away with Madhva could not of course enjoin their complete abolition which is indeed impossible for anyone who bases his teachings on the authority of the Śrutis but he substituted a lamb made of rice flour for one of flesh and blood as a sacrificial offering to the gods ⁵⁷

The Sikh Gurus resolutely set themselves against the practice of infanticide It was one of the obligations imposed on neophytes at the time of their admission to the *pahūl* or Sikh baptism that they should not kill their daughters and should avoid association with all those who did so ⁵⁸ The Gurus also tried to elevate the position of women and remonstrated with those who reviled the female sex

Why call her bad from whom are born kings?

As was but natural some of these social reformers particularly Kabir Ravidās Bīrbhān Kartā Bābā and the Sikh Gurus discouraged the use of intoxicants like wine tobacco and toddy While Kabir and Ravidās outlined the evil effects of wine the Sikh Gurus prohibited its use among their followers Guru Haigovind Singh the sixth Guru has advised his followers to desist from this evil since he who drinketh it loses his senses Many kings have lost their kingdoms because of its use It makes man a beast And the Guru has concluded with these words Men holy clever and great have degraded themselves to the level of brutes by the use of wine It will hold men captive even without fetters Kabir also spoke in the same strain when offered a cup of wine by a *yogi* The Sātnāmī sect was prohibited by its founder Bīrbhān from taking any intoxicating substance such as wine opium tobacco or even betel The Sikh Gurus were particularly opposed to smoking Guru Govind Singh the tenth Guru prohibited smoking of tobacco by the Sikhs He called it a vile

Ibid II p 228

Three Great Acharyas Śaṅkara Rāmānuja and Madhva (G A Nastesan & Co Madras) p 230

⁵⁸ Macauliffe *op cit* III p 71 fn 2

drug which burned the chest induced nervousness palpitation bronchitis and other diseases and finally caused death He compared it with other intoxicants and concluded Wine is bad *bhang* destroyeth one generation but tobacco destroyeth all generations The violation of this prohibition order meant excommunication from the Khalsā and the offender had to be rebaptized after due repentance and payment of a suitable fine ⁵⁹ Ravidās regarded the use of toddy as sinful

Adultery sodomy and other such immoral practices were condemned on all hands The Sikh Gurus as well as other social reformers looked upon the first as a most heinous crime Approach not another woman's couch either by mistake or even in a dream Know that love of another's wife is as sharp as a dagger ⁶⁰

Alā ud dīn had issued orders according to which the adulteress was stoned to death and the adulterer was castrated Sometimes the guilty were deprived of their noses These vices were however very rare in Indian society and Tavernier observes Adultery is very rare among them and as for sodomy I never heard it mentioned Akbar too held a high opinion of the chastity of Hindu women who in spite of being sometimes neglected were flaming torches of love and fellowship ⁶¹ Jahāngīr admires the fidelity of Hindu women who would not allow the hand of any unlawful person touch the skirt of their chastity and would rather perish in flames ⁶²

Ibid V p 153

Ibid V 110

Akbarnama III p 372

Tuzūk i Jahangīr II p 268 Chopra *op cit* pp 126 27

ANCIENT INDIAN EDUCATION¹

I

THE VEDIC PERIOD

THE roots of the ancient Indian system of education may be traced in the works of Vedic literature namely the Vedic Samhitās the Brāhmanas the Āranyakas and the Upanisads. In fact these works are the products of the educational system which they reveal.

The main aim of this system is the training of the mind as an instrument of knowledge and not simply to fill it with the furniture of objective knowledge. What weakens the mind is its contact with matter what strengthens it is its detachment from matter and freedom from its contaminating contacts. In a word the only way by which the mind can fulfil its innate and intrinsic potentialities is to keep itself in constant communion with the cosmic principle and open itself to its influence. It is what may be called *yoga* or the process of bringing together the individual soul and the Oversoul. The individual is the *ādhāra* (base) which is vitalized by the cosmic energy (*prakṛti māyā* or *śakti*) pervading the world and pouring itself into every name and form the clod, the plant the insect the animal or man. When the *ādhāra* is fully fitted to bear the inrush and impact of this divine energy its evolution is completed and the man becomes *siddha* the fulfilled or perfected soul.

Thus the first principle of this education was to bring into play the cosmic principle upon the individual by building up in the latter a strong store of infinite energy or divine potency through the practice of *brahmacharya* (chastity) the first necessary condition for increasing the vital force within and giving scope to its working.

Let us next proceed to analyse some salient features of the old Indian educational system. First of all ancient schools were largely located far away from the din and bustle of cities in sylvan retreats, in an atmosphere of solitude and serenity conducive to mental concentration as the main appliance in education. From these sylvan schools and hermitages flowed

On the subject of Indian education the following works may be consulted. *Promotion of Learning in Ancient India* by Narendranath Law. *Ancient Indian Education (Brahmanical and Buddhist)* by Radha Kumud Mookerji (1947). *Education in Ancient India* (5th Ed.) by A. S. Altekar and above all *History of Dharmaśāstra* by P. V. Kane Vol. II pp. 268-415. For a survey of the whole subject during successive periods *vide* also the chapters on education by Radha Kumud Mookerji in Vol. II and by the present writer in Vols. III-V of *The History and Culture of the Indian People*.

the highest thought of India Thus India's civilization through the ages has been very largely the product of her woods and forests It started as a rural and not as an urban civilization² A significant designation of a branch of Sanskrit sacred literature is the *Āranyaka* the literature of the woods in the silence and solitude of which its meaning was revealed

Apart from the influence of the environment the real creative force in education came from the teacher (*guru*) as the master mind directing its entire course His home was the school The school was thus a natural formation and not an artificially created institution It began where the pupil met the teacher and was admitted by him to his pupilage The pupil was not forced upon him by the fee by which a modern school admits its pupils The teacher's admission of the pupil was a solemn and sacred ceremony known as *upanayana* or initiation It was not a mere meaningless ritual The ceremony took three days during which as explained in the *Atharva Veda* the teacher held the pupil within him to impart to him a new birth whence the pupil emerged as a *dvija* or twice born His first birth he owes to his parents who gave him only his body this is a mere physical birth His second birth is spiritual it unfolds his mind and soul³ Education was thus based upon an individual treatment of the pupil by his teacher with whom he must live to give full scope to it The pupil was to imbibe the inward method of the teacher the secrets of his efficiency the spirit of his life and work and these things were too subtle to be taught This individual treatment was all the more essential where the supreme purpose of education was the attainment of the highest saving knowledge leading to *mukti* (liberation) The highest knowledge is described as *vidyā* or *parāvidyā* as distinguished from *avidyā* or *aparāvidyā* which is a body of contingent truths half truths and fallacies⁴

As the poet Rabindranath Tagore writes in his inimitable style A most wonderful thing we notice in India is that here the forest not the town is the fountain head of all its civilization Wherever in India its earliest and most wonderful manifestations are noticed we find that men have not come into such close contact as to be rolled or fused into a compact mass There trees and plants rivers and lakes had ample opportunity to live in close relationship with men In these forests though there was human society there was enough of open space of aloofness there was no jostling Still this aloofness did not produce inertia in the Indian mind rather it rendered it all the brighter It is the forest that has nurtured the two great ancient ages of India the Vedic and the Buddhist As did the Vedic *rsis* Lord Buddha also showed his teachings in the many woods of India The current of civilization that flowed from its forests inundated the whole of India (Quoted in *Ancient Indian Education* (by R. K. Mookerji) p xxxv)

² The supreme need of a teacher is thus explained in the *Chāndogya Upaniṣad* (VI 14 1 2) Precisely my dear sir as a man who has been brought blindfold from the country of Gandhara and then set at liberty in the desert goes astray to the east or north or south because he has been brought thither blindfold and set at liberty also blindfold but after that when someone has taken off the bandage and told him In this direction Gandhāra lies go in this direction instructed and prudent asking the road from village to village he finds his way home to Gandhara even so the man who in this world has met with a teacher becomes conscious To this (transitory world) I shall belong only until the time of my release thereupon I shall go home

⁴ This distinction between grades of knowledge is very well described in the *Chandogya*

Three steps are distinguished in the attainment of supreme knowledge. These are *śravaṇa*, *manana* and *nīdīdhyāsana*. *Śravaṇa* is listening to the words or texts as they are uttered by the teacher. This was the time honoured method of education in ancient India: the system of oral tradition by which knowledge was transmitted from teacher to pupil by *guruparamparā* (a succession of teachers) or *sampradāya* (handing down). Such knowledge was imparted in the form known as *mantra* or *sūtra* by which the maximum of meaning was compressed within the minimum of words of which the crowning example was the *pranava* or the syllable *Om* containing within itself a world of meaning. All the learning of the times was thus held between the teacher and the taught and the teacher was the walking library and source of knowledge to be tapped directly by the student. Besides recitation of texts as they were uttered by the teacher had its own value as a vehicle of knowledge. *Śabda* or sound of the sacred word or *mantra* has its own potency and value apart from its sense and its intrinsic and innate implications: its rhythm, its vibrations should be captured. *Śabda* is Brahman: the Word is God.⁵ The receiving of this knowledge as it was uttered by the teacher was to be followed by the process of its assimilation by *manana*: deliberation or reflection on the topic taught. But such reflection resulted only in a mere intellectual apprehension of the meaning of the text imparted by the teacher to his pupil. Therefore learning was to be completed by the third step or process—which was technically called *nīdīdhyāsana* (meditation) leading to the realization of truth after its intellectual apprehension. As the *Mundaka Upaniṣad* (II 3 4) points out: A mere intellectual apprehension of truth, a reasoned conviction is not sufficient though it is necessary at the first stage as a sort of mark at which to shoot. *Nīdīdhyāsana* represents the highest stage of meditation which with reference to Brahman or the one Reality, has been defined as the steady stream of consciousness of the one Reality undisturbed by the slightest awareness of the many or any material object such as the body contradictory to the sense of the one non dual Self or Reality.⁶ The Upaniṣads prescribe certain preliminary exercises in medi-

Upaniṣad (VII 1) where the Sage Narada approaches Sanatkumāra after completing his period of studentship during which he studied the four Vedas, the Vedāṅgas and many practical subjects known in those days. Narada says to Sanatkumāra: "These subjects, sir, I have studied. Therefore I am learned in the scriptures (*mantravid*) but not as regards the Ātman (*Ātmavid*). Yet I have heard from personages like you that he who knows the Ātman vanquishes sorrow. I am in sorrow. Lead me then. I pray beyond the reach of sorrow." Śaṅkara in his *Viveka cūdāmaṇi* (Anc. Ind. Edu. p. xxxi) further explains *śravaṇa* as listening to the instruction of the teacher and knowing from him the primary truth that the Self is to be differentiated from non-Self appearing in various forms. Bondage is moved by knowledge. The knowledge that is thus received through the ear was aptly called *śruti*: what has been heard. It was a term for revealed knowledge.

īṣṭīya dehādī pratyaya virahito *duṣṭīya vastu saṁśīya pravahah* (Sarva Vedānta Sūtra
dhātā Sara samgraha V 814)

tation to lead up to its final stage. These are called *upāsana*s giving training in contemplation.⁷

A set of external aids to knowledge was also formulated to supplement these inner disciplines and processes and to strengthen the moral foundations for the pursuit of knowledge. The first of these has already been stated viz that the pupil must live with his teacher as a member of his family so that his education may be a whole time process and not for a stated period as is the custom in modern schools. Living with his teacher as his *antevāsin* (companion) the pupil had to take advantage of the opportunities which opened out before him in such a school a hermitage set in sylvan surroundings. His first duty was to walk to the woods collect fuel and bring it home for tending the sacred fire. The Upanisads frequently mention pupils approaching their teacher with fuel in hand as a token that they are ready to serve the teacher and tend his household fire. The *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*⁸ explains that the *brahmacārī* puts on fuel to enkindle the mind with fire with holy lustre.

The pupil's next duty was to tend the teacher's house and cattle. Tending the house was training for him in self help in dignity of labour by manual service for his teacher and the student brotherhood. Tending cattle was education through a craft as a part of the highest liberal education. The pupils received a valuable training in the love of the cow as the animal most serviceable to man and in the industry of rearing cattle and dairy farming with all the other advantages it gave of outdoor life and robust physical exercise.⁹

Another duty of the *brahmacārī* was to go out on a daily round of begging. It was not the selfish begging for his own benefit but for the academic corporation to which he belonged. Its educative value is explained in the *Śatapatha Brāhmaṇa*¹⁰ which points out that it is meant to produce in the pupil a spirit of humility and renunciation.

Thus all these external practices operate as aids to knowledge by

In the story of Nārada (*Cha U VII 1*) quoted above Sanatkumāra answered him. Whatever you have studied (including even the Vedas) is mere words. Similarly Svetaketu spending twelve years in a thorough study of all the Vedas is found by his father Uddalaka Aruṇi only full of conceit about his erudition without that knowledge through which everything is known (*Ibid VI 1*). Upakosala Kamalayana was another student who even with his twelve years study and austerities was not considered fit by his teacher for the highest knowledge (*Ibid IV 10*). Therefore the *Bṛhadaranyaka Upaniṣad* (*IV 4 21*) states. The seeker after the highest knowledge should not seek after the knowledge of the books for that is mere weariness of the tongue. The *Katha Upaniṣad* (*I 2 23*) similarly points out. Not by the study of the Vedas is the Ātman attained nor by intelligence nor by much book learning.

XI 5 4 5

Cha U (*IV 4 1 ff 5 1 6 2 etc*) tells us the story of Satyakama Jabala who was of uncertain parentage but was admitted as a pupil by his teacher Gautama who discovered in him the real characteristics of a Brāhmaṇa namely spirituality and truthfulness.

¹ XI 3 3 5

strengthening the potency of the mind as an instrument for acquiring knowledge by making it less and less objective and less and less open to contamination by contact with matter. The aim of education is thus *citta vrtti nirodha* (control of the mental waves) by which the individual merges in the universal. It is the union (*yoga*) of the individual soul with the Oversoul¹¹

We may next notice the different types of institutions by which education was promoted in the country in the Vedic period. The first was the *āśrama* or hermitage, a home of learning with an individual teacher as its head, who admitted to his domestic school as many pupils as he found fit and could instruct. In these schools the pupils passed their period of studentship proper (*brahmacarya*). But there might be pupils who would prefer to continue as students through life, dedicated to the pursuit of learning and religion in the spirit of the passage in the *Bṛhadāraṇyaka Upaniṣad*. Wishing for that world (Brahman) only mendicants leave their homes, knowing this, the people of old did not wish for offspring, and they having risen above the desire for sons, wealth and new worlds, wandered about as mendicants.¹² Such students are known as *naisthika brahmacārins*. They wandered about the country as *parivrajakas*, seeking higher knowledge by mutual discussions or contact with renowned *ṛsis* (sages) and master minds. The Upaniṣads call these peripatetic votaries of knowledge and seekers after truth *carakas*, who were the diffusers of thought in the country. Thus Uddālaka Āruṇi, a Kuru Pañcāla scholar, after finishing his education, went to the north and received further instruction from Rṣi Śaunaka. He also lived for some time in the land of the *Madras* to place himself under the instruction of Rṣi Patañjala Kāpya.¹³

There were also in the country institutions for advanced study known as *paṇisads*. The most famous *paṇisad* of the times was the Pañcāla *paṇisad*, which was patronized by the philosopher-king of the country, Pravāhana

Bergson similarly insists (*Morality and Religion*, p. 6) on the withdrawal of the mind from the world of matter, which imposes upon it its spatial forms and thus arrests the natural creativity, inwardness and suppleness of conscious life. Consciousness, he says, in shaping itself into intelligence, that is to say, in concentrating itself on matter, seems to externalize itself. It is only when the Self brackets itself out from the realm of things that the psychic processes regain their normal ways. He further points out that the individual's consciousness, delving downwards, reveals to him the deeper he goes, his original personality, to which he may cling as something solid, as means of escape from a life of impulse, caprice and regret. In our innermost selves, we may discover an equilibrium more desirable than the one on the surface. Certain aquatic plants, as they rise to the surface, are ceaselessly jostled by the current; their leaves, meeting above the water, interlace, thus imparting to them stability above. But still more stable are the roots, which, firmly planted in the earth, support them from below.

¹¹IV 4 22

¹²Br U III 7 1

¹³Anc Ind Ed by R. K. Mookerji, p. 126

Jaivali who daily drove out of his palace in his royal chariot to attend its sittings ¹⁴

Besides these residential schools academies for advanced study and circles of wandering scholars given to philosophical discussions there were the assemblies of learned men gathered together by kings at their courts. A typical example of such a conference is described in the *Brhadāranyaka Upanisad* stating how Janaka king of Videha invited to his court the learned scholars of the Kuru Pañcāla country then known for its abundance of savants to meet in a philosophical conference perhaps the earliest of its kind in the world. The procedure adopted by the conference was to make its proceedings as fruitful as possible ¹⁵. Philosophy was then represented in a variety of schools with their different doctrines and the founders and exponents of these schools were selected to present to the conference the doctrines promulgated by each school. Eight such exponents and leading philosophers were thus chosen. They were Uddālaka Āruni, Asvala, Ārtabhāga, Bhujyu, Usasta, Kahola, Vidadgha, Śākalya and Gargi Vacaknavi (the woman philosopher). Of these Uddālaka was very famous as the centre of a circle of scholars who contributed most to the philosophy of the Upanisads. Asvala was the *hotr* priest of King Janaka. Bhujyu was a fellow pupil of Āruni senior. The most learned of all was Yājñavalkya. King Janaka announced that he would award the royal prize to the philosopher who answered the most subtle and difficult questions that were put to him. Even the woman philosopher Gārgi publicly challenged his wisdom by posing two perplexing problems but Yājñavalkya successfully answered her questions.

The standard of knowledge attained in those days is indicated in questions like the following one which was put to Yājñavalkya by the philosopher Usasta. When anyone says 'That is an ox, that is a horse' it is thereby pointed out. Point out to me the revealed, unveiled Brahman, the Ātman which dwells in every thing.

From the story of the lady Gargi just mentioned it appears that women were then considered as equals of men in their eligibility and capacity for achieving the highest knowledge. The Upanisads also tell us the story of Maitreyi, the worthy wife of Yājñavalkya, as his partner in the pursuit of the highest knowledge ¹⁶.

¹ *Gha U* VII 14 *Br U* VI 2 17

¹ *Br U* III 8

The story is that when Yajñavalkya after rejecting King Janaka's offer of his kingdom decided to retire at once from home to homelessness and to devote himself entirely to the quest of truth, he called his wife Maitreyi to take leave of her after providing for her living. She wisely asked him the fundamental question: 'My lord, if this whole earth full of wealth belonged to me, should I be immortal with it or not?' No, replied Yajñavalkya, 'like the life of rich people will be your life. But there is no hope of immortality through wealth.'

FROM THE END OF THE VEDIC PERIOD TO THE BEGINNING OF
THE GUPTA PERIOD

It was during this period that the Vedic scheme of education of the three upper classes of Indo Aryan society was expanded and systematized in the aphoristic as well as the metrical Smṛtis. In the Smṛti scheme as has been well said by a distinguished Indian authority¹⁷ the teacher is the pivot of the whole educational system. Though the old tradition of the father as the teacher was continued down to the times of Manu and Yājñavalkya it was the usual practice to send the boys after the ceremony of *upanayana* (investiture with the sacred thread) to live with a teacher. The texts distinguish between two types of teachers namely the *ācārya* (who performs the pupil's *upanayana* and teaches him the whole of the Veda) and the *upādhyāya* (who teaches the pupil only a portion of the Veda or its auxiliaries). The *ācārya*'s position was very high. The pupil according to the *Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra*¹⁸ was to look upon the teacher as God. In the *Viṣṇu Smṛti*¹⁹ and *Manu Smṛti*²⁰ the *ācārya* the father and the mother are described as the three highest *gurus* of a man deserving as such his utmost reverence. Elaborate rules are laid down in Manu²¹ for a pupil's respectful behaviour towards his *guru*. The pupil we are told²² must not even pronounce his *guru*'s name without an honorific title. He must close his ears or leave the place when other people justly or unjustly slander his *guru* and he who incurs the sin of slandering his *guru* will be born in a lower plane of existence in his next birth. The teacher on his part is to have high qualifications of learning and character. An unlearned Brāhmaṇa we read³ is like an elephant made of wood and an antelope made of leather. The Brāhmaṇa (and this applies especially to the Brāhmaṇa teacher) must not even though afflicted utter harsh speech or injure anyone in thought or deed. He should constantly shrink from praise as from poison and should welcome scorn as nectar. The pupil we are told in the same context may abandon the teacher if he fails to teach or becomes a sinner. With the above we may compare an old text⁴ which says that he whom a teacher devoid of learning initiates enters from darkness into darkness and so does he who is himself unlearned. The texts distinguish between two types of students namely the *upakurvāna* (one who offers

Knowing wealth to be only a means of enjoyment Maitreyī at once resolved. What should I do with that by which I shall not become immortal? And so she chose a life of renunciation and quest of Truth.

¹ Kanc. *H Dh* II p. 326

XXII 12

Manu II 199 f

II 227 37

Ibid II 157 f

646

I 2 6 13

II 69 f

Ip Dh S I 1 1 11

some remuneration to the teacher after completing his studies and leaves to lead a home life) and the *naisthikā* (one who lives perpetually with his teacher or in the event of his death with his family) The pupil is to serve the teacher at his bath and toilette to massage his body and in general to do work that is pleasing and beneficial to him he is to do a daily routine of offering fuel to the sacred fire going round for alms and performing his devotions at dawn and dusk wilful neglect of these duties being visited with appropriate penances The pupil is to observe the prescribed rules about dress and mode of begging alms as well as about food and drink he should be restrained in thought and speech and should shun personal adornment and amusements His behaviour should be respectful towards his superiors and guarded in the presence of women The pupil should pay no fee to his teacher in advance but at the end of his studies he should offer something according to his means or to the teacher's desire The strictness of the Smṛti rule on this point is reflected in the texts of Manu and Yājñavalkya which exclude a person teaching or learning for pay from invitation to the ceremony in memory of one's ancestors and declare him to be guilty of a minor sin²⁵ The educational course comprised principally the Vedas studied in the pupil's family other recensions of the same Veda as also other Vedas being permitted to be studied thereafter The method of teaching was oral so much so that reliance on books was included by Narada²⁶ in a list of six obstacles to knowledge

The scheme of training for a Vedic student given above may be supplemented by an account of the education of a Kṣatriya prince given in Kautilya's *Arthasāstra* The importance of the prince's training and discipline is repeatedly emphasized at the outset by the author²⁷ in the interest of the king's security and success and the stability of his family How the course of education is to be graduated for him is shown at length²⁸ After his tonsure ceremony and before reaching his seventh year he has to learn the alphabet and the accounts after the *upanayana* ceremony he has to study the four sciences namely *trayī* (the Vedas with their auxiliaries) *ānvīkṣikī* (the three schools of philosophy) *vārttā* (economics) and *danda nīti* (politics) Even after the completion of his studies and his marriage in his sixteenth year he has to go through a daily routine of receiving lessons in the art of war and in Itihāsa (historical traditions) For the rest the prince's education is based on a sound methodology Of the two branches of discipline (*vinaya*) namely the acquired and the natural the first we are told should be imparted only to eager and intelligent pupils Above all the senses are to be brought under control by

Manu XI 63 *Yaj* II 255
²⁷ *Kauṭ* I 5 6 17

Cf Sm C I 167 f
Ibid I 5 6

checking the mental reaction to them or else by performance of the canonical injunctions

The above schemes of education for the Vedic student in general and for the Ksatriya prince in particular are corroborated in part by other sources. In the *Mahābhārata* we have stories of pupils who distinguished themselves by exemplary devotion to their teachers. Such are Upamanyu and Aruni (pupils of Dhaumya) and Utanka (the pupil's pupil of Dhaumya).²⁹ We have again the story of Drona the Brāhmana who was appointed to teach the art of war to the sons of Pandu and Dhritarāstra by their grand uncle the warrior sage Bhishma. The *Milindapañha* (The questions of Menander) a celebrated Buddhist work probably of the first century after Christ contains a remarkable account of the current curriculum of studies for a Brahmana and for a prince.³⁰ The Brāhmana studied the four Vedas (with their auxiliaries) astronomy and astrology materialistic philosophy and the science of omens. By contrast the prince learnt the arts of managing horses elephants and chariots of writing and accounts and of waging war. In other words the Brāhmana was expected to study all the known branches of literature and science while the Ksatriya was required to confine his attention to the practical arts of fighting and administration. Further light is thrown upon this point by the story of the early career of Nāgasena the hero of the last named work, who was born in a distinguished Brāhmana family and who rose to the position of the foremost Buddhist theologian of his time. The Brāhmana boys we learn³⁰ commenced their education at the teacher's residence when they reached their seventh year and they paid him their fee in advance. After the Brahmana student had completed his education he could if he chose seek further knowledge from non Brāhmana teachers and he could live thereafter as a wandering scholar learning from (or vanquishing) distinguished scholars in the best Upanisad tradition.

A fresh type of education was developed during this period in the Buddhist monasteries for the training of the newly ordained monks the rules under this head being laid down in the section of the canon concerned with monastic discipline. The difference between this system and that of the two types mentioned above is that between what may be called the domestic and the collective (or the group) systems. The monk to begin with was to place himself under the guidance of a teacher after making a formal application and receiving his tacit consent. The teacher was called *ācārya* or *upādhyaya* the former being regarded in contrast with the Smṛtis as a deputy or substitute for the latter. The relations between the teacher and the pupil followed the pattern of the Smṛti scheme. The

²⁹ *Mbh* I 3

pupil was daily to serve the teacher at his bath toilette and meals and on his begging tour and nurse him during his illness. The teacher on his side was to give a complete instruction to his pupils to supply their necessities to nurse them during sickness and so forth. The teacher followed the usual method of oral instruction by answering questions or delivering discourses. The pupils were to observe strict rules about food and clothing equipment and shelter which were based upon the combined Smṛti scheme of duties of the Vedic student and the hermit.

The ancient educational tradition of the Upanisads is represented during this period by a number of examples. In the *Rāmāyana* we have the instance of the *āśrama* (hermitage) of Bharadvāja at Prayāga and in the *Mahābhārata* we read of the *āśrama* of Śaunaka distinguished as a *kulapati* or teacher of ten thousand pupils at the Naimisa forest and that of Kanva on the banks of the Mālīnī river. The *Milindapañha* mentions a number of Buddhist hermitages of this type—such as those of Assagutta of Dhamma rakkhita at Pāṭaliputta and of Āyupāla at Sāgala—which were visited by Nāgasena as a wandering scholar for the purpose of instruction or controversy.

We now turn to a new type of educational institutions which were a product of the advanced city life characteristic of this period namely the higher centres of learning in the metropolitan cities of our country. In the objective accounts of the Jātakas we are told how pupils from distant Mithilā and Rājagṛha in the east and from Ujjayinī in the south not to speak of those from the Śivi and Kuru kingdoms in Uttarāpatha nearer home flocked to Taksasī a capital of the Gandhāra kingdom (in the Rawalpindi District of West Punjab) so that they might complete their education under world renowned teachers. The Jātakas also mention Banaras as a great centre of learning which was established mostly by students trained at Taksasīlā. In the epic tradition of the *Rāmāyana* the city of Ayodhyā capital of the Kośala kingdom is said to have contained schools of Vedic and Purāṇic learning along with residences of the students. We may quote here two remarkable extracts pointing to a conscious appreciation of the value of foreign travel as constituting the urge of this particular development. In a Jātaka story we read how former kings used to send their sons to distant lands for completing their education so that they might be trained to quell their pride to endure heat and cold and to acquire the ways of the world.³¹ The *Mahābhārata*³² quotes an adage to the effect that a Brahmana not going abroad (for study) and a king not going to war (when necessary) are swallowed up by the earth just as creatures living in holes are devoured by serpents. We owe to the Jātakas some vivid sketches of the methods of education that

were in vogue at Taksasilā. The admission we learn was open to pupils of all castes and stations in life with the sole exception of the Candālas (outcastes). The pupils lived with their teachers or attended as day scholars; the latter class included even married students. The pupils paid their fees in advance or else served their teacher in lieu of the same. The course of studies comprised the three Vedas as also an unspecified (and evidently common) may be summarized as follows. The preceptor admitted his pupil by performing a list of eighteen crafts (*śilpas*). Reference is made in particular to the study of elephant lore, of charms and spells of different kinds of divination and (what is most important) of archery and medicine. The number of students residing with a single teacher is frequently given as five hundred. Strict discipline was enforced by the teachers among their pupils.

Along with the types of education mentioned above there arose at this period a system of vocational and technical training. The condition of medical education at the time of the rise of Buddhism is illustrated by the narrative of the career of Jīvaka (surnamed Komārabhacca or master of the science of infantile treatment) which is told in a Pāli canonical work.³³ Born as the son of a courtesan at Rājagṛha and brought up by prince Abhaya of Magadha, he was sent to study medicine under a world renowned teacher at Taksasilā. There he stayed for seven years and he completed his training by passing a difficult practical test in the knowledge of medicinal plants. His subsequent career is said to have been exceptionally brilliant as he rose to the position of court physician of Bimbisāra, king of Magadha, and established a country wide practice in medicine and surgery. References to the current condition of medical education occur likewise in the *Milindapañha*.³⁴ The student we learn was to apprentice himself to a teacher on payment of his fee in advance or else on the condition of offering personal service. Further, there already existed a number of distinguished teachers of the science who wrote treatises on its different branches. We have a more detailed account in the *Susruta Samhitā*, a well known surgical work belonging to the early centuries of the Christian era. The account³⁵ may be summarized as follows. The preceptor admitted his pupil by performing a special *upanayana* ceremony which was open to all the three upper classes and according to some to Śūdras as well. At the ceremony the pupil solemnly undertook in the presence of the sacred fire to observe a number of rules relating to physical purity and moral probity and to obey his preceptor; the teacher on his side agreed with equal solemnity not to behave towards his pupil otherwise than teaching him properly. The pupil, it was emphatically stated, should acquire proficiency both in theory and

practice failing either of which he would be in the position of a bird clipped of one of its wings. Turning to another point we find in two stories of the *Divyāvadana*³⁶ reference to the training of the sons of rich merchants at that time. The list of studies comprised the knowledge of writing arithmetic coins debts and deposits examination of gems and residences elephants and horses young men and women and so forth.

III

THE GUPTA AND POST GUPTA PERIODS

The old systems of higher education and advanced types of educational institutions were continued during the period of the Imperial Guptas and their successors. The later Smṛtis as also the Smṛti commentaries and digests recapitulate the old rules about education with some additional explanations. To take a few instances perpetual studentship is included in the list of forbidden practices of the *Kalīyuga* in the *Nāradya Purāna*³⁷ and the *Āditya Purāna*³⁸. Acceptance fees by the preceptor from his pupil is condemned in the *Varāha Purāna*³⁹ but it is allowed tacitly or conditionally in the commentaries of Medhātithi⁴⁰ Apararka⁴¹ and Viṣṇāneśvara⁴² as well as in the *Smṛti candrikā*⁴³. A special title of law meaning non rendition of service after entering into a contract (*abhyuṭpetyāsusrūṣā*) deals in these works with the duties of the student towards his teacher. Under the general heading of attendants (*susrūṣakas*) are included on the one hand the Vedic student the craftsman's apprentice the hired servant and the supervisor of labour who belong to the class of workmen (*harmakaras*) and on the other hand the slaves.

The methods of princely education in vogue at this period seem to have followed the older lines. From an extract of the *Mānasollāsa* an encyclopaedic work attributed to the Western Cālukya king Someśvara III (c. A.D. 1126-38) we learn that the prince on reaching his eighth or tenth year should be initiated into the vow of studentship and be instructed thereafter in the Vedas as well as in the military science⁴⁴. After completing his training the prince should be tested by his father for his skill in the military arts literature and the fine arts. The high standard of the prince's education is illustrated at its best by the examples of the scholar kings of this period such as Samudragupta Harsavardhana Mahendravarman and Yaśovarman.

26 99 100
XIV 5
On Yaj I 28

I 24 13 16
On Manu III 156
Vol I p 140
651

** Cf Sm C I 29
Triv Ed I p 50
III 1203 1304

before AD 1000 and Somesvara III Ballālasena and above all Bhoja Paramara in the centuries thereafter

In the vivid account of the Chinese Buddhist pilgrim I tsing belonging to the latter half of the seventh century we have a striking testimony to the continuance of the old type of education in a Buddhist monastery. The monastic schools we are further told had besides novices two classes of lay pupils namely children reading the Buddhist scriptures with the object of ordination at some future date and those studying secular books alone without any intention of renouncing the world.

Among the monasteries of the Gupta period that of Nālandā in Magadha attained the highest distinction because of the magnificence of its establishment and the intellectual and moral eminence of its alumni. We owe its fullest description to two Chinese Buddhist pilgrims of the seventh century namely Hiuen Tsang and I tsing. The buildings consisted of eight halls besides the great college with ten thousand resident monks (according to the former account) of eight halls as well as three hundred apartments tenanted by three thousand or three thousand five hundred monks (according to the latter version). Because of their learning and high character the monks were looked upon as models all over India. Such was the fame of this great centre of learning that it attracted students from abroad but because of the strict admission test only two or three out of ten succeeded in getting admission. In the account of I tsing we are further told that Nālandā in eastern and Valabhī in western India were the two places in the country that were visited by advanced students for completing their education. During the rule of the Pāla kings of eastern India a fresh group of monasteries (namely those of Vikramasīla Somapura Jagaddala and Uddandapura) rose into eminence as great centres of learning. From these monasteries issued a rich literature of Tāntrika Buddhism, much of which has been preserved in Tibetan translation. Among the alumni of these monastic universities special mention may be made of Dīpankara Śrījñāna (otherwise called Atīśa) who became in later life the founder of a reformed school of Buddhism in Tibet and Vidyākara who wrote a great Sanskrit anthology just published called the *Subhāṣita ratnaśoṣa*.⁴³

The old type of forest hermitages is represented during this period by a historical example which we owe to Bāna the author of the *Harsacarita*. In the last chapter of this work the author introduces us to a great Buddhist teacher called Divākaramitra whose hermitage in the depths of the Vindhya forest was visited by King Harsa in search of his long lost sister. The

⁴³ For the accounts of Hiuen Tsang and I tsing vide the works *On Yuan Chwang's Travels in India* (2 vols) by Thomas Watters and *Record of the Buddhist Religion as Practised in India and the Malay Archipelago* by I tsing translated by J. A. Takakusu.

by the later Smṛtis from Narada onwards as also by the Smṛiti commentaries and digests under the head mentioned above (Breach of Contract) When the apprentice we read had settled with his preceptor the period of his apprenticeship the latter was to take him to his house train him in his craft and treat him as his son The preceptor refusing to give him his training or making him do some other work was liable to a fine while the apprentice deserting his flawless teacher was liable to corporal punishment or compulsory repatriation According to the great Venetian traveller Marco Polo who visited the extreme south of India in the closing years of the thirteenth century the boys of the tradesmen of the Pāndya kingdom on reaching their thirteenth year were dismissed by their parents with a small pocket money for earning their living by trade Thus they grew up to be very dexterous and keen traders Testimony to the high standard of the craftsmen's training is furnished by the superb remains of art and architecture that have come down to us from this period

Turning lastly to the condition of female education during these times we have to mention that the ban on Vedic study by women and on their utterance of Vedic *mantras* at their sacraments which had been imposed by the older Smṛtis was continued and developed by their successors The *Smṛti candrikā*⁴⁹ significantly enough explains as belonging to a different age cycle the text of the *Hārta Smṛti* dividing women into two classes namely students of the sacred lore (*brahmanvādīnis*) and the married straightway (*sadyovadhūs*) This development is no doubt connected with the tendency in the later Smṛtis to reduce progressively the marriageable age of girls On the other hand we know from other sources that women of the upper classes enjoyed such opportunities for education in the fine arts that some of them became accomplished poetesses and authorities on *belles lettres* Of such we have historical examples in Princess Rājyasī (sister of King Harsavardhana of the house of Thanesar) and Avantisundarī wife of the dramatist and rhetorician Rājasekhara The story of Princess Kādambarī and Mahāśvetā in Bāna's prose romance⁵⁰ and that of Kāmandakī in Bhavabhūti's great drama⁵¹ seem to suggest the existence of regular institutions where girls received their training sometimes in the company of male students In the stories of the *Upamiti bhavaprapañca Kathā*⁵² a Jaina allegorical work of the tenth century we are told how princesses were skilled in the arts of painting music and versification

I 60 63

Ed by Peterson and Jacoby pp 354 453 59 and 875 92

⁵⁰ *Kadambarī* p 240

Malatī Madhava Act I

ECONOMIC IDEAS OF THE HINDUS

Economic ideas and practices as reflected principally in the literature on law and polity as well as Epics and Purānas

VĀRTA AND ARTHA ŚĀSTRA

ANCIENT Indians even before the days of Kautilya divided knowledge or learning (*sāstra* or *vidyā*) into four branches¹ viz (i) *ānvīkṣikī* (ii) *trayī* (iii) *vārtā* and (iv) *dandanīti* which in the light of traditional interpretation may be broadly interpreted respectively as (i) philosophy (ii) three Vedas or religion (iii) economics and (iv) polity. The word *vārtā* primarily or etymologically represents *vr̥tti* or means of livelihood but was particularly employed to denote the *vr̥tti* allotted to the *Vṛisya*s. secondarily *vārtā* meant the science that had *vartā* as its subject of study.

Vārta according to Kautilya and others dealt with agriculture cattle breeding and trade. Later on money lending or usury was included under *vārta* by the *Bhāgavata Purāna Śukra Nītisāra* etc. and the *Mahābhārata* included *vivīdhanī silpānī* (arts and crafts) referred to by the *Devī Purāna* as *karmānta* (manufacture)². Thus in modern nomenclature *vārta* dealt with the economics of agriculture trade banking and industry which shows that consumption distribution and taxation forming part of modern economics were left out of the scope of *vārtā*. These latter topics were included in the works on *Artha śāstra* and *Dharma śāstra*.

Artha śāstra in its technical sense covers a wider field than *vārtā* and *dandanīti* and may be said to include the subjects of jurisprudence politics and economics. It has been called *Arthaveda* and classed as an *Upaveda* either of the *Rg Veda* or of the *Atharva Veda*³. The *Arthaśāstra* makes it clear that *vartā* and *Artha śāstra* were quite distinct. The latter never dealt with *artha* in the sense of wealth which was the subject matter of *vārtā*⁴.

That the ancient Indians fully recognized the importance of economic science would be evident not only from its inclusion among the fourfold

Cf *Kauṭ* I 2 p 6
Kaut I 4 p 8 *Kam* II 14 *Viṣṇu P* V 10 28
Bhag P X 24 21 *sūtra* I 156 *Mbh* XII 167 11 12 *Dau* P 67 13
Caranavyūha ascribed to Śrīnārāyaṇa takes *Arthaśāstra* as an *Uhavēda* to R I while
Caranavyūha of *AV* *Parīkṣita* (49 3) links it to *AV* *Lāyū P* (61 79) *Viṣṇu P* (III 6 28)
etc mention *Arthaśāstra* as an *Uhavēda*
Cf *Kaut* I 4 p 8 (about *vartā*) and *XX* 1 p 427 (about *Arthaśāstra*)
Mbh II 5 79 III 150 30 XII 68 35 *XXII* 263 3 etc *Ram* II 100 47 *Kam*
I 12 *Śukra* I 156 *Nīti* p 93

division of *vidyas* and from its forming an important part of the regal curriculum but also from the passages expressly stressing its necessity for the economic stability of a country and so on. These passages indicate that *vārtā* was considered as essential for the material interests of the people as were the Vedas for their spiritual well being. We may take it to have been regarded as not less important than the Vedas.

Equally interesting as the conception of economics are the ideas constituting the Indian conception of wealth. Analysing the several meanings of *dhana* and *artha* which stand for wealth K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar states the root ideas of the ancient Indian conception of wealth to be its material quality its appropriability its being the result of acquisition its not being quite identical with gold its consumability and its attractiveness due to scarcity. The *Artha śāstra* the Epics the Smṛtis and other works on ancient Indian economics knew the importance of wealth in the scheme of life for gaining the *purusārthas* (ends of human life) and were fully conscious of the depressing influence of poverty. Wealth however was never regarded as an end in itself but as a means to an end. Contrary to common notions they condemned asceticism and held those seeking to embrace the ascetic order without discharging their duties liable to punishment.

RURAL ECONOMICS

Agriculture Indian economists both ancient and modern give pre dominance to rural economics because agriculture has been the occupation of the population throughout the ages. Along with cattlebreeding and dairy farming agriculture constituted the most important part of *vartā* which a king was enjoined to study.⁸ Though agriculture was prescribed as a profession mainly for the Vaiśyas and as a secondary occupation for the Śudras the Brāhmanas and Ksatriyas were permitted to follow it under certain restrictive regulations.⁹

Land Land without which agriculture would not be possible labour capital and organization appear to have been the four agents of production according to ancient Indian economists.

According to Śukra land is the source of all wealth.¹⁰ The creation of proprietary interests in land and the laying down of elaborate rules for the survey and demarcation of individual holdings since the days of Kautilya probably indicate the recognition by ancient Indian economists of the

Ancient Indian Economic Thought p. 22

Kaut I 5 p. 10

They were not to engage themselves personally in agriculture but through the agency of others. There is a conflict of opinion among the writers of Dharma śāstras about allowing the Brāhmanas to follow the profession of agriculture. *Vide Kane H Dh* II pp. 124-126

Cf Śukra I 179 f

magic of property in dealing with agriculture. Development of land was the principal factor in the success of agriculture. The State and the community were enjoined to strive for the prosperity of agriculture. The creation of a beneficial interest by law in favour of the person who first cleared the forest or reclaimed waste land facilitated the clearing of jungles and bringing of waste land under cultivation which were laid down as duties.¹¹ For ensuring the productivity of uncultivable or waste land fertilizers were to be used.¹² That our ancient economists knew the law of Diminishing Return would appear from their rules reserving certain types of land for particular crops or for pasture alone and from their plea for extending the area under cultivation.¹³ In the interest of agriculture the non cultivating proprietors were to be discouraged.¹⁴

The great advance in agriculture in ancient India and the thorough knowledge of the minute details of agricultural pursuits possessed by Indian economists are seen not only in the treatises of Kautilya followed by Śukra but also in the Smṛti literature. The fact that the following principles and practices along with several others were clearly understood by them speaks volumes about their sharp perception: the interdependence of agriculture and cattle farming; the use of fertilizers; the rotation of crops; the relative advantages of extensive and intensive cultivation; the evils of fragmentation of holdings; the relative advantages of large and small scale farming according to the crops cultivated; the adjustment of crops to soils and *vice versa*; the wisdom of carefully selecting seed grains; the value of forest conservation and game preservation to the agriculturist; the use of fallow; the value of even inferior land in the vicinity of centres of population; irrigation by rain, rivers, tanks, reservoirs and mechanical agencies; agricultural drainage; prevention, correction and eradication of numerous risks or blights such as rain, drought, hail, ravages of locusts, pests, mice, birds and wild pigs; the beneficial uses of opening up communications.¹⁵

Highly beneficent agricultural administration and a good knowledge of rural economics are seen from Kautilya's precepts regarding irrigation, fixing of prices, etc. The members of a village were held jointly and severally liable for keeping their roads, water channels and tanks in efficient repair which ensured perfect maintenance of irrigational works. Any damage to such works of public utility was to be urgently rectified even from the resources of temples. Special facilities were to be given to those who constructed tanks, dams and roads out of piety so that the State might

¹ Kaut II 1 p 47. Manu IX 44.

Ibid II 24 p 117.

² Ibid II 24 p 117.

³ Ibid II 1 p 47.

⁴ Ibid II 1 p 47.

Cf Kaut II 1 (p 47) II 2 (p 49) II 24 (pp 115-8) VII 11 (p 297) VIII 4 (p 334) etc.

receive co operation from individuals in providing irrigation works. Fixing fair prices for agricultural products at frequent intervals not only served the interest of the people as producers and consumers but of the State as well since a large part of its revenue was collected in kind. In order to meet the menace of famine different parts of the kingdom were to be provided with granaries capable of holding grain sufficient to meet the normal requirements of three years which were always to be kept full.¹⁶

The interests of the cultivators were guarded against distraction or nuisance by banning the intrusion of actors dancers singers drummers buffoons and wandering minstrels into villages.¹⁷ Officers and servants of the king were to live outside the limits of the village apparently to save the villagers from oppression. Soldiers also were prohibited from entering villages except on the king's business and even then they were not to oppress cultivators or have any dealings with them. It was laid down that the army was to be used for no other purpose than fighting.¹⁸ Our ancient economists advocated an uninterrupted pursuit of agriculture even in times of war and the accounts of foreign travellers confirm that agriculturists were unaffected by the march of armies and the clash of arms. The economic interests of cultivators were safeguarded by fixing fair prices and by providing against combines and cornering by traders with a view to lowering agricultural prices.¹⁹

Labour Labour was the second important factor of production and our economists fully appreciated its value for efficient production. Kautilya and Śukra not merely permit the employment of women in State factories and agricultural operations but prescribe it. Though on the basis of the evidence of the Jatakas other Buddhist works and the Smritis a dismal picture has been painted concerning the social and economic position of a labourer which is stated to have been worse than that of a slave the labour regulations in Śukra and other works indicate a different state of affairs.²⁰ According to Śukra the remuneration of a labourer should be proportionate to his productivity and qualification and the wages should be sufficient to maintain the labourer and his family in tolerable comfort. It is not clear whether Śukra's rules²¹ which provide leisure hours leave and bonus for domestic servants and workmen's insurance in sickness old age or accident show the actual practice or are merely his own views in the matter. The labourer or servant on the other hand had to pay penalties for breach of

Śukra IV 2 25
Cf Śukra V 90 93
A N Bose *Social and Rural Economy of Northern India* II pp 424 35 *contra*
K V R Aiyangar *op cit* pp 110 11 K T Shah *Ancient Foundations of Economics in India* pp 54 94
²¹ Śukra II 480 18

contract in addition to being liable for damages caused by his neglect. Further strikes of workmen to raise wages were declared illegal.

The influence of sacred literature on the economists is seen from their making a distinction between pure and impure types of labour, the test of purity lying in the nature of the occupation and the material employed.²² This distinction perhaps resulted in the segregation of the two higher castes from the manual labourers.

These are some of the concepts of the old writers on economics—Kautilya, Kāmandaka, Śukra and others—regarding labour. hired labour cannot be abolished. efficient labour results from training. workmen are incapable of conducting industry. competent supervisory authority is necessary for getting work done. a proper output can be ensured only through payment by results.

Capital. Our economists visualized the importance of capital to industry and other productive undertakings. Several factors conspired to bring about scarcity of loan capital, of which we get indication from the very high maximum interest mentioned in the *Smṛtis* and the reference to fifteen percent as the just rate of interest both in the *Arthasāstra* and in the *Smṛtis*.²³ The lack of capital was due to extravagance and hoarding. The State consumed a large slice in the form of taxes, rents, cesses, fines, etc. The normal aim of our ancient financiers to budget for heavy and recurring surpluses resulted in swelling the State hoard. The danger of prodigal kings wasting the accumulations of their predecessors on their personal gratifications was always there. Another factor contributing to liquidate State hoards was the presence of a large number of parasitical subcastes or professions who mostly depended on State patronage.

The inference about the scarcity of private capital, or about its falling far short of the demands for it, is also implied by the evidence in the *Mahābhārata* which advocates that the State should advance cash grants and seed grain to agriculturists and run a large number of industrial concerns.²⁴

Organization. Of the two types of organizations or corporations, viz. the capitalistic and the guild, the latter deserves some mention here. It will be exhaustively dealt with in the next chapter, while the capitalistic organizations are considered in the next section of this chapter.

The movement for the organization of guilds started towards the end

For *śubha* (pure) and *aśubha* (impure) work and different kinds of servers or labourers to do them, cf. Kane *H Dh* III pp. 482-6.

²² *Kaut* III 11 p. 174. *Narada* (IV 105-6) allows even 8% per month while 2% is not improper according to him.

²⁴ *Mbh* II 5 77-78.

of the Vedic period and Pāṇini refers to the *gana pūga vrāta* and *sangha* ²⁵ It appears that the words *gana* and *sangha* were used to denote any corporation or union for political or other purposes while *pūga* and *sreni* signified corporations of merchants artisans or others whose principal object was to gain wealth by trade or industry The Dharma Sūtras indicate that the chief industries were all organized in guilds *śreni naigama* (or *nigama*) *pāśanda samūha* etc find mention in later literature ²⁶ Workers or craftsmen's guilds correspond to the modern labour organizations while Merchants guilds approximate to the Guild Merchant of mediaeval Europe

Early literature provides very little information about the constitution and organization of these guilds The Dharma Sūtras recognized the validity of the laws and customs established by the guilds of cultivators traders usurers herdsmen artisans craftsmen etc whose headmen occupied a high place in the royal tribunal Manu and Yājñavalkya invest the customs of the *srenis* and analogous bodies with legal authority ²⁷ The Dharma Sūtras and Smritis recognize the binding force of the agreements with the *sanghas* breaches of which were dealt with severely the punishments ranging from heavy fine or imprisonment to confiscation and banishment ²⁸

Kautilya's elaborate treatment of this subject demonstrates the important role played by the guilds in the economic system of the Mauryan and post Mauryan epochs They effectively controlled local sources of production arts and crafts and trades and industries and served as an important link between the central authority and the several economic units in the country

TRADE AND INDUSTRY

Trade as an important form of economic activity appears to have existed from the Vedic or even protohistoric times in India and its indispensable accessories—money currency, credit, exchange and banking—were freely used and understood not only by the trading community and the administrative staff but by the mass of people as well

Kautilya advocates considerable State control both in trade and industry It was obligatory on traders to get a licence while foreign traders

²⁵ Pāṇ V 2 21 (*vrata*) V 2 52 (*pūga gana saṅgha*) Kātyāyana includes *gana pāśanda pūga vrāta* and *śreni* under *samūha* or *varga*

For explanations of the different terms denoting group organizations employed in the above paragraph refer to Kane *H Dh.*, II pp 66 69 III 486 489 Majumdar *Corporate Life in Ancient India* Ch I K V Rangaswami Aiyangar *op cit* pp 58 184 ff Mookerji *Local Government in Ancient India* pp 29 34 39

Manu VIII 41 Yaj I 361

Manu VIII 5 V 167 Manu VIII 219 20 Yaj II 187

required a passport in addition. In connection with prices which were controlled by the State it is interesting to observe that ancient Indian economists had a fairly correct conception of the fundamental causes of value. According to both Kautilya and Śukra the two factors to be considered in fixing value or price are (i) the cost of production as determining the supply and (ii) the demand for the article as determined by its utility²⁹. Even writers of the Smṛtis correctly understood the causes of value as seen from Manu's precepts for the guidance of the king in fixing the rates of duty³⁰. References to absolute and relative prices are found in Śukra and in Buddhist works.

Wholesale prices for goods were fixed by the Superintendent of Commerce as they passed the Customs House. A margin of profit was allowed to retailers. The public consumers and customers were protected by the State which employed an army of spies and market inspectors against unauthorized prices and fraudulent transactions. Goods had to be sold at fixed market places and the dealer had to specify particulars as to quality, quantity and price which were scrutinized and recorded in official books. The duties of the Superintendent of Commerce thus included not only the prevention or minimization of the chances of deceit or of undue advantage being taken by the seller over the buyer but also ensuring that the prices were not exorbitant or unconscionable and that the material, its style, quantity or measure precisely corresponded to the terms of the bargain³¹.

To encourage, promote and facilitate trade both inland and foreign States were enjoined to improve and increase means of communication and transport. They had also to secure new markets for the surplus products of the country. Rest houses and store houses were to be provided for traders for whose protection proper police escorts were also recommended. River boats and ocean going ships were to be pressed into service³². As a compensation for the taxes paid by the trade the government granted it security against thieves, forest tribes, wild forest folk, etc. and undertook to make good losses in transit³³. To encourage imports, suitable rebates were granted to foreign traders if current rates did not leave a proper margin of profit for them³⁴.

Several facilities were afforded to encourage foreign trade. Foreign merchants could sue in Indian courts and were protected from being

Kaut I 16 pp 97-98 *Śukra* II 358 ff
Manu VII 127
Kaut II 16 (pp 98-9) II 21 (pp 110-11) IV 2 (p 205) *Manu* IX 286-91 *Yāj*
II 245-6 296
²⁹ *Kaut* II 34 (p 141) II 22 (p 113) II 28 (pp 126-8)
Kaut II 21 (p 111) IV 13 (p 234)
Kaut II 16 p 98

harassed by suits against them in local courts³⁵ This wise fostering of foreign trade enabled India to have a permanent excess of exports over imports resulting in India becoming a veritable sink of precious metals

Localization of industry and creation of local markets for the sale of products resulted from the caste and guild organizations Elaborate rules were framed for the organization establishment and management of markets To ensure the freedom of the market the king was prohibited from going to the market with his retinue Cornering speculation smuggling adulteration cheating and dishonesty were punishable according to the gravity of the offence with fines or imprisonment or even mutilation

Kautilya advocates State monopoly of industries on the basis of risk cost or rarity The State was advised to become both the manufacturer and trader and to sell articles through departmental agency Mines comprising those of gold silver diamonds gems precious stones copper lead tin iron and bitumen which provided the main source of State revenue were nationalized Pearl mother of pearl conch shell coral etc were explored from ocean mines and it was a State concern Ores provided minerals while *rasas* like mercury came from oil fields Salt manufacture was a State monopoly for which licences were granted to private lessees of salt fields There was also State monopoly of armament industry coinage and ship building further the State controlled the manufacture and sale of wines and liquors Cotton oil and sugar factories were also State concerns³⁶

Prison factories worked through penal labour added to the State produce Yarns of cotton wool silk and jute came from the State spinning factory which manufactured clothing of all types coat of mail blankets curtains and ropes³⁷ For spinning yarn helpless and *purdah* women were employed under women supervisors

Just as rent or profit was a compensation interest constituted a just return to the capitalist *Kusida* is the term used for the lending of money on interest and the early Dharma Sutras display a strong prejudice against usury Later however moneylending or usury (*kusida*) came to be recognized as one of the four divisions of *vārtā* as already stated and interest came to be regarded as a normal share of the national dividend That our ancient economists knew the difference between gross interest and

Ibid II 16 p 98

It is interesting to note that according to Medhatithi (on *Manu* VIII 400) royal monopolies extended to elephants as they were most useful to kings as also to saffron silks and woollens in Kashmir horses in the West and precious stones and pearls in the South private trading in them being punishable with confiscation of all property Saffron is still a monopoly of Kashmir

Kauṭ II 23

net interest and held sound views about the nature and necessity of interest may be inferred from the references in the *Arthasāstra* Smritis and *Agni Purāna* ³⁸

There are different rates of interest for loans with or without pledge According to the Dharma sāstras the rates of interest varied with the caste of the borrower ³⁹ presumably on the assumption that his credit worthiness varied directly with his caste Fifteen per cent per annum was the normal rate of interest but it could be higher according to the security given the nature of the risk involved and other factors The welfare of the debtor was safeguarded by forbidding compound interest interest above the normal customary rate accumulation of interest exceeding the amount of the principal or personal service in lieu of interest Further no interest was to accumulate on debts due from minors from those engaged in long drawn sacrifices and from those who were diseased or in their teacher's homes as students Interest in excess of the legal rate was permissible under certain circumstances Yājñavalkya allowing a higher rate by agreement In the case of certain select articles the rule about *damdupat* was waived

Banking Some kind of banking may be inferred from the elaborate Dharma sāstra rules regarding loans deposits interest etc Guilds partnerships and joint stock organizations must have helped the evolution of the system of group credit The Jātakas and the *Arthasāstra* testify to the existence of instruments of credit promissory notes or debt sheets and banking pledges and book credits ⁴⁰

Coinage Though the bulk of retail transactions was conducted by barter on account of the scarcity of currency and the low prices of products the use of coins was also in evidence Barter however commended itself to the higher castes in early times when the sale of or trade in articles of production by the higher castes was looked down upon Further the prohibition of the use of gold and silver by many classes worked in favour of barter Money was more common in urban areas

It seems that coins originated and developed in India before foreign contact Indian coinage comprising punch marked silver and copper coins goes back to about 600 B.C. The earliest coins were based on the weight system given in the *Manu Smṛiti* of which the unit was *raktikā* (*rati* or *guñja* berry i.e. $1\frac{1}{8}$ grain troy) *Suvarna* was the standard gold coin of eighty *ratis* while the copper coin of the same weight was called *kārsāpana* though a copper *pana* of a hundred *ratis* was also known *Purāna* or *dharana* was a silver coin of thirty two *ratis* Actual specimens show that rulers

³⁸ *Agn. P.* 253 65 66 also *Kaut.* and the Smritis on *Rnadāna* (recovery of debts)
Viṣṇu Dh. S. VI 2 *Manu* VIII 142 *Yāj.* II 37

⁴⁰ *Jāt.* I 121 230 IV 256 etc *Kaut.* II 7

guilds and even merchants issued these coins duly stamped with their symbol signifying correctness of weight and purity of the metal Under the *Arthasāstra* scheme coinage was a State monopoly and officials under the Mint Master (*lakṣanādhyakṣa*) received bullion from the public to be struck into coins on payment of seigniorage charges

Commercial (Capitalists) organizations Of the different kinds of corporate organizations mentioned earlier *pūga* alone according to Kātyāyana corresponds to a merchants guild Partnerships (*sambhūya samutthāna*) or combines which constituted another type of industrial and commercial organization are included among the eighteen titles of law by the *Smṛtis* The profit and loss in partnership was to be imposed in accordance with the share of each partner

The guilds were autonomous they taxed themselves and they were competent to proceed with any lawful undertaking and to do everything not prejudicial to State interests The king was enjoined to restrain the illegal immoral indecent or seditious activities of the corporations Dissension or dissidence was not tolerated and offenders received severe punishments

By the time of Kautilya the *saṅghas* and *śrenis* had become very rich and powerful and some of them maintained troops of their own The *Arthasāstra* refers to the danger of provoking these corporations and advocates several methods of exploiting them in the king's name⁴¹ The potential danger to the State from the unrestrained power of these organizations seems to underlie the severe regulations restricting their activities The *Smṛtis* however generally favour the growth of *samūhas* (industrial and commercial guilds)

REVENUE AND EXPENDITURE

That ancient Indian writers on policy recognized the importance of the State treasury would be evident from their placing *kośa* (treasury) as one of the seven constituent elements of the State and holding it as of supreme importance along with army The prime necessity of a competent army and a rich treasury for subduing the subversive elements on the king's side as well as those in the opposite camp for the well being of the State was constantly emphasized Gautama⁴² goes to the length of declaring the treasury to be the basis of the other six basic elements of the State The *Arthasāstra*⁴³ the *Mahābhārata*⁴⁴ *Kaṇḍakīya Nītisāra*⁴⁵ *Viṣṇudharmottara*

⁴¹ Kaut. XI 1 (pp 378 ff)

Cf *Saravaiṇī vilāsa* p 46 *Kośas tu sarvathā abhisamrakṣya ityāha Gautamah tanmulatvāt prakṛtinam iti*

II 8 p 65 *Kośapūrvāḥ sarvāṅraṭhāḥ*

XII 119 16

*Purāna*⁴⁶ and other works hold that the king depends on the treasury or that the treasury is the root of the State. Revenue and the army as stated earlier were the two great pillars of the State in ancient India.

The head of the treasury department was called *Kosādhyaṁksa* under whom was the superintendent of granary (*Kosṭhāgārādhyakṣa*). A large portion of the State revenue was collected in kind and the proper keeping and periodical renewal of the collected stock rendered the task of the treasury department in ancient India arduous. The works cited in the previous paragraph stress that a full treasury and ample reserve funds should be included among the essential constituents of the State; they also regard their deterioration as a very serious national calamity. They insist on a full and flowing treasury for the State by appropriating a large portion of the State revenue for the creation of a reserve fund or treasury which is not to be touched except on occasions of grave calamity. This policy of the *Arthasastra* and later works on economics is quite understandable when one considers the unstable political conditions of the time demanding constant preparedness for war because of the constant danger from a neighbouring State. Further provision had to be made against famines—not a phenomenon of rare occurrence even then—which necessitated the maintenance of the treasury and gold hoards. In ancient times when State loans were unknown the only means available for a State to tide over a crisis was the possession of a well stocked treasury and granary. Richness of the treasury depended on the surplus of revenue over expenditure and therefore elaborate rules were laid down for the efficient accounting of public receipts and expenditure and their auditing. Śukra emphasizes the keeping of daily, monthly and annual accounts and the entering of the several items of income on the left side of the accounts and those of the expenditure on the right.⁴⁷ Somadeva recommends the appointment of auditors when there is discrepancy in the items of income and expenditure.⁴⁸

Revenue in several forms constituted the chief factor of the State income. Kautilya⁴⁹ classifies the sources or items of revenue differently at different places. Two important classifications are *āyasarīra* (body of income) and *āyamukha* (source of income) each being subdivided under seven heads. *Āyasarīra* which refers to the convenient centres of collection comprises *durga* (fortified cities), *rāstra* (rural areas), *khanī* (mines), *setu* (irrigation works), *vana* (forests), *vraja* (herds) and *vārīpatha* (river borne trade routes). *Bhāga* (royal share), *vyājī* (compensation), *parigha* (gate duty), *klpta* (fixed tax), *rūpika* (premium on coins) and *atyaya* (money fine) are the subdivisions of *āyamukha*. Another classification is *anyaajāta* (accidental

⁴⁶ II 61 17
⁴⁷ *Nīti* p 189

II 319 21 370
 II 6 p 60

revenue) *varitamāna* (current revenue) and *paryusita* (outstanding revenue)⁵⁰ Kāmandaka enumerates eight principal categories (*astavarga*) of filling the treasury through the heads of departments viz agriculture trade routes (both land and water) the capital water embankments catching of elephants working mines and collecting gold etc levying wealth (from the rich) and founding towns and villages in uninhabited tracts⁵¹ It will be seen that these classifications do not differentiate between direct and indirect taxes rents fees royalties and non tax receipts

In connection with revenue administration besides the several superintendents dealing with different branches of revenue such as taxation finance state dues fees tolls and mines mentioned in the section entitled *Adhyaksapracāra* Kautilya refers to two important officials *samāhartā* and *sannidhātā* It is interesting to note that the duties of the *samāhartā* (Collector General)⁵² embrace all the components of *āyasarīra* He supervised the collection of revenue in the whole State All the *adhyaksas* (Superintendents) whose duties covered the entire range of the civic and economic life of the people were subordinate to the *samāhartā* His functions included the maintenance of census and survey recording the enumeration of the people their houses and cattle as also the measurement of their pastures gardens arable lands etc Cola records confirm the existence of such surveys The *samāhartā* controlled expenditure also and was advised to exert himself for the increase in revenue and decrease in expenditure The *sannidhātā*⁵³ appears to have been a chamberlain and a treasurer a custodian of all revenues realized in cash and kind and was in charge of stores of all kinds construction of treasuries, warehouses armouries and the like as also of royal trading houses courts of justice etc

The principal source of revenue in ancient India was taxation In the financial theories of the *Arthaśāstra* and allied works the ruler's right to levy taxes and contributions and the people's obligation to pay them arise from an implied contract between the State and its subjects The imposition of taxes depends solely on the protection afforded by the State The principles that guided the State in matters of taxation show the solicitude of the economists for the welfare of the community Taxation was to be reasonable and equitable the criterion of judging its equitableness consisted in the feeling of the State on the one hand and that of the agriculturists and the traders on the other that they have received adequate and reasonable return for their mutual services The first principle was that in matters of taxation the State was to be guided by the rules in the *Smṛtis* The tax was to be collected at a specified time and place and at a definite proportion or

II 6 p 61 *Vartamānāḥ paryuṣṭo nyajātāśca ayah*
II 6 35 pp 59 62 141 143

Kām V 78 79
Kauṭ II 5

percentage Any increase in taxation if unavoidable was to be gradual Additional taxation was an exceptional measure to be resorted to only under grave national emergency in the absence of any other alternative An article was to be taxed only once Net profit and not gross earning was the basis for taxation of trade and industry

In the context of the canons of taxation it is worthwhile to note whether there were any limits to the king's levying exorbitant taxes Kautilya⁵⁴ has considered the point and according to him the threat of disaffection among his subjects and their possible migration to another country appears to have worked as a deterrent on kings taxing their subjects beyond their means In a similar vein the *Mahābhārata*⁵⁵ states that the Vaisyas if neglected would disappear from the kingdom and would reside in the forest Yājñavalkya⁵⁶ points out that the king who extracts taxes by unjust means not only loses his wealth but also goes to destruction along with his relatives

On a careful examination of the grounds of partial or total remission of taxation it is found that religious beliefs as well as humanitarian ideas of the age were responsible for exempting from taxation certain classes of people like learned Brāhmanas and Bhiksus The dumb the deaf the blind students studying in a Gurukula and hermits were also not taxable infants those far advanced in age women newly confined or destitute poor widows and people otherwise helpless were also tax free In view of the fact that certain villages supplied recruits to the State army those military villages were exempted from taxation Untaxable property included articles required for sacrifice earnings of craftsmanship receipts from alms and articles worth less than a copper coin Only a nominal tax was to be collected for the first four or five years from those agriculturalists who newly brought land under cultivation and made it more fertile and productive but the tax in their case also gradually rose to the normal rate in subsequent years

Kautilya advises the tapping of every available source for securing revenue and recommends emergency measures under special circumstances Later authorities have supplemented these different items by suggesting fresh avenues Some important sources of taxation are listed below illustratively

(1) Land revenue formed the mainstay of the State finances The rate of land tax which was fixed at one sixth in theory varied from one twelfth one tenth one eighth or one sixth in normal times to one fourth or even one third in times of emergency Besides general land revenue there were other cesses and charges on land which included water cess periodical levy

VII 5 pp 276 7 also *paratra gacchamah* (p 394)
XII 87 36 I 340 1

on agricultural live stock of the cultivators taxes on agricultural and industrial products and tax in cash on certain special crops Under this heading also comes income from State properties viz crown land waste land forests and natural tanks and reservoirs

(ii) Revenue from cities trade and industry falling broadly under fortified city (*durga*) and country part (*rastra*) constituted another important item including house tax There were also profession tax property tax income from slaughter houses liquor and gambling licence fees on weights and measures tolls customs octroi port dues and transit duties fee from passports contributions from artisans in cash or service dues collected from *Bāhīrikas* charge of one fiftieth of the interest earned by money lenders⁵⁷ analogous to modern income tax and shop tax not mentioned in the *Smṛtis* but referred to in the inscriptions⁵⁸

(iii) Income from State monopolies state establishments etc provided another source and these comprised mines and minerals salt saffron mint workshops State manufactories jail industries and elephants

(iv) Under miscellaneous and special taxes and revenues came fines from law courts forced labour income from unclaimed lost or ownerless property escheat treasure trove occasional taxes such as those paid on the birth of a prince and irregular receipts from plunder tributes from feudatories etc Taxes which pilgrims had to pay such as those levied by Caulukya Siddharāja (A D 1094 c 1143) of Gujarat from visitors to Somanātha those collected at Gayā from Kashmirians performing *śrāddha* (offerings to the dead) there⁵⁹ or the pilgrim taxes collected from the Jains which Kumārapāla (c A D 1145 71) of Gujarat is stated to have abolished come under special taxes those levied at the time of the *upanayana* (sacred thread ceremony) marriage Vedic sacrifices and the like also fall under the same category⁶⁰ Another variety of tax levied is the *Turushka danda* and the *Malla danda* which were raised to meet the expenses necessitated by the invasions of the Turks and the Mallas respectively The Cola king Virarajendra (A D 1063 70) supplied a later instance of levying a special tax to finance his war against the Cālukyas of Vengi⁶¹

(v) Emergency revenue formed yet another source Sources of raising emergency revenue were to be tapped only under exceptional circumstances when the treasury was empty and there was the threat of an impending danger Besides benevolences forcible loans and donations emergency

Cf *Manu* VII 130 *Gautama* X 25 etc *Sūtra* (IV 2 128) makes the tax to be a thirty second fraction

⁵⁷ Cf Altekar *State and Government in Ancient India* 1st Ed p 204
Raj VII 1008

LI XX p 64 (Vikramāditya V)

⁵⁸ Cf Ghoshal *Hindu Revenue System* pp 232 f 262 f

⁵⁹ *Annual Report on South Indian Epigraphy* No 520 of 1920

taxes arbitrary enhancement of normal rates and fraudulent and forcible collections under several pretexts which are exhaustively dealt with by Kautilya and others⁶³ reference may also be made to the sale of divine images by the Mauryas recorded by Patañjali⁶⁴ and the scheme of debased coinage resorted to by the Mauryas⁶⁵ and the Guptas⁶⁶ which must have been instrumental in filling the State treasury to a great extent. It may however be observed that Kautilya prescribes that some of these taxing devices should be levied on the seditious and irreligious only and not on all⁶⁷

Compared with the minute treatment of the several sources of revenue by the cited authorities expenditure does not seem to have received its due share of attention. However before coming to the different items of expenditure let it be seen what the economists have to say regarding the proportion of revenue to expenditure. According to Śukra⁶⁸ one sixth of the income should go to saving one half should be spent on the army and one twelfth each on charity ministers inferior officials and the privy purse. The *Mānasollāsa*⁶⁹ recommends that ordinarily three fourths of the revenue should be spent and one fourth should be saved.

First and foremost among the sources of expenditure was the maintenance of the security of the realm which involved not only the maintenance of a well equipped armed force in the four branches and the navy capable of both offence and defence but also of the storehouses armouries and above all the entire organization of the secret service. The observations of Megasthenes along with Kautilya's regulations indicate that this head of national defence absorbed a considerable portion of the revenue. The other items on the expenditure side answered the several obligations of a welfare State which included the king's privy purse civil list for the king and court—his ministers and officers police and other protective establishments for citizens merchants and travellers legal judicial and punitive departments granaries and *gośālās* (cow infirmaries) as insurance against famine grants to local governments roads and other equipment with bridges rest houses trees and watering places ships and ferries irrigation works maintenance of mines forests forts public factories mints store houses and palaces religious and charitable endowments like temples hospitals, schools and universities maintenance of widows and orphans the indigent and the unemployed and the families of soldiers and civil servants dying in State service.

Kaut. V 2 pp 242-246. Manu X 118-120. Nītiśūtra p 82. Śukra IV 2 9 etc.
On Pan IV 3 99. Mauryaśāstram hiraṇyārthabhir arcyah prakalpitah
Cf Jayaswal Hindu Polity p 333. Cf Ghoshal op cit p 193.
V 2 p 246. Evam dusyesu adharmikesu varteta netareṣu
I 315 7. II 4 439 40.

GUILDS AND OTHER CORPORATE BODIES

INTRODUCTORY

WE have a number of cognate terms in our ancient literature namely *śreni sangha gana pūga* and *vrāta* signifying various types of human associations which are distinct from the ethnic divisions into *varnas* (castes) *jātis* (sub-castes) and *kulas* (families) These terms are used in the indefinite sense of a group in the Vedic literature But they acquired thereafter a technical significance which is given differently by different authorities We may draw from these explanations the general conclusion that there flourished at least from the epoch of the rise of Buddhism two types of guilds namely the industrial and the professional (or commercial) and that these were confined in some cases to their caste fellows while in others members were recruited from different castes To the above we have to add the institution of partnership among capitalists and workmen belonging as our authorities prove to the same centuries ¹

THE PRE MAURYA AND MAURYA PERIODS (c 700-184 B C)

It was during this period that there took place a great development of agriculture industry and trade in our land This is proved by the conjoint testimony of the Brāhmanical and Buddhist records as also of the foreign writers It is in this context that we have to explain the rise of guilds and similar bodies into prominence in the economic and even in the social and political life of our people To begin with the constitution of these bodies they appear to have been well organized under their respective heads A list of eighteen unspecified *śenis* (Skt *śrenis*) or craft guilds is mentioned in a number of Jātaka texts these bodies being said

Different interpretations of the above and other terms (a) *śreni* explained in the *Vaijayanti* (237-90) as a group of craftsmen of the same *jāti* and similarly in Apararka's commentary on *Yaj* (II 192) as a group of persons belonging to the same *jāti* and living by the same craft By contrast it is explained by Viṣṇaśvara (On *Yāj* II 30 and 192) as a group of persons of different *jātis* living by the occupation of a single *jāti* such as horse dealers sellers of betel leaves weavers leather workers and so forth and more simply as those who live by manufacturing some kind of merchandise (b) *naigama* according to Apararka (on *Yaj* II 192) means men of different *jātis* travelling to another country for trade and in the *Smṛti Candrikā* (Vol III p 523) as merchants belonging to a caravan and so forth (c) *gana* means a group of *kulas* (*Katyāyana Smṛti* verse 680) an assembly of armed persons following a single occupation or a guild of horse dealers (d) *Puga* means an association of traders and so forth (*Katyāyana Smṛti*) an association of men of different castes and no fixed occupations and bent solely on money making and pleasure (*Kaṭikā* on Pāṇini V 2 21) an association of people of different castes and occupations living in one locality (Viṣṇaśvara on *Yāj* II 30) or riders of elephants horses and so forth (*Smṛti Candrikā* III p 523) Kautilya in his *Arthaśāstra* mentions a type of *saṅghas* living by the profession of agriculture and trade as also fighting

to be under chiefs called *pamukhas* (Skt *pramukhas*) At the head of the *pūgas* stood the *grāmanīs* (as they are called by Pāṇini) or the *gāmanikas* (as they are styled in the Pālī canon) Their position according to the Pālī canonical texts was one of high social standing and heavy responsibility From Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* we learn that the *sanghas* and the *ganas* were headed by *mukhyas* while the Jātakas speak of crafts being in charge of *jetthakas* or *pamukhas* The office of the *setthi* (Skt *śreṣṭhin* chief merchant sometimes translated as treasurer or banker) which is mentioned as a hereditary post doubtless implied some kind of authority over the other merchants The three characteristics of crafts in the objective accounts of the Jātakas namely the pursuit of the father's occupation by his sons in ordinary times the localization of the industries and the headship of the *jetthaka* (or the *pamukha*) have suggested to a German scholar (Richard Ficke) their equivalence to the mediaeval European guilds²

As regards the status and functions of the corporate bodies we find in the Pālī canonical texts references to the jurisdiction of the *pūgas* over their members The early Smṛtis (or the Dharma Sūtras) have a complex attitude towards these bodies On the one hand the *ganas* are placed under a social ban evidently because of their non orthodox beliefs and practices On the other hand the evidence of the *śrenīs* (alternatively with that of the village and town elders) is allowed to decide boundary disputes in the event of conflict of documentary evidence Another important clause of the law recognizes not only the customs of cultivators traders herdsmen money lenders and artisans as authoritative in judicial trials but also permits their spokesmen to declare the same A late Dharma Sūtra text safeguards the property of *ganas* and enforces the observance of their conventions by the members by means of legal penalties³ The attitude of Kautilya indicates a characteristic blending of the ideas of the Dharma Sūtras and the *Arthaśāstra* proper Referring doubtless to the Smṛti clause about the legal authority of the usages of these bodies the author adds⁴ that

The economic condition of India during the successive periods is dealt with in the relevant chapters in *Cambridge History of India* (Vol I) *The Age of the Nandas and the Mauryas* *A Comprehensive History of India* (Vol II) and *The History of Culture of the Indian People* (Vols I—V) Among the few studies of particular periods may be mentioned *The Economic Life of Northern India in Gupta Period* (c. A.D. 300–550) by Sachindra Kumar Maity (Calcutta 1957) For references to *puga gramanis* or *puga gamanikas* vide Pāṇini (IV 3 12) and *Aṅguttara Nikāya* (III 76 78 299 300) For the Jataka references to *setthīs* and *senis* see especially Richard Ficke *Die soziale Gliederung im nordöstlichen Indien zu Buddha's Zeit* (Kiel 1897) English translation *The Social Organization in North Eastern India in Buddha's Time* by Sisirkumar Maitra Chapters IX X

² References (a) *Aṅguttara Nikāya* I 128 *Vinaya* IV 226 (jurisdiction of *pūgas*) (b) *Paṇḍita* XIV 10 followed by *Viṣṇu* II 7 (social ban on *ganas*) (c) *Paṇḍita* XVI 15 (evidence of *śrenīs*) (d) *Gautama* XI 21 (authority of customs of cultivators etc.) *Viṣṇu Smṛti* V 167 8 (property and conventions of *ganas*)

⁴ *Kauṭ* II 7 (p. 62)

the righteous usages (*dharmas*) conventions (*vyavahāras*) and customs (*caritras*) of the *sanghas* as also of the regions (*desas*) villages (*grāmas*) sub castes (*gatis*) and families (*kulas*) should be recorded in the comprehensive State register at the accounts office (*aksapatala*) Again under the head of law relating to partition and inheritance⁵ he makes special reference to the application of the traditional usages of *sanghas* and *ganas* Elsewhere violation of agreements made with the *gana* by its members is visited with a fine On the other hand in keeping with the *Arthasāstra* spirit of strict official control the *srenīs* concerned are required to be guarantees for deposits received by the craftsmen and they are declared to be liable to repay the same in the event of the craftsmen's death or other calamity⁶ Kautilya, again in harmony with the spirit of the *Arthasāstra* makes no scruples in exploiting the *srenīs* and the *sanghas* for political purposes A prince driven to live by his own exertions we are told⁷ may plunder the property of *sanghas* and others for his livelihood The king's officers again may seize the property of *sanghas* on a suitable pretext at the time of the king's financial stringency⁸ Not only are the heads of the *srenīs* included in the king's pay roll but their services are required to be utilized secretly to create disaffection in the enemy's kingdom How the policy of conciliation and bribery is to be applied by the king towards the loyal *sanghas* and that of dissension and chastisement against the disloyal ones is illustrated by the author elsewhere¹⁰ by numerous examples This is justified by the argument that *sanghas* are invincible against enemies and as such their support is the best of the king's supports from military and friendly quarters

A word may be said here about the partnerships of capitalists and workmen The Jātakas indeed occasionally refer to merchants' partnerships But usually the caravans of the traders are found to be travelling together only for mutual convenience and in some cases even for avoidance of mutual underselling¹¹

THE PRE GUPTA AND GUPTA PERIODS (c 184 B C —A D 700)

The records of this period indicate a considerable advance of industry and trade in their various branches In the latter half of the first century before Christ and the following half century a great impetus was given to India's trade with the Western world since the discovery of the monsoons by the Roman merchants greatly shortened their voyage to our land The

Ibid III 7 (p 165)

Ibid I 18 (p 36)

Ibid V 3 (p 247) XIII 3 (p 400)

Ibid XI 1 (pp 378 f)

Cf the remarks of Mrs Rhys Davids in *Cambridge History of India* Vol I Chapter VIII pp 211 12

Ibid IV 1 (p 200)

Ibid V 2 (p 244)

pace of progress was continued and intensified under the well organized and efficient government of the Imperial Guptas and their successors. It was therefore natural that the conditions of the guilds and related bodies should show great improvement during these times. In the Smṛtis of the period to begin with there is no trace of the strict official control or political exploitation of the *srenīs* and the *sanghas* such as we have noticed in Kautilya's *Arthasāstra*. On the contrary we observe a remarkable tendency to safeguard the property and strengthen the constitution of these bodies which were usually grouped under the general heading of *samūhas* (collective bodies). Theft of property owned by a *gana* we read was to be punished with confiscation and banishment.¹ The orders of the advisers for the good of the *samūhas* were to be obeyed by all the members.² Violation of agreement made by a member with his *sangha* or *gana* was to be punished with a heavy fine, confiscation, imprisonment or banishment.³ The heads of the *srenīs* and the *ganas* were to visit offending members with verbal censure or excommunication and the king was to approve of these penalties.⁴ A member offering perverse opposition or making a frivolous speech was to be punished with fine and one committing a violent crime or causing a split in the *samūha* or destroying its property was to be proclaimed guilty by the king and uprooted thereafter.⁵ The *samūha* we are further told was to manage its affairs according to the established rules which were to be reduced to writing⁶ and its business was to be conducted under the guidance of elected overseers of public business (*kāryacintakas*) or advisers for the good of the *samūhas* whose number should be two, three or five.⁷ The political status of these bodies shared in this improvement of their organization. Manu and Yājñavalkya place the customs or conventions (*dharma*s) of *srenīs* and related bodies on the same level with those of regions, sub-castes and families which had been invested with the authority of laws far back in the Dharma Sūtras.⁸ What is more the *puga* and the *srenī* (or else the *srenī* and the *gana*) are recognized as holding rights of jurisdiction over suitors midway between the family and the king's officers. For while Yājñavalkya⁹ allows the king's officers the *pūga*, the *srenī* and the *kula* the authority to investigate disputes in the descending order of their enumeration, Narada does the same with regard to the *kula*, the *srenī*, the *gana*, the

Yāj. II 197

² *Ibid.* II 188 and Brhaspati quoted in Apararka's comm. thereon pp. 792 f.

Manu VIII 219-20. Yāj. II 187 and Brhaspati in Apararka pp. 792 f.

Brhaspati in Apararka p. 793.

Kat. W. 668 f.

Ibid.

³ Yāj. II 191. Brhaspati p. 151 (vv. 8-10).

Manu VIII 41. Yāj. I 361.

II 30.

king's officers and the king in an ascending order. According to Yājñiavalkya²¹ the representatives of the *samūha* calling upon the king on its business are to be honoured with gifts but all such presents are to be made over to the *samūha* on pain of liability to a heavy fine. We have an echo of the Smṛti attitude towards the guilds in a few extracts of the *Mahābhārata*. We learn for instance that the good opinion of the executive officers of the *śrenis* was held to be a great asset of a king and their support was canvassed by his enemies²². Further we read that the violation of the *dharma* of one's own *śrenī* was held to be an inextinguishable sin²³.

The historical references tend to corroborate and supplement in some respects the account given above. We have a number of inscriptions of the first two centuries of the Christian era and belonging to localities in northern and western India which record the endowments given by foreign donors to the *śrenīs* for pious and charitable purposes. These guilds were both of the industrial and the commercial type. From the above we learn that the craft as well as the merchant guilds were functioning at this period as bankers and public trustees. Two inscriptions of the years A.D. 437-38 and A.D. 473-74 and belonging to the regions of modern Uttar Pradesh and Madhya Pradesh respectively prove that the industrial guilds used to receive deposits and found endowments for pious purposes and that they were organized under a single head. A few seals of guilds of bankers, traders and artisans which have been discovered at the site of ancient Vaiśālī have been held to suggest something like a modern Chamber of Commerce established at the permanent headquarters from which members sent out instructions to their local agents. In a series of inscriptions from North Bengal ranging between A.D. 443-44 and 533-34 the guild president (*nagara śreṣṭhin*), the leading merchant (*sarthavāha*), the leading artisan (*prathama kulika*) and the leading scribe (*prathama kāyastha*) are found to be associated with the District Officer or the Provincial Governor in the management of the crown lands²⁴.

Coming to the subject of partnerships we may mention that the Smṛtis of this period have a new head of law called *sambhūya-samutthāna* (business in partnership). Under this heading Manu extends the rule relating to the shares of fees payable to the priests jointly performing a sacrifice to all those who similarly do their work jointly. On the other hand Yājñiavalkya applies the law of partnership in trade to the sacrificial priests, the husbandmen

²¹ II 189-90

Ibid. XII 36-19

Mbh. III 249-16 XII 59-49

²⁴ References: Luders, *A List of Brahmi Inscriptions from the earliest times to about A.D. 400 with the exception of Aśoka* (EI X App.) Nos. 1133, 1137, 1162, 1165. EI XXI p. 60 (incriptions of first and second centuries). (b) CII III 70-71 *ibid.* 81-84 (inscriptions of A.D. 437-38 and A.D. 473-74). (c) ARASI 1903-04 p. 110 (Basarh seals). (d) EI XV no. 7 North Bengal inscriptions.

and the artisans The clauses relating to the division of profits among the partners as well as their rights and duties are marked by equity and good sense The priest's share we are told is to be proportionate to his work except when it is specifically allotted (Manu) the division of profit and loss among partners in trade should be in proportion to their share in the business or according to agreement (Yajñavalkya) the division of profits among four grades of artisans namely the apprentice the advanced student the expert and the master craftsman is to be in the proportion of 1 2 3 4 and among builders of palaces the head architect receives double his share of the profit (Brhaspati and Kātyāyana) a partner doing work that is forbidden or causing harm through negligence is to make good the loss while he who preserves the property from a calamity is to get one tenth as his reward a partner unable to do his work himself may get it done by an agent but he who follows crooked ways should be deprived of his profit and expelled²⁵

THE POST GUPTA PERIOD (c. A.D. 700-1200)

Because of the advanced condition of industry and trade the development of guilds and related bodies appears to have been continued and indeed accelerated during this period We may illustrate this point by quotations from two leading Smṛti authorities during these times We refer to the commentary on the *Manu Smṛti* by Medhātithi (ninth century) and the *Smṛti Candrikā* digest by Devanna Bhatta (latter half of the twelfth and first half of the thirteenth century) The topic is dealt with by them under the head of law called *samvid vyatikrama* (violation of compact) or *samayānupā karma* (non transgression of compact) Thus Medhātithi²⁶ defines *srenī* as a group of people following common professions such as tradesmen artisans money lenders coachmen and so forth More generally he defines *sangha* as a community of persons following the same pursuit although belonging to different sub castes (*jatis*) and regions (*deśas*) and he gives the example of *sanghas* of mendicants of merchants and of those versed in the four Vedas²⁷ With these may be compared the definitions of these and cognate terms by the authorities quoted at the beginning of this chapter²⁸ From the above it follows that there were two types of guilds namely the craft guilds and the merchant guilds of which the latter unlike the former comprised different castes inhabiting different regions The explanations of the old Smṛti texts by the above mentioned authorities indicate the functions of the guilds and associated bodies in their time Certain principal

²⁵ *Manu* VIII 206-11 *Yāj* II 259-65 *Brhaspati* pp 131 133 135-6 (vv 9-11 13 22-3 35-36) *Kāt* vv 627 632

²⁶ On *Manu* VIII 41

²⁷ *Ibid* VIII 219

See fn 1 above

tradesmen says Medhātithi ²⁹ offer to pay tax to the king at a fixed rate and on the king's accepting the offer they make rules among themselves such as not to sell a particular commodity at a particular time that will bring them large profits but injure the interest of the kingdom. The fullest account is that of the *Smṛti candrikā*. Compacts were made by the *śrenīs* and *naigamas* as also by villagers and heretical sects says the author for dividing the burdens among the householders owners of fields and individuals as the case might be for the purpose of averting minor calamities like drought or alarm from thieves or official oppression as well as of performing a number of pious acts ³⁰. Among the *naigamas* and *śrenīs* there were such compacts as that one disregarding the messenger in uniform sent by a *naigama* was to be fined and that a particular kind of merchandise was to be sold by a particular *śrenī*. The compacts made as above by the people assembled together were to be observed not only by the groups concerned but also enforced by the king. From the above it follows that the craft and merchant guilds among others used to frame rules for co-operative undertakings for secular and pious purposes as well as for maintaining their authority and controlling the market. These compacts again were enforceable in law. Some further light is thrown upon the methods of conducting business in these bodies by the *Smṛti candrikā* in the same context ³¹. The appointment of two three or five overseers of business says the author is justified on the ground that the groups being of different minds and unlimited numbers are incapable of deciding between proper and improper acts as well as of a unanimous decision. The groups themselves are to punish with fine or expulsion from the place of assembly persons guilty of a number of offences. When the groups are unable to prevent the insolence of their chiefs (*mukhyas*) and similar offences of their members the king is to set the *mukhya* on the proper path and to banish him in the event of his recalcitrance. The *ganās* alone must be understood to have authority to punish offenders who have even a slight competence. When the king is adverse to punishment because he is unrighteous or too righteous the *sangha* and the village and regional units are themselves to do the work.

The above account of the constitution and functions is supplemented and partly corroborated by the historical inscriptions of this period. The guilds and other bodies we learn from this source, were under single or multiple chiefs (*mahattaras*) who corresponded no doubt to the overseers of business of the *Smṛtis*. They collectively founded pious endowments and received money on trust from the public with the same object. The merchant guilds sometimes voluntarily imposed tolls upon various articles

On *Manu* VIII 41*Sm C* III pp 522 f*Ibid*, III pp 526 f

of trade for the same purpose. A number of important trading corporations are mentioned as carrying on their activities in South India during the period. Such was the *manigrāmam* which was a non denominational institution open to Christians as well as Hindus and operated both in the coastal and the inland towns of South India. Such above all was the famous *Nānādesa Tisaiyāyirattu Aññurruvar* the Thousand and Five Hundred from all countries and directions whose activities dated from the latter half of the ninth century and were extended to Burma and Sumatra in the eleventh and twelfth centuries. Their claim to a mythical ancestry their long history the vast scale of their commercial transactions and their daring as well as enterprising spirit are commemorated in the most famous of their inscriptions³²

We may conclude this chapter with a short account of the condition of partnership of capitalists and workmen during this period. This is indicated by the explanations of *Smṛti* texts under the head of law called business in partnership by the commentaries and digests. Among architects masons carpenters and the like says *Medhātithi*³³ the wages are to be distributed on the principle that he who does the more difficult part of the job gets more and he who does the easy part gets less. Partnerships according to the fuller explanation in the *Smṛti candrikā*³⁴ are of six classes of which the first three are concerned with trade agriculture and crafts. Among merchants profit and loss as well as expenditure and work were divided by the partners according to the capital laid out by each alternatively profit and loss were to be shared according to the special agreement (*samvrit*) made by the parties. This general rule applied likewise to the cultivators. Among craftsmen the old *Smṛti* rules were applicable that goldsmiths and the like were to share the profit according to the nature of their work that the teacher the adept the expert and the preceptor were to divide the profits in the proportion of 1 2 3 4 and that the master craftsman (*mukhya*) among the builders of wooden and other residences was to get a double share.

³² *Epigraphia Carnatica* VII SK 118
On *Manu* VIII 211

³⁴ III 429 41

BIBLIOGRAPHY AND INDEX

BIBLIOGRAPHY

GENERAL

- ACHARYA P K *Elements of Hindu Culture and Sanskrit Civilization* Mehar Chand Lachhman Das Lahore 1939
- *Glories of India* On Indian Culture and Civilization 2nd Edn Jay Shankar Brothers Allahabad 1952
- BARTH AUGUSTE *The Religions of India* Trans by J Wood Kegan Paul Trench Trubner & Co London 1921
- BASHAM A L *The Wonder that was India* A Survey of the Culture of the Indian Sub Continent before the coming of the Muslims Sidgwick & Jackson London 1954
- DASGUPTA S N AND DE S K *A History of Sanskrit Literature* Classical Period Vol 1 Calcutta University Calcutta 1947
- DE S K *Aspects of Sanskrit Literature* K L Mukhopadhyay Calcutta 1959
- DUTT R C *Ancient India* Longmans Green & Co London 1893
- *History of Civilization in Ancient India based on Sanskrit Literature* (3 Vols) Thacker Spink & Co Calcutta 1889 90
- FARQUHAR J N *An Outline of the Religious Literature of India* O U P London 1920
- FRAZER R W *A Literary History of India* T Fisher Unwin London 1898
- GIRI MAHADEVANANDA *Vedic Culture* Calcutta University Calcutta 1947
- GODE P K *Studies in Indian Literary History* (2 Vols) Singhi Jain Shastra Shikshapith Bombay 1953
- HASTINGS J (Ed) *Encyclopaedia of Religion and Ethics* (13 Vols) T & T Clark Edinburgh 1925 52
- HOPKINS E W *The Religions of India* Ginn & Co Boston 1902
- *Indian Inheritance* (3 Vols) Bharatiya Vidyabhavan Series Bombay 1955 56
- KANF P V *History of Dharma śāstra* (5 Vols) Ancient and Mediaeval Religious and Civil Law Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute Poona 1930 58
- KEITH A B *Classical Sanskrit Literature* 4th Edn Y M C A Calcutta 1947
- *History of Sanskrit Literature* O U P London 1956
- KRISHNAMACHARIAR K *History of Classical Sanskrit Literature* T T Devasthanams Press Madras 1937
- LIN YUTANG *The Wisdom of India* Includes translations of passages from the *Bhagavad Gītā* the *Rāmāyana* and other Classical Works Jaico Publishing House Bombay 1955
- MACDONELL A A *History of Sanskrit Literature* William Heinemann London, 1928

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- *India's Past a Survey of Her Literatures Religions Languages and Antiquities* Clarendon Press Oxford 1927
- MAJUMDAR R C AND PUSALKER A D *The History and Culture of the Indian People* (6 Vols) Bharatiya Vidyabhavan Bombay 1951 60
- MONIER WILLIAMS MONIER *Indian Wisdom or Examples of the Religious Philosophical and Ethical Doctrines of the Hindus* 4th Edn Luzac London 1893
- MUELLER FRIEDRICH MAX *A History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature* B D Basu Allahabad 1926
- MUIR J *Metrical Translations from Sanskrit Writers* Trubner & Co London 1879
- *Original Sanskrit Texts on the Origin and History of the People of India* (5 Vols) 3rd Edn Trubner & Co London 1873 90
- MUKHARJI RADHA KUMUD *Ancient India* Indian Press Allahabad 1956
- OLDENBERG H *Ancient India its Language and Religions* Open Court Publishing Co Chicago 1898
- RAGHAVAN V *The Indian Heritage* An Anthology of Sanskrit Literature with detailed introduction 2nd Edn Indian Institute of World Culture Bangalore 1958
- REED ELIZABETH A *Hindu Literature* Selections from Sanskrit Literature Scott Foresman & Co Chicago 1907
- RENOU LOUIS *Religions of Ancient India* Trans by Sheila M Fynn Athlone Press London 1953
- WEBER A F *The History of Indian Literature* Trans from the 2nd German Edn by John Maun and Theodore Zachariae 3rd Edn Kegan Paul Trench Trubner & Co 1892
- WINTERNITZ MORIZ *A History of Indian Literature* (2 Vols) Trans by Mrs Shilavati Ketkar Calcutta University Calcutta 1927 33

THE TWO GREAT EPICS

- AUROBINDO *Vyāsa and Vālmīki* Aurobindo Ashram Pondicherry 1956
- BESANT ANNIE *Śrī Rām Candra the Ideal King* Theosophical Publishing Society Banaras 1901
- CHANDRASEKHARAN K *Rāmāyana Trivenī* Comparative study of Vālmīki Kamba and Tulasī Rāmāyana S Viswanathan Madras 1954
- DIXIT V V *Relation of the Epics to the Brāhmana Literature* Oriental Book Agency Poona 1950
- DUTT MANMATHANATH *The Rāmāyana* (7 Vols) Translated into English Prose Printed by G C Chakravarty Calcutta 1891 94
- DUTT R C *The Great Epics of Ancient India* Condensed into English Verse J M Dent & Co London 1900
- GRIFFITH, RALPH T H *The Rāmāyana of Vālmīki* (5 Vols) Translated into English Verse E J Lazarus Baranas 1870-74
- HFIELD G I *The Mahābhārata an Ethnological study* Kegan Paul London 1935

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- HOPKINS E W *Epic Mythology* Karl J Trubner Strassburg 1915
- *The Great Epic of India its Character and Origin* Charles Scribner's Sons New York 1902
- IYENGAR VENKATESA *The Poetry of Vālmiki* A Literary appreciation of the best parts of the *Rāmāyana* Bangalore Press Bangalore 1940
- MAJUMDER J C *Ethics of the Mahābhārata* Author Calcutta 1953
- MALIK P N *The Mahābhārata as it was is and ever shall be* Pioneer Press Calcutta 1934
- MOTI CHANDRA *Geographical and Economic studies in the Mahābhārata* U P Historical Society Lucknow 1945
- NAVLEKAR N R *A New Approach to the Rāmāyana* Jabalpur 1947
- OMAN J C *The Great Indian Epics The Stories of the Rāmāyana and the Mahābhārata* G Bell & Sons London 1894
- PETER I S *Beowulf and the Rāmāyana a study in Epic Poetry* John Bale London 1934
- PUSALKER A D *Studies in the Epics and Purānas* Bharatiya Vidyabhavan Bombay 1951
- RAJAGOPALACHARI C *Bharat Milap from the Tamil Rāmāyana of Kamba* Publications Division Delhi 1955
- *Mahābhārata* 5th Edn Bharatiya Vidyabhavan Bombay 1958
- *Rāmāyana* Bharatiya Vidyabhavan Bombay 1957
- RAJENDRA SINGH THAKUR *The Barbarians of Ancient India and the Story of Their Extermination (Story of the Rāmāyana)* Indian Express Allahabad 1916
- *The Great War of Ancient India (Story of the Mahābhārata)* Indian Press Allahabad 1915
- RAMASWAMI SASTRI K *Studies in the Rāmāyana* Dept of Education Baroda 1944
- RAY P C *The Mahābhārata of Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana Vyāsa* (18 Vols) Translated into English Prose Bharata Press Calcutta 1893-96
- Revised Edition is being published by Oriental Publishing Co Calcutta 7 Vols issued upto 1956
- SEN D C *The Bengali Rāmāyanas* Calcutta University Calcutta 1920
- SHASTRI H P *The Rāmāyana of Vālmiki* (3 Vols) Translated in Prose Shanti Sadan London 1952-59
- SIDHANTA N K *The Heroic Age of India* Kegan Paul Trench Trubner & Co London 1929
- SRINIVASA SASTRI V S *Lectures on the Rāmāyana* Madras Sanskrit Academy Madras 1952
- SUBRAMANYA AIYAR V V *Kamba Rāmāyana a Study* Tamil Sangam New Delhi 1950
- SUKTHANKAR V S *Critical Studies in the Mahābhārata* Edited by P K Gode Sukthankar Memorial Edn Committee Poona 1944

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- *On the Meaning of the Mahābhārata* Asiatic Society of Bombay
Bombay 1957
- TELANG K T *Was Rāmāyana copied from Homer? A Reply to Professor
Weber* Author Bombay 1873
- THADANI N V *The Mystery of the Mahābhārata* (5 Vols) Bharat Publishing
House Karachi 1933
- VAIDYA C V *Epic India or India as described in the Mahābhārata and the
Rāmāyana* India Litho Press Bombay 1907
- *The Mahābhārata a Criticism* A J Combridge Bombay 1905
- *The Riddle of the Rāmāyana* Kegan Paul Trench Trubner & Co
London 1906

THE GITA LITERATURE

- ARNOLD EDWIN *The Song Celestial or Bhagavad Gītā* Translation in Verse
Jaico Publishing House Bombay 1957
- AUROBINDO *Essays on the Gītā* Sri Aurobindo Ashram Pondicherry 1959
- BELVALKAR S K *Śrīmad Bhagavad Gītā* With English Translation Hindu
Visvavidyalaya Varanasi 1959
- CHITALE M P *Bhagavad Gītā and Hindu Dharma* Continental Publishers
Poona 1953
- EDGERTON FRANKLIN *The Bhagavad Gītā* (2 Vols) Translation and Interpreta-
tion Harvard University Press Cambridge (Mass) 1952
- JNANESHVARA *The Gītā* Explained by Dnyaneshwar Trans by Manu Subedar
2nd Edn Bombay 1941
- MAHADEVA SASTRI A *The Bhagavad Gītā with the Commentary of Śrī Sankarā
cārya* Text and Translation with Commentary V Ramaswamy Sastrulu
& Sons Madras 1918
- MODI P M *The Bhagavad Gītā a Fresh Approach with Special Reference to
Sankarācārya's Bhāṣya* Text and Translation with Commentary Baroda
1956
- NIKHILANANDA SWAMI *The Bhagavad Gītā* Trans with notes comments and
introd Ramakrishna Vivekananda Centre New York 1952
- OTTO RUDOLF *The Original Gītā the Song of the Supreme Exalted One*
With copious comments and notes Translation by J E Turner George
Allen and Unwin London 1939
- PRABHAVANANDA SWAMI AND ISHERWOOD CHRISTOPHER *The Bhagavad Gītā the
Song of God* Translation in Verse Ramakrishna Math Madras 1945
- RADHAKRISHNAN SARVEPALLI *The Bhagavad Gītā* With an introductory essay
Sanskrit text English translation and notes George Allen & Co
London 1956
- RAJAGOPALAGHARI C *The Bhagavad Gītā* Abridged and explained setting forth
the Hindu creed discipline and ideals 4th Edn Hindustan Times
Press Delhi 1941
- RANADE R D *The Bhagavad Gītā as a Philosophy of God realization* Being

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- a clue through the labyrinth of modern interpretations Nagpur University Nagpur 1959
- ROY ANILBARAN (Ed) *The Message of the Gītā as interpreted by Sri Aurobindo* George Allen and Unwin London 1946
- ROY S C *The Bhagavad Gītā and Modern Scholarship* Luzac London 1941
- SARKAR M N *Mysticism in the Bhagavad Gītā* Longmans Green & Co Calcutta 1929.
- SHARMA D S *Lectures and Essays on the Bhagavad Gītā* 4th Edn M L J Press Madras 1945
- SHASTRI H P *Teachings from the Bhagavad Gītā* Translation with commentary Shanti Sadan London 1949
- SIVANANDA SWAMI *Ethics of the Bhagavad Gītā* Yoga Vedanta Forest University Rishikesh 1957
- SWARUPANANDA SWAMI *Śrīmad Bhagavad Gītā* Text and Translation 8th Edn Advaita Ashram Mayavati 1948
- TILANG K I *The Bhagavad Gītā with the Sanatsujātiya and the Anugītā* The Sacred Books of the East Series No VIII Clarendon Press Oxford 1898
- TILAK BAL GANGADHAR *Śrīmad Bhagavad Gītā Rahasya or Karmayoga śāstra* (2 Vols) Including an external examination of the Gītā the original Sanskrit stanzas their English translation commentaries and a comparison of Eastern and Western doctrines Trans by Bhalchandra Sukhtankar Tilak Brothers Poona 1935
- VIRESWARANANDA SWAMI *Śrīmad Bhagavad Gītā* Text translation and the gloss of Śrīdhara Svāmīn Sri Ramakrishna Math Mylapore 1948
- WILKINS C AND OTHERS *The Glorious Upanisads of the Bhagavad Gītā* With Śāṅkarācārya's readings Calcutta 1902

PURĀNAS

- BAIJ NATH (Trans) *The Adhyātma Rāmāyana or the Esoteric Rāmāyana* Panini Office Allahabad 1913
- BANERJEE K M (Trans) *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* Author Calcutta 1851
- DUTT M N (Trans) *Agnipurāna* Prose Translation Elysium Press Calcutta 1903 04
- *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* A prose English trans Elysium Press Calcutta 1896
- *Viṣṇupurānam* A prose English trans based on H H Wilson's translation Elysium Press Calcutta 1894
- MADHAVANANDA SWAMI (Trans) *Last Message of Śrī Kṛṣṇa* Chapters Six to Twenty nine of the Eleventh skandha of the *Bhāgavata* Text with English translation Advaita Ashram Almora, 1956
- MUKHERJEE C C (Trans) *The Mārkaṇḍeya Purānam* Trans from the original Sanskrit in English Prose P C Sen Calcutta 1893
- PARGITER F E (Trans) *The Mārkaṇḍeya Purāna* Trans and ed with notes Calcutta

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- PRABHAVANANDA SWAMI (Trans) *Wisdom of God* Trans of *Śrīmad Bhāgavatam*
Vedanta Press Hollywood 1947
- RAGHAVAN V (Trans) *Śrīmad Bhāgavata* Condensed in the poet's own words
Text and translation G A Natesan Madras 1947
- RAMANUJACHAR V K *Śrībhāgavatam* (3 Vols) Being an analysis in English
Author Kumbakonam 1933-34
- RAMASUBBA SASTRI (Trans) Study of the true trans in English of the Eleventh
skandha in *Śrīmad Bhāgavatam* with text Sridhara Power Press Trivan-
drum 1919
- SANYAL J M (Trans) *The Śrīmad Bhāgavatam of Kṛṣṇa Dvaipāyana Vyāsa*
(5 Vols) Trans into English prose from the original Sanskrit text Datta
Bose & Co Dum Dum 1936
- SEN R N (Trans) *The Brahma Vavarta Purānam* (2 Vols) The Sacred
Books of the Hindus Series No XXIV Panini Office Allahabad 1920-22
- SINHA P N (Trans) *Study of the Bhāgavata Purāna* Text and translation
Theosophical Publishing House Adyar 1953
- SUBBA RAU S (Trans) *Śrīmad Bhāgavatam* (2 Vols) Trans into English
prose embodying the interpretations of the leading schools of thought
Advaita Viśistādvaita and Dvaita Sri Vyasa Press Tirupatī 1928
- VIJNANANANDA SWAMI *Śrīmad Devī Bhāgavatam* Panini Office Allahabad 1934
- WILSON H H (Trans) *The Viṣṇupurāna a System of Hindu Mythology and*
Tradition Trans from the original Sanskrit and illustrated by notes
derived chiefly from other Purānas John Murray London 1840
- WOOD ERNEST AND SUBRAHMANYAM S V (Trans) *The Garuda Purāna* The
Sacred Books of the Hindus Series No IX Panini Office Allahabad
1911

PURANAS AND MYTHOLOGY

- BESANT ANNIE *Avatāras* Theosophical Pub Society London 1900
- COX G W *The Mythology of the Aryan Nations* Kegan Paul Trench & Co
London 1882
- DAITA K N *The Bhāgavata its Philosophy its Ethics and its Theology*
Gaudiya Math Madras 1959
- FAUSBOLL V *Indian Mythology* According to the *Mahābhārata* in outline
Luzac London 1903
- HAZRA R C *Studies in the Puranic Records on Hindu Rites and Customs*
Dacca University Dacca 1940
- *Studies in the Upapurānas* Sanskrit College Calcutta 1958
- MACDONNELL, A A *Vedic Mythology* Verlag Vonkarl of Trubner Strassburg
1897
- MANKAD D R *Purānic Chronology* Author Vallabhvidyanagar Bombay
1951
- MUKHERJEE RADHA KAMAL *The Lord of the Autumn Moons* Asia Pub House
Calcutta 1957

BIBLIOGRAPHY

- NARAYANASWAMI AIYAR K *The Purāṇas in the Light of Modern Science* Author Adyar Madras 1914
- PARGITER F E (Ed) *The Purāṇa Text of the Dynasties of the Kali Age* O U P London 1913
- PATI D R *Cultural History from the Vāyu Purāṇa* Deccan College Post Graduate and Research Institute Poona 1946
- ROY DILIP KUMAR *Immortals of the Bhagavat or Nector of Immortality and Sri Ramakrishna's Parables* Laxmi Narayan Agarwal Agra 1957
- SINHA P N *A Study of the Bhāgavata Purāṇa or Esoteric Hinduism* Freeman Co Ltd Banaras 1901
- TRIDANDI SWAMI GOSVAMI MAHARAJA *The Bhāgavata its Philosophy its Ethics and its Theology* 2nd Edn N B Bhaktibaibhava Madras 1959
- WILKINS W J *Hindu Mythology* Thacker Spink & Co Calcutta 1913
- WILSON H H *Purāṇas* An account of their contents and nature Society for Resuscitation of Indian Literature Calcutta 1897

DHARMA SŪTRAS AND DHARMA ŚĀSTRAS

- AITEKAR A S *Sources of Hindu Dharma in its Socio religious Aspects* Institute of Public Administration Sholapur 1952
- APTE V M *Social and Religious Life in the Grhya Sūtras* Popular Book Depot Bombay 1954
- BHAGAVAN DAS *Science of Social Organization or the Laws of Manu in the Light of Ātmaśāstra* 2nd Edn Theosophical Pub Society Madras 1932
- BHATTACHARYA K K (Trans) *Institutes of Parāśara* Asiatic Society Calcutta 1887
- BUHLER GEORGE (Trans) *The Law of Manu with Extracts from Seven Commentaries* The Sacred Books of the East Series No XXV Clarendon Press Oxford 1886
- *The Sacred Laws of the Āryas as Taught in the Schools of Āpastamba Gautama Vasistha and Baudhāyana* (2 Vols) The Sacred Books of the East Series Nos II & XIV Clarendon Press Oxford 1897
- CHATTERJI HIRALAI *International Law and Inter State Relations in Ancient India* K L Mukhopadhyay Calcutta 1958
- COTEBROOKE H T (Trans) *The Law of Inheritance According to Mitākṣarā* Hindustanee Press Calcutta 1869
- *Two Treatises on the Hindu Law of Inheritance* Translation of *Dāyabhāga* of Jimūtavāhana and *Mitākṣarā* of Viṣṇūśeṣvara Hindustanee Press Calcutta 1810
- DASGUPTA RAMAPRASAD *Crime and Punishment in Ancient India* Book Co Calcutta 1930
- DATTA BHUPENDRA NATH *Dialectics of Hindu Rituals* (2 Vols) Gupta Press Calcutta 1951 56
- DIEHL C G *Instrument and Purpose Studies on Rites and Rituals in South India* Gleerup 1956

- DUTT M N (Trans) *Dharma śāstra* (2 Vols) Ed with English translation
Elysium Press Calcutta 1906 08
- GHARPURE J R (Trans) *The Smṛticandrikā Śrāddha Kānda* An English
translation with notes Office of the Collections of Hindu Law Texts
Bombay 1954
- *The Subodhinī* Being a commentary by Viśveśvara Bhatta on the
Vyavahāradhyāya of the *Mitākṣarā* of Śrī Viṣṇāneśvara of the *Yājñavalkya
Smṛti* Author Bombay 1930
- HAMSA YOGI *Samskāras the Genius behind Sacramental Rites* Suddha
Dharma Office Madras 1951
- HOUGHTON G C (Ed) *Mānava Dharma śāstra or the Institute of Manu*
(2 Vols) Vol 1 Sanskrit text Vol 2 English trans London 1925
- IYENGAR K V RANGASWAMY *Rājadharmā* Adyar Library Madras 1941
- *Some Aspects of the Hindu View of Life According to Dharma śāstra*
Baroda University Baroda 1952
- JAYASWAL K P *Manu and Yājñavalkya—a Comparison and a Contrast* A
treatise on the basic Hindu Law Butterworth Calcutta 1930
- JHA GANCANATHA (Trans) *Manu Smṛti The Laws of Manu with the Bhāṣya
of Medhātithi* (5 Vols) Calcutta University Calcutta 1920 26
- JOLLY JULIUS (Trans) *The Institutes of Viṣṇu* The Sacred Books of the East
Series No VII Clarendon Press Oxford 1880
- *The Minor Law books* (pt I) *Nārada Brhaspati* The Sacred Books
of the East Series No XXXIII Translations of Nārada and Brhaspati
Clarendon Press Oxford 1889
- *Nāradya Dharma śāstra or the Institutes of Nārada* Trubner & Co
London 1876
- JONES SIR WILLIAM (Trans) *Institutes of Hindu Law or the Ordinances of
Manu* India Government Calcutta 1794
- MAITRA SUSHIL KUMAR *The Ethics of the Hindus* Calcutta University
Calcutta 1925
- MANDALIK V N (Ed) *Vyavahāramayūkha* English translation with notes
Bombay 1880
- MAYNE JOHN DAWSON *A Treatise on Hindu Law and Usage* 10th Edn Ed
by S Srinivasa Iyengar Higginbothams Madras 1938
- MOTWANI KEWAI *Manu Dharma śāstra* A sociological and historical study
Ganesh & Co Madras 1958
- OLDENBERG HERMANN (Trans) *The Grhya Sūtras rules of Vedic Domestic
Ceremonies* (2 pts) The Sacred Books of the East Nos XXIX XXX
Clarendon Press Oxford 1886 92
- Pt 1 *Grhya Sūtras* of Śāṅkhāyana Āśvalāyana Pāraskara and Khadira
- Pt 2 *Grhya Sūtras* of Gobhila Hiraṇyakeśin and Āpastamba
- PAL R B *The History of Hindu Law in the Vedic Age and in Post Vedic*
688

BIBLIOGRAPHY

Times Down to the Institutes of Manu Calcutta University Calcutta 1958

PANDE RAJ BALI *Hindu Samskāras a Socio religious Study of the Hindu Sacraments* Vikrama Pub Banaras 1949

PRADHAN SITANATH *Vājasaneyā Yājñavalkya and his Times* (2 Vols) Calcutta 1934

RAM GOPAL *India of Vedic Kalpa Sūtras* A graphical portrayal of the social economic and religious life of India in the pre Buddhist times as depicted in the Śrauta Grhya and Dharma Sūtras National Pub House Delhi 1959

ROER E (Trans) *Hindu Law and Judicature from the Dharmaśāstra of Yājñavalkya* In English With notes by E Roer and W A Montrieux Calcutta 1859

SARKAR B K *Positive Background of Hindu Sociology* 2nd Edn Panini Office Allahabad 1937

SARKAR G C (Trans) *The Law of Inheritance as in the Vīramitodaya* With text Thacker Spink & Co Calcutta 1879

SARKAR K L *The Hindu System of Moral Science* 3rd Edn S C Majumder Calcutta 1912

SENGUPTA N C *Evolution of Ancient Indian Law* Eastern Law House Calcutta 1953

——— *Sources of Law and Society in Ancient India* Art Press Calcutta 1914

VANAMALI VEDANTATIRTHA (Trans) *Grhya Sūtras of Gobhila* In English with copious notes Metropolitan Printing & Pub House Ltd Calcutta 1940

VARADACHARIAR S *The Hindu Judicial System* Lucknow University Lucknow 1946

VASU S C (Trans) *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* Panini Ashram Allahabad 1909

VIDYARNAVA S C (Trans) *Yājñavalkya Smṛti* With the commentary of Viṣṇāneśvara Panini Office Allahabad 1918

VISWANATHAN S V *International Law in Ancient India* Longmans Green & Co London 1925

KAUTILYA

BANERJI N C *Kautilya or an Exposition of His Social Ideal and Political Theory* (2 Vols) R Cambray & Co Calcutta 1927

DHAR SOMNATH *Cānakya and the Arthasāstra* Indian Institute of World Culture Bangalore 1957

IYFNGAR K V RANGASWAMY *Considerations on Some Aspects of Ancient Indian Polity* 2nd Edn Madras University Press Madras 1935

JOLLY J AND SCHMIDT, R (Trans) *Arthasāstra of Kautilya* A new Edn Punjab Oriental Series Lahore 1923

KRISHNA RAO M V *Studies in Kautilya* 2nd Rev Edn Munshi Ram Manohar Lal Delhi 1958

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- LAW N N *Studies in Ancient Hindu Polity Based on the Arthasāstra of Kautilya* (2 Vols) With an introductory essay on the age and authenticity of the *Arthasāstra* of Kautilya by Radha Kumud Mukherji Longmans Green & Co London 1914
- MAYER JOHANN JAKOB *Über das Wesen der Altindischen Rechtsschriften und ihr Verhältnis Zu Einander und Zu Kautilya* Otto Harrassowitz Leipzig 1927
- SHAMASASTRY R (Trans) *Arthasāstra* 4th Edn Raghuvver Printing Press Mysore 1951

POLITICAL ORGANIZATION

- AITEKAR A S *State and Government in Ancient India* 3rd Edn Motilal Banarasidas Banaras 1958
- BENI PRASAD *Theory of Government in Ancient India* (Post Vedic) Indian Press Allahabad 1927
- DIKSHITAR V R RAMACHANDRA *The Gupta Polity* Madras University Madras 1952
- *Hindu Administrative Institution* Madras University Madras 1929
- GHOSHAL U N *A History of Political Ideas* Rev Edn of *A History of Hindu Political Theories* O U P Bombay 1959
- *A History of Hindu Public Life* (pt I) Calcutta 1945
- IYENGAR K V RANGASWAMY *Consideration on Some Aspects of Ancient Indian Polity* 2nd Edn Madras University Madras 1935
- JAYASWAL KASI PRASAD *Hindu Polity* (2 Vols) A Constitutional History of India in Hindu Times Bangalore Printing and Publishing Co Bangalore 1955
- MAHALINGAM T V *South Indian Polity* Madras University Madras 1955
- MAJUMDAR R C *Corporate Life in Ancient India* Surendranath Sen Calcutta 1918
- MUKHERJI RADHA KUMUD *Local Government in Ancient India* 3rd Edn Delhi 1958
- ROYCHAUDHURI H C *Political History of Ancient India* Calcutta University Calcutta 1953
- SARKAR BENOY KUMAR *The Political Institutions and Theories of the Hindus a Study in Comparative Politics* Chuckervertty Chatterjee & Co Calcutta 1939
- SHARMA R S *Aspects of Political Ideas and Institutions in Ancient India* Motilal Banarasidas Delhi 1959
- SINHA H N *Sovereignty in Ancient Indian Polity* Luzac London 1938
- ŚUKRĀCĀRYA *The Śukraniti* Trans by B K Sarkar with an Index by Kumar Narendranath Law Panini Office Allahabad 1914
- VARMA V P *Studies in Hindu Political Thought and its Metaphysical Foundations* Motilal Banarasidas Banaras 1956

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- RAO C HAYAVADANA *Indian Caste System a Study* Bangalore Press
Bangalore 1931
- RAY J C *Ancient Indian Life* P R Sen Calcutta 1948
- SALTORE B A *Social and Political Life in the Vijayanagar Empire* Madras
1934
- SARKAR S C *Some Aspects of the Earliest Social History of India Pre
Buddhist Ages* O U P London 1920
- SEN K M *Mediaeval Mysticism of India* Luzac London 1936
- SENART EMILE *Caste in India the Facts and the System* Trans by Sir E
Denison Ross Methuen London 1930
- VARADACHARIAR S *The Hindu Social System* 1946
- VENKATESWARA S V *Indian Culture Through the Ages (2 Vols)* Longmans
Green & Co London 1928 32
- WRIGHT CALEB *Oriental Customs or Life in India* Author Boston
1860

WOMEN

- AITFKAR A S *Position of Women in Hindu Civilization* Banaras Hindu
University Banaras 1938
- BADER CLARISSE *Women in Ancient India Moral and Literary Studies*
Trans by Mary E R Martin Kegan Paul Trench Trubner London
1925
- BILLINGTON MARY FRANCES *Women in India* Chapman and Hall London
1895
- CHAUDHURI J B *The Position of Women in the Vedic Ritual* Prachyavani
Mandir Calcutta 1945
- INDRA *The Status of Women in Ancient India* 2nd Edn Motilal Banarasi
das Banaras 1955
- KAPADIA K M *Marriage and Family in India* 2nd Edn O U P Bombay
1958
- MADHAVANANDA SWAMI AND MAJUMDAR R C *Great Women of India* Advaita
Ashram Almora 1953
- MITRA D N *The Position of Women in Hindu Law* Calcutta University
Calcutta 1913
- PINKHAM M W *Women in the Sacred Scriptures of Hinduism* Columbia
University New York 1941
- RAO SHAKUNTALA SASTRI *Women in the Sacred Laws* Bhavan's Book
Bombay 1953
- *Women in the Vedic Age* Bharatiya Vidyabhavan Bombay 1954
- UPADHYAYA B S *Women in the Rigveda* 2nd Rev and Enl Edn Nand
Kishore & Bros Banaras, 1941
- VIVEKANANDA SWAMI *Our Women* 2nd Edn Advaita Ashram Mayavati
1946

BIBLIOGRAPHY
RACIAL SYNTHESIS

- BANERJEE G N *Hellenism in Ancient India* 2nd Edn Butterworth Calcutta 1920
- *India as Known to the Ancient World* An Account of India's Inter-
course in Ancient Times with her Neighbours Egypt Western Asia
China Further India and Indonesia O U P Calcutta 1921
- CHANDA R P *The Indo Aryan Races* Varendra Research Society Rajshahi
1916
- CHATTERJI SUNITI KUMAR *The Indian Synthesis and Racial and Cultural
Intermixture in India* Gujarat Vidya Sabha Ahmedabad 1953
- CHILDE V GORDON *The Aryans a Study of Indo European Origins* Kegan
Paul Trench Trubner London 1926
- IYENGAR P T S *Pre Aryan Tamil Culture* Madras 1930
- MAJUMDAR D N *Races and Cultures of India* 2nd Edn Universal
Publishers Lucknow 1950
- MAJUMDAR R C *Ancient Indian Colonies in the Far East* (3 Vols) Punjab
Sanskrit Book Depot Lahore 1927 44
- RAWLISON H G *Intercourse between India and the Western World from the
Earliest Times to the Fall of Rome* Cambridge University Cambridge 1916
- SASTRI NILAKANTHA K A *South Indian Influence in the Far East* Hind
Kitabs Bombay 1949
- TARN W W *The Greeks in Bactria and India* Cambridge University Press
Cambridge 1938
- VISWANATHA S V *Racial Synthesis in Hindu Culture* Kegan Paul Trench
Trubner London 1928

EDUCATION

- ALTEKAR A S *Education in Ancient India* 5th Edn Nand Kishore & Bros
Banaras 1957
- DAS SANTOSH KUMAR *The Educational System of the Ancient Hindus* Mitra
Press Calcutta 1931
- DAS GUPTA DEBENDRA CHANDRA *Educational Psychology of the Ancient Hindus*
Calcutta University Calcutta 1949
- KEAY FRANK ERNEST *Indian Education in Ancient and Later Times an
Inquiry into its Origin Development and Ideals* 2nd Edn O U P
Calcutta 1950
- MUKHERJI RADHA KUMUD *Ancient Indian Education* 2nd Edn Macmillan
London 1951
- RAJA C K *Some Aspects of Education in Ancient India* Adyar 1950
- SANKALIA HASMUKH D *The University of Nalanda* B G Paul Madras 1934

ECONOMICS

- BADEN POWELL B H *The Origin and Growth of Village Communities in India*
Swan Sonnenschein London 1908

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- BANERJI N C *Economic Life and Progress in Ancient India being the outlines of an Economic History of Ancient India* Calcutta University Calcutta 1945
- BUCH M A *Economic Life in Ancient India a Systematic Survey* (2 Vols) Author Baroda 1924
- DAS S K *The Economic History of Ancient India* Author Howrah (Bengal) 1925
- GHOSHAL U N *The Agrarian System in Ancient India* Calcutta University Calcutta 1930
- *Contributions to the History of the Hindu Revenue System* Calcutta University Calcutta 1929
- MUKHARJI D P *Diversities Essays in Economics Sociology and Other Social Problems* People's Publishing House New Delhi 1958
- MUKHERJEE Radha Kamal *The Foundations of Indian Economics* Longmans and Green, London 1911
- ROY R L *Bases of Peace in Hindu Political Economy* Bhagalpur 1943
- SHAH K T *Ancient Foundations of Economics in India* Vora & Co Bombay 1954

INDEX

- Abanindranath Tagore 116
Abhidhammakatha 588
Abhijnana Sakuntala closing acts of 96 of Kṛlidas based on the *Mahabharata* 108
 Abhinanda his *Rama carita* 96
 Abhinavagupta lost Rama dramas mentioned by 98
 Abhiras 622 23 their influence on the growth of pastoral legends of Kṛṣṇa 623 influence of on Indian culture 623 Kṛṣṇa as war lord of 81 migration of and settlement in India 622
 Abhira Iśvarasena founder of the Kalacuri cedi era 622
Abhiseka nataka attributed to Bhasa 97
 Abhyasa yoga 174 daily practice of 175
 Absolute 189 as the highest goal of realization according to Śāṅkara 198
 Abul Fazl his *Āin-i Akbari* 628
Ācara 381 obligatory observance of 93 as next in authority to the Smṛtis 312 as transcendental law 426
Ācārya ideal qualifications of 404
 Achaemenids of Persia their mighty empire 470
 Achaemenian architecture influence of on the Mauryas 613
Abbhuta darpana (see Mahadeva) 98
Abbhuta Ramayana 95
Abbhuta sagara (see Ballala Sena) a great work on omens 369
Ādhara conception of the individual as 640
Adharma 360
Adhikara principle of 343
Adhvaryu 9
Adhyasa 213
Adhyatma Ramayana Oriya version of 105
Ādi parvan 55 Brahma Gaṇeśa interpolation in 66 different types of States mentioned in 74 episodes added to 54 teaches *bhakti* 72
Ādi Purana 272
Administrative and Social Life under Vijaya nagar on resolutions of corporate bodies as forming part of law 428
 Adolf Holtzmann his inversion theory of the *Mahabharata* 57
 Advaita 151
Advaitasiddhi (see Madhusūdana Sarasvatī) 201
 Āgama authority of 89
 Āgamic Paśupatas 282
 Āgamic Śaivism spread of 282
 Agastya 214 575 gives *mantra* to Rāma 48 married Lopamudra 83
 Agni essentially domestic divinity 226 three forms of 227 various descriptions of 226 Vedic fire god 226
Agnihotra 572 daily offering of 574
Agni Purana 292 on the development of Hindu law during the Buddhistic period 441 on the duties of Kṣatriyas 292 on the external and internal aspects of *śauca* 289 on *satya* as conducive to welfare of creatures 289 a spurious Vaisnava work of encyclopaedic character 262 ten varieties of injury enumerated in 288
Aham Brahmasmi 152
Ahankara 91 92
Ahimsa 88 Aśoka's stress on 490 as the *dharma par excellence* declared in the Puranas 288 doctrine of 93 its fundamental concept 288 Jaina doctrine of 100 rests on the practice of virtues 288
Āin-i Akbari (see Abul Fazl) on caste restrictions in marriage 628 on reforms introduced by Akbar prohibiting high dowries 630
Āitareya Brahmana on blessings conferred by a son 567 on the concept of *sarva bhauma* 525 on the origin of kingship 420 497 498
Ātishaiṣikas 6
 Aiyangar Rangaswami his *Ancient Indian Polity* 421
 Ajāmila 215
 Ājivakas heretic doctrines of 488
Ajnana as the root cause of human sufferings 172
Akarpānya 566
Akaśagaṅga 87
 Akbar his attitude towards the practice of *satī* 632 discouraged gambling 634 disfavoured inter caste marriage 628 disliked matrimonial alliance with near relations 628 enforcement of *pardah* by 631 his laws governing prostitution 635 prohibited child marriage 628 prohibited polygamy among people of ordinary means 629 reforms introduced by prohibiting high dowries 630 regularized the sale of wine 633 his respect for the chastity of Hindu women 639 young men marrying old women declared illegal by 630
Akhyana 8 72 its distinctive character as a literary form 8 narrative composition 7 origin of the epics traced in 14 spectacular fashion of reciting 9
Akṣara 168 Śāṅkara's conception of 198 Śrīdhara Svāmī's conception of 202
 Ala ud dīn (Khālījī) prohibited prostitution 635 prohibited the sale and purchase of wine 633
 Al Biruni on the practice of *satī* 597
 Alexander companions of noticed two types of republics in India aristocracies and

- Alexander—*Continued*
democracies 482 his Indian conquests constituted into several satrapies 615
invasion of republics of north western India at the time of 482
- Alvars Vaisnava reference to the *Ramayana* episodes in the hymns composed by 105
- Amaracandra Suri his *Bala Bharata* 106
- Amarakosa absence of the word *upapurana* in 273 definition of Purana in 241
- Ambedkar on the origin of untouchability 422
- Amṛta 93
- Anamaka *Jataka* Rama is regarded as a Bodhisattva in 99
- Ānanda 93 as the highest good of life 91
- Ānanda *Ramayana* 95
- Anantabhatta his *Bhārata campu* 106
- Ananta Kandali his *Bharata Savitri* 111
- Anargha Raghava (see Murari) 98
- Anasakti yoga according to Manu 361
- Anaśramin 574
- Anāyāsa 566
- Anasuya as a *brahmavadinī* 605
- Ancient Indian Polity (see Aiyangar Ranga swami) on the aims and features of ancient Indian polity 421
- Angiras 230
- Ankor Vat bas reliefs in the temple of 120
- Animism traces of in Vedic religion 230
- Aniruddha 92
- Amṛtya 93
- Annamite old chronicles of 120
- Annaprāsana a ceremony connected with the first feeding of the child with solid food 400 oblations offered on the occasion of 401
- Antyeṣṭi the funeral 411 13 as the last sacrament in the life of a Hindu 411 as a *samskara* 411
- Anu Gita 84 91 teachings contained in 207 various doctrines mentioned in 88
- Anuloma 302 327 352
- Anuśaṣanaparvan didactic material in 62 exposition of *dharma* in 67
- Anustaranī the cow that is offered as a gift in a funeral 412
- Anuṣṭubh metre *Ramayana* composed in 26
- Anvikṣī 655 as comprising Sāṃkhya Yoga and the Lokayata doctrine 9 signifies philosophical knowledge 9
- Āpad dharma 342
- Aparajita 100
- Āpara Prakṛti 167
- Aparārka his commentary on Yajñavalkya 367
- Āparavidya 641
- Āpastamba 245 in deciding legal issues custom should be given due importance according to 426 on *dharma* law as the regulator of conduct 427 on the duties of the *yati* 561 on law 517 on *śamaya* as a source of Hindu law 428
- Āpastamba Dharma Sūtra, 6 303 compared with the Baudhayana 303 evil propensities of man mentioned in 10
- Apsarases mythology relating to not much developed in the Vedic literature 229 ten renowned 82
- Aranyaka the literature of the woods 641
- Ardhanariśvara idea of 89
- Arikamedu Indo Roman emporium at near Pondicherry 619
- Aristaneimi 110
- Aristotle his conception of law 417 his conception of State 519
- Arjuna 92 161 183 190 as a great favourite of the Javanese audience 132 identified with Nara 72 as incarnation of Indra 69 Śiva gave *paśupatastra* to 86 his synthesis of action and devotion as a result of harkening to the *Gita* 185 his vision of the Lord's cosmic form 185
- Artha 71
- Artha pancaka Vaisnava doctrine of 28
- Arthashastra (see Kautilya) 655 on administration of cities 455 on the ancient tradition of seven constituents of the State 469 anterior to Manu 428 *avapa* portion of consists of nine Books 452 Book One deals with the discipline and education of a king 452 Book Two deals with the bureaucratic system of government 454 Book Three deals with civil law 456 Book Four deals with removal of anti social elements 456 Book Five topics discussed in 457 Book Six seven constituent elements of the State discussed in 457 Book Seven six political expedient in the field of diplomacy discussed in 458 Book Eight several kinds of *vyasana*s discussed in 458 Book Nine topic of leading an expedition by a *vijigīṣu* discussed in 458 Book Ten deals with war 459 Book Eleven deals with economic guilds and political corporations 459 Book Twelve various Machiavellian contrivances discussed in 460 Book Thirteen war strategy of a *vijigīṣu* discussed in 460 Book Fourteen deals with certain recipes for the destruction of king's enemies 461 Book Fifteen gives the entire plan of 461 on coinage as a State monopoly 664 on collection of revenue from seven different sources 455 consists of two great divisions *tantra* and *avapa* 452 contents of 451 defined by Kautilya as the science of acquiring and ruling the earth 461 developed a complete system of the branches of the king's revenue 469 dispute about the date of 13 distinction made in between *varṇa* and Artha śāstra 655 divided into fifteen *adhikaranas* 429 on the education of Kṣatriya princes 647 on the king's daily routine 454 as embodying the imperial code of laws of the Mauryas 429 on king's functions 468 king is regarded as the final authority in judicial matters in, 456 on legal procedure 456 on the need for a reserve fund in the State 665 older than the extant

INDEX

Arthaśāstra—Continued

- Manu Smṛti* 579 its place of pride and the earliest secular code of law in the world 428 on the rate of interest 659 recommends regulation of the activities of the guilds 664 its reference to *itihasa* as a Veda 7 refers to more than a dozen previous authors on Artha śāstra 429 several classes of spies mentioned in 453 on six political expedients 457 on the strict official control of the corporate bodies 672 *tantra* portion of consists of five Books 452 on taxation 664 on *trivarga* 461 on two branches of discipline for the Kṣatriya princes 647 on the twelve constituents of the circle of States 457 two main groups of spies mentioned in *samsthas* and *sancarins* 453
- Artha śāstra(s) 4 authority of king's laws recognized by 431 composed by early teachers 13 discussions of the ancient authorities on basic concepts and categories of 451 domain of 67 early schools and authors of 451 four distinct schools of 451 Kautilya's definition of as the art of government 451 old masters of 451 and Dharma śāstra relation between 428 33 scope of 655 subjects dealt with by the ancient masters of 451 thirteen individual teachers of 451
- Arthavada* 164
- Arudha* 178
- Āruruksu* condition required for 178
- Ārya the name its ethnic significance 611
- Aryan(s) alone had the privilege of Vedic study 329 development of overlordship among 465 division of into *gotras* 323 division into three functional groups 324 327 emergence of a new social pattern based on castes among 465 freedom of intercourse among 325 impact of the pre Aryan settlers on 611 recognition of mixed marriages by 325 social conditions and modes of life of as reflected in the epics 30 sternness of their character 28 their conquest of the South 17 Vedic pouring of into India 610
- Aryan civilization centre of 73 spread of 73 two modes of 117
- Aryan community inclusion of Śudras in 559 rival religious sects threatened the solidarity of 77 study of the Vedas incumbent upon 559 *vratyastoma* sacrifice performed for readmission into 404 four corner stones of 385
- Aryan life ideal of 568
- Aryan society Śrī Kṛṣṇa on functional division in 193 Śrī Kṛṣṇa introduced social liberalism in 193
- Asadbhāva* 91
- Asaga his *Pandava Purana* 110
- Asahāya his commentary on *Narada Smṛti* 594 the earliest commentator on works of law 365
- Asatya* 289
- Asauca* 413
- Āścarya cudamani* (see *Saktubhadra*) claimed as the oldest South Indian play 98
- Āsedha* 443
- Asita Devala theory on elements propounded by 91
- Asmaratha his *Kalpa* 5
- Āsmarathya 5
- Āsmarohana* symbolizes marriage as a permanent union 411
- Asoka autonomous tribes included in the dominions of 483 Bhabhru edict of 487 Buddhism as the personal faith of 489 edicts on enunciation of tolerance and comprehension 508 his edict on *sanghabheda* 487 488 gave the status of conventional law to the resolutions of the *sanghas* 587 humanitarian reforms of 489 Kharosthi versions of rock edicts of Iranian influence on 613 his lavish patronage of the *sangha* 489 reference to the Greeks in his edicts 616 reign of State in its relation to religion in 487 his religious policy 489 religious toleration after 490 92 set his personal example for the moral and material well being of the people 472 social and religious policy of 487 90 system of espionage under 472 his Twelfth Rock Edict on religious tolerance 489 Third Buddhist Council convoked by 487 three acts of on Buddhist church 487
- Asokan inscriptions similarity of the preambles of Achaemenian inscriptions with 613
- Āśokarama 488
- Asprha* 566
- Āśrama(s)* 559 63 as educational institution in the Vedic period 644 current meaning of 592 ethical principles underlying 295 four social structure composed of 571 fourfold division of individual life into 558 as a means of attaining higher morality 333 in relation to *varna* 330 rules of 93 as stages in life 330 term underwent a development in meaning 592
- Āśrama dharma* 291 scheme of 293 specific stages of 293 as stages in life 293
- Assamese translation of the *Ramayana* into 100 translation of the *Mahabharata* into 111
- Assamese literature Śankara Deva real founder of 101 Vaiṣṇava period of 101
- Astanga yoga* 91 213
- Astavakra Gīta* attaining freedom from *samsāra* theme of 218
- Āstika darśanas* rise and growth of 206
- Asuri sampad* 156 175
- Āivaghosa influence of the *Ramāyana* on 95
- Āśvalāyana 571
- Āśvalāyana Grhya Sūtra* 3 4 6 53
- Āśvalāyana Śrauta Sūtra* 3 5

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Āśvamedha* the ceremony of imperial consecration 466
- Āśvatthāman* his raid of the Paṇḍava camp 87
- Āśvins* growth of mythological legends about 226 origin of the concept of 226
- Ātharva Veda* 557 on elective nature of kingship in ancient India 420 glimpses into the secular life in 567 meaning of *upanayana* in 403 on popular assemblies 507 prayer for unity of mind in 573 reference to *sabha* made in 434
- Atipatakas* 386 suicide as a penance for 287
- Ātmabodha* on allegorical significance of the *Ramayana* 28
- Ātmaguṇas* 10 566
- Ātmanāna* 289 332
- Ātman* 91 as *ksetrajña* 90
- Ātma iattva* 205
- Ātma yajna* as the means of realizing Brahman 78 as superior to *paśu yajna* 78
- Ātri* 572
- Augustus temple of at Muziris 620
- Aupajanghani 5
- Aurangzeb prohibited the observance of *sati* 632 prohibited the use of intoxicating liquors 634
- Aurobindo (Sri) 166
- Auśanasa Dharma Sutra* on the duties of the four castes 307
- Austin his conception of law 418 father of analytical jurisprudence 516
- Avadhuta Gita* necessity of overcoming the sex impulse emphasized in 219
- Avāsa* democratic community life of 586 principal religious ceremony of 587 rules for the staking out of 585 system of tutorship of 583
- Avatara(s)* 151 154 concept of 236 the divine purpose of 143 notion of 84 ten doctrine of 84
- Avdyā* 91 641
- Avyakta* 90
- Avyakta upasana* 151
- Āyamukha* seven sources of income 665
- Āyasarīra* seven convenient centres of collection 665
- Ayodhya 32 the capital its various attractions 33 Rama's coronation at 42
- Āyur Veda 4 11 branches of 12
- Azhakattu Padmanabha Kurup his *Rama candra vilasam* in Malayalam 103
- Bactria Greek chiefs of their frequent incursions into India 616
- Bactrian Greeks impact of on Indian literature 616
- Badaūni his criticism of Akbar's social reforms 628
- Bala* 91
- Bala kṛiḍa* (see *Viśvarūpa*) as a veritable mine of historical facts 365
- Balarama Dasa his *Oriya Ramayana* 104
- Bala Ramayana* (see *Rajasekhara*) story of the *Ramayana* up to Rama's coronation loosely dramatized in 97
- Bali art represents *Mahabharata* episodes 130
- Ballala Sena his *Adbhuta sāgara* 368 69 his *Dana sāgara* 251 his *Dana-sāgara* on the list of Upapuranas 272
- Bana his *Harsacarita* 652 his *Harsacarita* reference to the tying of the tuft of hair by widows in 598 his reference to *Vayu Purana* 254
- Banaras nerve centre of Indian culture 373 sacking of its impact on India's cultural activities 374
- Baudhayana on *raja dharma* 486 on the wise man's attitude to death 411
- Baudhayana Dharma Sutra* 3 304 contents and nature of 304 ethico-religious ideals mentioned in 10 on the transcendental nature of *dharma* 496
- Beings two types of *daiva* and *asura* 170
- Bengali earliest *Mahabharata* in 111 most popular *Mahabharata* in composed by Kāśirama Dasa 111 versions of the *Ramayana* in 101
- Bentham his conception of law as ensuring the maximum of happiness 418 his observations on legal fiction 427
- Beveridge Report 414
- Bhagavad Gita* (also see *Gītā*) 91 92 234 320 action and devotion in 185 alleged inconsistencies in 137 alleged influence of the New Testament on 138 attainment of true knowledge emphasized in 155 avoidance of all avoidable conflict ideal aimed at in 155 characteristics of the supreme Deity of 170 its classical commentators 195 composite nature of 137 the concept of *yajna* in 149 contradictions and inconsistencies in due to sectarian interpolations 138 Deussen's views on 146 didactic matter contained in 54 different positions stated in 158 on disputes relating to the ultimate issue of philosophy 151 distinguishing feature and noteworthy achievement of 153 its diverse sources 153 doctrine of manifestation in 166 doctrine of Divine Incarnation in 163 its early commentaries 195 203 effectively combats the unorthodox views of the Carvakas 206 essence of in the view of Sri Ramakrishna 158 established code of conduct its place in 150 eulogization of in the *Gita mahatmya* 205 explained from different points of view 158 Freewill versus Determinism in 140 142 144 *Gita* composed in imitation of 212 on the goal of life 152 gradation of growth of not referred to in the text 137 great spiritual preceptors sought the sanction of 212 harmonized teachings of 206 its harmonizing attitude 158

INDEX

Bhagavad Gita—Continued

harmony of faiths and philosophies in 163 164 on harmony of the four *yogas* as leading to freedom 191 highest experience of Hindu mind contained in 166 highest human goal according to 171 its history and character a general review 135 57 hypothesis of progressive elaboration in 137 38 imitations of and later Gita literature 204 19 implicit unity amidst apparent diversity emphasized by 150 on the incarnation of the Supreme Spirit at the time of crisis 581 and Kāpila Sāṃkhya 185 87 laid emphasis on *loka saṃgraha* 152 later interpolation in R. Otto's views on 145 life of Karma yoga emphasized by 152 Madhusudana Sarasvati's commentary on 201 on man as the architect of his own *sampad* 154 metaphysics and theology of 171 as most popular Hindu scripture 180 *naiṣkarmya* is the central teaching of 158 orthodox Vedānta commentators of their views 138 the perfect man according to 165 philosophical synthesis presented in 153 its place in Hindu religious literature 166 place of true knowledge in 150 portrayal of the all-embracing Dītya one of the principal features of 169 pre-eminence of 207 its present-day message 157 its present form 153 principal features of 169 problems of 136 37 problem of freedom of the will in 144 problem of Free Will versus Determinism adumbrated in 145 and problems of philosophy 151 prominence given to the Sāṃkhya system in 185 acclaimed as the quintessence of the *Mahābhārata* 136 reconciles conflicting views of the *astika darśanas* 206 reduces the differences between Jñāna yoga and Karma yoga 154 religion of 166 179 religious and philosophical views expounded in 77 represents a unique stage in the development of Indian culture 195 sacrifices according to 181 on *saguna upasana* 149 Sāṃkhya metaphysics in 142 Śaṅkarācārya's *bhāṣya* on 195 198 Śaṅkara's commentary on regarding *saṃnyasa* 159 *śaranagati* as an outstanding topic in 164 its spirit of synthesis 180 spirit of tolerance emphasized in 155 Śrīdhara Svāmī's *bhāṣya* on 202 synthesis of action and knowledge in 181 85 its synthetic character 180 194 synthetic philosophic compromise in 156 teachings of 158 165 teachings of the Upanisads epitomized in 165 three *yogas* taught by 94 threefold division of 147 trine unity advocated in 148 understanding, allegiance to the codes and *dharma caryas* emphasized by 155 unhindered prerogative of the Self in 144 45 unique teaching about *karma* in 158 is unitary

Bhagavad Gita—Continued

teaching present in? 138 142 unity of Godhead emphasized by 149 unity and identity of essence advocated in 151 unorthodox views of the Carvakas effectively combatted by 206 Vaiṣṇava element in 91 various descriptions of ultimate Reality found in 187 on Vasudeva 85 Vedic sacrifices not much esteemed in 181 the world view presented in 166
Bhagavanta bhaskara an encyclopaedic work on *dharma* 376
Bhagavatas 89 90 doctrine preached by 77 Kṛṣṇa Veda as the Holy Writ of 72 vein of mysticism in 88
Bhagavata Purāna 211 290 on the assimilation of non-Aryans 612 date of its composition 259 its early and late editions 259 exclusively belongs to the Bhagavata Vaiṣṇavas 258 on the five characteristics of a secondary *purāna* 275 Gītas found in 212 13 as a minor śākta Upapurāṇa 281 myths and legends of the *Viṣṇu Purāna* repeated in 259 ten characteristics of a Mahāpurāṇa named in 252 three different lists of incarnation of Viṣṇu mentioned in 259 twelve *skandhas* of 258
Bhāgavata Vaiṣṇavas Bhāgavata Purāna belongs exclusively to 258 theological and philosophical doctrines of 258
Bhāgavatī Saṃhita deals with the duties of the castes 259
Bhakti 171
Bhakti 72 94 cult its place in self purification 298 as an effective means of mental purification 290 as the means of attaining ultimate bliss 290
Bhakti cult revival of in different parts of India 100 role of in breaking the barrier between the native and the outsider 612 saints of their far-reaching socio-religious reforms 636 on the spiritual equality of all devotees 320
Bhakti yoga 147
Bhālana called the father of *akhyānas* in Gujarati 112 his *Rāma viraṇa* 101
Bhandarkar Oriental Research Institute its Critical Edition of the *Mahābhārata* 53
Bhaṭṭadvaja 48
Bharaḍvaja Gṛhya Sūtra on the significance of *samavartana* 408
Bharata birth of 96 his march to forest 34
Bharata 51 53 60 its growth into an encyclopaedia of Indian knowledge 52 sanctity attained by 54 its story comprehensive nature of 51
Bharata Dharma gospel of 116
Bharata jana antiquity of 51
Bharata savitṛi (see Bhīma Dhivara) on the nature of *dharma* 333 whole story of the *Mahābhārata* in Oriya given in 114
Bharatavarṣa unification of 73
Bharata war its cosmic background 69

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Bhargava family added many episodes to the *Ramayana* 29 their influence on the *Mahābhārata* 62 their influence on the *Ramayana* 23
- Bhartr̥yajna his lost commentary on Manu 366
- Bharuci his lost commentary on Manu 366
- Bhasa dramatization of the *Ramayana* by 97 six *Mahābhārata* plays ascribed to 107
- Bhaskara Kavi his *Unmatta Raghava* 98
- Bhaskara Ramayana* authors of 105
- Bhaṭṭa Bhīma his *Ravanarjuniya* 97
- Bhaṭṭa Iakṣmidhara his *Kṛtya kalpataru* 374
- Bhattachāryana his *Venī saṁhara* 108
- Bhaṭṭi his *Ravana vadha* 96
- Bhaṭṭi kavya its popularity outside India 96
- Bhaṭṭojī Dīkṣita his *Siddhanta kaumudī* 605
- Bhavabhūti his *Mahavira carita* a departure from the traditional views of the *Ramayana* 121 his two plays dealing with the Rāma story 97 his *Uttara Rāma carita* 97
- Bhavadeva Bhaṭṭa his *Daśaharma paddhati* 367 five categories of sins arranged by 385 his *Prayaścitta prakaraṇa* 367 381 on secret penances 388 his *Tautatita mata tilaka* 367 his other works 368
- Bhavartha Ramayana* (see Ekaṇātha) 104
- Bhaviṣya Purāṇa* account of the Magi in 613
- Tantric elements in 263 topics dealt with in 263
- Bhaviṣyottara Purāṇa* 263 an independent Upapurāṇa 280 as a work on *vratas* 285
- Bhikṣu 582
- Bhikṣu Gīta* contains Śrī Kṛṣṇa's teachings to Uddhava 212
- Bhikṣu Sūtras* 5
- Bhīma incarnation of Vayu 69
- Bhīma Dhīvara his *Bhārata savitṛi* and *Kaṇa tapāśa* in Oriyā 114
- Bhīmā his *Svapna Daśanana* 98
- Bhīṣma 85 93 156 his exposition of *dharma* 67 as symbol of tradition 69
- Bhīṣmaparvan* 54 identification of Viṣṇu with Vāsudeva in 84 various forms of *ṛite* mentioned in 88
- Bhojā King *Ramayana campu* ascribed to 97
- Bholanath Das his *Sitā harana kāvya* 101
- Bhṛgu(s) 230 their special interest in *dharma* and *mṛti* 62
- Bhṛta *yajña* 293 294 ethics of 295
- Bibhisana 41 his adherence to the principles of *dharma* 40
- Budwood Sir George on village communities in India 423
- Bodhisattva Rāma is regarded as 99
- Bodhya Gītā* on persons attaining bliss examples given in 209
- Bower Manuscript Sanskrit writers on medicine mentioned in 12
- Bracton on excommunication 417
- Bradley 518
- Brahma asked Valmīki to compile the *Ramayana* 19 created from Brahman 90 as creator of the universe 83 epithets of 84 function of creation of the universe represented by 83 has his own heaven 83 his seven mind born sons 84 sprung from the golden egg 89 sprung from the lotus in the naval of Viṣṇu 84 worship of 81
- Brahma* and *ksatra* equal importance of 485
- Brahmabhūta* becoming one with Brahman 191
- Brahmacarin(s)* chastity and continence associated with 560 four kinds of 307 as the mind born sons of Brahma 318 *naṣṭhika* 563 their severe life of discipline 568
- Brahmacārya* as the period of study and discipline 293 its place in the scheme of Indian education 567 as the practice of chastity 530
- Brahma Gīta* 215 218
- Brahma jnana* 160
- Brahmaloka heaven of Brahma 83
- Brahman characteristics of 89 conception of in the *Bhagavad Gīta* 187 and Brahma distinction between 83 personal and impersonal aspects of 187 relation between Truth and 88 renunciation as a means for entering into the bliss of 572 *samskara* as a means of realizing 393 state of as the highest goal 91 two aspects of 90 the universe as emanating from 75 Vedantic doctrine of 92
- Brahmana(s)* 85 94 317 attempt made by to popularize their ideas and beliefs amongst heretical sects 250 *bahusrūta* 4 characteristics of 292 Cūṭpāvan their surnames as exogamous clan names 544 their contribution to Sanskrit learning 549 as custodians of the intellectual and spiritual heritage 317 division of into two classes priests and politicians 435 emergence of as a privileged class in the State 486 exalted position of 93 four stages ordained for 562 as a functional name 324 ideal characteristics of 558 their influence on the Vedic kings 467 Nampūtiri family institution among 541 Nampūtiri their peculiar marriage customs 541 2 orthodox did not accept the composite *dharma* professed by the Purāṇas 250 their pre-eminence stressed in the *Mahābhārata* 61 position of in relation to other castes 547 requisite qualities of 75 some took to fighting 558 specific duties of 292 sub caste among 547 *Viṣṇu Purāṇa* on the ideals of 292
- Brahmana* bards assimilation of indigenous lore by 83
- Brahmana Gīta* colloquy in 207
- Brahmanas* (lit.) 5 beginnings of the epic poetry in 72 development of classical

INDEX

Brahmanas (lit)—Continued

- Sanskrit in 3 as a link in the development of the epic literature 15 mythological concepts in the period of 231 period emergence of territorial State in 465 sacrifice raised to the position of the omnipotent world principle in 231 works debts and obligations of an individual mentioned in 557
- Brahmana sarvasva* (see Halāyudha) a work on Vedic exegesis commonly used in the ceremonies 569
- Brahmanical doctrines revolt against 248
- Brahmanical ideas impact of casteless for eigners on 249 orthodox conformity to disturbed by the various sects and systems of religion 249 systems antagonistic to 247
- Brahmanic legends antiquity of 231
- Brahmanism 72 opponents of 248 political supremacy of the non Ksatriyas created troubles for 249
- Brahma Purana* 291 compilation of by the Vaiṣṇavas of Orissa 263 on the ideals of a Brahmana 292 praise of the shrines and holy places in Orissa in 262 63
- Brahmanda Purāna* smacks of Vaiṣṇavism 255 verses ascribed to 255
- Brahma vaivarta Purana* characteristics of a Mahapurana named in 252 on the five characteristics of a secondary *purana* 275 worship of Kṛṣṇa and Rādhā preached in 263
- Brahmavadin(s)* 305 565 high Vedic knowledge acquired by necessitated special names 605 many led married life 604 spiritual well being as the ideal of their life 602
- Brahmavarcas* 568
- Brahmavidyā* 568
- Brahma yajna* ethics of sharing of one's knowledge with others 294
- Brahmī Samhitā* consists of four separate *samhitās* 259
- Brahmī sthiti* attainment of aim of life according to the *Gīta* 171
- Brahmic state one's being in Brahman 184
- Brandes his views on Malay *Ramayana* 123
- Brhadaranyaka Upaniṣad* 232 on *dharma* as identical with truth 516 on the duties of the *vanaprastha* 560 on the ethical conception of law 516 forms of composition mentioned in 3 lofty ideal of a wife delineated in 604 on the majesty of law 414 on *nausthika brahmachārins* 644 on philosophical conference invited by Janaka 645 on supremacy of *dharma* over the king 467
- Brhaddevata* collection of legends in 7 early phase of classical Sanskrit in 3 reference to *itihasa* in 6 teachers quoted in 5 twenty seven women seers mentioned in 603

- Brhaddharma Purana* list of eighteen *Upa purānas* given in 272 on the practice of *satī* 597 on the popular rites and festivals of Bengal 285
- Brhan nārādīya Purana* entirely incorporated in the *Naradīya Purana* 262 as a *Pancharatra* work with Bhagavata inclination 279 tolerant of Śaivism 279
- Brhaspati on the re marriage of widows 599
- judicial proceedings as consisting of four different stages according to 444
- Brhaspati Smṛti* as reconstructed by K. V. Rangaswami Aiyangar 309
- Buckle his views on the relation between the *Ramayana* and the *Dāśaratha Jātaka* 20
- Buddha (the) 582 as *cakravartin* 525 called a *nastika* in the *Ramayana* 89 followers of 584 a new order of ascetics founded by 564 teachings of and *dharma* 424
- Buddhaghosa on Kambojas 615
- Buddhi* 91 as revealing the cosmic principle 198
- Buddhism ancient monastic life and organization in 586 88 early stressed cultural development for every monk 588 decline of as a religion 592 how its idea of asceticism differ from Manu's code 564 influence of upon Neo Vedantism 592 non interference of with Hindu law and usages 440 order of ascetics made popular by 564 proclaimed as the State religion of Tibet 590 rise of vocational and technical education at the time of 650 Tāntrika literature on preserved in Tibetan translation 652 Yavanas converted to 617
- Buddhist(s) *avasas* and *viharas* of 584 86 monastic culture of 588 89 extreme catholicity and receptiveness of 589 monastic universities of 589 91 well organized system of coenobitical life evolved by 591
- Buddhist circles Sanskrit writers on medicine known to 12
- Buddhist literature influence of the *Mahābhārata* on 109 influence of the *Ramayana* on 99
- Buddhist monachism development of 589
- Buddhist monasteries functional side of description of the Chinese pilgrims 589 reference to in Buddhist scriptures 589 their strong bias for intellectual culture 588 training of the newly ordained monks at 648
- Buddhist monasticism antiquity of 592
- Buddhist monks the institution of coenobium developed by 584
- Buddhist period important political development during rise of bureaucracy 468 king's prerogatives during the 468 local government in dominated by the king's central administration 469 witnessed the rise of the two pillars of centralized administration permanent revenue and standing army 469

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Buddhist religion monasticism flourished most in 591
- Buddhist Sangha distinguishing feature of 586 life and organization of 587
- Buddhist texts early account of good kings in 469 70 on various categories of *amac chas* 469
- Buhler 336 on *dharma* as justice 333
- Burmese law books influence of the code of Manu on 440
- Caitanya (Śrī) 581 his liberal views on caste 637
- Cakra* as the symbol of sovereignty 525
- Cakravartin* doctrine of 525
- Cālukya 98 Imperial their system of administration 477 478
- Cambodia *Mahabharata* recited in the temples of 71
- Camundi 238
- Candēśvara his *Rajamūratnakara* 371
- Candī mangala* on rigidity of child marriage 627
- Candī Purana* as a minor śakta Upapurāna 281
- Candragupta Maurya rise of and liberation of India from the foreign yoke 615
- Candravati poetess her Bengali *Ramayana* 101
- Candrayana* observance of as a *prayaścitta* 388
- Caraka 91 Chinese Buddhist tradition about 12 was the physician of Kaniska 12
- Caraka Samhita* 11 on the characteristics of the Gandhārva type of men 8
- Caranavyuha parihāṣṭa Sūtra* Upavedas mentioned in 4
- Carita Ramayana* Javanese authors of 96
- Carvaka 89 206
- Castana as the founder of Scythian dynasty in India 621
- Caste(s) 350 as a dividing factor 549 economic aspect of 552 as endogamous social groups 544 545 as an extension of the family 544 as a factor in self preservation 550 functions of 549 grouped in a hierarchy 547 institution of 544 51 mixed 327 origin of 323 as professional groups 519 as a regional unit 546 solidarity of among converts from Hinduism 551 as a trade guild 546 untouchable in different parts of India 548
- Caste system future of 552 53 does not affect the growth of the inner spirit of man 320 condemnation of by the social reformers 636
- Caturanta* conception of in the scheme of Kauṭilya's imperial nationalism 525 526
- Caturvarga cintamani* (see Hemadri) an authoritative work on *dharma* 377
- Cetana* conception of in Samkhya metaphysics 142
- Chalita Rama* 38
- Chandah Sūtra* on classical Sanskrit metres 13
- Chandogya Upaniṣad* 6 85 231 on duties of a student 567 on duties of the householder 560 serpent lore as a subject of study mentioned in 11 subjects of study mentioned in 4
- Chandra Jha his Maithili version of the *Ramayana* 102
- Charpentier J on the diverse sources of the *Bhagavad Gita* 153
- Chatterjee Suniti Kumar harmony of contrasts as the fundamental trait of Indian culture in the view of 626
- Chera kings of Travancore their tolerance of the Eastern Church 507
- Chinese Jatakas translated into 99
- Cicero his conception of justice 416
- Cidambara his *Raghava Pandava Yadvaya* 97
- Cintamani Tripathi his Hindi *Ramayana* 102
- Citrabandha Ramayana* (see Venkatesvara) a work written in *citrabandha* style 96
- Citrangada* a play in Bengali based on the *Mahabharata* 111
- Citraśikhandins 92
- Citta vitti virodha* as a means by which the individual merges with the universal 644
- Clans as exogamous units 545 institution of 544 51
- Coenobium Buddhist monks developed the institution of 584 influence of climate on 584 origin of 583 84
- Cola(s) their system of administration 479
- Cola records on the maintenance of census and survey 666
- Colebrooke 379 on the technical names for the different categories of courts in Hindu law 440
- Criminal law administration of object of punishment always kept in view in 447 its doctrine of equality 446 47 four kinds of punishment in according to Yajñavalkya 447
- Cudakarana* age of according to the Gṛhya Sūtras 401 dedicative purpose of the ceremony anthropologists' view on 401
- Cyrus his conquest of Gandhara 612
- Dadū his condemnation of caste system 637
- Dahlmann 153 synthetic theory of the *Mahabharata* expounded by 59
- Dāru sampad* 175
- Daksa episode of 86
- Dalapati his *Nṛsimha prasada* 378
- Dama* 288
- Damayanti svayamvara* (see Raghunātha Paṇḍita) a charming poetical work in Marathi based on the *Mahabharata* 114
- Damodara Mahāmiśra his *Gaṅga jala* 373
- Damodaramiśra his *Hanūman naṭaka* 98
- Dāna* 288 ethics of 290 four types of 291 as an aspect of *dharma* 290 promotes peace and harmony in society 291 stories about the greatness of 290
- Dana sāgara* (see Ballala Sena) 261 a standard work on gifts 369

INDEX

- Danda* doctrine of 511 14 conception of in Hindu political thought 513 elastic nature of the term 515 Manu's interpretation of 513 as a means of protecting *dharma* 349 as a two edged sword 514
- Danda dhara* the king as 517
- Dandaniti* 655 as an important branch of study mentioned by Kauṭilya 13 science of *danda* 513 science of polity 452
- Danda viveka* (see Varddhamaṇa Miśra) a work on criminal law 372
- Darius his empire extent of 612
- Darśa a Vedic sacrifice 587
- Darśana(s)* 90 *astika* and *nastika* systems of growth of 206
- Das A C his disputation of the theory that the Aryans came to India as invaders 422 on the role of Sage Priest as the real king maker in ancient India 420 on the stability of the king on the throne 421
- Daśakarma paddhati* (see Bhavadeva Bhaṭṭa) on the tenfold rites of the Sama Vedins of Bengal 367
- Daśaratha 32 38 ideal married life symbolized by 43 as the king of Ayodhya 16
- Daśaratha Jataka* 18 based on earlier version of Rama story 19 Buddhist tenet of non-injury emphasized in 20 as a source of the *Ramāyana* 17 presents the story of the *Ramāyana* in a distorted form 99
- Daśarupaka* (see Dhanika) 98
- Daśavatara temple platform of decorated with events from the *Ramayana* 115
- Datta Michael Madhusudan his *Megha nada vadha kāvya* 101
- Dattātreyā as an *avatara* of Viṣṇu 219
- Daya as a virtue 288
- Dayabhāga* paramount authority in Bengal in matters of succession and inheritance 368
- Daya rahasya* (see Ramanatha Vidyavācaspati) 370 a post Raghunandana work on inheritance 371
- Delang* performer of the Javanese shadow plays 131
- Demosthenes obligatory nature of law four reasons adduced by 416
- Deva(s)* as divine powers 318
- Devadās* dancing girls engaged for temple services in ancient India 600 life and character of Marco Polo's account 600
- Devahūtī mother of Kapila 606
- Devaki 85
- Devala 93
- Devanātha his *Smṛti kaumudī* 372
- Devanna Bhaṭṭa his *Smṛti candrika* 378
- Deva Raya II 630 declared money transactions at marriage as a legal offence 631
- Devasena Kārttikeya married 87
- Deva yajña* performance of as a daily sacrifice 295
- Devendra his commentary on the *Uttaraṅgha yana* 100
- Devī Bhagavata* 238 author of a Smṛta Śakta Brahmana of Bengal 281 on *bhakti* as a means of realizing the Devī 281 infused with Śakta ideas 281
- Devī Gīta* dialogue between Devī Parvatī and Himavat in 213 location of the temples dedicated to Devī Parvatī mentioned in 214 Vedic and Tantric worship of Devī Parvatī mentioned in 214
- Devī mahatmya* 238 insertion of forming a part of the *Mārkaṇḍeya Purāṇa* 256
- Devī Purāṇa* different incarnation of Devī recorded in 280 as the most important of the Śakta Upapurāṇas 280
- Deussen his views on the *Bhagavad Gīta* 146
- Dhāmas path to heaven protected by 82
- Dhananjaya his *Raghava Paṇḍavīya* 97
- Dhaneśvara his *Saṭraṅgīya mahatmya* 100
- Dhanika his commentary on the *Daśarupaka* 98
- Dharma* 44 71 aspects of in the *Mahabhārata* 67 as the basis of advancement 557 as the basis of edification and happiness 310 as the basis of Hindu law 496 as the basis of marriage 572 as the basis of moral and ethical life 355 as co extensive with life 566 572 as the combination of law ethics and morality 424 conception of in the *Manu Samhitā* 341 concept of treated law as a part of religion 425 contribution of to the preservation progress and welfare of human society 287 is the creation of the State 516 decline of 84 *dāna* as an aspect of 290 doctrine of 515 as duty 518 19 five different sources of according to Manu 425 as the great task master 507 ideal of upheld by Vālmīki 50 its ideal and influence in shaping men's lives 39 as identical with *satya* 342 impact of foreign rule on 379 as indicating the Hindu way of life 314 as justice 518 king as the guarantor of according to Manu 349 as law 435 516 meaning of 93 as a mode of individual and social life 314 moral and ethical basis of 355 nature of according to the Dharma Sūtras 301 nature of according to Manu 344 obeyed on account of the coercive might of the State 516 obligatory character of 343 occupies the premier place in the scheme of life 287 observance of 46 in popular form 58 as a positive concept 343 as positive law 517 purpose of 345 in relation to *mokṣa* 301 in relation to the *puruṣārthas* 342 in relation to the State 506 as righteousness 333 role of in a Hindu marriage 410 royal protectors of 375 *satya* as an aspect of 289 as the sense of justice 511 Self realization and Soul emancipation as the goal of 343 sources and proof of as four according to Manu 344 three main pillars of 381 three propositions of 515 as transcending social or ritual observances 496 uniqueness of the con

- Dharma—Continued*
 ception of 343 use of the word in Buddhist sacred books 424 various meanings of 424 Vedas as the main source of 425 waning strength and stability of in the four *yugas* 287 wider concept of 67
- Dharma cakra* is a symbol of Buddhist faith 616
- Dharmacaryas* 155
- Dharma* law its Vedic origin 425
- Dharma ratna* (see *Jimutavahana*) 368
- Dharma śāstras* 4 301 308 10 on banking rules 663 comparatively late remarriage of widows permitted by 578 contents of 302 on different rates of interest 663 existence of a traditional literature on 5 general theme of 310 position of royal ordinance not recognized by 431 *raja dharmā* forms a legitimate part of 348 respect for women stressed in 577 as text books on law 439
- Dharma śāstra* literature early period of came to a close with Kumarila Bhatta 364 *Kṛtya kalpataru* as the main source of inspiration for 374 theory of *karma vipaka* in 384
- Dharma Sūtras* 301 11 564 authority of recognized by Patanjali 428 chronology of still an unsettled question 302 conception of social responsibilities in 4 contained an outline of the branches of the king's revenue 469 contents of 302 ethical ideals of man propounded in 10 extant deal with penance 381 on industrial guilds 660 king's functions as described in 468 lay down a high standard for the duties of kings 469 minor writers of 308 recognized the validity of guild laws and customs 660 teacher quoted in 5 on usury 662
- Dharma Vairasvata Yama* as 82
- Dharma vyadha* as a worthy teacher of philosophy 94
- Dharma yuddha* code of war called set forth by Manu 349
- Dhrtarastra* 52 incarnation of Hamsa 69 as the symbol of ego centric Self 69
- Dhṛti* as an aspect of *ksama* 288
- Dig gajas* guardians of the quarters 83
- Dīgha Nīkāya* on the origin of kingship 499
- Digvijaya* concept of 527
- Dīpa* as an ideal king 501
- Dinī* Ilahi condemned the practice of *sati* 632
- Dīpakalikā* (see *Śulapani*) 386
- Dipankara* (Śrījñāna) probably a Bengalee deification of by the Tibetans 590 reformed school of Buddhism in Tibet founded by 652
- Dīpaśāstra* on the Third Buddhist Council 488
- Divākara Prakāsa Bhatta* his Kashmiri *Ramayana* 103
- Divine Incarnation* doctrine of in the *Cīta* 163
- Dvayavadana* list of studies mentioned in 651
- Dowry system* as practised in the South 630 reforms introduced by Akbar against 630
- Draupadi* her *svayamvara* 52
- Dravidians* coming of into India 610 their impact on peninsular India 610 marriage custom among 540
- Dravidian civilization* influence of on India 530
- Durgabar* his *Gītī Ramayana* 100
- Durgavati prakāśa* a work on *dharma* sponsored by Rani Durgavati 375
- Duryodhana* incarnation of Pulastya 69
- Duryodhanara Raktanadī santarana* (see Radhanath Ray) a modern Oriya *kavya* based on the episodes of the *Mahābhārata* 115
- Dusanta* repudiated Śakuntala 96
- Dutāngada* (see *Subhata*) 98
- Dutt R C* his views on the influence of the epics on the life and civilization of the Indian nation 117
- Dvaita* as a system of Indian philosophy 151
- Dvāparayuga* duration of 237
- Dvaraka* Kṛṣṇa's association with 85
- Dvijās* meaning of as a sacramental rebirth 346
- Dvīpas* seven names of 266
- Ecclesiastical Polity* on the state of nature 509
- Economics* rural 656 660 importance of agriculture in 656
- Ekamra kṣetra* (Bhuvaneśvara) 284
- Ekamra Purāna* list of eighteen *Upa purānas* as given in 272 an Āgamic Pāsupata work 284 on praise of *Ekamra kṣetra* 283 84
- Ekanatha* his *Bhavartha Ramayana*, 103 104 Saint and earliest author of a Marathi *Rāmāyana* 103
- Ekantika* religion as the best form of Vaisnavism 92
- Ekavākyata* rule for reconciling the differences of conflicting texts 313
- Elāyana* (polity) 4
- Elloia* impartial patronage of by different religious sects 492
- Emile* on the natural goodness of things 512
- English case law* authority of derived from the Bench 427
- English law* growth of Equity in 441
- Epic(s)* age of 80 educative influence of 117 ethical standards and human destiny in 93 94 influence of on Indian art and sculpture 115 influence of on Indian life and culture 115 their influence on Indian life and literature 93 118 the origin of 14 16 perennial and dynamic appeal of 117 philosophic systems in 89 92 philosophy and mysticism in 88 89 stories of used for imparting wisdom and instruction to the younger generation 11, temples and

INDEX

Epic(s)—Continued

- rituals in 88 three sectarian gods presented in 81 two moods of the Aryan civilization represented in 117 various forms of rituals described in 88 various forms of temples described in 88
- Epic pantheon 80 83 eight major gods of 81 three gods of 83 88
- Epic period religious beliefs and practices of 83
- Eravimman Thampi his *Nala caritam* and *Kicaka vadham* 113
- Frhuttaccan his *Adhyatma Ramayana* in Malayalam 113 his condensed version of the *Mahabharata* 113
- Fa Hien 586 his account of the Gupta empire 476 on religious toleration under the Guptas 490
- Family institution of 537 43
- Female divinities in Hindu mythology 237 38 influence of Dravidian folk religion on the rise of 237 rise of 237
- Fergusson his views on the origin and development of the *viharas* 585
- Friedmann on changing role of the State 414
- Canas*(s) 497 660 671 courts as administering laws of the Hindu republics 439 laws of called *Samaya* by Narada 439 laws of reference in the Hindu law books 438
- Ganagari as an ancient teacher of the Sūtra literature 5
- Ganapati 88
- Ganapatiya sect late origin of 284 two Upapuranas of 284
- Gandhara conquest of by Cyrus 612
- Gandhara art Buddhist images in 619 records intermingling of the Indian and Hellenistic culture 618 registers the union of Buddhist religion with Hellenistic art 619 its spread in Afghanistan under Kaniska 624
- Gandhari excellence of her character 606
- Gandharvas* 82 mythology relating to not much developed in the Vedic literature 229
- Gandharva tattva* (the lore of singing) 89
- Gandharva Veda as an Upaveda 4
- Gandhi his version of the *Gita* 166
- Ganeśas 89
- Ganeśa Gita* theme of 214
- Ganeśa Purana* stories glorifying Ganeśa in 285
- Gaṅga legends about the descent of 22 flourishing kingdoms in the valley of 73
- Gaṅgā jala* (see Damodara Mahāmyśra) the earliest Nibandha work in Assamese 373
- Gaṅgāvatarana* (see Nīlakantha Dīkṣita) 99
- Garbe R. his views on the *Bhagavad Gita* 137 139
- Garbhadhāna* importance of as a pre natal *samskāra* 396
- Gargi brightest example of a *brahmavadinī* 604 publicly challenged the wisdom of Yajñavalkya 645
- Gārgi Samhita* on the superiority of the Greeks in some branches of knowledge 618
- Garuḍa 83 his parting words to Rama 47
- Garuḍa Purana* a spurious Vaiṣṇava work of encyclopaedic character 262
- Gāthā naraśamsis* 15
- Gautama (see Buddha) as an opponent of Brāhmanism 248
- Gautama 5 on the duties of a woman to wards her husband 576 on the efficacy of purificatory rites 566 forty purificatory rites enumerated by 566 on the functions of a king 4 on the importance of treasury as the basis of the State 664 on penances 383 on various purificatory texts 386
- Gautama Dharma Sūtra* 3 389 earliest of the Dharma Sūtras 302 eight cardinal virtues mentioned in 10 eight kinds of marriage treated in 302 emergence of new branches of study in 4 on the Greeks 618 sanctifying texts mentioned in 9
- Gayatri japa* 330
- Ghora Angirasi as the preceptor of Kṛṣṇa Devakiputra 78 taught *purusa yajña vidyā* 78 79
- Ghoṣā 572
- Ghose Rash Behari his views on the sources of Hindu law 432
- Ghosh Girish Chandra his dramas based on the *Ramayana* 101 his plays based on the *Mahabharata* episodes 111
- Ghurye on the origin of the caste system 422
- Giradhara his Gujarati rendering of the *Ramayana* 101
- Gujarat rock inscriptions of Rudradaman at 471
- Gita* (also see *Bhagavad Gītā*) on the aim of incarnation 310 *agnāna* is the root cause of man's suffering according to 172 *asuri* tendency condemned by 171 attaining non attachment two ways to it prescribed by 183 attainment of *Brāhmi sthiti* aim of life according to 171 attitude of towards the final issue of philosophy 151 52 bondage according to 172 chief features and achievements of 152 53 conception of Brahman in 187 conception of duty according to 182 conception of *Īśvara* in 188 conception of *jñāna* in 175 conception of *lokasamgraha* in 179 conception of *mokṣa* in 171 conception of *nishkama karma* in 173 conception of *samskaras* in 182 devotional teachings of 166 different motives of work according to 173 discharge of one's duty is the highest law of life according to 171 desirelessness is the goal of spiritual life according to 181 doctrine of *vivarta* in

Gītā—Continued

- 168 duty aspect of sacrifices stressed in 182 emphasized knowledge as a means to liberation 181 essentially a book of devotion and conduct 168 excessive attachment to power and pleasures of life condemned by 171 great significance of devotion in 197 harmonious spiritual growth asserted by 173 ideal of *śraddha* in 175 its indebtedness to Manu 361 its ideal of work 174 ideal of *yoga* in 173 174 Karma *yoga* and *naiskarmya* in 159 160 knowledge and devotion in 189 190 Kṛṣṇa's teachings in 79 liberation according to 187 *lohasaṃgraha* in 179 its main teachings 168 173 meaning of devotion in 177 message of 194 metaphysics of 166 169 multiplicity of individual souls accepted by 186 multiplicity of the *jīvas* accepted by 167 nature of a *sthitaprajña* described in 184 *niskama karma* as taught in 174 177 188 opposition between *Prakṛti* and *Puruṣa* resolved in 166 on the origin of the caste 75 its peculiarity 188 perfection through resignation to God taught in 164 165 personal God is given more prominence than the impersonal in 188 portrayal of the supreme Deity in 169 170 *Puruṣottama* aspect in 168 Ramanuja's *bhāṣya* on 198 201 real nature of *mokṣa* according to 171 172 renunciation essence of 158 159 repression of senses discouraged by 176 sacrificial conception of work propounded in 173 social synthesis in 192 spiritual synthesis emphasized by 203 two stages of spiritual growth recognized by 178 synthesis of the four *yogas* in 190 92 its synthetic nature 177 synthetic outlook is the spirit of 190 synthetic philosophic compromise in 153 157 its teachings predominantly theistic 188 the third principle of *Puruṣottama* enunciated by 186 three categories of existence in 198 three *yogas* in 174 76 two distinct types of spiritual aspirants mentioned in 173 ultimate *samānvaya* taught in 147 149 a unique document 94 various prevalent ideals harmonized by 181 views on the origin and nature of 160 162
- Gītā bhāṣya* Śaṅkarācārya's introduction to 206
- Gītā* literature later 205 and imitations of the *Bhagavad Gītā* 204 19 probable origin of 205 6
- Gītā mahātmya* merits of the *Bhagavad Gītā* eulogized in 205
- Gītā rahasya* life of activism grounded upon knowledge and adoration of the Lord vindicated in 149
- Gītā* in the *Bhagavata Purāṇa* 212 13 composition of imitating the *Bhagavad Gītā* 212 four independent 204 in

Gītā—Continued

- the *Purāṇas* 211 12 sixteen in the *Mahābhārata* 204 207 thirty six 205 three different sources of 204 twenty in the *Purāṇas* 204
- Gītā Ramayana* (see *Durgabār*) 100
- Gobhila 571 on the outcastes 569
- Gobhila *Grhya Sūtra* 3 5 6 allied arts of acting and dancing in 8
- Gokul Nāth his Hindi translation of the *Mahābhārata* 112
- Go māha* 82
- Gondophernes his conversion to Śaivism 621
- Gopāl Kṛṣṇa (see *Kṛṣṇa*) 85
- Gopinātha Dāsa his *Tika Mahābhārata* in Oriyā 114
- Gotra 324 division of Aryans into 323 a the exogamous unit among Brahmanas 544 in relation to one's social grouping 326 specific name for a clan 326
- Govindarāja 24 his commentary on Manu 367 his *Manu vitti* 367 his two digests 367
- Govind Singh (Guru) prohibited smoking of tobacco by the Sikhs 638
- Govindapur inscription on the Magas 614
- Graha devatās* 238
- Gramā devatās* 238
- Gramanī* 466
- Greeks 615 619 Indianization of through religion 617 influence of upon Indian astronomy 618
- Gṛha devatā* installation of Jāta as 87
- Grhastha(s)* five daily sacrifices of 203 four kinds of 307 imperative duties of 560 main stay of the whole social structure 560
- Grhya Sūtras* 301 begin *samskāras* with *vr̥kha* 408 ceremonies as applicable to the domestic life are treated in 301 composition of individual names various suggestions given in 399 on *cūḍa karana* 401 eighteen bodily sacraments mentioned in 301 forty obligatory *samskāras* described in 301 on *sāṃskāras* 391
- Cite on Greek concept of law 415
- Guilds development of during the post Gupta period 675 mediaeval European compared with the Indian 671 and other corporate bodies 670 77 status and functions of 671 two types of 675 two types of industrial and professional 670 674 as a type of organization in ancient India 659
- Gujarati *akhyānas* in Bhalana called the father of 112 complete version of the *Ramayana* in 101 *Mahābhārata* in 112
- Gumplowicz his theory of *Naturprozess* 509
- Gunās* 161 184 185 how the *śogin* transcends 161 three 84 90
- Gunabhadra his *Uttara Purāṇa* 110
- Guptas (Imperial) administrative system of 475 extinction of republics during the period of 483 great improvement of the guild organization during the rule of

INDEX

- Guptas (Imperial)—*Continued*
 673 as great patrons of learning 476
 period of educational institutions in
 651 period of the Golden Age of ancient
 Indian history 475 period of marked by
 a great exaltation of monarchy 475
 Gupta emperors development of the *maha*
viharas into universities under the pat
 ronage of 589 their coin types 475
 Gupta empire Fa Hien's account of 476
 Gupta period earliest specimens of the in
 fluence of the epics on Indian art and
 sculpture date from 115 monasteries of
 652
- Guru *dakṣiṇā* students giving of proper fees
 to the preceptor 407
- Gurudvaras holy shrine of Sikhism 593
- Haladhara Dasa his Oriya version of the
Adhyātma Ramayana 105
- Halayudha his *Brahmana sarvasva* 369
- Halebid Hoysalesvara temple at basement
 depicts scenes from the *Ramayana* 116
- Hamsa 83
- Hamsa Gita the dictum *So ham* expounded
 in 212 ideal taught in 210 11
- Hammurabi's Code based upon divine inspi
 ration 416
- Hanumat 81 98 chief ally of Rama 19
 exploits of represented in the Panatara
 nas reliefs 129 Rāma's high regard for
 41 his unshaken devotion to Rāma 42
- Hanuman *nataka* Rama story in fourteen
 acts dealt with in 98
- Hara (see Śiva) 36
- Haradatta Sūri his *Raghava Naisadhiya* 97
- Hari Gita* 92
- Hari Hara origin of the notion 84
- Harihar Ratha his *Rāvana vadha* in Oriya
 105
- Harihara Vipra his *Babrubahanar Yuddha*
 111
- Harinathopādhyāya his *Smṛti sara* 371
- Hariscandra historical basis of the legends
 about 281 his story in the *Markandeya*
Purana 257
- Harisena his *Kātha kośa* 100
- Hārta 5 date of 305 on penance as means
 of removing sins 382 on *res judicata*
 444 on rules of procedure 445, two
 groups of *sahskāras* defined by 566
- Harita Dharma Sūtra 304 contents and
 nature of 304
- Hārta Gītā rules of conduct for the *sannyā*
sins contained in 210
- Hārta *Samhitā* 278
- Hārta *Smṛti* on two classes of women stu
 dents 654
- Harvaṁśa 87 81 Jaina version of the
Mahabharata termed as 109 its origin
 and character 55 reading of as a penance
 385 reference to Gopala Kṛṣṇa in 85
 three sub *parvans* of 54
- Harvaṁśaparvan 54
- Harsacarita (see Bana) on ancient forest
 universities 494 description of the
 forest hermitages in 652 on trying of
 the tuft of hair by the widows 598
- Harsavardhana (King) his grand assembly
 572 his system of administration 476
 his toleration of Buddhism 490
- Hastimalla his *Vikranta Kaurava* 108
- Haṭha yoga *Kapāla Gita* deals mainly with
 215
- Hathigumpha Inscription on Prince Khara
 vela 569
- Havell his views on the influence of the
 epics on Indian life and culture 115
- Hegel his conception of law 418
- Heliodoros his conversion to the Bhagavata
 faith 617
- Hellenistic culture intermingling of with
 the Indian in Gandhara art 618
- Hemacandra his works dealing with the
Rama story 100
- Hemādri 378 his *Caturvarga cintamani* 377
- Hemaśringa gūri (Ba Puon) Rama bas reliefs
 in the temple of 119
- Hertel his views on the origin of the epics
 14
- Hidimbavadha translated into Javanese 71
- Hikayat Seri Ram in Malay based on Java
 nese texts of the *Ramayana* 122
- Hill S C on caste system 351
- Himalayas Rāma's banishment to 17
- Himavat 213
- Hindi abridged version of the *Mahabharata*
 in 112 works dealing with the Rama
 story in 102
- Hindi literature beginning of Rama poetry
 in 102
- Hindu(s) account of foreign travellers on
 the institution of monogamy among
 629 ancient importance of the Puranas
 as the history of religion and culture
 of 270 *antyeṣṭi* as the last sacrament in
 the life of 411 concept of political
yajñas of 526 custom of *satī* prevailed
 among a large section of 632 death
 and disposal of the dead by fifteen
 sacraments connected with 412 13 dis
 posal of the dead by cremation treated
 as a sacrifice by 412 economic ideas of
 655 69 followed Manu's injunction on
 the age of a bride 630 influence of the
 epics and the Purānas on the life of
 269 monastic institutions of 592 non
 Indian origin of the word 314 political
 philosophy of conception of gradation
 of rulers in 526 polygamy among 629
 their attitude to life as an intricate art
 413 their deep sense of tolerance and
 accommodation result of truths taught
 in the Purānas 269 theory of sovereignty
 of 525 whole life of looked upon as a
 continuous sacrifice 412
- Hindu community *varna* organization
 served as the steel frame for the preser
 vation of 351

- Hindu culture Vedas as the repositories of 301
- Hindu India caste system in two useful clues to the origin of 323 caste system in a unique and puzzling institution 323
- Hinduism 314 classical does not encourage premature retirement 408 cross currents of diverse cultures their impact on 612 development of *śikha* as a universal symbol of 402 distinctive features of 239 Gods forming the trinity of 235 popular mythology of 238 39 procreation looked upon in a socio ethical context in 396 strength and weakness of 239 transformation of classical Sanskrit as the sacred language of 616 true spirit of 239 Vedantic Renaissance in 592
- Hindu judicial system 434 48 no civil action could be started without a complaint in 442 contribution of synchronizing the highest principles with the fairest procedure 434 current of unbroken since the Vedic times 442 description of witness in 445 developed four kinds of legal restraints 443 different types of courts known to 438 its discovery of the real sanction behind the law 442 doctrine of equality of law for all in 446 evolution of 434 existence of elaborate rules regarding the question of the right to begin a trial in 444 existence of a regular hierarchy of courts and appeals with well defined jurisdictions in 440 fifth stage of covers the period of Mohammedan rule 441 its fourth stage of development in the Buddhist period 440 fourth stage of growth of a kind of Hindu equity under Buddhist influence in 441 functioning of the courts in the name of the king in 437 greatest contribution of development of the *mīmāṃsā* system or rules of interpretation 442 great contributions of the Mohammedan rulers to the development of 441 importance of separation of the judiciary from the executive first realized by 435 inflicting the right punishment rules developed in 447 judgement embodied the decision of the court in 446 last stage of ends in the British period 441 law of evidence in highly developed 445 lawyers were appointed judges in 435 maintaining of judicial records as a part of 437 origin of can be traced from prehistoric Vedic times 434 outstanding feature of independence of the judiciary 434 persons engaged in public duties were exempted from personal attendance 443 procedure of law in 442 public administering of justice as a part of 437 punishment in criteria and purpose of 447 48 second stage of, stage of the *Sūtras* 439 its six different stages 439 third stage of administration of justice became elaborate and complex
- Hindu judicial system—*Continued*
 complicated in 439 third stage of stage of codification 439 three classes of evidence in 445 three different kinds of proofs recognized in 438
- Hindu jurisprudence law in above the sovereign 435
- Hindu jurists ancient recognized the importance of prevailing practices in matters of legal disputes 426
- Hindu law absence of reliable data in fixing the chronology of 418 ancient Mame's criticism of 431 its ancient pedigree 418 historical background of 418 20 British policy towards 441 Buddhism did not interfere with 440 compiling a digest of attempted by the Buddhist courts 441 development of in the Buddhist period 441 development of contribution of the Brahmana priestly class to 423 development of role of custom in 426 development of spread over a period of nearly 6000 years 420 first stage of *śruti* and *smṛti* as the only sources 439 genesis of 427 growth of conventional view about the role of *smṛtis* in 426 growth of Equity in under Buddhist influence 441 historical background of 423 historical background and theoretic basis of 414 33 normally considered as traditional 442 progress of arrested during the British rule 420 progressive nature of 426 *śāstras* as the primary source of according to *Jayaswal* 427 *smṛtis* as the source of 426 sources of 419 425 28 two aspects of 415 Vedas as the chief source of 419 423 428 Vedic texts as determining the provisions of 425
- Hindu law books reference to the laws of *ganas* in 438 reference to the laws of *kula* States in 438
- Hindu marriage primary function of continuity of the race 411 regarded as indissoluble 410 role of *dharma* in 410 as a sacrament 410 symbolic acts constituting 410
- Hindu monarchy days of judiciary always remained separate from the executive in 434 35
- Hindu mythology concept of *avatara* a fruitful source of 236 emergence of Rudra in as a god of great importance 229 popular post Upaniṣadic period of 235
- Hindu philosophy political conception of property in 515
- Hindu religion its sound background 81
- Hindu religious literature place of the *Gītā* in 166
- Hindu republics existence of in ancient times 438
- Hindu sacraments central position of *vivāha* in 408
- Hindu scripture the *Bhagavad Gītā* as the most popular 180

INDEX

- Hindu society discouraged inter caste marriage 628 fold of admission of foreigners into 611 impact of outlandish dynasties on 251 influence of the Puranas in all the stratas of 269
- Hindu States freedom of religion in 492 toleration of other religions in 491
- Hindu temples Prambanan group of 126
- Hindu Triad religious synthesis attempted in 235
- Hindu Trinity concept of 84 solution of sectarian rivalry sought in 81
- Hindu usages Buddhism did not interfere with 440
- Hiranyagarbha as the object of meditation according to Samkhya 197 realization of 197
- Hiranyagarbha sukta* as the basis of Puranic cosmogonic legends 229
- Hiranyakesi Dharma Sutra* its contents 307
- History of Dharma śāstras* (see Kane P V) on the chronology of Hindu law 419
- Hsuen Tsang his account of Nalanda 652 his account of the system of Indian administration 476 on the courses of studies 653 his description of the list of subjects studied at Nalanda 653 his high praise of Harṣa 476 on religious toleration under Harṣavardhana 490
- Homa* oblations in the fire 294
- Hooker his *Ecclesiastical Polity* 509
- Hobbes his *Leviathan* 509
- Hopkins 59 his classical description of the *Bhagavad Gita* 138 different stages of development of the *Mahabharata* dated by 57 progressive elaboration of the *Bhagavad Gita* his views on 137 his views on the worship of Brahma 84
- Hotr* 9
- Hrdaya spāsa* act of indicates a complete emotional harmony between the husband and the wife 410
- Hsun Tze his theory of human wickedness 511
- Hubert M his views on the national epic of Campa 120
- Humboldt on the impossibility of the *Gita* being taught during a battle 138
- Hunas 625 626 how they came to be absorbed among the Rajputs 625 migration of and settlement in India 625
- Hutton his views on caste system 353
- Hyllobios their status in society and mode of life according to Megasthenes 565
- Idolatry absence of in Vedic religion 230
- Ikṣvaku descendants of 32
- Iliad* compared with the *Mahābharata* 71
- Incarnation as a special manifestation of the immanence of God 189
- India coming of the Dravidians into 610 constitution of birth of a new historical epoch heralded in 414 cult syncretism in under the Scytho Parthians and Kuṣānas 624 cultural heritage and unity of 536 development of coinage
- India—*Continued*
- in before foreign contact 663 flexibility of ancient lawgivers of 495 flexibility of pristine laws 495 foreign invaders their absorption in and contribution to the culture of 611 *gotra* division in date of 324 Hindu *asramas* in 592 93 Hindu republics in 49 introduction of Aramaic language and script into 613 introduction of a few quaint customs in due to the influx of Iranian population 613 ideals of like for men and women 602 immigration in historic times in 611 12 influence of Dravidian civilization on 530 institutional types of monasticism in 587 monastic institutions in their common characteristics 587 monasticism in 582 593 monasticism in other religious systems in 591 97 monasticism played a distinguished role in 587 perennial culture of 609 remarrage of widows in 579 631 revival of the Bhakti cult in different parts of 100 sacredness of marriage tie in 577 saka and Partian rulers of continued the Indo Greek system of administration 474 self realization has been recognized as the *sum mum bonum* of life in 601 social system 505 6 some aspects of social and political evolution in 493 508 South trading corporations in 677 synchronizing the highest principles with the fairest procedure contribution of the Hindu judicial system in 434 her trade with the Western world 672 two main palaeolithic industries of 610 two recognized ideals for the women of 602 women of standing at a cross road in the modern age 607
- India (ancient) always preached and lived up to the ideal of universal love and service 601 banking in 663 barter in 663 chief items of revenue expenditure in 669 collection of State revenue in kind in 665 conduct of women in 595 97 canons of taxation in 667 coinage in 663 commercial organization in 664 dancing formed an important item of recreation of women in 600 *devadāsīs* were engaged for temple services in 600 divine right of kings unknown in 665 education of women in 594 emergency revenue as a source of revenue in 668 freedom of the market ensured by the State in 662 great advance in agriculture in 657 guilds as autonomous bodies in 664 ideal wife her duties in 596 ideas of law in 495 9, importance of the State treasury recognized in 664 income from the State monopolies as a source of revenue in 668 *kusida* (money lending) as a recognized branch of economics in 662 land revenue as the mainstay of the State finances in 667 legal protection for women in 597

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

India (ancient)—*Continued*

literary achievements of women in 594
 localization of industry in causes of
 662 marriage in 595 marriageable age
 of a girl in 595 mines were nationalized
 in 662 observance of *purdah* in not a
 general custom 595 poetesses of 594
 position of women in 576 594 practice
 of using veils by women in 595 recrea-
 tions of women in 600 religious law
 and practice in 495 remission of taxa-
 tion in grounds for 666 rent and in-
 terest in 662 revenue administration in
 666 revenue as the chief factor of State
 income in 665 revenue and expenditure
 in 664 69 revenue from the fortified
 city as a source of revenue in 668 salt
 as a State monopoly in 662 scarcity of
 private capital in 659 selection of bride
 groom in 595 social and economic posi-
 tion of labourers in 658 social structure
 in 422 23 some aspects of the position
 of women in 594 600 some aspects of
 social life in 557 581 some basic ideas
 of political thinking in 509 29 special
 taxes as a source of revenue in 668
 State encouragement of communication
 and transport in 661 State encourage-
 ment of foreign trade in 661 State
 monopolies in 662 State in relation to
 religion in 485 92 State supervision of
 trade activities in 661 structure of land
 revenue in 667 Suttetism and austerities
 in 597 99 taxation as the principal
 source of revenue in 666 trade as an
 important form of economic activity in
 660 trade and industry in 660 64 treat-
 ment of women in 597 Upauiānas as
 a valuable source of information about
 the scientific and literary achievements
 in 276 various sources of taxation in
 667 village communities in 423 women
 rulers and generals in 599 600

India (mediaeval) child marriage in 627 28
 dowry system in 630 31 eunuchs in
 636 gambling in 634 35 intercaste
 marriage in 628 29 prostitution in 635
purdah in 631 polygamy in 639 *sati*
 in 632 33 smoking tobacco and other
 narcotics in 634 social reforms in 636
 39 some experiments in social reform
 in 627 639 use of intoxicants in 633 34

Indians ancient four branches of their
 knowledge 655 ancient recognized the
 importance of economic science 655
 ancient their theory of kingship treated
 kings as trustees of the State 422 beliefs
 of the alien peoples imbibed by 612
 belief underlying the socio religious insti-
 tutions of 557 their culture influence
 of alien races on 612 *Smytis* as norms
 of conduct of 313 their social philoso-
 phy 323 their wonderful power of assi-
 milating alien races 612

Indian administration system of Hiuen
 Tsang's account 476

Indian art and sculpture influence of the
 epics on earliest specimens of 115

Indian civilization Aryan founders of did
 not favour *sannyasa* 583 creation of as
 a result of the fusion of four principal
 language culture groups 610 the ideal
 of renunciation emphasized in 557
 largely a product of her woods and
 forests 641 its rural origin 641
sannyasa peculiar to 582

Indian culture the *Bhagavad Gita* represents
 a unique stage in the development of
 195 contribution of foreign invaders to
 611 impact of Islam on 581 pervasive
 spirituality of 557

Indian economics ancient works on empha-
 sized the importance of wealth in the
 scheme of life 656

Indian economists (ancient) their conception
 of the fundamental causes of value 661
 importance of agriculture emphasized by
 658 influence of sacred literature on 659
 law of Diminishing Return known to
 657 paid little attention to the pro-
 blem of revenue expenditure 669
 recognized capital as an important factor
 of production 659 recognized four agents
 of production 656 recognized the impor-
 tance of organization as a factor of
 production 659 recognized labour as
 a factor of production 658 recognized
 two types of organization as factors of
 production 659 some of their concepts
 on labour 659 their thorough knowledge
 of agricultural pursuits 657 their views
 on interest 662 63

Indian education (ancient) 640 54 aim of
 644 based upon individual treatment of
 the pupil 641 external aids for the pur-
 suit of knowledge in 643 from the end
 of the Vedic period to the beginning of
 the Gupta period 646 51 Gupta and
 post Gupta period 651 influence of the
 environment on 641 its real creative
 force came from the teacher 641 did
 not recommend knowledge without disci-
 pline 570 system of development of
 inventive faculty in 570 system of roots
 may be traced to Vedic literature 640
 system of its salient features 640 system
 of training of the mind as an instru-
 ment of knowledge main aim of 640
 three steps prescribed for the attain-
 ment of supreme knowledge in 642 in
 Vedic period 640 45

Indian epics influence of on the life and
 civilization of the nation 117

Indian history ancient Golden Age of 475
 Indian lawgivers *dharma* as the basic idea
 of 496 ethical conception of law ex-
 pounded by 497

Indian literature ancient republics known
 by the term *sangha* or *gana* in 480
 four aims of life spoken of in 601
 modern influence of the *Mahabharata*

INDEX

- Indian literature—*Continued*
on 111 115 modern influence of the
Ramayana on 100 106
Indian mythology 223 39 female divinities
in 237 38 Kṛṣṇa religion in 233 34 so
called solar divinities in 227 230
Indian paintings various mediaeval schools
of 116
Indian Parliament Anti Untouchability Act
of 552
Indian people republics not alien to the
genius of 484
Indian philosophy law of *karma* in 167
metaphysical analysis in 90 theory of
transmigration in 168
Indian polity ancient 420 22 ancient pre
sents the picture of elected kingship by
popular will 422
Indian population foreign elements in 610
26 pre historic mixture of races in 610
11
Indian religion the institution of home
lessness in 583
Indian republics replacement of by monar
chies due to historical circumstances 484
Indian sages on rights and duties 576
Indian social organization an anthropologi
cal study 536 56
Indian social tradition salient features of
its unbroken continuity 536
Indian society dominant feature of in the
mediaeval age 627 foundations of
553 mediaeval prevalence of child
marriage in 627 philosophy of life as
expressed in legal and social forms in
493 realistic idealism as the basis of 557
Indian tradition distinction between man
and man never recognized in 601
Indian village causes for the present day
decay of 556 life in 553 as a microcosm
of social relationships 554
Indian womanhood ideals of 601 602
some reflections on the ideals of 601 609
Indian women all round progress of in the
Vedic Age 603 *bhūman* (greatness and
fulness) constitutes the very life blood of
602 in the epics and the Puranas
605 7 in grammatical literature 604 5 in
the modern age 607 8 in the Smṛtis
607 two ideals of spirituality and domes
ticity fashioned the lives of 603
Indo Aryan(s) compulsory education for every
youth of the three castes of 567 impor
tance of sacrifice in the life of 571
their interest in the eternity of existence
557 patriarchal family organization of
566 their spirit of seeing unity behind
variety 180 synthetic outlook of 180
three classes among 558
Indo Aryan society remarriage of widows
never looked upon with favour in 579
Indo Greek kings established autonomous
cities within their dominion 474 of Indus
valley borrowed the practices of the con
temporary Hellenistic monarchs into their
system of administration 473 organized
- Indo Greek kings—*Continued*
their Indian territories under provincial
governors 474
Indo Greek rulers influence of upon their
foreign successors 613 adopted Indian
features on their coins 616 thirty evi
dence of coins attests to the rule of 616
Indra 84 anthropomorphization of 82 his
association with Maruts 18 emergence
of as rain god 225 226 his encounter
with Vṛtra 225 evolution of as the
national war god of the Vedic Indians
225 growth of a large number of myths
about 225 growth of mythology con
nected with 226 Vedic mythology domi
nated by the personality of 224 225
Indrajit 41 his fight with Rama 47
Indra maha 82
Indra mahotsava 85
Indrasena Mudgalani episode of 574
Indriyanigraha 288
Indus valley broke up into a group of in
dependent kingdoms and republics 470
Indo Greek kings of 472
Indus valley civilization its contact with con
temporary riverine civilizations 610
extra Indian origin of not proved 610
Indus valley republics three elements of
their constitution 482
Iran Achaemenian rulers of 612
Iranians 612 615 ancient their close rela
tionship with the Vedic Aryans 612
four castes among 350
Islam impact of on Indian culture 581
Īśvara conception of in the *Gita* 188 as
the object of meditation for attaining
final realization 197 Rāmānuja's concep
tion of 199
Itihāsa(s) 3 4 72 its growth as a distinct
branch of Indian literature 559 original
ly a legend connected with a Vedic hymn
6 its place among the literary forms 6
Itihāsa samvadas universal morality taught
by 93
I tsmg his account of Nalanda 652 his
account of the type of education impart
ed in a Buddhist monastery 652 on the
curriculum of studies 653 his *Nan hai*
chi kuei nai fa chuan 589
Jabali his *Lokāyata darśana* 23
Jacobi his *Das Rāmāyana* 17 progressive
elaboration of the *Bhagavad Gita* his
views on 137 his views on the *Bhagavad*
Gita 139 his views on the Rāma story
in the *Mahabharata* 121 his views on
the *Ramayana* 18 on the unitary nature
of the *Gita* 139
Jagannāthapraśāsa (see Sura Miśra) compos
ed under the patronage of Jagannātha
a Kamboja scion 615
Jagannātha Tarkapaścānana his *Pivāda*
bhangarnava 379
Jahāngir on the fidelity of Hindu women
639 prohibited gambling 635 prohibited
the practice of making eunuchs 636

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Jahangir—Continued**
his prohibition of the use of narcotics 634
- Jaimini** his definition of *dharma* 497 518 proved to be more analytical than Austin in discovering the real sanction behind the law 442
- Jaimini Bharata** Telugu version of 115 wanderings of the sacrificial horse of Yudhisthira described in 113
- Jaimini Sutras** as the oldest work on the Sutras 442
- Jain(s)** incorporated the Kṛṣṇa cult into their religion 110 popular epic stories and episodes adopted by 99
- Jaina literature** influence of the *Mahabharata* on 109 110 influence of the *Ramayana* on 99 100
- Jaina Ramayana** 100 main characteristics of 99
- Jaina texts** large number of heretical doctrines mentioned in 248
- Jainism** monasticism in 591
- Janaka** 44 90 94 179 209 eight leading exponents of philosophy invited at the conference of 645
- Janakīparinaya** (see Ramabhadra Dīkṣita) 99
- Janamejaya** 92 snake sacrifice of 60
- Jara** worshipping a painted image of 88
- Jarasandha** 84
- Jasadhīpura** his *Serai Rama* 121
- Jatakarma** items of a ceremony performed before the severing of the naval string 398
- Jatakas** description of *sabha* in 434 on the division of the Brahmanas into two classes priests and politicians 435 early state of Indian society represented by 563 eighteen unspecified *śenis* mentioned in 670 Kṛṣṇa legend in 109 on the new type of educational institutions 649 realistic pictures of tyrannical kings in 470 on the social and economic position of labourers in ancient India 658 story of Rṣyaśṛṅga in 99 on the three characteristics of the crafts 671 on the types of education 650 on value of foreign travel as a part of education 649
- Java** colonization of the island tradition about 125 growth of the Rama tradition in 122 125 Prambanan group of Hindu temples in 126 Rama tradition in 125
- Javanese texts** first group of gives the orthodox Indian version of the *Ramayana* 121 22 second group of represented by the Malay version of the *Ramayana* 122
- Jaya** 51 53 60
- Jayaddisa Jataka** 99
- Jayadeva** his *Prasanna Raghava* 98
- Jayākhya Saṃhitā** on various grades of Pāṇi caratra Vaiṣnavas 248
- Jayaswal** on the relation between Arthaśāstra and Dharmaśāstra 429 on the Vedic theory of the origin of kingship
- Jayaswal—Continued**
420 his views on the *śamayas* as the primary source of Hindu law 427
- Jews** persecution of in Egypt 507
- Jīmītavahana** his *Dayabhaga* 368 419 his *Dharma ratna* 368
- Jinasena** his *Harivanṣa Purana* 110
- Jiva** 90 individual soul 143 means of attaining eternal state for 210 multiplicity of accepted by the *Gīta* 167
- Jiva Gosvamin** 269
- Jivaka** episode of 650
- Jīvanmukta** 171
- Jīvan mukti** 332
- Jogyakarta** Archaeological Society of 126
- Jolly Julius** his views on the works on *dharma* 338
- Jnana** 94 228 conception of in the *Gīta* 175
- Jnana sannyasins** 290
- Jnana yoga** 148 175
- Jnanendriyas** five 91
- Jnanin** 171
- Judgement** 446 contents of according to Hindu judicial system 446
- Judicial procedure** 442 44
- Judiciary** independence of 434 36 independence of outstanding feature of Hindu judicial system 434 system of and judicial administration 437 39
- Jurisprudence** three systems of 427
- Jury** composition and function of in the Hindu judicial system 436
- Kabir** 581 593 deprecated the practice of *sati* 637 discouraged *purdah* 631 looked upon gambling as a sin 635
- Kaccit adhyayas** on the duties of kings 503
- Kac it sarga** 30
- Kadphises Kujula** as the founder of the Kusāna dynasty in India 623 Wema son of Kujula as an avowed Śaiva 623
- Kailasa** heaven of Śiva 83
- Kailasa temple** relief panels of *Ramayana* episodes in 116
- Kakawin** Javanese version of the *Ramayana* 121
- Kala** 91
- Kala viveka** analysis of the suspicious moments for the performance of sacred ceremonies in 368
- Kalhana** his *Rajataranginī* 285
- Kali** 238 description of 87
- Kalidasa** on King Dilipa 506 *Ravana vadha* attributed to 97 profoundly influenced by the *Ramayana* 96
- Kālīha Purana** an authoritative work on Śakti worship 280 importance of as a source of social religious and political history of Kamarūpa 281
- Kali varjya vidhi** 579
- Kaliyuga** duration of 237
- Kalpa** 4 duration of 237
- Kalpa Sutras** 5 301 purpose of 442 three sections of 301
- Kalpa vrkṣa** (tree of life) 83

INDEX

- Kāma** 1
Kāma is arrows 82
Kamalakara his *Nirnaya sindhu* 375
Kāmandaka 514 520 on the doctrine of *mandala* 521 on the eight categories of revenue 666 on human covetousness 511 12 indebted to Kautilya for his subjects 462 his *Nītisara* 461 his *Nītisara* on the operation of *matsya nyaya* 510 on principles of international dealings 523 his recognition of Visnugupta as his master 461
Kamandakya nītisara 461 62 based mainly on Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* 461 on diplomatic tactics 522
Kamban his Tamil *Rāmāyana* 105 125
Kambojas (Kambohs Kambohs) as accepting the Indian culture and creed 615 immigration of and settlement in different parts of India 615
Kambuja princes of trace their descent from the solar dynasty 119
Kamsa 85
Kamsanārāyana (Ganeśa) 101
Kamsavadha (see *Mahabhasya*) 9
Kamya 291
Kanaka Dasa his *Nala carita* 113
Kāñcana Pandita his *Dhananjaya vijaya* 108
Kāñcipuram religious toleration as practised at 492
Kane P V 305 338 his *History of Dharma śāstra* 419 his reconstruction of *Kātya yana Smṛti* 310 on the several transitions of meaning of *dharma* 424 on the various aspects of *ṛta* 424 on *Vasistha Dharma Sutra* as an adaptation of Manu 305 his views on *Artha śāstra* as forming a branch of *Dharma śāstra* 430
Kaniska 95 holding of a general Buddhist Council by 490 the inscription of 624 as a patron of Buddhism 624 his patronage of Buddhist philosophers and writers 624
Kannada Brahmanical versions of the *Rāmāyana* in 103 dramatic works based on the *Mahabharata* in 113 Jaina versions of the *Rāmāyana* in 103 *Mahabharata* in 113 modern works based on the *Rāmāyana* in 103
Kant his conception of law as based upon free will 418
Kantaka śodhana as one of the duties of the king 350 topics dealt with in 456
Kanva 5 96
Kanya dana as the approved form of marriage among Brahmanas in the South 630 formal handing over of the bride to the bridegroom 410
Kapaṭapaśa (see *Bhīma Dhīvara*) 114
Kapila his *Gītā* 212 propounded the *Sāmkhya* 88 90
Kapila Gita deals mainly with Hatha yoga 215 introduced the conception of *Īśvara* into the *Sāmkhya* system 212
Kapila Samkhya and *Bhagavad Gita* 185 87
Kapilavastu śakyas of 481
Karle magnificent Buddhist *caviya* at 617
Karma 94 as the basis of caste 75 *Bhagavad Gita* on the unique teachings about 158 cord of its three threads 296 doctrine of 93 as an ethical force 296 not fatalism 311 Hindu belief in 310 in Indian philosophy 167 law of 77 Ramanuja's conception of 199 in relation to the *jīva* 167 stages of 196 of the Superman 196 the term scope and meaning of 390 theory of 296 theory of its role in Puranic ethics 296 types of 93 its value as a method of spiritual expression 196 varieties of 27
Karma kanda aim of according to the Mimamsakas 390 sacraments form an important section of 390
Karma mimamsa 211
Karma sannyasins 295
Karma vipākā 384 85 essentially based on the theory of transmigration of souls 384 theory of as a fundamental article of faith established by the *Dharma śāstra* literature 384
Karma yoga 147 148 185 life of emphasized by the *Bhagavad Gita* 152 Manu's emphasis on the doctrine of 361 people hold two different views of 161 Śāṅkara cārya's reflections on 195 as the secret of work 161 Swami Vivekananda's emphasis on 158 as taught by Manu 360
Karmendriyas five 91
Karnaparya his *Neminatha Purana* 113
Karnavedha assumed religious importance as a sacrament and became compulsory 402 Sūśruta's views on the efficacy of 402
Karsna Veda 72
Karttikeya description of and his association with other gods 87
Kashmiri composition of the *Rāmāyana* in 103
Kaśika 5
Kaśinatha Tarkalankara his *Prayascitta vyavastha samgraha* 381
Kaśirāma Dāsa composed the most popular *Mahabharata* in Bengali 111
Kaśyapa 5
Kathakali literature genre of 113 of Kerala based on the episodes from the epics and the Puranas 103
Kathakośa (see *Harisena*) Jaina version of Nala's story in 110 Rama story in 100
Kathā Rāmāyana (see *Raghunātha*) 101
Katha Upaniṣad chariot allegory in 210 yoga as defined in 9
Kātyāyana on four different forms of defence 444 on the script of the Yavanas 615
Kātyāyana Smṛti on *vyavahāra* 309
Kaumārabhrīya an expert in children's diseases 12
Kautilya Arthaśāstra on *dharma* as *vyavahāra* 308
Kauṭilya advocates treacherous fight 459 his *Arthaśāstra* 7 419 428 452-61, his

Kautilya—Continued

Arthaśāstra confirms Manu 339 on Arthaśāstra functioning independently of Dharmaśāstra 431 his attitude towards corporate bodies 611 on battle of intuition 460 on Brahmins as the chief support of the throne 496 on the bureau of information of the Mauryas 471 on canons of taxation 607 on the central administrative machinery of the Mauryas 471 on certain recipes for the destruction of king's enemies 461 compared with Manu 308 constant enumeration of the characters of the departmental heads advised by 155 on construction of forts and fortified towns 404 on the dangers to the seven constituent elements of the State 458 on defence and other items of revenue expenditure 669 his definition of Arthaśāstra as the art of government 451 his definition of Arthaśāstra as the science of acquiring and ruling the earth 461 on the duties and functions of king 502 eighteen *vyavahāra padas* mentioned by 308 enjoins the ruler to keep a vigilant eye on the princes 454 on the enlistment of six kinds of infantry 458 existence of a school of Arthaśāstra anterior to 429 on four legs of law 431 his ideal of imperial nationalism 525 on the importance of guilds 660 on the importance of *sangha* 459 initiation of women into ascetic order prohibited by 565 on the institution of ministership 453 king should decide disputed points of *dharma* according to 426 on kingship 499 on the law of crimes 456 on law of divorce 456 on law as *rajyam ājñā* 617 his legal system 456 on the limitation of the king's authority 470 on the local government of the Mauryas 472 on Machiavellian contrivances 460 on *mandala* 521 on *matsya nyaya* 510 his penal code special treatment of Brahmanas in 457 his points of difference with Manu 430 on the policy of conciliation and bribes 672 prescribes measures against corruption 455 principles of on international dealings 523 on the problem of war and peace 158 on punishment 504 on qualifications of ministers 505 remarriage of widows allowed by 579 on revenue administration 666 on the role of ministers in the State 504 on royal edicts as one of the sources of law 497 on rules of guilds or unions of workmen 456 on rules of marriage 456 on rural economics 657 on the sources of revenue 665 his statecraft based on an efficient system of espionage 453 on State control over trade and industry 660 on State monopoly of industries 662 on three kinds of power 458 on the three tiers of Maurya officials 472 topics discussed by in the *Arthaśāstra* 452 on

Kautilya—Continued

three types of aggressors 460 on treatment of seditious and hostile subjects 459 on two factors of price fixing 661 various schools and individual authors on polity cited by 13 on the various sources of taxation 409 his views on astrology 409 his views on the preservation of hereditary kingship 451 on *vijigishu* consolidating his position 460 on *vijigishu modus operandi* 460 on women spies 565
Kavirandya his *Angadāraibar* 101
Kavindra Puamesvari earliest Bengali *Mahabharata* written by 111
Kaviraja his *Raghava Pandavaya* 97
Kavyas later source story of the *Ramayana* in 96
Keith his *History of Sanskrit Literature* 3n on *Manu Smṛiti* 361 363
Kerala Kathakali literature of 103
Kecanta sacrament connected with the first shaving of the student's beard 407
Kcsava Das his *Rama candrika* 102
Kharavela (Prince) 473 569 his support of Jainism 490
Kharosthi script introduction of an outcome of India's intercourse with Iran 613
Kicaka vadham (see Liayimman Thamp) 113
King(s) divine right of unknown in ancient India 421 his duties and functions 501 as the enforcer of right usage 496 as the maintainer of *dharma* 503 as a real factor in political life 506
Kingship ideas of popular control over 499 mainly hereditary 506 sometimes elective 506
Kosa as a constituent element of the State 664
Kosadhiyaka head of the treasury department 665
Krcchra different types of 387
Krishnamurti Shastri Mahamahopadhyaya his metrical translation of the *Ramayana* in Telugu 106
Kriya yoga *sara* on *dasya bhakti* to Kṛṣṇa 279 as a distinct and independent work of Bengal 279 Kriya yoga is emphasized in 279
Kṛṣṇa his *Nāṭa Sūtras* 8
Kṛṣṇa (Śrī) 37 69 82 85 93 196 acts at the behest of Brāhmā 84 advises Arjuna to perform work as sacrifice 183 appears in the *Mahabharata* in three different aspects 85 his association with Radhā legends 234 and the Buddha 162 contradictory philosophical and religious views reconciliation attempted by 160 his efforts for building up an integral society 192 as an emblem of the Divine 201 exhortations of 54 on functional division of the Aryan society 193 a great harmonizer of ideals and

INDEX

- Kṛṣṇa (Śrī)—Continued**
institutions 180 harmony of faiths
preached by 163 harmony of religious
ideals preached by 192 identified with
Narayana 72 identified with Viṣṇu 17
legend of in the Jatakas 109 a middle
path on the question of work prescribed
by 183 184 origin of his supreme per-
sonality 83 personality of 160 regarded
as an *avatara* of Viṣṇu 81 235 social
liberalism within the Aṣṭan society intro-
duced by 193 takes birth whenever
dharma is in decline 84 ties associated
with 83 *varat* form shown by 84 *Viṣṇu*
Purana on the adventures of 257 wor-
ship of mountain advocated by 83
- Kṛṣṇa cult** incorporation of by the Jains
into their religion 110
- Kṛṣṇadāsa Miśra** his *Maga vyākṛti* 614
- Kṛṣṇa legend** Jaina version of 110
- Kṛṣṇananda** his *Sahādayananda* 107
- Kṛṣṇaraja varivulasa** a modern Kannada
prose version of the *Mahabharata* 113
- Kṛṣṇa religion** assimilation of with Vaiṣṇav-
ism 235 in Indian mythology 233 34
pastoral aspect of 234 sponsors of 234
teachings of the *Bhagavad Gita* became
the epitome of 234
- Kṛṣṇite interpretation** of the *Mahabharata*
57
- Arta-yuga** duration of 237
- Aśvīka kalpataru** (see Bhaṭṭa Lal mīdhara) 374
a the main source of inspiration for
subsequent Dharma śāstra literature 374
- Aśvīka Pavana** 98
- Aśvīvasa** first popular Bengali adaptation
of the *Ramayana* made by 101 intro-
duced new episodes into the original
Ramayana 101
- Asana** 288
- Asana** 168 Sankara's conception of 198
- Asatva** functional role of 324
- Asatva** 317 duties of 317 ideal character-
istics of 558 qualities of 75 292 role
of in the *Mahabharata* 75 some took
to metaphysical investigations 558 three
stages outlined for 562
- Atmendra** his *Mahabharata manjarī* 106
his *Ramayana manjarī* 96
- Aśvīyuga** Sankara's commentary on the con-
ception of 163
- Kubera** (Manibhadra Vaiṣṇavara) as the god
of wealth 82
- Kula** 440 purity of 348 States laws of
reference in the Hindu law books 438
- Kulaśekhara varman** his two *Mahabharata*
plays 108
- Kullūka Bhaṭṭa** his commentary on *Mṇu*
366
- Kumāradasa** his *Jānakī harana* 96
- Kumāra Vyasa** (see Naranappa) 113
- Kumbhakarna** austerities for divine favour
undergone by 40
- Kumārila Bhaṭṭa** closing of the early period
of Dharma śāstra literature with 364
his *Tantra varttika* 425
- Kundamala** (see Viṇanaṭa) 98
- Kuntaka** lost Rama dramas mentioned by
98
- Kuṣma Purana** its early Viṣṇu character
260 list of eighteen Upapuranas given
in 271 passing of through two main
stages 260 Paśupatas appropriated and
attempted recasting of 260 originally a
Pancaratra work with a smack of Śākta
element 259 its two parts called *purva*
and *uttara* 259
- Kuruksētra** allegorical meaning of the battle
of 69
- Kusana** 623 625 a central Asian nomadic
tribe migrated and settled in India 693
their coin legends suggest divinity of
the king 474 their contribution to the
theory of the divine nature of kings 625
their exalted conception of monarchy
474 Indianization of 623
- Kusida** money lending as a recognized
branch of economics 662
- Kuśilavas** their role in popularizing the
epics 15 16
- Kuta slokas** riddles composed by Vyasa to
puzzle Gaṇeśa 60
- Lachmi Dhar** solar myth in the *Maha-*
bhārata suggested by 65
- Lalons Aijuna** as a favourite hero in 132
four groups of 131 short dramas in
Javanese 131
- Lakṣmakavi** his *Lakṣmakavi Bharata* a
Kannada version of the *Mahabharata*
113
- Lakṣmakavi Bhāṇata** (see Lakṣmakavi) 113
- Lakṣmana** banishment of 49
- Lakṣmīsa** his *Jaimini Bharata* 113
- Lalitopakhyaṇa** 255
- Lanka** burning of 22
- Lankakāṇḍa** divergences in the Javanese and
Malay accounts of 124
- Lassen** critical study of the *Mahabharata*
introduced by 57 his views on the
Ramayana 17 28
- Law** conception of earliest notions con-
nected with 415 as *dharma* 435 ethical
concept of according to the Hindus 516
ethical conception of emphasized by
Indian law ivers 497 evolution of in
ancient societies 431 evolution of the
concept of 423 25 Hindu conception of
as binding on the sovereign 435
Homeric conception of 415 the idea of
494 influence of the Church on 416 17
majesty of 414 15 role of in a demo-
cratic welfare State 414 subsequent
theories of 418 two theories of 516
- Law** (ancient) European theory of 516 its
features 415 18 makes no distinction
between religion and positive law 416
its next stage of development king's
authority to pronounce judgements passes
on to the aristocracies 415 above the
sovereign in Hindu jurisprudence 435

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Law of evidence 445 46
 Lévi his views on the origin of the epics 14
Levathan on the state of nature 509
 Levirate as practised among the primitive tribes 539
Lilā as the sport of the Lord 358
 Licchavis their *sangha* most important in the pre Maurya period 480 their unitary republican constitution 480
 Life meaning and purpose of 579 stages of 317
 Lilavati Munshi her *Rekha carita* 112
Linga worship of 88 89
Linga Purana an apocryphal work belonging to the *Linga* worshippers 260
Loka 4
 Lokamanya Tilak his *Gita rahasya* 149
Loka samgraha 155 233 conception of in the *Gita* 178 179 emphasis laid on by the *Bhagavad Gita* 152
 Lokayatas 89
 Lomaharṣana (Suta) disciple of Vyasa to whom the Puranic literature was taught first 244 as the narrator of most of the extant Puranas 242
 Lopāmudra 83 sorrows of 574
 Louis de la Vallée Poussin his views on the *Bhagavad Gita* 153
 Low Sidney his views on the institution of caste 351
 Ludwig his views on the *Mahabharata* 57
 Macdonell his views on the *Ramayana* 14
 Machiavelli his *Prince* 522
 Madalasa 606 as an ideal woman character in the *Purāṇas* 576
Madana pariyata (see Viśveśvara Bhaṭṭa) 374
Madanaratna pradīpa (see Madanasimha) 375
 Madanasimha his *Madanaratna pradīpa* 375
 Mādhavacarya 579 his commentary on *Paraśara samhita* 377 his commentary on *Paraśara Smṛiti* 309 as the greatest scholar of mediaeval southern India 377
 Madhava Deva his *Rajasuya yajna* 111 his *Ramāyana Adikanda* 101
 Madhava Kandali his Assamese translation of the *Ramayana* 100
 Madhusūdana Sarasvatī 166 as a classical commentator on the *Gita* 195 his commentary on the *Bhagavad Gita* 201 his mystic vision 201 his theory of *Advaita siddhi* 201
 Madhvacharya denunciation of in the *Saura Purana* 283 his *Mahabharata tatparya nirṇaya* 68
 Maga(s) also known as *graha vipras* 614 contribution of to Indian astronomy and astrology 614 contribution of to Indian poetry 614 spread over parts of India 614
Maga vyakti (see Kṛṣṇadāsa Mīśra) 614
 Magha his *Śiśupala vadha* 106
 Magi a section of Iranian priestly class 613 entered India in the wake of Scytho Parthians 613
 Magi priests introduced a particular form of sun worship 614
Maha Bhagavata advocates Śaktism with a Śaiva tendency 281
Mahabharata 31 95 99 320 abridged version of in Hindi 112 an authoritative book for the attainment of *trivarga* 71 authority of the Āgamas accepted in 89 on bad characters 504 the *Bhagavad Gita* is acclaimed as the quintessence of 136 Bhārgava material in 61 Brahmanic redaction of 235 Brahmanic version of closely followed by the Digambaras 110 Brahmanization of 93 Brahmanizing the non Aryan lore attempted in 88 brilliant galaxy of noble women presented in 575 celebrated *brahmavadinis* of 606 central theme of 61 character of 55 56 65 66 its character as a Dharma sastra 67 characteristics of several *śāstras* combined in 67 chronological stratification of 135 136 as the common property of all 62 complete Gujarati version of 112 condensed version of in Malayalam 113 conflicting theories about the growth and nature of 56 on coronation oath 421 its culture some aspects of 71 79 date of its composition 53 deeper meaning of 70 on dependence of women 577 different systems of philosophy described in 80 different theories about cosmology in 89 divergent views about the origin and character of 65 diverse philosophical systems brought together in 94 its division into *parvans* 55 doctrine of *karma* as enunciated in 93 does not put any caste bar to the realization of the supreme ideal 563 dramatic works based on in Kannada 113 on the duties and functions of king 502 on the duties to be performed by Yavanas and other foreigners 611 earliest Bengali version of 111 earliest *parvans* of 54 election of kings mentioned in 500 elective monarchies not unknown in 74 its encyclopaedic nature 66 80 117 epic *par excellence* 55 episode of Brahma in 84 episodes incorporated into 15 ethical instructions preached in 67 five great sacrifices mentioned in 561 four human values mentioned in 55 four *puru śārthas* described in 93 on the four *yugas* 237 *Gitas* mentioned in 204 207 on the golden age 519 its gradual development 51 Gujarati version of 112 highest religious philosophy of India expounded in 71 Hindu attitude towards problems of higher thought and wisdom represented in 93 historical kernel of 57 its history and character 51 70 story of Aruṇi attaining the knowledge of Brahman by service to the *guru* in 567 importance of consulting public opinion emphasized in 35 its indisputable character as a *lavya* 67 an inexhaustible source of inspiration 100

INDEX

Mahabharata—Continued

influence of in Buddhist literature 109
 influence of on classical Sanskrit works 106 109 influence of in Jaina literature 109 110 influence of on modern literature 111 115 its inner meanings 68
 introduction of various arts mentioned in 11 inversion theory of 57 58 Jaina version of 109 Jaina version of in Kannada 113 on the judicial procedure of the *kulas* 438 Kannada versions of 113 Kauravas as the original heroes of 57 the king and his subjects in 74 75 Kṛṣṇa and Śiva elements in 81 Kumbhakonam Edition of 89 *lakṣaṇa* based on 131 liberal doctrine as taught by 94 main story of dealt with in the Pali text 109 manuscript tradition of 63 Marathi adaptation of 114 on *matsya nyaya* 509 metaphysical interpretation of 69 metres employed in the composition of 55 mode of *linga* worship as given in 87 modern works in Malayalam based on 113 modern works in Marathi based on 114 modern works in Oriya based on the episodes of 114 modern works in Telugu based on 115 moral objective of 55 a new Veda for all 68 numerous differences between the northern and southern recensions of 63 its origin and antiquity 72 73 on the origin of kingship 498 original plan of 58 in Oriya first written in the fourteenth century 114 paramountcy of moral values stressed in 69 parity between Viṣṇu and Śiva brought about in 84 a part of the lost *itihasa purana* literature incorporated in 7 pictures of ideal men and women as portrayed in 116 its place in Sanskrit literature 71 philosophical tracts in 67 political geography of 73 74 popular adaptations of in Marathi 104 its popularity with the Javanese 130 portrays an ideal civilization 14 present growth of 136 presents the prevailing beliefs and practices of the time 88 presents three different strata of characteristics of Śiva 86 prior to Pāṇini 72 on proportionate punishment 496 prose version of in Kannada 113 on the qualifications of ministers 505 raised to the rank of a Smṛti 62 Rama story in differs from the version of the *Ramayana* 121 religion of 77 79 rendered into old Javanese 131 on the reverence due to the mother in the home 577 on the right of the people to oust a wicked king 501 on righteous kingship 501 rise of 61 on the role of minister in the State 504 on the role of women 577 on the scarcity of private capital 659 on the sacredness of *vyavahāra* laws 425 Sāṃkhya theory discussed in 90 Sanskrit plays based on the main story and various episodes of 107 scenes from depicted

Mahabharata—Continued

on Gupta pillars and lintels 116 scenes from illustrated by modern Indian artists 116 on the security of the republics 483 its several stages of development 74 its similarity with and difference from the *Ramayana* 29 source of its sacred character 30 stages of development of the Hindu mind depicted in 80 stands midway between the Vedic and later Puranic periods 81 story of Nala and Damayanti in 107 stories of pupils exemplary devotion to their teachers in 648 *śūmnam bonum* of life according to 94 *śvetambaia* version of 110 synthesis of different religious and philosophical systems in 68 Tamil translation of 115 on taxation 503 the ten incarnations enumerated in 85 theory of the analytic school of 56 57 its three beginnings 53 56 60 three different aspects of Kṛṣṇa depicted in 85 three dimensional view of 69 traces of the worship of the Mother Goddess found in 87 traditional view of 59 60 on the transcendental plane meaning of 69 70 twofold basis of religion inculcated in 77 two kinds of *yogas* amalgamated in 91 two main recensions of 25 62 translation of in Telugu 115 translation of in Assamese 111 two other versions of in Kannada 113 Vaiṣṇavism in 91 various religious and philosophical sects mentioned in 89 a veritable treasure house of Indian lore 71 women's position in 76 77
Mahabharata (Critical Edition) 59 60 135 based on a large number of representative manuscripts 63 principles followed in the reconstruction of 63 65
Mahābhārata tatparya nirnaya (see Madhvācārya) 68
Mahābhāṣya contemporary or earlier poem cited in 13 on dramatic compositions in classical Sanskrit 9 medicine as a recognized branch of study mentioned in 11 minor topics of study mentioned in 11 on Śakas and Yavanas 617
 Mahadeva his *Adbhuta darpaṇa* 98
Mahajanapadas sixteen conventional list of 468
Mahākāvya characteristics of 26
 Mahalakṣmī Rāmānuja's conception of 199
Mahanataka (see *Hanūman nataka*)
Mahāpatakas list of 385 various death penances prescribed for 387
 Mahapurāṇas change in the character and contents of 247 characteristics of according to *Brahma vaivarta Purana* 202 eighteen list of 240 eighteen the traditional number of 271 ten characteristics of according to *Bhagavata Purana* 252 texts of scarcely reliable 276
Mahānava on *karma vipaka* 375
Mahāvihāra(s) cultural character of 589 development of into universities under

Mahāvihāra(s)—Continued

the patronage of Gupta Emperors 589
reputation of at Nalanda 589

Mahāvira carita (see Bhavabhūti) 97

Mahāyāna Ramanuja's conception of 199

Mahāyānas five 301 according to the Gihya
Sutras 301

Maitreya 232 645 his latest example of a
sadyovadhu 604 as a seeker of immor-
tality 604

Mune Su Hanyu his appreciation of the
Twelve Fables 432 his criticism of an-
cient Hindu law 431 on the evolution-
ary nature of the legal ideas and
institutions 415 tribute paid to the
Brahmana class by 423 his views on
ancient law broadly accepted as correct
415

Makara ensign of Kama 82

Maladharm Devaprabha Suri his *Pandava
carita* 110

Malay Ramayana 123 based on old native
legends 123

Malayalam condensed version of the *Maha
bharata* in 113 works based on the
Ramayana in 103

Māmallapuram (Mahabalipuram) *Maha
bharata* scenes in the rock sculpture at
116

Manatva doctrine of 514 15

Manana reflection on the topic taught as
the second step in the realization of
supreme knowledge 642

Manas 91 92

Manasollasa on the methods of princely
education 651 on the proportion of ex-
penditure to savings 669

Manava Dharma sastra as embodying the
imperial code of law of the Sungas 129

Mandala as a complex of geo political rela-
tions 521 doctrine of 521 24 an estimate
of the doctrine of 524 as a geo political
doctrine of States 524 twelve consti-
tuents of 437

Mangala 566

Manibhadra as a new deity in the *Maha
bharata* 77

Manigramam a trading corporation of South
India 677

Maniyar Singh author of a number of Hindi
versions of the *Ramayana* episodes 102

Manki his *Gita* 209

Manki Gita the code of behaviour taught in
209

Mantras 3 ideal of unity and universality
preached in 601

Manirni 504

Manu 230 519 558 on Ābhūtas as the off-
spring of a Brāhmana by an Ambastha
woman 623 on *acāra* as a transcendental
law 426 accords the rank of degraded
Kṣatriyas to foreigners 611 on the admi-
nistration of *danda* 514 522 his agree-
ment with Vedānta 359 analysis of the

Manu—Continued

verse of 336 on *apad dharma* 340 on
ātma gunas as the *samanya dharma* of all
356 code of 564 code of its influence
on Burmese law books 440 his concep-
tion of justice 518 on the creation of
kingship 439 on the custom of the
stenus 660 debars from *śraddha* the
husband of a remarried woman 579
dictum of on spiritual supremacy of the
mother 607 on the divine nature of
danda 513 on the duties expected of
and towards women 340 576 on duties
of the householder 348 409 560 564
eight kinds of marriage recognized by
347 his emphasis on the doctrine of
Karma yoga 361 his emphasis on two
basic principles *ahimsa* and *satya* 356
equates *dharma* with righteousness 333
on fitness for *sannyasa* 564 on the five
different sources of *dharma* 425 five
yajnas ordained by for the householder
348 four sources and proof of *dharma*
according to 314 on the four stages of
life 311 on the ideal of four *āśramas*
408 ideology of home and the family
constitute the bed rock of society 353
importance of as an authority on the
Vedas and the epic 337 his injunction
on the age of a bride 630 king as the
guarantor of *dharma* according to 349
the law-giver *par excellence* 335 on the
legal sanction behind the customary laws
of the corporate bodies 673 legend of
231 liberal attitude of 354 on the
number and qualification of ministers
504 on the origin of kingship 499
personality pre-eminence and antiquity
of 335 his description of the house-
holder 348 his description of the means
of livelihood of a householder 348 his
points of difference with Kṛṣṇa 430
as the promulgator of a philosophy 358
on the pupil's respectful behaviour to
wards his *guru* 646 on *raja dharma* 340
range of subjects dealt with by 339 on
restriction on food in *brahmacaryaśrama*
330 on the retributive and reformatory
object of punishment 447 on the role
of the king 495 on Sakas and Pahlavas
as degraded Kṣatriyas 620 on the signi-
ficance of purificatory rites 566 his stand
on the question of widow remarriage and
divorce 355 his *subhasitas* 357 teach-
ings of their influence on the life and
conduct of people 335 his teaching of
nivṛtti in *pravṛtti* 362 tradition about
the works of 336 his treatment of the
spiritual quest 357 on virtues of women
575

Manu Samhitā 335 63 *ātma jnana* the great-
est *dharma* according to 363 on the
balance of forces 523 caste untouch-
ability and women in 350 55 conception
of *dharma* in its salient features 341
43 conception of the *śiṣta* in 344 45

INDEX

Manu Samhita—Continued

- contents of 339 41 gives a real picture of life 338 history of the text of its relation to other texts 335 37 on law as the conduct of the righteous 517 on *matsya nyaya* 509 on mixed marriages 328 personality pre eminence and integrity of 335 on *raja dharma* 333 a real picture of life 338 39 relation of the text of to other Smritis 337 *anusha* *varna* and *asrama* in 345 50 on the significance of justice 518 sources and proof of *dharma* in 344 the text of 337 38 a treasury of wisdom 337 on Yavanas as degraded Ksatryas 618 based upon divine inspiration 416
- Manu Smṛiti* compared with Yajñavalkya 309 date of 419 is a Dharma śāstra 309 most authoritative work on *dharma* 309 Nietzsche's views on 344 text of 337 on the weight of coins 663
- Manu Śāyanabhūṣa* on the lit of inheritance 335
- Manusya kalauṣas* demoniacal omens 83
- Manusya yajna* 293
- Manu utti* (see Govindaraj) all the principal topics on *dharma* dealt with in 367
- Manvantara(s)* duration of 237 fourteen description of 254
- Marathi adaptation of the *Mahabhārata* in 104 114 composition of the first *Ramayana* in 103 modern works based on the *Ramayana* in 104 most popular *Mahabharata* in 114
- Marco Polo his account of the life and character of *devadāsīs* 600 his praise of the high standard of craftsmen's training in India 654
- Marici hermitage of 96
- Markandeya Purana* 501 ancient Vedic deities occupy a prominent position in 256 *Devī mahatmya* forms a part of 256 interesting topics and legends contained in 257 non sectarian character of 255 originally composed for popularising the Śrauta and Smṛiti rites 256 subjects treated in 256
- Marriage *anuloma* not encouraged in the Smritis 409 eight forms of 409 negotiation for examination of bride and bridegroom is a regular item in 409 *pratiloma* banned in the Smritis 409 sacramental selection of the couple shapes the institution of 409 Smṛiti encourage in the same *varna* but outside the same *gotra* 409
- Marriage sacrament important constituents of 409 10
- Maruts emergence of as storm god 226 Indra's association with 18
- Maskarī bhāṣya* on *samśkaras* 566
- Matsya nyaya* absence of the concept of justice in 515 anarchy 452 its bearings on Hindu political philosophy 510 doctrine of 509 11

- Matsya Purana* conglomeration of other Puranas in 258 its new character 267 on the non State condition 509 on the origin and nature of the different Upa puranas 273 originally compiled by the Pancaratra Vaiṣṇavas 258 stories and legends in 258 its various sources 258
- Mathas* four founded by Śaṅkarācārya 592
- Matthew Arnold his definition of the epic form of poetry 55
- Ma Tzu Lin on recreation of women in ancient India 600
- Mauryas (Imperial) their highly developed administration 410 Imperial code of law of embodied in the *Aśthasāstra* 429 rise of foreign dynasties in India after the downfall of 413
- Maurya administration overall estimate of 472
- Maurya court Greek ambassadors at 565
- Mauryan empire life in 528
- Maurya emperors absence of republics during the reign of 483
- Maurya period development of agriculture trade and industry in 670
- Max Müller 336 his views on the origin of the epics 14
- Māya* 91 151 166 188 213 599
- Mayamoha story of Viṣṇu's issuing of 257
- Maya Iṣṭaka* 98
- Mayika* 200
- Mayurajī his *Udatta Raghava* 98
- Medhātithi his commentary on Manu 366 date of his commentary on *Manu Smṛiti* 419 his definition of *śreni* 675 on the equitable distribution of wages among partners 677 on the nature of *dharma* 345 on *prajāścitta* 383 his *Smṛiti uvēka* 366
- Mees G H his views on *dharma* 352
- Megasthenes 570 on the administration of Candragupta Maurya 471 on the social order of India at his time 565 two orders of ascetics mentioned by 565
- Meghanāda destruction of 40
- Mekhala* equipment given to the initiate at the time of *upanayana* 405
- Milindapañha* on the curriculum of studies for Brahmana and Kaurya princes 648 episode of the Greek ruler Menander 616 on the new type of educational institutions the Buddhist hermitages 649
- Mill John Stuart on the state of nature 509
- Mīmamsakas their insistence on performance of work 183 their theory of the potency of sacramental rituals 390 their views criticised in the *Bhagavad Gītā* 181
- Mīmamsa Sūtras development of greatest contribution of Hindu judicial system 442
- Misra Miśra his *Trivāda candra* 372
- Mitākṣara* (see Vijnaneśvara) 309 Buddhist influence on 441 Vijnaneśvara's commentary on Yajñavalkya 366
- Mithila largest number of works on *dharma* in the whole of India produced in 371

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Mitra concept of 227
 Mitramisra his commentary on Yajñavalkya 367 his *Vīra mitrodāya* 376
 Moggaliputta Tissa his presiding over the Third Buddhist Council under Aśoka 488
 Mohammedan law its religious and secular basis 417
 Mohenjodaro period familiar forms of Śiva known to 86
 Mokṣa 99 asserted as the highest ideal of man 601 final aim of Dharma Sūtras and Smṛtis 311 the *Gīta* on the attainment of 171 in relation to the duties of men 311
 Moksadharmaparvan 91
 Mokṣa marga 88
 Molla her *Molla Rāmāyana* 106
 Molla Rāmāyana (see Molla) a popular version of the *Rāmāyana* in Telugu 106
 Monarchy elective *Ādīparvanī* on 74
 Monasticism common characteristics of in institutional types 582
 Moropant his *Mahābhārata* in Marathi 114 his Marathi *Rāmāyana* 104
 Mosaic Law based upon divine inspiration 416
 Mother Goddess in the *Mahābhārata* 87 nude representations of 87 worship of 87
Micchakātika court scene in refers to the jury 436
Mudgala Purāṇa nine incarnations of Gaṇeśa list given in 284 Tantric influence on 284
 Mujavat 226 mountain residence of Śiva and Parvatī 86
 Mukteśvara his Marathi adaptation of the *Mahābhārata* 114
 Mukti 161 641 as attained by *jñāna* 215
Mundaka Upaniṣad on the knowledge of the Vedānta 9
 Murari his *Anaṅga Rāghava* 98
 Mythology as penultimate truth 223
 Naciketas his discourse with Yama 82
 Nagacandra (Abhinava Pampa) his *Pampa Rāmāyana* 102
 Nagarikas (City Mayors) 455 charged with preparation of exhaustive registers and census lists within their jurisdiction 472
 Nagasena conversion of the Greeks to Buddhism by 616 foremost Buddhist theologian of his time 648
 Nāga tribe their association with Śiva 86
 Nahapāna his patronage of learning and piety 475
Naimittika 291
Naikarmya 158 184
Naisthika students who dedicate themselves to lifelong studentship 407
 Nakara earliest Gujarati rendering of the *Mahābhārata* attempted by 112
 Nākulīśa Pāśupatas 260
 Nālanda decline of 590 descriptive account of in Tibetan historiographical works 590 destruction of the university at 590
 Nalanda—Continued
 great reputation of the *mahavihāra* at 589 Hiuen Tsang's account of 652
 I tsing's account of 652 list of subjects held at Hiuen Tsang's description of 653 Tibetan scholars at 590
 Nāla and Damayanti minor works on 107 and Damayanti story of in various Indian languages 107 episode of 30
Nala carita (see Kanaka Dasa) 113
Nala caritam (see Unrayi Wariar) 113
Nalinika Jataka story of Rṣyaśrīga in 99
Namakarāṇa name giving ceremony importance of 399
Nanadesa Tisayayirattu Annurruvar a South Indian trading corporation had wide commercial transactions with Burma and Sumatra 677
 Nanak 581 593 on the practice of *satī* 637
 Nandas their empire 470 highly centralized administration of 483
 Nandakishore Bala his *Śīta vanavasa* in Oriya 105
 Nandalal Basu 116
 Nandin his association with Śiva 86 bull vehicle of Śiva 83
 Nannaya his Telugu *Mahābhārata* 115 his *Raghavabhyudayaṃ* in Telugu 106
 Narada 19 239 on the five rules howing who should lose a case 445 on the importance of elderly people *dharma* and truth in the court of justice 434 on judicial procedure 436 443 on laws of the *ganas* 439 list of technical subjects studied by 10 musical arts promulgated by 11 on the nature of plaint 444 on the procedure in courts 444 on the qualifications for judges 436 Rama story narrated to Vālmiki by 18 on remarriage of women 578 on the role of the *sabha* 436 on the selection of judges 435 36 system of *niyoga* advocated by 598 works studied by 6
Nārādīya Purāṇa a list of contents of all the four *samhitās* contained in 259 1
 Vainsava work consisting of two parts 262
 Narada Smṛti Asahāya's commentary on 594 as closely following Manu 309 on *vyavahāra* 517
 Narahari (Kumara Vālmiki) his *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* in Kannada 238
Naraka 238
 Naranappa Kannada version of the first ten *parvans* of the *Mahābhārata* composed by 113
 Nara narayana worship of preached by Swami Vivekananda 164
 Nārāyaṇa 71 77 81 85 devotion to 92 Dravidian origin of 85 Kṛṣṇa identified with 72 as the serpent god of the proto Indians 85 as the supreme Being 85
 Nārāyaṇa Bhaṭṭa rebuilding of the Viśva natha temple by 375
Narayanīya 93 Christian influence on 92 mode of creation and destruction des

INDEX

- Nārāyaṇīya—Continued*
 cribed in 92 section of the *Mahabharata*
 on the doctrine of the *vyuhas* 92
Nasadiya sukta Vedic cosmogonic concept in
 229
Nāstika darśanas rise and growth of 206
Nastikiya as a minor sin 384
Naṣa Sūtras Paṇini refers to 8
Navadvīpa as the greatest centre of Sanskrit
 culture in eastern India 370
Navya Smṛti Śūlakaṇi as the founder of 369
Neminatha Purana history of the twenty
 second Tirthankara given in 113
 Neolithic Age 610
 Neo Vedantism central doctrine of 592
 Śankaracarya as the founder of 592
 New Testament alleged influence of on the
Bhagavad Gītā 138
Nibandha(s) 364 80 Banaras or mid Indian
 school 373 76 Bengal school preserved
 its separate existence 367 commentaries
 on 365 67 constitute a separate branch
 of literature 380 contents of their three
 main heads 379 Kamarupa school 373
 as manuals of special topics on law 364
 Mithila school 371 72 proper Bengal
 school 367 71 role of in evolving a uni-
 form law of penance 386 South Indian
 school 376 78 under British rule 378 79
 varying authority of their history chro-
 nology and jurisdiction 364 *Vayu*
Purana in 254
Nibandha literature different schools and
 sub schools of 364
Nididhyasana as the final step in the reali-
 zation of the supreme knowledge 642
 Nietzsche his views on *Manu Smṛti* 344
Nihīreyasa 506 as the goal of *dharma* 341
 Nikasa mother of Rāvana 44
 Nīlkantha his *Bhagavanta bhaskara* 370 his
Kalyāna saugandhika 109
 Nīlakanṭha Dikṣita his *Gangavatarana* 99
Nīla mata Purana an important work on
 Kashmir 285
Nirnaya sindhu (see Kamalakara) recognition
 of as a great authority on law 375 76
Nirukta (see Yaska) 4 568 early phase of
 classical Sanskrit in 3 daughter's right
 to father's property discussed in 5
 teachers quoted in 5
Nirvana 93 attainment of 90
Niṣkama karma conception of according to
 the *Gītā* 173 in relation to *svadharma*
 506 as taught in the *Gītā* 177 178
Niṣkramana a religious ceremony connected
 with the taking of the child out of the
 house for the first time 400
Nītisara consists of twenty cantos on special
 topics 461 on the operation of *mātsya*
nyāya 510 topics covered in 461 62
Nīti śāstra ancient treatises on 13 doctrine
 of *mandala* in 524 significance of as
 the science of polity and of general
 morals 451
Nītvakyamṛtam (see Somadeva Sūri) consists
 of thirty two discourses dealing with reli-
 gious practices 462
 Nitivarman his *Kīcaka vadha* 106
Nityacara paddhati (see Vidyakara Vajapeyīn)
 as the greatest authority in Orissa in
 matters of *dharma* 376
Niyoga 302 310 system of advocated by
 Nārada 598
Nṛsiṃha prasada (see Dalapati) an encyclo-
 paedic work on *aharma* 378 a work on
 Hindu law written during the Muslim
 period 441
Nṛsiṃha Purana oldest of the Upapuranas
 278 is a lāncarātra work with Bhaga-
 vata inclination 278 subjects dealt with
 in 278
 Nyaya four canons of 89
 Odantapura Buddhist monastic university at
 590
Odyssey compared with the *Mahabharata* 71
 Oldenberg Garbes views on the *Bhagavad*
Gītā supported by 139 his views on the
 form of epic poetry 14 his views on
 the *Mahabharata* 54
 Oriental culture aesthetic and intuitive
 nature of 493
 Oriya first *Mahabharata* in 114 first
Ramayana in 104 modern works based
 on the episodes of the *Mahabharata* in
 114 modern works based on the
Ramayana in 105
 Otto R 151 progressive elaboration of the
Bhagavad Gītā his views on 137 his
 views on the later interpolations in the
Bhagavad Gītā 145
 Padma Rama is known as 100
 Padmadeva vijayaganin his *Rama carita* 100
 Padmanabha Miśra his *Durgavati prakāśa*
 375
Padma Purana 100 Bengal recension of
 consists of five *khandas* 261 date of
 composition and topics dealt with in
 the different *khandas* of 261 four types
 of *dana* classified by 291 influence of
 Kalidasa on the Bengali version of 261
 interpolations in introduced by different
 religious sects 262 South Indian recen-
 sion of consists of six *khandas* 261
 three types of *sannyasins* mentioned in
 295 its two distinct recensions 261 a
 Vānava work 261
 Pala's conventional system of administration
 followed by 478
 Pala kings' rule of monasteries rising into
 great centres of learning during 652
 Pali text main story of the *Mahābharata*
 dealt with in 109
 Pallava sculptures, achievements of 116
 Pampa I his *Ikramārjuna vijaya* 113
 Pampa Rāmāyaṇa Jaina version of the Rāma
 story given in 102 3
 Panataran temple at Rāma reliefs in Indo-
 nesian style in 129

- Panataran** bas reliefs 129 exploits of Hanumat in the *Lankakanda* represented in 129 Javanese version of the *Ramayana* closely followed in 130 pure Javanese technique of 130
- Pāncalī pañtapaharana** (see Rajendra Dev) 115
- Panca mahabhutas** 91
- Panca mahakalpa** epithet applied to Visnu 89
- Panca makara** origin and rise of the rites of 87
- Pāndavas** 87 Kṛṣṇa as the counsellor of 85 story of the triumph of 51
- Pāndava Gita** extols *bhakti* and *prapatti* 219
- Pāndava vijaya** (see Kavindra Paramēśvara) 111
- Pāndu** sons of 52
- Pandya**s their peculiar institution of joint kingship 479 their system of administration 479
- Pāñcaratras** 89 90 doctrine preached by 77 originally compiled the *Matsya Purāna* 958 three main groups of 248 *Visnu Purāna* belongs to 257
- Pancasikha** 93 scholars differ in their views about the system of 91
- Pañcaśikha** Kapileya thirty one principles propounded by 90 91
- Panikkar K. M.** his *Mandodari* 103
- Panini** 3 5 573 acquainted with the word *yavanas* 615 age of 604 date assigned to 4 growth of early classical Sanskrit before and after 5 the *Mahābhārata* known to 61 refers to different types of corporations 660 his reference to *Sūtra* texts 4 his *sūtras* 313 on the Vedic knowledge attained by women 605 views of the earlier grammarians referred to by 5
- Paramātman** Kṛṣṇa as 69 as transcending the *gunas* of *Prakṛti* 143
- Para Prakṛti** 167
- Pargiter P. E.** on the value of the *Purāṇas* in reconstructing dynastic history 265
- Pariplava** 6
- Parāśara** on remarrage of woman 578
- Parasara Gita** central question in 210
- Parasara Samhita** Mādhavācārya's commentary on 377
- Parasara Smṛiti** as most suitable for *kaliyuga* 309 popular commentary upon by Mādhavācārya 309
- Pāraskara Grhya Sutra** on the composition of personal names 399 on the function of the *sabha* 434
- Parīśads** 345 as institutions for advanced studies in the Vedic period 644
- Paruvājakas** 359 562 565 644 special designations given to the members of the community of 582
- Parsis** group divisions among 323 their settlement near Bombay 491 treatment of in India 507
- Pārtati** 213
- Pasupatas** 90 lay stress on devotion to Śiva
- Paśupati** 77 recasting of the *Kurma Purāna* attempted by 260 sect proclaimed by Śiva 89
- Paśupati** 229
- Paśu yajna** 18
- Patalene** their Spartan type of constitution 482
- Patañjali** his emphasis on meditation upon Śvara 197 authority of the Dharma Sūtras recognized by 428 forms of *akhyanas* mentioned by 8, his *Mahābhāṣya* 7 617
- Pauma carita** Jaina versions of the *Ramayana* are modelled on 100
- Penance** aim of purification of the soul 388 definition and scope of 382 83 effect of fitness for social fellowship 388 gift of cows as prescribed by the sages 388 and hells 383 84 law of forms only a part of the great law of castes and orders 289 literature on 381 82 and other means of expiation 386 89 and vows 381 89
- People's Courts** three different categories of according to Colebrooke 440
- Perundevanar** his Tamil translation of the *Mahābhārata* 115
- Phakirmohan Senapati** his metrical translation of the *Ramayana* in Oriya 105
- Pingala** his *Chandaḥ Sutra* 13
- Pisani** his views on the *Mahābhārata* 58 61
- Pitāmbara Siddhantavagīśa** as the greatest authority on Nibandhas in Kamārūpa 373
- Pitrs** (manes) 82 83 317
- Pitr yajna** 293
- Plato** on life in the ideal City State 417
- Political organization (India)** in the epoch of the rise of Buddhism 468 monarchical States 455 79 post Gupta period 477 79 pre Gupta and Gupta periods 473 77 pre Maurya and Maurya periods 468 472 pre Maurya period 480 83 republics and mixed constitutions 480 84 Vedic period 465 67
- Polygamy** among the Hindus 629 among the Mohammedans 629 in mediaeval India 629 prohibition of by Akbar among people of ordinary means 629
- Portuguese** first introduced tobacco in India 634
- Pound** on the state of primitive law 417
- Pradhā** her daughters 82
- Pradyumna** 92
- Prahlada** 40
- Prajapati** 231 process of creation started by 229
- Prajapati Brahmā** 82
- Prājapatya** as a domestic penance 387
- Prakṛti** 91 92 184 according to Śaṅkara and Rāmānuja 198 concept of 166 eight 90 as the lower nature 167 nature of 186 in relation to the Jīva 167 in Sāmkhya philosophy 166 185

INDEX

Prakṛti—Continued

- three constituents of 183 its three *gunas* 167
- Pramoanan *Ramayana* bas reliefs at 191 12/
- Prambanan bas reliefs differ from the *Ramayana* of Valmiki 128 99 divergences in 121 purely Indian style of 139
- Prasanna Raghava* attributed to logician Jayadeva 98
- Prasthana traya* synthetic unity of 211
- Prataparudra (Raja) his two celebrated work on *dharma* 377
- Pratikas* 189
- Pratiloma* 302 327 302
- Pratima nataka* earliest of the Rama dramas attributed to Bhasa 97
- Pravahana Jaivali 559 his convening the Pancala *parisad* 644
- Pravaras* Brahmana Ksatriya names in 327 Ksatriya 326 as the name of the *isis* from whom one is descended 326
- Pravarasena (king) sometimes identified with Kalidasa 9/ the ornate Prakrit epic *Setubandha* attributed to 97
- Pravrajitas* 565
- Prayasçitta* definition and scope of 382 83 three leading authorities of the Bengal school on 381 its place in the Dharma sastra literature 381 wide sense of the word covers all the various means of expiation 386
- Prayasçitta prakarana* (see Bhavadeva Bhatta) as the earliest work on *prayasçitta* 381 on the five categories of sins 386
- Prayasçitta viveka* (see Sulapani) 386
- Prayasçitta vyavastha samgraha* (see Kāśinātha Tāṭkalankara) 381
- Premananda his complete version of the *Mahabharata* in Gujarati 112 his complete version of the *Ramayana* in Gujarati 101
- Primeval Spirit manifestations of 18 means to attain the realm of 78
- Pūga(s)* 440 660 jurisdiction of over their members 671 merchants guilds as autonomous bodies 664
- Pūlika* plant 88
- Pumsavana* 566 sacrament for a male child 397
- Punarbhū* privileges enjoyed by 578 reference made in the Dharma śāstra to 518
- Purāna(s) the word 3 4 account of the migration of the Magi in 613 ancient Indian historical tradition in very often based on facts 265 *ahimsā* declared as the *dharma par excellence* in 288 attempt made in at reconciling two types of *dharma*s 287 authority of the Vedas preached in 249 called the fifth Veda 241 celebrated women of 606 characteristic topics dealt with in 246 common feature assumed by 251 *dāna* as an aspect of *dharma* stressed in 290 date of 245 definition of according to *Amarakoṣa* 241 description of social

Purāna(s)—Continued

condition in northern India given in 265 difference in individual tastes taken into consideration by 290 disintegration of the social fabric account given in 249 dynastic lists and accounts recorded systematically in 264 on the efficacy of penances 383 eighteen as the mouth pieces of sectaries following different faiths 252 eighteen rise of 93 243 as encyclopaedias 264 70 encyclopaedic character of not universal 267 ethics of 287 98 ethics of *raja dharma* dealt with in 293 expiation for the sins in 297 expiation of *śiaddhas* in 294 extant *Lo nahaisma* as the narrator of 242 five characteristics of 241 form and character of 246 253 freedom of the individual emphasized in 296 genealogical lists and accounts in 264 geography formed an interesting subject matter in 266 Gitas in 204 211 12 glorification of sectarian deities in 249 growth of as a distinct branch of Indian literature 559 harmony brought about in the Vedic and non Vedic views in 269 Hindu view of 269 as historical and geographical records 264 70 importance of as the history of religion and culture of the ancient Hindus 270 importance of in reconstructing dynastic history 265 importance of in tracing the social development of the ancient Hindus 266 increasing importance of as repositories of knowledge 268 influence of on religious teachers 269 influence of on all strata of Hindu society 269 information about the seven *dvīpas* supplied in 267 interpolations in 252 introducing changes in the text of different sects took absolute liberty in 252 invaluable record of history and mythology 245 legends about the ten *avatars* of Viṣṇu in 236 man's personal worth recognized in 269 meaning of the word 240 multifarious topics added to 246 myth played an important part in shaping the genealogical lists in 265 new trend in from the Gupta period 252 non Hindu view of 269 number of rigidly fixed 246 observance of *vratas* stressed in 297 order of the eighteen *Mahapurānas* in 246 origin of 240 origin antiquity and early character of 240 43 orthodox Brahmanas did not accept the composite *dharma* professed by 250 performance of *sati* encouraged in 597 philosophical and ethical doctrines of the Vedas and the Upaniṣads in 606 pictures of the ideal wife in 596 its place among the literary forms 6 played a very important part in the life of the Hindus 269 portrait of the Hindu society in ancient India in 266 present chronology and contents of 253 64 recasting of 251 recasting of by

Purāṇa(s)—Continued

- different sects 253 reference to Gopala Kṛṣṇa in 85 as religious books 264 70 re marriage of widows not advocated by 598 *rapprochement* attempted in between the ritualistic and moralistic ethics 297 role of in disseminating religion among the people 268 role of in effecting the racial and religious unification of India 268 on the rule of Ābhira princes 623 sacred origin of 241 scheme of *varṇa* and *āśrama dharmas* advocated in 288 sectarian their coming into existence 251 sectarian excesses not absent in 269 sectarian interpolations in 274 Smartas introduced Smṛti matter into 250 social and religious ferment as the source of the origin of 249 status of equal to that of the Vedas 241 summaries of ancient Sanskrit works some times given in 267 survival and dissemination of Vedic ideas and ideals of religion effected by 268 syncretism in 253 synthetic attitude of 268 Tantric elements in 251 ten *sadharana dharmas* enumerated in 288 their influence in moulding the life of the masses 95 three different ways adopted for re editing of 251 topics dealt with in 267 topics introduced in by the Smartas 250 twenty one hellis enumerated in 238 two types of *dharmas* recognized by 287 women characters in 576
- Purana Samhitas Vyasa as the compiler of 242
- Puranic ethics *dharma* as the basis of 287 nature of intensely practical and utilitarian 297 role of the theory of *harma* and transmigration in 296 *svadharma* holds a prominent place in 291
- Puranic legends incorporated in the *Ramāyana* 22
- Puranic texts unstable character of 245
- Puranic tradition the earth consisted of seven *dvīpas* according to 266 geographical considerably influenced by mythology 267
- Purdah* system observed in high class families 631 tyranny of saints of the *bhakti* movement raised their voice against 631
- Purohita* evolution of the office of 486 his influence over the king depended more upon personality than established usage 467 office of as a pillar of strength for the Brahmanas 467 as the protector of the realm 485 role of in the Vedic State 485
- Puṣan Vedic allusions to 227
- Puṣpodaka realm of Yama 82
- Purūravas episode of 230
- Puruṣa 91 described as the higher Nature 167 nature of 186 and Prakṛti regarded as two aspects of Brahman 90 and Prakṛti theory of 89
- Purusartha*s 287 301 four, 93 *satya* as the basis of 289
- Puruṣa Sūkta* 929
- Purusottama the *Gīta* enunciated the third principle of 186 Sankara's conception of 198 Śiṣṭhara Svamin's emphasis on the principle of 202
- Purusottama ksetra (Puri) 263
- Rabindranath Tagore his views on the epic poets 118
- Radha legends about her association with Kṛṣṇa 234
- Radhanath Ray his contribution to modern *Ōṃya kavya* 114
- Raghava Naisadhya* (see Haradatta Suri) 97
- Raghava Pandava Yadavya* (see Cidambara) 97
- Raghava Pandavya* (see Dhananjaya) 97
- Raghunandana 581 his *Smṛti tattva* a work on *dharma* 370
- Raghunatha his *Katha Ramayana* 101 his *Laukika Nyaya Samgraha* 510
- Raghunatha Paṇḍita his *Damayanti svayamvara* 114
- Raghuvamśa* (see Kalidasa) Rama story in 96
- Rahim Sir Abdur on the religious and secular basis of Mohammedan law 417
- Raja dharma* 333 according to *Manu Samhita* 333 ethics of 293 forms a legitimate part of the *Dharma śāstra* 349 observance of 207
- Rajagopalachari C his *Cakravartī tīrtamāha* a modern version of the *Ramayana* in Tamil prose 105 his *Vijayar Irundu* a modern version of the *Mahabharata* in Tamil 115
- Rajaraja I his building of the temple at Tanjore 491 1st revenue survey introduced by 479
- Rajas* 90 185
- Rajasekhara his *Bala Ramayana* 97
- Rajashekhara Basu his abridged Bengali version of the *Mahabharata* 112 his abridged *Valmiki Ramayana* in Bengali 101
- Rajasuya* 9 88
- Rajatarangini* (see Kalhana) on the geography of Kashmir 285 on the King in Council as the highest court of appeal 437 on Mihirakula's establishing a dynasty in Kashmir 625
- Raja-vidya* as taught by Manu 360
- Rajendra Dev his *Pañcali paṭṭapaharana* 115
- Rajputs rise of during the post Gupta period 477 municipal administration under 478 regional distribution of 544 their system of administration 477
- Rajput dynasties novel feature of their polity introduction of clan monarchies 477
- Rāma as an incarnation of Viṣṇu 21 as taking birth for the protection of *dharma* 32 43 as an embodiment of the high ideals of Aryan life 28 conscious of his divinity 49 deeds of represented in the puppet shows in Burma 119 *dharma* in its manifold aspects represented by 41

INDEX

Rama—Continued

- his coronation 42 his life in exile 39
his proficiency in music 38 his relations
with his brothers 47 his twin sons 19
his undivided love for Sita 46 the ideal
man symbolized by 46 influence of his
character in shaping people's lives 50
king as an incarnation of in Siam 119
principle followed by 49 regarded as a
Bodhisattva 99 religious works dealing
with the story and cult of 95 shrines
dedicated to eighteen gods visited by 88
Sita's longing for a sight of 44 worship
of the Goddess Durga by 101
- Rama bas reliefs 119
- Ramabhyudaya* 98 recited to king Yaśovai
man 98
- Ramabhadra Dīksita his *Janakī parinaya* 99
- Ramacandra his *Nala vilāsa* 107
- Ramacandra Mumukṣu his *Puṇyāśravaka
katha kośa* 100
- Ramacandrodaya* (see Venkateśa) 96
- Rama caritam* earliest work in Malayalam
based on the *Ramayana* 103
- Rama carita manasa* (see Tulasidasa) a Bible
to the millions of Hindus of northern
India 102
- Rama cult minor works of Tulasidasa on
102
- Ramadāsa Samartha his Marathi *Ramayana*
104
- Rama Gīta* 216 nature of *samādhi* as ex
pounded in 217 seven steps in the pro
cess of spiritual advancement enunciated
in 217 theory propounded in 215 types
of *vidyās* explained and mentioned in
217
- Rama Kamheng founder of the Siamese
Kingdom 119
- Ramakanta Chaudhary his *Abhimanyu
vadhā kavya* 111
- Rama Kling* a close version of the Malay
Ramayana in Javanese 122
- Ramakrishna (Sri) his abounding love for
suffering humanity 581 his interpreta
tion of the *Gīta* 158 164 as one who
has reinterpreted the ancient ideals 581
his remarkable achievement in the realm
of harmony 163
- Ramakrishna Mission its renovation of the
institution of *āśrama* with a humanita
rian emphasis 593 revival of the *āśrama*
institution in modern India by 593
- Ramananda 581 on the futility of caste
system 637 Rama bhakti cult preached
by 102
- Ramanatha his *Daya rahasya* 370 71
- Rama Nītis* a close version of the Malay
Ramayana in Javanese 122
- Ramanuja 201 151 495 his adherence to
the principle of atomicity of being 198
his *bhāṣya* on the *Gīta* 198 201 his con
ception of the Divine 199 his concep
tion of *karma* 199 his conception of
knowledge 199 his emphasis on surren

Rāmanuja—Continued

- der as a means of spiritual discipline
200 as a social reformer 637
- Ramanujachariyar M V his literal prose
translation of the *Mahabharata* in Tamil
115
- Rama Pandita the Buddha represented as
20
- Rama purva tapanīya Upaniṣad* on the Rāma
cult 95
- Ramarahasya Upaniṣad* on the Rama cult
95
- Rama Sarasvatī his translation of the *Maha
bharata* into Assamese 111
- Rama story 121 as the blending of history
and allegory 18 earlier version of 19
historical basis of 27 origin of 17 19
penetration of into China 120 works
dealing with 102
- Rama tradition a living force in Java today
125 spread of in south east Asia 119
- Rama Varma as the pioneer of the Katha
kāli 103
- Rama vāṇa* (see Bhalana) 101
- Rama yamakarnava* (see Venkateśa) 96
- Ramayana* 80 320 amalgamation of diffe
rent elements in 17 Aryan character in
18 bas reliefs of the episodes of 127
Bengali versions of 101 Brahmanical
versions of in Kannada 103 brilliant
galaxy of noble women presented in
575 the Buddha called a *nastika* in 89
character of 28 29 composed by Kam
ban 105 composition of in Marathi
103 Critical Edition of 23 31 the cul
ture of 32 50 deals with the principles
of eternal law and polity 27 develop
ment of the Rama story in 20 23 diffe
rent characteristics of Śiva presented in
86 different theories about the origin
of 19 20 earliest version of in Kannada
102 its encyclopaedic nature 23 117
episodes of in the bas reliefs of Pāṇi
banan temple 121 episodes incorporat
ed into 15 ethical ideals expounded in
28 factors leading to the interpolations
in 21 has a factual foundation 20 first
Oriya version of 104 first specimen of
a full fledged *maha kavya* 26 four stages
of its development 17 Hindi versions
of 102 its historical character 19 its
history and character 14 31 history of
its text 23 26 Hubert's views on the ex
istence of in Cham language 120 ideal
of *dharma* as depicted in 39 40 Indo
nesian 125 Indonesian versions of re
sult of mixed influence 125 influence
of on the Buddhist literature 99 in
fluence of on classical Sanskrit literature
95 influence of on Jaina literature
99 100 its influence on Kalidasa 96
influence of on the modern Indian lite
ratures 100 106 influence of on subse
quent Sanskrit works 95 99 invested
with the character of a *maha kāvya* 23
Jaina versions of 100 Jaina version of

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Rāmāyana—Continued

in Kannada 103 Javanese version of 121 125 Javanese version of closely followed in the Panataran bas reliefs 190 Kashmiri version of 103 *kavyas* dealing with the episodes from 97 *lakons* based on 131 Maithili version of 102 Malay version of 122 123 124 125 many sided nature of sacrifices as depicted in 37 38 many sided portrayal of a perfect life in 32 on *matsya nyaya* 509 military equipment and efficiency as depicted in 33 34 modern works based on in Kannada 103 modern works based on in Malayalam 103 modern works based on in Marathi 104 modern works based on in Oriya 105 moral values stressed in 26 the nature of 26 28 original text of preserved in the southern recension 25 pictures of ideal men and women portrayed in 116 plays based on smaller episodes of 98 popular adaptations of in Marathi, 104 popular Bengali adaptations of 101 portrays an ideal civilization 14 Puranic legends incorporated in 22 its recitation at Rama's horse sacrifice 20 royal patronage as depicted in 36 37 Sanskrit plays based on 97 scenes from depicted on mediaeval temples 116 scenes from illustrated by modern Indian artists 116 share of the public in the State affairs as depicted in 34 35 Siamese version of 124 similarity and difference between the *Mahabharata* and 29 source of its sacred character 30 southern commentators on 24 story of 16 17 symbolical interpretations of 28 Tamil adaptation of 105 Telugu versions of 105 translation of into Assamese 100 translation of in Tamil 105 its three sources of origin according to D C Sen 18 two distinct literary aspects of 27 two recensions of 23

Rāmāyana Adikāṇḍa (see Madhava Deva) 101
Ramayana campū ascribed to King Bhoja 97
Ramayana Kakawin Javanese authors of 96
Rāmāyana kathanaka in Hariṣeṇa's *Kathā kośa* 100
Rāmāyana manjari (see Kṣemendra) 96
Ramayana Sasak a close version of the Malay *Ramayana* in Javanese 122
Rāma vijaya (see Sankara Deva) 101
Ramopakhyana 30 fire ordeal of Sita not mentioned in 95 *Ramayana* as the source of 31 restricted scope of 25
Rāmottara tāpaniya Upaniṣad on the Rama cult 95
Ranade on the effect of the *bhakti* movement in Maharashtra 636
Raṅganatha his Telugu *Rāmāyana* 105
Rangaswami Aiyangar K V his reconstruction of the *Brhaspati Smṛti* 309
Ranna his *Sāhasa Bhima vijaya* 113
Rām(s) 4 ideas of adopted from the West 618

Rastragopa protector of the realm role of the *purohita* as 485
Rastrakūṭas their system of administration 478
Ratneśvara his *Śiṣupala vadha* 112
Ravana 41 his Brahmana descent 40 his fight with Kartaviryarjuna 97 his humiliation at the hands of Vālin 42 as Pratiśudeva Jaina notion of 99 Śankara was overthrown by 86
Ravanarjuniya (see Bhaṭṭa Bhima) deals with Ravana's fight with Kartaviryarjuna 97
Ravana vadha (see Pravarasena) 97
Ravidās his condemnation of caste system 637
Raviṣeṇa his *Padma Purana* 100
Ravi Varma 116
Rauruki Brahmana on *śakvāri vrata* 569
Rbhus exalted position of 82 legends about 226
Renaissance impact of on the development of a theory of law divorced from theology 417
Res judicata doctrine of 437 Harita on 444
Responsa Prudentium authority of derived from the Bar 427
Republics ancient Indian causes of their decline 484 ancient Indian extinction of during the reign of Imperial Guptas 483 growth of in northern India after the decline of Indo Greek and Śaka powers 483 growth of in northern India after the decline of Kuṣana power 403 of Indus valley three elements of their constitution 482 of north western India at the time of Alexander's invasion 482 not alien to the genius of Indian people 484
Republican assemblies their procedure compared with that of the Buddhist monastic establishments 481 procedure followed by in transacting business 481
Rg Veda 3 560 *āśrama* stages as such not mentioned in 563 concept of law in as represented by *ṛta* 424 description of *śabha* in 434 development of classical Sanskrit in 3 later period of *śabhā* associated with 434 oldest known literature in the whole world 603 on the election of a king by his subjects 421 the name Kṛṣṇa occurs in 85 as the source of the epics 14 as a source of the second part of the Rama story 18 struggle between Indra and Kṛṣṇa mentioned in 85 women seers of 603
Rg Vedic hymns on marriage ritual 573 portraits of a noble band of ladies presented in 574
Rg Vedic seers poetic fervour of 573
Rg Vedic State as a tribal monarchy 485
Romans 619 620
Roman coinage the imprint of on contemporary Indian currency 619
Roman law study of shows that customary law in due course gives place to jurisprudence 416

INDEX

- Rousseau his *Social Contract* on the origin of property 515
- Rsi(s) 39 83 as builders of the Indian civilization 567 as intellectual guardians of the race 318 *pravara* four 326 primal seven 326 wandering life of 563
- Rsi *yajna* 293 294
- Rsjasrnga story of in the Jatakas 99
- Rta 289 as the antecedent of *dharma* 342 aspects of 424 denotes the supreme transcendental law 494 in relation to *dharma* 424
- Rudra(s) eleven 86 his emergence as a god of great importance 229 fierce and malevolent character of 86 original character of as the god of death 229
- Rudradaman his famous inscriptions 475 Junagarh inscription of 621
- Rudra Gita* bridging the gulf separating the Vaisnavas from the Saivas attempted in 212
- Russell George his observations on the *Gita* 195
- Sabari 605
- Sabal Singh Chauhan his abridged Hindi version of the *Mahabharata* 112
- Sabdakalpadruma* nine fold classification of sins adopted in 386
- Sabha* 434 antiquity of 434 assembly of the clans 74 its association with the later period of the *Rg Veda* 434 description of in the Jatakas 434 function of in the *Parashara Gihya Sutra* 434 judicial functions exercised by in the early Vedic period 466 reduced to the position of king's privy council during the late Vedic period 466 reference to in the *Atharva Veda* 4 4 rule of 436
- Sadācara* 27 517
- Sadbhava* 91
- Śadaja Gita* theme of 208
- Sadhaka* 151
- Sadhana* 202
- Sadharana dharma* 291 as the basis of *svadharma* 291 ten as enumerated in the Puranas 288 universal scope and eternal nature of 288
- Sadyovadhu* welfare of the family ideal of her life 603
- Sahasa Bhuma vijaya* (see Ranna) 113
- saivas 89
- Saiva Upapurānas 282 84 list of 282
- saivism 235 arose out of Aryan and non Aryan religious beliefs 83
- śakas Indianization of 621
- śaka era started in A.D. 78 by Kanishka 624
- śakalyamalla his *Udara Raghava* 96
- śaktas 89 added fresh materials to the *Kūrma Purana* 260
- śākta Upapuranas 280 82 influence of the Tantras on 280 minor 281
- śakti 151 237 worship of existed as an independent religious cult 238
- śaktibhadra his *Āścarya cūdamani* 98
- saktism cult of 83 later *panca makāra* rites of 87
- Śakti worship distinctive feature of 238
- Śakuntala repudiation of 96
- Śakuntalopalīyana* place of the wife in domestic economy as mentioned in 76
- Sahvarī vrata* duties connected with 569
- sākyas of Kapilavastu their mixed constitution 481
- Śalva his *Śalva Bharata* a Kannada version of the *Mahabharata* 113
- Samadhi 151
- Samahanta(s)* 4/2 666 charged with preparation of exhaustive registers of census lists within their jurisdictions 412
- Sama Jatala* on the story of Dasaratha killing the son of Andhaka muni 99
- Samalabhatta his *Draupadī vastra harana* 117
- Samavaya* 150 as taught in the *Gita* 147
- Samavāyana* ceremonies connected with consist of two items 408 a sacrament connected with a student's completing the studies 407
- Samavāyana snana* 570
- Samavidhana Brahmana* on *krcchra* 387
- Samayas originally connected with the rules agreed upon in assemblies 428 as the source of Hindu law 427
- Samba Purana* deals exclusively with the reformed cult of the Sun 284 story of Samba establishing an image of the Sun narrated in 284
- Sambhunatha Siddhāntavagisa his *Akala bhās kara* 373
- Samhitās development of classical Sanskrit in 3
- Samhitopanīśad Brahmana* on reverence for the teacher 568
- Samudh 83
- Samiti disappearance of as a popular assembly in the late Vedic period 466 popular assemblies of the Vedic period 466
- Samkhya 160 assumes three *gunas* 90 conception of Prakṛti in 166 185 its contributions to Indian philosophy 90 cosmic principles of 90 doctrine 88 its early phases 90 as emphasizing meditation on Hiraṇyagarbha 197 ideal of renunciation in *haṛḍ* to attain 173 modification of in the *Gītā* 166 Śaṅkarācārya's interpretation of 147
- Samkhyas Kapila their insistence on giving up work as civil 183
- Samkhya system *Kapila Gītā* introduced the conception of *Īśvara* into 212 prominence given in the *Bhagavad Gītā* to 185
- Sampaka Gītā* ideal preached in 208
- Samraj* conception of 525
- Samsara* 213 cycle of 210 five kinds of 218
- Samśkaras* 390 413 aim of 394 aim of as integration of one's personality 413 aim of as union with Brahman 566 of childhood 398 402 common to the three classes 346 conception of in the *Gītā* 182 constituents of 394 96 cover the

Samskaras—Continued

- whole life of an individual 346 cultural purpose of 392 development of personality by 393 educational 402 408 faith as the basis of 392 influence of on the life of an individual 396 institutions of comprehensive view of life taken by 396 marriage as a 408 11 magical elements in 395 as a mean between the ascetic and materialistic conceptions of life 394 meaning and significance of the term 390 91 performance of divination plays an important part in 396 performance of for the growth of moral virtue 393 performance of for removing bodily impurities 393 performance of as self expression 393 performance of as spiritual *sadhana* 394 prayer as an important constituent of 395 pre natal 396 98 purpose of 392 94 purpose and cope of 413 role of in life according to Kālidāsa 345 role of astrology in 396 sacrifice as an important constituent of 395 scope and number of 391 92 scope and number of according to the Grhya Sūtras 391 significance of 390 sixteen classical 392 symbolism as a constituent of 396 total number of 346 two groups of 566 various stages of 395
- Samuccaya vada* theory of co ordination of the *āśramas* 359
- Samudragupta Allahabad pillar inscription of 623 empire of autonomous tribes included in 483
- Samūla* 519 growth of encouraged by the Smritis 664 political status of 673
- Samvada* hymns 15 hymns origin of the epics traced to 14
- Sanātana dharma* 27 314 adaptability and adaptations of 315 in relation to the changing pattern of society 315
- Sanat sujātīya* on the Vedantic doctrine of Brāhman 92
- Sandhyakara Nandin his *Rama carita* 96
- Saṅgha(s)* 585 660 as aristocratic clan republics of the Kṣatriyas 480 Buddhist Aśoka's lavish patronage of 489 reforming of 488 their corporate unity 459 members of their equality of status 586
- Saṅghabheda* Aśoka's edict on 487 488
- Saṅghakamma* rules governing 587
- Saṅgha mukhyas* elders of the corporation 74
- Saṅgharama* 586
- śankaracārya 214 Advaita system propounded by 211 213 his commentary on the *Bhagavad Gita* 159 195 98 four *mathas* founded by 592 his interpretation of Sāṃkhya 147 his introduction to the *Gītā bhāṣya* 206 on *kṣetrajñā* 163 on *naiskarmya* as taught in the *Gītā* 147 Neo Vedāntism founded by 592 his reflections on Karma yoga 195 three categories of existence recognized by 198 Vedāntic Renaissance in Hinduism led by 592
- Sankara Deva as the real founder of Assamese literature 101 his *Rama vijaya* 101
- Śrīkaralāla his *Savitri carita* 109
- Sankararama Sastrī on distinction among the three systems of jurisprudence 427
- Sankha and Likhita as writers of Dharma śāstras 306
- Sannyasa* (renunciation) 332 357 institution of 583 as an institution in the four stages (*āśramas*) of life 583 peculiar to Indian civilization 582 as the stage of *jīvan mukti* 332
- Sannyasin* 162 295 562 582 Brahmanical regulations of the life of 591 four kinds of 307 *Padma Purana* on the various types of 295 rules of conduct for in the *Harita Gita* 210 three types of 295
- Sanskrit classical poets of 96 plays based on the main story and various episodes of the *Mahabharata* in 107
- Sanskrit (classical) anterior to Panini 3 development of Artha śāstra literature in 13 early phase of 3 existence of narrative composition in 7 existence of works on dancing in 8 growth of poetry in 13 growth of secular poetry in 13 influence of the *Mahabharata* on 106 109 *itihāsa* legends in 6 medical literature in 11 and medicine 11 13 origin of 3 and philosophical and ethico religious ideals 9 10 and polity 13 prior to the Christian era 5 9 and the technical sciences 10 11 transformation of as the lingua franca of Indian culture 610 11 as a vehicle of Indian culture 3 13 as the vehicle of literature and thought 5
- Sanskrit literature classical wide scope of the word *sanskṛita* in 391 on penance as integral part of Dharma śāstra 381
- Sanskrit plays large member of written on the main story or different episodes of the *Rāmāyana* 97
- Sanskrit poetics principal sentiments according to 26
- saṅti karma* 6 413
- Sāntiparvan* 72 88 92 93 ancient treatises and authors on political science mentioned in 13 appointment of royal advisers from different castes mentioned in 74 conception of property in 513 cosmic principles of the Sāṃkhya system discussed in 90 didactic material in 62 on the efficacy of *danda* 518 exposition of *dharma* in 67 on the nature of *dharma* 503 on the nature of men 512 on the psychology of men in the state of nature 511 various types of fighting forces mentioned in 75
- Saptapadī* significance of as constituting all the essentials of domestic felicity 411
- Saradamanī Devī (Sri) the Holy Mother twin ideals of Indian womanhood combined in 608

Śiva—Continued

- raised to the status of Supreme Being by the introduction of personalistic hypothesis of creation 89 the *Ramayana* presents different characteristics of 86 three different strata presenting the characteristics of 86
- Sivachandra Sen his Bengali *Ramayana* 101
- Sivadharmā (Purana)* origin and worship of the phallic emblem of Śiva in 283 recognition of as a *Upapurana* 283 as a pro Vedic *Paśupata* work 283
- Sivadharmottara (Purana)* as a pro Vedic *Paśupata* work 283 topics dealt with in 283
- Śiva Gīta* theme of 214
- Śiva Purana* Āgamic influence on 283 author of a pro Vedic *Paśupata* of Bengal 282
- Sivasvami Iyer Sir P. S. on the caste system 323
- Skanda 81 emergence of as a new deity in the *Mahābhārata* 77
- Skanda Purana* 215 additions and alterations made in 263 prescribes tonsuring of widows 598
- Sleṣa kāvya* its dual character 96
- Smartas changed the character of their sectarian deities 250 introduced *Smṛti* matter into the Puranas 250 on social regulations 320 their religious outlook 250 topics introduced in the Puranas by 250
- Smṛti(s)* 312 abolition of initiation and *brahmacarya* for women in 322 the age of 315 caste system in 320 scheme of 315 16 conventional view about the role of in the growth of Hindu law 426 course of studies laid down for the Vedic students in 653 on division of profits among partners 675 division of society according to 317 division of types and functions 317 eight forms of marriage mentioned in 409 encouraged the growth of *samūhas* 664 general reflection on 321 23 *gotra* and *pravāras* in 326 27 as governing the conduct of the Hindus 314 how they are distinguished from the Vedas 312 interpretation of conflicting texts of 313 on the law of partnership 664 law of *sambhūya samūthāna* in on the subject of partnership 674 on the legal authority of the usages of corporate bodies 671 liberalism of 342 *Mahābhārata* raised to the rank of 62 marriage of girls before puberty recommended by 329 minor writers of 310 mixed castes in 327 28 as norms of conduct 313 their outlook and ideals 312 34 performance of *sati* encouraged in 597 period of 315 period of codification of social laws in 607 philosophy of life in the 316 prescribe austere life for a widow 598 on primary education 653 *rāja*

Smṛti(s)—Continued

- dharma* in 333 34 in relation to the Vedas 312 re marriage of widows not advocated by 598 rights and status of women in 319 320 on safeguarding the properties and strengthening the constitution of the guilds 673 scheme of 315 as the source of Hindu law 426 stages of life according to 317 19 teacher as the pivot of the whole educational system mentioned in 646 three main divisions of 67 two forms of 313 on two types of students 646 two types of teachers mentioned in 646 *varṇa* and caste in 323 26 Vedic study in 329 30 and the women 607 women and the *śūdras* in 319 21
- Smṛti candrika* on compacts entered into by the trade guilds 676 on the constitution and functions of *śrenis* 676 on female education 654 on *samaya* 439 on six classes of partnership 677
- Smṛti kaumudī* (see *Devanātha*) 375
- Smṛti* literature use of the word *dharma* in 424
- Smṛti manjari* (see *Govindaraja*) 367
- Smṛti sara* (see *Harināthopādhyaya*) as an authoritative digest on *acara* and *vivada* in Mithila 371
- Smṛti tattva* (see *Raghunandana*) a work on *dharma* 370
- Smṛti viveka* (see *Medhātithi*) a digest of Indian law 366
- Snātaka(s)* 570 dignified demeanour assumed by 571 his formal bath 408 three types of 407
- Society (Indian) division of types and functions of 317 impact of European civilisation upon 580 reasons for decadence of 580
- Social Contract* on the origin of property 515
- Social organization general reflection on 321
- Sonia 88 226
- Somadeva (Suri) his knowledge of political science 462 his *Nīti sara* based on Kautilya's *Arthaśāstra* 463 his *Nīti vakyaṃśrta* 462 499 prescribes the tenets of materialistic philosophy for kings 463 on the role of ministers 505
- Somaprabha his *Kumarapāla pratibodha* 110
- Šon new type of imperial system evolved on the banks of 73
- Sorensen his views on the *Mahābhārata* 57 59
- Sosyanti homa* 566
- Sosyanti karman* a sacrament performed to expedite the delivery of the child 398
- Sovereignty *cakra* as the symbol of 525 categories of 525 Hindu theory of 525
- Spinoza his *Tractatus Theologico Politicus* 509
- Śraddhā* 177 413 the *Gīta* on the ideal of 175

INDEX

- śraddha*(s) expiation of in the Puranas 294 two aspects of ethical and economic 294
- śraddha sagara* ascribed to Kulluka Bhatta 366
- śramana*(s) 565 582
- śravana* as the traditional oral system of education in ancient India 642
- śreni* 440 660 their status and functions 671 Medhauṭhis definition of 675 their constitution and function according to the *Smṛti candīka* 676
- śrenī mukhyas* elders of the corporation 74
- śrīdattopadhyaya* as the greatest authority on the *Nibandhas* in Mithila 371
- śrīdhara* as the author of popular adaptations of the *Ramayana* and the *Mahābhārata* in Marathi 104 his *Pandava pratapa* 114
- śrīdhara Svamin* his *bhāṣya* on the *Bhagavad Gītā* 202 as commentator on the *Gītā* 195 his conception of *akṣara* 20° his emphasis on the principle of *Puruṣottama* 202 his introduction to the *Gītā* 160
- śrīnatha Ācāryacudamani* his exegesis use of *Navya Nyaya* terminology and methods in 369 70
- śrīnivāsa* his *Suddhī dīpikā* 368
- śrīrāmādeva* (Vyasa) his *Ramabhyudaya* 98
- Sron Tsen gam po* introduced Buddhism as the State religion of Tibet 590
- State*(s) as the corrective for human vices 513 how it differed from the non State 509 as the originator of law 515 the role of *dharma* in 506 Rg Vedic as a tribal monarchy 485 two types of monarchical and republican 468
- State courts* three different categories of according to Colebrooke 440
- St Augustine* on human depravity 511
- Śhūtaprajña* 171 state of 184
- Stutterheim* 121 his views on Indonesian versions of the *Ramayana* 125 his views on Panataran bas reliefs 130
- Subhacandra* his *Jaina Mahābhārata* 110
- Subhadrarjunam* a modern work in Malayalam based on the *Mahābhārata* 114
- Subhāṭa* his *Dulāṅgāda* 98
- Subhananda* portions of the *Mahābhārata* adopted by in *ovu* metre 114
- subhāṣila Ganin* his *Bharatadīkha* 110
- Subrahmanya Bharatīyar* his *Pañjalīyīn Śapatam* 115
- sudra*(s) 317 characteristics of 292 doors of the Vedas closed to 68 duties of 317 householder's stage of life prescribed for 562 how the *Smṛtis* provided for their spiritual well being 320 normal duties of 559 their position in society 319
- suddhādvaita* 151
- Suddhī dīpikā* time element of ceremonies and astrology dealt with in 368
- Sugrīva* 42 his repentance for seeking the death of Valmī 43
- suka* son of Vyasa 59
- Sulā* 91 on absolute and relative prices 661 on the balance of forces 523 his compilation of earlier *Nīti śāstra* matter 463 on *danda* as the maintainer of *dharma* 520 declared strike as illegal 659 on the divine origin of kings 499 his labour regulations 658 on land as the source of wealth 656 on the need for keeping daily monthly and annual accounts 665 his *Nīti sara* 501 on the proportion of revenue to expenditure 669 on two constituent elements of justice 518 on two factors of price fixing 661
- Sukra nītiśāra* 463 64 a compilation of earlier *Nīti śāstra* matter 463 comprehensive nature of 464 consists of four chapters 463 on the efficacy of *danda* 513 on the function of the jury 436 on inter State rivalries 522 on judicial procedure 437 on the king as the promulgator of virtue and vice 497 on mode of judicial administration 438 on the system of judiciary and its mode of judicial administration 438 on three different kinds of proofs 438 topics dealt with in both political and non political 463
- Sukthankar S V* 68 his lectures on the meaning of the *Mahābhārata* 69 his views on the Bhārgava influence in the *Mahābhārata* 61 62 his views on the *Mahābhārata* as an inspired poem 66 his views on the origin of Kṛṣṇa 85
- Sulabha* 94 606 theory preached by 91
- Sulapani* 381 his commentary on *Yajñavalkya* 367 his detailed classification of sins 386 founder of the *Navya Smṛti* of Bengal 369 as a prolific writer 369
- Sunahṣepa* 8 actual historical basis of the legends about 231
- Sungas* administration of looser organization than the Mauryas 473 revival of orthodox Vedic religion under 490
- Surabhi* 83
- Sura Miśra* his *Jagannāthaparakasa* 615
- Sur Da* his devotional songs 112
- Surya Gītā* śivādvaita philosophy taught in 217 teachings of 217
- Suryakṣai* Daivajña his *Kurmayāli vadha* 111
- Susruta* his views on the efficacy of *karma vedha* 402
- Susruta Samhita* four earlier *tantras* mentioned in 12 a well known work on surgery 650
- Suta*(s) 466 diverse matter added to the *Ramayana* by 21 duties and position of 243 gradual deterioration of the position of 243 literary tradition of Brahmanic legends derived from 231 the *Mahābhārata* related to the sages by 60 opinion differs as to the nature and function of 15 their role in the transmission of the Puranas 244 successive generations of 72

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Suta Gita* 215
Sūtra literature 3 development of classical Sanskrit in 3 existence of a Bharata epic prior to 7 existence of in the fifth and sixth centuries B C 5 prevalent before Panini 4
Sutra texts 3 referred to by Panini 4 sixty three different philosophical schools mentioned in 248
Svadharma 162 297 334 351 518 ethics of 291 as founded on duties rather than rights 506 its place in *varna* and *asrama dharma* 291 in relation to the *summum bonum* of life 334 in relation to *varnasrama* 520 as taught in the *Gita* 159
Svapna Dasanana attributed to Bhimta 98
Svarga conception of 238
Svargarohanaparvan teaches *bhakti* 72
Svarajya nature of according to Manu 360
śvetadvipa abode of Narayana 85 location of 92
śvetasvatara Upaniṣad 205 practice of yoga referred to in 9
Su Hw on the need for moral institutions 511
Taittirīya Aranyaka divinity of Vasudeva mentioned in 85 Narayana as supreme Being first mentioned in 85
Taittirīya Brahmana 572
Taittirīya Upaniṣad on disputed points of *dharma* 496 on the parting advice of the preceptor to the student 408 570
Tamas 90 185
Tamil adaptation of the *Ramayana* in 105 translation of the *Mahabharata* in 115 translations of the *Ramāyana* in 105
Tamil literature Sangam period of 115
Tamil Ramayana Javanese and Malay versions of the *Rāmāyana* based on 125
Tandya mahā brahmana on Indra's expiation for sin 382
Tautatita mata tilaka (see Bhavadeva Bhaṭṭa) 367
Tantra(s) early Sanskrit treatise on medicine called 12 influence of on Śakta Upapuranas 280
Tantra varṇika on the sources of law 425
Tantric religion influence of 251
Tapas 288 290 three aspects of 290
Tara her capture by Valin 42
Tarakāsura destruction of 87
Tarṇana water offered to the *pitrs* 294
Tarwad as the matriarchal institution among Malayalees 541
Tāt tvam asi 212 culmination of *bhakti* and *jnana* as taught in the *Gītā* 148
Taxila Iranian influence on the customs and manners of 613 marriage market of 613 plan of on the Greek model 619
Tāyumanavar his *Hymn to Parvati* 508
Telang K T contradictory views on Free Will and Determinism passages assembled by 140 his views on the progress of 140
Telang K T—Continued
sive elaboration of the *Bhagavad Gita* 137
Telugu earliest writers of the *Ramayana* in 105 translations of and modern works based on the *Mahabharata* in 115
Temples inscription on as sources of history 491 social service performed by 490
Thadani his views on the six systems of Hindu philosophy as symbolized in the *Mahabharata* 65
Third Council holding of for reforming the Buddhist Sangha 488
Thoumi Sambhota 590
Tibet Buddhism declared as the State religion of 590 Buddhism in founded by Dipankara Śrījnana 652
Tika Mahabharata (see Gopinatha Dasa) 114
Tikkana his Telugu version of the *Ramayana* 106 wrote the last fifteen *parvans* of the Telugu *Mahabharata* 115
Tilak on the Arctic home of the Aryans 422 the probable origin of imitations of the *Gita* 205
Timmanna translated the eight later *parvans* of the *Mahābharata* in Kannada 113 his *Kṛṣṇaraya Bharata* 113
Timmaraya his *Ananda Ramayana* in Kannada 103
Tiru k Kural 530 35 as enunciating a more positive philosophy than the *Gita* 532 deals with the first three *purusarthas* 530 illustrative extracts from 533 35 on six essentials of a prosperous State 531 preaches the eternal *dharma* 530 summary of the contents of 530 33 theme of 531
Tiruvalluvar his *Tiru k Kural* 530
Todaramalla his *Todarananda* 375
Todarananda an encyclopaedia on *dharma* compiled under the patronage of Akbar 375
Todas social institutions of 541
Tolerance as the greatest contribution of India to posterity 507
Toramana his conversion to Jainism 625
Torave Ramayana a Kannada version of the *Ramayana* 103
Tractatus Theologico Politicus on the state of nature 509
Transcendence 188 as the supreme goal according to Sankara 196
Transmigration 296 theory of in Indian philosophy 168
Travancore tolerance of the Christians in 507
Trayi 452 655
Tretayuga duration of 237
Trigunāṭita 171
Trimūrti concept of 235 gods identified with 78 religious compromise sought in the doctrine of 78 as the triune aspect of the One Brahman 78
Trimatra vratu moderation in conjugal life symbolized by 411

INDEX

- Trivarga* attainment of 71 balanced pursuit of Manu's emphasis on 343
- Trivikrama Bhatta his *Nala campu* 107
- Tuladhara 94
- Tulasidāsa his minor works on the Rama cult 102 his *Rama carita manasa* 102 introduced many new episodes in the original *Ramayana* 102
- Twelve Tables Maine's appreciation of 432 place of in Roman Law 416
- Tyāga 288
- Ubhayabhārati 594
- Udara Raghava 96
- Uddalaka (also see Āruni) 568 644 his contributions to the Upaniṣadic philosophy 645
- Udyogaparvan 161 575 names of the consort of the different gods enumerated in 87
- Umā 607
- United Nations Organization 508
- Unnayaḥ Wariar his *Nala caritam* 113
- Upakurvana(s) 318 646 students who choose to enter the married life 407
- Upakhyānas 61 62 position of women in society as mentioned in 76
- Upānyāna 330 346 641 acquisition of knowledge main object of 404 Hindu ideal of 403 investiture of the initiate with *yajnopavita* most important item of the sacrament 405 meaning and purpose of 403 as the sacrament of initiation 403 selection of a proper teacher is of vital importance for the performance of 404 performance of age of the recipient decided on the basis of his social status 404 performance of specified season for 404 mode of performance and its significance 405 psychological and educational importance of 405 sacrament of marks the dawn of a new life 406 as spiritual bath 568
- Upaniṣads 3 231 absolutistic speculations of 232 on acquiring immortality by renunciation 572 ancient educational tradition of 649 *aśramas* took a definite shape in 563 basic doctrine of the Vedānta formulated in 9 classical Sanskrit already appears in 3 confined to the intellectuals and philosophers 95 etymology of 493 imitation of in the *Ramayana* and the *Mahabharata* 80 their influence on the thought of Asia and Europe 494 moral precepts in, 10 mythical elements in 232 philosophy of Uddālaka's contribution to 645 teachings of epitomized in the *Gītā* 165 on *upāsana*s 642 42
- Upaniṣadic attributes Narayana endowed with 85
- Upapurāṇas 271 86 age of 275, contents and chronology of 275 76 eighteen 271 eighteen date of formation of the group of 272 Gaṇapatya 284 85 a hundred Sanskrit works have yielded information about 272 importance of as a source of
- Upapurāṇas—Continued
- information about the various phases and aspects of the history of religion and society in ancient India 216 286 large number of claiming to be Purāṇas and not Upapurāṇas 274 later redactors and interpolators of 216 legends relating to the ten *avatars* of Viṣṇu in 236 list of 385 Sakta list of 280 miscellaneous list of 285 86 non sectarian 286 *Nṛsiṃha Purāṇa* as the oldest of 278 origin of 273 274 their origin according to the *Kurma Purāṇa* 273 Rama story in 95 secondary position assigned to 271 three lists of eighteen given in the different Purāṇas do not fully agree 271 Vaiṣṇava list of 277 as a valuable source of information about the scientific and literary achievements in ancient India 276 varying lists and different sources of 272
- Upapurāṇa literature extent antiquity and origin of 271 75 six broad divisions of according to their religious views 276 *Viṣṇudharmottara* as the most important and interesting work in the range of 277
- Upāricara story of 93
- Upāsana 154
- Upāsanakāṇḍa 390
- Upasatha 585 fortnightly service of 587
- Upavedas four 4
- Ur Mahābhārata 57 59 reconstruction of 61
- Ur Ramayana 23
- Urvaśi episode of 230
- Usas as inspiring the poetic fervour of the Rg Vedic seers 573
- Utathya Cīta theme of observance and practice of *dharma* 207
- Uttara Gītā theme of 219
- Uttarajjhāyana Devendra's commentary on 100
- Uttarakāṇḍa 29 95 episode of Sītā's banishment in 96 exalted position of Śiva in 87 genuineness of 25 incarnation legends in 21
- Uttara Purāṇa Rama story in 100
- Uttara Rama carita (see Bhavabhūti) 37
- Uttarā svayamvaram (see Eṛayimman Thampī) 113
- Vacaspati Mīśra his works on Smṛti and Nyāya philosophy 372
- Vagdana semi legal and psychological engagement 410
- Vaidyaka as a recognized branch of study in ancient India 12
- Vaikhāṇasa forty purificatory rites enumerated by 566
- Vaikhāṇasa Dharma Sūtra 307 on the distinction between *samskaras* and sacrifices 391 on the duties of *vanaprasthas* 307 on stages of life 562 on the eligibility for the life of a *sannyāsin* 562
- Vaikunṭha heaven of Viṣṇu 83
- Vaiśālī Licchavis of 480
- Vaiśampāyana the *Mahābhārata* recited by 60

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Vaiṣṇava(s)** 89 the *Rāmāyana* equated with the *artha pañcaka* doctrine of 28
- Vaiṣṇava** reformers their absolute emphasis on the path of devotion 638
- Vaiṣṇava Samhitā** deals with *mokṣa dharma* for the twice born 259
- Vaiṣṇavism** assimilation of Kṛṣṇa religion with 235 different schools of 92 emerged as a combination of many faiths 83 preached in the *Mahabhārata* 91
- Vaiśravaṇa** as a new deity in the *Mahabhārata* 77
- Vaiśya** 317 558 duties of 317 normal duties of 559 specific duties of 292 two *asramas* prescribed for 562
- Vaiṣṇavata** Manu his nine sons 264
- Vājapeya** 88
- Vakuvukya** 4
- Vālin** 42 his final reconciliation with Sugriva 43
- Vallabha** 269 his *Duhśāsana rudhira paṇa khyāna* 112
- Vallathol** his metrical translation of the *Vālmiki Rāmāyana* in Malayalam 103
- Vālmiki** 27 31 as an adept in describing Nature realistically 26 his authorship of the *Rāmāyana* accepted by the critics 30 his description of different types of ascetics 48 depicted Rama as the embodiment of *dharma* 49 famous for his similes 26 ideal of *dharma* upheld by 50 inner perfection as the main theme of 32 opinion differs as to his original intention in portraying the life of Rama 21 his *Rāmāyana* 16 95 96 Rama's incarnation asserted by 43 three main sources of his epic poem 237 tragic elements in the description of 47
- Vāmadeva Gita** dwells on the observance of *raja dharma* 207
- Vaṃana Purana** a Vaiṣṇava work originally belonged to the Pancaratras 260
- Vaṃaparvan** 95 on the ideal Brahmana 75
- Vaṃaprastha** 295 319 332 357 574 duty of studying the Vedas 561 as a preparatory stage to *sannyasa* 332 as a stage in the growth of the individual 319 as a transitional stage 295 two kinds of 307 rules about women in 560 565
- Varadachariar** his criticism of Jayaswal's theory on the origin of law 430
- Varāhamihira** astronomer a Maga 614 his high esteem for women in general 597 on the honour and respect due to women 597 protested against one-sided condemnation of women 575
- Varaha Purana** primarily a Vaiṣṇava work 261
- Vaṃa varana** symbolizes that the bridegroom chosen is the fittest of his sex 410
- Vardhamāna Mīśra** his *Danda viveka* 372
- Varna(s)** 93 558 59 characteristics of 292 a critical estimate of 322 exposition of the system of 322 four 75 four-fold classification of the entire people into 558 organization of served as a steel
- Varna(s)—Continued**
- frame for the preservation of the Hindu community 351 organization of as a cooperative effort 351 scheme of hierarchical in conception 352
- Varna dharma** 333 ethics of 293 as the foundation of life 333
- Varnaśrama** 89 333 co-existent with the State 520 doctrine of 519 21 as an ethnico-economic and political concept 520 as a political concept 520 spontaneous emergence of 520
- Varnaśrama dharma** in relation to *svadharma* 297
- Varuna** assumes a minor role 82 Asura concept of 224 cosmic religion of 225 as the divine prototype of the king 466 illusions relating to 224 mythological concept of emergence of 224 possessed *asu* 224 spiritual world dominated by 227
- Varta** 655 considered essential for the material interests of the people 656 economics 452 four divisions of 662 as an important branch of study mentioned by Kautilya 13 scope of 655
- Vasana** 91
- Vasavadatta** romances of 8
- Vasistha** 38 230 on *matsya nṛaya* 510 reverence for mother emphasized by 577 on the role of women 577 six forms of marriage mentioned by 305
- Vasistha Dharma Sutra** contents of 305
- Vasistha Gita** 218
- Vasudeva** 92 his three names 85 Viṣṇu identified with 84 worship of 85
- Vasudeva Dikṣita** his *Bala manorāma* 605
- Vasudeva Kṛṣṇa** (also see Kṛṣṇa) 72 identified with Narayana 85 origin of the cult 85 various scholars dealt with the problem of 85
- Vataskandhas** 81
- Vatsyayana** on the position of remarried woman in society 578 79
- Vayu Purana** proclaimed by 253
- Vayu Purana** its contents divided into four parts 254 earliest of the extant Puranic works 253 early origin of 253 much of the original material preserved by 253 its Pāśupata character only a later phase 253 its purity preserved by the Puranic Pāśupatas 254 topics treated in 254
- Vedāngas** 4 branches of 4 six 301
- Vedānta** 92 called the Ekāntin's religion 88 different schools of 163
- Vedāntins** their insistence on giving up work as evil 183
- Vedantic Renaissance** Śrī Śaṅkarācārya led 592
- Vedarambha** as a *samśkāra* 406
- Veda(s)** 4 authority of acknowledged by the *astikas* 206 authority of denied by the *nāstikas* 206 authority of preached in the Purāṇas 249 compiled to aid in the performance of sacrifices 571 confined to the priestly and aristocratic classes 95

INDEX

Veda(s)—Continued

- four 3 4 initiation in the study of 569
- interpretation of 4 ladies studying 565
- as the main source of *dharma* 425
- incorporation of 571 origin of the epics traced to 14
- penance in 382 as a primary source of Hindu law 419 423
- 428 as repositories of Hindu culture
- 301 solar divinities in 227 study of incumbent upon the Aryan community 559
- Veda samnyasita* Manu's conception of 362
- Veda samnyasins* 295
- Vedic Age all round progress of Indian women in 603 domestic life in 603
- existence of temples as a nucleus of religious and social life in 487
- high position enjoyed by women in 574
- position of wife in 572 the State as tribal monarchy in 485
- Vedic Aryans Aryanized the whole of India by their language 610
- cosmic view of the world emphasized by 224
- political organization of 465
- pouring of into India 610
- religious thought of 224
- their close relationship with ancient Iranians 612
- tribal organization of 465
- Vedic discipline 329
- Vedic gods complex character of 223
- Vedic hymns recognized authors of 230
- Vedic Indians Indra recognized as the national war god of 225
- spiritual freedom was the goal of 579
- wife identified with the house and home of 574
- Vedic Indra (also see Indra) nature myths associated with 225
- Vedic Kalpa Sutras 563
- Vedic kings as guardians of the sacred law 466
- claimed contribution from their subjects 466
- functions of 466
- his quasi-divinity indicated in the older Vedic Samhitas 465
- influence of the order of the Brahmanas on 467
- three kinds of limitations imposed on 467
- Vedic kingship king had no claim to divine descent 465
- Vedic literature early indications of *avatāra* in 236
- its sacerdotal origin and character 15
- mythical sages mentioned in 230
- roots of the ancient system of education may be traced to 640
- various terms used in signifying types of human associations 670
- vows connected with the study of 569
- women in 603 4
- Vedic mythology the concept of dual divinity in 235
- domination of by the personality of Indra 224 225
- essentially evolutionary nature of 223
- evolution of 227
- prominent gods of not banished from the Hindu pantheon 238
- Vedic period caste system based on birth was unknown in 422
- civil administration in 466
- different types of institutions promoted for education in 644
- earlier Vedic rites and rituals performed as penance in 386
- education in 640 45 later

Vedic period—Continued

- branches of study in 3 5
- later various forms of literature and branches of knowledge in 3
- learned assemblies as a vehicle of education in 645
- Mahābhārata* did not exist in 53
- paṇisads* as institutions for advanced study in 644
- progress in the study of technical sciences made in 10
- purāna* as a branch of learning originated in 241
- types of corporations in 660
- women considered as equals of men in acquiring highest knowledge in 645
- Vedic polity critical estimate of 467
- early institution of popular assemblies in 466
- fundamental principle of separation of the ruling power from the spiritual in 467
- Vedic religion absence of idolatry in 230
- affords ample scope for the growth of myths and legends 230
- clear traces of animism in 230
- different elements in 223
- hieratic structure of 227
- orthodox revival of under the Śungas 490
- polytheistic nature of 230
- its spiritual character 230
- its tolerant attitude 230
- Vedic ritual music cultivated in connection with 10
- Vedic sacrifice as an individual undertaking 485
- the *Bhagavad Gita* has not much esteem for 181
- increasingly complicated nature of for the common man 232
- knowledge of the stars required for the perfect performance of 10
- Vedic study Aryans alone had the privilege of 329
- in relation to women 329
- Vedic texts as determining the provisions of Hindu law 425
- beginnings of epic poetry in 72
- Venkatadhvarin his *Yādava Raghaviya* 97
- Venkatanatha as a commentator on the *Gita* 195
- Venkataratnam his views on the *Ramayana* 27
- Venkaṭeśa his *Rīma yamakarnava* 96
- Venkatesvara his *Citrabandha Ramayana* 96
- Venu saṁhara* (see Bhattanarāyaṇa) 108
- theme of 108
- Vessantara Jataka 99
- Vibhūti 143 163
- realm of 197
- Vicakṣṇu Gita killing of animal for *yajna* condemned in 210
- Vicitra Mahābhārata (see Viśvambhara Dāsa) 114
- Vidhi 91
- Vidura on the ultimate good in the *Sadaya Gita* 208
- position of a *yati* attained by 563
- symbol of one pointed reason 69
- Vidula episode of 76 575
- Vidya 568
- atma* 4
- dhūta* 4
- brahma* 4
- deva* 4
- ḥṣatra* 4
- nakṣatra* 4
- nyāya* 4
- sarpa devajana* 4
- Vidyākara his *Subhāṣita ratnakośa* 652
- Vidyākara Vajapeyīn his *Nityacāra paddhati* 376

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

- Vidyāpati the poet his works on Smṛti 372
Vidyārambha a sacrament connected with the learning of the alphabet 402 its historical origin 403
Vidyās 3 four 452 fourfold division of 656
Vidyā snataka 570
Vidyā vrata snataka 570
Viharas Buddhist exemplar of corporate living of monks under the discipline of 591 legend about the origin of 585
Vijayanagara attempts at putting down the dowry system by the kings of 496 kingdom of stood as a great bulwark of Indian culture against foreign aggression 377 rulers of prohibited the use of wine 633 temples of 491 toleration of Islam in 491
Vijayapāla his *Draupadī svayamvara* 108
Vijigīṣu calamities to be averted by 458 doctrine of according to Kautilya 521 topic of leading an expedition by discussed in the *Arthaśāstra* 458 various Machiavellian contrivances prescribed for by Kautilya 460 the would be conqueror 457
Vijñāna Bhikṣu 269 592
Vijñāneśvara 504 his commentary on Yājñalkya 366 date of his *Mitākṣara* 419 his laudable attempt in bridging the gulf between law and usage 427 his observations on *acara* 426 as supreme authority on legal matters in India except Bengal 266
Vikramārjuna vijaya Jaina version of the *Mahabharata* given in 113
Vikramaśīla Buddhist monastic university at 590 description of in Tibetan records 590
Vimala Suri his *Pauma carya* 100
Vinaya law and regulations of the Buddhist monastic system 591 rules governing *sanghagamma* in 587
Vīra mīrodaya a comprehensive digest on *dharma* 376
Vīraṇāga his *Kundamala* 98
Vīraṭ 84
Virupakṣa temple sculptures of represent *Ramayana* scenes 115
Viśiṣṭadvaita 151
Viṣṇu 82 227 appears in the Vedas predominantly as a solar divinity 228 blessed abode of 78 different incarnations of attempts made to rationalise 236 different stages of his attaining eminence 84 function of preservation of the universe represented by 83 incarnations of 92 originally a god of fertility and productivity 228 has his own heaven 83 philosophical derivation of 228 Rāma as incarnation of 49 story of his Mayamoha 257 his ten *avatāras* 236 trees associated with 83 Vedic idea of 236
Viṣṇudharma an Upapurāṇa on Vaiṣṇava philosophy and rituals 277
Viṣṇudharma Purana date and purpose of it compilation 227 subjects dealt with in 277
Viṣṇudharmottara Purana its character a compilation rather than original work 278 encyclopaedic nature of 277 as the most important of the Upapuranas 227 subjects dealt with in 277
Viṣṇu Dharma Sutra contents and nature of 306
Viṣṇugupta identified with Kauṇḍilya 461
Viṣṇu Kṛṣṇa authors of the epics exalted the position of 81 has his own history since protohistoric times 83 raised to the status of supreme Being by the introduction of personalistic hypothesis of creation 89
Viṣṇuparvan life of Kṛṣṇa depicted in 54
Viṣṇu Narayana 69
Viṣṇu Purana 292 belongs to the Pāṇicātra 257 condemns even a palatable lie 289 date of 257 interesting myths and legends in 258 myths and legends of repeated in the *Bhagavata Purana* 259 purely Vaiṣṇava character of 257 its sectarian character 257 its six divisions subjects dealt with in 257
Viṣṇu Smṛti 576
Viśvaṇi sacrifice Raghu's performance of 37
Viśvakarman 82
Viśvambhara Dasa his *Vicitra Mahabharata* in Oriya 114
Viśvamitra 48 230 485
Viśvanātha his *Saugandhika harana* 109
Viśvanātha Satyanarīyana his *Telugu Ramayana* 106
Viśvarūpa date of 419 his *Bala kṛda* 365 his commentary on *Yajñavalkya* 365 made the first attempt to bring the conflicting views on *prāyaścitta* to a harmony 386 theory of ownership preceding partition originated with 365
Viśvavārā her hymn of six verses 574
Viśveśvara Bhaṭṭa his *Madana pārijata* 374 his *Subodhini* 375
Vivada bhaṅgārṇava an authoritative work on Hindu law of contract and inheritance 379
Vivada candra (see *Misra Misra*) a work on civil law 372
Vivāda cintāmaṇi (see *Vacaspati Miśra*) a work on civil law 372
Vivādarnava sūtra a digest of Hindu law composed under the patronage of Warren Hastings 373
Vivāha central position of in Hindu sacraments, 408
Vivarta, doctrine of in the *Gītā* 168
Vivekananda Swami his emphasis on Karma yoga 158 on the ideals of Indian womanhood 605 on *Sītā* as the ideal of Indian womanhood 605 his views on the epics 14 his views on the *Gītā* 158 worship of *nara narāyaṇa* preached by 164

INDEX

- Vṛyasar Vṛundu* (see Rajagopalachari) a masterly adaptation of the *Mahabharata* into Tamil 115
- Vogel 121 his views on the *Ramayana* bas reliefs 127
- Vrata(s)* 569 660
- Vṛtra* Indra's encounter with 225
- Vṛndavana lila* 162
- Vrata snataka* 570
- Vṛtra Gita* theme of 210
- Vratyastoma* 569 a sacrifice performed for readmission into Aryan community 404
- Vyuhas* doctrine of 92
- Vyakhyanas* 4
- Vyakta upasana* 151 154
- Vyavahara padas* — eighteen mentioned by Kautilya 308
- Vyasa 68 his authorship of the *Mahabharata* disputed by critics 30 Bharata composed by 59 eight great qualities defined by 566 original *Purana Samhita* compiled by 241 riddles composed by to puzzle Ganesa 60 his views of the Vedas as the pure source of *dharma* 250
- Vāsanas* sevical kinds of discussed in the *Arthaśāstra* 458
- Vyavahara* 381 as a branch of law 425 concept of deals with secular law 425 etymological meaning of the word 425 object of removal of doubts 425
- Vyavahara cintamani* (see Vācaspati Mīśra) a digest of legal procedure 372
- Vyavabhara darpana* on the eternal nature of law 517
- Vyavahara* law in relation to *dharma* law 425 its origin in political governance 425
- Vyavahara matrika* judicial procedure earliest work on 368
- Vyavahara saukhya* (see Todarmalla) a work on Hindu law written during the reign of Akbar 441
- Wayang Javanese puppet shows 131 Javanese shadow show 126
- Weber 336 his views on the *Ramayana* 17 28
- Welfare State ideal of 414
- West aggressive civilization of 580
- White Yajur Veda* coronation oath in 420 on the nature of monarchy 420
- Winternitz 88 on the date of composition of the *Mahābhārata* 53 on the source of the epics 15 his views on the growth of the *Mahābhārata* into its present form 61
- Widows (Hindu) stigma on the remarriage of 543 remarriage of differs from the marriage custom of the virgins 543
- Women (Hindu) home as women's sphere 321 as the ideal wife 596 literary achievements of 594 Manu on 353 as ministers and judges 599 place accorded to in the *Smṛtis* 319 position of 319
- Yadava rulers of Devagiri as saviours of Indian culture 377
- Yadava Raghuviya* (see Venkatadhavarin) 97
- Yajamana* role of in Vedic sacrifice 485
- Yajna(s)* 154 concept of unity of godhead and the universalization of 149 51 conception of universalized by the *Bhagavad Gita* 149 as the earliest form of religious exercise of the Vedic Indians 571 five daily 203 killing of animals for condemned in the *Vical nu Gita* 210 old doctrine of evils associated with 150
- Yajna cakra* 156
- Yajna cakra pravartana* real significance of the doctrine of 140
- Yajna marga* 88
- Yajñavalkya 232 his condemnation of unjust taxes 667 on the custom of the *śrenis* as legal authority 660 his discourse with Maitreya 604 on the doctrine of equality in criminal law 446 explains to Janaka the eight principles 90 on four kinds of punishment in criminal law 447 that the fruition of *karma* depends upon one's previous action 311 on the law of *damdupat* 663 on the legal sanction behind the customary laws of the *śrenis* 673 problems of civil law considered by 429 represents the view of Hindu law as prevailed in the Satavahana regime 429 reverence for mother stressed by 577 on rules concerning mixed castes 328 on rules of procedure 445 spirit of mysticism in the doctrine of 93 on the traditional sources of *dharma* 425 his treatment of *vyavahara* as a part of *dharma* 429 twenty one hells enumerated by 384 his views on the doctrine of Karma 311 his wisdom challenged by Gargi 645
- Yajñavalkya Samhita* on relation between penances and hells 383
- Yajñavalkya Smṛti* next in importance to Manu 309
- Yajnopavita* investiture of the initiate with at the time of *upanayana* 405
- Yaksas* 82
- Yaksagānas* a large number of composed by Shantayya 113
- Yama 81 as the god of justice 82 original mythological concept of 228 Vedic references to 229
- Yama-Gītā* 215
- Yamaha kāvya* 96
- Yami 228
- Yaska 3 earlier than Panini 5 his *Nirukta* 3 5 his reference to *itihasa* 6 study of grammar well developed before 5
- Yati* 583 duties of 562, rules about and duties of 561
- Yavanas Greeks referred to in early Indian literature as 615
- Yavana* term evolution of 615
- Yerrapragada his Telugu *Mahābhārata* 115
- Yuddha gandharva* (war music) 82
- Yogas* 161 162, attaining the state of 184

THE CULTURAL HERITAGE OF INDIA

Yogas—Continued

eradication of mental distraction by 10
 ideal of in the *Gītā* 173 74 items of
 91 process of bringing together the indi-
 vidual soul and the Oversoul 640 three
 94 three according to the *Gītā* 174 two
 kinds of 91 vein of mysticism in 88
Yogavasīṣṭha Rāmāyana 95 *samyag d ṣṭi*
 according to 360
Yogins 90 171

Yudhisṭhira 88 156 his exile 52 incarna-
 tion of Dharma 69 on the nature of
 ultimate release 208
Yuga(s) concept of 237 four description
 of 237 254 four waning strength and
 stability of *dharma* in 287
Yuga dharma doctrine of 342

Zimmer his views on the elective nature of
 monarchy in ancient India 420